This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.



https://books.google.com



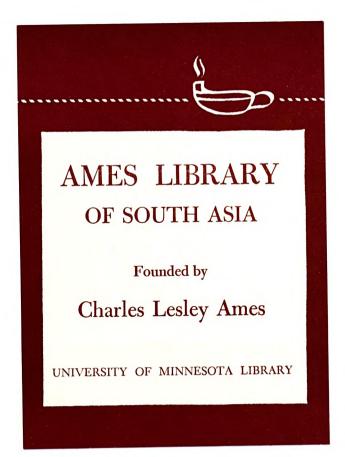








323-325 1944-46





Digitized by Google

IANUARY, 1944

AM U.1 .U.5 No. 314 V.74-76

# THE JOURNAL

OF THE

# UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION

OF

# INDIA

#### PRINCIPAL CONTENTS

Lessons From the Italian Cam	paign	Ву	Major-General	F. A. M. B. Jenkins.
The Bandar Shahpur Incident				By "Mouse".
Maintaining Army Equipment		By :	Major-General	D. R. Duguid.
Review of Frontier Policy, 1849—	-1939	7	By LtCol.	F. C. Simpson.
Burma: Three Pacifications			By LtC	ol. C. Foucar.
The Fighting Spirit		5		By "Auspex."
Civil Liaison		By L	Col. the Hon	. C. Birdwood.
Feeding the Indian Soldiers			By a l	Medical Officer.
Sentimental Journey			By Col.	E. S. Phipson.
Traffic in the Battle Zone			By LtCol.	F. L. Roberts.

# Banking by Post



If you are unable to call personally at any of the Branches of Lloyds Bank, Managers will be pleased to explain the Bank's facilities or answer any enquiries by post, if you will write to them.

Every kind of Banking Business transacted.

CURRENT ACCOUNTS opened, INTEREST ALLOWED on terms

which may be ascertained on application.
FIXED DEPOSITS received at INTEREST.
SAVINGS BANK ACCOUNTS allow WI WITHDRAWALS by CHEQUE.

STERLING and FOREIGN CURRENCY DRAFTS sold and direct REMITTANCES made.

TELEGRAPHIC TRANSFERS effected through Banks in ALL COUNTRIES.

supplied FREE OF **WORLD LETTERS OF CREDIT** TRAVELLERS CHEQUES COMMISSION BANK OF ENGLAND NOTES by REGISTEREL SALARIES, PAY & PENSIONS collected.
PERIODICAL PAYMENTS & SUBSCRIPTIONS effected. by REGISTERED

STOCKS & SHARES purchased and sold, and held in SAFE custody.

EXPERT OPINION on INVESTMENTS obtained from Brokers. DIVIDENDS & INTEREST collected.

ADVANCES allowed against Approved SECURITY.

# Lloyds Bank Limited

(Incorporated in England.)

#### Branches in India:

BOMBAY (2 Offices), CALCUTTA (2 Offices), DARJEELING, KARACHI, DELHI. NEW DELHI. SIMLA, LAHORE. RANGOON EVACUATION BRANCH (Lahore), AMRITSAR. PESHAWAR. (Cantt. & City), RAWALPINDI, MURREE. SRINAGAR. GULMARG. GOOG

### UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION OF INDIA

Τo The Secretary, United Service Institution of India, SIMLA. Date..... Dear Sir. Please enrol me as a member (or Life Member) of the United Service Institution of India. Yours faithfully. Name..... (In block caps.) Rank and Unit ...... Permanent Address ..... Present Address ..... BANKERS' ORDER FORM To Messrs. ..... (Bankers), at ..... On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla, for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 10 (ten) being my annual subscription for 19 and the sum of Rs. 10 on every succeeding January 1 until further notice. Date. ..... Signature. ..... To Messrs ...... (Bankers), at ..... On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla, for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 150 (one hundred and fifty), being Life Membership subscription of the Institution. Signature..... To The Secretary, United Service Institution of India, SIMLA. Date..... Dear Sir. Please enrol me as member (or Life Member) of the United Service Institution of India. Yours faithfully, Name..... (In block caps.) Rank and Unit..... Permanent Address..... Present Address..... BANKERS' ORDER FORM To Messrs. ..... (Bankers), at ..... On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla, for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 10 (ten), being my annual subscription for 19 and the sum of Rs. 10 on every succeeding January 1 until further notice. Date. ..... Signature ..... To Messrs. ..... (Bankers), at ..... On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla, for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 150 (one hundred and fifty), being Life Membership subscription of the

Institution.

Date. ..... Signature .....

Digitized by GOOGLE

#### UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION OF INDIA

The headquarters building of the United Service Institution of India in Simla is open daily, including Sundays, from 9 a.m. to sunset. It contains a reading room, in which is available a wide range of illustrated periodicals, newspapers, magazines. etc., as well as a number of Service journals. A well-stocked library is also open to members, who may borrow volumes without charge, while members stationed elsewhere may obtain books on loan post-free.

Members also receive, post-free, each of the quarterly issues

of the Journal of the Institution.

Rules of Membership

1. All officers of the Defence Services, whether they belong to the Imperial Forces, to forces raised by the Government of India, by an Indian State, by a British Dominion or Colony, and all gazetted officials of the Government of India or of a Provincial Government shall be entitled to become members, without ballot, on payment of the entrance fee and subscription.

Other gentlemen may become members if proposed and seconded by a member of the Institution and approved by the Council. They will be entitled to all the privileges of membership, excepting voting.

2. Life members of the Institution shall be admitted on payment

of a lump sum of Rs. 160, which sum includes entrance fee.

3. Ordinary members of the Institution shall be admitted on payment of an entrance fee\* (see para. 4) of Rs. 10 on joining, and an annual subscription of Rs. 10 (or 15s.) to be paid in advance.

The period of subscription commences on January 1.

An ex-member on rejoining the Institution will be charged a second entrance fee of Rs. 10 if since the date on which he ceased to be a member he has served or resided in India. In other cases no charge will be made.

4. British Service, Dominion and Colonial officers serving in

India shall pay an entrance fee\* of Rs. 7 only.

5. Members receive the Journal of the Institution post free to any part of the world. Members in India may obtain books from the library; they are issued postage free, the borrower paying the return postage.

Government institutions and offices, military libraries, messes and clubs wishing to subscribe for the Journal shall pay Rs. 10 per Non-members shall pay Rs. 10 per annum plus postage. Single copies of the Journal will be supplied to non-members at

Rs. 2-8-0 per copy, plus postage.

7. If a member fails to pay his subscription for any year (commencing 1st January) by 1st June of that year, a registered notice shall be sent to him by the Secretary inviting his attention to the fact. If the subscription is not paid by 1st January following, his name shall be struck off the roll of members and, if the Executive Committee so decide, posted in the hall of the Institution for six months, or until the subscription is paid.

8. An ordinary member wishing to resign at any time during a year in which one or more Journals have been sent to him must pay his subscription in full for that year and notify his wish to resign before his name can be struck off the list of members.

9. Members who join the Institution on or after the 1st October and pay the entrance fee and annual subscription on joining will not be charged a further subscription on the following 1st January, unless

the Journals for the current year have been supplied.

10. Members are responsible that they keep the Secretary carefully posted in regard to changes of rank and address. copies of the Journal will not be supplied free to members when the original has been posted to a member's last known address and has not been returned through the post.

11. All communications should be addressed to the Secretary,

United Service Institution of India, Simla.

<sup>\*</sup> For the duration of the war, the entrance fee has been waived.

# MALARIA

## (35 mm Sound Film in 3 Reels)

A NEW Shell Film Unit production, which explains, by means of diagrams, cinemicrography and scenes photographed in India and the tropics, how human beings contract malaria and what measures can be taken to control the disease.

Part One: THE PARASITE Part Two: THE CARRIER

Part Three: MALARIA CONTROL

The film was made in close collaboration with the London School of Hygiene and Tropical Medicine and has been recommended by the Commissioner of Public Health, Government of India to Public Health Officials throughout India. It is included in BURMAH-SHELL'S LENDING LIBRARY OF FILMS and is available free of charge for educational or private view and for use in health propaganda.

Burmah-Shell's Film Library covers a number of subjects of general and scientific interest. For the loan of 35 mm and 16 mm films, please apply to the Publicity Department,

# BURMAH-SHELL

Post Box 84

**KARACHI** 



The Cotton Goods for India





The Wool-Wear for India



The Footwear for India

# SERVICE

**FOR** 

# SERVICES

We are giving below our brief list of Officers' equipments with latest prices for the convenience of our patrons.

Kh. Barathea Peaked Cap soft or stiff Rs. 16. (All officers' Caps supplied) Barathea Side Cap Rs. 15 Cap Badge Gilded and Bronzed Rs. 4. Oakleaf Gold Embd. Gorget Rs. 15 p. p. patches Green Scarlet or Silk Lace Gorget patches ... Rs. 10 p. p. Collar Badges Bronzed or Gild-.. Rs. 6 p. p. Leather Thong Buttons E/made Rs. 5 p. set. **BUTTONS** Gilded or Bronzed of All Descriptions Rs. 7-3 p. set. CROWN Gilded **Bronzed** 70 Rs. 2-4 p. p. Do. Kh. Worsted Rs. 1-4 p. p. STAR Gilded or Bronzed Rs. 2-4 p. p. Do. Kh. Worsted Rs. 1-4 p. p. PITH Helmet Khaki .. Rs. 7-8 HELMET Flash Ribbon in your Colour .. Rs. 1-8 p. ft. WHISTLE & Lanyard Rs. 2-8. Revolver LANYARD ... Rs. 2-8. Sam Browne Belt complete Rs. 25. Ribbon Bars with Safety-pin mounted with one Ribbon - 8 -.

Kh. Woollen Socks Rs. 4-4 p. p. Kh. Woollen HOSETOPS Rs. 3-8. Kh. Mercerised Stockings Rs. 5 p. p.

Kh. Woollen STOCKINGS.

FOX'S Ankle Puttle ... Rs. 8-8. Kh. Silk-knitted TIE Silk wide-end TIE Rs. 2. in every Rs. 4. regtl. and deptl. colour Silk Square 30"×30" Servants' WAIST & PUGREE BANDS complete with n|p buckles and runner in every deptl. & regtl. colour 4", 5" and .. Rs. 4, 5 and 6 respectively. Clubs, Messes (Special Regtl. made to order.) Servants' Badge Silver-plated for Pugree A to Z initial Rs. 2-8. Rs. 1-8. GLOVES E/ Washable White Rs. 30 p. doz. Gold and Silver Kullahs and Loongies in any design (made to order.) 80 Best Quality Letter Papers and Envelopes, embossed with your Crest in blue .. Rs. 6. Xmas Cards, crested, bound with your colour with envelopes, per dozen ... Rs. 4-8. Silk ribbon in your colour for Invitation Christmas Cards, per .. Re. 0-8-0vard

#### AIR FORCE

Peaked Cap Blue complete Rs. 26. .. Rs. 15. Side Cap complete Silk Rank Braids, Blue or Khaki.

3", 1" and 21" wide Rs. 1|-, 1|4, and 6 - per yard.

ALL OTHER ARTICLES STOCKED

p. Bar.

Rs. 7 p. p.

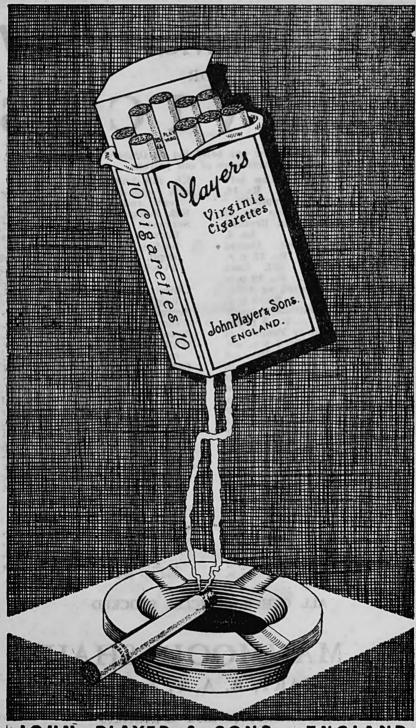
BY

## K. MAHMOOD SHAH'S

MILITARY, R. A. F. & POLICE

Contractors and Outfitters

LUDHIANA (Pb.)



JOHN PLAYER & SONS, ENGLAND

PL-206

# OFFICERS' UNIFORM



#### **BATTLE DRESS**

Made from best quality English Khaki Serge. All details correct according to Regulations. Blouse and Trousers Rs. 100.

#### KHAKI PROOFED CANVAS TRENCH COAT

Double breasted
with belt with saddle
flap and leg straps
for riding double
yoke in front and
back Rs. 80.



#### KHAKI BARATHEA

Service Dress Jacket and Trousers Rs. 200. Buttons and Badges extra.

#### KHAKI OFFICERS GREAT COAT

Made from best English Treblemilled and waterproofed Melton. Correct in all details Rs. 175. Buttons and Badges extra.

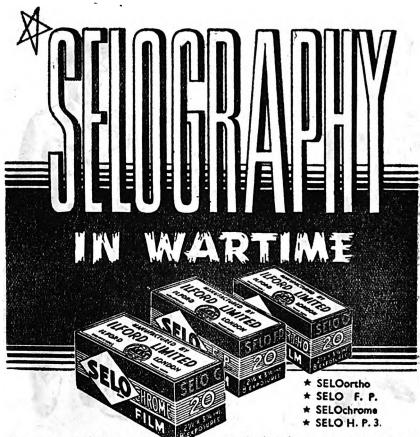
Patterns and self measurement form on request,

## ARMY & NAVY STORES LTD.

Telegrams: "Armistice"

BOMBAY

Telephone: 2500



A great number of discriminating photographers all over India find that, although SELO films are less plentiful than in peacetime, they are well worth searching for—because of their quality. We would only add this: When you have bought them, use them sparingly for the sparingly for

# MARCHING ON STILL!

Distributors for India:

\$LFORD-SELO (INDIA) LTD. Bombay - Madras - Lahore - Calcutta

# The best way to fight the profiteer!

IT is folly to purchase in wartime things you can do without; the profiteer benefits but you lose every time you buy at inflated prices. Save money to-day! Spend only on essentials. Defer buying luxuries until Victory brings back normal prices.

the money you save. Gold, silver, jewellery, land, buildings and goods are unwise investments because their present high prices must one day collapse, perhaps with a sudden rush.

where they cannot depreciate. Invest in a Co-operative Society, take out insurance, open a savings account with a bank or with the Post Office Savings Bank. Best of all, invest in Government Loans and Savings Certificates.







					Rs.	
Khaki Barathea Service Peak Car	and Bad	ge			20	U
Khaki Barathea Field Cap and B	adge (	Side (	ap)	••	15	6
Blue Barathea Field Cap and Ba	dge	(Side (	λap)	••	20	0
Black or Khaki "Beret" Cap	••	• • •			15	U
R.A.F. Blue Barathea Peak Cap					26	4
R.A.F. Blue Barathea Field Cap	and Badge	(81	de Cap	)	18	0
Collar Badgeg Britor for Khaki	Jacket	• •	a pair		6	0
Cap Badges, Bronze for Khaki Ca			each	••	4	ø
Buttons, Gilt.or Bronze for Khak	i Jacket		a set		7	8
Buttons, Filt ton Patrol Jacket			**	• •	7	8
Buttons, Gilt for Greatcoat		••	•		9	U
Shoulder Titles, Gut or Bronze	••		a pair		2	0
Shoulder Titles, Cloth slip-on	:		,,,	• •	1	8
Stars (Pips), Gilt-enamelled		••	,,		2	4
Crowns, Gilt with Red Velvet	••		,,		2 2	8
Stars or Crowns, Bronze or Black			,,		2	U
Stars or Crowns, worsted on Kha		•••	,,		1	8
Khaki Cellular Bush Shirts	••	••	,,		10	8
Khaki Drill Shorts Rs. 6-8a pair,	Khaki Dri	Il Slac	ks	••	15	0
Khaki Woollen Stockings	••		. ,,	••	6	0
Khaki Ankie Putties, Fox's Pate	nt	• •	•	•••	9	0
Khaki Woollen Hosetops		•••	,,	•••	3	8
Field Haversacks, leather bottom	a	••	cach		10	0
Field Waterbottles Rs. 10 each.			•		25	0
Whistle and Khaki Lanyard Rs.				d	2	8
1929-43 Star or N. Africa Star or	any other	Meda	Ribbo	ns		
			a foot		1	8
Bars mounted with any ribbon			cach		0	6
Officer's Greatcoat		• •	••		275	0
Khaki Raincoat		•••	.,		45	0

# Servants' Waist & Pugree Bands, Badges, Silk Ties and Sports Squares

(Stocked in your Regulation approved colours and designs.)

#### Servants' Waist & Pugree Bands & Pugree Badges

(Your Servants will look neat and smart when wearing Bands and Badges.)
Waist & Pugree Bands in your Corps, Regiment or Departmental
colours fitted with electro nickel-plated buckle and runner
adjustable to any size waist
Servants' Pugree Badges, electro silver-plated of your Corps,
Regiment or Departmental design
at Rs. 4/- each

#### WIDE-END TIES

Wide-End superior Cord Silk Ties, well made with reinforced neck bands, with diagonal stripes in your Regulation colours at Rs. 5/- each

#### **MUFFLERS**

Mufflers 36 inches square made of superior cord silk striped in your Regulation colours . . . . at Rs. 15/- each

#### **BLAZER POCKET BADGES**

#### **CRESTED STATIONERY**

80 best quality Letter Papers & Envelopes to match, embossed with your Depttl. Crest in any colour ... at Rs. 5/8 Silk Ribbon in your colours for Invitation & Wedding Cards As. 8 per yard.

# YOUSAF & CO. MILITARY & POLICE TAILORS.

LUDHIANA., (Punjab)

Branch at: Juliundur Camtonment, B. I. Bazar Where V.-P.P. system is not available please send with order cost of goods plus postage.

## United Service Institution of India

#### PATRON:

His Excellency the Viceroy and Governor-General of India.
VICE-PATRONS:

- H. E. The Governor of Madras.
- H. E. The Governor of Bombay.
- H. E. The Governor of Bengal.
- H. E. The C.-in-C. in India.
- H. E. The Governor of the United Provinces.
- H. E. The Governor of the Punjab.
- H. E. The Governor of Bihar.
- H. E. The Governor of the Central Provinces.

- H. E. The Governor of Assam.
- H. E. The Governor of the N.W.F.P.
- H. E. The Governor of Sind.
- H. E. The Governor of Orissa.
- The G.O. C.-in-C., Northern Army.
- The G.O. C.-in-C., Southern Army.
- The G.O. C.-in-C., Eastern Army.
- The G.O. C.-in-C. Central Comd.

#### MEMBERS OF THE COUNCIL, 1943-44.

#### Ex-officio Members:

The Chief of the General Staff (President).

The Dep. A.O.C., Air Forces in India (Vice-President).

The Flag Officer Commanding Royal Indian Navy.

The Secretary, Defence Department.

The Secretary, External Affairs Department.

#### **Elected Members:**

Lieut.-Gen. Sir Clarence Bird, K.C.I.E., C.B., D.S.O.

Lieut.-Gen. T. J. Hutton, C.B., M.C.

Major-General D. A. L. Wade, O.B.E., M.C.

Sir F. H. Puckle, K.C.I.E., C.S.I. Commander H. E. Felser Paine, R.I.N.

Group-Captain the Earl of Bandon, D.S.O., R.A.F. P. Mason, Esq., O.B.E., I.C.S.

#### Honorary Members:

Lieut.-Gen. H. H. the Maharaja of Jammu & Kashmir, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., K.C.V.O.

Air-Commodore H. H. the Nawab of Bhopal, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., C.V.O., Air Commodore H.H. Maharaja Bahadur of Jodhpur, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., K.C.V.O.

Colonel H. H. the Maharaja Jam Saheb of Nawanagar, G.C.I.E., K.C.S.I,
Major H. H. the Maharaja of Patiala, G.B.E.
Captain H. H. the Raja of Faridkot, K.C.S.I.

#### MEMBERS OF THE EXECUTIVE COMMITTEE, 1943-44

President: Major-General D.A.L. Wade, O.B.E., M.C.

Members: Lieut.-Gen. Sir Clarence Bird, K.C.I.E., C.B., D.S.O.

Commander H. E. Felser Paine, R.I.N.

Group Captain the Earl of Bandon, D.S.O., R.A.F.,

Secretary and Editor: Major H. C. Druett. Bankers: Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla.

Digitized by Google

#### NOTES BY THE SECRETARY

#### Honours Lists

Readers will join with us in congratulating the following members of the Institution who have recently been awarded the honours indicated:

- G.C.B.—General Sir George J. Giffard, K.C.B., D.S.O., Commander-in-Chief of the Army Group in S.E.A.C.
- K.C.B.—Lieutenant-General E. L. Morris, C.B., O.B.E., M.C., Chief of the General Staff, President of the Council of the United Service Institution of India.
- C.B.—Major-General R. M. M. Lockhart, C.I.E., M.C.; Major-General J. B. Scott, D.S.O., M.C.; Major-General R. A. Savory, D.S.O., M.C.; Lieutenant-General W. J. Slim, C.B.E., D.S.O., M.C.
- C.S.I.—F. C. Bourne, Esq., C.I.E., Chief Secretary, Punjab; Lieutenant-Colonel D. de M. Stuart Fraser, Resident in Mysore.
- G.C.I.E.—General Sir Alan Hartley, K.C.S.I., C.B., D.S.O., A.D.C., lately Deputy Commander-in-Chief, India; Sir Reginald Maxwell, K.C.S.I., C.I.E., I.C.S., member of the Governor-General's Executive Council.
- K.C.I.E.—Sir Alexander Badenoch, C.S.I., C.I.E., Auditor-General of India, and a former President of the Executive Committee of this Institution; O. K. Caroe, Esq., C.S.I., C.I.E., I.C.S., Secretary, External Affairs Department, and a member of the Council of the United Service Institution of India.
- C.I.E.—W. W. Dalziel, Esq. Secretary, Law, Commerce and Labour Departments, Government of Orissa; A. D. Gorwala, Esq., Director of Civil Supplies and Supply Commissioner, Bombay; Brigadier J. I. Muirhead, M.C., Commander, Delhi Area; Brigadier E. W. Rogers, Director of Armaments, G.H.Q.; Major-General Syed Ahmed-el-Edroos, Bahadur, O.B.I., Commander H.E.H. The Nizam's Regular Forces; Lieutenant-Colonel W. F. Webb, Dewan, Cutch State; Brigadier A. H. Williams, M.C., Commandant, Infantry Schools, Saugor.

Knighthood.—C. MacI. G. Ogilvie, Esq., C.S.I., C.B.E., I.C.S., Defence Dept. Secretary to the Government of India, and a member of the Council of the United Service Institution since 1937; D. Pilditch, Esq., C.I.E., Director, Intelligence Bureau, Home Department, Government of India.

C.B.E.—Colonel F. Harris, M.C., M.B.; Brigadier L. A. Loup, R.I.A.S.C.; Major-General R. P. L. Ranking, M.C.; Colonel M. L. Treston, I.M.S., Inspector-General, Civil Hospitals, Burma; F. Young, Esq., C.I.E., lately Commissioner of Police, Sind; Brigadier D. E. Whitworth, M.C.

O.B.E.—Colonel W. H. G. Beard, and Punjab Regiment; Lieutenant-Colonel C. B. Boulden, R.E.; Brigadier G. P. Crampton, M.C.; Lieutenant-Colonel G. Creffield, M.B.E., 8th Punjab Regiment; Brigadier R. E. le Fleming, M.C., I.A.; Brigadier R. Gardiner, R.E.; Colonel C. C. J. Kellie, 1st Punjab Regiment; Brigadier E. W. Langlands, I.A.; Colonel W. H. Lindquist, 1st

Gurkha Rifles; A. P. Low, Esq., Deputy Commissioner, Bannu, N.W.F.P.; Colonel H. Paterson, I.A.O.C.; Brigadier C. F. L. Stevens, M.C.; Lieutenant-Colonel G. B. Still, I.A.C.; Brigadier D. F. W. Warren, I.A.

M.B.E.—Major P. G. W. M. Coke, 18th R. Garhwal Rifles; Major Jaswant Singhji Parmar, Kotah State Forces; Colonel A. H. Burnett, C.B., D.S.O., Chief of Staff, Nizam's Regular Forces, Hyderabad, and The Revd. Donald MacDonald.

M.C.-Major D. C. S. David, R.E.

General Sir Alan Brooke, K.C.B., D.S.O., K.C.S.I., C.B., D.S.O., A.D.C., Chief of the Imperial General Staff, has been promoted to the rank of Field-Marshal.

#### New Members

THE following new members have been elected to the Institution during the past three months. In addition, some sixteen Officers' Messes have become subscribing members during the same period:

Abdul Hamid Ibrahim, Lieut., Ashton, Lieut. D. K., Atkins, Lieut. W. P., Axtell, Major L. H. W.,

Barbora, Lieut. P. C.,

Bhopal, Air Commodore H.H.

Muhammad Hamidullah

Khan, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E.,

C.V.O., the Nawab of,

Brears, Captain O. B.,

Bruce, Lieut. R. R.,

Burnett, Captain P. D.,

Busby, Captain C. H. G.,

Castle, Lieut.-Colonel W. J., Charlton, Lieut. G. R., Cheales, Major M. P., Christian, Major J. L., Connell, Captain G. H., Cunningham, Major E. C. J.,

Daglish, Major J.,
Dalip Mansingh, and-Lieut.,
Damerell, Major W. J.,
Darley, Major G.V.C.,
Dartnell, Lieut. E. J. J.,

Eades, J. H., Esq., El-Edroos, Major-General S. A., Bahadur, C.I.E., O.B.I., Eggers, Captain H. F., Elliott, Major J. H.,

Fakroddin, Captain M., Finlayson, Lieut. M. J., Finlayson, Lieut.-Colonel R. L., M.B.E., Fish, Captain N. F., Fosbury, Captain J. A., Garrard, Lieut. B. C., Gerty, Lieut.-Colonel B. C. H., Ghulam Husain, Captain, Gill, Captain N. T., Gray, Captain W., Greenwood, Captain A. A., \*Grieve, Captain A. K., M.C., Hall, Sub-Lieut. J. R., Lieut.-Colonel J. Hammond, D., Hardy, Captain H., Harris, Lieut.-Colonel R., Hector, Lieut. P., Hingston, Lieut.-Colonel W. G., Holloway, Captain S. D., Homan, Captain G. D. St. J., Idle, 2nd-Lieut. W. H. M., Iyengar, Captain J. K., Jackson, Major A. W., James, Lieut.-Colonel B. S., Jenkins, Major-General F. A. M. B., D.S.O., O.B.E., M.C., Karuna Karan Nair, 2nd-Lieut. Kureishey, Lieut. M. R. T.,

Lai, Captain R. C., Lewis, and-Lieut. R. L., MacCabe, Major J. W., MacFetridge, Major C. H. T., McTurk, Captain J., Maddock, Lieut.-Colonel L. F. Makins, Captain R. C. D., Martin, Major W. Gordon., Maurik, Captain J. Van., Maybury-Lewis, S. A., Esq., Merens, Mons. A., Miles-Thomas, Captain C. S., Mohamed Abdus Samad, Lieut., Mohd. Firoze, Captain, Mohite, Captain S. P., Moran, Captain W. P., Morris, Major A. E. C., Mullaly, Major J. C. D., Mullick, Lieut. R. L., Nair, Lieut. V. K., Nakvy, Lieut. S. M. H., Negi, Major L. S., Nightingale, Lieut. K. E., Pakeman, Major S. A., Patel, Lieut. F. S., \*Patiala, H.H. Maharajadhiraj Singh, Yadavindra Mahindar Bahadur, G.B.E., the Maharaja of., Pereira, 2nd-Lieut. P. V.,

\*Peart, Lieut.-Colonel J. F.,
Peto, Captain M. F.,
Phelps-Gardiner, Captain G.,
H.,
Pickford, Major S. C. S.,
Pollock, Major L. A.,
Prescott, R. G. B., Esq.,
C.M.G., O.B.E.,
Pritchard, Lieut.-Colonel G.,
A. T.,
Ransford, Major J. K.,
Roche, Major D. J. H.,

Sankara Warriar, 2nd-Lieut... C., Scanes, Major H. J. W., Seed, Lieut.-Colonel R. B., Sharp, Major N. C., Shiv Kishore, Captain, Spinney, Lieut. O. F.,

Taylor, Commander H. G. P.,. Taylor, Major R. O., Tejram Thakur, Captain, Thapar, F./O. H. S., Thorpe, Major L. A.

Watson, Captain R., Watts, H.P., Esq., Wheeler, Major W. H., White, Captain D. J., Whyte, Captain R. B., Wood, Captain G. B.,

#### **Gold Medal Essay Competition**

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL R. E. Holloway, M.B.E., R.E., has been chosen as the winner of the last Essay Competition, the subject of which was "to consider the foreign relations of a self-governing Union of India and their bearing on the problem of the defence of the country."

On this occasion the Judges felt themselves unable to recommend the award of the Gold Medal, but an honorarium has been granted to the winner. The entry adjudged by the majority of the judges to be the second best was submitted by Major the Hon. C. Birdwood, M.V.O.

The subject set for the 1944 Competition, as shown in the announcement appearing elsewhere in this issue, is:

"In the past it has been the policy that the training of the armed forces of the Empire should not be related to any particular type of terrain. Discuss this policy in respect of both land and air forces in the light of experience gained in the present war."

Full particulars will be seen on the page giving the announcement.

#### **MacGregor Memorial Medal**

RECOMMENDATIONS for the award of this year's medals will be considered at the annual meeting of the Council, to be held in May. Names and particulars should be submitted as soon as possible.

The MacGregor Memorial Medal was founded in 1888 as a memorial to the late Major-General Sir Charles MacGregor, who founded the United Service Institution of India. It is awarded for the best military reconnaissance or journey of exploration of the year, which, during the war, may have been achieved during an escape from a Far Eastern enemy country into, for instance, India.

The awards are made in June, and are: (a) For officers, British or Indian, silver medal, and (b) for soldiers, British or Indian, a silver medal with Rs. 100 as gratuity. For especially valuable work, a gold medal may be awarded in place of one of the silver medals, whenever the administrators of the Fund deem it desirable. The Council may also award a special additional silver medal, without gratuity, to a soldier, for specially good work.

The award of the medals is made by His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief, India, as Vice-Patron, and the Council of the United Service Institution of India, who were appointed administrators of the Fund by the MacGregor Memorial Committee.

Eligibility for the award is open to: (a) Officers and other ranks of the Royal Navy, Army, Royal Air Force and the Dominion Forces, while serving on the Indian establishment. (b) Officers and other ranks of the Royal Indian Navy, Indian Army, Indian Air Force and of the Indian States Forces, wherever serving. (The term "Indian Army" includes the Indian Auxiliary and Territorial Forces, Frontier Militia, Levies, Military Police and Military Corps under local governments.)

Personal risk to life during the reconnaissance or exploration is not a necessary qualification for the award of the medal: but, in the event of two journeys being of equal value, the man who has incurred the greater risk will be considered to have the greater claim to the award.

When the work of the year has either not been of sufficient value or notice of it has been received too late for consideration before the Council Meeting, the medal may be awarded for any reconnaissance during previous years considered by His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief in India to deserve it.

The medal may be worn in uniform by Indian soldiers on ceremonial parades, suspended round the neck by the ribbon issued with the medal. Replacements of the ribbon may be obtained on payment from the Secretary, United Service Institution of India, Simla.

#### Contributions to the Journal

Articles on matters of military, naval and air force interest are welcomed. They should not exceed 5,000 words in length, and preferably should run to 3,000 words. Contributions

Digitized by Google

should be typewritten, double spacing, and in view of the paper shortage, may be typed on both sides, providing a moderately thick paper is used.

Contributors unable to submit articles already typed may send them in manuscript form, and arrangements will be made for them to be typed in Simla, the small charge being deducted from the contributor's fee. Payment is made on publication, at rates up to Rs. 150 according to the value of the contribution.

All articles dealing with military subjects are submitted to the authorities before publication, for security reasons. Contributions may, if the author desires, appear under a pseudonym; in such cases, the name of the author remains strictly confidential. The right to omit or amend any part of an article is reserved by the Executive Committee.

#### Library

An extensive library is available for members of the Institution at the headquarters in Simla. Books may be loaned to members resident in India, and those borrowing works in person must enter particulars in the book provided. Members stationed outside Simla may receive books on application; they will be sent post-free by registered parcel post, and must be returned within two months, or immediately on recall. No more than three volumes may be issued at any one time. Reference books and works marked "Confidential" may not be removed from the library.

Members wishing to retain a work for more than two months should notify the Secretary to that effect. If, after the expiration of three weeks from the date of issue a book is wanted by another member, it will be recalled. Should a book not be returned within fourteen days of the date of recall, it must be paid for, the cost of lost or defaced books being refunded by the member to whom they were issued. Such volumes which have become out of print will be valued by the Executive Committee, the member being required to pay the cost so fixed.

The issue of a book to any member under the above rules implies the latter's agreement with the regulations.

A catalogue of books in the library may be obtained on payment of Rs. 2/8 per copy, plus 13 annas postage.

#### Letters to the Editor

Correspondence is invited for inclusion in the Journal on subjects referred to in articles, or which are of interest to members of the Services in India. Letters should be as brief as possible, and should be sent to the Editor, United Service Institution of India Journal. Simla.

#### A.H.Q. Staff College Course

Sets of papers of the above-mentioned (1939) series, with 3 maps, are available for sale at Rs. 7 per set.

(i) Precis of lectures and papers ... Rs. 2/-

(ii) Strategy and Tactics papers, including 3 maps ... Rs. 5/

### ROYAL SOCIETY FOR THE ENCOURAGEMENT OF ARTS MANUFACTURES AND COMMERCE

#### PATRON-HIS MAJESTY THE KING

#### COUNCIL

#### PRESIDENT

E. F. ARMSTRONG, PH.D., D.SC., LL.D., F.R.S.

#### VICE-PRESIDENTS

LORD ABERCONWAY, C.B.E.

W. H. ANSELL, M.C., P.B.I.B.A.

A. C. Bossom, F.R.I.B.A., M.P.

SIR ATUL CHATTERJEE, G.C.I.E., K.C.S.I.

LIEUT.-COL. P. J. COWAN, M.B.E., M.INST.C.E., M.I.MECH.E.

SIR JOSIAH CROSBY, K.C.M.G., K.B.E., C.I.E.,

SIR EDWARD CROWE, K.C.M.G., Chairman, Braminations Committee.

SIR WILLIAM DAVISON, K.B.E., M.P.

T. C. DUGDALE, R.A., R.P.

SIR EDWARD A. GAIT, K.C.S.I., C.I.E.

E. W. GOODALE, M.C.

LORD HOBDER, G.C.V.O., M.D., B.SC., D.C.L., F.R.C.P. LORD HUNTINGFIELD, K.C.M.G.

SIR HABRY A. F. LINDSAY, K.O.I.E., C.B.B., Chairman, Dominions and Colonies Section Committee.

SIR HENRY MOMAHON, G.C.M.G., G.C.V.O., K.C.I.E., C.S.I.

G. K. MENZIES, C.B.E.

JOHN A. MILNE, C.B.E., Chairman, R.D.I. Committee.

C. C. PATERSON, O.B.E., D.SC., M.I.E.E., F.B.S.

E. M. RICH, C.B.E., F.C.G.I., B.SC.

E. MUNRO RUNTZ.

SIR JOHN RUSSELL, O.B.E., D.SC., F.R.S.

CAPTAIN A. H. RYLEY, Chairman, Thomas Gray Committee.

SIR NORMAN VRENON, B.T., M.A.

W. W. WAKEFIELD, M.A., M.P.

#### ORDINARY MEMBERS OF COUNCIL

SIR FRANK BROWN, C.I.E.

MAJOR W. H. CADMAN, B.SC., F.I.C.

G. D. H. COLE.

PROVESSOR E. C. DODDS, M.V.O., D.SC., M.D., F.B.O.P., F.R.S.

SIR THOMAS DUNLOP, K.C.M.G., C.M.G.

REV. ETHELBERT GOODCRILD.

MISS CAROLINE HASLETT, C.B.E., COMP.I.E.E. F. R. HIORNS, F.S.A., F.E.I.B.A., M.T.P.I.

ROBERT W. HOLLAND, O.B.E., N.A., M.SC.,

C. GEOFFREY HOLME, M.B.R.

ALLAN WALTON, R.D.I.

JOHN G. WILSON.

Ez-oficio MEMBER OF THE COUNCIL

PERCY SMITH, R.D.I., Master of the Faculty of Royal Designers for Industry.

TREASURERS

WILLIAM WILL

OSWALD P. MILNE, F.R.I.B.A., and Chairman, Industria? Art Bursaries Board.

SECRETARY

K. W. LUCKHURST, M.A. (absent on Active Service).

Acting Secretary-MISS J. SCOTT ROGERS.

Assistant Secretary, and Secretary, India and Burma and Dominions & Colonies Sections

D. C. MARTIN, B.SC., PH.D. (absent on War Service).

Acting Assistant Secretary—Miss S. Heslop-Davies. Honorary Solicitors—Messes. Bristows, Cooke & Carphael.

Auditors-Messes. Deloitte, Plender, Griffiths & Co.

Full particulars relating to the work of the Society and conditions of membership may be obtained from the Acting Secretary. The Annual Subscription is Three Guineas; the Life Subscription Thirty Guineas. There is no Entrance Fee.

The Society's Journal which contains full reports of the Society's Meetings, together with general articles, book reviews, etc., normally issued weekly, is published fortnightly during the War. It is posted free to Fellows.

All communications for the Society should be addressed to:

THE ACTING SECRETARY, ROYAL SOCIETY OF ARTS, 6-8 JOHN ADAM STREET, ADELPHI, LONDON, W.C.2.



#### GOLD MEDAL PRIZE ESSAY COMPETITION

The Council has selected the following subject for the Gold Medal Prize Essay Competition for 1944:

"In the past it has been the policy that the training of the armed forces of the Empire should not be related to any particular type of terrain. Discuss this policy in respect of both land and air forces in the light of experience gained in the present War."

Entries are invited from all commissioned officers of His Majesty's Forces, from gazetted officers of the Civil Administration in India, and from officers of the Indian States Forces.

Essays, which should be typewritten (double spacing) and submitted in triplicate, must be received by the Secretary, United Service Institution of India, Simla, on or before June 30, 1944. In order that the anonymity of each candidate should be preserved, a motto should be written at the top of each entry. A sealed envelope, bearing on the outside the motto, and containing inside the name and address of the author of the essay, must accompany each entry.

Entries should not exceed fifteen pages (approx. 8,000 words) of the size and style of the Journal. Should any authority be quoted in the essay, the title of the work referred to should be given.

Three judges chosen by the Council will adjudicate. They may recommend a money award not exceeding Rs. 500, either in addition to, or in substitution of, the Gold Medal, and will submit their decision to the Council. The name of the successful candidate will be published in the October, 1944 issue of the Journal.

Copyright of all essays submitted will be reserved by the Council of the United Service Institution of India.

# The Journal

of the

# Anited Service Institution of India

#### CONTENTS

				PAGE
Notes by the Secretary	•••	•••	•••	xii
Frontispiece.				
Matters of Moment	•••	•••	•••	1
Some Lessons from the Italian		gn. By	Major-	_
General F. A. M. B. Jenkins	•••	•••	•••	8
The Bandar Shahpur Incident.	By "Me	ouse''	•••	18
Home Again. By An Officer's W	/ife	• • • •	•••	31
Maintaining Army Equipment.  Duguid	By Majo	r-General 	D. R.	35
No Next of Kin. By Lieutenant	-Colonel	E. Johnsto	one	45
Review of Frontier Policy from			Lieut	10
Colonel F. C. Simpson, O.B.			•••	50
Frontier Tactics Defended. By I	Lieutenan	t-Colonel	P. A.	
Meade	•••	•••	•••	61
Things People Say	•••	•••	•••	66
Burma: Three Pacifications. By	y Lieute	nant-Coloi	nel C.	
Foucar	•••	•••	• • •	69
"What Do You Think of That?"		•••	•••	76
Military Flags. By Lieutenant-C	olonel C	. C. R. M	<b>furphy</b>	79
The Fighting Spirit. By "Auspo	ex''	•••	•••	81
Civil Liaison. By LieutColonel	the Hor	n. C. Bir	dwood	84
Feeding the Indian Soldier. By	A Medic	al Officer	•••	90
Sentimental Journey. By Colone	I E. S. P	hipson	•••	93
Traffic in the Battle Zone. By I	Lieutenan	t-Colonel	F. L.	
Roberts	•••	• • • ,	•••	97
Sir Aurel Stein, K.C.I.E.	•••	•••	•••	103
Recent Additions to the Library	•••	•••	•••	107
A Vital Post-War Plan for India.	By Lieu	tColonel	R. B.	
Phayre, M.C.	•••	•••	•••	114
Letters to the Editor	•••	hy Cione	o	117
	Digitized	hu V mt H HC	7115	

### THE

# INDIAN STATES FORCES



# ANNUAL

1944

The Indian States are taking a great part in helping towards Victory. This Annual contains news of the States Forces in operational areas and in their States.

Please write for your copy before March 15th to the Editor, The Indian States Forces Annual, Headquarters of the Military Adviser-in-Chief, Indian States Forces, New Delhi.

Price Rs. 3 each



- "They shall grow not old,
  - " As they that are left grow old,
- "Age shall not weary them, nor the years condemn,
  - "At the going down of the oun, and in the morning,
- "We will remember them."-

Laurence Bingon.

## The Journal

of the

# United Service Anstitution of Andia

Vol. LXXIV

JANUARY, 1944

No. 314

The views expressed in this Journal are in no sense official, and the opinions of contributors in their published articles are not necessarily those of the Council of the Institution.

## MATTERS OF MOMENT

T HIS IS assuredly the most hopeful year since 1939. It is the year of destiny and decision. We have witnessed the triumph over the U-boat; the amazing onward surge of the Russian armies; victories in Northern Africa and Italy; the vigorous pounding of Germany's armament industries; the harness-

many's armament industries; the harnessing of the vast resources of our American ally; and of increasing American and Australian successes in the Far East. With those and other memories we leave 1943 with gratitude, and enter 1944 with a stoutness of heart and assurance of victory. Gallant merchant seamen (and every Service man will acknowledge our great debt to them), sailors, soldiers and airmen of the United Nations have all contributed to setting the stage for the scene which will unfold itself in the coming months. Grim, bloody battles face us, but beyond is the shining light of liberation and deliverance for scores of millions of enslaved peoples.

Nonetheless, this wave of optimism must not blind us to the tasks ahead. Militarily, our present position has been gained because of the unrelenting deter-The Grand mination and sacrifices of united peoples; Strategical that determination and those sacrifices Plan must continue and probably increase until the unconditional surrender of the enemies is obtained. Let us face facts. Germany is still formidable. We can break her, and we will, but the effort will have to be even greater than it has been hitherto. We have now smashed the Nazi's defences at sea, sinking her only big battleship fit for active service; the raining down of bombs on her munition plants and military centres has reduced her output; her Air Force has manifestly been weakened; and the Army remains-or what is left of it after the defeats it has sustained in Russia and Italy. The grand strategical plan becomes clear. reducing Germany's sea power we have been enabled to transport masses of armies and armour across the seas; we have achieved overwhelming air superiority, both of which factors give us confidence that our bridgeheads across the Channel and in other places will be established with a minimum of loss, thus paving the way for the greatest series of invasions in history. This, then, will be a year of further sacrifice; losses there will be, and possibly greater hardships. But it will be a year in which the opportunity will present itself to free peoples to rid the world of tyranny and aggression, a year which will vindicate the faith of the United Nations, and bring them to an age which we devoutly hope will be lasting peace.

ROM THE dark, difficult days in which beleaguered Britain found itself after the fall of France was born what the world now knows as "lend-lease." It is not the least of the debts we owe to President Roosevelt who, in

Modern
Magna Carta

Magna Carta

Magna Carta

Magna Carta

Magna Carta

Magna Carta, ranking in importance in this war with the fall of France, the victory of the Battle of Britain, the Nazi attack on Russia, and Japan's infamous bombardment of Pearl Harbour, removed one of Britain's gravest difficulties at that time. It was not only the turning-point in Britain's fortunes. It was the firm foundation on which this war will be won, for it has welded itself into one

of the strongest links binding the United Nations. From it has evolved "lend-lease in reverse"—that is, the Allies have pooled their resources to an extent hitherto unknown in history, each helping the other in armaments, equipment, shipping and food.

How these commitments will be adjusted is a post-war problem, for in the initial agreement between the United States and Great Britain, signed in Febru-The ary, 1942, the only stipulation was that Initial the final determination should not "burden Agreement commerce between the two countries, but permit mutually advantageous economic relations between them and the betterment of world-wide economic relations." Other countries who accepted such aid were to be included in the settlement, which would accord with the economic objectives laid down in the Atlantic Charter. In short, the arrangement applies to any country whose defence is deemed by the President to be vital to the defence of the United States.

Money is not the yardstick in measuring the value of "lend-lease." Everything that will help to win the war falls within its compass. The system has made Not a nations realists, has brought them closer One-Sided together, and has made countries "united" Bargain in word as well as in deed. It is a mistake to imagine that the "giving" is one-sided. No charge, for instance, falls on America for the transport of her troops to the United Kingdom in British ships, or for their road-andrail transport in England; about 20,000 British civilians who work for the U.S. Forces in the U.K. are paid by England: even the expenses of the U.S. Army newspapers in the European theatres of operations are paid for by "lend-lease in reverse." Over 400,000,000 lbs. of foodstuffs for America's army in the United Kingdom fall under the same heading, while British inventions are also all made available to our American Allies. The system has spread. Australia is producing a wide variety of small craft for General MacArthur's men and, with New Zealand, she is feeding them. Canada has her own "lend-lease" policy, and for the twelve months ended March 31, 1943, had given Britain, Russia, Australia and New Zealand some £250,000,000 worth of supplies without payment.

Digitized by Google

These facts concerning "lend-lease in reverse" must not overshadow the mighty flood of equipment, food, etc., which has come from "the arsenal of demo-Realism cracy." It was a scheme invented by in America because, with realistic foresight, Action it was seen that it was the best way of winning the war, and no one will deny that it is doing so. On this subject it is well to cast aside all cant and humbug. The British Commonwealth, America and all the peoples comprising the United Nations are in this fight. They are giving of their guns and guts to reach the one goal—Pictory. Could realism go further than that all they possess should go into the pool—the pool in which in the fulness of time German and Jap alike will meet his doom?

**FEW SUBJECTS** have so captured the imagination as postwar Britain, its place in world commerce, its position as an industrial country, and its possibilities as a "home for heroes." Put briefly, we (the fighting forces thousands of miles from our homes in Great Britain) Some want to make a better living than we made Significant in the past. What are the prospects? Look **Figures** at our national trade first. The war has upset the balance of the foreign trade which was our heritage. Taking an average of the three years before the war, imports into Great Britain totalled £930,000,000; they were paid for, according to The Economist, by exports of £540,000,000, investment income of £200,000.000, shipping earnings of £110,000,000 and insurance and banking commissions of £40,000,000. Our national trade balance was therefore £40.000.000 on the wrong side. What will be the position after the War? Our Merchant Navy is smaller, and many of our overseas investments have gone; but we shall build new ships, recover our overseas trade, at the same time importing less and growing more in the Home country.

Nevertheless, as our country lives by its foreign trade, and as that trade must be paid for by imports, the above

figures show clearly that if our standard of

Exports

Must
Increase

an enormous increase—some experts put it
as high as 50 per cent. Our nation attained its high position
by the enterprise, initiative, efficiency and inventiveness of
its peoples; it is bred in our bones; and those same qualities

which are winning the war are going to win the peace. But the going will not be easy. We shall have to face severe competition. And it is on the result of our endeavours in building anew that we shall be able to put into operation the schemes of social betterment now being discussed.

We have written the above in terms of the nation as a whole. What does it teach us as individuals? To every thinking man the answer is crystal clear. The Writing We must not only answer the call to save to on the win the war. We must save to win the Wall peace, for the above facts prove, if they prove anything, that a post-war life of luxury will be a myth, that everyone, high and low, will have to work hard, and that a "rainy day" will assuredly come to those who fail to save now, and deliberately blind themselves to what lies ahead. Moreover, every anna saved now and loaned to Government will not only help towards victory, but will help to strangle inflation, wherever we may be. With savings individuals can show their initiative in starting businesses; in tiding over the interim period; and in achieving that degree of confidence which separates success and failure.

FTER THE first World War Great Britain was faced with the necessity of expanding considerably her Colonial Administrative Service. Mandated territories required expert officers; Colonies which had for years recruited its regular flow of officers had to make up for the The Colonial years during which recruitment had ceased. Administrative Young officers had to be trained for the Service various branches of the Service, and after a time a special course, lasting a year, was established in Oxford and Cambridge Universities in order that these officials might learn as much as possible about Colonial Administration. The system worked well; and, as a result. specialists in agriculture, education, administration, law and a variety of other subjects took up appointments in the Colonies, with considerable benefit to the inhabitants.

Recruitment to these Services has again had to be curtailed, and to meet the demand for such officials after this

An Opportunity in India

or in

scheme, in which ex-Service personnel might participate. The idea may commend itself to those concerned with the progress of our Colonial Empire, while for the I.C.S. it would also be helpful. As our correspondent says in his letter, published elsewhere in this issue, though radical differences exist between village life in India and our Colonics in language, law and customs, a candidate who had undergone a course near, say, a Punjab village would find the first-hand experience he had gained of real value, for many Indian villages are now putting into practice the lessons of rural reconstruction, are advancing in the spheres of hygiene, agriculture and education, and are making great strides in their economic life. Their methods of overcoming difficulties, their adoption of new ideas, and their very enthusiasm can in this way not only help in the further progress of our Imperial Colonial policy, but assist in quickly training recruits for an Indian Civil Service with a great tradition.

HE FIRST article in our last issue showed that Indian soldiers in England are worthily representing their The writer, in his admirable pen-picture of the English village, showed how fine was the impression they created in the minds of our kith and kin at Worthy Home. The same thing is happening in **Ambassadors** India where, obeying the spirit of the poster urging British personnel to regard themselves as Ambassadors, many soldiers are getting to know the Indian. Such conduct can (as it has done in England) help in large measure to build up a real friendliness between the two countries. Those sepoys set a high standard in a country foreign to them, and their example is well worthy of emulation here, for national friendliness springs from peoples who know and understand one another at first-hand.

THELPING A GOOD cause is always a strong trait in a Britisher's nature, and when the object is for the sick, for wounded fighting men or for prisoners of war the call is never made in vain. In this war, as in the last, tens of

The Red Cross Society for those purposes, and proof of the recipients' gratitude was evident in the warm tribute which a former prisoner of war paid to the Society in our last issue. Nevertheless, although its work is so widely recognised, the extent of its operations is not so generally known. Since the

beginning of the war the British Society alone has spent no less than £7,385,000 on comforts for prisoners of war alone; it seldom has less than £500,000 worth of food in stock ready for parcels; and it now sends regularly to prisoners in Europe food, clothing, games and educational equipment; it runs 230 hospitals in the British Isles as well as several overseas; over 2,500,000 pounds worth of stores have been sent to Russia; over a thousand ambulances are kept in service in Britain; help is given to relatives in searching for the "missing;" its welfare visitors look after the impersonal needs of the wounded; and over 300,000 ladies work to add to the stock of bandages and garments.

The organisation lost little in the last war. In this everything went in Singapore and Hong Kong; stocks were lost in Burma; huge stores went when France fell; Greece, Crete and in the Good "blitz" in England the Society's losses were Cause severe. Small wonder is it, then, that more and more funds are needed. This year the British Society hopes to raise £7,000,000; the Indian Red Cross Society is also making an intensive appeal for funds. They will come from rich and poor, for distress knows no barrier of class, creed or colour, and they will help this, surely the greatest beneficent Society in the world, in its grand work. Indeed, one of the finest testimonials the society has received was a shabby little envelope which reached their Head Office not long ago, addressed: "The Red Cross, the place where they help people, London."

Members are earnestly requested to notify any change of address to the Secretary without delay. Such cooperation will not only help to ease postal traffic at a time when mail services are overburdened, but will also ensure prompt receipt of the Journal each quarter.

## SOME LESSONS FROM THE ITALIAN CAMPAIGN

By Major-General F. A. M. B. Jenkins, D.S.O., O.B.E., M.C.

[This condensed version of a lecture is based on one month's stay in Italy while Major-General Jenkins was commanding an Indian Infantry brigade in the 8th Indian Division. General Jenkins did not lead his Brigade into action, but first-hand information and experiences were gained from commanders on the spot during a tour of the battle front, which was carried out during the latter half of October before returning to India. Apart from this, many of the lessons brought out were learnt from the campaigns of Eritrea, Abyssinia, and the Western Desert whilst General Jenkins was in command of a battalion, and while he was commanding a brigade in the Middle East for just over one and a half years.—Ed., U.S.I. "Journal".]

# LESSONS APPLICABLE TO JUNGLE WARFARE

MANY OF the main lessons brought out apply equally to training for, and operations in, jungle country. Will our troops always be fighting in jungle country? Will they not emerge one day and be confronted with open country? Will they not be faced at some time or other with hills? Or will they not have to take part in combined operations in order to capture some island or port vital to the strategic plan?

During the last war, from 1914 to 1918 we concentrated on trench warfare. We could think of nothing else. All our tactical training was concentrated on trench attacks, raids and other trench warfare tactics, with the result that when we emerged from our trenches in 1918 and advanced into open country, our leaders had not even an elementary knowledge of the tactics of open warfare.

Again, take the Western Desert. Our minds were concentrated on "desert warfare" and its peculiarities. We thought in terms of "boxes", "close leaguers", "Jock Cols.", "Cowpats". The time then came when we were confronted with hills and close country. Many of our troops found themselves wrongly equipped and untrained for operations in that type of country. We had not looked ahead.

So let us look broadly and learn the lessons brought out in past campaigns, and fit ourselves and our men for all types of operations, still concentrating on that particular type of operation for which we are immediately training.

Early Landings in Italy.—The 8th Army landed in the toe of Italy on September 3, and the 5th Army landed on the Salerno beaches on September 8. The object of the 5th Army was to capture Naples; that of the 8th Army was to move up the East Coast, capture Taranto, Brindisi and Bari, and come into line with the 5th Army on the general line, Termoli-Vinchituro.

Things did not go according to plan. They never do in war. Our landings at Salerno were nearly a failure, and part of the 8th Army had to be detailed to the assistance of the 5th Army. However, by mid-October the line Termoli—Naples had more or less been consolidated.

The ports of Taranto and Brindisi fell into our hands about mid-September. These were captured by an Airborne Division. Opposing them was a German airborne division of equal strength in men, arms and equipment. These two divisions fought it out between them, and our chaps saw them off. We suffered few casualties.

Little damage had been done to Taranto, borne out by the fact that the 8th Indian Division landed in Taranto harbour in ships, some of 20,000 tonnage, a fortnight after its capture.

Bari fell soon after, and this port, although damaged to a certain extent, was soon in working order.

Present situation.—Once the line Termoli—Naples had been consolidated the main objective of the two armies was as follows:

8th Army: Ortona—Pescara, with two main obstacles to cross, the Trigono and Sangro rivers. Both these have now been crossed, and Ortona is in our hands.

5th Army: Cassino—Rome, with two main obstacles to cross, the Volturno and Carigliano rivers. The crossing of the Volturno was a major operation, successfully carried out by British troops. Once across, our troops were confronted with mountains. Latest reports show that our troops have now crossed the Carigliano river, and have captured Minturno. Cassino is gradually being outflanked by British, American, and French troops.

How far we intend to go only our higher commanders know. The greater the German force we can contain in Italy, the greater the effect it will have on the course of operations elsewhere. Only by vigorous offensive action can we achieve this.

Present area of Operations.—The country is mainly mountainous and intersected by rivers and wadis, which flow across the grain of the country. Many are too deep to wade, and involve river crossings, i.e., the Volturno, Carigliano and Sangro rivers. All are liable to spate after heavy rains, and during the present season are in constant flood; with melting snow and April rains, the maximum flooding takes place from February to May; from May to September they are dry.

In the coastal regions the country becomes less steep, and open plains exist, suitable for tank movement, such as the Foggia, Volturno, Carigliano, Termoli and Rome plains, and also the coastal strip between Termoli and Pescara.

Tanks must, of course, be expected anywhere, but it is only in the plains that they can operate in any large numbers. During the present season, however, except during the dry periods, little tank movement is possible.

Good roads and railways exist, both laterally and parallel to the axis of advance. Both are easily put out of action by demolitions, and these are being carried out thoroughly by the Germans; not even the smallest culvert is left unblown. Battles are mainly for the roads and the heights dominating the roads.

Road bridges we can improvise, but railway bridges are a different problem, and few railways were in working order in the forward areas when I left.

Deep snow in the centre, which persists into April, is also liaable to block roads. Further, the Germans, as usual, are slowing up our movement by lavish use of mines and booby traps. These are laid in areas which it is anticipated troops will occupy or use, such as dispersal areas, diversions round obstacles, suitable artillery and machine gun positions, houses, orchards, etc.

In the mountainous parts M. T. movement is much restricted, and confined mainly to the roads. Dispersal off the roads is difficult both for guns and M. T.

Many towns and villages are built astride the roads on high ground. Each one becomes a strong point when fortified, nor are they easily by-passed. But apart from this, generally in the centre of the towns the streets are fit for one-way traffic only, which makes them complete bottle-necks for M.T. and troop movement.

The height of the mountains vary from a few hundred feet in the coastal plains to over 7,000 ft. in the centre. The whole area is fertile, and in the flatter parts of the country olive orchards and vineyards abound. The mountains are scrub-covered on the lower features, with forests of oak and firs higher up. These gradually thin out, and the higher slopes become rocky and precipitous, making climbing with heavy equipment extremely difficult.

The whole area is well populated, and the villagers stick to their homes and continue their work in the fields until driven out by our, or the enemy's, concentrations of fire. I saw a village on the Volturno front completely blotted out by one of our concentrations, and it was not till the firing had ceased that any of the villagers who were left started to stream back to our lines.

It was amazing sometimes to see some of the farmers unconcernedly ploughing, with shells and mortars whistling over their heads and bursting nearby. Things may have altered now, but that was the situation when I left at the end of October last. The Italian villager certainly has pluck.

Food in the agricultural area when I left was plentiful. Turkeys, duck, eggs, dates, and, of course, grapes could be purchased without difficulty, and also all kinds of vegetables. The troops out there must have been luckier than the people at home in the way of turkeys for Christmas. I know of one Corps Headquarters that managed to reserve forty turkeys for its Christmas dinner. I hope it got the opportunity to sit down and enjoy them!

Food was not so plentiful in the larger towns, and water was scarce in Taranto, as the main supply, which came by viaduct from Naples, had been blown up by the Germans.

I found the Italians all out to help us, and "Tommy," as he always does, was fraternising 100 per cent.—not surprising, considering the comeliness of the Italian women. We had difficulty to start with over wine. In the Taranto and Brindisi areas wine is not only good, but cheap. Further, there is plenty of it. Beer, when we first got there, was short, and wine being the next best



thing, "Tommy" took to that. Not realising its potency, he literally "looked upon it when it was red." So a brewery was started at Bari, and with stocks of beer coming out from home the situation eased up.

Italian troops have been operating with the Americans on the 5th Army front, and I understand a fighter formation has helped to except some of our hombers.

Climate.—October, November and December are the rainiest months, with a rainfall of six inches in each month. This total is not spread out over the whole month, but concentrated into short periods. Snow falls in the mountains during these months. January and February are the months for gales, with an average rainfall of one inch per month. Deep snow in the mountains, as I pointed out before, persists into April. From May to September are the dry months, though occasional storms occur up to August.

Type of country brings out the following main lessons.—

1. The nature of the country and the ease with which roads are put out of action forces our troops off the roads into the mountains. The lack of animal transport, dispersal areas for artillery and M. T., and lack of pack artillery means that troops must, when operating in the mountainous parts, be prepared to rely on their own weapons for supporting fire, and these must be carried, plus food and ammunition. So Brigade, Battalions, and attached troops, such as Field Ambulance sections, F.O.O. parties, Sappers and Miner platoons, etc., must be prepared to move into the mountains on a man-pack basis, self-contained for 48 hours.

This cannot be learnt on the battlefield. Careful organisation and training are necessary; special equipment must be issued; and all must be prepared to improvise and use any type of animal transport from a donkey to a camel, and, of course, in Burma an elephant. Also, the employment of porters must be considered. Again in the jungles of Burma, this type of transport assumes increasing importance. Further, the training in the carriage of heavy weapons, such as the 3-inch mortar—M.M.G., P.Y.A.T. mortar, and their ammunition, must not be neglected.

It is sad to relate that certain units and formations which landed in Italy were not trained or equipped for modern warfare in mountainous country—and this in spite of the lessons brought out in the campaigns of Eritrea, Abyssinia, Greece, North Africa and even Sicily. Some of the lessons learnt by the Americans in Sicily have been produced in pamphlet form. To my mind, it is one of the best training pamphlets yet produced, but many of the lessons had already been brought out in the campaigns of Eritrea and Abyssinia.

2. I have said that the rivers and wadis quickly flood. This means that improvised bridges are liable to be washed away. It is essential, therefore, that sufficient ammunition and food for at least 48 hours, for any force, however small, operating forward of any watercourse liable to spate, be dumped early. Unless this is done, a force may find itself cut off far from its vital supplies at a time when it most needs them.

3. Never consider any ground too difficult for tanks. Nor should infantry or anti-tank gunners consider any obstacles too difficult to get anti-tank guns across. I have seen guns dragged over the most impossible ground, only achieved by sound training and determination. Every infantryman should be issued with a short length of rope, light but strong. Each rope should have a loop at one end and toggle at the other. These can, when necessary, be joined together and used as tow ropes or for any other purposes for which they may be required.

Air and Sea Superiority.—Our air arm has complete superiority, and our naval ships and sea transport can move at will. This confers on us many advantages, most important of which are:

- (i) Air.—(a) In mountainous country where dispersal off the roads is difficult, our transport can be parked nose to tail, or in close league.
- (b) We have complete freedom of movement along the roads for purposes of maintenance and for troop movement. Further, our convoys can move in close formation, a valuable saving of road space.
- (c) The morale of our troops is unimpaired by frequent livebombing and air strafing. They can concentrate on their ground job without the constant fear of attack from the air. Moreover, morale is raised by the pleasing sight of the enemy being "strafed." Troops sometimes have the satisfaction of seeing their objective strafed from the air daily for a week before they have to attack it.
- 2. Sea.—(a) The enemy is in constant fear of our landing in his rear. This means that large forces must be kept mobile and ready to meet such a threat.
- (b) In the coastal areas, heavy weapons can be moved by sea in order to by-pass a demolition which may take some time to repair. At the battle of Termoli, tanks were brought round by sea and landed north of the river Fottore, where the Germans had blown a series of bridges.
- (c) Attacks by our infantry in the coastal areas can be supported by our Navy shelling from the sea. This shelling can be most unpleasant, being in enfilade. Our Navy is also constantly harassing by fire the enemy's L. of C. and dump areas.

Termoli.—Space does not permit a complete description of the battle, but suffice it to say that it was typical of a landing by sea in the rear of the enemy. Its object was to outflank the enemy, and in conjunction with other operations inland to cut the important lateral road, Termoli—Vinchitura. At one time it was touch and go as to who won the battle. The 16th Panzer Division was switched across from the 5th Army Front, and catching us at an awkward moment, nearly pushed us back into the sea. But with hard fighting we were able to overcome and finally defeat him.

Lessons from the Battle.—I went over the whole area with the Commander who had conducted the operation, and there

were many lessons to be learnt from it. Here are a few of the main ones:

1. The type of country in which our enemies are operating means that unit and formations must be prepared at any time to carry out any of the following operations: (a) breaking through a minefield; (b) a river crossing; and (c) an assault landing by sea—hasty or planned.

Each is a complicated operation, and requires practising. Battle drills are essential, and constant reference to these and any notes on the subject are necessary to ensure that all are reminded of the main points, and are ready to carry out the operation at any time when called upon. Here is a report from an Indian Observer with the 8th Indian Division which bears out what I say:

"An Indian formation of the Eighth Army launched an attack across the river Sangro last night. Gurkhas, Mahrattas and British troops crossed the river under fire, and made their way through minefields."

There you have two of the operations mentioned, and the third is the battle of Termoli.

- 2. Forward troops must report early any road blocks or demolitions, and Divisional Provost must anticipate these by study of air photos and maps. T.C.Ps. can then be ready well up in the column to be posted some way back from the obstacle, and so, prevent M. T. congestion around it. The jam of transport in the area of the blown bridge across the river Biferno was indescribable, and the enemy made full use of the target. Gone are the days when Divisional Provosts were looked upon as "pretty boys" standing at street corners and directing traffic. They are now front-line troops, and must be thoroughly trained in their duties. Officers appointed to Provost units must be specially selected and none but the best accepted.
- 3. All troops must be trained in mine-lifting and detecting. Training in this must be realistic, and must include handling and lifting live mines. "Training minefields" are essential, and these should contain every type of booby trap, so that men will know what to look for when they come up against them. In the 8th Indian Division, this training was not only confined to infantry, but every man knew how to detect mines and make them innocuous. I have since heard that this training has been invaluable and has saved many lives.
- 4. However tired, troops must dig in. How many times have we heard this? And how many times have our men failed to do it? I am sure that at the battle of Termoli had the troops got down to serious digging, a part of our line would not have been driven in. I hardly saw a single trench in the whole area, and yet the ground was mainly plough, and very suitable for digging.

The Salerno Landing.—The landings were carried out by British and American troops, with the latter on the right. The river Sele was the dividing line. The object was, of course, the capture of Naples. As is well known, the operations were nearly

a failure. The following are a few of the main reasons, some of them given to me by the Commander of the British forces:

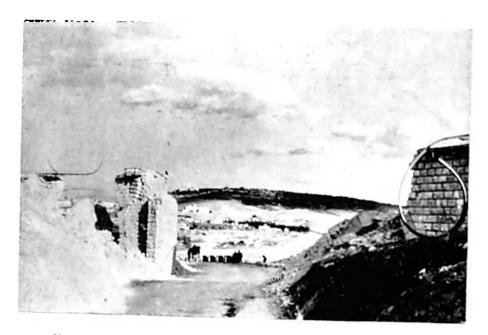
- 1. The "cover" plan did not operate as it did for the Sicilian landings. A "cover" plan is a deception plan; in other words, deceiving the enemy into thinking that the landings are to take place at some other place to that actually chosen. I was told that in the case of "Sicily" the Germans thought up to the last minute that we were going to land in Sardinia. This partly accounts for the weak opposition at Sicily. The whole operation was a brilliant piece of planning and execution on the part of the Royal Navy.
- a. Our information was incomplete. We thought that the bulk of the German mobile troops were in the Naples area, whereas we found on landing that he had a complete Panzer division sitting in mobile reserve at Eboli.
- 3. During the approach to the beaches, the troops got to hear of the armistice with Italy. You can imagine the effect this had on troops all keyed up to land under fire. They thought it would now be a picnic.
- 4. The river Sele was an unfortunate choice as a dividing line between ourselves and the Americans. Being an obstacle to all M.T. movement, it made inter-communication at the critical stages of the battle extremely difficult.

Well, we eventually went to battle, and our success can to a certain extent be attributed to the following:

1. The co-operation of the Navy and Air Force. Early in 1943, when the 8th Indian Division was training in combined operations, naval gunnery was not considered sufficiently accurate to be of much value in the support of landings. Ideas have changed since then, and organised shoots now take place, controlled by naval F.O.O's, who land with the assault troops and control the fire. The fire is still in the nature of area shooting, but it is now much more accurate, and the moral effect is great.

Terrific concentrations of fire were put down by our Navy at Salerno, and that, combined with the devastating effect of our "pattern" bombing called "Feddar's Carpet," and to ground strafing of the German position, carried out with great determination and daring by our fighters, broke the morale of the Germans. Every available aeroplane in the Middle East and North Africa was turned on to the Salerno beaches. I have rarely seen, even during the late war in France, an area so pockmarked with shell and bomb craters.

2. The use by the Germans of their tanks in penny packets. At the battle of Alamein, von Thom was commanding in the absence of Rommel, who was in Europe on leave. The former used his tanks in small formations, as he had learned to do in Russia. By the time Rommel got back, the damage had been done, and he found it extremely difficult to concentrate them in time to meet our tank thrusts. The same happened at Salerno. The German Commander used his tanks in penny packets, with the result that although some broke through, they never broke through in sufficient strength to exploit their success.



DEMOLITIONS ARE BEING CARRIED OUT THOROUGHLY BY THE GERMANS. A BLOWN RAILWAY BRIDGE IN THE NAPLES AREA



"MANY TOWNS AND VILLAGES ARE BUILT ASTRIDE THE ROADS ON HIGH GROUND"

3. Our chaps sticking it out. There comes a time in many battles when everything seems hopeless. We have fought ourselves to a standstill without result. Shelling and mortar fire is heavy, and we are suffering many casualties. It hardly seems worth while carrying on. And then suddenly the enemy starts to pull out, and success is ours. The battle of Keren was won by our sticking it out just a few hours longer than the enemy, and the same thing happened here. The Corps Commander said to me that he was amazed when the Germans started to pull out, as he really thought the battle lost.

Before leaving the battle of Salerno, a word about the amphibious lorry. This has proved a wonderful invention, and is particularly valuable in assault landings. Ammunition and stores can be loaded direct into these lorries from the landing craft standing some way to sea. They can then, like a motor launch, move on to the beach, and drive straight inland to the dump area where the stores are unloaded. This saves a lot of manhandling of stores, and also reduces the danger of the landing craft being sunk by enemy fire. Other uses they can be put to are to ferry anti-tank guns across rivers or by sea in order to by-pass some obstacle in the coastal area.

General points of Interest.—I visited Pompeii on my way through Naples, and it surely is an interesting place. There was a complete Roman city. Villas and wineshops in a complete state of preservation, and in the cobbled streets one can see the wheel marks of the chariots. Many inscriptions can be read on the walls, such as "Vote for Claudius," and "Claudius, the People's Friend" or words to that effect! It seems that when Vesuvius erupted, the city was first covered with ashes, and that shortly after molten lava descended and solidified the whole area. That is why the city is in such a good state of preservation.

Naples, in spite of everything that has been said about it being "flattened out," is by no means in that condition. The harbour and most of the houses are definitely flattened, but the shops in the main area are full of stocks, and you can buy anything from a tooth pick to a silver watch—and at a very moderate price. In fact, the shopping area looked like a Bond Street. Our precision bombing can be very deadly. I saw an aerodrome in the Naples area completely destroyed by it. The landing ground was completely put out of action, and every plane was blown to bits.

When I was in Libya I heard that the German soldier squeals when faced with cold steel. I had proof of this in Italy, for I saw the report of a commanding officer of a Guards Battalion, who reported to his Brigade Commander that when his men advanced and charged with the bayonet the Germans did actually squeal like pigs!

Condition of German prisoners is good. On one occasion I was in a forward area with the Corps Commander and saw some of them. They looked well-fed and strong. Amongst them was a boy of not more than 15 or 16. On my remarking this to an Officer who was with me he replied; "Yes, that's the sort one

wants to put back."

The German is still fighting strongly, but the effect of our bombing and heavy concentration of artillery is telling on his morale. On the Volturno front we found on capturing the position that the Germans had left all their weapons and ammunition behind. A most unusual thing for the German to do.

Our troops are fighting well, but they must be properly equipped and trained for the job. A "Tommy" summed it up at Alamein. When asked by Churchill how he was getting on, he replied: "Give us the bloody tools and we'll use them."

The modern British Army has a high mental standard, but now and then one comes up against men whose commonsense is not up to the average. Here is a story about one of the latter. I was present at the time it was told to the Corps Commander by a Divisional Commander on the Volturno front.

Two stretcher bearers were sent out to collect a wounded man. Neither were wearing their brassards. On reaching a point near the man they were hailed by someone who shouted in English: "Come on, here you are". They went on, came up against a German post, and were invited inside. One of the Tommies said: "Ere, you can't take me prisoner. Geneva Convention, y'know. I'm a stretcher bearer". The German asked him to prove it, and he said: "It's in my pay book." He was told to go back and fetch it—which he did, and took it back to the German post. He hasn't been seen since! The story, of course, was related by the other stretcher bearer, who escaped.

The Germans are past masters at ruses and booby traps. On one occasion three gunners were looking for a house for their battery headquarters. They found one quite undamaged, and viewed it with grave suspicion. Sure enough, stretched across the front entrance of the doorway was a wire, with a lot of spare running loose. The men knew it led to a trap. Outside handy was a slit trench. They thought: "Well, we can get into this slit trench and let the thing off." They did, pulled the wire—and the slit trench blew up.

Again, in Sicily some of our wounded were left behind, carefully bandaged, when the Germans withdrew. Knowing we would pick them up, they had surrounded them with "S" mines.

How are the Americans doing? They are fighting extremely well. They have learnt their lessons, like all of us, and they have absorbed them. One of their Divisions was considered by us to be the best in the 5th Army front. On one occasion I lunched with General Alexander, and was introduced to some American officers. The whole atmosphere was friendly. Similarly, relations between the American and British soldiers are extremely good.

The Germans are very clever at rear guard and hill fighting. They never show themselves, and I can say now that the lessons of the N.W.F.P. apply 100 per cent. to the campaign in Italy. This is a point worth remembering by those now serving in that area.

Know your enemy's weapons. It is essential that units and formations whenever possible get an allotment of those weapons

which they are likely to find in captured enemy positions. Ammunition should also be made available, so that every man can be taught to handle and fire them. Time and again positions have been lost through ammunition running out, and yet plenty of enemy weapons and ammunition have been lying about, but the troops have not known how to use them.

Here is another extract from a report by an Indian Army Observer with the 8th Indian Division: \*

"Remembering their comrades who fell in the same village only 36 hours ago, they grimly went a-hunting with their kukris drawn. A Subedar who had remained in the village said his men drove off a flame party again and again with bayonet and kukris. They had had no ammunition left." I wonder if there were any enemy weapons lying about?

To sum up, there is no question that our morale is high, and that of the German deteriorating, though he is still a tough fighter. Our troops must, however, be properly trained, and they can only be so if our training is versatile and alive. Schemes must be made realistic, and this is only possible by using plenty of live ammunition and explosives. Casualties in training must be accepted.

Plenty of night training is essential. A week or a fortnight must be given sometimes to continuous night operations.

Units must be organised to operate with all types and scales of transport, including porters. These scales must be got down on paper and practised out.

Troops must be prepared to move on a pack basis carrying their own weapons, and self-contained for 48 hours.

Training to be of value must be carried out in the type of country in which we are to operate, and units and formations must be trained in every type of operation.

Battle drills are essential, provided they are simple and known to all.

Let us think and look broadly, always remembering the Scout motto: "Be Prepared."

Let us Train and keep on Training.

Finally, remember, it is STICKING IT OUT that wins battles.

<sup>\*</sup>It is an account of a village captured by certain troops, lost, and recaptured again.

# THE BANDAR SHAHPUR INCIDENT

By "Mouse"

If THIS story reads like a schoolboy's adventure taken from The Boy's Own Paper it is not my fault, because in many essentials—mystery, unknown and exaggerated perils, disguises of men and craft, sustained excitement, no love interest, and a happy ending—it has all the stuff which Henty and Ballantyne employed to thrill their public.

During the last week of August, 1941, a military spokesman from Delhi, describing the quick occupation of Iran on August 25, mentioned that the port of Bandar Shahpur had been occupied by a force of Indian troops without opposition. It is interesting to record the details of this unimportant little episode, as it brings out certain problems regarding Intelligence, Combined Operations and administration which may confront many junior leaders of the Indian Army in the days that lie ahead.

Even the beginning was exciting. Our troopship was purring up the Shatt-al-Arab one hot summer day when a launch came alongside, and I recognized our Brigadier, a coloured towel round his neck as he clambered on board. He took my commanding officer and me into a private cabin, and said the battalion was to be ready to move in secret detachments within twenty-four hours, one company to join the Royal Indian Navy, one to join the Royal Air Force, and the remaining two rifle companies (under my command) to be ready to put to sea at once for "a secret destination" under sealed orders. In the paramount interest of secrecy no further details were given. We did not know if we were going to Iceland, Malta or Madagascar and, naturally enough, we did not care.

The following twenty-four hours are a confused memory of hard work. Disembarkation, stumbling through the dark to Rawalpindi Camp, chasing around Basra collecting a month's rations, water tanks and gear. A hush-hush conference in a station-wagon with the Divisional Commander and a Royal Navy Captain about accommodation for Indian troops in a converted Australian liner-cruiser. The mystery of the missing Medical Officer who did not arrive until an hour before our departure, although he was living next door; the appearance of a young Staff Officer with two sandbags stuffed tight with wads of money which he asked me to count and receipt formally. He also wasn't quite sure if the dirty notes were yens or roubles. I stuffed them into my valise and slept on them for nearly three weeks; the arrival of an interpreter who refused to go unless he was told where he was going.

The embarkation that evening at a Basra quay in a R.I.N. sloop. The loading of our bulk supplies, including two live sheep. Our only box of Scotch whisky falling into the Shatt-al-Arab before the anguished eyes of myself and the Divisional Commander, and its gallant rescue by a very able Indian seaman. Saying "Good-bye"

to Lieutenant Vokes, who had been in charge of the fatigue parties all through the day, and was to fall, mortally wounded, at Khorramshahr a few weeks later.

The sloop slid silently down the river through the dusk. The detachment—four officers, the doctor, six V.C.O.'s and 276 Indian other ranks—squatted where they could on the crowded decks. No noise, no lights, no smoking. The Shatt is tricky navigation at any time, but at night without lights the hazards are greater. Commander of the sloop, an ex-R.N. and a tea planter, was, like most sailors, more than courteous. His ship, which was his pride, was festered, crammed, and choked with our men and stores. There was no free deck space, no gangway, no traffic except across or through recumbent bodies. I was ashamed to litter his smart ship in such a way. He put his cabin and bathroom at my personal disposal. I opened the sealed orders. They were brief to a degree, but covered some of the unknown ground which lay ahead. In co-operation with the Navy I was to sail to Bandar Shahpur, give any help required in capturing the Axis merchant ships skulking in the harbour, to capture the port with the troops and to assume command on shore when landed.

The immediate difficulty hit me between the eyes. Where was Bandar Shahpur? I had no maps. I went to the darkened bridge and sought out the Commander.

"Do you know where Bandar Shahpur is?" I asked.

"Never heard of it, old boy. Some place in the Gulf I expect, but it may be in the Red Sea. I am only taking you out to join the Australians. The Navigator might know."

The Navigator was far too busy navigating the shallows of the river and I did not disturb him. So I told my officers to be ready to tranship to an Australian cruiser at 1000 hours next morning in mid-ocean (a common practice in the Baluch Regiment), and went to bed with the very faintly reminiscent name "Bandar Shahpur" buzzing.

About noon next day we saw the Australian cruiser rolling at sea-anchor in the middle of the ocean. The sea was neither rough nor calm. As we approached from behind, the cruiser's great stern rolled round in corkscrew gyrations. Coming alongside was anxious work and, as ill-luck would have it, just as all seemed well the cruiser heaved over on her starboard beam and we rubbed shoulders with a splintering and crackle of various projections as both ships kissed.

I saw an enormous man with a naval cap, a chest so hairy that a tattooist had to use a dah to clear it during the last war, and a megaphone. From that megaphone came a crystal stream of uncut, primeval profanity of such ferocity that our ship went into reverse. The sea shivered into an oily stillness. I ordered a "Gas alert" and put on my tin hat. We all stood to attention until the megaphone became incandescent and was hurled into the sea, where it sank like a comet.

A gun port about level to our top deck was thrown open in the cruiser's side. Two planks were thrown across the twenty-foot chasm. A sub-lieutenant reported to me, and asked me to tranship the companies and stores—hundreds and hundreds of maunds. Both ships were going up and down unevenly. I asked for a rope railing, which was supplied. I crossed over the heaving abyss into the bowels of the cruiser, saluted the quarterdeck and was warmly greeted by the commander, who was the megaphone hero. Following me came the two ration sheep on the hoof, protesting violently. As they were shoved in, all the Australian sailors and the Commander stood to attention and saluted gravely.

"Your Regimental Mascots?" he asked.

Then came the men in full F. S. kit with their kitbags. Those couple of heaving planks with the long drop into the brink below were quite an ordeal, and I was very proud and relieved when the last man had transhipped without disgracing us.

# PERSIAN GULF CRUISE

H.M.S. "Rooratoora" was a luxury liner of some 12,000 tons, converted into a cruiser. Commissioned early in the way, her company had seen arduous service in many seas, but without having fired a shot in anger. The captain, who was in command of the expedition, and the Commander, were R.N., but all the other officers and most of the seamen were Australian naval reserve. Without being trite or fulsome, I can state quite candidly and gratefully that never in my service have I experienced such helpfulness, such comradeship and such complete co-operation as was shown to us, officers and sepoys, by these Australian sailors.

It is a common experience for us soldiers in the Indian Army to observe the genuine courtesy and hospitality which sailors always show us when one visits their ships. To dump nearly 300 Indian troops for an indefinite period on the glistening decks of an Australian naval reserve warship might well have been another kettle of fish.

Thanks to our hosts, our fortnight's cruise in the sultry waters of the Gulf was a picnic. The broad port and starboard decks were allotted as the men's quarters. They were connected amidships by a spacious expanse of deck, used in peace time for dances, and by us for parades and hockey. Officers and V.C.O.'s had cabins. A large peace-time reading room was handed over as Quarter Guard and Q.M.'s stores. A hatch in a well deck was covered with iron sheeting and became our galley. With oil cookers this worked exceedingly well. Platoons were allotted adjacent deck space for eating and made responsible for scrubbing them.

Latrines were a difficulty. The first issue of two W.C.s hardly proved adequate, and led to a shameful scene between the ship's master plumber and myself our first morning out. I was lucky in being covered only with shame. I ran a W.C. T.E.W.T. for V.C.O.'s and N.C.O.'s the same day, and issued a detailed latrine morning timetable for platoons. This is an extremely important administration business, and deserves immediate attention by the military commander on boarding any ship.

<sup>\*</sup>The real name of the ship is different.

We settled down quickly and soon noticed that there were some odd jobs about the ship, whose company was being depleted daily to man the flotilla collecting for the expedition, which we could take over from the crew. For instance, we made ourselves responsible for the daily swabbing of the promenade decks and the gun deck and their maintenance. Our hosts handed over the hoses and squeegees with real reluctance and watched our first land-lubber efforts with sardonic satisfaction. We did any fatigues, shifting of gear, etc., that we could discover; but no demand or request was ever made, and we just had to keep our ears open to find out how we could repay our hosts.

Very soon a daily routine was evolved which worked out something like this:

0500—0600 hours—Enormous mugs of strong tea. (Supplied by our hosts.) Latrine parade.

o600-0630 hours-Swabbing decks.

o630—0730 hours—P.T. Doing this by squads on the promenade decks proved unsatisfactory. Later, the Captain put the top storey, or gun deck, at our disposal.

The men, dressed in shorts only, did their P.T. like the Aldershot Tattoo following the movements of an instructor perched on a platform aft the bridge. It was a silent parade without any words of command. The M.O. and I examined the torsoes each morning on the lookout for skin disease (we had no fresh vegetables, no potatoes, onions only) and malnutrition. The average age of the detachment was under 20, as the battalion had been severely "milked" before mobilisation. The only sick we had throughout the expedition was a senior N.C.O. discovered to be suffering from tuberculosis. P.T. concluded with a quick run round the ship from bows to stern.

ogoo hours—C.O.'s Inspection. The men parade in single rank. Each day a particular item was examined—rifles, boots, mosquito-nets, red books, respirators, socks, hair cuts and so on.

0930-1130 hours-Seacrast drills.

1130-1230 hours-Morning meal.

1230-1330 hours-Education.

Afternoon-Letter-writing. Mending. Sleeping.

1600-1800 hours-Drills. Seamanship and W. T.

1800—1830 hours—Swimming bath.

1830—1930 hours—Evening meal.

The only seacraft the men had practised was on a canal in Roorkee for three days. When it was discovered that we were expected to embark in Fleming boats, row ourselves to a hostile shore and capture a port under our own steam, the organisation and training for this operation had to be boiled down to its successive phases. We had no pamphlets on Combined Operations to help us and, looking back, it is gratifying to note how faithfully these pamphlets were anticipated.



There was a possibility that our ship would be able to disembark us on a jetty like ordinary P. & O. passengers, but there was also the likelihood that we would have to make our own landing from off shore, and for this contingency we trained. The first objective of the expedition was the capture of the eight Axis merchantmen in the harbour. Zero hour had been fixed at 0400 hours, so the troops were inevitably faced with a daylight landing.

There were only two exits from our cruiser, a gunport on each beam. I decided to disembark the first company from the gunport on the off-shore side of the ship, this securing some concealment and surprise. The second company was to disembark from the other gunport in support. Assembly stations for both companies, owing to the geographical differences in the intestines of the ship, were complicated, and were practised and reheatsed continually.

The gunports were about twenty feet above the water. The rope ladders proved unsatisfactory for fully equipped men in hobnailed boots. The descent was precarious and painfully slow. The Commander and I scratched our heads and chests over this problem. He got the ship's carpenter to make two wooden ladders, which we rigged from the aft end of the promenade deck down to a well deck. The men were practised individually in using them, first in P.T. kit and finally by platoons as a competition in F.S. Order. It was quite astonishing how expert and quick they became.

The Fleming boats—with a naval cox—presented no difficulties after a little practice, and in suitable weather we had races round the ship. During this time ten specially selected men under an officer were engaged in specialised "boarding" training to augment the naval ratings also being instructed to board the Axis ships. They were equipped with naval boots and allowed to grow their beards, and spent mysterious days and nights in other ships. Meeting one of them—a Lance-Naik—one evening, I asked how he was progressing. He stood to attention, gave me a naval salute and replied "Aye, aye, Sir." For nearly a minute I was dumb.

The main anxiety during this cruise was Bandar Shahpur. The information about this place was surprisingly meagre. Naval Intelligence said:

"It is situated 30 miles up the Khor Musa Channel on the seaward edge of a large mud flat which extends back some seven miles before what may properly be called the mainland is reached. At high tide this mud flat is flooded to a depth of two to three feet. The port is on the deep-water channel, and consists of a reclaimed area about one mile long and 400 yards wide at its widest part which has been filled to heights of five to eight feet above the natural level of the mud-bank. The total population amounts to some 3000 people.

Defences: Apart from the two Iranian naval sloops, the only defence force consists of an Infantry detachment of about 75 men, who are quartered in three blue painted huts. There are no defence works.

Port Facilities: The port is the terminus of the Iranian State Railway, which runs north by a single track to Ahwaz, Teheran

and Bandar Shah on the Caspian. On the raised area there are four main railway sidings and a Y for turning locomotives. The main line runs lengthwise through this area, and leads out on to a jetty over a wooden viaduct some 300 yards long. The jetty carries a triple track, but its capacity is limited by a single track approach.

Water Supply: None. All drinking water is brought by rail from Ahwaz and boiler water by rail from Gurgur, half way to Ahwaz."

Military Intelligence was a crib of the above, but suggested a larger enemy with automatic weapons, and a population of 6,000.

There were no maps. I made tracings of a chart, and enlarged it to a scale of one inch a mile—and forgot that sea-miles are longer than land miles. This map proved not only useless, but dangerous, as its concentration on navigable waterways through the mud flats gave one a distorted mental picture very different to the actuality.

Fortunately, we were able to supplement this information before the flag fell. Two air photographs taken to show the anchorages of the Axis ships, but with good detail of the town, reached us. How I wished I had made a proper study of the interpretation of air photos! Throughout, the port and railway yard areas were solid black squares—like a crossword puzzle. What were they? I hawked the photographs round the ship like a Port Said vendor seeking an answer. Nobody knew. We hoped they were water tanks. (Actually they were stacks of railway lines.) The photos were of immense value as they gave the basis for a model—made of cigarette cartons and chalk on the floor of the orderly room—on which the tactical plan for the capture of Bandar Shahpur was made.

Then came Father John. He was Master of a tug attached to the Navy for the operation. Conrad could have described his character and sea lore; W. W. Jacobs his mannerisms and saltiness. The naval commander was in close conference with him from lunch till sundown and learnt from him all the navigation details of tides, buoys, anchorages and landfalls for the 30-mile approach up the Khor Musa. Father John was enormous, dressed in a tennis shirt, khaki shorts and an oil-stained Bombay bowler. He was employed by the Oil Company carrying engineering stores and goods in all their enterprises around the coast and had, I think, about thirty years' experience in these waters.

I ordered a couple of bottles of the almost extinct beer, and showed him the model with some pride. I explained it was my rough idea of the town. He looked at the collection of cartons and chalk lines, and then gave me an appraising stare. I knew immediately that any high or noble thoughts he might have felt for soldiers had crashed to zero. He was dealing with a lunatic, perhaps, but certainly a child who required humouring.

I nervously pointed out the four railway sidings, the Y turning for locomotives, the buildings and the "water-tanks."

"Is it anything like this?" I asked imploringly.



"Ah've been in that bloody port a couple of hundred times," he said, "and Ah've never set foot ashore once. I was there only last month. It's a lousy place."

"Did you see any troops there?"

"Be God, Major, you're not frightened, are you? With two hundred men you could walk straight to Constantinople." He than gave me his opinion about the inhabitants of the Middle East in elemental, stratospherical terms. Every time he waved his pipe at me I flinched.

"Where is the best place to land?" I asked.

"On the jetty. It's got a ladder at the bend," he said. "And don't go anywhere else, or the whole bloody lot of you will be drowned in the mud, mark my words, major."

I then, with his guidance, drew a panorama of the foreshore, the main feature of which was a high gravity water-tank at the end of the jetty. "Make all your boats sail for that mark. Don't try any fancy manoeuvring to land on the beach, because there isn't one. Just a ruddy stone wall which a monkey couldn't climb, and the tide drops nineteen feet."

The reader will see the tremendous importance of this information. I plied Father John with more questions and Australian sherry—could one go up a creek and make a flank landing, the slope of the sea wall, the current, the width of the jetty and other more foolish matters—and to all of which he gave the same stubborn, flat answer.

"You can only land on the jetty, and you'll have a run of only 150 yards to the shore. When you get there, look out for my pal Mister.....; he wears trousers with a black belly-band and pince-nez and knows everyone in the place. Tell him I sent you, and he'll do what you want."

His advice and introduction to his friend (whom I subsequently recognised at once among the first batch of refugee-prisoners) proved sound, and were invaluable. I had been playing with the idea of a beach landing in two or three flights because I had not the faintest idea what a reclaimed bit of land on a mud-flat encircled with a nineteen-foot tide meant or implied.

The decision was then made to land more or less in single file on the jetty, and run like scalded rabbits for the shore. If the enemy had a machine-gun at the far end... The naval commander called for his gunner, and we discussed the possibility of naval artillery support. On the assumption that the cruiser stood off shore, 1,000—1,000 yards, could her guns paste any enemy machine-gun posts on the foreshore? The short range, the flat trajectory, the armour-piercing quality of the shells and the long-range charges supplied—all were facts against using the guns with any hope of success, with every chance of beheading the troops. The gunner deprecated the idea. The commander sent a signal to the Admiralty asking for advice about altering the charges—as I have said before nothing is too much trouble for the Navy—and one of the Sea Lords replied in negative technical terms too involved for me to follow.

Operation orders were written. Every section commander was rehearsed on the model. Stores were stacked in order of priority for landing. Every man and follower knew what was expected of him. A naval beach-master was provided with two wireless operators to accompany my H.Qs. No Viceroy's arrival was ever attended with such circumspection and nice regard to detail; needless to say, the plans of mice and men went haywire when the curtain went up on August 25, 1941.

Before describing the fun and games of that day, a word about the Navy's work and censorship. We kept shifting our position in the gulf, generally at night. Gradually the force was collected, ranging from our own great ship down to a dhow fitted with an auxiliary engine and wireless. We had a corvette and a tug-boat from Tobruk, a river gun-boat from China with the appearance of a flat iron, sloops of the Royal Indian Navy, some sea-going launches, an R.A.F. speed boat, and Father John's powerful tug. Many of our Fleming life-boats were fitted with wireless sets, which were transferred to the boarding craft.

I was living in the captain's quarters, and was a spectator of the Navy's training for the operation. Every signal sent or received was initialled by the captain, who had his finger on every pulse. From start to finish he was the organising genius who captured eight out of nine enemy vessels, the crews of which were fit and alert, and who had their ships prepared for scuttling. Surprise was essential; to attain it darkness was necessary. To approach nine vessels in the darkness, plus a couple of Iranian gunboats—spread in an anchorage two miles long, entailed perfect training, perfect organisation and very great technical efficiency.

Having obtained the dimensions and interior geography of the ships, our captain allotted each one to separate boarding parties in each of our own ships. These parties were provided with light bamboo grappling ladders of the correct length to connect the two ships. They had to know the exact position of the gunwale to grapple, how to overcome the sentries, seize the controls, prevent inter-communication, find their way by quickest routes to the captain's cabin and the engine room. Only one ship, the first to be boarded, was taken intact; one ship scuttled herself; the remainder tried to but were prevented, and within a month, 50,000 tons of Axis shipping were being made seaworthy again in Indian harbours. In its way it was one of the neatest operations carried out in that bleak year of 1941, and I hope the Navy received due recognition for the days and nights they spent in organisation, concentration on detail and rehearsal, REHEARSAL.

The censorship of the men's letters was of particular importance. Free postage and free notepaper go to a sepoy's head like promotion, and he becomes an inveterate letter-writer. The men had, of course, been warned on penalty of death or worse that our cruise was a forbidden subject, but they had to write something. I was writing a pack of lies to my son at school describing the beauties of Basra, the heat, flies and Arab rifle thieves, when it struck me that such a ready flow of falsehoods deserved a wider public. So I read out this letter to the men, explaining that in the interests



of security this exaggeration of our one day in Basra seemed to me justifiable. Later, when we consored the letters, we found that every V.C.O. and man had copied the idea with accuracy and embellishments. One hero complained to his father that sleep was impossible by day owing to flies, and by night owing to the continuous noise of rifle fire, but his main worry was the fear that father had bought a bullock by unnecessarily borrowing money.

#### THE LANDING

I went up to the bridge at 0300 hours. The ship was in darkness, and her movement was as imperceptible as a whisper. Here and there in the black night were buoys with small, uneasy reflections marking the channel. The captain gave me his night glasses and pointed to a glow on the horizon. When focussed it became a clear blaze of light.

"Bandar Shahpur," the Captain whispered. "Ships are being unloaded in the night."

Gradually the division between sky and water became discernible, and by some odd optical illusion one felt as if one was moving in a vast saucer of ink which was about to overflow over the edges. The silence, the impenetrable blackness and our innocent objective in its blaze of electricity stirred some atavistic pirate's blood in one's veins.

We crept on through the ink. At 0345 the Company Commanders reported their companies ready at their assembly station: we had no zero hour for disembarkation, but were ready for all eventualities. Naval zero hour came and not a sound to register it. We were now approaching the broad anchorage. A few minutes ticked by like hours. Then suddenly there was a great flash in front, followed by a reverberating boom—and we assumed that somebody had made contact with something.

Signals then came pouring in, all dictated at high speed to the captain, who was watching his front. The German ships were, Weisenfels, Hohenfels, Sturmfels, Marienfels, and the Italian, Caboto, Bronte, Barbara and two others whose pretty names escape me. In addition, there was one (and possibly two) Iranian gunboats and a 6,000-ton Italian floating dock. Signals: "Captured Sturmels intact, am moving to Marienfels." "Marienfels set on fire but can cope with it." "Weisenfels on fire and cockpits exploded." "Hohenfels on fire, have taken her in tow and will beach her."

A laconic message: "Captured Iranian gunboat and found another alongside which Baluchis have taken over." Then, from a side inlet, came sounds of machine-gun fire, illuminated by Verev lights. Message: "Am attacking floating dock-meeting resistance—may I sink it?"

We as Mother Ship were some distance in rear of all these happenings, but the captain soon ordered full steam ahead. The whispering cruiser sprang into life as her screws revved up, and we ripped through the water with engines humming and decks shuddering.

What a lovely party it was! As we approached the harbour, I saw two cargo steamers alongside the jetty, and I recognised Father John's tank landmark at the end of the pier. It was growing light; ahead of us the sun appeared like a sodden blood orange through the dank mist, and then—wonderful finale to this free "Brock's benefit"—we saw three Italian ships, BRONTE, CABOTO and BARBARA, about a mile ahead, burst into flames.

The captain ordered two of the flotilla to fight the fire in Caboto and Barbara, and he himself took the wheel and brought the cruiser alongside Bronte, which was burning like a volcano. This was a remarkable feat of seamanship—which even I could see was a delicate manoeuvre—as we had to turn about to suit the fast flowing tide, catch hold, drop anchor all within split minutes. Next day the American skipper of one of the cargo vessels at the jetty, who had observed with professional interest our captain berth the cruiser in the small space left at the jetty, that morning, said to me: "Who is your captain? I saw him put that great lumbering tub of his alongside this morning. He must be a grand seaman."

The Italians had prepared their ships for scuttling—without explosives; instead they had stacked hundreds of barrels of petrol around and below the bridge and officers' quarters amidships. This central structure was blazing merrily, and the crew were standing about on the aft deck watching the fire with sullen appreciation. They were brought on board and put in the quarter-guard. All the ship's company was then mustered to fight the fire; hosepipes, pumps, axes were issued and all the available water of the Khor Musa was concentrated on the salvage.

I saw all my coxswains go into action. All the star-board Fleming boats were immobilised, being alongside Bronte, and I had nobody to lower or cox the port boats. Fortunately, one of our tugs and the dhow came alongside, their jobs finished, to ask for further orders. The captain was putting those craft at my disposal, when a "look-out" called "Enemy aircraft." We looked up through clouds of billowing smoke and perceived two aeroplanes circling overhead.

As the R.A.F. had promised not to interfere in the action and the markings through the smoke appeared to be hostile, the captain gave orders to brass off all the top guns. There was a shattering salvo—the first time these guns had fired in anger. I had four Bren guns on A.A. mountings on the top deck who also could not resist the temptation, and they thickened up the barrage—missing the funnels, rigging, aerials and masts by a miracle—before I silenced them by beating them with a tin hat. What a party!

The aircraft—flying about 10,000 to 15,000 ft.—disappeared into the blue, and I still have an uneasy feeling—never confirmed—that they were R.A.F. machines.

It was now about 6-30 a.m. and beginning to stoke up. I issued new orders: one company to embark in the tug, detachment H.Qs. plus a couple of Bren-gun detachments in the dhow. The remaining company to be second wave on the return of the tug. We set sail to the jetty about a mile away, the tug leading with the dhow echelonned on the right flank. In the

dhow were two naval signalmen with the wireless, and to make communication sure I left a helio and lamp detachment of our own signallers on the bridge.

As the tug approached the solitary ladder at the bend on the jetty, the two Bren-guns in the dhow covered the head of the jetty and right flank. The first company Bren detachment landed, and went back round the corner to cover the left flank. The rest of the company followed in driblets, doubling down the railway track and took up their bridgehead positions on shore like an exercise Battle Drill.

Not a shot was fired. When I landed, I was met by an Iranian naval officer who ceremoniously presented the hilt of his sword and indicated that Bandar Shahpur was mine. I sent a signal to the ship, and laid out my H.Qs. in a shed beneath the water-tank. Shoals of refugee prisoners came pouring in—officials, clerks, policemen and coolies. I recognised Mr. . . . (Father John's friend) and he expressed his readiness to identify and interpret for me.

In the midst of this bustle a burst of L.M.G. fire made an unpleasant intrusion. I went up the ladder of the water tank to get a better view. More firing came from two or three directions in the vicinity of the station. I handed over H.Qs. and prisoners to the doctor and went up the line—dodging round the stacks of railway lines which made an agreeable line of approach.

Then, to my amazement, the big guns of our cruiser opened up, and the swoosh of their shells overhead at some invisible target was quite stimulating. I hadn't the faintest idea what was going on, and imagined vaguely that perhaps His Majesty the late Shah had arrived. I met an orderly covered with sweat and a broad grin. He had a message to say the enemy had opened fire from the blue huts, but had retreated when we got round their flank.

Firing continued from all directions. I reached the company commander, The enemy had made another short stand, and had retired again when their flank was threatened. They were fleeing under cover of the railway embankment into the marshes. With two platoons the north approach was secured, and with the third we toured the town to mop up any police or troops undiscovered. The show was over by 8-30 a.m. Father John's pal intimated that if I searched the local brothel I would probably find the Italian naval commander of the floating dock. We dug him out from his hiding place under a bed.

The second company arrived at 9 a.m., and we consolidated. From off the naval map I sent one platoon to what appeared to be a bridge on the line about a mile north. I then walked over the port and railway area, and made defensive positions and posted guards. (There was, I believe, about one million pounds worth of merchandise, motor and railway gear in the sheds.) When I got back to my H.Qs. I found the doctor trying to placate about 30 indignant officials and 500 or 600 coolies.

I sent him off to recce the water situation. He returned some hours later to say that the tanks were all empty, and that the daily water train from Gurgur, 30 miles away, would probably not arrive. Our cruiser had come alongside by this time and I reported the water situation to the captain. Apart from my own troops I had

the whole population to consider, and the temperature was about 124° in the shade.

I then got steam up in a shunting engine, and with an escort in two wagons fore and aft went up the line to see the outpost platoon. About a mile away we came across an island of dry land, but as the tide was coming in the whole area to the horizon was soon all sea again. On each side of the railway embankment were deep craters where our cruiser had shelled at an outgoing train to try and frighten it. Very pretty shooting. I was very glad after two miles to discern the platoon huddled around a culvert—dismayed by the tide which rose visibly and audibly.

They were then posted on the island, and I anchored one wagon on the permanent way, with its brake fastened to a Mills grenade buried as a booby trap. That would delay any train coming to relieve the port and give us ample warning.

On my return I had an urgent message from the cruiser. "Snobji" (i.e., The Senior Naval Officer, Persian Gulf) had ordered her and another vessel to sea again immediately. She had the only fresh water in Bandar Shahpur, the whole situation was still obscure, our stores had not been unloaded, salvage work was still going on in the Axis ships and the Weisenfels was in the centre of the harbour burning fiercely. The captain and I concocted a polite refusal, the responsibility being, on my insistence, placed on the Military Commander. The captain promised to stay, and I returned to work.

The Beachmaster then reported that the American captain of the cargo vessel had refused to obey my order regarding a curfew and blackout that night. I went to see him, and was conducted to the bridge. He was a very fit elderly man with white hair, and was boiling with anger. I explained to him the reasons for the order. He complained that every hour of delay in discharging his cargo, which still required three days and three nights to unload, put up his owner's costs. I pointed out that there was a war on. He replied that he was an Isolationist, and embroidered his theme with some pungent remarks about the British, and called up his Chief Engineer to encore him. I made it plain that if the order was not complied with, I would most regretfully have to stop all his labour and ask for naval assistance if necessary to put his lights out.

He then asked me if I would sign a certificate as a claim on H.M.G. for demurrage charges at some fantastic rate—one thousand dollars for twelve hours. Knowing perfectly well that if I signed such a document the Finance Department of the Government of India would eventually run me to earth and cut it from my widow's pension, I replied that I had no authority to sign anything. The Chief Engineer saved the situation: "Has the Major ever tasted one of our old-fashioneds made with rye?" Before I left they asked me to dinner next day, and their ship was shrouded in blackness all night.

I returned to the shore to be informed that the bodies of two German sailors, who had been killed in the boarding operations, were due in half an hour and would I make arrangements to give them a Christian burial. I did so with the help of my Indian Troops to the best of my ability. I then helped them to bury the two Iranian soldiers we had killed.

The prisoners, now reduced to about 200, were docile but unhappy, hungry and thirsty. Not having time to interrogate them all I accommodated the remainder under guard for the night, and arranged for their food and comfort as best one could. During the night about six Iranian ladies clamoured round my bed outside the Quarter Guard, to the scandalization of the guard. They were voluble in Persian, one in French, demanding the release of their husbands. One of them tried to put a baby under my mosquito net. It had been a long day, full of interest and odd situations, but this baby with kohl-eyes and an unattended nose was the limit. Over this scene I will draw a mosquito net....

Next morning I interviewed the officials through the interpreter. I explained H.M.G.'s intentions towards Iran. and asked for their co-operation in running the port, promising them their full pay and a bonus. The first three senior officials very politely said that they could not help without orders from their government, expressing the fear that in the event of their assistance coming to the ears of the late Shah, he would exact horrible reprisals on their families up-country. I saw their point.

The next official was a younger man who spoke good English. "Excuse me, Sir," he said, "Do you belong to the same Baluch regiment which came to Bushire in 1918?" I told him it was exactly the same battalion, and mentioned the names of some of the senior officers who were serving then.

His face broke into a delighted smile, and he turned to his companions and gave them about five minutes' vigorous description of the Indian Army. Finally he turned to me and said, "Sir, I have explained to my friends what a nice regiment you are and we will all help. What are your orders?"

I doubt if even Henty or Ballantyne could make that up. It is true.

## An Estimate of Odds

"It is not easy to find a measure or yardstick by which to gauge the affairs of nations. Perhaps the best way is by an estimate of odds. After the fall of France a neutral bookmaker would not have been rash in offering fifty to one against us. After our African victories over the Italians he might have reduced the price to forty to one against. When Hitler attacked Russia he would have brought it down sharply to tens. When the United States entered the war he might have been enthusiastic enough to offer even money, but he would probably have repented and slept badly of nights during the disasters in Asia and the Pacific, Rommel's march to El Alamein, and Bock's drive into the Caucasus and to the Volga. To-day his price would perhaps be ten to one on, and he would be getting ready to shorten it much more still."—Caplain Cyril Falls.

<sup>\*</sup>I had, of course, no idea what they were.

## HOME AGAIN

## By An Officer's Wife

A T LAST we are back again in England after seven years in India. Every day, every minute of that long voyage brought us nearer home, and so what did we care where we went. Everything about the voyage was so utterly different from what we had expected, and so much was strange that others who are expecting or hoping to make the trip may like to hear about it. This article must of necessity take the form of a series of "Don'ts", but it is hoped that it will not make the hints less acceptable.

The first Don't is: "Don't Grouse." There is much that is strange, much that is annoying and uncomfortable, and the voyage is quite unlike a similar trip in peace-time, yet grumbling does not help. On our boat there were several grousers, both wives and husbands, and by the time we docked in England they could scarcely have been more unpopular. They made everyone uncomfortable and drew attention to the unpleasantness, but they effected nothing at all in spite of everything they said about putting it across the captain, the purser or the O.C. Troops. After all, there is a war on and wives going home do not help the War effort in any way. Cheerful acceptance of restrictions and discomforts does help to make the voyage pass quicker.

Baggage is handled much more roughly than usual, owing to the fact that dock labourers are in many cases new to the work. Every box must be really stout, wired, if possible, and well labelled. Stick-on labels are not very satisfactory. The ideal is that the name of the owner should be painted on each box in large, clear letters. If you have the misfortune to have a "double-barrelled" name, better to sink your pride and use only the second of the two. To search for your baggage under two large heaps instead of one is fatiguing, especially on a hot quay or in the hold of the ship. If it can be managed, it is as well to have an address in the United Kingdom also painted on the box, so that if lost and later retrieved the port authorities will know where to send it. A coloured band can also be added with advantage to help in identification of luggage.

Take as few pieces of small hand luggage as possible, for when trans-shipping, the order is likely to be that only what can be carried by the passenger may be taken ashore in the tender. This is because of the shortage of casual dock labour. All pieces, such as golf clubs and despatch cases, should be packed in a trunk or box which can be placed in the baggage room. It is a most distressing sight to see your hat box being unloaded in a sling with the heavy baggage. As few pieces of luggage as possible should be taken into the cabin. For one thing, cabins are crowded, and there is no room for large boxes or a multitude of suit-cases. A far more important reason is the danger baggage presents in the event of the

ship being torpedoed or bombed. The thought of truths careering about the cabin or jamming the door is far from pleasant. With the ship listing at twenty degrees it will be beyond the strength of most women to move a trunk and open the door.

If, having reduced your own cabin baggage to a minimum, you find that another occupant has apparently brought the whole of her baggage with her, do not hesitate to go to the purser or the Ship's Adjutant and ask him to order their removal. You will find that they will be only too glad to help.

Torpedo bags are very desirable. They are for carrying what is really necessary in the event of you having to take to the boats. They must not be larger than a small despatch case, and so a haversack is the ideal. The best method is to have one made that straps round the waist and hangs over the scat, but other methods are probably as good. The one essential is that you must have your hands free. Don't make the bags too heavy, or they will drag you under if you have the misfortune to have to go into the water, and a quick-release buckle for the belt is also desirable to enable the bag to be discarded rapidly. In it should go a thick jersey, a rolled-up soft hat with a brim, a pair of socks (your husband's when shrunk by the dhobi are best), a scarf, canvas shoes, gloves and anything else you may think fit. In hot latitudes some antisun-burn lotion should be included. You will also want a warm coat, the longer the better.

A deck chair is a great boon, for there are unlikely to be any on board, and the deck gets very hard after a few weeks. A roorkhee chair which packs into a bag is better than a folding deck chair. See that the chair has your name painted on it in large letters. A rug and cushion are useful if you have to sit on deck.

You should have all your books, papers, etc., pre-censored before leaving India. This should be done for every piece of paper you take, with the exception of those you will require on the boat. After censoring, the boxes are sealed and should not be opened again until after you have passed the censorship station at the port of disembarkation. If you do not have this pre-censorship carried out, you will probably be held up for a day or two at the port, may have all your boxes opened, and may find yourself doing five years in prison without the option for attempting to take in banned material. Newspapers two months or more old may be used for packing, but anything more recent than that will be rejected by the censor.

Twenty-five pounds of food per person, including children, may be taken into the United Kingdom. This is the weight of the food only, and does not include the weight of the tin. Meat, fish, sugar, milk and fats are the most important, but not more than five pounds of any particular commodity may be imported. Tea and also soap should be taken separately, as they may have to be produced to customs.

Once you get on to the ship you will not be allowed to get off again. It is no use asking for permission to go ashore and buy a packet of Lux. The rule is rigidly kept, and you will not be allowed to land even if the ship remains tied up to the quay for a week. Incidentally, soap flakes are very necessary, for although you may

be able to buy them on board it is not worth taking the risk. There are unlikely to be any arrangements for washing clothes, and everything will have to be done by you yourself.

The first great shock will be when you get on to the ship. You will not, or at least you should not, know the name of the ship until you are on board. The name is painted out or clipped off even the ship itself. When you see, say, one of the P. and O. Straths tied up alongside, don't get excited at the thought of travelling on such a lovely ship. She may be just as lovely to look at, but she will be very different inside. All liners have been converted into troop transports. The single-berth cabins now have two or four bunks, and some have as many as eight. Most of the saloons have been converted into troop decks, and there will only be one reserved for first-class passengers and one for second-class—and small ones at that. In short, accommodation is very tight.

There is no reason to expect that you will travel by P. and O. It is just as likely to be Orient, R.M.S.P., Union Castle, Cunard or any other line. If the ship has been designed for the North Atlantic route it may be very hot and stuffy in the cabin while the ship is in the tropics.

Many of the ships have gone "dry"; others may have finished their liquor before they reach India. Cigarettes are obtainable, but matches are likely to be scarce. A few oddments may be bought in the barber's shop, but it is better not to count on being able to get anything you may want. There is a canteen on board where certain goods may be bought at controlled prices, but if the ship has been long on its travels there probably will be little left. Also the goods in the canteen are intended primarily for troops, and wives have to await their turn.

On the ship is an O.C. Troops. He is in charge of all passengers and what he says goes. It is no use arguing about orders with him; they have got to be obeyed by wives as well as husbands. The ship is a troop ship, travelling under war conditions, and the O.C. Troops is responsible for the good order and discipline of those on board. Included among the military staff is a doctor, who deals with all passengers' ills, while the ship's doctor attends only to the crew. The ship's adjutant is the man you should worry about small matters.

There are copies of ship's standing orders posted up about the ship. They MUST be read. In addition there are daily orders, which must also be read. Although it is second nature to husbands to do so, wives often find it difficult to remember, but it really is no good waiting until a rumour reaches you. It may then be too late. Loud speakers broadcast orders throughout the ship also, and particularly when in port these must be listened to. One wife found these loud speakers useful on board. A message was heard in every corner of the ship: "Sergeant-Major Jones will report to his wife in Cabin So and So immediately."

In peace-time, boat drill is regarded by some as a nuisance to be avoided if possible. In war-time it is of daily occurrence, and must be attended by all. Speed in getting to boat stations, silence when there, knowledge of the different signals, and avoidance of suggestions and complaints are all eminently desirable. The ship's

staff resent suggestions as to how the business should be managed. They have been on the job for many years, most of them have been torpedoed at least once and they know from deep experience, far better than the most experienced passenger, what is best.

Life belts have to be carried at all times and are a nuisance. They must be always within reach, at meals, in the bath, in the cabin. It is said that passengers get so used to them that they walk ashore carrying them; there was no sign of this on our boat. Everyone abandoned them with a sigh of thankfulness as soon as the order was given.

The blackout is most unpleasant. From sundown to sunrise the ship is completely shut up. Portholes are fastened, windows in the saloons are sealed, no smoking is allowed on deck, there are not nearly enough chairs for everyone, and the ship gets hot, stuffy and smoky. To open a porthole or smoke on deck is a real crime, and will bring dire punishment. Bed is an early function, especially as lights go out in the lounge at 10 p.m.

Fresh water is scarce on board, so much so on some ships that there is none for bath tubs. It is not altogether surprising when there may be five thousand troops on board a ship constructed to carry five hundred passengers. This crowding may also separate husbands and wives, as there will be special cabins for men and women.

Service wives have priority over civilian wives in being allotted passages, and also in transhipments, accommodation ashore and the like. This is especially valuable if there is a transhipment, for then the service wives are wonderfully looked after by the embarkation staff, even though it may be in a somewhat rough and ready manner. Civilians may have to fend for themselves, which is not too easy in war-time.

At the port of arrival the heavy baggage is taken off the ship at truly astonishing speed, but there are no porters for cabin luggage. This is yet another reason for keeping the stuff in the cabin to the lowest possible mark. Hotel accommodation is very scarce, so it may be better to go straight home without spending a night in the port. Taxis are obtainable, but it may be necessary to share. Meals can be bought in hotels or restaurants without coupons, but all set meals are earlier than in peace. Dinner is likely to be over by 8 p.m.

The voyage will be strange, but England will be even more so. The voyage can be looked upon as a preparatory period for England, and if taken in that spirit the shock will be much less.

## MAINTAINING ARMY EQUIPMENT

By Major-General D. R. Duguid, M.B.E., A.M.I.Mech.E., A.M.I.E.E.

Director of Mechanical Engineering (India)

R EADING through some reports recently I noticed the following striking paragraph:

"Hundreds and hundreds of trucks and motor cycles have gone bad owing to improper handling, and have lain idle owing to inability to furnish the simplest parts. We have less than 40% of the transportation we should have, and the situation is growing worse instead of improving. The transportation which we do have is not handled to the best advantage."

You may wonder where I read this paragraph—in some recent Army Training Memorandum or report from an officer on tour? You would be wrong. It was penned by Major-General Johnson Hagood, of the U.S. Service of Supply, to Major-General J. C. Harbord, also of the U.S. Service of Supply, and the date was August 7, 1918.

You would be right, however, in thinking that it applies to the present day. It does and, frankly, where Major-General Johnson Hagood says, "Hundreds and hundreds" we might alter the text to "Thousands and thousands" and this without exaggeration.

So what was true of an army in 1918 is, unfortunately, only too true of another army in this year of grace 1943—a quarter of a century later. Obviously there must have been a cause for this report to be written 25 years ago. The cause was found. In 1918 it was simply and solely lack of ordinary commonsense maintenance—the greasing and oiling and topping up of batteries, and testing of tyre pressures. It was lack of this elementary maintenance in 1918 which made "hundreds and hundreds of American lorries go bad." That is what General Hagood meant by improper handling.

It was lack of elementary maintenance which gave the U.S. Army of 1918 less than 40% of the transportation it should have had. It is lack of that same elementary maintenance which has made "thousands and thousands" of the vehicles of the Army go bad to-day, cluttering up workshops, swallowing floor space and precious spares, eating up literally tens of thousands of manhours per year, and holding up the repair of essential fighting equipment.

The Americans learned the lessons of 25 years ago. A machineconscious people, living by mechanical transportation, they decided that never again should such a report be written of their army

vehicles. They established a code of Preventative Maintenance—"P.M." as they call it—and to-day it has become the first commandment of all branches of the U.S. armed forces. It is the cornerstone of their training for drivers; it is the foundation principle of every unit which has a vehicle of any sort; there is a special squad which swoops down suddenly on units to rigidly enforce Preventative Maintenance, and the penalties on unit commanders who break this first commandment are heavy indeed.

By lecture, book, manual, films, charts, at the conference table and in the army classrooms, the Americans drive into every soldier the vital value of P.M. An American Liaison Officer to whom I spoke in Assam assured me that to-day General Hagood could not write such a report about the U.S. Army. But could he write it of the British Army in India? He could. Many causes contribute to this state of affairs, some of them inevitable in a vast expansion such as ours, others which we must and can remedy.

Preventative maintenance must be our watchword; we understood it in the past in terms of horses. We must understand it to-day in terms of machines. That goes for everyone from the private soldier to the higher command.

You might perhaps think I have given a harsh and somewhat gloomy picture of the position in our army to-day. My reply can only be that although there are a number of our units who are "Preventative-Maintenance-conscious" and whose vehicles are well cared for, this state of affairs is by no means universal as we, in our repair organisation, are in a position to judge.

This angle of Army effort is one of the present outstanding problems of Army administration and I propose to deal with it under three main headings:

- 1. Maintenance—its implications and its demands.
- 2. The system adopted by I.E.M.F.—the new Corps—in the repair of equipments.
- 3. The formation of the Indian Corps of Electrical and Mechanical Engineers and how it is organised.

## PREVENTATIVE MAINTENANCE

In my wanderings and contacts throughout the Army during the last few years—and more so recently in India—it has been impressed upon me, with some alarm, that the majority of our Senior Officers have but a very hazy knowledge of this important subject of maintenance. This is due to a large extent to the necessity of such Officers preparing their units and formations in the art of war and to their lack of interest in things mechanical. Such an outlook is most unbalanced in a war such as is being fought out to-day. It is incumbent upon every senior officer, and especially unit and formation commanders, that this vital question of maintaining all their equipment in fighting trim must be given its true place in the training of units and formations.

I would commend to the notice of all many recent issues of the American Army monthly publication Infantry Journal which

vividly shows the immense value attached by our Ally to maintenance instruction. There is hardly an issue of this excellent magazine which, by one means or another, does not drive home the lessons and value of Preventative Maintenance. It is a subject which is a constant source of discussion in the "Letters-to-the-Editor" columns and each letter reflects the tremendous value officers and men of the U.S. Army attach to Preventative Maintenance.

Two words which ought to be the watchwords of every officer are "Preventative Maintenance." What do they mean? They are the means employed to keep vehicles running, and out of repair workshops. The means are simple—the ordinary oiling, greasing, topping up of batteries, tyre pressure and other adjustments that any sensible driver gives his vehicle. Prevention is always better than cure, and Preventative Maintenance is as important for the vehicles of the Army as malarial precautions are for its personnel. But it does not affect only vehicles. Preventative Maintenance must be applied to every bit of fighting equipment.

After the fall of France, in one of the home commands in which I was stationed, a maintenance school was set up specially for the instruction of unit commanders and M.T. Officers in the vital necessity of understanding what was meant by Preventative Maintenance of vehicles. At the commencement of the course many of these officers were very critical of such a necessity, observing that such was not their immediate concern, but that of R.A.O.C. (as it then was). By the end of the course their views were considerably changed, especially when damaged parts of vehicles, specially collected to demonstrate bad unit maintenance, were explained in terms of life, cost and man-hours expended in their replacement.

Actual fighting experience has crystallised these views. To quote the report of one officer who served in North Africa: "To the soldier on the battlefield a breakdown of his equipment may mean death. It is sad to be forced to admit that from a failure to recognize this fact in the beginning, far too many crosses now dot the desert. Our soldiers have had this lesson driven home to them by experience, and now they have a better chance of coming home to us. They know that one loose wire, one faulty sparking plug, one speck of dirt in the feed-line can put the best tank or the best airplane out of action. Fighting weapons to-day must be serviced continually. Adequately serviced, they will perform wonders, but woe unto the soldier and the unlucky ones, his comrades, if for one moment he relaxes his vigilance."

I know, from experience, that there is a general misunderstanding regarding the responsibilities of Commanding Officers in carrying out their share of maintenance. Many Officers consider that maintenance, as a whole, is a matter for a technical corps. This misconception must be completely shattered.

"Preventive Maintenance" is the concern, purely and solely, of unit commanders and, believe me, it is a most important part of maintenance. If to-day we could obtain unit maintenance, as laid down by manufacturers in their handbooks and embodied in our Regulations—and it simply means greasing and oiling and

those odd little jobs which the normal car owner undertakes on his own car, together with good driving—I can definitely state that more than 40% of the repair work now undertaken in our workshops would not be necessary; that the proportion of spare parts, which are so vital in maintaining these equipments and which have been worked out by Lease-Lend authorities for normal conditions, would be adequate to meet the demand.

Many of the worries and much of the troubles of unit commanders, through the loss of their vehicles for long periods in workshops, are largely due to this undue wastage of spare parts. When full understanding of the importance of preventative maintenance is realised, commanders will then ensure that the personnel concerned with the maintenance of equipment will be adequately trained in these duties and just as efficiently as the fighting soldier is in the art of fighting. Until this is done, the problem of maintenance will aways be a bugbear within the Army.

Some will ask—and do ask—why this type of maintenance is not carried out by the Technical Corps. There are two very good reasons why this is not advisable.

- 1. Drivers must be given the responsibility of maintaining their vehicles in good condition. If this is not done, the driver loses interest in his vehicle and this eventually leads to neglect in its preservation through abuse of road speeds, engine speeds and lack of care in avoiding accidental damage.
- 2. I.E.M.E. is composed of skilled craftsmen to carry out technical repair work only. If, therefore, the technical corps was called upon to undertake also Preventative Maintenance, a large addition of personnel to the Corps would be necessary. This, I think, would be considered an unwarranted extravagance when drivers can be trained to do this work.

An objection which may be raised to the driver doing Preventative Maintenance is that, in combat, his hours are often long, leaving little or no time to do this work. My answer to that—and it is based on knowledge—is: If drivers are trained to do this work, prior to combat, they will automatically turn to maintenance during spare moments to ensure that the vehicle in their possession will not let the unit down.

In such transport companies as those controlled by the L.P.T.B., where drivers are working to certain definite hours, a system involving special oiling and greasing squads is necessary, and is so employed, but such circumstances have nothing in common with normal Army Transport.

In a paper read before the Institute of Automobile Engineers recently, the Chief Engineer in charge of the huge Carter-Patterson Transport fleet in England referred to the maintenance of his large fleet. Summing up, he stressed the vital importance of keeping one driver on each vehicle, the importance of running at economic speeds, and the tremendous saving to be gained in extra mileages between overhauls if these factors are closely controlled.

Robert Cass, Chief Engineer of the White Motor Company of America, was equally explicit in an article in the August 1943 issue of the Journal of the Society of Automotive Engineers. He main-

tained that Preventative Maintenance by drivers, plus good driving, can increase the lives of motor vehicles by as much as 20%.

It will not be out of place here to give one instance of many which have come to my notice from time to time, of vehicles having to be "written off" owing to gross negligence of Preventative Maintenance and to bad driving.

When scrutinising mileages of certain types of vehicles which had to be written off as beyond economical repair, one particular case noted was an Austin-10 Utility Van. This vehicle had only completed 1,700 miles before this sentence was passed. On stripping it was found that the engine, gear box, differential, in fact every moving part of the vehicle, was worn to such an extent, due to lack of lubrication and to consistent overdriving, that the cost to repair it would have all but equalled its purchase price. The estimated life of this vehicle before even a replacement of an engine should be necessary is somewhere in the region of 15,000 to 20,000 miles with normal driving. These figures speak for themselves.

Since arriving in this country cases have come to my notice where engines, which should normally do somewhere in the region of 30,000 to 40,000 miles, are being replaced at anywhere between 9,000 to 12,000 miles. In one unit, which is doing special all-the-day-round transport, resentment, nay anger, was expressed at their attention being drawn to some of the faults leading to undue wastage, such as,

(i) Use of improperly-trained drivers;

(ii) Drivers being sent out with different vehicles each day, thereby having no interest in the vehicle they were driving.

(iii) Lack of controlled engine speeds.

This formation, however, has recently adjusted its organisation, so that drivers are now attached to each vehicle, and notice boards have been erected along the route indicating the gear change to be made at key points on the road. These changes have been followed by astonishing results. Mileages of engines before overhaul is required have been doubled, and in some cases, trebled compared with those obtaining prior to the reorganisation.

So much for P.M. which, of course, must be applied to every type of equipment used and not only transport vehicles—P.M. which I have already stated, is the crux of maintenance of army equipment.

Let me now pass to the other side of maintenance, which might be termed Repair Maintenance, which is the function of I.E.M.E. in contradistinction to Preventative Maintenance, which is the responsibility of the unit.

#### REPAIR MAINTENANCE—FUNCTION OF I.E.M.E.

Normally all equipment for the Army, before passing to its control, is fully inspected for serviceability by the various Inspectorates concerned, C.I.A. in the case of Armament, Small Arms, Instruments, etc., C.I.M. for Vehicles, and so on. When finally approved by the Inspectorate, it is passed to the store-holding Corps, such as I.A.O.C., where it is held to meet the various Army requirements. It is from this stage that I.E.M.E. enters the picture.

Much of this new equipment, as received into stock, requires many man-hours' work expended upon it by I.E.M.E. craftsmen before it is fit to issue to troops. This is due, chiefly, to the time taken to alter production lines to embody improvement in designs, and also by the publication of improvements in design after the equipment has been completed in the works.

On such work alone a large staff is kept busy and, even then, equipments have very often to be rushed out to meet army demands before all modifications have been completed. During a war this is very natural, as battle experience very often brings to light weaknesses which are not experienced during the preliminary trials of the pilot models.

However, let us deal with the real job for which I.E.M.E. exists—that of repair. I.E.M.E. starts after equipments have been passed into the hands of units. This is when repair maintenance commences, and it is mainly to carry out this side of the job that the I.E.M.E. organisation is designed. It is also, chiefly, for this purpose that the large number of skilled engineers—electrical and mechanical—and skilled craftsmen of all trades are provided, together with the vast quantity of machines—precision and otherwise—and the extensive and expensive calibrating and testing equipment is supplied.

With this staff and equipment I.E.M.E. is expected to, and does, maintain all equipment up to the stage where it cannot be further repaired economically. When this stage is reached the equipments are either scrapped or returned to Ordnance factories, where they are reconditioned by rebuilding. This reconditioning by Ordnance Factories is normally confined to armament, small arms and instruments, for which production machinery of a heavy nature is essential.

In the past, repair of Army equipment has been carried out in arsenals situated within commands throughout India. But the requirements of the Army in war-time differ considerably from those of an Army at peace, and the system to give the necessary repair service must be organised on totally different lines. We must provide a repair service at the right place and at the right time. Also, this repair organisation must be arranged so that its mobility and flexibility can be such that it can move and adapt itself to the requirements of a modern mechanised Army. These requirements are: (1) to put back into the hands of the fighting troops their damaged equipments with the least possible delay in their repair, and (2) to cut down rearward movement of damaged material to the irreducible minimum. These are vital requirements.

Thus we have had to provide for the unit, for the brigade, for the division, and for the army—the requirements of which differ considerably as regards mobility and flexibility. We have the "stitch-in-time" light-aid detachments with units: mobile workshop companies with divisions; the infantry troops workshop as a corps unit, and our advanced and main base static workshop in the rear.

Engineers, like doctors, differ greatly in their approaches to the various problems and will often attempt to remedy all and

every ill on the spot irrespective of what specialist facilities are at their disposal.

Therefore, if the very large and varied repair commitment of a Mechanised Army is to be efficient, and expeditiously dealt with, it is essential that the type and extent of repair permitted in each repair echelon from front line to rear be very clearly defined if congestion is to be avoided.

During the period of the "phony" War in France, prior to Dunkirk, the lack of this well-defined line of demarcation between the various repair echelons was most noticeable. This led to much congestion in our forward echelon workshops, where many vehicles were held up instead of being returned to the rearward echelons, where they could have been more expeditiously dealt with.

Echelon Repair Schedules.—It was not until a special committee (the Lewis Committee), composed of service members and one or two eminent engineers from civilian life, reported on these matters to War Office, that action was taken to evolve a repair system which would cut out all this unnecessary congestion and yet maintain full facilities for the proper and rapid repair of equipment.

On the recommendations of this Committee, Echelon Repair Schedules were drawn up, primarily for "B" vehicles and tanks, but eventually all other equipments will be included. These schedules lay down the type of jobs which will be carried out in the various echelon repair workshops within the Army, namely, 1st, 2nd, 3rd and 4th echelons, which I will deal with, in detail, later.

The preparation of these repair schedules was a long and laborious task, but was eventually accomplished about a year after Dunkirk, and these have been in use in R.E.M.E. since that date. I.E.M.E. has followed suit and, using the R.E.M.E. Repair Schedules as a basis, Repair Schedules are in the process of being evolved for I.E.M.E. These Schedules not only state the type of repair which may be carried out in each echelon, but they also indicate in which Ordnance stores echelon the necessary parts for carrying out these repairs are held.

The Repair Schedules, acting as a guide, are not intended to curb the initiative of our young engineers. They permit of a certain amount of flexibility to meet special circumstances, and allow of forward echelon workshops undertaking repairs, normally confined to rearward echelons, on those occasions where it is found expedient for the repair to be carried out by the forward echelon. In order, however, that these exceptions to the general rule are controlled, the stores, or spare parts required to complete these jobs, are only procurable through the rearward repair echelon.

From these remarks you will recognise that collaboration is the key-note, as each echelon dovetails into the other, from 1st to 4th—the whole machine depending upon the smooth running of its component cogs.

Scaling of Spares.—Repair maintenance cannot be carried out without the necessary spare parts. It was, therefore, very evident, when drawing up the original repair schedules, that our

sister Corps—the R.A.O.C., had to be advised regarding the echelon workshop spares holding, to meet the demands for the repairs permissible in each echelon.

This matter of store holding for forward echelon workshops is far from being a simple matter. The different types of equipment and makers' changes within the types make scaling somewhat of a nightmare. When scaling is completed and the workshop moves into position with its formation, difficulties are by no means at an end. Very often equipments are changed, new types are evolved and large-scale modifications have to be embodied.

It then becomes the duty of the Commander I.E.M.E. of the workshops to meet these ever-changing situations. Continual watch on holdings of these stores sections must be undertaken to ensure that no stocks of unnecessary parts are held and that provision is made for those parts necessary to maintain the new or altered equipment held by the units of the formations.

In the early days of the war, when every conceivable type of vehicle was to be seen on the roads of France, the question of spares was a problem beyond even the capabilities of our wizard D.S.O. at that time (Major-General Williams). Workshops, field parks and lines of communication were literally snowed under with every type of known vehicle and had it not been for the quickening tempo of the output of our vehicle factories at home, the situation would have become utterly impossible.

### REPAIR SYSTEM

As I have stressed the whole idea of our organisation is to maintain the maximum numbers of equipments in the hands of troops and to eliminate, as far as possible, movement towards the rear to our heavy repair shops. This is accomplished by providing the 1st and and forward echelons with new or repaired assemblies for fitting to vehicles and other equipments.

Instead of complete equipments moving up and down lines of communication, movement is confined to that of assemblies, the greater part of which are vehicle engines which wear out considerably faster than any other mechanism. These have to be repaired under more or less static conditions, as machinery for this purpose is large and heavy, and dust-free conditions are vitally essential for this class of work.

Again, to meet the requirements of an Army, the number of engines required to keep it moving can only be maintained if a proper line system of repair is inaugurated, providing in the region of two to three thousand per month.

In addition to bad driving and excessive low gear work, there is the question of running conditions, such as were experienced in Egypt. With the sand-laden atmosphere in that theatre of war, the life of the engine was curtailed to anything in the region of 33 1/3 per cent. of normal. Thus, to maintain the Army under such conditions, the Base Workshops Major Assembly plant had to be boosted up to three times the normal capacity.

Pool of Major Assemblies required.—It will be of interest to illustrate one of the problems of maintaining an Army in the field under our present system of repair. The greater the distance from the Base where engines are repaired, the greater the requirement of spare major assemblies, such as engines and, unless these are provided, the difference has to be made up by either the issue of new vehicles or the loss of an equivalent number of vehicles in the hands of the troops. For example, let us say a divisional second-echelon workshop requires 20 engines per day for replacement in formation vehicles, that the engine repair workshop which is static on account of dust-proof conditions and its heavy equipment and is 10 days' journey away, and assume it takes 10 days to repair an engine.

It will then be necessary, in order to maintain a supply of 20 engines per day to this division, to provide for a pool of 600 engines. This is arrived at by a simple calculation. The 10-day journey to the shop accounts for 20 engines per day  $\times$  10 days which = 200 engines. To this must be added the return journey which makes another 20  $\times$  10 = 200 engines, making a total of 400 engines. The remaining 200 engines are accounted for by the 10 day repair in the shops  $\times$  20 per day required, making in all a pool of 600 engines. If this is multiplied by the number of divisions served by the Army, one can appreciate the importance of this matter of distance of the main repair base from the forward repair echelon workshops. If this percentage is not available, it may mean a loss to the formation of an equivalent number of vehicles if new vehicles are not available.

An example of long lines of communication was North Africa. Under prevailing conditions, it was not possible to open up and repair engines in the desert. Nor could the time be spared to erect base installations forward. So there was no other alternative but to provide the necessary pool, which greatly increased until it was in the region of between 65 to 100% of the fleet. This aspect could not be foreseen by the provision section when calculating requirements of spare assemblies. The result was that demands from the Middle East interfered seriously with the repair position in the U. K. to the extent that thousands of vehicles were lying idle up and down the country awaiting these assemblies—chiefly engines. Steps were eventually taken to increase this percentage to cover what was then considered our requirements.

It is a most difficult matter to forecast such requirements without a full knowledge of the conditions under which armies have to operate. In India, I only need to mention the difficulties in Assam and the lines of communication back to our Base shops where engines are repaired—varying from 200 to 1,000 miles from the front line—to reveal that the provision of sufficient assemblies to fill these pipe lines is a problem of major importance.

My purpose in enlarging on our difficulties mentioned above is that all must realise the extreme importance of the part to be played by a repair organisation, such as I.E.M.E., in any scheme or battle plan which may be visualised. No scheme of battle can be considered foolproof before first ensuring that the maintenance load of any operation can be borne by the services—of which I.E.M.E. is no less vital than any other. If the mechanised equipment cannot be maintained, then the Force, as visualised, must of necessity soon find itself in difficulties, and will be forced to carry on without much of its essential equipment, which is so vital to its needs. As it is often not possible to build large bases or provide large engine repair workshops near the scene of operations, the lines of communication have a very large bearing on the efficiency of the I.E.M.E. repair services.

[The conclusion of this article by Major-General Duguid will appear in our next issue.]

## First Atlantic Air Train

THE first air train to cross the Atlantic has been brought over by R.A.F. Transport Command. The 3,500 miles of its journey were covered in twenty-eight flying hours, and the train consisted of a glider, fully loaded, towed by a twin-engined Dakota. The glider carried vaccines for Russia, radio, aircraft and motor parts.

When the glider broke cloud over its destination, the towing aircraft was not visible. The glider had the sky to itself, and an interested group of spectators watched it turning evenly and precisely to make a perfect landing. A tractor nursed it off the runway.

The "tug" broke cloud, circled and dropped the towrope neatly at the appointed place, where an airman collected it—£80 worth of nylon, which might have made ladies' stockings a few years previously. The tug landed and taxied to its station.

Squadron-Leader R. G. Seys, D.F.C., of the R.A.F., was captain of the glider, with Squadron-Leader F. M. Gobeil, R.C.A.F., as copilot. In the towplane were Flight-Lieutenant W. S. Longhurst (Captain), a Canadian with the R.A.F., and Flight-Lieutenant C. W. H. Thompson, a New Zealander, R.A.F. The radio officer was Mr. H. G. Wightman, and the Flight Engineer Pilot Officer R. H. Wormington.

The glider has an 84-ft. wing span, freight load is one-and-a-half tons, and loading and unloading is done through a hinged nose. It must be flown all the time; there is no automatic pilot. The pilot must not take his eyes off the towplane, or the towrope if the tug is in cloud, for a second. "If everything is not closely watched all the time," said Squadron-Leader Seys, "loss of control is the immediate danger. It only takes a few seconds." The glider has to be flown about 20 ft. above the towplane.

Noise complicates life for the glider pilots. Without power unit though it is, the air pulses "like a goods train on worn tracks, a steady beating of wheels over joints" in Squadron-Leader Gobeil's own words. Nor does the noise diminish until the glider speed falls below 70 knots.—Condensed from the "RAF. Quarterly."



## NO NEXT OF KIN

By LIEUTENANT-COLONEL E. JOHNSTONE

I T WAS on a monsoon morning, in the Naga Hills, when I got this chit from the Deputy Commissioner:

"Dear J., A herd of elephant is destroying the crops belonging to Lulong village. Would you care to go out? I give you permission to shoot any two tuskers. Lulong has over a number of years been slowly decimated by malaria. I remember the time when its population was 2,000; now it is about 200. You will receive my gratitude, and theirs, too, should you drive the herd away.

Yours, XY."

Any two tuskers from a herd! Sounded easy. I even conjured up visions of a right and left.

The procedure on receiving such chits was to approach my C. O. for a few days' leave. No easy matter, because, it seems, the monsoon affects C. Os. more than other mortals; and my C. O. was no exception. I ringed the probable scene of operations on a map, calculated the distance to be covered per flat foot, hitched up my pants and entered the Presence. After a salute intended to gladden the heart of any C.O., I exaggerated by saying what a good morning it was. He didn't notice this, however, but spotted the map I was carrying.

"Another elephant expedition, eh?" he asked.

"I hope so, Sir," I replied. "This time it is in aid of a stricken village, whose crops are being ruined."

I produced the D.C.'s chit, and spread the map out invitingly. After studying both, the C.O. said:

"To Lulong from this point on the road where you get off the lorry is 10 miles. One day to get there and back, and two days to do your shooting. Three days in all. How will that do you?"

Tactfully, I refrained from pointing out that the ten miles was as the crow flew, and mighty different when measured by my modest means of transit. Nevertheless, I suggested an extra day because of the weather. He agreed. So off I went, with four days to do my stuff. It looked as if it would have to be a right-and-left to do all the said stuff and get back in time. A case of a.w.l. would forfeit all hope of further leave.

Within a couple of hours I had collected my kit, guides, and porter, and was off on a lorry. I cast an eye over my hosts of the next few days. Their cheerful, funny, flat faces were beaming with delight; just like kids on the loose from school. They all wore a sort of kilt of black cloth, edged nattily with cowrie shells. Each too had a so-called ornament wedged in a hole made in the lobe of the ear. One youth sported a Gold Flake cigarette tin; another an empty 12-bore cartridge; and still another, presumably less affluent than his pals, could only manage a piece of orange peel.

For a raincoat they were a grass cape, not unlike the grass skirt worn by Dorothy Lamour in the South Sea films. On their heads they had a conical gadget made of woven bamboo, similar to those worn by the Chinese. From the knees down they were naked.

My own dress, too, was far from the recognised Bond Street style. I wore the least possible, compatible with decorum; the theme was utility and utility alone. A green cotton vest, green shorts and gym shoes completed the outfit. Not much protection against leeches, you may say. The leeches would get you even if swathed in bandages. The main advantage of my outfit was that they could be seen on a very large part of the anatomy, and could be dealt with by a Naga who closely followed me and whose sole job in life was to pick them off.

We left the lorry after a trip of about 20 miles, and got ready to cross the Diphu River. My heart missed a beat when I saw that river. It was the colour of mud; it was flowing good and hard and carrying half the flora of the countryside with it. Moreover, owing to the lay of the land we had to cross it twice before reaching Lulong.

The six of us, a handsome and well-dressed sextet, joined hands and waded in. I refrained from looking at the swirling water, and glued my eves on the further shore. I noticed the Nagas did that, too. The line, on a couple of occasions, was badly bent, but not broken. To greet the making of our bridgehead the Heavens opened, and the rain came down like mad. To make up for this it would have to be a right and-left.

We reached the village at midnight. A reception party produced Zu beer, which was very good, and hard-boiled eggs, which were not so good. Later I was shown to my one-roomed house, a mighty affair as big as a Sussex barn. Here I stripped, and collected a dozen or so leeches from my person. These I placed in a cigarette tin, so as to be nice and handy for execution next morning. And so to bed.

Next morning, bright and early. I took out a select party to visit the paddy field. This field, about 300 by 200 vards, represented the sole food and income of the village. The rice was a foot high: that is, what was left of it. The herd had not only used the field as a feasting ground, but as a playground, too. Large patches had been eaten to the ground; other patches showed earth ploughed up as if the giants had staged wrestling matches. There were also rings as big as a circus ring, where the soil had been beaten down like a sunken road; seemingly a playground where the young had been playing ring-a-roses. Or were they preparing for a future role in a circus? Whatever the answer, it was clear that a considerable amount of damage had occurred, and to save the village from complete ruin something had to be done, and that quickly. The death of one or two tuskers would discourage the remainder. I noticed the wrecks of two machans, built 12-foot high, where night look-outs had been posted.

"What has happened here?" I asked.

"The hathi wrecked both in one night, and trampled one of the look-outs to death. The man in the other machan managed

to escape unharmed. Since then no one has the courage to do the work." Truly a very nasty bunch of marauders; not a bit frightened of man.

The herd had not visited the crops the night before. We followed tracks at least 24 hours old, but by evening neither saw nor heard a thing. Because of the rain and leeches I decided to return to the village every night.

The second night the herd kept away. Time was passing; I had only one day to do my stuff, plus one night to get back to Headquarters. That evening, outside my "barn-house" I was chatting rather cheerlessly with the Headman. Swallows were swooping down and around us like dive-bombers. One dive-bombed within a few feet of my head. The Headman was very perturbed at this piece of gross discourtesy on the part of his swallows. I allayed his anxiety, however, by telling him that in my country it was a good omen for individuals so to be singled out. He murmured something to the effect that there was no accounting for tastes.

"To-morrow," I said, "we will shoot two hathi."

We did, too, shoot a brace!

Next morning we viewed the field, and found plenty of evidence that the raiders had been there. By now more than half the area had been laid waste. We picked up the exit tracks and started off. Within two miles we made contact. Within an hour-and-a-half of leaving the devastated field I had killed a tusker from the rearguard of the herd.

As if by magic a couple of dozen Nagas appeared; men, women, and children carrying hatchets and baskets arrived and started to cut up the carcase. Everything edible would be removed to the village, and there smoked and dried over fires for future consumption or sale. Well, the odd few tons would keep them busy, and happy, for some time.

The shooting had gefuffled the herd and made them split in two. To decide which bunch to follow the Nagas played a game of "ena—mena—mina—mo, which way shall we go?" This mystic rite over, we picked up the tracks and started off. After several hours of tracking, during which we must have covered 12 miles, we could see our particular herd was very close. We pushed on and so gained contact. The wind on test was found to be in our favour.

My luck was certainly in that day, for, in a clearing (a rare thing in Assam jungles) there was a pond some 50 yards across, and there, wading ashore on the far bank, were three elephants. I took cover and whistled gently to make them turn. They did; the centre elephant, a big tusker, paid the penalty of curiosity with a bullet in the brain. He swayed like something drunk; collapsed, and lay still. The remainder of the herd could be heard crashing away in fright. And as far as I know they may be still running.

Again the phantom party appeared, as if dropped by parachute, carrying baskets and hatchets, and got cheerfully to work cutting up the slain. There was great rejoicing; cutting up the slain.

meat; drinking of blood. I was so thirsty myself that I felt envious, but had to be content with some insipid water milked from a bamboo.

Well, Lulong had enough meat, when dried, to last them a couple of years—ten tons of hathi, of which more than half would be made into biltong. I had a feeling that they would have swopped the whole of their paddy crop for these two elephants.

The excitement over, I sat down to work out my time-and-space problem. It was now 2 p.m. Lulong was 12 miles away. From there to the road where I would catch a lorry at 6 a.m. next morning was 14 miles—altogether 26 miles, and a river in spate to cross twice, and 16 hours in which to do it. It meant some leg-stretching.

The Nagas said they would cut out the tusks, follow me up, and be there on the road by the time I boarded the first lorry next morning. So with two men I started off for the village. There I had some food and drink, collected my kit, and with five stalwarts, made for the road.

Phew! What a journey! We had to de-leech, by torchlight, every mile or so. The river at the first crossing was higher than before, but beyond getting my bedding wet and losing a hurricane lamp, nothing happened. We arrived at the second crossing at three in the morning. There, cut into the hillside on the other side, was the road representing civilization and easy travel. The Diphu was flowing at least six feet deep. It was impossible to ford it.

At the water edge we held a conference, during which I stressed the necessity of being on the road by six o'clock. After a long pow-wow, with great reluctance, they brought forth an alternative. It meant climbing the pimple behind us, a mere 3.000-feet, and dropping down on the other side to a bridge which carried the road across the river. Going steadily, we could just do it by six o'clock.

Dawn was not far away. I hated to think what daylight would reveal. We were covered in mud, murk, and blood. The leeches—and there were thousands of them—were having the time of their lives. Nevertheless, my companions were cheerful enough, for had I not promised them lashings of Canteen rum on reaching H.Q.?

When nearing the top of the hill we heard shouting at the ford away down below us. The men and the tusks had arrived. We yelled back in unison, telling them of our changed route. There was no answering acknowledgment. Obviously the noise of the river blotted out our yells. Surely they would hear and understand two rounds fired in quick succession. This I did, using my scatter gun. Satisfied with this brain-wave, we pushed on, finished the trek, and caught the very first lorry that came along.

That evening the D.C. asked me to go along and see him. I found him sitting in his garden, chatting to eight Nagas from Lulong. This is the story he unfolded.

"I've heard the story from both sides, and we can reconstruct what happened. The men at the ford heard the bytwo shots, and

they say the reports came from the opposite bank. Of course, what they heard were the echoes thrown back by the hill opposite, and naturally they came to the conclusion that if you could get across, so could they. Two men waded in and were carried away at once. One of them regained the bank and was saved. The other, Yikimoo, was drowned. His body has been recovered six miles downstream."

"I am sorry, very sorry," I replied. "Naturally, I will pension his widow or give her a lump sum. I leave the amount entirely to you."

"I knew you would. I'll find out how things stand, and let you know."

A week later I met the D.C., and he broached the subject of the drowned man.

"It's an extraordinary thing," he said, "but Yikimoo hasn't a relative in the world—no wife, brother, sister—no nothing. In my twenty-odd years' service in the Naga Hills I have not known of such a case. It must be rare, very rare."

"In that case," I said, "I'll present a lump sum to the village. They may want to buy Worcester Sauce to help down all the meat they've now got."

"A good idea, they'll like that. Matter of fact, their favourite cocktail is a mixture of rum and Worcester Sauce. By the way," he continued, "there's a rogue playing hell round Mokulung. Would you care to have a crack at it?"

"Yes," I replied, "but not until my weight is back to normal, and the leech-bites are healed up."

# Good Advice

"How can we escape inflation? In part by Government action, control of stocks, prices and rationing. This will not do the whole trick. We must all play our parts by keeping out of the market and only buying what we really must have. We must also help as public servants having control of public money and public stores. By using more public money or public stores than we need we put the Government into the market as a buyer, and so make it help inflation.

"How can we help? By using everything we have for as long as we can, mending it and patching it until it is quite worn out; by not buying an article unless it is useful and really necessary; by sending worn-out articles in as salvage, so that the raw material may be recovered and used again.

"The result will be that we shall save money. If it is public money that is saved, the Government will be able to use it to good purpose; if it is our own, we shall be richer. The money we save for ourselves must be made to work by investment—best of all in Government funds."—From a directive issued to every soldier in Baluchistan by the G.O.C.



# REVIEW OF N.W. FRONTIER POLICY FROM 1849 TO 1939

By LIEUT. COLONEL F. C. SIMPSON, O.B.E.

"No man who has read a page of Indian history will ever prophesy about the Frontier."—Lord Curzon, in 1904.

S O MUCH has been written about the Frontier during the last hundred years by historians, frontier administrators, soldiers and others that any attempt to add to this vast bibliography must appear unnecessary. Yet there are two main reasons which may justifiably be given in favour of making another minor contribution to the literature on this subject.

One is that there are now in India many officers of all ages in both the British and Indian services, and in the American forces, who may care to know something about this famous N. W. Frontier and its problems, even though they may not get the opportunity to serve there or to pay it a visit.

They can, of course, find all they want to know by reading some of the many books and articles on the Frontier, but this takes time—and time which few officers can spare in these hectic days, and, moreover, a pre-requisite for such study is a good library, which is not to be found except in a few big military stations.

Secondly, the political face of India is changing rapidly, and even bigger and more significant changes will clearly follow when the present war ends. The moment is, therefore, opportune for us to take stock of our position on the N. W. Frontier, to look back on our achievements, to appreciate our shortcomings, and, at the same time, to assess the progress we have made along that rough and stony road to our ultimate objective, which has been, and must continue to be, a peaceful, law-abiding and settled Frontier.

This article is, therefore, written in the hope that it may present in a "potted" form a review of the history of our N. W. Frontier policy, and some information, necessarily very summarised, on the problem with which the Government of India has been faced in its efforts to control this No-Man's land of warlike and turbulent tribes since we first came into direct contact with it in 1849.

The sketch map will enable those who do not know the Frontier to follow the article, and there is also a table giving a list of Frontier expeditions from 1849 to 1939. No claim is made that the table is either complete or strictly accurate, but it contains the more important expeditions.

ETHNOLOGY, TRIBAL DISTRIBUTION AND CHARACTERISTICS

Each of these subjects taken individually would fill a book, but the following remarks are mainly intended for those to whom the Frontier is a new country, and who are unacquainted with the main tribes and their characteristics.

Taken by and large—very much so possibly—it may be said that the Pathan, which is the generally accepted generic name for all the tribesmen on the N. W. Frontier, lives west of the river Indus between Swat territory in the north and a line drawn from Dera Ismail Khan through Sibi to Chaman in the south. Pathans also inhabit southern and eastern Afghanistan, the Indo-Afghan frontier—better known as the Durand line—being in this case purely a political, and not an ethnic, boundary. This situation is in fact one of the many complications in the Frontier problem.

North of Swat in the territories of Chitral, Kohistan and Buner, etc., live various non-Pathan tribes, who will not be mentioned again as they are now comparatively peaceful and settled, and their control and administration have for many years past ceased to be a source of anxiety to the Government of India.

South of the Dera Ismail Khan-Sibi-Chaman line live the Baluch and other tribes. Here again, since the peaceful settlement of Baluchistan by that great frontier administrator, Sandeman, between 1877 and 1890, the control of this part of the Frontier has ceased to be a major problem.

So it is the Pathan tribes with which we are chiefly concerned.

The main Pathan tribes, those against whom most of our frontier expeditions have been carried out, are in geographical order from north to south:

Mohmands, in the area to the N. W. of Peshawar.

Afridis, in the Khyber-Kohat pass area and in Tirah.

Orakzais, in Tirah.

1939

Ophesy

ators,

iblio-

asons ninor

es ia

ræs,

ntier unity

ding

akes

lays, ary,

and

hen

us

the

ıgh

nd

er.

re-

ı۷.

įs-

n

įD.

¢

Mahsuds, in Waziristan.

Wazirs, in Waziristan.

Bhittanis in the S. E. corner of Waziristan.

Of these, the Mahsuds and Wazirs have been the cause of most of the trouble on the Frontier—at any rate since the beginning of the 20th century—and it may almost be said that the present-day Frontier problem is in actual fact the problem of Waziristan. In the last 30 years the majority of punitive expeditions have been against the one or the other of these two tribes, though both the Mohmands and Afridis have had their moments of madness.

All Pathans are Mohammedans, and the majority belong to the Sunni sect.

The physical features of a country and its climate have a definite influence on the characteristics and habits of its people, and the natural resources of a country decide to a large extent the occupations of its inhabitants. If, therefore, we are to appreciate the main characteristics of the tribesmen, we must know the general physical features of their country and the conditions in which they live.

In the main, the Frontier from Chitral to Baluchistan is a country of wild, desolate and rugged hills, with few rivers and a

general scarcity of water and grazing grounds. Natural resources are few, and what there are have been undeveloped to any appreciable extent.

The climate is one of extremes, great heat in the summer, particularly in the foothills along the administrative border, and intense cold in the winter, especially on the high mountain ranges close to the Durand line. As a natural corrollary, the climate in the mountains is temperate in summer, and that of the foothills is cold but pleasant and exhilarating in the winter.

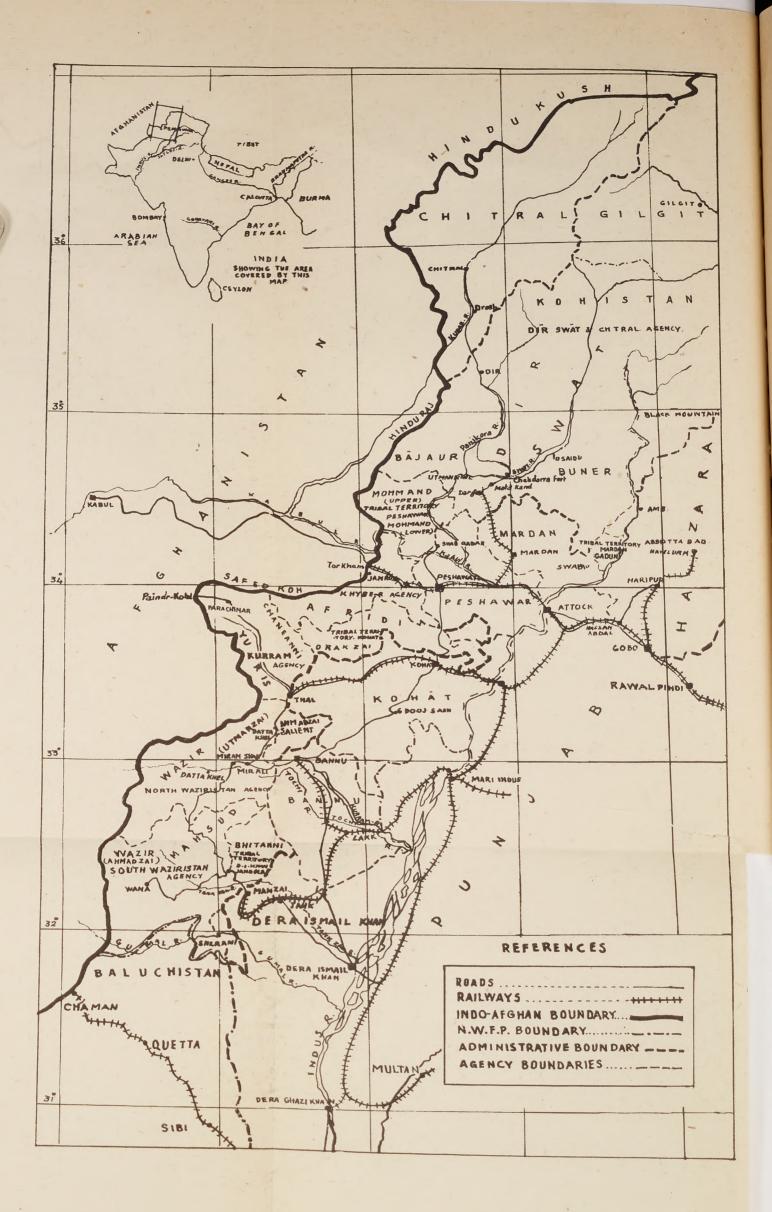
'Such physical features and climate on a population which has no permanent means of subsistence except its flocks and herds makes it to a great extent nomadic. Extremes of heat and cold lead the inhabitants to migrate to the foothills in the winter and to return to the higher mountain to the west in the summer. Similarly, scarcity of water and lack of suitable grazing grounds tend to periodic movement in search of fresh pastures.

Lastly, and most important of all, must be noted the general barrenness of the hills compared with the fertility of the plains on the Indian side of the administrative border, thus constituting a perpetual attraction for these peoples to leave their mountain homes to raid the fertile valleys in the plains below. With such a physical setting it is not to be wondered at that the chief characteristics of the Pathan tribes portray some of the more unpleasant traits of human nature.

The hard conditions under which they live and their stern code of tribal behaviour, in which blood feuds and the law of self-preservation reign supreme, have made them fierce, relentlessly cruel, revengeful, cunning, treacherous and distrusting. The austerity and bigotry of their religion, added to ignorance of its finer points, make them priest-ridden and fanatical, while the undeveloped nature of the country and the general lack of education have left them even to this day ignorant, illiterate and superstitious.

Unproductivity of their own hills, lack of any permanent employment in the peaceful pursuits of a civilised community, and the comparative ease with which they have been able to obtain rifles and ammunition have all combined to make raiding along the administrative border one of the most popular occupations for these hardy and warlike hillmen. There is nothing unusual in this, human nature being what it is, and history abounds with examples of the same behaviour in almost every part of the world on the part of virile mountaineers lured from their fastnesses in the hope of loot and booty, and also by genuine economic distress, while the attendant dangers make the game all the more attractive and appeal strongly to their adventurous instincts.

We must in fairness look at the other side of the picture. The Pathan may be a villain, but he is in many ways a very likeable villain. Brave, even to the point of recklessness, usually of outstanding physique, cheerful, hospitable, with a ready wit and a keen sense of humour, he walks the world with an arrogant



bearing and confident step, proud in his descent and in his heritage scornful of the dwellers in the plains, resentful of any intrusion into his own country, independent and determined to live his own life in his own way. He is a mixture of much that is likeable and worthy of admiration, with much that is to be despised and disliked, the latter unfortunately predominating.

Finally, we must note the intensely democratic nature of the Pathan tribes, both in their dealings amongst themselves and with the outside world. Control is exercised in each individual tribe by a council of Elders or tribal maliks, known as a jirga, and negotiations between frontier officials and the tribesmen are carried out through this medium. Unfortunately, owing to his democratic nature, the jirga has proved to be an unreliable means of controlling the tribesmen, and it is seldom that a jirga is truly representative of all sections of a tribe. In nearly all cases of unrest the jirga has proved to be incapable of controlling the unruly and turbulent elements—usually the hot-headed young men—of a tribe, and the result has been that Government has been forced to take stronger measures in the form generally of a punitive expedition, or in later years, of independent air action.

In marked contrast to this state of affairs in the areas of the Pathan tribes, we have the example of the Baluch tribes in Baluchistan, where hereditary tribal chiefs had sufficient power to control those for whom they were responsible. Hence Sir Robert Sandeman in settling Baluchistan, was able to deal with a body of tribal officials on whom he could rely. The result was a peaceful and permanent settlement of Baluchistan, which has been held up ever since as an example to be followed in our relations with the Pathans.

History has, however, proved that the methods of negotiation so successfully applied in Baluchistan were not susceptible of application to the tribesmen of Waziristan and the tribes further north. The attempt has been made, but it has not succeeded.

It is difficult to say whether the reasons for this failure can be attributed either to a faulty application of Sandeman's methods, or to the lack of control of Pathan tribal maliks over their tribes, but the proof of the pudding is in the eating, and no successful and lasting settlement of the Frontier between Peshawar and the Zhob has yet been made.

So much, then, for the background against which it is now proposed to review the actual history of events on the Frontier. It has been of necessity brief, and much has been left unsaid, but it is hoped that enough detail has been given to provide the newcomer to India with some idea of the tribal picture and of the nature of the country and its inhabitants.

1849—1890.—The conquest of Sind in 1843 and the final defeat of the Sikhs, with the consequent annexation of the Punjab in 1849, brought the British administration in India into really close contact for the first time with the Frontier and its problems.

It is not proposed to say much about Sind or Baluchistan-Thanks to the services of three great men, Sir Charles Napier, General John Jacob and Sir Robert Sandeman, names famous in the annals of the frontier, these territories were subdued and ultimately settled in the space of some 41 years—not a very long time, judged by the standards of history for so tremendous an undertaking.

On the rest of the frontier there is a different tale to be told. We took over from the Sikhs a vaguely-defined administrative boundary, stretching along the foothills of the frontier west of the river Indus, and an equally unsatisfactory system of frontier administration based on a policy of laissez-faire, combined with the use of force when the conduct of the tribes demanded strong measures.

Curious though it may seem, we have perpetuated thisboundary, and there is very little difference between the administrative boundary of tribal territory as it is to-day, and that which we took over from the Sikhs ninety-four years ago. We seem, indeed, to have inherited an unhappy legacy, of which we have been unable to rid ourselves through these troublesome years.

The Sikhs had waged continual war against the Frontier tribes. The Punjab Government—for during this period (1849—1890) the administration of the Frontier was under its control—started off by adopting a policy of non-intervention in tribal affairs, coupled with retaliatory action against the raiding propensities of the tribesmen when these brought them across the administrative border. It is difficult for the leopard to change his spots, and the substitution of British for Sikh rule in the frontier territories had little if no effect on the Pathans.

Later, various conciliatory measures were introduced, with the object of encouraging the tribesmen to mingle more freely and on more friendly terms with the inhabitants of the plains on the British side of the border, but it cannot be said that they met with much success. When the behaviour of the tribesmen was such as to demand retaliatory action from the Punjab Government, thisusually took one of three forms—a blockade of the territory of the offending tribe, or a punitive expedition, or, as often as not, fineswere levied either as an independent measure or coupled with either of the other two. It was a policy of the velvet glove and the mailed fist, one of conciliation backed by force. A policy which has in different forms continued to this day in its fundamental conception.

During this period some forty expeditions were undertaken in an attempt to keep the tribes in order, and to punish them for their misdeeds. The longest period that elapsed without an expedition- was six years, whilst the average interval between expeditions was only just under one-and-a-half years.

Certain other points are worthy of attention during this period. First, most of the military operations during this time were carried out by a special force, known as the Punjab Frontier Force and famous in the history of the Indian Army as the

"Piffers", and it was not till just at the end of this period, in 1886, that this force was amalgamated with the regular army. The original idea was that operations against the tribesmen required a particular technique of fighting, for which a special force, specially trained and stationed always in frontier districts, was necessary. This idea has now been discarded, but it died a hard death, and there may even now be some who still think that fighting on the frontier should be the job of a highly-trained special force.

Secondly, in 1878 a Border Police and Militia were sanctioned for certain frontier districts. This step was an important landmark in frontier defence, for it inaugurated the policy by which the civil armed forces of Government became the first line of defence against the tribesmen, as opposed to the military forces, thereby reversing the principle which had been adopted when we first annexed the Punjab in 1849, when the military forces were looked on as the first to deal with any trouble.

This policy of a frontline of civil armed forces (Scouts, militia and police) in immediate contact with the tribesmen and ready to-deal with incipient trouble, backed by military forces held in reserves to act when the situation got out of hand, has continued in varying forms ever since that date. It is another of the many side-issues of the Frontier problem, about which controversy has raged and still does to this day.

Thirdly, an attempt was made during these years to settle colonies of tribesmen on the British side of the administrative border. The attempt was partially successful in one or two cases, notably in the Yusufzai country to the north-east of Peshawar. But on the whole it failed elsewhere, and more particularly with the Mahsuds.

The idea of deportation of turbulent tribesmen is an attractive one, and has, in fact, been advocated at times as a possible solution of the frontier problem. Remove the tribesmen and the Frontier will cease to be a problem. It sounds so simple—too-simple possibly to be seriously considered, but it has its points.

It must be remembered that the Frontier has an Imperial or international as well as a local aspect. So far as possible the international aspect will be avoided in this article, though mention of it will have to be made occasionally.

We fought the 2nd Afghan War from 1878 to 1880, and it had its inevitable repercussions on the Pathan tribes, and caused considerable unrest.

We now leave this period, the first forty-one years of British administration on the Frontier, without being able to record any definite advance towards a settlement of its problems, except in the case of Sind and Baluchistan, where unqualified success had been achieved, mainly due to the personalities of the capable men, both soldiers and frontier administrators, to whom the task had been entrusted.

To record lack of success on the rest of the Frontier is not tobelittle the magnificent and devoted service during these years of many frontier officials, nor does it imply that affairs had remained exactly in the state they had been left by the Sikhs. The point is that, despite all we had done, a successful and peaceful settlement of the Frontier from Chitral to Dera Ismail Khan still appeared to be no nearer achievement than before, the Pathans still remained a thorn in our side, and punitive expeditions were still the order of the day.

1890—1900.—"It appears to the Government of India that the stime has arrived when it becomes of extreme importance that an effort be made to bring under our control and, if possible, to organise, for purposes of defence against external aggression, the great belt of independent tribal territory which lies along our north-western frontier, and which has hitherto been allowed to remain a formidable barrier against ourselves." (Govt. of India to Punjab Govt., Aug., 1887.)

Not a few of the many who have written about the Frontier have used this quotation as a prelude to their remarks on this period of its history. It is so apt to the times about to be described that the present writer has been unable to resist the temptation to follow in their footsteps and to quote this yet again.

For it was the pursuance of a "forward" policy, based on the above "directive," during the Vicerovalties of Lord Lansdowne and Lord Elgin, which undoubtedly contributed in no small degree to the general feeling of unrest along the whole length of the N. W. Frontier during the nineties, culminating in the only one almost general uprising of all the frontier tribes with which the Government of India has had to contend.

It is necessary now to enumerate some of the events which occurred during the first five years of the nineties in the implementation of this "forward" policy.

Between 1889 and 1891 the Zhob was occupied by Government forces after an expedition and the Zhob river declared the boundary between Baluchistan and the Punjab. At the same time, we took control of the Gomal river route, these two actions being closely related.

In 1891, owing to the lawlessness of the Orakzais in Tirah, two expeditions were carried out against this tribe resulting in the administrative boundary being advanced to include the Samana range, on which military and militia posts were established.

Shortly afterwards, in 1892, we occupied the Kurram valley. This was a peaceful operation prompted by the international aspect of our frontier policy, and one which was welcomed by the Turis, the main tribe inhabiting this valley.

Turning to the northern end of the Frontier, we carried out expeditions against, and established political control over, the small states of Hunza and Nagar in 1892 and of Chitral in 1895. The reasons for these steps were occasioned partly by imperial policy, which led us to protect this N.W. tip of India from a potential Russian threat, and partly by local policy, as the internal affairs of these areas were unsatisfactory and local conditions very unsettled. The final extension of our control to Chitral led to the building of a new road from Malakand to Chitral, the "Broken Road" of A. E. W. Mason's well-known novel of that mame. In this same direction we carried out two expeditions, in

1891, and again in 1892, against the Black Mountain tribes adjoining the Hazara district, and extended our control to this area also.

One outstanding event of this period which must now be mentioned was the delimitation of the Durand Line, which became the international boundary between India and Afghanistan. This was done during 1893 and 1894, and the effect this had on the general frontier risings of 1897 is referred to later on.

Turning south to Waziristan—that storm centre of the frontier—we find this same "forward" policy involving us in the establishment of posts at Wana in South Waziristan, and in the Tochi in the north. Both these acts stirred the tribes immediately concerned to resist our progress. In November, 1894, the Mahsuds attacked the British Boundary Commission camp at Wana, and an expedition was necessary to punish the tribe. In 1895 we occupied the Tochi valley, mainly with the object of obtaining more effective control over the tribes of North Waziristan.

So, gradually, by a noticeable extension of our control over tribal territory, the stage was set for the general conflagration of 1897, the blackest year for the Government of India in the stormy history of the Frontier. The causes for this outbreak were many, some large and some small, some genuine and some imagined, but historians and students of frontier history are generally agreed that the following were the main underlying reasons:

- (a) The implementation of the "Forward" policy from 1890 onwards.
- (b) The demarcation of the Indo-Afghan boundary (the Durand Line).
- (c) Afghan interference and intrigue, prompted by fear and anxiety at our "forward" policy.
- (d) The sinister influence of tribal mullahs (priests), who took advantage of the general unrest to stir up the latest fanaticism of the tribes, and to urge them on to take violent action against us.

The Pathan, as we have seen, is strongly democratic and jealous of outside interference in his affairs or of intrusion into his territories. The advances into his country mentioned above, and the demarcation of the Indo-Afghan frontier behind him, quite naturally produced a sense of uneasiness and doubt in the tribesmen's minds, and they inferred that these first signs of the extension of Government's authority into tribal territory were the precursors of further action which threatened their independence, and were aimed possibly at complete dominance of their lands.

To this extent the disturbances of 1897 may be said to have been general. But there is nothing to show that they were centrally controlled or co-ordinated by some unseen agency in order to embarrass us as much as possible. In fact, although all of them took place more or less simultaneously, the actual reasons for each tribal upheaval were quite distinct and generally unconnected.

Here at any rate was inflammable material lying ready for the kindling, and the frontier mullahs, whose great influence over these bigoted and fanatical followers of Islam has already been described, seized their opportunities to the full.

The following tribes rose against us from north to south along the Frontier:

The Swat tribes, instigated by the Mad Mullah, attacked Malakand and Chakdara.

The Mohmands, encouraged by the Adda Mullah, attacked Shabkadar fort and other places in Peshawar District.

The Orakzais and Afridis in Tirah, instigated again by mullahs, rose and captured the forts in the Khyber and attacked our posts on the Samana ridge.

The Wazirs in the Tochi murdered a British political officer, and were encouraged to hostile action by the mullah Powindah, a notorious firebrand of the Frontier.

These risings demanded immediate and firm retaliatory measures, and resulted in our undertaking punitive expeditions in each case, the biggest and most important of which was that which penetrated into Tirah. Each was brought to a successful conclusion.

Thus ended a period of ten restive years. It began with a high-sounding announcement of Government's intention to extend its control over independent tribal territory. The phrase "for purposes of defence against external aggression" made it clear, however, that the object behind this intention was one of international rather than of local policy.

The Russian menace was still considered to be a very real one and, although Afghanistan might be a good buffer against any such threat of invasion from the north, it was obviously held that with the frontier tribes on our side and under our control, vet another useful buffer would be interposed between India and its potential enemy. This fact exemplifies once more how the impingement of international on local policy was always complicating the whole frontier problem.

This period also brings out the fact that Afghanistan was closely concerned with our attitude towards the Pathan tribes on the Indian side of the Durand line, reacted quickly to events in tribal territory, and was ever ready to take a hand in the sordid game of tribal intrigue and conspiracy in order to maintain its own interests and prestige amongst the tribes.

Again we see the important part that religion plays in our dealings with the tribes and the power of the mullahs, when given the chance, to stir up religious fervour to the point of fanaticism, which then bursts in all its fury against the rule of the hated infidel.

What then can be said of these ten years as regards the progress made towards a permanent and peaceful settlement of the Frontier?

At the extreme northern end of the line definite progress can be noted, and from this time down to the present day this part of

the frontier has remained more or less untroubled. At the southern extremity, too, it may be said that the occupation of the Zhob constituted a record of permanent progress, and since then the Zhob, though it may have had its moments of unrest, has on the whole remained quiet and the peace has been maintained. This was the last occasion, too, that Government forces invaded Tirah, and the occupation of the Kurram had in this particular area extended our control right up to the Afghan frontier.

In the centre of the line, roughly from Mohmand territory in the north to the southern end of Waziristan in the south, our challenge had been accepted and the tribes had reacted forcibly and in no mean fashion. Here, although success attended our arms in the several punitive expeditions we were forced to undertake, the result was merely the attainment of a temporary respite, and no real settlement had been reached nor lasting peace established. The impression is gained, rightly or wrongly, that the real motive behind our policy during this time was one of international and not domestic concern. We were concerned more with the defence of India against external attack than with reaching a peaceful and permanent settlement with the tribes of the Frontier.

Once more the criticism—if such it may be termed—casts no reflection on the actual men carrying out the policy of Government on the spot. Frontier officials of all types and grades were giving, as usual, loyal and devoted service in every sphere of administrative activity. But as yet the goal was not in sight and the policy directing them towards the goal was neither clear nor consistent.

[The second half of this article, tracing events up to the present time, will appear in our next issue.]

LIST OF FRONTIER EXPEDITIONS-1849-1900

Year		Tribe	Area of Operations	REMARKS
1849		Baizais (Mohmands)	Mohmand territory.	•
1850	.:.	Afridis	Kohat Pass.	
1851		Miranzai tribes	Between Thal-in- Kurram and Bannu.	
1851-52		Mohmands	Mohmand territory.	
1852		Ditto.	Ditto.	
,,		Utman Khel	Swat river area.	
,,	••	Ahmadzai Wazirs	N. E. corner of Waziristan, North of Bannu.	
1852-53	••	Hassanzais (Black Mountain tribes).	Borders of Peshawar and Hazara Districts.	, t
1853		Hindustani Fanatics	Ditto.	
,,	••	Shiranis	Zhob—Takht-i-Su- leiman area.	
,,		Adam Khel (Afridis)	Kohat Pass.	•
1854		Mohmands	Mohmand territory.	•
1855		Aka Khel (Afridis)	Tirah.	
,,	••	Rabia Khel (Orak- zais).	Do.	

$Y_{ear}$		Tribe	Area of Operations	Remarks
1856	• •	1	Kurram and Bannu.	
4857	• •	37	Din Control Do	
1859	••	Khudu Khel and Hindustani Fanatics.	Borders of Peshawar and Hazara	
1859-60	••	Kabul Khel (Wazirs)	Districts. Ahmadzai Salient N. of Bannu.	
1860	• •	Mahsuds	Waziristan	lst Mahsud Expedi-
1863	••	Hindustani Fanatics.	Borders of Peshawar and Hazara Districts.	tion. Ambelya Campaign.
1864 1868	••	1 10: Air (O 1 i-)	Mohmand territory. Tirah (near Kohat	
**	••	Black Mountain Tribes.	border). Hazara border.	
1869	•••	Bizotis (Orakzais)	Tirah (near Kohat border).	,
1877	••	Jowaki, Adam Khel (Afridis).	Tirah, N. E. of Kohat.	
1877-78	••	Ditto	Ditto.	
1878	••	Utman Khels	Swat river area.	
"	••	Zakka Khel (Afridis)	Bazar Valley, S. W. of the Khyber.	lst Bazar Valley Ex- pedition.
1879	••	Ditto Mohmands	Ditto.	2nd Ditto.
,,		Zaimukhts	Mohmand territory. S. W. corner of Tirah.	
1880		Mohmands	Mohmand territory.	
,,		Bhittanis	S. E. Corner of Waziristan.	
,,		Kabul Khel (Wazirs)	South of Thal-in- Kurram.	
1881	••	Mahsuds	Waziristan	2nd Mahsud Expe-
1887		Bunerwals	Buner-between Indus and Swat rivers.	dition.
1888		Black Mountains Tribes.	Hazara border.	
891		Orakzais	South central Tirah.	lst Miranzai Ex- pedition—Jan.
,,		Do	Ditto	2nd Ditto, —Apr.
894-95		Mahsuds	Waziristan	3rd Mahsud Expedition.
895		Wazirs	North Waziristan	Occupation of Tochi- Valley.
897		Mohmands	Mohmand territory.	•
,,	••	Yusufzais	Malakand-Chakdara	
**		Afridis and Orakzais	area. Tirah	Tirah Expedition,
9,		Madda Khel (Wazirs)	North Waziristan	1897-98. Datta Khel Operations.
898		Bunerwals	Buner.	AT AT 120.

## FRONTIER TACTICS DEFENDED

By LIEUTENANT-COLONEL P. A. MEADE, O.B.E., M.C.

R EADERS of Lieut. Colonel Simpson's article on the Frontier in the last issue of the *Journal* will agree with him that this very large problem is one that cannot be conveniently forgotten just because there is a World War in progress, that it will still be on our hands after the war is over, and that the more thought we can now devote to it the better.

Many, however, will join issue with him in his contention that former methods are necessarily obsolete, and that we shall be able to revolutionize Frontier Warfare with the aid of new and better weapons in the hands of supermen. This is theory. What are the facts?

As in the War of 1914-18, when the Amir Habibullah was in control of Afghanistan, there is now a neutral, but friendly administration in that country, strong enough to keep the peace.

As regards Waziristan, the prolonged period of comparative calm may be attributed very largely to the fact that the hostile Faqir of Ipi is a Tori Khel Wazir, while the leading Mullah of the country is a Mahsud named Fazl Din, son of the "Mullah Powindah," who commands the respect of all the Mahsuds, is extremely jealous of his own prestige, and is consequently most unlikely to join the Faqir of Ipi, whom he no doubt considers an upstart. Lately has come news of an attempted concordat between these two mullahs.

It is clear that a peace which depends mainly on personalities can only be regarded as temporary and uncertain, and that we may be faced with trouble on the border at any time.

No officer who has ever acted as Advanced Guard Commander to a Waziristan Column can fail to remember the crowd of Maliks, Khassadars, and political hangers-on which clutters up the head of the Column (often with the Van Guard) and seems to be inseparable from these operations. He may well have heard those fatal words, "You need not bother about that hill. The Khassadars are already holding it!"

Shades of the Shahur Tangi!

Political considerations may often necessitate the presence of the Political Officer and one or two of the leading local Maliks with the Column, but it is clearly wrong that the Advanced Guard Commander or the Column Commander should be distracted in any way from the operations in hand. The presence of Khassadars in the vicinity of the Column is totally unnecessary, and the Political party should be restricted to a minimum and kept firmly at Column Headquarters. It is absolutely impossible to distinguish between friendlies and hostiles, and if regrettable incidents are to be avoided, the only course is to keep the former well away from the

scene of operations, and to treat as hostile any armed man who may appear.

It would be most dangerous to assume that the troops at our disposal for future frontier operations will be tougher or better trained than their forebears. They may be better armed and (possibly) equipped, but they will not always be able to obtain the full effect of these modern weapons because, owing to insuperable natural obstacles, it may not be possible to bring them to the required place. The more light automatics and mortars they carry, the slower will be the pace; there are many areas which are impassable to tanks or to vehicles of any kind, and the troops must march and climb as they have always done before.

In most Frontier operations the main difficulty is to bring the enemy to battle in such numbers that heavy casualties can be inflicted on him. The occasions on which this could be achieved against so mobile and elusive an enemy have been few, and might probably have been none at all if we had not followed the valley routes, thus as it were "trailing our coat" to some extent and giving the enemy some chance of collecting a lashkar and so meeting the maximum fire power which we could bring to bear.

In practice, opposition to the advancing troops is usually negligible, and the battles of Mandanna Hill and Ahnai Tangi were only fought because the Mahsuds, whose morale at that time was extremely high, thought that by engaging us at these places they could prevent our entry into the heart of their country. As it turned out, their casualties at the Ahnai Tangi were so high that they could not afterwards collect in sufficient numbers to offer serious opposition, in even more favourable ground, to our advance. They are not likely to forget this, and the fact remains that a real lashkar will very rarely be met except on ground of its own choosing.

Moreover, although extremely brave, they dislike getting casualties without a very adequate return, and will not risk an attack except in circumstances which they believe to be most favourable to themselves. As an instance, the attacks on our two Columns converging on Biche Kashkai at the end of 1036 were no doubt made because in the one case the enemy was holding difficult scrub-covered hills overlooking the Khaisora, and in the other our Column was small and, it will be remembered, had no artillery.

Conversely, in the following summer a Column moving in the upper Shahur above Barwand through the Tangi Toi (which is too narrow to take a loaded came), much less a Tank or a vehicle of any kind) was Not attacked, although every circumstance appeared to favour such action on the part of the Mahsuds, who were in considerable strength on the wooded heights above the Gorge.

The proposed alternative of moving Troops along the hilltops is not practicable, because--

- (a) The hills are not continuous ranges, but are broken serried ridges, often impassable:
- (b) Touch would be quickly lost, and dislocation ensue:

- (c) 'Even to the best trained troops the exertion and faugue involved would be very great:
- (d) The risk of casualties would be enormously increased. How is it proposed to deal with wounded men?
- (e) It would be impossible to make use of most of the modern weapons with which the troops will be provided, as they would neither be able to carry them themselves nor be covered by them from elsewhere.

Troops can certainly be used for a sudden dash into and over the hills for the purpose of surrounding a village or capturing some height, but anything more than this would appear to be wrong in principle and a complete waste of the extremely heavy striking-power of a modern regular force, which would thus be relegated to a role properly belonging to the Scouts.

It should be noted that both Tanks and armoured cars have already been used very effectively in the Mohmand operations, 1935, and in Waziristan, 1936-37, wherever their employment was found possible.

### **PERIMETERS**

Please let us keep our perimeter!

Like Horlick's (or is it Nestles?) milk at night, it is so comforting—and so effective. Moreover there is, or should be, always time to build it. If not, it is high time that the Brigadier be transferred to some other sphere of usefulness.

The threat of aerial bombardment, if it were ever possible, is now so remote as to be negligible, and there appears to be much to recommend concentration in one perimeter at night, and little against it. On the one occasion on record for many years past when the troops were compelled (through no fault, be it said, of the Column Commander, who had a most difficult decision forced upon him) to spend the night without a perimeter in battle positions, there was considerable confusion and a heavy casualty list both in men and animals.

The perimeter will not stop sniping, nor is it intended to do so, though it affords a considerable amount of cover and the casualties caused by night sniping are in point of fact extremely few. Its main object is to stop a rush and to gain for the defenders those few precious seconds which make just all the difference. It is at once a breastwork, a rallying point and a fire position which can be occupied without confusion in a few moments. Last, but not least, it presupposes and facilitates the making of a co-ordinated fire-plan which can seldom happen if the units are dispersed.

It is not contended that a properly-trained Battalion cannot spend the night in its battle positions, with or without a perimeter, under certain conditions and in certain areas. But the occasion on which any single Battalion could be thus employed on the frontier is hard to envisage.

Normally we should have to consider the case of a whole Brigade, and there are very few areas on the whole of the border in which a dispersed Brigade could camp for the night which are



free of broken nullahs, scrub, or inequalities in the ground, and which are not under observation from numerous vantage points. There will thus be little cohesion, and it is suggested that a determined enemy will be presented with undreamed-of opportunities for infiltrating into the camp area. Casualties would certainly increase and, at best, no one in the whole Brigade would get any sleep.

But apart from these considerations there would be numerous administrative difficulties, which do not exist in a centralized Camp. How can orders be passed, or the Brigade Conference be held? How about the overnight talk between the next day's Advanced Guard Commander and his Gunner, now in some separate Camp perhaps half-a-mile or more away with Mahsud snipers in between!

The idea of a dispersed camp was tried out on the frontier in 1935 during a Brigade Training, and did Not appear to be a success. The main points which were then brought out were:
(a) dangerous gaps in the defence: (b) confusion and delay in moving out of camps before dawn.

To point the moral, two instances in which the perimeter figured largely may perhaps be quoted. They are nearly 40 years apart. The first—a classic—took place at Wana in November, 1894, when troops arrived there, for the first time, in connection with demarcation of the Border under Sir Mortimer Durand. On this occasion the Brigade occupied a very elongated perimeter, the "dangerous" end (i.e., that adjoining the Wana Toi, where there is much dead ground and broken nullahs, and closely overlooked by what is now known as Shisha Picquet Hill) being held by 3rd Sikhs F.F. This Battalion had constructed a strong high breastwork as their perimeter, but the same was not the case throughout the Brigade, and the units which were well out in the plain, away from the hill, had put up only a nominal wall.

This was noticed by the Mahsuds, who had collected in great strength on Shisha Hill.

As a result, their attack, which they carried out in great strength before dawn next morning, was put in from the Plain (or "safe" end of the perimeter), when the Camp was rushed and penetrated almost up to Brigade Headquarters. Heavy casualties were inflicted on the Brigade, and the enemy were only ejected after fierce hand-to-hand fighting.

The second and more modern instance took place in 1933 at Nim Parao, a small temporary post not far South of the Gomal river. The post was not wired, but to all appearance there was no dead ground or cover of any kind within 150 yards. It was strongly built, on the lines of a large oblong sangar, and was occupied by 50 Orakzais of the Zhob Militia.

The enemy, who, as usual, believed that careful reconnaissance is seldom wasted, had observed that very early in the morning a sinking moon threw a long shadow from a slight inequality in the ground not apparent in daylight. Taking advantage of this they crawled up towards the post and rushed it with great determination.

Had the breastwork not been high and strongly built (and perhaps, had the defenders not been Orakzais!) probably no one would have lived to tell the tale, but the Orakzais were no novices at this type of work and were manning the defences before the enemy could get over the wall. After a fierce hand-to-hand fight the enemy were driven off, leaving nine dead men on the parapet, including their leader, a famous outlaw.

Once again the perimeter had proved its worth.

## TAIL-PIECE

At the close of 1937, somewhere in Waziristan, a certain Officer met a Mahsud with whom he was well acquainted. After the usual salutations and mutual expressions of esteem, the following conversation took place:

"Sahib, don't go out shooting next Sunday."

"Why not? The General Sahib and I were thinking of doing so."

"That's just the point. The boys have noticed that you and the General Sahib sometimes go out shooting on Sunday evenings, and they have decided to get you. We all know that there are some coveys of chikor near the mouth of the Wucha Tiarza, and two small parties of Shabi Khels and Giga Khels propose to lie up for you there next Sunday, in the hope that you will come."

"But surely," said the Officer (thinking that this was probably a leg-pull, and replying in kind) "they wouldn't shoot me? They know me very well in these parts."

The Mahsud regarded this as the height of wit.

"All right," said he (digging the Officer in the ribs with a none-too-clean foreinger) "that's fine, and I hope it keeps fine for you. You go out and see!" Verb. sap.

The above remarks are not offered in the light of purely destructive criticism of a very interesting article, nor are they an attempt to put back the clock. They seek to show that certain frontier procedures evolved through many years of careful thought and experience cannot lightly be discarded as too slow and cumbersome, even with the aid of most modern weapons, and that anyone who, fresh from the speed of modern war, tries to take too short a cut may possibly as a result find himself very badly bogged.

# THINGS PEOPLE SAY

"The heart of the Ruhr is beating more slowly."—Sir Philip Joubert.

"The average man speaks a cool 216,000 words a day."—
"The Times."

"Eight hundred bombers need the services of about 100,000 men."—B.B.C., London.

"E-boats are so called because 'E' is the international signal flag for enemy."—Owen Rutter, in the "Red Ensign."

"The War Office uses 25.149 tons of paper a year."—Financial Secretary to the Treasury.

"The nearest known star is 25,000,000,000,000 miles distant."— Sir Harold Spencer Jones.

"The Allies are now sending Russia more food than munitions."—Captain Cyril Falls.

"The danger to Europe is not Russian influence, but Russian isolation." Sir Samuel House.

"A single scaport in South China would be worth a dozen Burma Roads."—Mr. Allington Kennard.

"Less film stars and more mail from home is what the troops want."—Squadron-Leader Philip Guedella.

"Air power has already saved the lives of a million soldiers in this war."—Air Chief Marshal Lord Trenchard.

"The best of all possible educators of Germany is Air Chief Marshal Sir Arthur Harris."—Mr. Brendan Bracken, M.P.

"It's well-nigh impossible to get any sympathy for a punctured posterior."—Wallace Reyburn, in "Rehearsal for Invasion."

"After the war every English school teacher should visit at least one Empire country."—Captain 1. D. Gammans, M.P.

"About 400,000 people are engaged on war production in Australia."—Wing Commander the Hon. T. W. White, D.F.C.

"One American air base in Central India is the largest we have in any theatre of operations."—Mr. Edgar Snow, in "The Listener."

"The British Red Cross has spent £7.385,000 on comforts for prisoners of war since September, 1939."—Field-Marshal Sir Philip Chetwode.

"Germans in the Kuban have taken to lying under water and breathing through reeds to escape their Russian avengers."—Mr. David Thomson.

"Our output of rubber is now about 20,000 tons annually: it will soon reach 50,000 tons."—H.E. The Brazilian Ambassador, speaking in London.

"Posterity will rank the Battle of Britain before that of Marathon, in that we have now passed to the offensive."—Air Commodore E. I., Howard-Williams.

"An instance of the thoroughness of planning for the landing on Sicily was the public call for holiday snapshots of beaches, etc., on the island."—"The Naval Review."

"Richard Sorge, German correspondent in Tokyo for the Frankfuerter Zeitung, has been sentenced to death as a member of an international spy ring."—Tokyo Wireless.

"The House of Lords has had 18 fatal casualties in the Forces out of 750 peers. The House of Commons has had 13 killed in the Forces, out of 615 members."—Sir Herbert Williams, M.P.

"Switzerland has a merchant Navy. Early in the war she bought some ships, mostly from Greece, and arranged with Italy to allow them the use of Genoa."—"Janus" in "The Spectator."

"In 1656 Thomas Blount's English Dictionary listed some 16,000 words. The latest edition of Webster's dictionary has around 600,000."—Mr. Tom Harrison, broadcasting from London.

"In one case a Spitfire, which had been repaired nine times and had had six new pairs of wings fitted, went back into service as good as new."—Sir Stafford Cripps, Minister of Aircraft Production.

"The hearts of men who believe in themselves and their mode of life are constant and unassailable, and the human spirit will never cease to repeat its victories."—Stanley Casson, in "Greece Against the Axis."

"When Germany invaded Poland, the world had about 59 million gross tons of sea-going merchant shipping; at the end of 1944, it may be anything between 55 and 75 million."—Mr. William Diebold, Junr.

"Between September 3, 1939 and July 31, 1943, anti-aircraft batteries in Britain shot down 739 enemy aircraft. In August and September, 1940 (the Battle of Britain) 312 were shot down."—Secretary of State for War.

"With the Buddhists the left-wing swastika is regarded as a token of good luck; a right-hand wing swastika is to them a sign of downfall and death. The Nazi type is right-winged."—Mr. Walter Primer, broadcasting from London.

"The English spirit in the German war camps is nonplussing the Nazis in charge. Making the Nazis as hot under the collar as can be, without breaking rules, is now known as 'Stalag sport'."— A repatriated prisoner of war interviewed in England.

"If this country is to keep its high place in the leadership of the world and to survive as a Great Power that can hold its own against external pressures, our people must be encouraged by every means to have larger families."—Mr. Winston Churchill.

"There are two basic rules for soldiers serving abroad: (i) Mind your own manners; (ii) understand and respect the manners of strangers, especially of strangers who might help you and the cause for which you are fighting."—"Psychology of the Fighting Man."

"In Egypt a suit of clothes costs £30; in Palestine the best Jaffa oranges cost  $2\frac{1}{2}$ d. each; in Persia tea costs £1 a pound. In the jewellers' shops in the latter country I saw more British sovereigns

Digitized by GOOGLE

than I have seen altogether since August 3, 1914."—Sir Ronald Storrs.

"During the six years of war with Japan, we have had millions of soldiers killed and wounded, while tens of millions of civilians have lost their lives directly or indirectly through slaughter, disease and hunger."—Dr. T. U. Soong, Chanese Minister for Foreign Affairs.

"The new 17-pounder anti tank gun can destroy the heaviest enemy tanks at 1000 yards. One 17-pounder knocked out three tanks with its first three rounds. Another destroyed six tanks, including two Tigers lying hull down, with six rounds."—War Office Statement.

"In 1939 the American merchant Navy was a little more than half the size of the British. I hazard a guess that immediately after this war the British Merchant Navy might be only one-third the size of the American."—Mr. Geddes, President, British Chamber of Shipping.

"Wellingtons of the Coastal Command carry a tail mirror camera. As the pilot attacks a U-boat he switches on the camera, which takes a picture 5 inches square every one and a half seconds. From them the Admiralty assesses the U-boat damage."—Marquess of Donegall, in the "Daily Mail."

"Men of Hitler's Panzer divisions are given a drug called 'pervitin', which produces artificial energy. The effects are temporary increase in efficiency and initiative, clation, lessened fatigue and increased ability to concentrate. Afterwards come irritability and sleeplessness."—"British Medical Journal."

"I see no reason why civil air lines should not within a few years be handling at least two-thirds of the total pre-war rail and sea traffic over distances of more than 1,000 miles, and a quarter of the existing traffic on routes as short as 200 miles."—Dr. E. P. Warner, addressing the Royal Acronautical Society.

"Before our break-through at El Alamein I went over the front with an American war correspondent. He was mystified by one phrase in General Montgomery's famous Order of the Day, in which the General urged his men to "knock the enemy for six into the sea."—Godfrey Talbot, broadcasting from London.

"To command the West African troops, a great general, General Giffard, was sent to West Africa. He had served with West African troops in every rank from subaltern to General, and he knew Africans as no other soldier did. He built a great army of freely-enlisted Africans of all arms, many of whom fought gallantly and successfully in Abyssinia."—Lord Swinton, broadcasting from London.

"Before the war British statesmen, strategists and Staff Colleges studied the pros and cons of sending a British Army to France. By the logic of every test and reasoning, it was decided and agreed with the French that Air Forces, only, were to go to France, and that no Army should be sent. Why, then, was our Army sent after all? It was sent because—at the eleventh hour—it became certain that France would not have gone to war without it."—Air Vice-Marshal R. V. Goddard, Chief of the Air Staff in New Zealand.

## **BURMA: THREE PACIFICATIONS**

By LIEUTENANT-COLONEL C. FOUCAR

THREE TIMES within the last ninety years have we had to undertake the pacification of large areas of Burma, in addition to quelling other minor outbreaks of disorder. In fact, rebellion in Burma may almost be said to be endemic. On each of the three major occasions the work of pacification was arduous and attended by similar problems. Each time serious mistakes were made and added to our heavy task.

Problems that faced us in Burma during the principal periods of unrest, mistakes that were made, and methods employed in restoring peace are of more than academic interest to-day. They warrant close study. This article does not pretend to do more than to give a very brief outline of these matters.

The second Burmese War was fought in 1852 and early in 1853. It terminated with our annexation of the Province of Pegu. This was followed by an outbreak of lawlessness in the area now known as the districts of Henzada and Tharrawaddy. The latter had always been a source of trouble to its Burmese rulers. It was equally a source of trouble to us, and the putting down of the rebellion there was a most difficult phase of the annexation of what came to be known as Lower or British Burma.

The rebellion was led by Gaung Gyi, a former headman of Tapun. This gentleman appears to have had a fixed aversion to any rule but his own. He had previously refused to pay in his quota of taxes to the Burmese Government, or to furnish any levies for the army. Towards the British he was equally recalcitrant. Setting up his own government in Tharrawaddy, he gained support from disbanded Burmese troops and police. His forces preyed on the countryside on both banks of the Irrawaddy, and took a toll of the river traffic. Lesser leaders also appeared. Some of them acted in concert with Gaung Gyi.

In July, 1853, a gunboat, H.M.S. NERBUDDA, patrolled the river and cleared it of dacoits. Then the Myook of Tharrawaddy attacked Gaung Gyi and drove him from the lower part of the district. He fell back on his stronghold of Tapun. British forces closed in on him, whereupon he took to the jungle. In January. 1854, he was attacked again with success, and a relentless pursuit followed. The British pressed on lest news of their advance should be sent ahead to Gaung Gyi. At Bawbin, thirty-two miles east of Tapun, the rebels were surprised and routed. But Gaung Gyi with many of his followers escaped to the forest-clad Pegu Yomas.

Further operations were considered impossible owing to the unhealthiness of the locality. The troops were withdrawn to Prome whilst a post was maintained at Tapun. Gaung Gyi promptly reappeared, attacked all who had helped the British, ravaged the countryside up to within a mile-and-a-half of Tapun, and generally established a reign of terror. The British could get neither information nor supplies. A reward of two thousand

rupees was offered for the production of Gaung Gyi, "alive and untortured." Bringing no response, the offer was increased tenfold. Gaung Gyi remained at large.

In April, 1854, a large force of Indian and locally raised troops, together with levies, was assembled to deal with the rebel chief. One notes with some surprise to-day that European troops were not employed, as they were not considered sufficiently mobile.

Once again was Gaung Gyi harried, but this time no premature end was put to the operations. The rebel forces were pursued and broken up. Eventually Gaung Gyi himself fled north into Burmese territory. There, fortunately, he was shot whilst planning further depredations in Tharrawaddy. Meanwhile the remaining malcontents in the district had scattered in small bands. They were easier to overcome and, before long, comparative tranquility had been established.

The opening phase of the third Burmese War lasted three weeks. It ended with our occupation of Mandalay and the surrender of King Thibaw in December, 1885. It had cost us the lives of one officer and seven other ranks. The subsequent pacification of the Kingdom of Ava continued for five years, involved a heavy loss of life in action and by disease, and required the expenditure of much treasure. For this the British were themselves largely to blame.

Our initial mistake was made before we entered Mandalay. General Prendergast, who commanded the Expeditionary Force, had specific orders to avoid all unnecessary conflict with the Burmese. Consequently, when the forts at Ava and Sagaing below Mandalay surrendered, no steps were taken to ensure that the rifles and other arms of the defenders were given up. As soon as Thibaw's order for surrender became known, his troops dispersed, taking their weapons with them. Later, these comparatively well-armed men were to become the backbone of the insurgent gangs that terrorised the country.

Following upon the occupation of Mandalay we were guilty of another serious error. No fixed policy had been settled in advance, and for some time the British Government came to no decision about the future of the Kingdom of Ava (Upper Burma). No definite instructions concerning further action were issued to the Army, and there was a period of virtual inactivity. The forces of disorder became emboldened, pretenders to the vacant throne appeared and found a ready following; dacoit bohs flourished.

By the end of March, 1886, Upper Burma was assame, whilst the situation in long-occupied Lower Burma also gave rise to anxiety. In Mandalay itself the lawless elements indulged their propensities for arson. Fires broke out again and again in the city and suburbs. To those with a recent experience of Burma this will strike an oddly familiar note.

The original expeditionary force could not cope with the situation. Troops had to be poured into the country and vigorous offensive action was taken. Strong posts were established in every district. These were sufficiently manned to maintain order in the immediate neighbourhood, and to provide flying columns

to pursue the elusive rebel bands. Scattering at once when attacked, these bands came together again as soon as danger had passed. Their leaders were well supplied with information and, mounted on hardy ponies, were always in the van of a flight.

Despite the mobility of the rebels no less than a hundred small engagements were fought against them between April and the end of July, 1886. Mountain guns, cavalry, and mounted infantry were found to be invaluable. Not infrequently walled or strongly stockaded positions had to be carried by assault, but even in these cases mounted troops were required to take up the inevitable pursuit.

An official publication in describing the rebels says: "Everything resembling patriotic sentiment in the Burmese had become united with the inherent strain of brutality and lawlessness running through the national character, and this combination of innate forces found its expression in the bands of armed men infesting the jungles all over the new province. It was certainly not patriotism pure and simple, while it was equally certainly not merely dacoity in the true meaning of the word; but it was armed resistance to British administration, and as such had to be put down with a heavy hand.

"Lurking in jungle recesses almost impenetrable for regular troops, these armed bands were seldom to be met with in the open field. As a matter of course, they were entirely dependent on villagers for food and other contributions, their demands for which they enforced with such barbarities as burning or devastating villages, slaughtering headmen and crucifying or otherwise executing men suspected of giving information to the British."

To augment the military, a large police force was built up. This was enlisted in India and rendered excellent service during the years of pacification. At the same time, steps were taken to conciliate the people at large. Trade was encouraged, the collection of revenue was not pressed, general punitive measures were not taken against villages that had harboured dacoits and an amnesty was offered to those who surrendered.

The gradual disarming of the country was taken in hand. All guns were called in from towns and villages, and were only restored on licence to respectable persons living in well-behaved areas in close proximity to other licencees. Dacoits were always anxious to make good their losses in arms by attacking isolated licence-holders. It was essential, therefore, that holders of guns should always be in sufficient strength to meet such attacks.

It is interesting to observe that Major-General Sir George White, v.c., who succeeded General Prendergast in command in Upper Burma, did not agree with this policy. He was for complete disarmament. In his report on relinquishing command in 1889 he said:

"The minor military expeditions during the past year sufficiently establish the national tendency of the Burmans to take up arms in season and out of season. It is this tendency that makes a general disarmament of the people so necessary. Arms left in a village for defence will, in nine cases out of ten, sooner or later fall into the hands of some enterprising dacoit leader, or

be used by the villager himself for a little venture in some neighbouring district. A Burman living in a district affording opportunities of dacoity looks upon a gun hanging idly in his hut for defence only as so much unemployed capital. Where there is no dacoity, arms are not required, and their absence is a sale-guard against reappearance."

Sir George White was well-qualified to express an opinion.

Incessant attacks upon the rebels at long last began to take effect. Well-armed at the outset, the dacoit gangs found that they were unable to replace all lost weapons. Driven further and further from the populous centres they were compelled to take refuge in remote hills and jungle tracts. Existence became difficult. Leaders were captured or killed, and the larger bands split up. Gradually there dawned recognition of the fact that under a strong Government dacoity did not pay.

An amusing example of the Burmese mentality was furnished in the Ava district where Boh Shwe Yan flourished. When his gang was dispersed by our forces the inhabitants of his village stronghold petitioned for military protection. This was the last request expected. However, the villagers explained that they would now be datoited by their neighbours upon whom they had previously preved. In fact, as the army was the cause of their helplessness they looked to it for protection.

By 1890 the rebellion was broken, save in outlying parts of the country. The campaign had been long and most difficult. Moving against an elusive enemy many of our blows had struck the air. The peaceful cultivator of to-day was the rebel of to-morrow, sniping at our columns as they threaded the jungle track. And his hand was not only against us. It was against his neighbour who, equally, was against us. Only continued and active vigilance and the mobility of our attacking forces finally controlled the situation.

1930 was a troubled year for Burma. The wave of world economic depression touched the country. This, together with awakening political aspirations, created unrest. In May, violent anti-Indian riots broke out in Rangoon and, until the troops took control, the city was the scene of bloodshed and murder. Later, also in Rangoon, there was a serious jail mutiny. To add to the prevailing disquiet, a severe earthquake devastated the town of Pegu, causing many hundreds of deaths. Rangoon, too, did not go unscathed. In Christmas week rebellion broke out.

Several districts were affected. The revolt first appeared in that centre of unruliness Tharrawaddy, and in Pyapon. It spread to neighbouring areas. In Pyapon prompt action by the Deputy Commissioner, who vigorously attacked the rebels with the small police force at his disposal, had an excellent effect. To strike hard and early is as sound a principle in Burma as elsewhere.

It would seem that the rebel organization contemplated simultaneous risings throughout the country, but this plot miscarried. The outbreak occurred before the plan was complete. Behind the scenes was a Buddhist monk, U Oktama, the evil genius of rebellion. The fact that he had visited Japan earlier in 1930 has

an added significance to-day. After the revolt began, he wisely withdrew to India, but his interest in Burma affairs continued to be both lively and malign. The actual leader was a quack doctor, alchemist, and astrologer, Saya San, who proclaimed himself king.

The rebellion is of peculiar interest. It was active only a dozen years ago and was clear proof, if such be required, that the rural Burman has progressed little since the British occupation of his country. His credulity is great. He will follow any self-proclaimed leader, provided the promises made to him are sufficiently extravagant. The professional magician knows his audience. Saya San undertook to drive the British from Burma, held out glittering prospects of loot, and distributed charms guaranteed to ensure the invulnerability of his followers. He tattooed them with magical signs that would assuredly turn aside every bullet and bayonet. Yokels flocked to his standard, and many of the Buddhist priesthood gave him their support. The approval of the priesthood is a powerful factor in Burma.

Unlike the rebels of 1886, Saya San's men were ill-armed, but they exhibited much ingenuity in the improvisation of weapons. Shot-guns were made from small-gauge metal-piping, whilst larger oilpipes looted from the oilfields and hollow metal telegraph posts were fashioned into crude cannon. Powder was short. The rebels scraped the heads off matches to supply the deficiency. The Swedish Match Company reported the sale of

abnormal quantities of matches in rebel districts.

Saya San's information service was good. He had many sympathisers amongst the lower classes. Burmese servants in upcountry clubs, government messengers and others similarly sisted of two British Battalions, two Indian Battalions, two Battalions of the Burma Rifles, and a Mountain Battery. There was also a force of Burma Military Police.

In 1930 the primary duty of the small military garrison in Burma was the enforcing of internal security. The troops consisted of two British Battalions, two Indian Battalions, two Battalions of the Burma Rifles, and a Mountain Battery. There was

also a force of Burma Military Police.

At first the civil authorities attempted to deal with the situation without involving military aid. Detachments of police were placed in selected posts, and small patrols endeavoured to make contact with large bodies of rebels. These latter were anything up to five hundred men in strength. Later, troops were employed, but under the civil authorities. The policy of dispersal in "penny packets" continued. It was not a success.

The Burma Government then asked India for assistance, and in May, June and July, 1931, six Battalions with ancillary units arrived in the country. These new units were also employed under the civil authorities. There was no concerted military

plan and liaison left much to be desired.

Unreasonably small bodies of troops were still expected to cope with large gangs of rebels. The engagement in June at Wetto in the Prome district is an example of this disparity in numbers. A platoon of the 2nd Battalion, 15th Punjab Regiment, on patrol, followed up Boh Pe and his force, numbering

about four hundred. The platoon, commanded by a British officer, consisted of twenty-three men. Boh Pe attacked, endeavouring to rush the platoon. For a time the situation was critical. Then the Lewis-gun section found a target, and the rebels fled, leaving a hundred casualties behind them.

Little headway was being made against the revolt and, as a result of the unsatisfactory state of affairs, the Governor held a conference at the end of July. The general situation was reviewed. It was then decided that the troops and military police must be placed under military command although the civil administration would continue to function. This cleared the air.

Thereafter the campaign against the rebels was conducted on a different footing. Additional staff officers were obtained, an intelligence branch formed, signal systems co-ordinated, and a comprehensive plan of operations drawn up.

Once again relentless pressure by mobile forces was found to be the keynote of success. Vickers guns were found to be too heavy, and one battalion converted its machine-gun section into mounted infantry. Karen irregulars with an intimate knowledge of hill and jungle tracts were employed. The role of these bands of Karens was to hunt particular rebel leaders to a standstill, giving them no rest.

Meanwhile, Saya San had been captured in the Shan States. This, however, resulted in the coming forward of another optimist, Boh Myat Aung, who took his place and proved himself a man of resource.

Government was now busy on propagaida, enlarging on the theme that rebellion and dacoity do not pay. Villagers were given demonstrations of the effectiveness of the Lewis gun and other modern weapons. They were encouraged to defend themselves against attack. Methods of doing so were taught. Burma is clearly fertile soil for propaganda, and this activity on the part of the Government was not without results.

Towards the end of 1931 the tide of rebellion ebbed. It was following time-honoured precedents. The larger gangs of malcontents had broken up, the majority of the remaining rebels hiding in the dense jungles of the Pegu Yomas. From these hills they periodically raided villages in the plains for food and supplies. Our forces closed in. The threatened villages were constantly patrolled, thus cutting off the rebels from their sources of replenishment. Other forces chased them through the hills. By January, 1932, the end had come.

One then wondered how long it would take the ignorant rural Burman to forget his lesson, and who next would rouse him to revolt with specious promises of invulnerability and loot. We little guessed what the future held in store.

What of our return to Burma? If history is a guide, our reentry into the country will be followed by a period of widespread disturbance. We may count upon the Japanese making every endeavour to render our task as difficult as possible. Anti-British propaganda is now active. Before they leave the country, the astute sons of Nippon are not likely to furnish an antidote for

the mental poison they have so freely spread. And if we do have to face rebellion, we shall find opposed to us, as in 1886, comparatively well-armed bodies of men with some experience of warfare.

On the other hand, the problem should be easier than it was in 1886. Doubtless we shall go in with a ready-made plan of operations drawn up with a view to avoiding past mistakes. Furthermore, although Burma has remained a country of shockingly bad communications, they are incomparably better than they were in Thibaw's day. In all probability we shall have to put in much hard work to restore roads and railways to normal, but the ubiquitous "jeep" is a vehicle that scorns obstacles. The tommygun and the mortar, together with aircraft, either for supplydropping or punitive action, all make for mobility of action. Jungle warfare is no longer a closed book to us.

One hopes that active operations will not be necessary. If they are to be avoided, our own propaganda must play its part to the full. We must put our case to the Burman truthfully and forcefully, talking down to the villager and jungle dweller. It will not be easy. What have we to offer the Burman? Unless we can satisfy him that our reoccupation of his country is for his own good, there will be no welcome for us.

## The Japanese in Burma

In the first stages of the Japanese occupation of Burma, the Burma Independence Army, following in the wake of the Japanese troops, endeavoured to set up a purely Burmese administration. This army was a collection of young bandits, hooligans and conscripts which completely failed to quell unrest in the Japanese rear, but went in for loot and political intrigue; the officers had no control over the ranks, which committed many crimes, the worst being a shocking massacre of Indians in the Delta. In July, 1942, the Japanese Commander-in-Chief disbanded both this army and its phantom administration. In September the force was reorganised as the 'Burma Defence Army,' and is in training to-day under the name of the 'Burma National Army.'

Using Ba Maw as their puppet, the Japanese next set up an administration upon British lines, staffed largely by former British Government servants. District administration was much as before the war, the old boundaries being retained, but two new and sinister developments were initiated. Parallel to the publicly-paid administrative service, a secretly-paid political service was established, whose duty it was to supervise the administration and to ensure that Ba Maw's policy of collaboration was carried out.

Shortly after the Japanese were installed in Burma there was a great increase of crime, which they tried ruthlessly to suppress. A favourite punishment was decapitation, the heads then being attached to poles and exposed in public places with a note of explanation tied to them. Criminals were kept in custody without trial; convicted offenders were tied to trees for days on end and left in the sun without food or water, or savagely whipped; one dacoit was placed in a Pegu jar of scalding water and boiled to death.—A correspondent in "The Times"

 $\mathsf{Digitized} \ \mathsf{by} \ Google$ 

## "WHAT DO YOU THINK OF THAT?"

The following account of the sinking of the "Bismarck" was written by a seventeen-year-old Midshipman of H.M.S. "Dorset-shire" whose great-grandfather was in H.M.S. "Victory" at the battle of Trafalgar and dined with Admiral Lord Nelson the day before the battle. The title is the wording of the cable he sent to his father in India. We reproduce the account by courtesy of his father, who is a member of the Institution.

WERE somewhere in mid-Atlantic when we heard that the Bismarck was at sea, and had sunk H.M.S. Hood. We continued on our original course for a short time, but then increased speed, and when we knew for certain that the enemy was making for one of the harbours on the west coast of France, we altered course. Our job was to cut her off and, if possible, stop her from making one of these ports.

At about 1200 hours everybody not on watch was called, and we prepared the upper deck for action. That is, we uncovered the boats, furled the awnings and connected up the hosepipes. We were warned that we would be going to our Action Stations for the night, so we took all our warm clothing up first, in case we could not fetch them afterwards.

Two masts and a funnel were sighted on the horizon at 2100 hours, but it was a false alarm, for when we were a little closer it turned out to be a largish trawler.

Next morning excitement increased when these reports became known: "We are now fifty miles from the Bismarch," and then, a little later, "We are now fifteen miles away." Actually, we arrived just after the Rodney and the King George V had opened fire.

We went straight in, doing 18 knots, and opening fire at nine miles range, or six miles inside the Bismarch's range. She was at that time doing about 10 knots, owing to torpedo bombing attacks and, it is believed, lack of fuel. Anyway, she had all her eight 15 inch guns in action, as well as her secondary armament of 5.9's. She was a fine sight then—a picture of a ship. The Germans certainly know how to build ships, but so do we, for that matter.

Either by good luck, or extremely good judgment, or more probably accurate firing, our third salvo scored a direct hit on her control tower. This was the place where her 15 inch guns were directed from, so that with that out of action she had to use range-finders and instruments in her turrets. These are not so accurate, and have the added disadvantage that each time the guns were fired they were badly shaken up. She could not use her after-control, because by now it was hidden from view by the smoke-screen she was trying to put up. However, we could say that we saved the *Rodney* and the *King George V* from being any more severely damaged than they were.

Soon after this, the Bismarch seemed to realise that we were a more serious foe than we looked, so she gave us the honour of firing at us. She fired four salvos at us altogether, one landing ahead, two going over the top, and the last landing about 150 yards astern of us. When the two came over the top, I was looking up, and saw a thin trail of smoke speeding over, and a short time later, another. Then I saw a column of water shoot up astern of us.

They must have got fed up with us, and thought we were too elusive a target, because she switched back to the *Rodney* after this. At the time I didn't feel exactly frightened, but just a little nervous, and wondered what would have happened if those shells had been a hundred feet lower.

All this time we had been steadily closing the range. When I looked out next I got the shock of my life. We were only about three miles away! All this time we had been steadily closing in. Most of our shells were hitting now, and I remember seeing a row of splashes along her water-line, and an enormous hole appear in her bow on the starboard side. This was too big for one of ours, so it must have been one of the battleships' shells.

We were hitting pretty regularly. We had landed a few on her foc'sle, and one of them had knocked the back off her second turret, putting it out of action. Clouds of black smoke were now pouring out of the bridge. She ceased fire about this time, and we ceased to fire when we were about two-and-a-half miles away, point-blank range.

Two torpedoes were then fired by us, and we went round the other side and fired a third. One of the first two was seen to hit, and it is believed that the third went up her funnel as she was turning over. She was an amazing ship and proud, practically to her last moment. I say "practically" because I don't think that anything can be proud when it is bottom upwards.

The last we saw of her was the foot of her bows. Then she was gone for ever. The whole action, from the time we opened fire till the time she sank, took almost exactly one-and-a-half hours.

Now came the most gruelling task—that of picking up survivors. I should think there were 400 survivors in the water out of a crew of 2,000, among whom had been 500 men under training. It seems that they have more men in their navy than they can stuff into their ships, so they have to train them while they are at sea.

The survivors had been in the water about twenty minutes before we drew in, and already a large number had died from cold and exhaustion. I have never seen anything so grisly. Some were floating upside down with their lifebelts over their feet. Some had their heads lolling forward, partly under water; one had his arm blown off.

When we had picked up about 75 a submarine alarm wasgiven, and we had to leave the rest behind. That was the worst part of it. The survivors themselves were not a nice lot. Most of them had knocked others off the ropes by which we were pulling them up. The most senior officer we saved had knocked off three men from the rope before he was finally drawn up.

He was the gunnery officer, some sort of a baron and held the rank of lieutenant-commander. He said it was bad policy to pick up survivors, and that they should all be shot. That was his opinion. It wasn't mine after seeing all those poor wretches in the water.

Some of them were extraordinarily tactless when they were picked up. On coming over the side, three-quarters of them said: "Heil, Hitler!" and gave a nasty salute; three of them actually said: "Heil Hitler! we sunk the *Hood*." They were nearly thrown back again, and if they had they would have deserved it after we had risked being torpedoed to pick them up.

We came through the whole action without a single scratch or casualty caused by the enemy; the only damage done was by our own firing: two of our boats have enormous holes in them, and one light tight-door on the upper deck was blown off its hinges. Down below, in the gunroom, all our private belongings, which we kept in lockers, were spread all over the floor. The table was nearly in half, and all the chairs, excepting two aimchairs, were upset.

There is a water-tight hatch near my action station which, at the time, had not been properly shut. The first time we fired it jumped open and got slightly bent. We clipped it shut after that as well as we could, but it had to be looked at each time after we had fired. About half the glass in the ship is no more.

The German radio says we are the crack British cruiser H.M.S. Dorsetshire, "which went into action at 35 knots with all guns firing." They add that the whole ship is no more, but that is the fate of all famous ships! At any rate, we've learned from the German prisoners that the 8 inch shells from H.M.S. Dorsetshire were falling so rapidly that they found it hard to reply to the Rodney.

So what do you think of that, Pop?

## Criminal Type

"When Hitler was in Denmark and arrangements were made for him to visit the police headquarters, a tactful Nazi official sent to the Chief of Police in advance six different photographs of the Führer, expecting that they would be exhibited during his visit. When Hitler arrived, however, none was in view, so the Nazi official asked the police chief if he had received the photographs. The police chief thought for a moment, and then replied: "Oh, ves; and you will be pleased to know that my men have caught five of the criminals already."—Peterborough, in the "Daily Telegraph."

#### **MILITARY FLAGS**

BY LIEUT.-COLONEL C. C. R. MURPHY

The meteor flag of England
Shall yet terrific burn
Till danger's troubled night depart,
And the star of peace return.—Campbell.

THE DESIGN and use of flags is a subject embedded in heraldry. Except amongst Boy Scouts, who are taught all about flags in the ordinary course of their training, there is much haziness and uncertainty in these matters throughout the younger generation.

This may be accounted for by the fact that it is not possible to make any real progress in the study of flags without knowing the broad rules of heraldry. But unfortunately, the quaint Norman French terms and abstruse detail of "the gentle science" seem to scare people away, and we are more ignorant of this absorbing subject to-day than were our forbears of the Middle Ages.

In that excellent pamphlet, The Battle of Egypt, recently prepared for the War Office by the Ministry of Information, there is a curious slip. The caption of one of its many admirable illustrations describes British tanks as going into action "with their pennants flying."

The pennant, however, is not used in the army. Originally called a "streamer," it belongs to the sea services, and has no place in heraldry. The name in question should have been pennon, the small-pointed flag with a long history, that was carried on the lance of a knight simple, and charged with his arms. The pennon survives to-day in lancer regiments, the Royal Armoured Corps and the Royal Tank Regiment, and, after all these centuries, is still to be seen in the forefront of the battle line. A smaller pennon, called a "pennoncel," and popularly known as a "pencil," was carried by an esquire and was also displayed at funerals.

The principal flags with which the army are concerned are standards, banners, pennons, guidons, colours and easigns. Originally, both the standard and the banner were borne in the field, but gradually came to be used at ceremonials. In the carliest times, however, the standard was not a flag at all, and consisted of a device borne on a pole; hence its name.

Eight centuries ago, at the battle of the Standard, the English standard consisted of a pole with a silver pyx on the top, and bearing three sacred banners, the whole being rigged up on a waggon. Later, when the standard took the form of a flag, it was long and narrow in shape, and bore the whole of the achievements of the monarch or nobleman. The Royal Standard, when placed before the pavilion of the king, either at a tourney or in an encampment, was eleven yards long and three yards wide. Its length when borne in the field, denoted the rank of the leader.

The banner, on the other hand, was a rectangular flag, greater in hoist than in fly, and was the ensign of a knight banneret, an ancient military order that has become extinct. It was frequently granted to a knight as an immediate award on the battlefield, the banner being improvised on the spot by cutting off the tail of the pennon. The banner bore the coat of arms of the owner, and was his personal ensign. Longfellow tells us of "a banner with a strange device, Excelsior," but as Brig. General F. G. Godfrey-Faussett, in his book on flags, quaintly remarks, that would be indeed a strange device! Worse still, it would be bad heraldry.

The small square flag that I can see fluttering over Arundel Castle from the spur of the Sussex Downs on which I am sitting as I write, is a banner—that of the Duke of Norfolk. The banner of the sovereign is five feet square; that of a prince or duke, four feet square; and for all noblemen of inferior rank, three feet square. Generally speaking, square flags have now gone out of fashion, the modern flag being twice as great in the fly as in the hoist.

The Royal Standards flown at ceremonials, of exquisite design and finish, are usually very large indeed. The Union Jack is, properly speaking, a banner and, as in the case of the standard, derives its name from the staff from which it is flown. Those who can only associate "banners" with school-treats and processions of unemployed, sometimes refer to it as the personal flag of a governor, a general or an admiral of the fleet, as the case may be; but this is nonsense, because of course, a national banner cannot possibly be the personal flag of anyone.

Certain regiments of cavalry carry either standards or guidons. The former, like banners, are always rectangular; but the latter have two short tails. Guidons (pronounced so as to rhyme with "widens") do not bear arms, but only badges or other cognizances. The colours of an infantry regiment are of course its ensigns, and that is how the junior officers who carried them became known by that name.

In bygone days, kings and queens of England have on occasion presented standards, guidons and colours as personal gifts to various regiments of the British Army, and King George VI has now followed the gracious practice of his illustrious predecessors by approving the award of standards to such squadrons of the Royal Air Force as may be deemed to have won them by outstanding service in this war. They already possess their own ensign, but the standards will not be made and presented until the war is over. It is expected that they will be square, and carried at ceremonial parades as in the army. No doubt the College of Arms will make an admirable job of the design.

#### THE FIGHTING SPIRIT

#### By "Auspex"

"-----captured the objective but was counter-attacked off it."
"------was overrun."

NEITHER of these two statements is pleasant to hear. The first question that is asked is, "What were the casualties?" By that, the particular exploit is to be judged.

The simple old military virtues of courage, tenacity and aggressiveness must remain the very core of our fighting capacity. These are the outward symbols of the Fighting Spirit about which this short note is now written.

The old Regular Army of 1914 had a different outlook from the Regular Army of 1919—1939 peace-years, and of this present war: it had a different outlook from the national army of 1914—1918 and from the national army of to-day. And to-day's national army sees things a bit differently from its parent of the last Great War.

In 1914 there was still the traditional "Regular" view that a stern discipline and pride in the Regiment, pride in it as a Regiment of the British Army, were enough to ensure that the Regiment would never yield. To nerve the waverer of the '14—'18 armies there was still the disgrace of being shot for cowardice.

The call of the Regiment has not quite the same appeal to men as it had in those days. While the same standard of courage is expected of the individual, there is a tendency to treat the waverer with greater kindness and humanity. Whether this is a good attitude or not is open to question. One thing is certain, and it is that prevention is better than cure. Obviously, prevention must lie in producing every single man on the battlefield with the highest possible "morale."

In all modesty let us acknowledge one thing. The Englishman (Scotsman, Welchman) is really rather a fine man. As members of the Indian Army, perhaps this acknowledgment comes better from us than from our brothers of the British Service. An appeal to the highest in the Englishman's nature is practically never refused. The appeal of a child or of an animal or of anything weak or helpless in distress calls forth acts of absolute heroism from the most unlikely men and women of this odd race. Modesty in acknowledging such acts has hitherto also been characteristic: by that same modesty the standard of achievement—of courage—is being raised. The V.C. of to-day would smile at the V.C. of 60 years ago. Let us hope modern means of publicity do not ravish this modesty from the Englishman.

The important thing is to make the appeal to him. Once made, and when he is satisfied that the appeal is honest and worthwhile, it will be answered to the last gasp, for he is then a very brave man. Without that appeal, he is a lost soul and, being rather good-natured and lazy, he will not exert himself, not tense himself to withstand, and may well fail in a crisis. He needs the mental stimulus and guidance of it and, being a democrat and highly argumentative and critical, he needs to be intellectually satisfied of its honesty, and that the end is worth the sacrifice he is asked to make. He must be satisfied. After all, his whole nation has to be satisfied before any government can even start a war. But remember that he would far rather save the innocent than kill the guilty. He is soft-headed as well as soft-heated!

That, I think, is with the Englishman the first essential in producing a high morale. But the appeal must be honest. Propaganda is no use to him: he distrusts it, and is very quick to discern it and to cast it out as something dishonest. He wants to feel that he has thought for himself and satisfied himself. So be honest with him, and leave his mental processes to chew on the appeal. He will get the right answer if the case is fairly put to him.

To be satisfied, he must know that what he is now being ordered to do, and the end that he is asked finally to achieve, are not things that he is doing in order to gain greater safety, comfort or well-being for himself or for some even less deserving body. They must be things that will save those others who are in danger or oppressed, and he will want to know the extent of the oppression and the urgency of the need to save. And morale that is so "founded" on the intellectual and sentimental satisfaction, and thus on the solid, selfless determination of such men is a very high morale indeed. So it is worth attaining.

From what I have seen of this war I should say that the German morale is very differently formed. Let me try to analyse it.

At Alamein some of the German prisoners complained bitterly of the weight of our artillery fire: they seemed hurt that anyone should subject them to such treatment, and regarded it as unfair. So long as the German soldier has better and more weapons than his enemy, he remains happy; his morale is high. Winning is to him the whole of the game. When things begin to turn against him, it comes as something of a shock. He is rather like a squash player who has trained hard and well, who has a far better racquet than his opponent (whose racquet indeed lacks most of the middle strings), and is therefore satisfied that he is bound to win, particularly as he may have tampered with the ball to suit himself. In that situation, he is eager to try out hisskill against a weaker opponent, Poland or Norway or France, having first tampered with each. It is becoming apparent that he is not so eager to play squash with the Russian bear. He certainly showed himself a bit shy in early 1943 of stepping into the court. with the Eighth Army.

But we must acknowledge that the possession of such good and numerous weapons, and his careful training to use them, have for three years kept his morale pretty high. To possess such weapons and to be a highly skilled man-at arms is also a great aid

to the morale of the Englishman. But, for the German, it is to-day the sole basis of his morale: the belief that the other man must die, and that the chances are all against his own dying: that victory is certain, and that loot is the present and immediate reward of his exertions. A pretty poor foundation to build on, and nothing in it to satisfy a man that his life is worth giving. The Hereafter must be a bleak prospect to contemplate for a would-be Herrenvolk whose gaudy military bubble is being pricked. Perhaps this accounts for that extraordinary mass surrender near Tunis town in 1943, and for Von Arnim's own hopeless dejection of spirits.

A good squash player will always be looking for someone to play: in this sense he is aggressive. So is a soldier who is very highly skilled at arms, far more highly skilled than his enemies. And this skill comes from training, good training, imaginative training. Training necessities come only just a little below battle necessities: it is worth while to go a bit short on the battle equipment of formations in the line in order to provide the training equipment for those at rest, and for the training establishments at the base—well worth while.

In the main, then, a high fighting spirit comes from a man's firm knowledge that the sacrifice of his life is worth while, and from his absolute confidence in his superlative skill at arms. Let us give our men both this knowledge and this skill.

It is seldom that the Englishman is in a position to know that he is better armed and better trained than his enemy. Normally he is convinced by hard facts of the very opposite but, in his sporting way, he accepts the handicaps and tries to win in spite of them.

To-day we are in the lucky position of being able truthfully to satisfy him that he is fighting a fight that is worth the fighting for the very lives and happiness of others: to tell him that he has as good, if not better weapons and a better supply of weapons than his enemy: and, we hope, to let him see that he is a more highly skilled man-at-arms than his enemy, whether German or Jap. At any rate, it is for us to see that he is, for therefrom springs his confident skill and his aggressiveness on the battlefield.

With these we will not only produce in him the will to fight, but, better still, the desire to fight.

Morale should be high. All that he needs then is to be given a few simple rules or standards. These—

Positions, once taken, will never, never be given up while a man can use a weapon.

If a position is "overrun," the garrison fights on.

No man who can use a weapon will be taken prisoner. If, by mischance, he is captured he will do all in his power to escape as soon as possible.

That is, the Fighting Spirit will be high.

## CIVIL LIAISON

By LIEUTENANT-COLONEL THE HON. C. BIRDWOOD, M.V.O.

WOMAN squats in a small crowd by the village chowful, with a worn piece of paper in her hand. The crowd gather round a table, on one side of which sit a British officer, an Indian extra-assistant commissioner and a clerk. With them the Lambardar, a patware and a local pensioner lend the assembly added importance.

They are crowding round with their scraps of paper, thumbimpressioned, grubby tokens of a hundred small worries. At last it is the woman's turn. She holds out her tattered story. It is a brief notification that her son is "missing."

Here is something beyond her understanding. "Prisoner" she can understand. "Death" she knows well enough. But how can a man be "missing?" How was he lost and who is responsible? What does it all mean? It is on such occasions, when a Civil Liaison Officer comes up against mute suffering ignorance, that he feels a stronger pull at his senses: a reminder that his work is not just the dry bones of a petition-pumping machine.

The Civil Liaison Organization started life in November, 1940. It was felt that there was a real need to place the army, in its expansion, in touch with the temper in the countryside, particularly in the heavily-recruited districts. The meaning of the war was not getting home to those areas from which we expected our manpower; and so, in a rather hurried manner, a loose organization was put down in the Punjab and the N.W.F.P., with the object of strengthening morale on the home front, of dispelling false rumours and of attending to the many needs of thousands of families, who now found themselves suddenly deprived of the all-supporting arm of a husband, or a father, or an eldest son.

In a very short time it was obvious that the scheme was successful beyond expectation, and it was soon extended first to South India, and later to the United Provinces.

The organization is, therefore, one whose main scope is that of welfare and morale on the home front. The two go hand-in-hand. If the welfare of the family is being attended to, then morale will not suffer, and the family will not be fertile ground for the seeds of fifth-column work. Japanese broadcasts and the passing bazaar gossip.

In the Northern Area consisting of the Punjab and the N.W.F.P., there is now a Chief Civil Liaison Officer, with Civil Liaison Officers in the Civil Divisions working under him. These in turn have Assistant Civil Liaison Officers under them, while to assist them with advice in civil and judicial matters, extra-assistant commissioners have been attached from the Punjab Government.

Spread over the countryside are a number of welfare officers, pensioners from the army, who carry out the exacting business of petition investigation. Formerly this staff worked in direct contact with civil Liaison Officers. But they are now regarded as an integral part of the District Soldiers' Board organization and, as such come under deputy commissioners in their capacity as Presidents of District Soldiers' Boards.

Nevertheless, C.L.Os., since they are vice-presidents of these boards, continue to exercise a fair measure of direct control over welfare officers; and indeed with increased demands on deputy commissioners in the day-to-day administration, particularly in the matter of civil supplies, it is essential that C.L.Os. should continue to deal with welfare officers through the District Soldiers' Boards. Deputy Commissioners have not the time to give to personal supervision over Army Welfare work.

Family welfare can be reduced to the matter of petitions and how to handle them. It may be that the greater attention that is now given to petitions has actually encouraged petition-writing. The pervading impression sometimes is that the whole countryside is one enormous cauldron for the hatching of enmity, litigation and cowardly attack to exploit the unprotected. Day after day the mail brings the same sordid story, and sometimes a C.L.O. despairs at this never-abating torrent of evidence of human misunderstanding.

It would seem as if directly the family bread-winner is away to the war, an enemy who has long awaited his opportunity, fells down a tree from his neighbour's garden, encroaches on his neighbour's land, steals his neighbour's wife and, to finish the good work properly, bribes all those who might give evidence on his neighbour's behalf!

If one is to deal intelligently with petitions, a broad knowledge of many activities is necessary. From an inexhaustible list, here are a few headings:

(a) The Civil Administration; (b) the Police; (c) the Postal Administration. Pension payments; (d) the Educational Administration; (e) Prisoner-of-War Correspondence; (f) Economic Conditions; (g) Local government concessions to military families; and (h) the Indian Soldiers' Board Organization.

After twenty-three years' service in India, I was forcibly impressed with my own ignorance of the Civil Administration, when last year for the first time close contact was made. It is an ignorance which after the war must be tackled. The internal Security role may be prominent; and more than ever may be the need to break down the prejudice that the Indian Army and the people of India are two separate communities.

So far as the Punjab is concerned, identification is real. In many villages the position is analagous to any English village where the entire manpower is away at the war. But in other areas, less thickly recruited, great effort must be made to put the Army, the people and the administration in mutual sympathy.

The chain of command, lambardars, zaildars, tehsildars, patwaris, field kanungos, panchayats must be known. The broad divisions of revenue, judicial and executive, must be studied. Someknowledge of land tenure, land consolidation, the Punjab Land Alienation Act and other similar legislation has to be noted.

Recently a host of problems in connection with the civil distribution of sugar, kerosene oil and standard cloth have arisen. Difficulties are increased since no two districts have exactly similar methods, much being left to the initiative of deputy commissioners and tehsildars. These are but a few aspects of the civil administration.

A moment's reflection will indicate that similar knowledge in some detail is essential in connection with the police, the postal authorities and the educational layout. The Post Office particularly plays a very prominent part in the life of illiterate village. India, whose sons are away in the Army.

A C.L.O. deals with petitions either through the post or on the spot. The C.L.O.'s Village meeting is the ordinary medium of investigation on the spot. But since he has a parish of some seven or eight thousand villages, he can only scratch at the surface of petition work by actual visits. The great bulk of petitions must be handled by either welfare officers, the tehsildar or naib-tehsildar, according to the nature of the petition. It will be realized that an efficient system of registration, filing and forwarding is essential.

Recently I had the good fortune to see something of the other end of petition work, when I accompanied a party of Indian gentlemen overseas, on a welfare tour of Indian troops. We started life as "distinguished Indian gentlemen." Later, our status fell to "influential." We then became merely a "touring party," and finally I was greeted at the port of embarkation for India by a Staff Officer, who asked me if I was in charge of the "Concert Party!"

We tried to describe conditions in the countryside to the troops. On one occasion, I recall going into much detail as to how we tackled their difficulties at home. Conditions were described with happy references to the abundance of wheat and the prosperity of the zamindar. Noticing a rather dead atmosphere in the audience, I enquired if they believed me; and only then discovered that I had been talking for twenty minutes to a draft of men just back from India.

Apart from petition work, there are other activities which fall to a C.L.O., who frequently finds himself in an unsought somewhat exaggerated role of the recognized representative of British Government. In our task of maintaining morale on the home front. work which has been defined as Public Liaison comes within our scope. This is just straightforward propaganda. There is no shortage of talent if one requires to stage a war meeting of any size. Orators spring up like mushrooms. The country loves a tamasha, and if one can combine a war talk with toy distribution for children or a conjuror, then everybody goes away satisfied.

I recall a certain occasion when we borrowed a local brake and four-in-hand, and packed it with eager speakers. The brake was fitted with amplifying apparatus, and this impressive vehicle of

oratory proceeded through a crowded bazar, halting every few hundred yards to let loose its verbal attack.

I had been pestered for days previously by an individual who assured me that he had been born only to make speeches on behalf of India's war effort. He wanted employment as a kind of official orator for the Civil Liaison Organization. I had been polite, but was not impressed, as he was a grubby little man of no presence. It was with consternation that I now suddenly saw him take the law into his own hands.

Thrusting aside rivals, he sprang on to the lofty pulpit of the brake, and started in on his attack. I have seldom seen such a volume of sound come from such a small body. He had the "National War Front" experts completely eclipsed. He involved the Koran and the Vedas. The crowd collected, and one sensed an undercurrent of real enthusiasm, with the rival speakers looking rather humble and disinterested.

But this torrent of oratory was too much for a restless near-wheeler, who had been straining at his traces. Just as the speaker was about to call for three cheers for the Raj, the Army and Hindustan, the near-wheeler bounded forward, and the speaker collapsed on his microphone in a dramatic climax, which brought added enthusiasm to the cheers of the audience.

Arousing interest in the war is only a matter of taking trouble. Frequently it is said that a certain individual or institution is disloyal or subversive. On contact it is discovered that no one hastever bothered to present the other point of view. For example, some schools acquire a reputation for Congress sympathies. On examination, it is found that an army officer has never been inside the school precincts, that they have never seen a weapon or a vehicle of any kind, and that their attitude is but the result of unsatisfied curiosity and neglect.

In actual fact there is no more pliable public in the world than the Indian student community. The legitimate work of a C.L.O. does not leave him much time for this aspect of his activities. Nevertheless it must be constantly borne in mind, for at present there are few officers to tackle the public liaison side of the war effort.

It will be recalled that an order directs that all petitions from units are to be addressed by units to deputy commissioners. Deputy commissioners then pass them over to an extra assistant commissioner, who is supposed to work in close contact with the Secretary of the District Soldier's Board. Together these two should them decide whether enquiry should continue through the civil channels. tehsildars and zaildars or whether it should go direct to welfare officers.

In practice it must be confessed that this happy liaison seldom materializes. Either the Secretary takes control and the E.A.C. finds he has not sufficient time to devote to petition work, or the E.A.C. with his superior ability and education dominates the handling of the office and petition work. It is our constant endeavour to maintain a correct balance and liaison between these two. I have known cases where they have hardly ever met each other!



An entirely new development has been that of the approach to welfare through women in the villages. About two years ago in the Jullundur and Ambala Divisions, four hundred and fifty women were chosen for their willingness to get in touch with their village neighbours and assist them in domestic troubles, and in correspondence with soldiers.

We termed these women "Fauji Secadarnis", and they were given an initial payment of Rs. 5 and an appointment card. We hoped and believed that they held frequent meetings, particularly at the Village Gurdwara of an evening, when they could combine practical endeavour with gossip, in much the same way as our more familiar cantonment work parties set about their business!

Later, it was decided to impose inspectresses in each civil district over the *secadarms*; and one cannot praise enough the seltless devotion to duty of these public spirited women. Some of them are missionaries. Others are Indian ladies of social standing, themselves struggling against the social handicap of purdah. They travel about in tongas over bumpy country tracks, holding meetings and listening to troubles.

We are striving hard to associate them closely with the District Soldiers Boards; and I recently attended a D.S.B. meeting when for the first time an Indian Inspectress spoke a few words in connection with a point on women's welfare. A few Mussalman greybeards shook their heads; but the reception was undoubtedly favourable. The ice has been broken and the movement, if pursued, will have incalculable repercussions on social problems.

Combined with a more modern approach to life which will be brought back to their homes by a million demobilized soldiers, such experiments will develop to produce a fuller and freer existence for the Indian villages. Nearly all village meetings now have their quota of women, a small rather self-conscious group away to a flank. But they are by no means mute.

I recall a fierce old woman who had much to complain of. Two sons were at the war, and as usual the neighbours were a constant worry. She concluded her woes with an assertion to the effect that, in any case, how could Government hope to breed the men for their future armies if their Sepoys were not given leave!

Two other aspects of our work, which have not direct connection with welfare, deserve mention. I refer to a watch on the political situation and assistance to candidates for Emergency Commissions. While we are in no sense "Intelligence Officers", we are yet in an excellent position to gauge the value of political influences and watch their development.

A peaceful Punjab is obviously a factor in successful war prosecution on the home front; and so when opportunity occurs without in any way involving ourselves, we lend a ready ear to those who are jockeying for position and thinking of post-war political power. In such a way we make many useful and interesting contacts, and find frequently that some of the traditional serpents of intrigue are not above an appeal to a sense of humour.

In interviewing candidates for Emergency Commissions, it frequently falls to a E.L.O. to investigate the circumstances of an adverse report by the C.I.D. I have found that often those candidates, who have been turned down, have shown a greater sense of leadership than the many orthodox young men who have seldom a clearer idea as to why they seek a Commission other than that of good pay and social advancement.

These are but a few comments on work that is full of variety and leaves much to the imagination. It is hoped that as the months of war go by, we at least live up to the appellation I recently received, when a petition arrived addressed to "The Civilization Officer."

#### Hitler's Death-knell

"From January 1, 1942 to October 31, 1943, America produced about 110,000 military planes. Very soon we will be turning out a completed plane every five minutes around the clock, every day of the month. In the same period we have produced 60,000 tanks and tank chassis, 53,000 scout cars and carriers, and 1,100,000 trucks and trailers. More than 21,000,000 deadweight tons of merchant vessels and nearly 3,000,000 displacement tons of naval vessels have come from our shipyards during this time. As for artillery, for our ground forces alone the figures are 170,000 pieces, with 225,000,000 rounds of artillery ammunition. Machineguns have been made to the tune of nearly 1,500,000 sub-machine guns, and rifles—6,700,000, with more than 26 billion rounds of ammunition for these guns—enough to let us fire nearly 2,000 shots at every soldier in the Axis armies."—Mr. Donald M. Nelson, U.S. Production Chief, at an official dinner given to him in London.

# Fight to the End with Japan

"The war with Japan is not one in which we are playing a part of benevolent assistance. Even if we are compelled for the time being to devote the greater part of our human and material resources to the task of defeating Germany, we are still principals in the Far-Eastern war. Japan is just as great a menace to the security of the British Commonwealth as she is to the security of either the United States or China.

"Let us ask any one of the splendid fighting men from Canada, Australia or New Zealand who are in England whether they have any doubts on this score or whether they could contemplate any future for their countries unless the power of Japan were broken. They and thousands of their fellows came here in 1939 to help us in our defence. Many are still here in spite of the dangers to their own countries, and we should be utterly unworthy of our heritage and traditions if we did not at the earliest possible moment deploy all our resources for the purpose of establishing their security on a firm basis.

"For that we have to fight Japan to the bitter end, whatever the cost and however long it takes."—Mr. Anthony Eden, M.P., in his speech to the House of Commons on returning from the Teheran Conference.



#### FEEDING THE INDIAN SOLDIER

By A MEDICAL OFFICER.

C ONSIDERABLE improvement has been affected in the Indian soldier's welfare, his training, education, clothing, accommodation, while anti-malaria measures are receiving a share of attention. Even his women and children have received a belated scant attention from the State, although their welfare is mainly supported by voluntary contributions of regimental funds and the noble effort of British women.

The Indian Troop now receives a self-sufficient ration in peace cantonments, instead of the one-time incomplete ration and ten annas per month (increased latterly to Rs. 3 per month owing to the higher cost of living) to supplement this ration. Little attention is, however, paid to how this ration is expended and served up as food to the man.

It is most exceptional for a company or squadron commander or the Battalion orderly officer to inspect an Indian kitchen, or enquire at meal times whether the food has been adequate and properly served up. Entering and examining the inner arrangements of an Indian kitchen by the inspecting officer is looked upon from the background with bored indifference by the adjutant. He looks upon all this as so much waste of time, which would be better employed drawing up schemes and training programmes and summaries of so many man-hours' work. He, however, fails to calculate the many man-days lost when some of his men are admitted to hospital as a result of unsatisfactory feeding arrangements, or insanitary cooking organisation; these he still thinks are the responsibility of the "Doctor."

The exceptions are usually officers of gunner, sapper or signal units who have spent their earlier years in the Army in British units, where they have been accustomed to look after the welfare of their men in every detail, and continue to do so when they have been drafted into Indian units.

The Indian soldier, with few exceptions, still gets two meals per day only. Instead of the morning and evening pre-war work periods, he now works through the greater part of the day, but little thought has been given to maintain his body between the morning and evening meals with any sustenance over a period of approximately eight to nine hours, except for a drink of water when he is thirsty.

The two meals of the Indian peasant or zamindar are merely an economic necessity; perhaps food and fuel are not sufficient, the housewife is busy with other domestic duties in the house, and can only afford time and labour to cook two meals per day.

The Indian stomach and its digestive juices are no different to those of an European. If the stomach is loaded up to distension once between 1900 and 1100 hours, and again between 1800 and 1900 hours, it does not have a chance of fully assimilating the day's ration. It would have a much better chance if the food were served up as breakfast, lunch and dinner.

Any suggestion of this nature is looked upon by the R.M. or S.M. as a reflection on the stamina of his men, and an undue interference with the rights and customs of the races enlisted in the

unit. The old-time commanding officer will consider this a shattering of old-time tradition. The strongest argument by the C.O. against this suggestion is an alleged inadequacy of fuel, or an interference with the usual programme of work. The strongest objection by the Sirdar is merely: "Hazur, aisa to hamare unit men kabhi nahin hua hai."

An army school for Indian boys and a pack battery (P.Ms. and Sikhs) in one army, with the same rations and fuel as issued to others of their category, have now adopted the system of breakfast, lunch and dinner, with early morning tea with a biscuit or its equivalent and afternoon tea. The boys at the end of their first term on the new system put on more weight than they had averaged before. Men of the battery are fitter and consider their internal organisation for meals—thanks to a young British Commanding Officer—superior to that in their less fortunate neighbours.

The Indian cook is now to be enlisted and taught musketry. The Indian soldier is to be taught how to cook: yet no attempt is made to see that the kitchens do not smoke, and the eyes of the men are not ruined by the constant irritation. The M.E.S. is universally blamed for faulty construction, although all type-plan constructions, even if hutted scale, are correctly designed. When investigating the cause of a smoking kitchen it is usual to find the baffle plate of the flue pushed home and broken, the connection with the chimney completely blocked up with brick and mutty, two-thirds of the fire burning outside the grate, or another fire has been lit in another part of the kitchen for the meat or vegetable dish, where no chimney is provided for the escape of smoke.

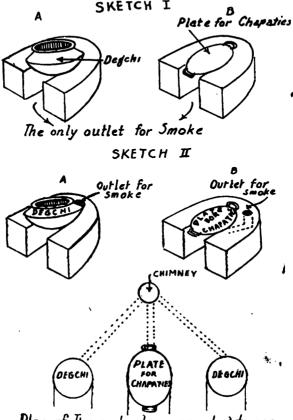
It is quite usual to see food cooked in what is the dining hall or out in the open, the space provided in the authorised kitchen being said to be inadequate, because the cook has enthroned himself under the chimney beside his iron plate for cooking *chappaties*, and the rest of the chimney is used for drying the fuel or storing the ration for the subsequent meals.

The Indian langri has never seen a kitchen without smoke in his home. The Paxton cooker, if provided, he would rather use as a shelf for storing rations or utensils; it is easier to erect a chula which he is accustomed to, with some bricks and mud, in another part of the room. The quartermaster of the Indian unit has rarely tried to understand its working, or got his cooks trained in the correct use of the cooker.

The usual horse-shoe-shaped chula, when covered with a round cooking pot or metal sheet for chappaties, will always smoke, because the only channel of exit for the smoke is in front (see Sketch 1, a and b). The cook is not provided with a pair of bellows. When the fire requires stimulation, he gets down on his hands and knees, and uses a well-controlled pair of cheeks in lieu. The smoke which comes back into his face is looked upon as unavoidable.

The Indian chula can be made smokeless by providing an outlet at the back. This can be effected by the simple device of a shallow scallop at the back, so as to provide an outlet for the smoke, or a slightly more elaborate construction of a small tunnel

of the required bore opening upwards at the back or communicating with the chimney. (See Sketch 2 a and b and plan for 3 chulas connected to one chimney.)



Plan of Three chooles connected to one

As regards sanitary measures, it is sometimes assumed that all is well because a kitchen has been constructed with pukka floors and flyproofing. In these days of cheap building, few floors or drains remain pukka for long; and a flyproof door in hutted construction seldom functions properly after a little use (or abuse). Constant supervision is needed, and repairs usually mean calling in the M.E.S.

The laws of hygiene may be observed by simple methods which can be employed by every unit without outside assistance. A mud floor which is lipaied every day, or once a week, is easily kept in repair, and is as clean as a pukka floor. Facilities to protect food from flies after it is cooked and served up are more effective in preventing fly-borne disease than a flyproof kitchen door which does not work efficiently.

Attending to details of cooking and serving up meals must not be looked down on as "spoon feeding" the soldier. Paying scant attention to his feeding is not "toughening" the man. It is producing a constitution which will more readily crack when strained owing to inadequate reserve in the tissues.

## SENTIMENTAL JOURNEY

By Colonel E. S. Phipson, d.s.o., i.m.s. (Retd.)

THE PURPOSE of this journey was to visit the home of my old bearer, Haji Abdul Majid, who has been in my service continuously for nearly thirty-five years. In these days, when a prospect of an increase of even five or ten rupees a month in pay is often sufficient to terminate a servant's family connection of many years' standing, such a journey acquired a special significance in which moral duty as well as a sentimental attachment and gratitude to a faithful servant played its part; a further practical inducement was the desire to ascertain, by local enquiry, how one could best provide for an old servant's declining years by means of a pension or its equivalent in cash, land or house property.

The journey began at an inconvenient hour in the early morning at Bareilly, by boarding a "parcel train" which stops at every station and therefore included Dhampur, which is the Haji's railhead. Here the Haji, who had left Bareilly twenty-four hours ahead of me, had prepared tiffin in the tiny waiting room.

After tiffin we boarded a tonga, which boasted rubber tyres, and set out across country on a deplorable road for Sherkot, fortunately no more than four miles away. Sherkot lies on a slight eminence skirted on two sides by a river, spanned by a fine new concrete bridge. This was a quite recent and much appreciated substitute for the previous method of crossing the river which in times of flood, was often either completely impassable, in which case the village was either entirely isolated from its railhead, or crossed by dhooli or palanquin carried by four stout fishermen practised in the difficult art of fording a swiftly-running river For some reason, which I could not follow, no ferry was found to be practicable, and no previous bridges have been able to withstand the constantly-changing course of the river. The new bridge, which cost two lakhs of rupees, was built by the P.W.D. of the United Provinces and is associated with the name of the Rani of Dhampur, a widowed lady who is chairman of the local district board.

My entry into the village, via the new bridge, was signalized by the firing of a "maroon" at the far end of the bridge, where the village band of ten instrumentalists (all brass and drums) was drawn up. The tonga stopped while the band, resplendent in scarlet tunics, with utility garments below, played, rather to my embarrassment, the first four bars of the National Anthem, and I was relieved when they switched into a rousing march which seemed to have been derived from "Colonel Bogey."

This band preceded the tonga to the gates of the house which was to be my lodging for the night. 'The "maroon" was repeated at intervals of one hundred yards during this half-mile procession,

the man in charge leaping ahead of the band and tonga, carrying his mortar with him, and discharging his fairly formidable piece just as the tonga-pony came abreast of him. The mortar hurled a bomb about the size of a Jaffa orange about twenty feet into the air, where it exploded, showering the horse and tonga with débris of charred paper and string. The horse never turned a hair, being evidently used to artiflery. The band played itself out with another four bars of the National Anthem, and I was ushered into my lodgings, a small house in the Mogul style with all its rooms facing an interior courtward, approached by an imposing gateway.

After a brief rest, the first ceremony was a tea party given (I think) by me to a number of the local notables in the courtyard of my lodgings. The chief notable made a speech of welcome in Urdu, to which I replied in Urdu (having previously prepared it in roman script with the assistance of my head-clerk), telling of all the different places where the Haji and I had found ourselves and some of our adventures during thirty four years, including (in India) the N.W.F. Province, the United Provinces, the Punjab, Bombay Presidency, Kashmir, Madras, Burma and Assam, and (outside India) Ceylon, Arabia, and was service in Egypt.

After this ceremony the notable took me to his house and we discussed how I could best make provision for the Haji's declining years and many other matters, until darkness fell, and the Haji himself came along to conduct me back to my lodging, telling my host (with commendable tact, considering it was a Muslim household) that it was my invariable custom to take a glass of "water" under my own roof at that hour of the evening. Then an excelent dinner, devised in Indian style by the Haji himself, and so to bed.

At the first streak of dawn I was awakened by the chanting of the muezzin of the neighbouring mosque, calling the faithful to prayer. The chant, sung in a powerful tenor voice, appears at first to be out of tune until ones' cars perceive that the variations in pitch include quarter-tones and are therefore unfamiliar to most English cars. They were not unfamiliar to mine, as I had lived for many years close to a mosque in Aden.

The morning's ceremonies consisted of formal visits to the houses of two local notables, where I was presented with one or two specimens of the local "batique" work for which Sherkot is well known, and final discussions took place on the subject of the Haji's pension or its equivalent, and on this a satisfactory decision was reached. Then came a formal visit to the Haji's own house, a quite substantial building with a gateway and small courtyard in the Mogul style, which is almost universal in that village

The arched gateway, a massive structure some thirty feet high and ten feet deep, opens into the courtyard of the house, the courtyard being surrounded by the living-rooms, which have no external windows. On entering the gateway, one finds the interior of the courtyard screened from outside view by a high purdah wall. This wall stops short of the courtyard wall on one side and thus gives entrance to the courtyard, with the living rooms, protected from sun and rain by a covered verandah, and the kitchen.

carrying

ole piece

r hurled

into the

h débris

ir, being

nıt with

ushered h all its

mposing

given (I

ourtyard

come in

pared it lling of

urselve

ding (¤

Punjab.

m, and

and we

eclining

je Hiji

ling m

house

"water"

a excel·

and 90

1anting

aibbil.

icars at

iations

lias 10

to de

one or

kot is

of the

CISION

house

rtyard

i feet

e, th

re 100

terior

1rdan e and pro

chen.

I had

bathroom and store room. Over the arched gateway is a small walled-in platform, to which access is given by a stone staircase from the courtyard, and flanking this platform is a small room, with many barred window-openings, used for sleeping in the hot weather. The courtyard contains the usual equipment of a humble home, the musal for pounding and husking the wheat as it comes from the ear, and the chakki or stone hand-mill for grinding the wheat into atta operated by the family.

The family consists of the Haji's wife, who keeps strict purdah, and three children, two pretty little girls named Nafisa, aged eight, and Anisa, aged eleven, who live with their mother and attend the local primary school, and a sturdy son Rashid, aged seventeen, who is the apple of his father's eye and who is studying at the Islamia School, Simla, from where he hopes to matriculate, and thus obtain a chance of Government employment, which means above all stability in an unstable world.

I met a police sub-inspector who is the prospective father-inlaw of the boy Rashid, who will shortly be betrothed to his daughter, though his marriage will not take place until after he has matriculated. Rashid is an asset, or at least not a liability, in the marriage-market, but his two little sisters are to be regarded as liabilities, and their marriage in a few years' time will involve the Haji in very heavy expense—he himself puts it at about Rs. 1,000 each—which, to Western eyes, seems entirely out of proportion to the family resources. Age-long custom is still very rigid in these matters, but there are signs that in time a more rational practice may prevail.

To return to my story, after being shown the household arrangements, which seemed neat and practical and well adapted to the simple needs of the family, I was then conducted to the "visitors" room, and decorated by the Haji with three very elaborate garlands, one superimposed on the other: one for myself, one for my wife and one for my family; they were beautifully made of the delicate gold tinsel-work which comes from Bareilly, and I had to make my way back to my lodgings wearing the three garlands, to make it clear to the public that I was indeed a very special visitor.

In the afternoon I was bidden to a tea-party given by one of the principal residents, and presented with another garland, of the finest Benares gold embroidery, and of real beauty. After tea followed a visit to the house of the "Mayor" of the town, the Chairman of the Town Committee, where, after a few minutes of ceremonial conversation, I was invited to take my seat on the Chairman's own elephant, along with his nephew and grandson, for the trek round the outskirts of the town. In this way we had an excellent view of the lie of the country, the miles of sugarcane fields, ready for harvesting, and the winter crop of wheat just showing through rich and fertile soil; we also passed through the town which, except for the agricultural community, the shop-keepers and the land-owners, is largely depopulated owing to the exceedingly bad communications with the outside world, which literally isolate the town in the rainy season.

My host said that in cases of real emergency he would always lend his elephant to any inhabitant who needed, for example, safe transport across the flooded river to the hospital at Dhampur, there being, until last year, literally no other safe means of crossing the river for a really sick man or woman. Thus the opening of this new bridge was a blessing to the town, the extent of which can only be realised by anyone who has been isolated from the resources of civilisation during most of the rainy season.

As a contrast to the old-world atmosphere of the elephant, on my return from the elephant trip I entered the high arched gateway of the Chairman's house, designed for the passage of elephants. After disembarkation, which seems an appropriate word, since the elephant slowly drew up alongside a masonry platform or "mole" evidently constructed for the purpose, we listened to the news from Delhi, on a very efficient radio with a movable loud-speaker designed to operate, when required, from the verandah of the Chairman's house. This verandah gave on to a square, where the public could listen to the news in Urdu, a gesture by the Chairman which struck me as very praiseworthy, as only the wealthier inhabitants have electric power, which is derived from the "grid" and which, in turn, is energised by the hydro-electric installation near Hardwar, the sacred place of pilgrimage near the upper waters of the Ganges.

My host accompanied me to my lodgings where, after a discussion on current topics, including what seemed to be the strange system of controlling the price of wheat or indeed of any commodity, without assuming power to commandeer or at least to regulate stocks, my hosts departed, perhaps as a result of a feeling that the time of my evening meal, or at least of my evening glass of "water," was approaching. They very courteously settled that my journey of four miles to Dhampur station, on a moonless night, should be accomplished, not in a tonga, because of the evil surface of the road, but on the elephant, a gifted animal which can see better in the dark than most other animals. I gratefully accepted this further evidence of polite consideration, and by this means regained touch with civilisation at the Dhampur railhead.

My brief visit to Sherkot had thus proved to be not only entirely satisfactory from the point of view of achieving all the objects which had led me to make the "Sentimental Journey." a journey which I had contemplated for many years, but it was an experience which I shall always be grateful for having undergone, an insight into the real heart of India, happily remote from politics, and on a plane where there is no obstacle to the promotion of those fundamental human relations which transcend the limits of race and creed, and which can surely be brought to bear on the problems which will confront us in the world after the war-

#### TRAFFIC IN THE BATTLE ZONE

By LIEUT.-COLONEL F. L. ROBERTS

"If Movement hath lost control how then shall there be movement?" (Anon).

MANY GOOD pamphlets and instructions have been issued which explain the theory and practice of motorised movement. A thorough mastery of the principles they lay down are essential to a successful concentration for battle. But both theory and practice will fall to the ground, and chaos will inevitably result, unless our methods for maintaining adequate control are absolutely fool-proof.

You may write the most perfect Movement Order, or draw the most accurate graphs, and your units may have the most perfect convoy discipline, but neither of these will, in themselves, ensure perfect movement without the presence of one other essential factor, namely, adequate control along routes and at assembly areas.

Prior to the mass motorisation of our army, traffic control was, comparatively speaking, a simple problem. It had to cope with the movement of marching troops, horse-drawn wheeled traffic and a few cars and motor-cycles. Except for horse-drawn artillery, the occasional ambulance wagon and a few despatch-riders, few, if any, of the army's vehicles entered front-line areas, and fewer still moved about the battlefield during actual fighting.

To-day the situation is vastly different, because not only is nearly all movement done in vehicles, and not only do those vehicles need hundreds of other vehicles to maintain them, but there are the added very influential factors of higher speed and the fact that quite a fair proportion of modern military vehicles play a very active part in the actual fighting.

Mention is made of vehicles required for maintenance duties because they do appreciably tend to increase the congestion of traffic in forward areas. Every fighting vehicle which goes into a forward zone and/or takes part in a battle needs either to be refuelled or re-armed or repaired in the forward zone. Again, when the fighting vehicle becomes a casualty, it must be recovered from the forward zone and taken to the workshops in the rear.

It is easy to see, therefore, how modern equipment calls for increased and increasing traffic control in forward areas.

Let us summarise the problem.

(a) Movement in rearward areas, control over which can be exercised by normal point-duty arrangements along well-defined routes.

(b) Movement in forward areas, control over which is very closely linked with operational planning and which must, therefore, be easily adjustable on an ad hoc basis to meet changes in or developments of a plan.

Two hypothetical sets of circumstances will perhaps illustrate these differences more clearly:

(i) Suppose we have, in Syria, a few troops whose role it is to preserve peace on Turkey's southern frontier. Hostile agents may try to destroy our friendship with Turkey by creating civil disturbances along the Turco-Syrian border. Suppose that these disturbing elements prove too much of a handful for our small detachments, and that the C.-in-C., Middle East, deems it necessary to move up two brigades by road from Egypt to Syria

Now there are certain routes from Egypt into Palestine, within Palestine itself, and from Palestine into Syria, which are regularly used in the ordinary course of events. Traffic along these routes is regularly controlled by military police working in conjunction with the local civil police.

It will be seen that the move of these two hypothetical brigades from Egypt to Syria and their dispersal in Syria presents no abnormal problem. Except for a few military police, on motorcycles, to guide the convoys through large towns or along bypasses, there is no need to adjust or to upset the system of traffic control which normally pertains along the routes to be used.

(ii) Now for the other picture—a division moving up one road towards an enemy. The leading brigade comes up against a hostile covering position and, after an attack, finds that it is unable to advance. The corps commander places a tank brigade under command of the divisional commander, who decides and plans for a dawn attack by another of his infantry brigades, supported by the tank brigade.

One of the principal problems, if not the principal problem, during the hours preceding this attack, and especially during the hours of darkness, will be the routing and guiding of the many units and vehicles which have to complete movement and assembly before dawn. Guns have to be positioned, ammunition has to be dumped, supplies must be delivered, ambulances and dressing stations have to be sited and light-aid workshop elements have to be set up.

Then, the troops themselves must get on to their start-lines, and those units which are to co-operate with the tanks must marry-up with their partners at the correct time and place. If chaos is to be avoided it must be apparent that only the most efficient control over movement will meet the case.

But that is not all. After battle has begun there will be the need for control over movement because, apart from any forward movement, there must inevitably be some backward movement also—prisoners and wounded to be evacuated, stragglers to be collected, broken-down vehicles to be recovered and hauled back for repair.

The successful launching of the battle depends entirely on the arrival of each man and vehicle at their appointed places at the

correct time. Once the battle has been joined, its successful issue will depend on the correct forward movement of all partaking elements and of all reinforcements, to say nothing of speedy evacuations. The sooner you can get a damaged gun or tank back to its workshop, the sooner will you have it back in action again. In cases where damage necessitates a complete replacement, the sooner that replacement can be brought forward the better. Without labouring the point any more, it is evident that the strictest control over all movement in forward areas is of vital importance.

Who is to be the authority which will direct the elements and agencies which are to exercise and establish this strict control? It must obviously be the same authority as that which plans and controls the battle, that is to say, the General Staff. During the planning period and during the battle the Administrative Staff will, and indeed must, state their case for priority of administrative movement in accordance with the requirements of the plan; but it must lie with the General Staff to give the final decision on the priority of movement along that single road.

Again, the most well-planned battle is apt to develop on unexpected lines, and success is sometimes achieved in areas of the battlefield where it was least expected. Here, again, the General Staff are the only authority who can anticipate and plan for such developments and eventualities. The Commander will want to take immediate advantage of any unexpected hostile weak spots; he will, therefore, want to amend or perhaps drastically to change the priorities he has accepted as regards movement; and it must be his General Staff who issue his orders and plan in accordance with his wishes for the conduct of the battle.

But, in our present army organisation, it is the Administrative Staff which is responsible for controlling the agencies which, in their turn, have to exercise this very careful control over movement. It is pertinent, therefore, to discuss and to discover why the Administrative Staff are charged with this exercise of authority over agencies which should, apparently, be controlled by the General Staff.

The agencies provided for controlling traffic are:

(i) the Corps of Military Police, and (ii) sub-units or small detachments from infantry and cavalry units, the personnel of which have been trained in traffic-control duties. In a Division these agencies are controlled by the A.A. & Q.M.G., through his D.A.A.G. and the A.P.M.

Now the C.M.P. have a dual role. They are not only trafficagents; they are also the instruments for the maintenance of discipline in the army. In fact their primary duty, in the past, has been of a disciplinary nature, rather than one concerned with traffic. It is because their primary concern was with disciplinary matters that they have been controlled by that Branch of the Staff which is responsible for the maintenance of discipline, i.e. the Adjutant-General's Branch.

Another reason why "A" Branch of the Staff control the C.M.P. is because prisoners of war and their disposal subsequent to capture is governed by international agreements, and Law is an

"A" responsibility.



Even though traffic-control in rear areas (remember the move of those two Brigades to Syria) and the handling of prisoners must remain a responsibility of the Administrative Staff, is that any argument or reason for making the "A" Staff responsible for controlling agencies which, as has been shewn, must obviously be controlled in the foremost areas by the General Staff? If modern developments have brought about a change of scene in the foremost zones, should there not be a complementary change in the organisation of one of the most important agencies responsible for staging that scene?

It may be argued that, in a Division, the A.A. & Q.M.G. should be fully in his Commander's picture, and should know what the "G" Staff next anticipate will happen. So he is, but he cannot always be forward at advanced H.Q., while there is much for him to supervise and to plan in the rear areas; there are current routine matters which he must deal with in order to relieve. his Commander of the many minor matters which crop up every day. The unforeseen and unpredictable development of a battle may well occur while the A/Q is absent at Rear H.Q., or he may even be further back on a visit to Hospitals or to the supply and ordnance depots from which the Division draws its requirements. Are the new developments in the battle to be held up until the A/Q returns?

Then consider the other agency for traffic-control, namely, detachments drawn from fighting units. At times it has been suggested that a whole unit may be called upon to control traffic along several routes. Is this a satisfactory method of achieving good traffic along several routes? Is this a satisfactory method of achieving good traffic control? Is a Division or a Brigade well found for battle when it has bits and pieces of its units stretched out along a lengthy L. of C.?

Admitted that Formations can and do go into battle without these bits and pieces, but is such a state of affairs either satisfactory or ideal? Is our organisation designed for the provision of such detachments? Why waste months and years training men to be expert with bomb, rifle and machine-gun, with motor, tank and armoured-car, only to leave them acting as human sign-posts at a time when their skill and expert knowledge is urgently required to help in destroying the enemy?

Occasions will frequently arise in war when improvisation and departure from accepted organisation must be accepted; but such improvisations must not be accepted as normal. This applies particularly to the administrative machinery in our army.

It is fundamentally incorrect and unsound, therefore, to rely upon fighting units to augment our Corps of Military Police as traffic-control agents in forward operational areas. We must try to find a more lasting and a better solution to our problem. And if the reader has borne with the writer's arguments up to this stage, he will agree that our problem can now be crystallised as:

"The modern army now needs staff and personnel for—(i) the establishment of traffic routes and control over routine traffic in rear areas; (ii) maintenance of discipline; (iii) planning for,

establishment of and control along tactical traffic routes in the foremost areas."

It is suggested that the C.M.P. can and should undertake all these duties. Their units will have to be enlarged, and this means a further demand on limited man-power. But surely it is better and, in the longer run, economically sound to subtract a few men from each man-power allotment to fighting units, and to re-allot these men to the C.M.P. where they can be trained in their duties from the commencement of their military careers, rather than allow those few men to go to fighting units, train them in the art of modern war and the usage of modern weapons and then, at the time of battle, withdraw them from their units and use them as traffic police?

It is impracticable, in the brief space at the writer's disposal, to launch into a detailed suggestion for the reorganisation of the Divisional C.M.P. The object of this article is to bring about a change in thought which, in its turn, will result in a change in organisation. It is practicable, however, to put forward an outline organisation; and, briefly, this outline organisation, as the writer sees it, is as follows:

(a) Staff.—At Divisional H. Q. there must be a General Staff Officer who is responsible for working out Movement Tables and for issuing Movement Orders. Whether he is a 2nd or 3rd Grade Staff Officer is immaterial, so long as he knows his job. With one clerk he should be able to produce all that is required of him.

Then there must be, as there now is, one Officer responsible for controlling and advising on Provost matters, namely, the A.P.M. He would control the C.M.P. generally, and supervise the way in which its personnel work both in forward as well as in rearward areas.

Since the A.P.M. cannot be in two places at once, and since the C.M.P. will be employed on a variety of duties throughout the Divisional area, he must have at least one Deputy. The G.S.O. responsible for Traffic also needs an assistant, and since it would not be economical to employ a trained Staff Officer in this role, it seems essential to have another Deputy A.P.M. His responsibility would be to implement the traffic control planned and ordered by the "G" Staff in forward areas. Approximately this would be all traffic forward of Main Divisional H.Q.

It may be felt that the A.P.M. does not need a Deputy if the G.S.O. (Traffic) is to have one This is a matter for decision as a result of experience. In modern war, where movement is swift and hostile surrender is apt to be swifter, the Administrative Staff are apt to be confronted with the immense problem of having to cope with thousands or hundreds of thousands of prisoners of war.

No Staff can be expected to be organised with a view to meeting this sort of administrative problem within the Division. The writer's experience in Eritrea and Abyssinia is that units have to be called on to provide personnel for controlling these vast numbers and for sorting and administering them. It is obviously desirable that regimental officers thus employed and temporarily away from their units should have someone who can advise them as re-

gards procedure and so on. It is for this reason that a deputy to the A.P.M. is considered necessary.

We may therefore list the Staff requirements as follows: "G" Staff: One G.S.O (Traffic). One D.A.P.M. (Operations). "A" Staff. One A.P.M. One D.A.P.M. (Administrative)

(b) Divisional Procost Unit.—This must be sub-divided into Sections as it is at present, but with this difference, namely, that some Sections will deal primarily with tactical traffic control, while others will have as their primary rôle the control of routine traffic in rear areas, and the maintenance of discipline as well as the handling of prisoners of war in rear areas.

Since the control over operational traffic in forward zones will invariably demand the ability to read Movement Tables and Orders, the personnel who will have to exercise this control must be able to read and understand such Tables; and this, in an Indian Division, implies that the greater proportion of personnel allotted to Forward Sections must be British.

From this brief statement of requirements it is possible to tabulate the requirements of a reorganisation:

- (i) Forward Sections, composed mostly of British Ranks, with a few Indian ranks to deal with Indian stragglers and other similar problems not connected with actual control of traffic.
- (ii) Rearward Sections, composed of equal proportions of British and Indian ranks: or, if necessary, with a majority of Indian ranks. Their duties will be disciplinary as well as traffic.
- (iii) Reserve Sections, subdivided into British and Indian self-contained Subsections. Their rôle being to reintorce either Forward or Rearward Sections as the situation may demand.
- (c) Communications.—No Traffic-control system will be effective unless Control Posts and Regulating Stations can talk to one another. Such close control will not always be necessary in Divisional areas, except where defiles exist. Hence it seems preferable to have a Provost Signals Unit under control of Corps H.Q., for suballotment to Divisional routes as circumstances may demand. It is suggested that this unit should be organised into:
  - H.Q. One Corps Section. Two Divisional Sections.

And the Corps Provost Unit must be capable of manning two Traffic Control Regulating Stations, one on each Divisional main axis.

### SIR AUREL STEIN, K.C.I.E.

S IR AUREL STEIN, who died in Kabul recently at the age of 80, was famous as a geographical and archæological expert, and conducted many explorations in Northern India, Central Asia and Persia. He numbered many members of this Institution among his friends, and one of them, in recalling a meeting with Sir Aurel, writes:

It was a bitter January day in 1927 when I first met Sir Aurel Stein in a scene and circumstances typical of so much of his adventurous life. He was then nearly sixty years of age, with a suntanned, weather-beaten face, white hair and a short stocky figure clothed on this occasion in an old puttoo suit of plus-fours with a dark tweed cap. His vitality and energy were amazing, and the way in which he issued his orders to his "political bodyguard" of hulking Wazirs and Mahsuds was a joy to behold. In manner and appearance, he might have been a re-incarnation of Lord Roberts.

At this time most of South Waziristan was a no-man's land; Wana had not been re-occupied and there were no regular troops between Razmak (or Jandola) and Fort Sandeman. This did not deter Sir Aurel—indeed, I suspect it rather attracted him—and he had obtained permission to traverse this part of the country under the political protection of the Tehsildar and a party largely consisting of local Maliks. His object was to visit a buried city, hitherto unknown to archæology, which was said to exist on the Gomal River. My own orders were to meet him at Kajuri Kach, and to escort him to Fort Sandeman, from which he would go on to inspect certain excavations in Kalat State.

Accompanied, therefore, by a mixed party of some eighty Orakzais, Afridis and Kakars, half of them mounted, and a fishing-rod—for I had a day at least in hand, and there is a good stretch of water below Moghul Kot where the Zhob Mahseer for some reason best known to themselves take freely in the coldest weather—I started fishing quietly down towards Kajuri Kach.

We had reached a point within a dozen miles of our destination when a mounted man arrived with a message saying that it was not Kajuri Kach at all where we were to meet Sir Aurel, but Gul Kach—a very different place. This was not so good. We could indeed have reached Gul Kach on foot, via the Pastwara, over the Tora Tizha hills down to the Gomal near Toi Khuleh, and so along the river to Gul Kach, but this would have meant leaving the horses and our kit. It appeared better to move back immediately 25 miles to Mir Ali Khel Post, and to reach Gul Kach from there next day by another 25-mile march viâ the Girdao Tangi.

There is an old abandoned Post at Gul Kach, in fact there are two, both close together about two miles above the present post and bridge which, in 1927, did not exist. It may be open to doubt if the man who sited either of the original posts could have obtained many marks in his promotion examination, as the first (being

on the river bank) had plenty of water available but was unfortunately overlooked by higher ground some 300 yards away, while the second (for which the first had been later abandoned) stood on the higher ground and had a nice all-round field of fire, but unfortunately no water.

It was bitterly cold, with a wind that cut like a knife; the Gomal, which here runs in several streams, was completely frozen over; all round were grim red and black ridges of low hills with the snow-covered heights of Momin Sar just shewing to the North-West; there was no sign of Sir Aurel, and the only feature of any interest in the vicinity was a queer-shaped mass of mounds which, to anyone who has visited Istabulat or Samarra, bore all the hallmarks of one of the buried cities of Mesopotamia. We had at least

come to the right place.

Whether Sir Aurel would ever arrive there was another matter. He was already late, and failure to appear at any rendezvous in that area almost certainly spelt trouble. But the first thing to do, if we were not all to be frozen to death, was clearly to get ourselves and the horses somewhere under cover, and then to put our cover into a state of defence, as our strength and presence had no doubt been reported long ago and we might expect to be attacked at any time. Shortly afterwards then, the upper Fort proving unsuitable as being little more than a mass of fallen rubble, we had all gone to ground in the lower Zinder Neuf on the river bank, defence posts were occupied and old loopholes repaired: parties went down to the river-bed to collect tamarisk brushwood (which, though probably producing more smoke and less heat than any type of fuel known to man, is luckily plentiful at Gul Kach), and in less time than it takes to tell the men were busy making tea and "kauks" and gradually thawing themselves out beside their fires. Needless to say, everything movable had long ago been looted from the old post. Not a stick of woodwork remained, and most of the roofs had fallen in, but the stout outer walls were still standing, as was one of the corner towers, and we were now fed and ready to take on anything that the future might provide.

As the day wore on this question figured prominently on the agenda for discussion. A mounted reconnaissance had failed to disclose the presence of anyone, hostile or otherwise, within some miles of the position, and had merely proved to our satisfaction later confirmed by Sir Aurel himself-that the so-called "buried city" was in fact a natural formation caused by water erosion. To go back without Sir Aurel was unthinkable. On the other hand, our 80 rifles appeared to be somewhat inadequate for an advance on Sarwekai-an operation requiring, as far as we knew, a force of about two Brigades of Infantry with full Artillery support. The only possible course was to remain where we were in the hope that

Sir Aurel would arrive before the ration ran out.

There was not much sleep that night—it was far too cold but in the early hours of the morning our fears were allayed by the arrival of a half-frozen Gilzai who, after being thawed out with copious draughts of hot tea, was at last able to deliver the welcome message that Sir Aurel was safe and well and that he would arrive from Dargai Obo in the course of the following day. And so he duly did.

I forget what had delayed him, but he was clearly in complete control of his "political bodyguard." And what a party it was! Wazirs and Mahsuds seldom make good bedfellows, and both were strongly represented, including Azmatt, a Zilli Khel Wazir of some repute, who only a few years previously had led the lashkar which completely destroyed a British Column in the Kapip Tangi, and several others personally known to, and badly wanted by, my own men! There were many old scores to be settled here, and all the ingredients for a first class scrap. In addition, Azmatt himself, and another Wazir Malik named Mir Badshah, kept circling round each other like a couple of dogs spoiling for a fight, and I was to learn only 18 months later that it was Azmatt who had "died," while I met Mir Badshah again ten years afterwards in Wana.

Fortunately the immutable Law of the Border is that of Hospitality, and very shortly all were enjoying a nice cup of tea. An uneasy harmony prevailed, and although the hand of my senior Subedar—a man with many notches on his rifle and, incidentally, one of the few survivors of the Kapip Tangi action—was inclined to stray lovingly to his weapon, he succeeded with some difficulty in confining his mutterings to his own ample beard. It was with considerable relief, therefore, that I was presently able to inform our guests that as far as we were concerned they had practically the whole of Asia at their disposal for the night—with the exception of the area immediately surrounding the post. To this they retaliated by saying how pleased they were to be freed from all responsibility regarding Sir Aurel, who was now entirely handed over to our protection; and on this note we parted.

Sir Aurel was in great form. He was clearly inured to hard. ships of every kind, and appeared perfectly content with the rough fare which we were able to provide for him. I was much impressed by his camp kit, so eloquent of a great explorer, including a light but roomy tent of his own invention which contained every essential, but could be very easily packed. This he insisted on setting up by compass, and was not satisfied until he had got it pitched in such a manner as to obtain the maximum protection from the prevailing wind—a point on which he questioned me But, though clearly able to look after himself in the most adverse circumstances, he was not to be deterred from his purpose, and he had in fact lost most of his toes from frost-bite through staying too long on a frozen peak in High Asia, where he was determined to complete his observations. Stating that he "did not care much for escorts," he was somewhat amused by the precautions taken for our safety during the night and the ensuing march to Mir Ali Khel next day. But he fully realised the necessity for them when I explained to him the various personalities and peoples involved.

He was a master of most Oriental languages, and had a good working knowledge of Pushtu, though the North-West Frontier was far from the scene of most of his activities. I spent most of the following day listening to his brilliant discourse on a variety of subjects including the remoter parts of Asia, Alexander, the age of the hills through which we passed as compared with the Himalayas, erosion and climate, and a host of others on all of which his knowledge was profound. I remember that we had come to Camels,

about which, as I was then in charge of some hundreds of them, I felt on fairly safe ground and ventured to suggest that these were too stupid to remain in a wild state and that all were probably now in captivity. He immediately replied, "No, please," and told me exactly where he had found wild camels in the course of his travels somewhere at the back of the Gobi.

We completed our march without incident, and eventually reached Fort Sandeman, where he staved with me in my bungalow before leaving by car for Quetta. He was most appreciative of the little we had been able to do for him, and actually caused me considerable embarrassment a month or two later in Quetta when, at a formal party of which he was the Lion, he broke away abruptly from the A.G.G. and the Revenue Commissioner and engaged me in a long and animated conversation.

I shall always remember this great little man to whom I once had the privilege of acting as escort through the wastes of the Gomal.

# MAJOR-GENERAL W. L. LLOYD, C.B.E., D.S.O., M.C.

# A Brother Officer writes:

It was an unkind fate that decreed that that fine soldier Wilfrid Lloyd should die, not on the field of battle, but in a motor car accident. In this war he had seen as much active service as any other officer of his rank. Except for a short period as Director of Military Training, he was in command of troops in an active role throughout, as he was at the time of his death. We who fought beside him know what a very great loss the Army, has suffered.

His was a brilliant brain, united to great powers of command. It would be invidious to single out any particular action in which he was engaged for special mention, but the capture of Damascus in the Syrian Campaign stands as a very great achievement, an achievement made possible only by the brilliance and courage of Wilfrid Lloyd. In this war he fought the Germans, the Italians and the Japanese, in four different theatres of war. His death early on, in what would undoubtedly have been a great career, is a real tragedy.

As a comrade and a personal friend of Wilfrid Llovd, and I know I speak for every officer and man who ever served with him and indeed for the Army as a whole, I should like to express very deep sympathy with his wife.

### RECENT ADDITIONS TO THE LIBRARY

#### The War

Modern Warfare: by General Sikorski.—The untimely death of the Polish leader in an air crash lends a tragic interest to this new edition of a book of his, because in it he emphasised the rôle of the air force at a time (1934) when it was badly underrated in the Allied countries. Originally published nine years ago it was also the first book written by any of the present Allied military experts to stress the supreme importance of the offensive, and to underline the vital part to be played in modern warfare by tanks and mechanised arms as decisive offensive weapons. One cannot resist the conclusion that, if it had been read at the right time by the right people, we might have been better prepared for the war when it came.

How Japan Plans to Win: by Kinoaki Malsuo.—This is a Japanese book written for the Japanese people and published in Tokyo in October, 1940, under the aegis of the Japanese Government. It has been translated by Kilsoo K. Haan, a Korean revolutionary, who "acquired" it from the Los Angeles hotel bedroom of two Japanese army officers who were on a visit to the west coast of America to do propaganda among Japanese-Americans. Under the original title of The Three-Power Pact and the U. S.-Japanese War the book sets out in detail the Japanese strategic plan. December, 1941, is laid down as zero month. The attacks on Pearl Harbour, Guam, Wake and Midway Islands, and the Phillipines have all followed according to schedule. A complete programme of the war is given, even to the percentage losses the Japanese to sustain in each major action, and the Japanese author anticipates the bombing of Tokyo, the Japanese occupation of Hawaii and the closing of the Panama Canal.

Japan's Purpose in Asia: by Sir Frederick Whyte.—This booklet on Japan was got out by the Royal Institute of International Affairs, on the eve of Pearl Harbour, as a companion to Europe Under Hitler, with the object of assisting the reader to interpret the news from the Far East. A sober appreciation of Japan's war potential and strategic position, it leaves the reader confident that once Hitler has been disposed of and the combined forces of Britain and America can be brought to bear on Japan, her defeat is only a question of time.

To Stalingrad and Alamein: by Strategicus.—Beginning with the 1941-2 Russian winter offensive, this volume of the history of war by "Strategicus" carries the story up to the gates of Stalingrad and to the last defence of Egypt. Of particular interest to readers in India will be the chapter on "The Tragedy of India," in which "Strategicus" tells the story of the Cripps Mission and seeks to analyse the reasons for rejection of the British offer.

COMBINED OPERATIONS: Prepared for the Combined Operations Command by the Ministry of Information.—A fascinating account of combined operations in general and also of the exploits

of the Command bearing that name—the raid on Rommel, the adventure of Vaagso, the storming of Diego Suarez and the Dieppe "reconnaissance in force." The numerous illustrations in gravure include two drawings of the action at St. Nazaire, and two of the No. 4 Commando who took part in the raid on Dieppe.

REHEARSAL FOR INVASION: by Wallace Reyburn.—Another eye-witness account of the Dieppe raid. As a Canadian war correspondent, the author accompanied the force that attacked the Pourville beach and fought its way into the town. He saw Colonel Merritt performing the deeds of bravery that were to win him the V.C. He himself narrowly escaped death several times, and was in the last destroyer to leave the harbour. This vivid narrative is thus as complete and personal as any that have come out of the

Dieppe raid.

SPEAR HEAD: a War Novel by John Brophy.—This is the author who became famous almost overnight with the filming of Immortal Sergeant, one of the greatest stories to come out of the war. Spear Head is a story about men of the Commando, showing how it came into existence, the sort of men who joined it, and how they live and fight. The story follows the fortunes of one subsection; a Scottish sergeant determined to live up to his father's standards; an amateur boxer corporal; a Canadian from the U.S.A.; a pious professional footballer; a Lancashire mechanic: a tough Cockney; and Emmet O'Donovan, nineteen, romantic, given to boyish posing but a skilful and brave soldier. Two raids—one on Norway and one on the French coast-come alive with exciting yet lucid realism. Interwoven with the training and fighting is the love story of O'Donovan and the sister of his company commander, who finds himself in a situation where her most private feelings radically affect the fates of many soldiers. This is a novel about vouth at war, depicted with rare sympathy, knowledge and wisdom.

THE PSYCHOLOGY OF FEAR AND COURAGE: by Edward Glover. -Believing that victory or defeat depends ultimately on the state of the Nation's morale, and knowing that morale can be weakened by unreal fear, suspicion, hate, 'superstitiousness' and guilt, the author sets out to describe how these more childlike emotional factors can be held in check, provided they are recognised in time. In the course of his analysis he finds himself caught up in the larger issues; he is "compelled to admit" that our morale depends on our war aims-"we cannot measure or improve our fighting courage unless we know why we are fighting and what we are fighting for... we must have a war aim that will be accepted and supported by every family, every group and every class in the community." After discussing and dismissing broad concepts such as Empire, Church. Democracy, he lists five main aims to which everyone, he thinks, can and will subscribe: to preserve one's life, home, family and country from either physical and mental violence; to defend cherished institutions from violence; to protect the weak, dependent and infirm: to preserve the truth and to uphold the law. Fully conscious that the great majority of people are moved not by abstract ideas such as these but by simple and humane emotions he concludes that if we want to win the war the common people must be made

more aware of their own fundamental values. That is, in order to foster morale, mass educational techniques must be discovered and applied by which these values may be made real and vivid. Fortunately, the need has to some extent been realised. Anyone, for example, who knows what the Army Bureau of Current Affairs is doing to educate the soldier up to a realisation of the moral values of our civilisation will see at once where this work links up with the psychology of fear and courage.

## Drawing the R.A.F.

MEN OF THE R.A.F.: by Sir William Rothenstein and Lord David Cecil.—This book falls into three parts. Sir William Rothenstein starts with his memories and impressions of life as lived at Bomber, Fighter and other stations. Lord Cecil follows with an essay on the R.A.F. and what it means to the civilian. Lastly there are forty full-page reproductions of portraits of typical men of all ranks who make up the R.A.F. to-day. These are considered among the best that Sir William has ever done. The book will be a fighting memorial of the part played by the R.A.F. in this war.

DRAWING THE R.A.F.: by Eric Kennington.—Another striking and exhilarating collection of pastel portraits of Britain's flyers. The pastel gives a luminous and dramatic quality which emphasises what the artist apparently wants to say—that these men are inspired with a nobility and serenity which, it seems, is imparted to them by their way of life.

# India's Fighters, Past and Present

India's Army: by Major Donovan Jackson.—An attractive volume which will delight the heart of the old hoi hai and be of great interest and value to the newcomer. Side by side with many excellent photographs and gorgeous colour plates covering all units and classes enlisted in India's army, Major Jackson gives the history of every regiment and corps from the time of its founding. So far, says the author, little has been done to make known to the Indian public something of the history and the glory of their own regiments, who have played down the years an almost world-wide part in the protection and advancement of the British Commonwealth. This is an attempt to meet the need.

QUEEN MARY'S BOOK FOR INDIA: With a Foreword by Mr. Amery.—Published in aid of the Indian Comforts Fund, this little book contains tributes to the Indian Army, Navy and Air Force and summarises India's War Effort. Part 2 is an anthology of prose and verse about India's fighting men, some of which is published for the first time, for example, T.S. Eliot's poem To the Indians who Died in Africa.

## The Great Unconquered

THE MOUNTAINS WAIT: by Theodore Broch.—Theodore Broch, at thirty-six, had been Mayor of Narvik for six years when Norway was invaded by the Nazis. As Mayor, he conducted negotiations with the Nazis in that sector. Twice under sentence of death, once for sabotage and once for collaboration with the British, he twice evaded the firing squad and ultimately found his way to Britain via Sweden and America.

This is undoubtedly one of the greatest stories of the "great unconquered." The critic of the New York Times ranks it even higher than John Steinbeck's The Moon is Down, which has a similar theme and background. Not merely, he says, because Broch is a real Norwegian Mayor and his Germans are real Germans, but also because The Mountains Wait is a breath of the real Norway, as real as Grieg's music and the Norwegians' simple greatness. Let us hope Norway's mountains will not have to wait much longer before they see the Norwegian home front, assisted by the Allied forces, victorious in the struggle for freedom and democracy and the moral values of civilised society.

GREECE AGAINST THE AXIS: by Stanley Casson.—This is yet another story of the "great unconquered" which describes the Greeks' astonishing defence of their country against the overwhelming strength of Italy. The tragic march of events which led to the overwhelming attack by the German army and air force on the exhausted Greek armies forms the climax of the story. The author, who was with the Military Mission attached to the Greek Army, brings out what has perhaps not yet been fully made clear to the public—the almost miraculous morale and powers of resistance of the Greek people.

## Two Books on France

FRANCE: by Pierre Mailland. - If from 1914 to 1918 France withstood the shock of German assault, why was she unable to do so in 1940? The author, a French intellectual now in England. attempts to answer this question in terms not of backstairs scandal but of three realities. The first is the French decline in population as against the German increase. The second is the cherishing of the peasant that has been French policy for generations past. For this, as D. W. Brogan says in his introduction, is a true iron age, and "to ignore the fact that a predominantly agricultural economy cannot wage war, even defensive war, is to live in a world of pastoral poetry." The third was the moral and intellectual "Hamletism" which ate into the vitals of French national life in the 'tween war periods, a period in which "the native hue of resolution" was "dangerously sicklied o'er with the pale cast of thought" in all fields, political, economic and even religious. Here is a grim warning to those Englishmen who, like the gloomy Dean, welcome the idea of a mainly agricultural England supporting a reduced population which is content to "cultivate its own garden" and let the world go by. The author maintains that if Western culture is to survive, France and England must be united. To be united they must understand one another. This little book, one of Oxford World To-day series, is dedicated to that end.

THE Two MARSHALS: by Philip Guedalla.—Perhaps the chief value of this brilliant study of Marshal Bazaine (born 1811) and Marshal Petain (still alive) is that, read alongside Maillaud's book, it shows that the three realities of the French debacle go back much further than one generation. One lays it down with a sort of despair and bewilderment—how can a nation be so great in some respects, so mean, short-sighted and vindictive in others? Against the epic story of the founding of the French Empire in North Africa is set Napoleon's miserable betrayal of Maximilian

in Mexico, the story of the film Juarez. Against the lifetime devotion of Achille Bazaine, rewarded in his old age by undeserved disgrace and obscurity to salve the national conscience over the humiliating defeat of 1870, is set the catastrophic "defensive mentality" of Petain, rewarded with the title "Saviour of the People." The Dreyfus affair is shown in its true setting. The analysis of these two long careers and their historical background forces one to the conclusion that if France is to regain her place in the world, something much more than unity with Britain is needed.

## The British Empire

The British Empire: by Eric A. Walker.—An account of the spirit and structure of the Empire from its very beginning, but concentrating chiefly on the period from 1914 onward. Because the men who built the Empire are of the same stock as the men who built the United States, the author carries the story down to December 7, 1941, the day on which the Republic which sprang from the old British Empire joined with the new to defend all that the English-speaking peoples have in common everywhere.

THE BRITISH PACIFIC ISLANDS (Oxford Pamphlet): by Sir Harry Luke.—Among the uncounted thousands of islands far out in the wide Pacific those under British jurisdiction have an area which is less than that of Scotland and a population of less than half a million. But many of them have become of vital importance in the war, and will retain their importance as links in the chain of air and sea communications after the war. Hence this pamphlet.

# Two Books on Iraq by Seton Lloyd

TWIN RIVERS: Down a vista of 6,000 years the author gives us glimpses of the dusty armies of famous conquerors, the rise of Islam, the devastation of Baghdad and the countryside by the Mongols and the long and painful struggle back to prosperity culminating in the attainment of independence in 1932. Despite its chequered history the author believes Iraq can look hopefully to the future.

IRAQ: This Oxford Pamphlet is more than a potted version of Twin Rivers. After a very brief historical introduction, the author analyses Iraq's present-day problems—social, industrial, educational—which in his view are similar to those which India faces. It is interesting to note that Iraqis are endeavouring to see their future in the light of that post-war planning on a world-scale, which is suggested by Mr. Churchill's phrase "Council of Asia."

#### The Indian Stalemate

THE INDIAN PROBLEM, 1833—1935: by R. Coupland.—This is the first part of a lengthy report on the constitutional problem in India submitted to the Warden and Fellows of Nuffield College, Oxford, of which Professor Coupland is himself a Fellow. "There is more in 'Mother India'," says the author in the introduction, "than mere sentiment or mere geography. Is there enough in it to keep her diverse and discordant children within the frame... of one free political society?" This is the core of the problem which is examined in the Report. From the tangled web emerges the clear thread of the British attitude and intentions. In the words of Sir Samuel Hoare—"It is clear we can only reach the end we



have set ourselves (Dominion Status) when India has succeeded in establishing the conditions upon which self-government rests. Our policy... is to do all that we can to enable India... to establish these conditions."

INDIAN INDEPENDENCE: by "Sutlej"—Let India divide itself up on 'natural' lines into independent sovereign states like those of South America. Let us then hope they will of their own accord form a Federal Union. This, in the author's opinion, is the only way to secure Indian independence. But will it secure "security" from civil war?

THE WAY OUT: by C. Rajagopalachari.—A bold plea by the Congress ex-Prime Minister of Madras for acceptance of the Cripps proposals. Non-cooperation, he says, may have helped to vindicate national self-respect, but it left constructive work to reactionary elements. Is this, he asks, to happen a third time?

THE ABORIGINALS: by Verrier Elwin.—What would happen to India's 25,000,000 aboriginals in a self-governing India? The great majority, says the author, are suffering from what he calls loss of nerve. In an illuminating survey he discusses what might be done to improve their lot.

THE EDUCATIONAL SYSTEM: a Symposium by India's leading teachers.—The chief impression left by this little pamphlet is that there is no system. The great need, it appears, is for a central coordinating authority, with power to implement its plans.

WAR-TIME PRICES: by P. J. Thomas.—Readers of this pamphlet will be happy to learn that the peak of prices in India has probably been reached. The author, however, recommends nationwide saving now, when goods are scarce and dear, in order that post-war development can be financed.

#### Post-War World

FAITH AND WORKS: by Lionel Curtis.—Belief in the essential rightness of the articles of the Atlantic Charter is faith; how can its leading words be turned into deeds? This is the question which Mr. Curtis sets out to answer. The answer is given in two propositions. First, force adequate to maintain peace and justice and prevent wars cannot be supplied by any one nation. Second, the force on which international justice rests must itself be international. This double theme is developed by the author with a combination of eloquence, practicality and historical illustration which make, between them, an argument of compelling force.

A Working Peace System: by David Mitrany.—This is an argument for what the author calls the "Functional Development of International Organisation," for what H. G. Wells has called "war-welded federalism." It is an argument which should appeal strongly to British pragmatism—the instinct to do whatever is necessary "on the spot," without long philosophical discussions of right or wrong and formal analyses of "fundamental" principles. That is the way the British Constitution slowly grew into being; and this is the only way, probably, in which the world Constitution can come into being. Peaceful change, says the author, will come not through change of frontiers but through action across them; equality will come not through solemn declarations of rights

and intentions but through a common share in international development. There is little hope of a formal surrender of national sovereignty, but there is hope of a "transfer of executive authority for specific ends." As an example, reference is made to the success of the Middle East Supply Centre, contrasted with the failure of constitutional federal attempts. "Organise the world not by what divides, but by what unites" is the essence of the appeal.

The Problem of Germany: Interim Report by a Chatham House Study Group of the Royal Institute of International Affairs.—No summary of a Report such as this can do justice to its argument. Briefly, it proceeds by analysing the two extreme hypotheses of total permanent domination over the whole of German life, and total co-operation with defeated Germany on a basis of equality. For reasons fully set out, both these extreme courses are rejected. A realist policy is sought, which will be both practicable and effective to prevent a renewal of German aggression. The main lesson which the Report draws from examining the history of disarmament after the last war is that technical difficulties in preventing Germany from re-arming are not insuperable; the real danger-point is a weakening of the Allied will to prevent it.

Lessons of Allied Co-operation: by Sir Frederick Maurice.—Written at the invitation of the Royal Institute of International Affairs, this book explains the difficulties which will have to be overcome if the effective naval, military and air co-operation of the peace-loving nations is to be secured after the war. The conclusions to be drawn from experiences of the last war are summarised, and the effect of the development of air power is examined. The author also argues that for the firm establishment of peace after this war a supreme directing Council armed with real power will be necessary.

# Oxford Pamphlets on Home Affairs

How Britain is Governed: by R. B. McCallum.—An account of the institutions and methods by which Great Britain is governed showing the development of royal and parliamentary government and how a constitutional system can be based on monarchy and at the same time be controlled by universal suffrage.

WILL THE WAR MAKE US POORER: by Michael Young and H. N. Bunbury—Strangely enough, no!—"The expenditure required to rebuild Britain to implement the Beveridge plan and to raise the standard and quality of living for the people of Britain, can be provided if our great human resources are properly utilised and co-ordinated with the resources of other nations." After the last war, apparently we made a dreadful mistake—we thought we had to cut down, reduce, save. When and how we have to spend to maintain prosperity is the subject-matter of this pamphlet.

THE TRANSITION FROM WAR TO PEACE: by A. C. Pigou.—What is going to happen when all the war machinery which has been built up goes into reverse? Will workers get back their old jobs? Will new workers get jobs? What are the dangers and how can they be avoided? These are the questions which are answered in this pamphlet.

Digitized by Google

## A VITAL POST-WAR PLAN FOR INDIA\*

By LIEUT.-COLONEL R. B. PHAYRE, M.C. (RETD.)

LEADING STATESMEN have stressed that it is obligatory that, besides winning the War, we must win the Peace. Revolutionary changes are bound to take place, and it will be a case of "get out or get under."

The time to start planning is now. When the war ends, there will be thousands of mechanised vehicles and trained drivers available for civil requirements. Motor transport cannot move without good roads, and there is thus the necessity for a comprehensive road Plan, the first essential of which is an increase in the main arterial roads, of which there are far too few in India.

Let us compare the requirements with the blood-streams of the human body. Main arteries become the main railway lines and trunk roads; veins are the branch lines and subsidiary roads; the capillaries are the smallest roads connecting the most distant outlying places. For practical purposes, a road system must not compete against the railway system, but should be complementary to it.

So much for the broad plan. Now peer through a telescope into the distance, focussing it on a remote village. Observe the local difficulties. You can barely see them for clouds of dust: the broken track obscuring the outlook of the inhabitants, who have known nothing better, nor wish to improve their communications.

What are the economic reasons for improving these communications? First, remember that trade has been a system of barter from Stone-age times. Goods are produced locally and bartered for merchandise received. Money may intervene, but it is merely a means to an end.

The villager requires to be taught what produce his area can grow; an accumulation of merchandise is quite useless without an adequate market and, consequently, communications are necessary to get such produce to the most conveniently-located distribution centres, whence it will find its way on to the main arteries for dispersion by rail, road, air, or water.

What are the cultural reasons for better communications? Communities which do not pull their weight are of little use to the State, so it becomes incumbent on the State to educate them to become better citizens. If they are inaccessible, education will penetrate slowly. Primitive people have little or no knowledge of the outside world. They learn best by demonstration and example, and as a result Government agricultural farms, widely scattered, are desirable.

<sup>\*</sup> Being a condensed version of one of the prize-winning essays in an All-India competition organised by the Indian Road and Transport-Development Association.



There are also political reasons. In democratic countries, one man's vote balances that of another. The vast majority of the population in India comes from the agriculturist who, largely, knows nothing about politics and cares less. He is, therefore, easily swayed by the breezes emanating from any convincing orator who has the energy to penetrate to remote villages. Sane and constructive propaganda is essential, and this can be circulated adequately only if communications are good.

In the sphere of hygiene, also, the development of roads is essential. India is particularly susceptible to epidemics; medical facilities, including advice regarding childbirth, and welfare in general, are lacking. Perhaps the most effective way of combating this ignorance is by the mobile cinema which, however, cannot get to the remote villages without easy inter-communication.

The present type of country roads must be changed. Arrangements must be made to provide roads for bullock-carts, plus the considerable influx which must be expected of former army mechanical vehicles for digging and making roads. The primitive tracks now are full of dust in dry seasons, and morasses in the monsoon; culverts and bridges are essential. To cater for this type of traffic, tarmac roads are, of course, the ideal, but metalled roads can and should be constructed locally. Metalled roads should, therefore, be the first objective, for stone is usually available nearby.

Upkeep of the roads may present some difficulty. It is little use building pacca roads if they are to be cut to pieces immediately. Upkeep will undoubtedly be an important item in expenditure, so that planning is necessary.

Why not, when rubber restrictions have disappeared, make a free issue of two rubber tyres free to each bullock-cart owner? Later replacements could be borne by the owner. The formidable outlay involved would be more than compensated by the reduction in road maintenance, let alone the increase in speed and efficiency during transit.

The present method of mixing fast and slow traffic is most unsatisfactory, the main objections being dust, delay and danger from frequent accidents. Fast traffic must be allowed the centre of the road, while slow traffic could use concrete or macadamised tracks on each side. In this connection we might follow the practice adopted in England and America, and employ police patrols who could point out mistakes to road users on the spot. These suggestions apply, of course, to main roads; subsidiary roads could be dealt with as and when time and finance permit.

Complementary to the trunk routes must be the connection of village roads to the arterial centres, and thus to the trunk system. The most economical way would be to link up a line of villages by one road, which would join a larger arterial road. A track probably already exists, so that each village would be responsible for metalling and improving its allotted sections, making it "weather-proof" by building a sound foundation, culverts, firm bottoms to ferries, etc. The prospect of enhanced prosperity would spur the villagers on to greater efforts.

Digitized by Google

That stage completed, the plan would then go on to provide roads connecting the villages laterally.

Yet another item in the plan should be the provision of refrigeration centres, for much of the merchandise carried may be perishable, and such centres would guarantee that when the produce reaches its destination it would be in good condition.

Those who have travelled over Northern India, for instance, will appreciate the effect such a plan would have on the economic life of villages. The district in which I served would certainly benefit greatly. It was probably typical of many other centres in Northern India, containing its main trunk railway with ancillary branch lines: main arterial roads, with uncontrolled traffic; large tracks of useless land, badly eroded; hilly and rocky country; some main rivers with tributaries liable to flood and impassable at the ferry points during heavy rains.

Main roads are, on the whole, kept in good repair, but there are several other motorable roads leading off from main industrial centres which, though paces up to a point, degenerate into deplosable chaos, never being repaired unless some "personage" says he intends to use them. Commerce, uplift and hygiene stagnate in the outlying centres as a result.

An enlightened road plan would remedy all these disadvantages. Experience in Europe and America has shown that commerce and prosperity in outlying localities follows quickly in the wake of good roads. Backward villagers are at first inclined to view reforms as the malignant repression of a vindictive Government, but with patient explanation, demonstration and guidance they could be led to understand that good roads mean private prosperity. Once they grasp this fact—and it may take time—their whole-hearted co-operation will be forthcoming.

Vast sums of money will have to be expended to make such a huge scheme a success. It will be far beyond the scope of revenue and may perhaps be solved by a borrowing programme of considerable magnitude. Much of the burden for financing road upkeep has fallen on motorists, and little on the owners of bullock carts, the wheels of which cause far more damage than the rubber tyres of the motors.

There are a variety of ways in which money can be raised for the upkeep of roads, but there are objections to most of them. The system which may prove most successful is that of taxing vehicles which use the roads.

Roads are the bloodstream of the country. On them will depend in large measure the prosperity of hundreds of thousands of producers, and on their prosperity will depend the "uplift" of backward villagers.

#### LETTERS TO THE EDITOR

#### A USEFUL HINT

To The Editor of the U.S.I. Journal

DEAR SIR,

During some recent operations in hill country an Officer Commanding a platoon of men trained in jungle warfare observed that, after making rapid descents from high to low altitudes, the men were apt to create far more noise than they did ordinarily.

On one occasion, after such a descent had been made, he noticed that he was suffering from deafness. He cleared this in the usual way, by filling the passages of the head with air whilst holding the nose. He then halted his men, and ordered them to do likewise, after which the noise caused by the men ceased.

Probably many of your members in returning to the plains from a hill station have noticed that when they have reached the foothills, they have a tendency to speak louder because of their own deafness, and because this little point may prove serious in jungle warfare I venture to bring it to the notice of your readers.

Yours faithfully,

Delhi.

J. C. POULTON.

#### **BASIC ENGLISH**

To The Editor of the U.S.I. Journal

DEAR SIR,

I have read with great interest the correspondence in the Journal about Basic English. The idea of teaching Basic English to Indian troops is very commendable, but I am not sure it would

·be a practical success.

Why is it necessary to teach Basic English to Indian troops? The answer may be twofold: (1) to enable British Officers who are new to the Indian Army, to communicate with I.O.Rs., and (2) to enable British troops, if they can understand and reply in Basic English, to work with Indian troops and to communicate with them.

As to (1) it seems rather odd that a company of illiterate Indian troops should be taught Basic English for the benefit of one educated and intelligent British Officer; more success would obviously be attained the other way round. As to (2) no one can deny the value of Indian troops being able to speak Basic English, provided the British unit would reciprocate in Basic English.

What are the factors working against this scheme? First, the rapid Indianisation of the I.A. which has been going on during the war will eventually lead to a position where junior leaders will

Digitized by Google

mostly be Indians; these young officers will speak English fluently, and will form a link between the higher command and the I.O.Rs. Secondly, from personal experience I can vouch that teaching Basic English to village recruits will be extremely difficult. Teaching them to read and write Urdu gives a headache to lots of officers who are responsible for the education of I.O.Rs.

If it is proved that Basic English can easily be taught to I.O.Rs. up to such a standard that there is very little chance of their making grave mistakes in understanding orders, then steps should also be taken to teach Basic English to British Officers and British O.Rs. concurrently. I am sure teaching Basic English to I.O.Rs. will not solve the difficulty unless both sides speak Basic English. For instance, an order: "Climb that tree" will mean nothing to a Basic-English-speaking person. He has been taught: "Go up that tree." The word "climb" does not exist in his vocabulary.

Sialkot

Yours faithfully, PRITAM SINGH, Major.

#### TRAINING CENTRE FOR COLONIAL ADMINISTRATORS

To The Editor of the U.S.I. Journal

DEAR SIR,

Some time ago you referred in "Matters of Moment" to the openings which may exist after the war in the Colonial Civil Service, and in the Colonies generally, for young ex-officers who have served in the East. There is, however, another aspect of that subject which concerns those who have served in the Forces in any capacity and in any country.

Recruitment for the Colonial Administrative Service has probably ceased since 1939, and large numbers of potential candidates for a Colonial Government career are doubtless serving their country's forces at home or overseas. How many aspirants to the I.C.S. or the Colonial Administrative Service are at present serving in the Army in India one cannot say; undoubtedly there must be many.

In the same way that Canada has become the centre of a gigantic air training scheme, India, or at least the Punjab, might become the centre of a civil administration training scheme. Radical differences in language, law, customs and climate exist, but a man who had had the benefit of such training even if for only one year, would be eminently more fitted to take his place in, say, the Kenya administration, than an officer straight from the field of pure military experience.

Before the war candidates had to undergo one-year university courses. How much more beneficial if candidates attended practical courses on local administration, economic conditions, etc., in a purely village environment!

Such a course of training in civil administration would have to be designed and organised on the most careful lines by men of experience, judgment and vision. Amongst its wide range of subjects the following might reasonably be expected to predominate:

1. Agricultural development.

2. Planning of educational curricula.

g. Organisation of Youth, with especial emphasis on Boy Scouts and village clubs.

4. Medical training in advanced first aid.

5. The study of elementary geology and climatic conditions.

Law and language would have to be omitted as being peculiar to the country, but all the above mentioned subjects have a general bearing on Africa as well as India, and in certain instances would be of pertinent importance.

Agricultural development depends on soil conditions, availability of scientific tools, training in agricultural methods, willingness and ability of the village to co-operate and a multitude of other social and economic questions. From this welter of cause and effect the trainee could glean an inestimable wealth of knowledge and experience.

The inclusion of education may be criticised as impossible on the ground of "radical difference in local conditions." It might be true to say that the Swahili and Punjabi are diametrically opposed to each other, mentally and racially.

Difference in race may be insurmountable, but difference in standards of intelligence and cultural progress vary by degrees, and opposite civilisations can be reconciled at varying stages in their development. In any case, education would not be concerned with the written word of the book but more with the social education of the individual as a co-operative member of his village. How to live in mental harmony and physical comfort with one's fellow beings is the primary hallmark of an educated man, and it matters nothing if pure book learning has been denied him.

Youth is probably the most important of the five principal factors, for on youth one must build for the future, and careful sowing will always reap a bumper crop. No finer inspiration can be found than the principles underlying the Boy Scout oath and motto; simple in thought, honest in appeal, they must stir the heart and sentiments of every right-thinking boy and girl. Well presented, properly encouraged, this movement always reaps its finest harvest on virgin soil and stands out as the obvious cornerstone in any youth movement.

Elementary medical knowledge should be the common property of every man, varying only in degree according to the places he will visit. Lacking the ability to maintain his own health or administer to his fellow creatures, a touring officer can never hope

for success in any of his responsibilities.

Finally, the study of geology and climatic conditions should form an integral part of the course. This cannot be left to chance interests and treated as a hobby; the officer who is posted to a district, and proceeds on tour, must be fully acquainted with the peculiar climatic conditions pertaining to that district. Upon his knowledge of the seasons, and their physical effect upon man and soil, may depend many of his major decisions and certainly most



of his routine reports. Climatic emergencies will undoubtedly arise and lead to social and economic dangers; forewarned is forearmed and prompt action, based on instinctive knowledge, has averted many a disaster.

Such, then, would be the course of training. It must be remembered that these major headings cover a host of other subjects, all very important in themselves. Rural uplift, man management, welfare education, horsemanship, trekking, climbing, the study of birds, animals and snakes, physical hygiene, even law and languages, perhaps. It is doubtful whether any place is better situated for such a purpose than the Punjab with its adjoining Hill States, which merge into the Himalayas, its diversity of season and its endless scope for all interests.

Lahore.

Yours faithfully, M. H. LAWRENCE,

Captain.

### SOME SUGGESTIONS WANTED

To The Editor of the U.S.I. Journal

DEAR SIR,

Correspondence has recently appeared in a Home Service Journal on the subject of the employment of officers after retirement. They have dealt primarily with finding employment within the framework of the post-war army for officers who become too old for active Regimental Service.

But what of those who will not be able to wait for the introduction of any such scheme, and who will be pensioned on the conclusion of hostilities?

Many officers must be in a position similar to my own. I had expected to retire as a Lieutenant-Colonel at the age of 45, when I consider I should have had at least twenty years of potentially useful life in front of me. The situation is now different, in that I am likely to be 50—and still a Lieutenant-Colonel—when I retire, but the necessity for, and aims of, employment will be the same, even if the prospects are poorer.

The objects of seeking employment are, in my opinion:

- (1) The preservation of connubial bliss. No woman wants a man about the house in the morning.
- (2) The preservation of life. The unemployed soldier goes to seed very quickly, and "pension life" is notoriously short.
- (3) Negative financial benefit. Keeping out of mischief might be a better explanation. If a man has no employment he will be playing golf, touring in his car or looking for sympathetic friends; none of these pastimes make for thrift.
- 4. Positive financial benefit, or the actual earning of money to help pay school bills or to indulge in selfish or unselfish activities.

Before this war I discussed the problem with a number of my Army friends. Some were purely lethargic, and said how lovely it would be to sit back and make daisy chains; others were optimistic and said they "were sure to find something to do," probably secretary of a golf club.

I am neither so lethargic nor so optimistic. I felt there must be some way in which one could prepare oneself before retirement, even if only to the extent of getting more concrete ideas. So I asked the advice of some of my friends in civil life. While some spoke honestly and said, in effect: "What use can a retired Colonel be put to?" (especially an Indian Army Colonel!), others overdid their kindness by suggesting that I should qualify as a Chartered Accountant. Here, again, I was not going to sit down as a willing fossil, nor did I flatter myself that at my age I could pass examinations which young men with nimble brains of 20 spend years failing to pass.

Unless it is contended that a pensioner's only remaining service to the State is to die quickly and cease to be a liability, then the fact remains that he has a number of years before him in which he ought to contribute something to society. The problem remains: What can he contribute? A good seat on a horse and a clean police record are no equipment for a start in civil life. Is there no way in which he can equip himself, just enough to show that he is interested and keen enough to be tried out in some humble occupation?

Possibly some of your members can offer suggestions?

Yours faithfully, "HOPEFUL FIFTY."

Bombay.

[An article entitled "Your Country Needs You" in our April, 1943 issue answers many of the points raised in our correspondent's letter. Suggestions from other readers will be welcomed.—Ed., U.S.I. Journal.]

### PROPAGANDA IN GERMANY

To The Editor of the U.S.I. Journal

DEAR SIR,

"Procrustes," in his article on Propaganda published in your April number, evidently regards Crewe House as a pioneer in the subject.

So far as British propaganda in Germany is concerned it is worth noting that, as Hitler correctly recorded in *Mein Kampf*, it began to be effective in 1915, while Crewe House did not come on the scene until February, 1918. Up to then the Press Section of the General Staff at the War Office, under my direction, was responsible for propaganda in Germany, with, I believe, success.

London.

Yours truly,
GEORGE COCKERILL,
Brigadier-General.



# SOME MILITARY BOOKS WANTED

To The Editor of the U.S.I. Journal

DEAR SIR.

Some time ago I organised two training corps, one in Kala Bhavan and one in Baroda, in both of which cadets have parades four evenings a week, while on Saturdays they hear talks on military subjects. Their interest in military matters has increased

enormously.

To further this work I recently started a collection of books on military subjects, and they have evoked much interest among the cadets. Major-General R. Dening, Commanding the Peshawar District, has been kind enough to let me have some of his collection, and I am wondering whether other members of your institution would be generous enough to send me any books on military subjects which they do not require. If so, they could certainly feel that they would be well used, and would assist in expanding knowledge among cadets who do want to learn.

Yours truly,

Shivaji Road.

G. M. JADHAV,

Baroda.

# WOMEN IN BATTLE DRESS

To The Editor of the U.S.I. Journal

DEAR SIR.

Having yesterday returned from a brief tour overseas, including a short period in England. I want to write to you about the reference in the October issue concerning women's war work in India. Women's work at home is really so little appreciated in this country that I am sure many of the fair sex here will be interested to read something of the fine work they are doing. my tour I met WRENS, ATS and WAAFS in all parts of the overseas commands visited, often living in Spartan conditionsdoctors, nurses, administrative workers.

But it is in England that you get the best conception of the mighty work our women are doing in this War. There are women in the Forces, married and single. The key industries are full of women doing a man's job at a man's pace. Married women without children must do part-time work in industry, and there are a hundred-and-one war-time civil organisations run by women alone. Porters, engine-greasers, bus conductresses—to travel in a crowded rush-hour bus in the "black-out" and see these girls on the job is to evoke the strongest admiration for their cheerfulness and efficiency.

And yet I am convinced that the real unsung heroines of this war are to be found in thousands who are carrying on with the unromantic business of bringing up families in war-time, among which so many of us overseas are proud to have our wives.

There are no servants for the average housewife to-day. only assistance she can count on is the daily "help," generally an old body between 50 and 70. This dear old thing is a key-worker to her. For one hour or so a day, or a morning each week, she

"helps" with the chores, providing of course that she hasn't got her "rheumatics" or one of the numerous complaints common to the aged.

The housewife is asked to "Grow more Food." She must be gardener as well, for the gardener is a rare species, a variety of which is the "handyman," These are seldom seen, and should be approached with guile and cunning to capture them for an hour or two to help with the heavy work. But they also are old and feeble.

"Come and get it" is the cry when she does her shopping. Petrol and rubber must be saved, so the housewife must wait her turn in understaffed shops, and wend her weary way homewards with a load of shopping in a bus packed with war-workers. Private cars are unknown to shoppers, and they are exhorted to travel between 10 and 4.

And then there are the children, to whom she is both Mother and Father—to whom we hope soon to present a new and better world. They take time and an infinity of patience. There are no nursemaids, only perhaps the little girl next door who takes the children out for an hour after school.

In spite of a stern Board of Trade and strict rationing, the babes still produce the same number of nappies for the daily wash (no servant for this, mark you), small boys still wear large holes in their trousers, still get incredibly dirty, and still eat like young colts (thanks to Lord Woolton).

And add to this war-time housekeeping the hundred-and-one voluntary war-time activities in which she somehow finds time to participate—the Savings Group, the Salvage Committee, the Red Cross Committee, Village Institute, ad inf.—to say nothing of the firewatching and those long letters to be written to us.

I might add that for a mere male I speak with some experience. In other words, I've had some. Ours is a family of two small boys. No one in the Services worth his mettle to-day, officer or man, goes on leave in England without becoming proficient in dishwashing and many other household jobs. And there are many who, to give their wives a rest, can tackle the whole procedure from A to Z.

These then are our wives. Leave is unknown to them—they can't go sick, for there's no one to replace them. They don't ask for a write-up— they don't "strike" for higher wages—they don't ask for a ribbon or a medal. They know that on them rests the happiness of our men, the morale of the Home Front, and the future of our race. That is enough for them. Some women in India (those who are pulling their weight will forgive me) might well emulate them.

Simla.

Yours faithfully,
A. H. B. INGLEBY,
Major.

Printed by E. G. Tilt (Manager) at
The Civil & Military Gazette, Ltd., 48 The Mall, Lahore,
and edited and published by Major H. C. Druett for the
United Service Institution of India, Simla.

All Rights Reserved.

### A SERVICE PATTERN Officers' Popular

# "RAINCOAT"

That will keep out Wind, Cold an 1
Water.

Have you one in your Kit?

Military Regulation Service Pattern Officers' Khaki Waterproof "Trench-Coat" (roomy and comfy and extremely serviceable and lighter in weight than Greatcoat).

Made from thoroughly Dustproof.
Windproof and Waterproof, double texture fine Rubberised Cloth of Regulation Khaki Colour.



Price Rs. 45 each

FRONT: Double breasted style, cut with a curve to Military shape with broad lapels. Open and Broad Military Storm Collar to stand and fall with Tab to button to throat. Armpits with ventilation eyelets.

Note.—With order please state size round CHEST and WAIST taken over jacket and your full height or length of coat required.

# BADGES OF RANK

(For wear on shoulder straps of above Trench-Coat)

STARS Bronze (Waterproof) .. .. @ Rs. 2-0 per pair. CROWNS Bronze (Waterproof) .. .. @ Rs. 2-4 per pair.

(Raincoats for Lady Officers also supplied)

Please address your orders to:

# YOUSAF & CO.

(Late of Holdings, Oxford Circus, London, 1914-18)

MILITARY & POLICE TAILORS.
LUDHIANA, (PUNJAB)

Note.—Where V.-P. P. system is not available, please send remittance with order plus postage.

Branch at: Juliundur Cantonment, B. I. Bazar Telegraphic Address: "MAYFAIR." Ludhiana.





JAMES CARLTON...LTD...LONDON,..ENGLAND. EASTERN LIGENGEES. P.O.BOX 9029 CALGUTTA



Sp Appointment

To The Late King George V

# RANKEN & Co., Ltd.

CALCUTTA, SIMLA, DELHI, LAHORE, RAWALPINDI & MURREE

**ESTABLISHED IN CALCUTTA 1770** 

# CIVIL & MILITARY TAILORS GENTLEMEN'S OUTFITTERS AND BREECHES MAKERS

ESTIMATES SUPPLIED FOR
FULL-DRESS AND MESS DRESS
UNIFORMS OF ALL REGIMENTS

Sy Appointment to

His Excellency General Sir Robert A. Cassels, G.C.B., C.S.I., D.S.O., Former Commander-in-Chief in India.

# The Finest Investment of the War

Everyone with foresight is saving money today, even if only a little at a time. But once money has been saved, it is natural to want to invest it, and here the unwary should be warned that gold, silver, jewellery, house-property, and manufactured goods are investments to avoid. Prices are tending downwards. If you buy at today's prices for investment purposes you may lose heavily in the near future, and will certainly suffer loss after the war.

Without any doubt, the soundest place to put savings today is in National Savings Certificates which cost only Rs. 10/- each to buy, but will be worth a guaranteed Rs. 15/- each at the end of 12 years. These certificates are free of Income Tax and each investor can hold up to a maximum of Rs. 5,000/-. The value of National Savings Certificates cannot depreciate. Further, National Savings Certificates can be encashed at any time after the first three years.

**Put Your Savings into** 

# National Savings Certificates

AND KNOW YOUR MONEY IS SAFE

# START TODAY!

National Savings Certificates can be bought at any Post Office which has a Savings Bank.

# UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION OF INDIA

# Patron: H. E. The Viceroy

Council.—The Chief of the General Staff (President); Deputy A. O. Commanding Air Forces in India (Vice-President); Plag Officer Commanding Royal Indian Navy; Secretary, Defence Department; Secretary, External Affairs Department; Lieut-General Sir Clarence Bird, K.C.I.E., C.B., D.S.O.; Lieut.-General T. J. Hutton, C.B., M.C.; Major-General D. A. L. Wade, O.B.E., M.C.; Commander H. E. Felser Paine, R.I.N.; Group Captain the Earl of Bandan, D.S.O., R.A.F.; P. Mason, Esq., O.B.E., I.C.S.; Lieut.-General H. H. the Maharaja of Jammu and Kashmir, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., K.C.V.O.; Air Commodore H. H. the Nawab of Bhopal, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., C.V.O., LL.D.; Air-Commodore H. H. Maharaja Bahadur of Jodhpur, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., K.C.V.O.; Colonel H. H. the Maharaja Jam Saheb of Nawanagar, G.C.I.E., K.C.S.I.; Major H. H. the Maharaja of Patiala, G.B.E.; Captain H. H. the Raja of Faridkot, K.C.S.I.

Membership of the United Service Institution of India is open to all officers of the Services, and to gazetted officers of the Government of India or of a Provincial Government.

Members receive the quarterly Journal of the Institution post-free to any part of the world. Other facilities include the use of the reading-room of the Institution in Simla, and of the extensive library maintained in its headquarters; books borrowed by officers serving in India are sent to them post-free, members paying the return postage.

During the War the entrance fee has been waived, new members being required to pay only the annual subscription of Rs. 10.

Government institutions, military libraries, officers' training schools, messes and clubs wishing to subscribe to the Journal may do so on payment of Rs. 10 per copy per annum.

Contributions on subjects of military interest are invited. payment being made for articles published in the Journal.

For the convenience of potential members, an enrolment form will be found overleaf.

# Books of Topical Interest

# WINGATE'S PHANTOM ARMY

By W. G. Burchett Daily Express War Correspondent Rs. 9-12

MYSTERIES OF THAILAND

By Leigh Williams
Rs. 9-12

WHAT PRICE NEW ORDER

By N. J. Nanporia

Rs. 4-4

THE JAPANESE PARADOX

By N. J. Nanporia

Rs. 3-12

JAPAN'S BLACK RECORD By N. J. Nanporia Re. 1-8

LIGHTS & SHADOWS OVER FRANCE

By Louis Revel

Rs. 2-8

INDIA SHOULD KNOW TURKEY

By Seymour Cole
Rs. 7-8

THE WAR HOW & WHEN IT
WILL END
By N. B. Vakeel
Rs. 3-12

PUBLISHED BY

THACKER & Co. Ltd.

Available Everywhere

# BARR & STROUD BINOCULARS



Type C.F. 5.  $(6\times24 \text{ mm.})$ 

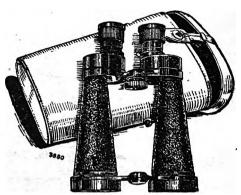


Type C.F. 10. (6×30.5 mm.)

& STROUD LTD. REGRET THAT THEY BAKE & STRUUD LID. KEUSET PRIVATE ORDERS
UNABLE MEANWHILE TO ACCEPT PRIVATE



Type C.F. 24. (8×30.5 mm.)



Type C.F. 30. (7×50 mm.)

BARR & STROUD, LTD.,

ANNIESLAND, GLAEGOW, W.2-and 15 VICTORIA STREET, LONDON, S.W. 1.

Telegrams :-

Codes :-

Telegrams :-

Telemeter" Glasgow

5th and 6th Editions, A.B.C.

"Retemelet Sowest" London

# THE JOURNAL

OF THE

# UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION

**OF** 

# **INDIA**

## PRINCIPAL CONTENTS

Post-war Indian Army	 Major-General F. M. Moore.
The U.S. Military Academy	 
The Girls They Left Behind Them	 Enid Scott.
Nepal Interlude	 H. R. K. Gibbs.
Elephants in Burma	 Major F. D. Edmeades.
A Visit to Portuguese Daman	 Major John L. Christian.
Education and Leadership in India	 Colonel D. Portway.
A T.A. Nursing Sister in Assam	 Sister M. MacLennau.
What's in an Indian Name?	 LieutCol. F. R. Gifford.
Review of Frontier Policy	 LieutCol. F. C. Simpson.

(A. complete list of Contents appears on page xvii)

Rs. 2-8-0

# Banking by Post



If you are unable to call personally at any of the Branches of Lloyds Bank, Managers will be pleased to explain the Bank's facilities or answer any enquiries by post, if you will write to them.

Every kind of Banking Business transacted.

CURRENT ACCOUNTS opened, INTEREST ALLOWED on terms

which may be ascertained on application. FIXED DEPOSITS received at INTEREST.

SAVINGS BANK ACCOUNTS allow WITHDRAWALS by CHEQUE.

STERLING and FOREIGN CURRENCY DRAFTS sold and direct REMITTANCES made

TELEGRAPHIC TRANSFERS effected through Banks in ALL COUNTRIES

WORLD LETTERS OF CREDIT supplied FREE OF TRAVELLERS CHEQUES

BANK OF ENGLAND NOTES

SALARIES, PAY & PENSIONS collected.

PERIODICAL PAYMENTS & SUBSCRIPTIONS effected. by REGISTERED POST.

STOCKS & SHARES purchased and sold, and held in SAFE CUSTODY

EXPERT OPINION on INVESTMENTS obtained from Brokers. DIVIDENDS & INTEREST collected. ADVANCES allowed against Approved SECURITY.

# Lloyds Bank Limited

(Incorporated in England.)

# Branches in India:

BOMBAY (2 Offices), CALCUTTA (2 Offices), DARJEELING, KARACHI. DELHI. NEW DELHI, SIMLA, LAHORE. RANGOON EVACUATION BRANCH (Lahore), AMRITSAR. PESHAWAR, (Cantt. & City), RAWALPINDI, MURREE. SRINAGAR. GULMARG.

# UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION OF INDIA The Secretary, United Service Institution of India, SIMLA. Date..... Dear Sir. Please enrol me as a member (or Life Member) of the United Service Institution of India. Yours faithfully. Name..... (In block caps.) Rank and Unit ..... Permanent Address ..... Present Address ..... BANKERS' ORDER FORM (Bankers), at ..... On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla, for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 10 (ten). being my annual subscription for 19 and the sum of Rs. 10 on every succeeding January 1 until further notice. Date. ..... Signature. ..... To Messrs ...... (Bankers), at ..... On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla, for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 150 (one hundred and fifty), being Life Membership subscription of the Institution. Signature..... To The Secretary, United Service Institution of India, SIMLA. Dear Sir, Please enrol me as member (or Life Member) of the United Service Institution of India. Yours faithfully, Name..... (In block caps.) Rank and Unit..... Permanent Address..... Present Address..... BANKERS' ORDER FORM (Bankers), at ..... On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla, for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 10 (ten), being my annual subscription for 19 and the sum of Rs. 10 on every succeeding January 1 until further notice. Date. ..... Signature ..... To Messrs. ..... (Bankers), at ..... On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla, for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 150 (one hundred and fifty), being Life Membership subscription of the

Digitized by Google

Institution.

Date. ..... Signature. .....

## UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION OF INDIA

The headquarters building of the United Service Institution of India in Simla is open daily, including Sundays, from 9 a.m. to sunset. It contains a reading room, in which is available a wide range of illustrated periodicals, newspapers, magazines, etc., as well as a number of Service journals. A well-stocked library is also open to members, who may borrow volumes without charge, while members stationed elsewhere may obtain books on loan post-free.

Members also receive, post-free, each of the quarterly issues

of the Journal of the Institution.

#### Rules of Membership

1. All officers of the Defence Services, whether they belong to the Imperial Forces, to forces raised by the Government of India, by an Indian State, by a British Dominion or Colony, and all gazetted officials of the Government of India or of a Provincial Government shall be entitled to become members, without ballot, on payment of the entrance fee and subscription.

Other gentlemen may become members if proposed and seconded by a member of the Institution and approved by the Council. They will be entitled to all the privileges of membership, excepting voting.

2. Life members of the Institution shall be admitted on payment

of a lump sum of Rs. 160, which sum includes entrance fee.

3. Ordinary members of the Institution shall be admitted on payment of an entrance fee\* (see para. 4) of Rs. 10 on joining, and an annual subscription of Rs. 10 (or 15s.) to be paid in advance.

The period of subscription commences on January 1.

An ex-member on rejoining the Institution will be charged a second entrance fee of Rs. 10 if since the date on which he ceased to be a member he has served or resided in India. In other cases no charge will be made.

4. British Service, Dominion and Colonial officers serving in

... India shall pay an entrance feet of Rs. 7 only.

5. Members receive the Journal of the Institution post free to any part of the world. Members in India may obtain books from the library; they are issued postage free, the borrower paying the return postage.

6. Government institutions and offices, military libraries, messes and clubs wishing to subscribe for the Journal shall pay Rs. 10 per arnum. Non-members shall pay Rs. 10 per annum plus postage Single copies of the Journal will be supplied to non-members at

Rs. 2-8-0 per copy, plus postage.

7. If a member fails to pay his subscription for any year (commencing 1st January) by 1st June of that year, a registered notice shall be sent to him by the Secretary inviting his attention to If the subscription is not paid by 1st January following. the fact. his name shall be struck off the roll of members and, if the Executive Committee so decide, posted in the hall of the Institution for six months, or until the subscription is paid-

8. An ordinary member wishing to resign at any time during a year in which one or more Journals have been sent to him must pay his subscription in full for that year and notify his wish to resign

before his name can be struck off the list of members.

9. Members who join the Institution on or after the 1st October and pay the entrance fee and annual subscription on joining will not be charged a further subscription on the following 1st January, unless

the Journals for the current year have been supplied.

10. Members are responsible that they keep the Secretary carefully posted in regard to changes of rank and address. Duplicate copies of the Journal will not be supplied free to members when the original has been posted to a member's last known address and has not been returned through the post.

11. All communications should be addressed to the Secretary. United Service Institution of India, Simla.

<sup>•</sup> For the duration of the war, the entrance fee has been waived.

# V SERVICE FOR SERVICES V

We are giving below our brief list of Officers' equipments with latest prices for the convenience of our patrons.

Kh. Barathea Peaked Cap soft or stiff or stiff . Rs. 16.

(All officers' Caps supplied)

Kh. Barathea Side Cap Rs. 15

Khaki or Black "BERET" Cap Rs. 15

Shoulder Titles, Gilt or Bronzed Rs. 2 p.p.

Shoulder Titles, Cloth "SLIP-ON"

Rs. 1|8|- p.p.

1939—43 Star or N. Africa or Any other Medal Ribbons Rs. 1|8|- p.ft.

Cap Badge Gilded and Bronzed

Rs. 4. Gorget Embd. Oakleaf Gold Rs. 15 p. p. patches or Green Silk Lace Rs. 10 p. p. Gorget patches ... Collar Badges Bronzed or Gild-. Rs. 6 p. p. Leather Thong Buttons E/made Rs. 5 p. set.

BUTTONS Gilded or Bronzed of All Descriptions Rs. 7-3 p. set. CROWN Gilded or Bronzed Rs. 2-4 p. p.

Do. Kh. Worsted Rs. 1-4 p. p. STAR Gilt-enamelled or Bronzed Rs. 2-4 p. p.

Do. Kh. Worsted Rs. 1-4 p. p. PITH Helmet Khaki ... Rs. 7-8 HELMET Flash Ribbon in your Colour ... Rs. 1-8 p. ft. WHISTLE & Lanyard Rs. 2-8. Revolver LIANYARD ... Rs. 2-8. Sam Browne Belt complete Rs. 25. Ribbon Bars with Safety-pin mounted with one Ribbon -[8]-. p. Bar.

Kh. Woollen STOCKINGS.

Rs. 7 p. p.
Kh. Woollen Socks Rs. 4-4 p. p.
Kh. Woollen HOSETOPS Rs. 3-8.
Kh. Mercerised Stockings Rs. 5

buckles and runner in every deptl. & regtl. colour 4", 5" and 6" wide ... Rs. 4, 5 and 6 respectively.

(Special Clubs, Messes and Regtl, made to order.) Servants' Silver-plated Badge

for Pugree ... Rs. 2-8.
A to Z initial ... Rs. 1-8.
MILY. BRUSH CASES, E made

(Garstin & Co., Ltd.)
Fitted with Two Natural Ebony
Hair Brushes, Real Bristle and
Comb, hide case to resemble
Ebony.

Size 55"×23"×2" Rs. 48
Size 5"×23"×2" Rs. 40

COLLAR BOXES, E made. Real Hide, Long strap over lid, lined imitation pigskin.

Size 7½ diameter Rs. 15. Size. Rs. 12.

TROUSER-PRESSES, E made.

Made in polished Oak grained wood, nickled fittings and detachable stretcher, size 26"×12½"

Rs. 35.

## GOLF BAGS

Nut-brown rowhide, lined drill, outside pocket, strong leather sling, blocked bottom. Rs. 25. White Washable GLOVES E/made . Rs. 30 p. doz. Gold and Silver Kullahs and Loongies in any design (made to order.)

Xmas Cards, crested, bound with your colour with envelopes, per dozen . Rs. 4-8. Silk ribbon in your colour for Invitation Christmas Cards, per yard . Re. 0-8-0.

Peaked Cap Blue complete Rs. 26. Side Cap complete Rs. 15. Silk Rank Braids, Blue or Khaki, 1", 1" and 21" wide Rs. 1|-, 1|4, and 6|- per yard.

ALL OTHER ARTICLES STOCKED
BY

# K. MAHMOOD SHAH'S

MILITARY, B. A. F. & POLICE Contractors and Outfitters LUDHIANA (Pb.)

Digitized by Google

# THACKERS RECENT PUBLICATIONS

# THE SONG OF BERNADETTE

More than a hundred thousand copies sold! Few novels pose a problem of more fascinating human complexity than this story of an enlightened civilisation suddenly faced by the inexplicable. Rs. 9-12

#### FOR WHOM THE BELL TOLLS

FOR WHOM THE BELL TOWN

Ernest Hemingway

One million people bought it. Five million people read it. The greatest love story of all Rs. 9-12

#### INDIAN INTERLUDE Erio Bescroft

The author has created a number of delightful personalities, he succeeds in conveying to the reader a true atmosphere.

R3. 6-14 reader a true atmosphere.

## MOTIVE FOR MURDER

Florence Kilpatrick
Clyde Moncrieff has to make a dash for England to escape from being involved in a murder he witnessed in an opium-den in Rio. His further adventures make an absorbing detective story.

# D DAY John Gunther

Mr. Gunther is well known for his "Inside Europe" and other books of a similar type. "D' Day" is recommended as one of the best books of the week by the "London Times Literary Re. 7-14

#### WITH THE 14TH ARMY

D. F. Karaka
This latest book by Mr. Karaka is an outstanding feat of close observation and accurate recording. Recent developments on this front make "With the 14th Army" a book of particular interest just now.

#### WINGATE'S PHANTOM ARMY

W. G. Burchett
"More thrilling than any fictitious thriller."

#### Rs. 9-12

## PACIFIC TREASURE ISLAND

The book tells of New Caledonia, the Pacific Treasure Island—the Malta of the South Seas. Of the author it is said "Burchett has become a force to be reckoned with. His writings have become popular among the peoples rightly become po South East Asia." Rs. 9-12

# THE WORLD THAT WORKS

This is a book about the end of a world that did not work and news of a world we're all looking for—a world that works. Rs. 5

#### THE LIVING AND THE DEAD

THE LIVING AND Beverley Nichols
A book that has caused much bitterness and
A book that has caused much bitterness and
Rs. 2-12 much more constructive criticism.

INDIA IN FABLE, VERSE AND STORY

L. H. Nihlett

Here is a feast of good reading: stories ancient and modern-weird, bizarre, elevating, humourous, and serious—illustrating diverse aspects of Indian life.

Rs. 4-8

#### **JOURNALISM**

C. L. R. Sastri

A rare find and a real acquisition to Indian construct

Rs. 11-8 humour. journalism.

#### TRY ANYTHING ONCE Frank Clune

"A record of true vagabondage, amazing in the variety of its icidents, and told with a naive candour, which leaves the reader rather breath-Re. C.

# ONIONS AND OPINIONS N. G. Jog

These little essays are a sheer delight. Rs. 6-12

#### PEOPLE OF ROMBAY Percival & Olivia Strip

This book describes the origin, history, religion, commercial activities inherent traits, etc., of the Parsees, the Kholas, the Banyas, the Bohras and other communities of Bombay. Rs. 8-12

# SUNLIT WATERS Capt. C. W. W. S. Conway

This book gives an extremely practical exposi-tion of the methods and advantages of fishing with light tackle—and brings fishing history in India up-to-date. Ra. 12-S

#### MY STORY Sheelagh O'Flynn

A Baby's Record Book and Photograph Album combined.

# KNITTED ZOO Anna Politzer & Thora Stowell

What is more fascinating than making your own toys at home? Here is a book of complete instructions for knitting toys, with details about materials and making up, and expert guidance throughout. Rs. 6-8

# THE GALLANT WAY Frank Taylor

A collection of twenty-three spirited poems extrolling the best in the British martial tradition.

# THE TRIAL OF MUSSOLINI "CASSUS"

Did you read "Guilty Men"?if so (or if not) read "The Trial of Mussolini" by "Cassius." The first four editions total 100,000 copies. Rs. 2-14

# I MADE MY OWN DOLLS Thora Stowell

The patterns given in this book have all been made over and over again and have stood the test of being sold in competition with professional models and all have sold very well. Rs. 6-14

#### LENINGRAD Alexander Werth

Out of the beleaguered city—the starved, bombed and shelled city—he brought a story that no reader will very easily forget.

Rs. 8-14

# WHAT TO DO WITH GERMANY Louis Nizer

His book is a triumph of brief, lucid statement, sane argument and imaginative planning, facing all the major issues and omitting no essentials.

# STRANGE ISLAND Molley Kaye

This is a thriller in the classical tradition of Edgar Wallace and Agatha Christie, brilinantly constructed and told with many flasnes of snes of

# THACKERS PUBLISHERS, **BOMBAY**

# BURMAH-SHELL

have pleasure in announcing
THE 5th ALL-INDIA



# **EXHIBITION**

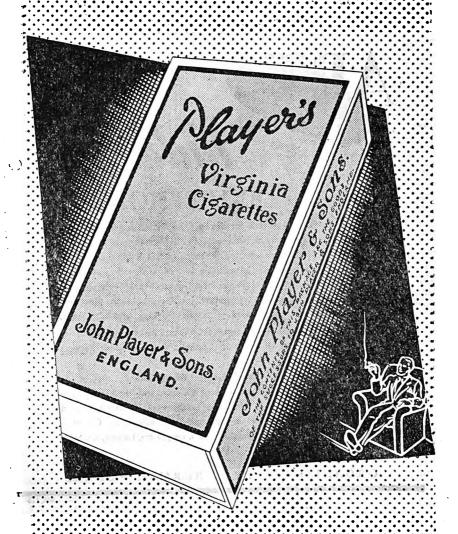
The prospectus for the 1945 Exhibition is now ready and copies may be obtained from all Burmah-Shell offices and leading art schools. The scope of this Exhibition is wider than ever and in addition to sections devoted to all types of commercial art, the following are included—commercial photography, typography, interior decoration, film scenarios, window displays, textile designing, and handicrafts. The prize fund exceeds Rs. 25,000/- and many sections are open to all artists at present in India including Services pressonnel.



The Exhibition will be held during January 1945 at the Sir J. J. School of Art, Bombay, and the closing date for entries is November 20th, 1944, in Bombay, and November 1st in Burmah-Shell offices at Calcutta, Madras, Secunderabad, Lucknow, Delhi, Lahore, Karachi.

ORGANISED BY () BURMAH - SHELL

BSK 115



JOHN PLAYER & SONS, ENGLAND

# OFFICERS' UNIFORM



# BATTLE DRESS

Made from best quality English Khaki Serge. All details correct according to Regulations. Blouse and Trousers Rs. 100.



# KHAKI BARATHEA

Service Dress Jacket and Trousers Rs. 200. Buttons and Badges extra.

# KHAKI OFFICERS GREAT COAT

Made from best English Treblemilled and waterproofed Melton. Correct in all details Rs. 175. Buttons and Badges extra.

Patterns and self measurement form on request.

ARMY & NAVY STORES LTD.

Telegrams : "Armistice "

**BOMBAY** 

Telephone: 2500

# WARTIME \* SELOortho \* SELO F. P. \* SELOchrome \* SELO H. P. 3.

A great number of discriminating photographers all over India find that, although SELO films are less plentiful than in peacetime, they are well worth searching for—because of their quality. We would only add this: When you have bought them, use them sparingly!

# MARCHING ON STILL!

ILFORD-SELO (INDIA) LTD. Bombay - Madras - Labore - Calcutto



					Re.	
Khaki Barathea Service Peak Cap	and Badge			••	20	0
Khaki Barathea Field Cap and Ba		ide Ca	p)	••	15	0
Blue Barathea Field Cap and Bad		ide Ca	p)	••	20	0
Green, Black or Khaki "Beret"		••		••	15	0
R.A.F. Blue Barathea Peak Cap at	nd Badge	••		••	25	0
R.A.F. Blue Barathea Field Cap as	nd Badge	(Side	Cap)	)	18	0
Collar Badges, Bronze for Khaki Ja	acket		pair	••	6	0
Cap Badges, Bronze for Khaki Cap		е	<b>c</b> h	••	4	0
Buttons, Gilt or Bronze for Khaki	Jacket	a	set	••	7	8
Buttons, Gilt for Patrol Jacket	• •	••	**	••	7	8
Buttons, Gilt for Greatcoat	••	••	,,	••	9	0
Shoulder Titles, Gilt or Bronze	••	a	pair	• •	2	0
Shoulder Titles, Cloth slip-on	••	• •	,,	••	1	8
Stars (Pips), Gilt-enamelled	•••	••		••	2	4
Crowns, Gilt with Red Velvet		••	**	• •	2	8
Stars or Crowns, Bronze or Black	••	• •		••	. 2	0
Stars or Crowns, worsted on Khak	l Cloth	• •	,,	••	`1	8
Khaki Cellular Bush Shirts		• •	,,	••	10	8
Khaki Drill Shorts Rs. 6-8 a pair, E	haki Drill	Slacks		••	15	0
Khaki Woollen Stockings		• •		••	6	0
Khaki Ankie Putties, Fox's Patent	t	••	••	••	9	0
Khaki Woollen Hosetops			**	••	8	8
Field Haversacks, leather bottom	••	e	ich		10	0
Field Waterbottles Rs. 10 each. S.		••			25	0
Whistle and Khaki Lanyard Rs. 2-	8. Revolv	er La	nvard	ı	2	8
1939-43 Star or N. Africa Star or at						
		8	foot	••	1	8
Bars mounted with any ribbon		es	ich		0	6
Officer's Greatcoat	••			••	275	0
Khaki Raincoat					45	O

# Servants' Waist & Pugree Bands, Badges, Silk Ties and Sports Squares

(Stocked in your Regulation approved colours and designs.)

# Servants' Waist & Pugree Bands & Pugree Badges

(Your Servants will look neat and smart when wearing Bands and Badges.)
Waist & Pugree Bands in your Corps, Regiment or Departmental
colours fitted with electro nickel-plated buckle and runner
adjustable to any size waist
Servants' Pugree Badges, electro silver-plated of your Corps,
Regiment or Departmental design
at Rs. 4/- each

#### WIDE-END TIES

Wide-End superior Cord Silk Ties, well made with reinforced neck bands, with diagonal stripes in your Regulation colours at Rs. 5/- each

#### **MUFFLERS**

Mufflers 36 inches square made of superior cord silk striped in your Regulation colours . . . at Rs. 15/- each

#### **BLAZER POCKET BADGES**

Pocket Badges with your crest worked in Gold or Silver embroidery on blue or your own material ... at Rs. 8/- each Pocket Badges, with your crest embroidered in white or any coloured silk, on blue or your own material ... at Rs. 4/- each

#### CRESTED STATIONERY & XMAS CARDS

80 best quality Letter Papers & Envelopes to match, embossed
with your Depttl. Crest in any colour ... at Rs. 5/8
Xmas Cards, embossed with your Corps Crest and tied with
ribbon in your Corps colours, in Envelopes ... at Rs. 5-4 per dozen.
Silk Ribbon in your colours for Invitation & Wedding Cards As. 8 per yard.

# YOUSAF & CO. MILITARY & POLICE TAILORS, LUDHIANA (Punjab)

(Branch at: Juliundur Cantonment, B. I. Bazar)
Where V.-P.P. system is not available please send with order
cost of goods plus postage.

# SAY TO MYSELF ..







. It's truly a de luxe Cigarette OBTAINABLE EVERYWHERE IN MAGNUMS OR STANDARD



JAMES CARLTON LTD., LONDON, ENGLAND. EASTERN LICENCEES.
P.O. BOX 470 CALCUTTA
Digitized by Google

### United Service Institution of India

### PATRON:

His Excellency the Viceroy and Governor-General in India. VICE-PATRONS:

H. E. The Governor of Madras.

H. E. The Governor of Bombay.

H. E. The Governor of Bengal.

H. E. The C.-in-C. in India.

H. E. The Governor, United Prov.

H. E. The Governor of the Puniab.

H. E. The Governor of Bihar.

H. E. The Governor of Assam.

H. E. The Governor, N.W.F.P.

H. E. The Governor of Sind.

H. E. The Governor of Orissa.

The G.O. C.-in-C., Northern Army.

The G.O. C.-in-C., Southern Army.

The G.O. C.-in-C., Eastern Army.

H. E. The Governor, Central Prov. | The G.O. C.-in-C. Central Comd.

### MEMBERS OF THE COUNCIL, 1944-45

### Ex-officio Members:

The Chief of the General Staff (President). The A.O.C., Air Forces in India (Vice-President). The Flag Officer Commanding Royal Indian Navy. The Secretary, Defence Department.
The Secretary, External Affairs Department.

### **Elected Members:**

Lieut.-Gen. Sir Clarence Bird, Major-General R. A. Savory, C.B., K.C.I.E., C.B., D.S.O.

Lieut -Gen. Sir Thomas Hutton, K.C.I.E., C.B., M.C. Major-General D. A. L. Wade,

O.B.E., M.C.

Major-Gen. H. V. Lewis, C.B., C.I.E., D.S.O., M.C.

D.S.O., M.C.

Commander H. E. Felser Paine. R.I.N.

P. Mason, Esq., O.B.E., I.C.S.

Group-Captain E. L. Tomkinson. D.S.O., A.F.C., R.A.F.

#### Honorary Members:

Lieut.-Gen. H. H. the Maharaja of Jammu & Kashmir, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., K.C.V.O.

Air-Comm. H. H. the Nawab of Bhopal, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., C.V.O. Air Comm. H. H. Maharaja Bahadur of Jodhpur, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., K.C.V.O.

·Colonel H. H. the Maharaja Jam Saheb of Nawanagar, G.C.I.E., K.C.S.I.

Major H. H. the Maharaja of

Patiala, G.B.E. Major H. H. the Raja of Faridkot, K.C.S.I.

Lieut.-Gen. R. A. Wheeler, U. S. Army.

Major-Gen. George E. Stratemeyer. U. S. Army.

Major-Gen. Dan I. Sultan, U. S. Army.

Major-Gen. W. E. R. Covell, U. S. Army.

Giffard. General Sir George G.C.B., D.S.O.

Air Chief Marshal Sir Richard

Peirse, K.C.B., D.S.O., A.F.C.

Admiral Sir James Somerville, K.C.B., K.B.E., D.S.O. Lieut.-Gen. Sir Henry Pownall,

K.B.E., C.B., D.S.O., M.C. Air Marshal Sir Guy Garred, K.C.B., C.B., D.S.O., M.C.

### MEMBERS OF THE EXECUTIVE COMMITTEE, 1944-45

President: Major-General D.A.L. Wade, O.B.E., M.C. Members: Lieut.-General Sir Clarence Bird, K.C.I.E., C.B., D.S.O. Lieut.-General Sir Thomas Hutton, K.C.I.E., C.B., M.C. Commander H. E. Felser Paine, R.I.N. P. Mason, Esq., O.B.E., I.C.S.

Secretary and Editor: Major H. C. Druett. Bankers: Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla.

Digitized by Google



Yet, this is exactly what happens every time you make an unnecessary purchase. The prices of most things are abnormally high and you lose money every time you buy something you do not really need. Be wise. Do not buy unless you must. Wartime prices are bad value for money.

You risk your money if you buy jewels, land, buildings, commodities or manufactured goods. Their prices are subject to fluctuations and make no mistake, the trend of prices is now downward and not upward.

These investments are both safe and profitable:

- \* Insurance,
- \* Co-operative Societies,
- \* Savings Bank,
- \* Post-Office Savings Bank.
- # Government Loans and
- National Savings Certificates.

The returns on a sufe investment may be smaller, but the capital is <u>secure</u> - and that is what counts during wartime.

# SOVG ALL YOU CAN AND INVEST ALL YOU SAVE

A NATIONAL APPEAL BY THE NATIONAL WAR FROME

44-48

### NOTES BY THE SECRETARY

### The Institution

Many members have been good enough to express their pleasure at the news that the Institution now has a record membership, and the Secretary and editor has been grateful for the comments and suggestions sent to him.

Although it is gratifying to know that more and more officers have joined the Institution, it would be helpful if those members in Messes which do not subscribe to the Journal would persuade the President of their Mess Committee to add this Journal to the periodicals available in the Mess. Thus our reader-circle would be greatly increased, useful information contained in articles would reach more officers, and the influence which the Journal can exert would be correspondingly widened.

The editor would like to add that he would much welcome any suggestions or criticisms which members would like to send.

### New Members

The following new members have been elected during the last quarter:

Adam Khan, Major, Archdale, Major A., Baker, H. C., Esq., I.C.S., Barber, Captain L.B., Beck, Captain R. P., Bodeker, Captain F. W. T., M.B.E.. Cargin, Lieut. D. J., \*Chick, Captain D. G., Curry, Major J. M. K., Donald, Lt.-Col. A. A., O.B.E., Eadie, Major V., \*Emerson, Major P. J., Fulton, Major W. W. E., Goode, Sr. Comdr. V., Gregory, Major J. C., Grier, Major P. A., Griffin, Captain P. S. D., Griffiths, Captain D. F. M., Groves, Lieut. T. K., Gupta, Major M. N., Hadow, Major K. C., Harrison, Colonel T. V.,

Hawkins, Sub.-Lieut. T. P., Hilliard, Lt.-Col. P. J., Howson, Major J. M., Hoyle, Captain D. E. D., Htin Si, L., Esq., Hudson, Major E. R. B., \*Jarvis, Major C. E., Jenkins, Captain R. F., Johnson, Major B. K., Kunzru, The Hon'ble Pundit Hirday Nath., Lake, Captain R. A., Lishman, 2/Lieut. C. H., McGusty, Major H. M., P., Esq., C.I.E., Marsden, I.C.S., Mose, S. H., Esq., North, Lieut. R. G., Page, Lieut. E. D., \*Philpots-Green, Major G., Piggott, Major F. J. C., Reeve, Captain W. T., Rhind, D., Esq., I.A.S.,

Rhodes, Major B. B.,
Santokh Singh Padda, Capt.,
Sheldon, Lieut. Gordon W.,
Steedman, Brigadier J. F. D.,
M.B.E., M.C.,
Thomas, Air Vice Marshal
M., C.B.E., D.F.C., A.F.C.,

Thomason, Jr. Comdr. D. M., Vaughan, Major J. H. V., \*Watt, Major J. H. S., White, Wing Comdr. R. G. J., Wilson, Major W. T., Yates, Major A. D.,

In addition, some forty-five Officers' Messes and one Club have become subscriber members of the Journal of the Institution during the last quarter.

### **Gold Medal Essay Competition**

Lieutenant-Colonel J. F. R. Forman, 19th Hyderabad Regiment, has been selected as the winner of the 1943-44 Competition. The Judges have not felt able to award the Gold Medal on this occasion, but have recommended a cash award, which has been sent to the winner.

For the 1944-45 Competition entries must reach the Secretary by June 30, 1945. The subject selected is:

"During the present war there have been certain limiting factors to the expansion of the Armed forces of India as regards personnel, equipment and armaments. Consider in relation to any one, or all three Services, in what manner they could in future best meet their peace-time commitments within the probable limitations of post-war finance, and at the same time form a sounder basis for expansion if the need should occur."

Full details of the rules governing the competition will be found elsewhere in this issue.

### Honours

Members of the Institution will have learned with pleasure of the conferment of the following honours on members of the Institution for gallant and distinguished conduct in the field:

K.C.B.—Lieutenant-General W. J. Slim, C.B., C.B.E., D.S,O., M.C.

Bar to D.S.O.—Brigadier W. A. L. James, D.S.O., Commanding an Indian Infantry Brigade.

D.S.O.—Lieutenant-Colonel N. Eustace, 4th Gurkha Rifles; Lieutenant-Colonel B. C. H. Gerty, 9th Jat Regiment; Brigadier S. Greeves, O.B.E., M.C., Commanding an Indian Infantry Brigade; Lieutenant-Colonel Sarjabit Singh Kalha, 1st Punjab Regiment; Lieutenant-Colonel W. H. B. Oldham, 4th Gurkha Rifles; Lieutenant-Colonel G. S. N. Richardson, 2nd Gurkha Rifles; Brigadier M. R. Roberts, Indian Army; Lieutenant-Colonel C. M. H. Wingfield, M.V.O., 1st Gurkha Rifles.

Bar to M.C.—Captain B. G. Hickey, M.C., Royal Gurkha Rifles.

M.C.—Major A. F. E. Mercer.

### MacGregor Memorial Medal

The MacGregor Memorial Medal was founded in 1888 as a memorial to the late Major-General Sir Charles MacGregor, who founded the United Service Institution of India. It is awarded for the best military reconnaissance or journey of exploration of the year, which, during the war, may have been achieved during an escape from a Far Eastern enemy country into, for instance, India.

The awards are made in June, and are: (a) For officers, British or Indian, silver medal, and (b) for soldiers, British or Indian, a silver medal with Rs. 100 as gratuity. For especially valuable work, a gold medal may be awarded in place of one of the silver medals, whenever the administrators of the Fund deem it desirable. The Council may also award a special additional silver medal, without gratuity, to a soldier, for specially good work.

The award of the medals is made by His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief, India, as Vice-Patron, and the Council of the United Service Institution of India, who were appointed administrators of the Fund by the MacGregor Memorial Committee.

Eligibility for the award is open to: (a) Officers and other ranks of all forces of the British Commonwealth of Nations while serving with the India Establishment, or with South East Asia Command during the present War. (b) Officers and other ranks of the Royal Indian Navy, Indian Army, Indian Air Force and of the Indian States Forces, wherever serving. (The term "Indian Army" includes the Indian Auxiliary and Territorial Forces, Frontier Milita, Levies, Military Police and Military Corps under local governments.)

Personal risk to life during the reconnaissance or exploration is not a necessary qualification for the award of the medal: but, in the event of two journeys being of equal value, the man who has incurred the greater risk will be considered to have the greater claim to the award.

When the work of the year has either not been of sufficient value or notice of it has been received too late for consideration before the Council Meeting, the medal may be awarded for any reconnaissance during previous years considered by His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief in India to deserve it.

The medal may be worn in uniform by Indian soldiers on ceremonial parades, suspended round the neck by the ribbon issued with the medal. Replacements of the ribbon may be obtained on payment from the Secretary, United Service Institution of India. Simla.

### Contributions to the Journal

Articles on matters of military, naval and air force interest are welcomed. They should not exceed 5,000 words in length, and preferably should run to 3,000 words. Contributions should be typerwitten, double spacing, and in view of the paper shortage, may be typed on both sides, providing a moderately thick paper is used.

Contributors unable to submit articles already typed may send them in manuscript form, and arrangements will be made for them to be typed in Simla, the small charge being deducted from the contributor's fee. Payment is made on publication, at rates up to Rs. 150 according to the value of the contribution.

All articles dealing with military subjects are submitted to the authorities before publication, for securty reasons. Contributions may, if the author desires, appear under a pseudonym; in such cases, the name of the author remains strictly confidential. The right to omit or amend any part of an article is reserved by the Executive Committee.

### Library

An extensive library is available for members of the Institution at the headquarters in Simla. Books may be loaned to members resident in India, and those borrowing works in person must enter particulars in the book provided. Members stationed outside Simla may receive books on application; they will be sent post-free by registered parcel post, and must be returned within two months, or immediately on recall. No more than three volumes may be issued at any one time. Reference books and works marked "Confidential" may not be removed from the library.

Members wishing to retain a work for more than two months should notify the Secretary to that effect. If, after the expiration of three weeks from the date of issue a book is wanted by another member, it will be recalled. Should a book not be returned within fourteen days of the date of recall, it must be paid for, the cost of lost or defaced books being refunded by the member to whom they were issued. Such volumes which have become out of print will be valued by the Executive Committee, the member being required to pay the cost so fixed.

The issue of a book to any member under the above rules implies the latter's agreement with the regulations.

A catalogue of books in the library may be obtained on payment of Rs. 2/8 per copy, plus 13 annas postage.

Correspondence is invited for inclusion in the Journal on subjects referred to in articles, or which are of interest to members of the Services in India. Letters should be as brief as possible, and should be sent to the Editor, United Service Institution of India Journal, Simla.

# The Iournal

### of the

# Anited Service Institution of India

### CONTENTS

Pa	age
Notes by the Secretary	xiii
Matters of Moment	389
The Post-War Indian Army, by Major-General F. M.	
Moore	397
West Point: The U.S. Military Academy, by Colonel	
W. K. Wilson, Junr	405
Down on the Farm, by "Rasp"	412
The Girls They Left Behind Them, by Enid Scott	418
Things People Say	424
Nepal Interlude, by H. R. K. Gibbs	428
How Simla Welcomes B.O.Rs. on Leave, by Major	
R. B. Latheron	435
Elephants in Burma, by Major F. D. Edmeades	438
A Visit to Portuguese Daman, by Major John L.	
Christian	448
Education and Leadership in India, by Colonel D.	
Portway	<b>4</b> 53
A T.A. Nursing Sister in Assam, by Sister M. MacLennan	459
The Tiddim Track, by LieutColonel G. W. Towers	462
"What's in an Indian Name?", by LieutColonel F. R. Gifford	468
War Within War! by LieutColonel W. F. P. Sutton	477
Can Waziristan be Made More Productive? by	
"Experimentia Docet"	481
Review of Frontier Policy, by LieutColonel F. C.	
Simpson	484
The Colonel's Ghost of Sirur, by "Hyderabad"	495
The West African's English, by Major F. C. Carnell	499
Evacuation, by "Matlow"	506
Military Bridges for Post-War Reconstruction, by	
Captain W. T. Reeve	513
Letters to the Editor	517

### GOLD MEDAL PRIZE ESSAY COMPETITION

The Council has selected the following subject for the Gold Medal Prize Essay Competition for 1945:

"During the present war there have been certain limiting factors to the expansion of the Armed forces of India as regards personnel, equipment and armaments. Comider in relation to any one, or all three Services, in what manner they could in future best meet their peace-time commitments within the probable limitations of pest-war finance, and at the same time form a sounder basis for expansion if the need should occur."

Entries are invited from all commissioned officers of His Majesty's Forces, from gazetted officers of the Civil Administration in India, and from officers of the Indian States Forces.

Essays, which should be typewritten (double spacing) and submitted in triplicate, must be received by the Secretary, United Service Institution of India, Simla, on or before June 30, 1945. In order that the anonymity of each candidate should be preserved, a motto should be written at the top of each entry. A sealed envelope, bearing on the outside the motto, and containing inside the name and address of the author of the essay, must accompany each entry.

Entries should not exceed fifteen pages (approx. 8,000 words) of the size and style of the Journal. Should any authority be quoted in the essay, the title of the work referred to should be given.

Three judges chosen by the Council will adjudicate. They may recommend a money award not exceeding Rs. 500, either in addition to, or in substitution of, the Gold Medal, and will submit their decision to the Council. The name of the successful candidate will be published in the October, 1945 issue of the Journal.

Copyright of all essays submitted will be reserved by the Council of the United Service Institution of India. y

3,

d

y



H. E. GENERAL SIR CLAUDE J. E. AUCHINLECK,
G.C.I E., C.B., C.S.I., D.S.O., O.B.E., A.J.C.,
COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF, INDIA

Reproduction of the official portrait by
Lieutenant-Colonel Simon Elwes, 10th Royal Hussurs
Digitized by

### The Journal

of the

## Anited Service Institution of India

Vol. LXXIV

OCTOBER, 1944

No. 317

The views expressed in this Journal are in no sense official, and the opinions of contributors in their published articles are not necessarily those of the Council of the Institution.

### MATTERS OF MOMENT

N EVERY battle front German and Japanese armies are recoiling. Their men are being killed or taken prisoner by the hundred thousand; their equipment problem must be grave; and wherever they turn defeat stares them in the Outnumbered and outclassed, both face. Outnumbered countries face military those and -in Europe by the bombing of German Outclassed factories: in Burma by a grand exhibition of military science; and in the Far East by the bombing of the home bases in Japan and the "stepping stone" strategy which is gradually cutting communications and setting the From the moment the Allies stage for the final assault. broke through in Normandy and provided themselves with elbow room, the German Army was soundly defeated, and never again will its spokesmen be able to repeat their parrot-cry of "invincibility". Their satellites, seeing the red light at last, are falling out, and gradually Germany is being squeezed by a ring of brave men.

Japan, too, must have learned with surprise of the extent to which preparations have gone ahead in the Far East,

Patient
Planning
Succeeds

for the fact that a British fleet is ready and capable of engaging the Japanese Navy in general action is an achievement which would have seemed incredible less than three years ago, as would have been forecasts of the recapture of so many Japanese bases in the Pacific. Nearer India

the powerful British Imperial Army operating in Burma has also shown the Jap what defeat means. All these fine achievements are the results of long and patient planning by America, Russia and the British Commonwealth, and those results are a fine omen, for they may well pave the way for a lasting peace. War is the most destructive agency that ever afflicts the earth, but if the same strong ties which bind together these three great communities can remain unbroken during the peace, if the same vision and foresight as has been exhibited in planning the defeat of our enemies can be applied to the post-war world, then we shall, in the not distant future, hear and march to the drum-beats of a new destiny.

World. And deservedly so, for apart from operating on a front as long as the Russian front, it has protected India,

guarded the bases from which American

The 'planes keep China supplied, has given the "Famous Japs their biggest defeat in this war, Fourteenth." slaughtered between 50,000 and 60,000 of them, and has been the source of new and valuable additions to the science of warfare. Here is, indeed, a truly Imperial Army, including a substantial proportion of United Kingdom troops, East and West Africans, and some of the most famous Indian divisions from the Middle East. Especial pleasure will be felt by the Indian Army at the K.C.B. conferred on Lieutenant-General W. J. Slim, who was appointed Commander of the 14th Army just twelve months ago, and who possesses in a high degree that indefinable quality of leaderchip. General Slim commanded a brigade of the 5th Indian Division on the outbreak of war, was wounded in Eritrea by machine gun fire from an Italian plane, later commanded an Indian division in Iraq during the rebellion, and later still commanded a Corps in Burma under General Alexander. Lieut.-General A. F. B. Christison, Lieut.-General G. A. P. Scoones, and Lieutenant-General M. G. N. Stopford, on each of whom the K.B.E. has been conferred, were all actively concerned with the major defeat inflicted on the Japs a short while ago, and, in the words of the official citation, all revealed high leadership and great skill. Other awards for bravery in the campaign show the fine spirit of courage and devotion to duty of its soldiers. Clearly, the 14th Army is

Digitized by Google

becoming as famous as the 8th Army. Its exploits, dash, battle fitness and victories single it out as one of the outstanding Armies of this war. No longer will it be the "Forgotten Fourteenth". Henceforth it will be the "Famous Fourteenth".

IN ITS desire to commemorate the gallantry and devotion of its soldiers, India has an unparalleled opportunity of laying the foundations of a grand future, and an opportunity of ensuring that, should it again have to draw the sword, it will be ready to do so with alacrity.

War On this occasion, as distinct from the indi-Memorials vidual efforts of units at the end of the last

war, we need, to use a somewhat undignified but meaningful expression, to "think big". If India does that there is no limit to the good a realistic war memorial scheme can do. Shields, gongs, memorial tablets, towers may give place to education for soldiers' daughters, to expansion of the admirable Boys' Companies and Military schools, and to the establishment of training colleges for officers of a big scale. From the first category would spring thousands of girls and young women mentally equipped to bring up their children to a healthy standard of life. They may not be closely associated with the Army, but with "snowball effect" the blessings of an Army education scheme for girls would spread far and wide throughout the land. No one who reads the article in this issue entitled "The Girls They Left Behind Them" can doubt the essential need for the education of women in India and, by showing a lead, the Army, which has saved India from the horrors of war, will light the torch of happiness for hundreds of thousands of the country's womenfolk.

In the second category—the education of India's future soldiers—the excellent example set by the Mahratta Regimental scheme of the last war might well be followed on a national basis. It is not Future possible to refer here to the scheme in descheme were taken when they had reached the age of ten and had passed the IV standard; they were housed and fed at the Regimental Hostel, given normal education, and every day were taught Urdu, English, elementary drill and P.T.;

they were under the charge of a pensioned V.C.O., and at the age of 12 proceeded to the K.G.R.I.M. School at Ajmer. Admirable as this scheme is, the cost is a burden on regimental funds. At the end of this war, however, it might well be thought that, as India's soldiers have come from far and wide, from out-of-the-way villages and from the larger cities, it is fitting that the organisation of such a scheme should be on a national basis.

Finally, we come to the training of the officer class. In the Indianised Indian Army of the future the Indian Officers

Training of Officers

will be its backbone; they have a high standard to attain in replacing the British Officer, and, in order that they should receive the best possible training, an examina-

tion of methods of other countries might well pay a high dividend. For instance, the article in this issue describing the methods of America's famous Military Academy at West Point reflects the importance America attaches to the training of the officer. Russia, which has built up such a powerful Army and achieved such magnificent successes, can be the source of much fruitful knowledge in this regard; our Dominions have a lot to teach; and, last but not least, Britain has evolved new methods in this War which will be of great value. India's fine officer training establishments, which have over years done such fine work, will not take this suggestion amiss; their achievements in the training of young officers are so well known that they need no emphasis here.

Critics may suggest that the cost of so vast a scheme will be too heavy. Measured in terms of money it can be but a modest premium to ensure a really progres-The Sudan's sive and peaceful India, for one result of Gift of the three schemes enumerated above will £100.000 be a profound influence on millions of people—and, be it remembered, particularly on the descendants of those who made the supreme sacrifice that their successors might live. The Sudan Government, as a token of its gratitude to the Indian Army, made a gift of £100,000 when V.C.O.'s, I.N.C.O.'s and Sepoys fought-and fought successfully—to save that country from invasion. That gift would be a substantial basis on which an Indian War Memorial scheme could be launched. Doubtless it has been

set aside for some such purpose, and everyone will agree that it could not be put to better use. That sum was the measure of the Sudan's thankfulness to the Army which saved it from the horrors of war. India, too, has been saved from bloodshed and invasion, and will wish to show its gratitude. We feel sure that our Commander-in-Chief, who has never failed to praise the gallantry and devotion to duty of Indian soldiers, will help to the utmost in ensuring that Indian soldiers, sailors and airmen who have given their lives will be commemorated in a fashion which will guide their country along that road which leads to prosperity and happiness.

\*\* \*\* \*\*

S TUDENTS of German history will not have been surprised at Mr. Eden's recent revelation that German leaders are planning for World War No. 3. "The world cannot be conquered in one War" wrote General Stuelpnagel in Febru-

ary, 1942. He added: "With the war Germany treasure we have accumulated and the **Plans** World War human lives we have annihilated, the destruction of neighbouring industries and what we can save of our own, we shall be in a better position to win the war 25 years from now than we were in 1939. Our enemies already admit that the 1920 motto-'Germany will pay' no longer has any meaning. We will furnish them with a few battalions of workers: we will return a few works of art that have not been sold, and some out-of-date machinery. And we can always say that the confiscated goods they demand were destroyed by bombs. We must immediately prepare special camouflaged records of the loot destroyed by British and American bombers. We must not hesitate, when organising a campaign of pity, to obtain food and supplies from our enemies for as long as possible." All of which shows that the Hun is already running true to form.

Even more enlightening were the comments in the journal of the Schwartze Corps of October 14, 1943. It said:

German could not prevent our speedy recovery, for we must be the only nation in Europe capable of assisting in reconstruction and in restoring prosperity. In 1923, after our brilliantly organised bankruptcy, the Anglo-Saxons were faced with our debt problem; either Europe will be reconstructed, or eternal confusion will ensue, leading to the permanent ruin of the

Continent. Thus our sole and immediate aim must be to counterbalance the destruction of our cities by the scorched earth policy in occupied territories. We must destroy more than can be destroyed in Germany. The longer the war lasts, the greater will be the devastation and the greater our demographic and economic margin of superiority". These statements are valuable straws in the wind. They are included in "Matters of Moment" because they are a warning to the "Be Kind to our Enemies" category. By widespread pillage, starvation of populations of countries on their borders, and by the use of hidden reserves in neutral banks, Germany will try to prepare for the next war. The only safeguard is vigilance. With vigilance as our watchword, statements such as that of Mr. Eden will not, like those of our Premier in 1935, go unheeded.

R ISING from vast purifying upheavals, Russia has astonished the world, and has set people discussing the part she will play in the post-war world. It is a subject on which we citizen soldiers may well ponder—not with doubts or

Russia After The War fears, but realistically facing facts. How has Russia achieved her successes? The answer is threefold: first, her people are vigorous, unspoilt by luxury, used to suffer-

ing, and as hard as nails; secondly, her vast raw material resources were handled with singleness of purpose (ruthlessly, it is true) by her Government; and, thirdly, her people were welded together with a fanatical hatred for the Germans -so deep that it must have surprised even that hated nation. Those are indisputable facts. Before the War we lacked first-hand knowledge of the country, but since 1939, as with other countries, we have resolved some of our doubts about Russia and its people. An English paper published in Moscow, and here in India a widely read paper dealing solely with Russia, are helping to create that confidence which breeds friendship. Moreover, Marshal Stalin's generous tribute to the Normandy landing is in itself proof that the confidence is there. His words are worth repeating: "In the whole history of war there has not been seen any great undertaking so broad in conception, so grandiose in scale, and so masterly in execution". Such words augur well for the future. This friendship forged in war must continue. Let us interpret Russia by listening to the voice of Tolstoy in "War and Peace".

T IS curious how the "invasion" beaches of France were selected by a group of 48 French Deputies in 1894. This fact came to light recently when, delving **Fifty** into old records for a "Fifty Years Ago" Years feature, we found that in 1894 a group of Ago French Deputies, being apprehensive of an invasion by Britain, urged the strengthening of the defence position on the Contentin Peninsula. They pointed out that, by landings on certain beaches, Cherbourg could be taken from the rear, and that, once that occurred, "an enemy would make the Contentin a base for ravaging operations in Normandy and the Ile de France, thence threatening the Capital and placing the French army engaged with an enemy on the east in a very critical situation". More remarkable was the fact that these Deputies (including some high naval and military officers) went so far as to suggest that Britain could land an expeditionary force of 60,000 men of all arms, with 5,000 horses and about 240 guns. "Convoys of transport would send torpedo gunboats scouting inshore, and these, making a feint of landing men, would draw the defenders from their shelters. Their whereabouts being obvious, the landing would be effected under fire of the fleet." Although in their selection of the invasion venue the Deputies showed remarkable foresight, they proved wrong in one respect. They suggested that Germany would send a force to aid How different were the circum-Britain in its invasion. stances when Britain did invade!

\*\* \*\* \*\*

PROBLEMS WHICH will face a post-war India in relation to its Army are discussed by a contributor in this issue. They may well provoke discussion. They are certainly deserving of deep thought, and further articles will appear on the general subject. Defence matters will naturally loom large in India's new Constitution, for despite sincere declarations of a desire to live at peace with the world, it will be essential to maintain a strong Defence Force, whose offensive element should be limited only in so far as it relates to defence of the country. Hitherto, the threat to India has been from the North-West; the future will demand defence

at all vulnerable points by land, sea, and air. Whereas the primary thought has in the past been on the Army, the future will require equal attention to the three Services, land, sea and air. Up to now India has chiefly looked to the

United Kingdom for her supplies of tanks, guns, vehicles and other items of heavy and light equipment for its Armed Forces. War, however, has proved her capable of developing her own heavy industries, and the needs of her Defence Services will provide an outlet for her iron and steel works. In short, India will have to provide for herself, and to build up industries which will enable her, if she so wishes, to help other parts of the British Commonwealth in time of trouble. Thus, industrial development must march hand in hand with Defence demands.

Has the use of military force in the suppression of internal disorder tended to make service in the Army unpopular?

The Army and Internal Security

Whether it has or not, the view is held by some that after the war the Defence Services should be completely divorced from the maintenance of law and order. It has been done successfully and to a considerable degree in Central Africa. In the educational field, policy will certainly have to be more closely linked with the requirements of the Services. Youth must be well grounded in discipline, loyalty and military knowledge. Disdain of manual labour must be eradicated.

Wars are now, and with new inventions will always be, totalitarian. Countries attacked, no less than the attackers, will be fully mobilised, and that in its turn Totalitarian will compel nations which have relied on War voluntary enlistment seriously to consider some form of compulsory military service.

India will find this a greater problem than smaller countries. Apart from its excellent effect on the morale of a country as a whole, nothing could better inculcate self-discipline, esprit de corps and unity than two or three years of service with the Colours—and those are factors which will be of vital import to an India which is marching on to independence. Future wars will demand even closer liaison between military and civil, and a term of service with the Army, Navy or Air Force can undoubtedly assist in furthering India's economic position as well as foster that "progressive" spirit among its youth. The Indian Army has a tradition of which India can be justly proud. That tradition, strengthened through two wars, will continue, and will lead it to yet higher achievements,

### THE POST-WAR INDIAN ARMY

By Major-General F. M. Moore

THE WAR may be long and arduous, but that, however, has not prevented our statesmen from preparing the ground for many important post-war problems.

The future of the Indian Army is of great interest to a large number of officers—both British and Indian. It is obviously impossible to expect the Government of India to make firm decisions, when so many factors are still unknown. At the same time, a lot can be done towards preparing the ground for possible decisions, and the more discussion and thought given to the postwar Indian Army, the more the Government of India will be in the picture as to the feelings of those who are going to serve the Indian Army after the war.

The object of this article, therefore, is to suggest certain points, which must be decided at some time in the future, with a view to obtaining constructive suggestions.

The Indian Army of the past was made by its officers, and they have every reason to be proud of it. The Indian Army of the future should be made by those serving now, and they must start preparing plans, at once, because the army will soon be treated as a financial burden when the piping days of peace have returned.

#### INDIANISATION

Obviously the first and main problem is Indianisation. India has been promised Dominion Status, and the form it takes will make no difference to the problem of Indianising the Army. All Indians will require complete Indianisation as quickly as possible, and having gained Dominion Status, they will have power to implement this wish. Let us consider therefore how quickly Indianisation can be accomplished.

In 1939 the Indian Army was officered by:

4 Generals.

3 Lieut.-Generals.

20 Major-Generals.

100 Colonels.

224 Lieut.-Colonels.

1,034 Majors.

607 Captains.

800 Lieutenants.

88 2/Lieutenants.

Total

2,880

The reserve of Officers consisted of:

(a) The S. U. L.—

1 Colonel.

287 Majors.

82 Captains.

(b) The Army in India Reserve of Officers.—

4 Lieut.-Colonels.

8 2/Lieutenants.

16 Majors.

900 Captains.

328 Lieutenants.

At present there are:

150 K.C.I.Os.

400 I.C.Os.

4.460 I.E.C.Os. in the Indian Army.

There are some, but not many, very capable Indians, who could hold high appointments without any adverse effect on the efficiency of the army. They should be promoted in accordance with their merit. Average officers could not be given more than one promotion, over their normal rank, without causing a serious deterioration in the efficiency of the army.

There are 15 Indians with over 20 years commissioned service, 135 with over 10 years, and 400 with under 10 years. Allowing 25 per cent, for casualties and those who retire voluntarily, there may be available 112 comparatively senior Indians, to hold appointments as Majors or above, and 300 Indians available for appointments as Majors or below.

Compare these figures:

Required.

Available. Max.-112

4 Generals.

3 Lieut.-Generals.

20 Major-Generals.

100 Colonels.

224 Lieut.-Colonels.

351 Total.

112 Total.

Required.

1.034 Majors.

607 Captains.

800 Lieutenants.

88 a/Lieutenants.

2.529 Total.

Available. Max.--300.

300 Total.

239 senior officers and 2,229 junior officers will be required to complete Indianisation and they must be found from Britishers or Indians now holding Emergency commissions.

Obviously it is essential that India should start looking for suitable material among I.E.C.Os., now. Volunteers for Regular commissions should be called for and the actual selection should be made by boards composed of Indians only, with a British officer to advise them, if they so desire.

These figures are only approximate. The eventual figures will vary considerably, but they are sufficiently accurate for the purposes of this article. The point to remember is that the number of K.C.I.O.s. and I.C.O.s will be less and that of the I.E.C.O.s is unlikely to be more.

It is quite impossible to guess even the approximate number that will volunteer and be found suitable and, until this is known, it is not possible to estimate how many Britishers will be retained and for how many years they will be required.

Other main considerations, which influence the rate at which Indianisation can be achieved are:

- (a) To avoid a block in the even flow of promotion, India will require about 120 new officers per annum. To make room for this intake, a corresponding outflow will be required at the top. It may be possible to speed up Indianisation by reducing the average term of service on the active list. But this will involve a greater expenditure on pensions, and an intake of 120 officers per annum is based on an average of 28 years service only.
- (b) Before the war, it was decided that Indians should start as Platoon Commanders which would eventually have led to the abolition of V.C.Os.

Indians may prefer to retain V.C.Os., as this would hasten Indianisation, because fewer officers would be required.

On the other hand, no other army in the world has anything corresponding to V.C.Os., and they were only required as a link between officers and men because the former were not Indians. In every other army, a young officer starts in command of about 30 men and, during this time, he learns basic training and man management. In an Army which contains men of so many different types and temperaments, the importance of this cannot be stressed too much.

(c) The number of young Indians willing to join the Army.

Before the war, about 80 officers were commissioned from the I.M.A. annually. Of these 30 were open cadets, 30 were Army cadets and 20 were State cadets. Indians may or may not be willing to accept these proportions. If the percentage of Army cadets is reduced, then suitable Open cadets must be found.

In any case, the number produced annually must be increased to 120. This would not appear to be difficult. But, it must be remembered that educated and clever Indians will be required for many other occupations besides the Army. Presumably Indians will wish to Indianise the Civil Services, just as quickly as the Army is Indianised, and the standard of education in India has been so pathetically low, in the past, that Indians will have to be found from non-official classes, for many years to come. Expansion of industry and prosperity may render it difficult to obtain anything like the number required.

The above hard facts show that complete Indianisation, on a sound basis, must take several years.

On the other hand, it is essential to convince Indians that no effort is being spared to help them to obtain Indianisation in the shortest possible time; otherwise they will insist on complete Indianisation at once, regardless of all reason, and the consequences are bound to be disastrous.

Indian officers must be given opportunities to prove themselves, both as Commanders and Staff Officers, and every endeavour must be made to teach them, bearing in mind the important roles they will have to play in the future Indian Army.

1

Once Indians are convinced that a sincere effort is being made to Indianise the Army, I believe that they will be reasonable and will accept a long-term policy of Indianisation. Indian politicians want control of the army more than the internal administration of it and very few, if any, would insist on immediate Indianisation, if they considered this would reduce the efficiency of their National army to that of a fifth-class power.

The following therefore is a suggested scheme for the post-war Indian Army:

- 1. That all British officers holding Regular commissions in the Indian Army should be retained and retired as they normally were before the war.
- 2. That no more Britishers should be given Regular commissions in the Indian Army except to meet deficiencies of Indians in any particular years. Such commissions to be given by the Indian Government in power after Dominion Status has been granted.
- 3. Indians, who prove themselves in the war, to be given accelerated promotion and Britishers retired to make room for them, if necessary.
- 4. An immediate selection of suitable I.E.C.Os. for regular commissions.
- 5. The I.M.A. to be started again now, as an Indian Sand-hurst, preparing cadets for Regular commissions.
  - 6. A committee to be set up now, consisting of:

A leading Indian civilian as President.

A senior Indian Army British officer.

Two senior Indian officers to work out plans for the Postwar Indian Army.

The above scheme would bring about complete Indianisation in a little over 20 years.

SIZE AND TYPE OF ARMY REQUIRED

The second problem is the size and type of army that India will require.

The main factors under this heading are:

Defence.

Internal Security.

The financial aspect.

Defence.—At the end of the war, India's defence problem will be more complex than it has ever been before. Her natural safeguards, the Himalayas, the sea and dense jungle will no longer present insuperable barriers to invasion, owing to the tremendous strides aviation has made. No longer will her vulnerable frontiers be limited to the North-West and North-East; her whole vast sea coast and land frontiers will require protection.

Bordering her flanks there will be Russia, now a proved power, and Burma, a new country attempting to settle down and susceptible to intrigue from Japan, smarting from defeat and aching for revenge.

She will also be 100 per cent. responsible for her own defence, having obtained Dominion Status.

The answer seems to be:

A strong mobile army.

A navy capable of defending India's commercial interests.

A powerful air force.

A volunteer reserve.

Although this article only sets out to discuss the army, the other Services must be mentioned briefly, in order to get a true picture of the financial obligations involved, and because the strength and organisation of each must be based on the assumption that they will fight as an indivisible whole.

Army.—The Army must be strong, not so much numerically as in fire power and mobility. Its main task will be to hold the enemy, until the rest of the country is mobilised and ready to take the offensive. Its immediate task will be protection of the North-West and Eastern frontiers, and aid to the Civil power.

Its training and organisation should be based on the assumption that it will have to find a large number of instructors and leaders, in case of general mobilisation of the country.

Navy.—India cannot afford a large Navy and must rely on the Commonwealth Navy to come to her aid in time of war.

As England will be comparatively poor and over-burdened with taxation, it is unlikely that she will be able to continue her previous commitment of maintaining a navy strong enough to defend all Empire sea routes. Therefore, India's naval obligations may be to defend her local sea routes, and to find her quota towards a Commonwealth navy. Given the ships, this should not be difficult.

Air Force.—The war is serving to make India air-minded, and Indians are proving good pilots. At the end of the war, India will have a chain of good aerodromes and, owing to the vast distances between large business centres, Civil aviation should prove popular.

There will be two main difficulties towards solving which India will require foreign aid:

- (a) India must build her own planes.
- (b) Instructors will be required to train ground staffs, especially mechanics.

Given help with these two essentials, India should be able to build up a powerful Air Force in ten years.



It is suggested that all three Regular services should be organised on a long-service system. This would suit Indian mentality better, as a change of occupation, at middle age, is not popular, and reservists are seldom fit for strenuous operations, after a few years of village life.

Volunteer Reserve.—The Volunteer Reserve, comprising all three services, will be required to meet expansion of the armed forces in time of war. The most satisfactory scheme would be for all volunteers to do a basic training of two years, followed by annual training of six weeks, for the following ten years.

To carry this out a permanent staff from the Regular Services would be required. To reduce this to a minimum, Volunteers should be called up for their six weeks annual training on a staggered programme.

Officers of the Volunteer Reserve should be given commissions by merit, and a drastic reorganisation of University O.T.Cs. should be made, with a view to earmarking students likely to make good officers.

To return to purely Army matters:

The North-West Frontier.—To withdraw from the North-West frontier seems impossible, as this would involve the abandonment of the passes which form the gateways to India. It is also doubtful whether it would be any easier to deal with the Pathan nuisance on the Indus frontier than on the present line.

The ideal would be to have all Pathans willing and contented members of New India. This may seem an impossible fantasy, and it might take many years to accomplish. But, gradual education of the masses, trade routes into Pathan territory, expansion of enlistment in the Regular forces and a sympathetic Frontier government, which dealt with their main problem—lack of means to exist without raiding—and which took their love of individual independence into full consideration, might succeed eventually. The immediate cost would be enormous, but it would save India money in the end.

The Eastern Frontier.—The problem of defending the Eastern frontier will largely depend on India's relations with Burma. If they are cordial, then there should be no serious problem for many years to come. If they are not and Burma dabbles in intrigues with any other nation, with a view to harassing India, then the problem will be considerable.

The most satisfactory policy, for a start anyhow, would be for India to garrison all large towns and improve all lines of communication her side of the border. Conditions on the Eastern border are so different from those on the North-West border, that it will probably be more satisfactory to organise, train and maintain one force, of all three services, permanently, on this front.

Internal Security and Aid to Civil Power.—The new Indian Government is faced with an enormous task. Communal differences have to be solved; relations with Indian States have to be

reconciled; 2,000,000 soldiers have to be demobilised and settled into civil life; labour has to be reverted to peace-time pay and work. Serious trouble seems inevitable, and the Army must be ready to aid Civil power, to an extent greater than ever before.

Mechanisation will make this unpleasant type of work easier, as troops can be moved rapidly to the scene of the disturbance, by air or by M.T.; armoured vehicles have a great moral effect; surprise can be effected by using parachutists and wireless provides communication, when other communications have been cut. To avoid continually calling on the army for duties which are primarily a civil responsibility, it is suggested that part of the Indian Police force should be re-armed with modern weapons, such as Mortars and T.M.Gs., etc. This would form a valuable Civil striking force and trained men, for Specialist duties, could be found immediately from demobilised soldiers.

Finally, the size and type of army maintained must be within the financial resources of the country.

India will be richer, having paid off her foreign loans and having amassed large sums of British and American money. But, as this newly found wealth has percolated to the poorest cultivators and labourers, a higher standard of living has crept in and the masses may be unwilling to lower that standard. Civil standards may even rise sharply, as presumably Indians will require a rapid Indianisation of the Civil services, and suitable non-official Indians will have to be found to fill many important posts. Such Indians are usually wealthy business men or lawyers earning substantial incomes, and it is unlikely that many of them will be willing to accept Government posts, unless sufficiently attractive terms are offered.

Wages paid to schoolmasters have been so pathetically low that it will be many years before the standard of education in India will be sufficiently high to produce suitable Civil servants in the numbers required.

The rates of pay for the Services must coincide with Civil rates and the cost of living. The fact that it is desirable to have all officers on the same rates of pay, cannot be denied. But, some form of Overseas allowance will have to be paid to Britishers, as their future will be so indefinite; otherwise they will not stay.

#### THE FINANCIAL ASPECT

There can be little doubt that many readers of this article, especially Indians, must be horrified at the thought of the financial commitments involved in the suggestions made. Also it is unquestionable that the Government must ensure that the size and type of Services maintained are within the financial resources of the country.

For a "poor" country which grumbled at spending four to five crores a year on her defence during pre-war years, the cost would seem prohibitive. But India is NOT a poor country, and the sums she will be spending on defence will be for forces controlled and owned by Indians, which is a very different thing to



haggling over expenses, which the British Government might pay, if Indians refused to do so.

In fact, India is a very rich country, with an immense unrecorded and hoarded wealth.

When the philosophy of contentment was preached in the Vedas, it was done to keep the masses satisfied with small gains, while the national wealth flowed into the king's coffers. It was the only way to raise money for the country's budget, at a time when taxes on income were unknown, as the land was the sole source of income for both the people and the state.

By getting the masses to swallow the idea of "happiness through contentment" the State managed to take away the major share of the produce, leaving just enough for the cultivator to exist on. The result has been that agriculture in India has NOT progressed one iota since the Vedic age, the poor cultivator not having sufficient means to introduce improvements for production and distribution. With the growth of population, holdings have got smaller and smaller, and a stage has now been reached when Bengal, the granary of Akbar's India, suffers from famine.

We find that the same philosophy is allowed to persist even in the twentieth century, though unperceived. The king of the Vedas has been succeeded by a small rich clique, who either pay nothing or only a small portion of the cultivator's produce, to the State. They are the custodians of India's hoarded wealth.

The income of the masses works out at approximately Rs. 66 per head per annum. The income of the rich is almost incalculable, owing to the amount they receive in "hidden" income. No wonder, therefore, that the masses live on the verge of starvation and India is considered a "poor" country.

If India is to take her rightful place in the affairs of the world, revolutionary changes will be necessary, to obtain a more equitable distribution of her wealth. Everyone must either work for his living or be taxed in the same way as the "idle rich" of England are.

### CONCLUSION

Problems, each of which could form the subject of an article, have been dealt with in bare outline. There are bound to be many different opinions, both on the subject matter of the article and the suggestions made. If, however, it affords food for thought and discussion, it will have accomplished its object.

### WEST POINT—THE U.S. MILITARY ACADEMY\*

BY COLONEL W. K. WILSON, JUNR.,

General Staff Corps, U. S. Army

MY TALK is primarily on four years spent at the United States Military Academy, as a cadet and, later, four years as an instructor. That is the proper title of the institution, but since it is located at a spot on the Hudson River called West Point, it is generally known by this name.

West Point was the principal source of officers for our Army in peacetime. In the ten years before the war it averaged about 300 graduates a year. However, due to the number of officers who have been commissioned from other sources for all services, particularly in other wars, the West Point graduates only numbered about 45 per cent. of the total Officer Corps at the start of this war. In connection with this I would like to make two points.

First, the indoctrination of West Point on its graduates sets the tone of our Officer Corps. The ideals and methods spread by the graduates permeate the entire Army and establish the standards. Secondly, once you join the Army, being a West-Point graduate is not a prerequisite to success. No favouritism exists in the Army favouring Military Academy graduates.

As an example of this, let me quote several outstanding officers at the present time; General Marshall, our Chief of Staff, General Wedemeyer of S.E.A.C., General Reybold, Chief of the Corps of Engineers, who are all three non-graduates. On the other hand, Generals MacArthur, Eisenhower, Bradley, Clark, Somervell, Patton, Arnold and Lee are all West Point graduates, as are, in this theatre of war, Generals Stilwell, Wheeler, Sultan, Stratemeyer, as well as others.

Let us consider the objects of West Point. The first and most important is to build character. The Academy motto, "Duty, Honour, Country" exemplifies this. Its second—to provide a thorough education for the officers, with emphasis on the scientific side, but rounded to include the Arts. The third, and least important, is to give a start in tactical training. I cannot emphasize too strongly that on graduation in peacetime the new officer has been strengthened in character and given an education, but he has been given only a superficial background of tactical training in all the arms.

How is this done? Let me start by pointing out the source of cadets. The authorised strength of the Corps of Cadets is 2,500, which is a 50 per cent. increase over a few years ago. At the present time the first (senior) class has a strength of 850, the yearling class 940 and the plebe class 750. Contrast this with my class, which graduated in 1929, and was the second largest at that

<sup>\*</sup>Being a lecture delivered recently to Officers of G. H.Q. (I.), by Colonel W. K. Wilson, Junr.



time in the history of the Academy. We entered with around 450 and graduated with 300.

The cadets are appointed as follows: each Congressman and Senator has three appointments. That means he can keep three cadets in the Academy. When one graduates or gets discharged, with the next class he can fill a vacancy. In addition to that the President has approximately go vacancies, on the same basis, which he fills by competitive examination, and then there are a smaller number of vacancies allotted to the Army and National Guard, which again are filled by competitive examination from the enlisted men.

This means that the class enter the Academy as men from every walk of life. There are men from the country, who have never been out of their locality; men from the small towns, who have never been away from home; men from the big cities, who know nothing but a metropolitan life. That first day when they report is a study of democracy. Rich and poor, tall and short, well-dressed and poorly-dressed; they shed their distinctions and become members of a team.

Cadets must be between the ages of 17 and 21, inclusive. There is no bar of colour or race, although to date only a few coloured cadets have ever stood the "gaff" and graduated. One of these is a Brigadier-General of our Army at present, and the other, his son, is a Colonel commanding a fighter group. At one time, while I was instructor, we had a full-blooded Chinese cadet, who was an American citizen and spoke with a Southern dialect, which made a queer combination.

Most cadets are required to take a very stiff entrance examination, both physical and mental, which weeds out a large number of the applicants before they ever arrive. Some of the cadets, by reason of high standing at honours school, are admitted on a certificate.

The military Academy is located at West Point, 50 miles up the Hudson River from the mecca of all young Americans, New York City, connected by rail and excellent motor roads to that place. The Hudson itself is a beautiful river, averaging about a mile in width from West Point to New York, flowing through rock cliffs and wooded mountains.

West Point is the site of an old Revolutionary War fort, on a plateau several hundred feet in height, commanding the river which sweeps around its base and backed by wooded hills rising in its rear. Benedict Arnold was commander of West Point when his ill-fated traitorous scheme fell through in our war to obtain Dominion status. The old Revolutionary War forts and the chain put across the river to close the river to British shipping still exist and furnish an excellent excuse for cadets to walk their girls out to see these sights, and incidentally take part in other extra-curricular activities, such as testing the kissing rock, which is reputed to fall if any girl refuses a kiss under it. The rock has stood the test of time—so have most of the girls!

The buildings are of granite set into the hills, and built around the plan, or drill area. Set in the hills above the main

post is the stadium for their major athletic events, facing the river across a beautiful reservoir. Near this is an ice-hockey rink where, for six months during the winter, cadets and their hockey teams can utilize the rink.

In the main part of the post is a large gymnasium, which includes every form and device for physical development, including basket-ball courts, squash-ball courts, swimming pool and so on, and down by the river on a small plain is a field house, large enough and tall enough to allow a full football game to be played inside, or two baseball games to be played simultaneously.

This is what faces the bewildered group of young men on the first of July every year. Let me give you a brief glimpse of what a cadet in the late 30's went through in his four years, as a background for considering the speed-up progress of wartime. His first (plebe) summer the cadet spends in being hardened and learning discipline. He is put into what is called by cadets "beast barracks" where, for two months, every moment of his waking hours is full.

Most of the time is devoted to disciplinary drill. He is cast in the mould of uniformity and taught to do everything by rule. His socks must be lined up just right in his locker. He must have the right number of shoes, in the right position under his bed. He must sweep and clean his room every morning by a certain hour, and whenever he leaves the room, everything must be back in its appointed place.

He undergoes, during this summer of disciplinary training, a mild form of "hazing", in that as a plebe, outside of his room, he can't walk along talking, but must march rigidly, without conversation. Whenever called upon to do so by upper-classmen, he must exhibit his efficiency in the realms of posture, which includes certain tortures such as ramming the chin as far back as possible, and trying to make the back straight when nature didn't quite mean it to be.

In none of this "hazing" does anyone ever lay hands on him. He is merely told to do something, and after a while he learns that he does it. This, and also the physically hard life he leads, the drill and athletics, serve to harden him and develop his body to the standard desired.

That winter, he starts his first academic work. From 8 a.m. till 3 p.m. every day, except for lunch, he goes to class. After 3 p.m. he alternates either on a varsity sport of his own choosing, if he can make it, or in intra-mural athletics, with alternate days at drill or military instruction. From 7-30 to 9-30 p.m. at night he spends studying. I can vouch to you that the plebe's time is fully occupied.

On week-ends he goes to the football games, basket-ball games or other major games, to watch the cadet teams play the visiting teams. He can see his friends and relatives if they come up, and if he is falling behind, as many of them are, he spends a good part of his week-end studying to catch up. His academic subjects are: maths., including algebra, geometry and trigonometry, French and English. In these he goes to class every day.

Digitized by Google

The plebe gets a brief break at Christmas time, when most of the other cadets get a short vacation, and for ten days he can relax and believe that he is running the Academy. His friends and his family come to see him, and he is actually allowed to have dances. After Christmas, the academic year sets in again and goes on without a break until graduation time in June. Then comes his most important day, when he is recognised by the upper-class men and becomes a yearling, and blossoms out into his full prerogatives as a full-fledged cadet.

His plebe year has developed him physically and mentally. He has learned much of psychology the hard way. He has learned which upper-classmen are lenient and which enjoy a joke on themselves. He has learned primarily that he can take it, and he is proud of that. That summer he spends at camp, right on the Reservation, where a large part of his day is devoted to drill and tactical instruction in all branches of the Army, and in his late afternoons and nights he uses the sports facilities and the social

facilities of the dance and movies.

The next winter of his yearling year his routine is very much the same, except that now that he is an upper-classman he has a little more opportunity to relax and enjoy life. He has the same hours of academics and the same hours of athletics and drill. His academic subjects this year are again maths., with analytical and descriptive geometry and calculus, French, English, history and mechanics.

His week-ends become social and he will normally have a girl out from his home town, or from New York, to go with him to the sports and to the dances. He gets Christmas leave, ten days, which is the first time for a year-and-a-half that he has been away and free; and then the pride and glory of the cadet's life, in the second-class summer he gets his furlough of two months. He comes back to his second-class year a disillusioned man, down on women for life!

The second-class year he takes chemistry, mechanics, Spanish, electricity, drawing and surveying, and that summer goes on a trip where he has several weeks of brief flying instruction, including flying a plane in the air. He fires various field artillery weapons, he visits the Infantry School, and watches and takes part in firing problems and platoon, company and battalion tactics. He makes an acquaintance with engineer bridging by putting up various types of construction with engineer troops. In general, he gets the taste of what each branch has to offer.

Part of the summer he spends in training a new plebe class and thereby gaining experience in the development of raw man. His last, or first-class, year, he takes engineering, the study of military campaigns, law, economics and government, ordnance. Then as his four years draw to a close, his final standing is determined, based on his academic ratings, and he selects the branch of the Army he desires to go into. This selection is on the basis of the number of vacancies existing and is made from top to the bottom. The first man in the class can choose what he will, the second man what he will or what is left, until the last man gets put in the remaining vacancy. Thus in the past, at graduation, each man has received the same instruction.

It is of interest to note that this instruction of cadets is carried on primarily by Regular Army officers; only the professors are detailed for permanent duty at West Point, and they usually come back to this job after 15 or 20 years in the Army. The instructors are generally young officers selected by the professors, who are quite frequently sent to some college, or in the case of language instructors, to a foreign country, to prepare themselves for instructing the cadets. This system does not necessarily provide the best type of instructor, but it does provide fresh ideas, and combined with the method of making the cadet learn on his own to a large extent, it produces the desired results.

The academic system at West Point is quite different from that of big universities. The instruction group is a small section from 10 to 25 men. The men are assigned something to study the night before, and are expected to come prepared at the start of the class. Instructors allow a short period of time to answer questions cadets may have on their lesson. At the end of this period, the cadet goes to the blackboard and is assigned a phase of last night's work and puts his notes on the blackboard, and then demonstrates to the instructor, and the remainder of the cadets, as they finish their assignment. It is primarily instruction by individual effort, to dig it out from the source materials, text-books, with the help and guidance of the instructors, rather than instruction consisting primarily of lectures, from which the student takes what he can and keeps his notes.

When the war was imminent it was apparent that we would need to speed up the rate of graduates and the course at the Academy was shortened to three years. Generally speaking, they have crowded what was done in four years into a space of three.

There are some changes. Now the cadet gets only one year of English, and only two years of languages, either Spanish, French. Portuguese or German, depending upon his choice. Now the emphasis is on the tactical branch training more than it was in the past. For the first two years the cadet is instructed in minor tactics and firing of all weapons, and takes part in some manœuvre during his summer, with an infantry division.

In the spring of his second year, those cadets desiring to go in the Air Corps take a physical examination, and if they pass, it, the rest of the tactical training for them during that second year is devoted to ground training. Their next summer, the third summer, the air cadets are away at flying schools most of the summer. About 50 per cent. of the cadets at present are choosing the Air Corps and about 40 per cent. of them make the grade and continue with the Air Corps after this summer's flying.

At the start of his last, or third winter, the remaining cadets not in the air, choose their branches, and their tactical training during the third winter is entirely branch training. The air cadets continue during the winter their flying training from a nearby airfield.

Perhaps my description has led you to believe the Corps of Cadets, after this programme, has become a group of angels. Far from it. Physically the cadet has learned to love to give punish-

ment in his sports. He loves the bodily contact and the pleasure of throwing his weight into an opponent. He has learned fair play but he hates to be a loser. He has learned the pleasure of smuggling in contraband and of putting one over on his tactical officers. He has devised foolproof hiding places in the chimney, which the tac, having been a cadet himself once, uncovers by holding a mirror at the base.

He has developed an ingenuity for overcoming obstacles. As an example, let me tell you about a classmate of mine, now commanding an infantry regiment. Van was always in trouble. But he was clever enough to pull up in time. He was constantly requiring help to get ready for exams. But near the end of his second-class year he teached the ragged edge on demerits with a month to go, so he visited a friend just recovering from an appendectomy. Armed with the symptoms, he arrived at the hospital and was on the operating table in an hour. Needless to say, the result was disappointing, but the convalence in the hospital carried him through to the end of the year in triumph.

To complete the picture of cadet training, let me revert to character. Cadet life is a democratic life. All cadets are equal, whatever their origin. Their possession of the wealth of this world is not of major importance, since they receive enough pay to cover the simple pleasures available. This acceptance of a man for what he is, rather than what he has, is invaluable training. To continue on the subject of building character, I would like to repeat the motto of "Duty, Honour, Country."

"Duty".—This is indoctrinated in many ways. To start with there is a daily schedule to meet the many formations to march to meals, to march to classes, to march to drill, to report at reveille. Duty is further indoctrinated by the disciplining of the cadet. Every infraction of the cadet rules by a plebe brings down a horde

of upper-classmen upon him.

Every cadet, plebe or otherwise, for an infraction of the Academy's rules, receives demerits. If his underwear is not properly piled in the correct place in his locker, he gets demerits. If he has failed to dust the back of his chair or the edge of his desk, his shoes are not properly shined and correctly lined up, his bed is not properly made up—it shows that he has laid on it—if he is late to any one of the innumerable formations, he gets more. With demerits comes loss of privileges, and punishment tours for two hours, marching back and forth in the hot summer or cold snowy winter. For major infraction of the rules, he is given a "slug," which is considerable demerits, and a month or more of spending his Wednesdays and Saturday afternoons on walking tours. For some major infractions the cadet has received as much as a year's "slug" but this is not normal.

as a year's "slug" but this is not normal.

"Honour".—From the day he enters, the cadet is taught that he is living under a strict honour system. He must not lie or prevaricate. This honour system is basically run by the cadets. They will report themselves, or each other, for cheating, lying, stealing or breaking certain major regulations. A cadet is taught that his word is accepted at face value, and if he is seen in some place under dubious circumstances and an officer asks him if he has authority

to be there, his answer of "Yes" is accepted. If he violates his honour, he leaves the Academy. The cadets themselves can ask the Superintendent to have a cadet dismissed, or by means of silence and having nothing to do with him, a cadet who has been found guilty by the cadets is invariably induced to resign.

The honour system, as I can tell you from experience, is one of the pleasant features of the Academy for instructors. Instructors can leave the room with the cadets working, and know that no one will take advantage of that fact. Any officer knows he can ask the cadet particulars of any affair and the cadet will give him a straight answer. To keep this from being abused, every effort is made not to ask a cadet to tell on another cadet, unless it is a case of the second cadet violating his honour. The result is an honour system which works, which is a credit to the institution, and which develops the character of anyone who comes in contact with it.

"Country".—Love of country is indoctrinated into the cadet by his surroundings, by the history and traditions of the Military Academy, and by the example of former graduates, who have gone ahead.

To sum up. West Point is the principal source for all officers in peacetime. The graduates of West Point don't join the Army as well-trained officers in tactical duties, but instead as officer material indoctrinated with the system or devotion to duty, honour and love of country; which influx year after year serves to refresh and reindoctrinate the entire Officer Corps, and build a solid foundation for the expanded wartime Army.

### WARTIME EDUCATION

"Here is the experience of a friend who went down recently to a R.A.F. camp with a novel kind of Brains Trust. The Education Officer questioned each of the three visitors about themselves and their interests, and each of them was then put through a close examination by a large voluntary audience.

"The questions were searching. Two of the Brains Trust had a fairly easy time discussing film production and general political topics. But the third, a search economist, who embarked rather gingerly on difficult explanations of inflation, full employment and international finance, found these airmen and W.A.A.F's following him through the most intricate arguments.

"What was the importance of the Bretton Woods agreement? How could the development of backward countries be assisted by loans? What was Keynes' contribution to economic theory?

"From the way the Education Officer linked these points to previous discussions it was clear that the camp was enthusiastic about education. Every hut had its discussion group meeting regularly and officially. There was a good and growing library, and with it a permanent exhibition on topical issues like the progress of the war, home affairs and reconstruction.

"There was a poster emphasising the importance of informed interest in the business of the Commons, urging its readers to complete their voting registration forms. Over 90 per cent. had already done so."—"Critic," in the "New Statesman and Nation."

### DOWN ON THE FARM

### By "RASP"

S OME TIME ago an article appeared in the Journal in which Lt.-Col. G. F. Bunbury showed the minor benefits derived from keeping a cow, hen and cabbage, and the major advantages of setting up as a small (50 acre) farmer on retirement. The former, it was explained, would give health, food and, say, a hundred a year, while the latter, at a capital outlay of £3,000 to £4,000, would offer a reward more suited to the education and abilities of an ex-officer.

After some most helpful advice, which included the employment of one man at £120 a year, and the provision of an electric washing machine so that the farmer's wife can quickly dispose of the laundry herself, he ends by inviting us to avoid being social parasites but to arise, as masters of our own lives, from the aches of war to a new and happier life.

So many are the advantages he portrays that he cannot but fail to conjure up nostalgic visions of foaming milk, haycocks, and the gentle lowing of sleek, humpless cows as footsteps wend homewards in the twilight to the rose-covered cottage, tea and honey, or the cosy ingle-nook and foaming tankard. This is, of course, not enough.

Fate has thrown the writer to a billet on a small farm in rural England, and much as one must admire Colonel Bunbury's method of avoiding the late of a drone, it is well to see, as Wellington so often wished, "the other side of the hill." This article, therefore, aims to show some of the disadvantages, or rather the difficulties the budding farmer must be prepared to overcome.

Disregarding the possibility of the existence of £3,000 to £4,000 capital, the keystone is the wife, coupled with a real sense of vocation and the necessary stamina.

This particular farm is not so very isolated—six miles from the nearest market town, and one-and-a-half miles from the Grid. Yet there is no electric service, while the only water supply comes from a well with more old-fashioned drawing gear than that commonly seen in India. There is a fair reservoir eight miles away but it supplies a city. Locally stationed U. S. A. soldiery find this quite incomprehensible, but the truth is that, although there are many farms within a mile of each other, the Electricity and Water Boards consider that if the services were installed the income to be derived could never compensate them for the capital outlay of laying down mains.

Now what follows may seem very petty, but it is the actual state of affairs, very practical and worthy of study. The wife in one of the despised Qu'hailands of England comes down to cook breakfast, switching on the stairs or kitchen lights as she goes. She

fills a kettle from the sink beside the stove and presses the flint for the gas cooker to light.

Down on this farm when the alarm clock sounds the following steps are necessary:

- (a) Grope for matches, light one, remove lamp chimney, burn fingers, put down chimney, light another match and lamp and replace chimney—if not broken in the meantime!
- (b) Carry lamp downstairs leaving husband in dark or light another lamp (provided she has not forgotten to fill, trim and clean it the day before).
- (c) Go out to bucket, pick up dipper and fill kettle (provided the well was drawn correctly yesterday).

(d) Return to kitchen and place kettle on oil cooker.

- (e) Look for matches, bend down, open "windows" with one hand and raise wick-spreader with other, at the same time lighting a match.
- (f) Gradually raise wick till it burns a nice blue. The kettle is now ready to take twice as long to boil as in Ou'hailands.

Of course the reader may say that electricity will come to every farm. Very well. All that may be said is that close to here there are a hundred farms with conditions as described, and in an old-fashioned house, such petty but annoying increases in work, of which kettle-boiling is merely one example, occur at every turn—the dear little diamond window-panes, the dark kitchen, the worn, flagged hall full of crevices, the separate kitchen, pantry and scullery down a corridor full of corners.

This farm has a bathroom and indoor sanitation, but this is far from universal. Naturally no maids are available now but they may return after the war. No plans are yet announced though Government talks of producing one and some journals forecast a post-war wage of £2 128. od. for dailies doing an eight-hour day, say 9 a.m. to 5 p.m.

When one adds that neighbours are few and far between, and that the nearest day school for children over twelve is six miles away (which for a variety of reasons might involve one in the expenses of sending the children to a boarding school), it is clear that the advice to go as P. G.s to a farm for a year to learn the trade, is essential. The writer would go further and suggest a stay as P. G. before even considering farming as a career. Some will love every minute of the manifold advantages, here deliberately omitted—but not all.

The next subject which one hears discussed on every farm and in every paper is the future of farming. This usually falls under two heads, firstly large-scale specialization versus the small-farmer, and secondly whether the prices paid for produce give, and will give after the war, a fair return.

There is to-day one influential body of opinion who believe that we will only be a worthwhile competitor in the postwar food markets of the world if we adopt large-scale, heavily-capitalised and specialised farming. They hold that the small-farmer who attempts to compete with a thousand-acre neighbour equipped with modern machinery, must fail. They contend that pre-war small farming in most modern countries was arduous, often work-sodden and always precarious, and that the only small-farmers who managed to exist were those with an inborn love of the soil and an iron determination which did not flinch at condemning their family to conditions akin to slavery. Invention, they say, has so far favoured the large farmer and given the small man little but a feeling of envy and an urge to uneconomical hiring.

The reader may say: "O. K. I'll go in for large-scale farming and, after training, secure a post as Manager. My education should help me to hold down a good well-paid job, and I'll not be risking my capital." This is certainly a prospect worthy of consideration, but it loses one of the claims Colonel Bunbury so rightly and temptingly displays—the delight of being one's own master.

The other school of thought claims that there are cogent reasons to-day why the small-farmer should succeed—a world scarcity of food—a scarcity which will continue after the war. They say that given education and opportunity, there is no reason why be should not farm as well as the big man, provided, he avoids the two commodities of which there is a world abundance—cereals and potatoes. They advocate livestock and market gardening, and quote the Land Settlement Association's pre-war achievement in marketing as outstanding. They attribute many failures to bad personal selection by the Association and by County Councils, and aver that sometimes the land chosen for holdings was far from good.

Well—there are the two points of view. But everyone expects Government to make a "Plan" for everything after the war. Some may consider it better to make their own plan themselves, but at any rate let us see what Government promise so far. Recent statements in the House are to the effect that it is Government's policy to maintain a healthy, well-balanced agriculture and that they are starting discussions of an exploratory character, which are confidential. So now you know!

The Labour Party promise something more concrete. They aim at the passing of a General Enabling Act, giving the State power to acquire all agricultural land on payment of compensation. This they desire to put into effect rapidly on as large a scale as possible, though they realise that it would take time. In the interim, they advocate State control of all land—County Agricultural Committees to continue to function in peace as in war, and to lay down the standard of cultivation and the use to which the land is to be put.

They suggest a National Land Commission of salaried Commissioners to exercise control, defining one of their first duties as the provision of an adequate water supply. Particular emphasis is laid on the production of meat, milk, eggs, vegetables and fruit, fair wages for all workers, the abolition of the tied cottage which places the man in a position of servitude.

This, of course, is merely the proposal of one party, but no doubt gives a guide to Labour's view if it comes into power.

Another scheme recently advocated has the interests of the exserviceman, in particular, in mind. It is based on the fact that he will neither have the practical experience nor the capital necessary for a successful start if he receives no State assistance and guidance. If he is left to his own devices there is a danger that we may see again, as after the last war, the ex-serviceman paying high prices for small patches of land, secondhand machinery—usually inadequate and in spite of hard work, failing to make a living.

The supporters of this plan desire to use the existing staff of technical experts in each county, not as "directors," but as instructors to ex-servicemen. Each county now holds a stock of machinery and land, once derelict but now reclaimed and in crop. The idea is that these should be allotted to ex-servicemen, and so form the ideal nucleus for the best form of co-operative farming.

Sufficient has now been said to show that even experienced farmers are not agreed regarding the best method for the small-farmer to begin. Some, as explained, even do not think that he should begin at all. But whatever policy is adopted, one thing is certain, success must depend on a national policy to provide cheap power and water and cheap implements suited to the small-farmer.

In view of Labour's demand for high wages it is clear that the provision of these items cheaply is not merely a matter of saying so. But above all, improved marketing, local collective purchase, ample credit for long term improvement and staple prices are essential—without them disaster is inevitable. Let us, therefore, see what local farmers say about wages, costs and prices to-day.

First, the times have changed since one could get a man at £120 a year. The Agricultural Wages Board has now fixed the minimum wage for a man at £3. 5s. od. per week of 48 hours. Any overtime is fixed at 1s. 6d. per hour on week-days, and 1s. 10d. on Saturdays and other holidays. Even if the man did no overtime he draws a minimum of £170. This is, of course, merely a legal minimum, and according to the press £5 per week plus overtime is commonly paid. Rates for youths and girls are similarly laid down, and without giving a mass of details it is sufficient to say that an unskilled youth of seventeen whose every task it is necessary to supervise, draws over the suggested £120 per annum, excluding overtime.

Extraordinary prices for farm stock, recalling those reached after the last war, are already being paid. Last week, for example, at Reading, 1,200 guineas were paid for a Guernsey bull, £150 for Bristol Friesian cattle, while petrol restrictions led to a spectacular demand for heavy horses, 59 pure bred and half bred horses averaging £166. Milking beasts fetch £50 to £70 each.

The ramp in the price of land is apparent, many asking double the pre-war value, to the ruination of the purchasers when the slump comes. Just notice the papers and see how many farmers are getting out while the going is good, leaving some poor unfortunate to bear the burden.

Turning to prices received for crops, anyone considering farming as a career will doubtless know of the dispute on prices

between the National Farmers Union and the Minister of Agriculture. The first disagreement arises over Mr. Hudson's pledge of 1940 that "prices will be subject to adjustment to the extent of any substantial changes in the cost of production." When, therefore, wages were raised, the farmers expected higher prices. Mr. Hudson, however, explains that the "changes" need not always be upwards and that, as some of the production costs have been reduced, farmers can well meet the rise in wages with no corresponding rise in prices.

Farmers are irate not only on financial grounds, but foresee already a breach of faith comparable to that after the last war. Then a policy agreed by all political parties was announced in the Agriculture Act. Its repeal after only six months engendered scepticism, which is revived by the present action. They contend, too, that if by their efficiency they have reduced production costs, their reward is to be taken away, leaving no motive for further effort. Many feel that such action shows that in the end Government will let agriculture down and that the lack of an announcement of a long-term policy is having a serious effect.

Even as things are, some farmers contend that they are not making a reasonable profit, and that last year's tax has to be paid out of the year's profits, so that once a poor year comes they will be back in their traditional position—debt. One responsible farmer explains that while some, especially large market gardeners, are making handsome profits, the majority are not. He is one of the 70 per cent. of pre-war farmers holding under 80 acres.

He produced actual copies of his accounts, accepted by the income-tax authorities, showing a net loss over the three years 1940/42 of £116.16s.2d. Another, a dairy farmer, contends that he is losing money and paying high wages, and that the men making the money are those on cheaply rented, cheaply worked arable land, especially barley. In fairness to Government it seems right to observe a man does not pay as much as from £50 to £70 for a milking beast if he is going to lose money thereby!

Reverting from small farming to Colonel Bunbury's alternative suggestion of merely being content with keeping the family supplied in eggs, milk and vegetables—there is, to the writer's certain and personal knowledge, more to be made from this than is generally supposed. The income tax angle looms large. With a total lack of practical or theoretical knowledge, six pullets have been bought and kept in an ignorant and most uneconomic way.

Even so the results are startling. Disregarding the original purchase price (as it is proposed shortly to eat these "golden geese") they laid 1,128 eggs in the first year at a cost of £4. To purchase these eggs, it would have been necessary to earn £19, of which £9. 10s. od. would go in tax and £9. 10s. od. in purchase price even at control rates. Or put another way, the investment of £4 produces a return, tax free, of well over 100 per cent per annum! Apply this principle to fruit, vegetables and milk produced under economic conditions and compare it with, say, the possible earning of £400 in a job, (which will be reduced at once to £200 by taxation).

Finally, much as it may appear, the object of this article is not to put people against the idea of farming—rather it is to help those to view the prospect as a reality and not as wishful dreaming.

To those with a love of the soil, the strength of a farmer and a wife eager to share, there can be no surer road to lasting health and happiness.

#### Addendum

The writer has just asked the local G II who, between wars, was a farmer in another county, to vet this article lest conditions elsewhere should not have been so depressing.

His only criticism is that it has not sufficient Awful Warnings! The vagaries of nature, the hardships and, above all, disease have been omitted. Anyone, for example, he explains, can keep six pullets and get 1,128 eggs, but if the pullets are multiplied by a hundred, the increase in eggs will not be in proportion. On the other hand, with six pullets there will be little disease yet, with six hundred, troubles such as poultry-sick land arise, and a higher proportion of disease is the normal expectation.

Finally, he agrees that if he were starting over again he would buy another farm. But he adds: "I have the right wife."

# THE GIRLS THEY LEFT BEHIND THEM

## BY END SCOTT

"Ultimately, a man will not rise far above the level of his own home."

THUS spoke Brigadier F. L. Bravne some years ago, thereby inspiring an article in the Journal of the United Service Institution of India, which attempted to illustrate the deep significance of such words in the family life of the Indian soldier, then making mighty strides in the modern march of time. That was in the last few shameful months of the peace that was no peace. Now world war has long since come, and the Indian soldier is taking the whole world war in his gallant stride.

Wherever he may chance to go, the world is acclaiming him as soldier and as man; not only as the magnificent fighter that he always is, but as a good mixer, a cosmopolitan and jolly good company withal. He is ready to take the world as he finds it; to take it, to like it and be liked, wherever he may chance to be. He has learnt to appreciate the modern army's enlightenment in matters of food, health, hygiene and all else. He sees to it that the outward and empty forms of religion and of caste, as opposed to the real and inward ones, do not stand in the way of whatever good things there may be in the wreck and doom of this free-forall, most modern and civilised war.

But some day soon, India's superb fighting men will be marching home again to the Girls They Left Behind Them. And meanwhile, what of them? Not so many years ago, few would have bothered to ask that question, much less to answer it. The purdah veil was very thick and very closely drawn. But more and more British officers of the Indian Army are coming to understand that a man and his home are indivisible, whatever his colour or his creed. More and more they are realising that all is not well in the homes of the men who have given themselves lavishly in the cause of freedom and of peace. Perhaps it is the aching nostalgia for wife, for child, for home of so many exiled British servicemen, that has made them quick to learn that a man's home has a great share in the making of the man he is; and that his home can and, sometimes, does Break him too.

Meanwhile then, how has it fared with the Girls They Left Behind Them?

In the first year of the war, an Indian Cavalry Regiment was due for active service overseas, there to distinguish itself fighting in the Sudan, and later on in Italy. On the eve of departure, the writer made a last visit to the family lines whence many women had already returned to their village homes, but where some remnant yet remained. She found them weeping there.

"Memsahib, why must our men go to fight this war!" they cried. And echo answered Why? Hard to tell these simple women that their men must go, perchance never to return, because of brutal lust offset by impotent complacency in countries far away. . . .

<sup>&</sup>quot;The Distaff side", By Enld Scott, April 1939.

So back to their villages they went—and how many after them in the long years that now lie between—there to tend the children of the absent man, together with his land, that urgent Indian land that must be served whatever may befall. And since then, what has been happening in the lives of these gentle, simple women, in the long years that lie between?

The Women's Voluntary Services, in their "Guide for Indian

Forces' Families," report that:

"Cases have come to light in which women, having walked twelve miles to the nearest post office to get their allotments, found that no one in the place knew them or could identify them. They therefore had to bribe a bystander to do so. Attempts have been made to appropriate property belonging to absent servicemen. In some cases, allotments and pensions for women are misappropriated by men members of the families.

"In a very large number of cases help is needed in correspondence. Sometimes letters are taken over by men, and the women to whom the contents are addressed are not even told the contents. Many cases have come to light through women welfare workers (Fauji Sevadarmis) of oppression by influential men in the villages, against whom the women have not the courage to report. Women of the menial classes very often have no knowledge of how to obtain help, or of the organisations that exist for the safeguarding of their interests.

"In some cases women have received letters from units, advising them to take certain action to obtain their allotments, but for lack of someone to explain to them the instructions, they have continued for months without money. It is not possible here to enumerate the great variety of difficulties which arise..."

A terrible indictment that, of the lack of protection and of care that has been bestowed upon the Girls They Left Behind Them when they went off to the war. Which among us British women who have suffered "Abandonment," with part or all that ugly and unseemly word can mean of desolation, bereavement or of utmost woe, have given thought to how it may have been faring with our Indian sisters in like case?

Happily the Women's Voluntary Services are later able to report that:

"In certain parts of India, G. H. Q. have organised the Fauji Sevadarni Scheme in conjunction with the Civil Liaison and Sailors', Soldiers' and Airmen's Board Organisations, . . . helping the women to overcome their difficulties and protecting them and their rights . . . and trying to remove (through the C.L.O. concerned) the reasons for the trouble . . . More and more women welfare workers are needed."

And in the Statesman of August 12, 1944, Begum Shah Nawaz, Member of the National Defence Council, and Director of the Women's Section, Department of Information and Broadcasting, stated that, as the result of recent tours, she has submitted to the Government proposals for the extension of these and other measures, including health and educative schemes, for the amelioration of the lot of the soldier's family.

This is more encouraging as far as it goes, but as yet it is a mere drop in the ocean of desperate necessity. Anyone who knows anything about Indian soldiers' families, knows the vital and immediate need of health and educative services right here and now. The most perfunctory contacts reveal the universality of preventable sickness and distress, arising from poverty, super-stition and ignorance.

We are repeatedly told that nationwide uplift services are coming some fine day. But meanwhile, the Girls They Left Behind Them are growing older in years, anxiety and care. Perhaps it is already too late to do much good for the girls that they once were. But what of the little daughters who also are growing very fast? Are the men to come home to find all their girls still lagging centuries behind them in progress of the body and the mind? The money is there; the wisdom is there to evolve these services for the urgent needs of the serviceman's woman and his child.

As stated by "Charles" in "Welfare for the Sepoy's Family," in the Journal of the United Service Institution of India of July, 1944, it only remains for Their Excellencies the Viceroy and the Commander-in-Chief, fighting soldiers both of them and men of great goodwill, to give their lead to stimulate the Members of the Legislative Assembly to their responsibilities towards their country's fighting men.

In his article "Charles" commends the zeal and devotion of certain British officers' wives of the Indian Army in this cause. He speaks truth but the work has been too limited in scope. Often in the past this has been the fault of some diehard regimental commanding officer who forbade "interference" with the purdah domestic customs of his men, himself quite ignorant that much of purdah is a hollow facade that will collapse at the first breath of enlightenment and fresh air; ignorant also of the wholehearted welcome given by the soldier together with his family to any British woman who extends the hand of sisterhood to those so urgently in need.

Unfortunately, some officers' wives still shrink from contact with homes and families that fall so deplorably below the standard of living of their own; unmindful that it is to these homes and to these families that belong the men who, with their own husbands, serve in brotherhood of arms. Nevertheless, however, zealous be the workers in the cause of Indian soldiers' families, the inadequacy of government and regimental funds and building amenities available, restrict their efforts to the barest fringe of all that is waiting to be done.

It is high time that the Government should accept its responsibilities in the matter but, as long as British women are in India, a hundred per cent. return awaits any help and comradeship that they can and will give whilst Authority dallies and delays. Those Britishers who see in the simple countrywomen of India merely drab and shapeless figures trammelled by children and garments and burdens and care, little know that, behind all the camouflage, is a laughing, sunny-natured girl, quick and alert for that which could and should be done to help her to be worthy of her soldier man's return.

Those who have contacted her know that she is eager to escape from the apathy and ignorance that come from centuries of repression and stuffy seclusion and they know that she can learn as quickly as the men. At a regimental purdah party once, it was not the British hostesses who excelled at the familiar game of darts but the draped and muffled guests who, despite the impedimenta of infants and of garments alike, yet threw with unerring aim and nonchalance, the like of which not one had ever seen before, straight into the centre of an unfamiliar board.

With regard to purdah, as "Charles" points out, it is not generally known how many holes there already exist in that ancient curtain, so outmoded and outworn. A few examples taken from life in regimental family lines will be sufficient to illustrate this. For example: Most Viceroy's Commissioned Officers employ a man servant in their family quarter who is not only his master's bearer but also tends the children, does the household chores and is at his mistress' beck and call. An unexpected visit by a British officer's wife will generally discover this individual engaged in frantic efforts to turn household chaos into some last-minute semblance of order for the suitable reception of a Memsahib in the home.

Another example: In Delhi Cantonment, early in this war, an enlightened medical officer commanding the Indian Military Hospital encouraged the soldiers' women to come there for treatment. Not only did they come, but registered vehement protest if he, personally, did not visit them daily during their sojourn in the wards. Furthermore, he had a waiting list of childless women, who had applied to him for a minor but intimate surgical operation, which might ensure the longed-for son and heir.

More recently, the writer asked the British ladies of a certain Indian regimental training centre whether she might visit their family welfare centre. She was told that none of them had anything to do with it; it was administered by Captain X, the regimental Quartermaster. Her stunned astonishment was very great; and greater yet when this British officer, most enthusiastically and personally, escorted her round an admirable dispensary full of women and children awaiting the lady doctor; and then on, within a still more admirable maternity ward, complete with mother and newly-born babe.

This public-spirited Englishman was at home with all the workings and the needs of an Indian women's welfare centre that cried to high heaven for the support of the British and Indian officers' wives, amongst them his own wife. Meanwhile, he was doing their job most efficiently for them, as was eloquently proved by the maternity wards new "labour table," made under his own personal supervision and to his own design. As far as purdah was concerned, the question simply did not appear to arise. And indeed it presents no real problem in the future of India's growing girls.\*

<sup>\*</sup>The writer has been told by the wife of the present C.O. of the Regiment that the above picture is already out of date. She gives an inspiring account of current conditions in the women's centre, which now has the proud and enthusiastic support of ALL the regimental (Continued overleaf)



"Charles" raises some further points that may here be clarified. He states that "Indian education for women, with few exceptions, has failed to produce public-spirited citizens worthy of the country." True enough; but is that surprising? Education for the Indian woman is as yet a sparse and tardy growth whereas, since the dawn of time, her feminine ideals have been centred in the family and home.

History is full of instances of her selfless devotion in this cause, training for which began in earliest childhood and continued, sometimes, to a living death upon a husband's funeral pyre. Not all of India's suttees have been forced thereto.

The Indian woman understands all the ways of self-effacement, but this high standard has been narrowed to the service of family and of home. It is not surprising that with this limited ideal and within such cloistered confinement she has not as yet evolved a high civic sense. It is a far cry from the *purdah* veil to the wide range of social service which may for her involve ordeals of shyness together with the breaking of age-old customs and restraint quite beyond our Western comprehension.

Let us honour all the more those girls who have overcome their traditional seclusion and reticence to enter the public services now, under stress of war. That they are capable of high distinction for their country's need is proved by the brilliant careers of such women as Cornelia Sorabji, Begum Shah Nawaz, and others.

Unfortunately, as "Charles" observes, such education as we have given to India's girlhood too often results in the ability to pass examinations plus a thin veneer of lipstick, cocktails and smoke. Is not this because too much of the education has been a slick and shoddy structure, lacking all roots in the abiding things of home?

As has been shown, Indian woman is deep-rooted in the home, and it is around the things of home that her most worth-while lessons can be learnt at this stage of her development. Teach her the essential, vital verities of home and mothercraft, and upon these firm foundations can be built the superstructure of "higher education" and such else. The war has violently flung some Indian girls out into the world, lacking these eternal verities of feminine education, thus causing some of them to appear shallow and inadequate to the greatness of the hour.

The writer recently travelled with three of these newly emancipated young women on a long journey from Bombay to Madras. There was a Sikh captain's wife—a lovely girl—on her way to rejoin her husband. She told how: "My hubby said I had better go and have a good time in Bombay, because Madras is so terribly dull. So for a fortnight I went to the Races or to the Taj dances every afternoon, and to a cinema every single night."

wives, whatever their race, their creed or their rank. The subjects taught there, by the members' own request, include dressmaking, reading and writing in Urdu, Hindi and English. But "there is still so much that we could do, if only we had more funds, the lack of which handicaps us all the while."

The others were two young South Indian nurses, girls of a lower social grade, joining a Military Hospital on completion of their period of training. They chain-smoked all over the carriage and spoke nothing of their training or their work, but of "all the parties we had with the chaps in our unit."

The three girls were alike in their friendly courtesy towards an older woman of another race, and in their gay, slick superficiality. Throughout their birdlike chatter the war was never mentioned, but they displayed a knowledge of the cinema that was awe-inspiring and profound. All else—the prattle, the nail varnish, the cigarettes, the parties and the "chaps"—it was so brittle and so thin. Light girlish chatter can be charming to the ear, no less so because it is so fleeting and so light. But the patter of these nice young girls had such a hollow, vacant tone.

Still, there is a core of sound wisdom in the giddiest Indian girl; and their country's "Leaders" might with some profit have culled therefrom, had they been able to watch these three non-Muslim women enjoying repeated meals of Mussalmani curry on the train. Curry was what they wanted and curry was what they were going to have. If none other were available, then Mussalmani curry would do very well indeed. So Mussalmani curry it was. Oh very much it was!

And why not? There was no man to say them Nay; and woman is very much a realist. Sooner or later, she wearies of nonthis, non-that, and non-everything else. It was a man who first said, "Thou shalt not." And in India, some of them have been saying it to women ever since. For the rest, these girls were non-chalantly and superficially at ease in the wartime world in which they found themselves; but what they had acquired from the West seemed trivial and inadequate for India's mighty needs; the needs of the Fighting Men soon coming back to the Girls They Left Behind Them when they went off to the war.

Shall we not now see to it that the girls who have been left so far behind in the war be given the chance to catch up in time for the peace, more fully equipped to play their rightful part as citizens and patriots in India's growing destiny? It has been suggested that some such scheme should commemorate the Fallen Heroes of this war. What could be more noble and more chivalrous than that those who die for freedom should hand on the torch to Mother India's long-neglected little girls?

Feminine India is as perverse a bundle of contradictions and complexities as her Western prototype. And every man who knows anything at all knows that woman, ever since time was, has been the root cause of all this sad world's evil and its ills.

But no man has yet dared to lay the blame upon her for the ultimate crime of this world war. No wanton girl, tossing an apple that she did not want; no "Face that launched a thousand ships" is guilty of this black record in the earth's long history. World War No. Two is a man-made war. Will not Man now, on the eve of his coming splendid victory, see to it that the Girl He Left Behind Him in India shall be the better and the happier for this his terrible and latest war? And because: "Ultimately, a man will not rise far above the level of his own home."

#### THINGS PEOPLE SAY

"I wish they had wound it up a little more."—Victim of a Flying Bomb.

"The Burma front is as long as the whole Russian front."—Mr. L. S. Amery.

"One of the oil wells now opening in Britain is over 7,000 ft. deep."—"Daily Mirror."

"The Germans are the most peacefully inclined people I have ever met.'—Haw-Haw.

"The word 'fair' does not exist in the German language."— Mr. Harold Nicolson, M.P.

"Some of the smartest saluting in the world is to be seen in Moscow."—Mr. Winston Churchill.

"During this war over 15,000 crossings of the Atlantic have been made by air."—Air Chief Marshal Sir F. Bowhill.

"Many secret weapons were used by our armies for the first time when they invaded France."—Ministry of Supply, London.

"The military organisation with the best air photo reconnaissance will win the next war."—General Von Fritsch, in 1938.

"There are ten times as many serving sailors in the Royal Indian Navy as there were when war began."—Sir Firoz Khan Noon.

"Stinging nettles, dandelions and daisies are most commendable for the preparation of salad and spinach dishes."—"Koelnische Zeitung."

"The invading armies in Normandy were provided with the most accurate maps ever issued to an Army."—Flight-Lieutenant Anthony Vandyk.

"Before the flying bomb attacks the German Press was filled with articles on the 'iniquity' of air warfare; now it is filled with articles on its splendour."—"The Times."

"After the war we shall be able to fly from London to Australia in less time than it took my grandfather to travel from London to Edinburgh."—Sir Walter Layton.

"In 1938 the British public spent on their own consumption 79 per cent. of all they produced; in 1943 they spent on themselves exactly half of what they produced."—"The Round Table."

"The feelings of the Irish people towards Britain during the war have undergone a considerable change, precisely because Britain has not attempted to violate our neutrality."—Mr. de Valera.

"The U. S. Naval Air Force has now nearly 37,700 machines of all types. The U. S. Navy has 65 aircraft-carriers on active service."—Mr. Artemus L. Gates, U. S. Assistant Navy Secretary for Air.

"The assets of the British Empire are no longer to be reckoned in gold or foreign investments, but in the ability of our people to create and to serve."—Mr. Ernest Bevin, M.P., British Minister of Labour.

"According to the prisoner-interrogators in Normandy, 90 per cent. of the German prisoners have no opinions; they are not allowed to have opinions and have stopped trying."—
"The Times."

"No group of wireless propagandists compares with the London group, both in accuracy and up to date knowledge of the German armed forces or of internal conditions in Germany."—

Mr. C. J. Harman.

"Far fewer American troops have been killed in action in the entire South-West Pacific operations than were killed at the Anzio beachhead in Italy."—Mr. Nelson T. Johnson, U. S. Minister in Australia.

"Secret methods of destroying the obstacles erected by the Germans along the coast of Occupied Europe were perfected at the U.S. Naval Amphibious Training Base at Fort Pierce, Florida."—Mr. Joseph Driscoll.

"A jungle training camp is the real centre of service life in wartime India. Names like 'Bamboo Lane' and 'Tiger Way' compete in the lines with Princes Street and Piccadilly."—Mr. A. P. Ryan, in a despatch to the B.B.C.

"From 1909 to 1943 inclusive, 161,000 people have been killed upon British roads. During this war 50 per cent. more people have been killed and injured on roads in Great Britain than have been killed or wounded in the Forces."—Viscount Samuel.

"In the whole history of war there has not been seen any great undertaking so broad in conception, so grandiose in scale and so masterly in execution as the large-scale forcing of the Channel and the mass landings in Northern France."—Marshal Stalin.

"If we win the war and make a peace worthy of the sacrifices which have been offered, we shall have settled perhaps only one thing—that Western civilisation will move forward by way of evolution and not revolution."—The Dean of St. Paul's, London.

"According to our standards, the number of doctors in India is about one-eighth of what it ought to be; they have one midwife where there ought to be twenty; one dentist, one trained nurse, where we should have a hundred."—Professor A. V. Hill, M.P.

"The British Commonwealth Air Training Plan in Canada has trained 86,000 men—48,000 of them Canadians and the rest from Britain, Australia, New Zealand—as air crews."—Major the Hon. C. G. Power, M.C., Canadian Minister of National Defence for Air.

"From tidal studies of the English Channel begun two years ago in preparation for the invasion it was possible to tell where the tide would be at any given hour on any of the Normandy beaches from now or ten years from now."—Lieut.-Colonel E. L. Morris, U. S. Army.

Digitized by Google

"Those who think that Russia might grant terms 'to Hitler or even to the Wehrmacht should remember that for a space 1,000 miles long and 500 miles deep hardly a Russian house has been left standing or a Russian family left undisturbed."—
"The Round Table."

"The cost of the war to date to the United Kingdom alone has been about £19,000,000,000. The cost of the last war was less than £8,000,000. Already 47 per cent. of the national war expenditure has been raised by taxation."—Mr. Herbert Morrison, M.P., Home Secretary.

"Wise statesmanship after this war should be able to plan sufficient employment of our productive resources to increase our national income by one-half over that of 1938; that is, to achieve an increase of something like £2,302,000.000 in terms of pre-war purchasing power."—Lord Southwood.

"In a parachute making factory I saw a tiny parachute, not much larger than a pocket handkerchief, being made. I was told that these are used for dropping containers carrying pigeons to forces that must maintain radio silence. They send their message back by the birds."—Brian Bliss, in a broadcast talk from London.

"Hitler has done with his winged bombs what no man in Britain could have done. He has killed in a week that old sentimental streak in British people which invariably made us say to our enemies: 'Well, that's that. Let us forgive and forget.' This time there will be no forgiving and no forgetting."—Mr. John Gordon.

"The B.20 Super-Fortress has four 2,200 h.p. air cooled radial motors, has a span of 141 ft. 3 ins., length 99 ft., height 27 ft., and estimates put its bomb load at over 1,000 miles at about 17,500 lb., and 3,000 miles at about 6,000 lb. Maximum speed is said to be over 300 m.p.h. and cruising speed about 250 m.p.h. at 25,000 ft."—"The Aeroplane."

"Wilson's 14 points no more shortened the last war than five years of futile propaganda have shortened this. No political offers or blandishments have stopped the Germans from fighting. Even if the Atlantic Charter had been wholly applicable to the Germans—and of course it is not—they would still have ignored it for three years."—Lord Vansittart.

"With the loss of Avranches, the German forces along the whole of the line from Caumont are out on a limb. The west end of the limb is in the air as the German Command makes one unsuccessful attempt after another to anchor it somewhere on the seaboard. This left flank is being rolled up, with immense possibilities for the future."—The London "News Chronicle."

"A feature of Penicillin is that it is completely harmless to the tissues of the body and yet, when present in a strength of one part in fifty million, destroys the germs which cause wound infection. In other words, a man weighing eleven stone would only require one twenty-thousandth part of an ounce, much less than the weight of a pin's head, to render him safe from all the dangers of wound infection in any part of his body."—A surgeon broad-casting from London.

"The only way to prevent the menace of war in Europe is once and for all to do away with such a hub of friction and trouble. Germany must be completely divided up between the countries that surround her. That would remove the complications and precariousness of an international police force, with the attendant possibility that the Isolationists in America and a weak Government in Britain will recall their forces of occupation."

—Captain Cunningham-Reid, M.P.

"If the Army of the future is to be officered and commanded by the most intelligent and best material, the initial rate of pay of officers should at least equal (I suggest it should be slightly better than) that paid to the bank clerk or the counter salesman in a departmental store. What to my mind is as important or more important is that the system of increments should more closely approximate to that followed in business: it ought to provide for an annual increment of at least £25."—Field Marshal Lord Birdwood.

"A 24-hour ration pack, designed specially for the day of the assault, was issued to each man in the force which invaded France, together with a Tommy cooker and its patent fuel. The food had a high calorific value (4,000 calories), though its gross weight in a waved cardboard container was less than 2½ lbs. It comprised pressed blocks of pre-cooked dehydrated meat and of rolled oats with sugar and fats, together with a compressed block of tea, sugar and milk powder. Other ingredients were chocolate, boiled sweets, chewing gum, sugar tablets, and meat extract cubes."—"The Times."

"In war one should be prepared to meet one's adversary with every one of the weapons he possesses, and not discard them in favour of new kinds of weapons intended to surprise him. Hitler introduced the flying bomb and threatens the rocket bomb and other technical devices. If he could have done that and still sent over his Luftwaffe in its old form and on the old scale things might have gone hard with us. He neglected his air arm for the robot bomb, and thereby transgressed the above principle. In the result he has, to that extent, stepped down from the level on which we were both fighting and given us a head and shoulders advantage."—Mr. E. F. Esplin, in the "Daily Telegraph."

#### NEPAL INTERLUDE

#### By H. R. K. GIBBS

V ISITS INSIDE NEPAL are opportunities granted to few Europeans, and for many reasons travel in areas other than the Central Valley is of rare occurrence and a privilege to be accepted with avidity. Recently I was given permission by His Highness the Maharaja to go some distance into the district of Palpa, from where so many Gurkha soldiers hail.

The experience was as novel as it was delightful, since it came at a time when the hill paths were crowded with men going to and from their homes on leave from their regiments and when the cold weather trade was at its height. This meant that the world and his wife were on the move.

Leaving Nautanwa railhead early in the morning, a car took me along the five miles to the Nepal border. Here we struck a metalled road which was a pleasant contrast to the dirt track on the Indian side. Shortly after crossing the frontier we passed through Bhairawa, the seat of government for the Western Terai. Here are the houses of the Bada Hakim and other officials, the jail, Courts and the Exchange Post Office.

The country hereabouts is flat and open, dotted with mango groves and fine Kusum trees, whose newly-opened leaves were of a brilliant copper red. The open country soon gave place to the Terai Jungle of ill repute, owing to the deadly awal fever. At present large blocks are being cleared and the valuable sal and other hardwoods are exported to India. I saw large gangs of men with many elephants and bullock carts busily engaged in felling, hauling and sawing timber.

After a drive of a little over twenty miles Batoli or Butwal is reached at the foot of the hills where the Tinau Khola river debouches into the plains. The main town, which lies on the far side of the river, here spanned by a suspension footbridge, is of a considerable size and contains many large godowns, trade depôts and shops. Many Indian merchants have offices here to conduct their trading operations with Nepal.

Utility is perhaps its keynote rather than architectural beauty. The motor road proper ends on the left bank of the river in a collection of garages, shops and untidy huts and is known as Khaseuli. During part of the cold weather three battalions of the Nepalese Army go into a hutted camp here.

Here I picked up my guide—a young Nepalese Subedar, and his orderly and our little cavalcade set out for the hills. During the dry season the path follows the river as far as Dobhan, some six miles away, but in the rains and until the river falls all travellers must cross the Nawakot ridge, which entails a steep climb and descent.

After a short stretch through some fine big timber one enters the gorge with dramatic suddenness. It is on an average some thirty yards wide and on either side the cliffs go up sheer for many hundreds of feet. The path is rough and rocky. The stream is crossed and recrossed by temporary bridges of tree trunks and slabs of stone, and at times one must climb up rock staircases to negotiate cliffs.

Beachmarks show how high the water rises when the monsoon floods convert this brawling stream into a raging torrent. At its northern end the gorge ends as suddenly as it began, and we emerged into 'a huge circular amphitheatre named Dobhan, i.e., the meeting of two waters. The Dobhan stream joins the Tinau, which has already received the other tributary known as the Sisne

Khola.

A number of aboriginal Tharus cultivate some fields here, but at the time of my visit the clearing contained many batis, teashops and temporary resthouses for the many thousands of travellers who come and go during the cold weather. These batis are invariably run by Gurkha women, many of whom have in times past been in our Gurkha regimental family lines in cantonments. These batis are all beautifully clean and neat, and it needs but little excuse to drop and have a cup of tea and a chat with the hostess and her guests.

It was not long before I came across one little home where a well-known character lived. She has done two seasons' excellent recruiting work, a job she undertook when her husband broke a leg while bringing in recruits. While he was convalescing, he ran the teashop, helped by their twelve-year-old daughter. "Mrs.

Seti" meanwhile carried on recruiting.

Here I also caught up with a Subedar of my old regiment going home with his wife. The day was warm and the path was steep, so that the bottle of lemon-squash produced by the lady was doubly welcome. From here the path began to climb in real earnest through heavy forest. A sturdy hill pony, which never put a foot wrong, eased matters for part of the way, but nevertheless frequent halts were needed. The path was frequently a series of steps cut in the living rock, and elsewhere it was little better than a boulder-strewn goat track.

Several miles of this and we reached the little village of Ranibas, with its inevitable collection of teashops which demanded a rest and a drink. It was here that I was first particularly struck by a fact that was to be forced on my attention time and again during my trip.

It is not an exaggeration to say that two-thirds of the peoplemet carrying enormous loads are women. So great has the drain on Nepal's manpower been during these four-and-a-half years of war that there are just not the men left to allow their womenfolk to remain at home. As in wartime England so in Nepal, the women have taken over to release men for the army; and very capably they do it too. I welcome the opportunity to pay my humble tribute to their cheerful shouldering of the burden. The burden is literally a heavy one and I can bear witness to the fact that the average load was a good honest maund or more.

At the time of which I write the main traffic down to India was made up of ginger, ghee, and cinnamon, while the return load was usually composed of salt, tobacco, oil and cloth. Even young children of eleven and twelve trotted along with loads only slightly smaller than those of their elders. Those who have been in the hills, particularly in the Darjeeling district, will be familiar with the method of carrying—a basket high up on the shoulders and with the weight taken by a woven strap, called a namlo, on the forehead.

No load seemed too heavy to damp the cheerfulness of these irrepressible hillfolk. Odd snatches of song and a running fire of jokes confirmed the old saying that a merry heart goes all the way. There was precious little maidenly reserve about these girls, and I found that for my every Oliver a Roland was forthcoming, and my attempted wisecracks were returned with interest. I asked one youngish woman if she worked as a porter because her husband did not send her enough money as a Family Allotment. Her answer came in a flash: "Send my son home on leave and I'll tell you."

With a "Well, so long, I'm off," they shouldered their loads and carried on, and we turned the corner and dropped into the lovely valley of the Sisne Khola by way of the wooden bridge of Maryak. Memories of Glen Lyon, slopes of the Quantock Hills and the Wye Valley crowded in on one with waves of homesickness. Green wheat rippled in the breeze while nodding violets and the blushing crimson of the Cranesbill made one catch one's breath. Even the lesser Celantine heightened the illusion that in a step we had gone a thousand miles.

To add to the confusion, at the water's edge was a shrub which was very like the Buddleia. My guide gave it a name which can be translated as Heaven's Blue. Then came a group of the scarlet-flowered bushes here known as Dhairo—it may be the Grislea Tomentosa—and white-flowered wild-coffee plants. As we got higher up the valley Reinwardtia splashed its butter yellow along the hillside, and a homely Bachelor's Button grew with some sort of cow parsley not then in flower.

My wandering botanic thoughts were gate-crashed by my guide remarking: "Here comes the hill." We had rounded a knoll and the sight before me was hair-raising. A red clay wall reared itself up at as near the perpendicular as rock and earth can retain itself. Luckily the village of Sisne came first, with an invitation to fortify ourselves with still more tea.

The village was crowded with travellers, not least in interest being a large party of Bhotias taking back salt, and, as I could see, large sums in Indian and Nepali rupees. These Bhotias are big, heavily-built people, and both men and women are generally between five-foot-nine and six-foot tall. Their rust-coloured or blue smocks and long pigtails are very characteristic. They all seem to find life worthwhile if their continual singing is any guide.

After a short rest we tackled the final thousand feet to Maseng Ridge. It was a struggle amply rewarded by the superb view from the top. The ground falls away steeply on the far side into a deep

valley, into the centre of which a ridge thrusts itself from the hills on the northern side.

Immediately to the north some three-and-a-half miles away the white buildings of Tansing glittered against a red-earth background. Beyond Tansing rose ridge upon ridge backed by the shadowy outline of the giants of the main Himalaya. More to the left the road to Riri Bazar and Gulmi wound along another valley bright-green with growing crops. A low ridge intervenes between this little valley and the main valley of the Kali or Krishna Gandak river.

To the immediate east and west of Maseng itself are steep forest-covered ridges with a few homesteads dotted about their lower slopes. Here the crimson Rhododendron was in the glory of its full bloom. There was also another shrub with white flowers which I was unable to identify. The children gathered it to suck

the nectar from the base of its corolla tube.

Having seen my tent pitched on a little maidan of close-cropped turf I took stock of my surroundings. The village is a straggling one, with typical Gurkha homes scattered along the ridge and on terraces cut out of the hillside. A storm-riven Peepul tree marked the main open space where the path crossed the ridge. Here were the inevitable teashops and resthouses, while behind them was a small shrine to the goddess Káli Mái.

On a small shoulder of the ridge to the east was the village Maula, the place where the Dashera sacrifices take place. A thatched hut contained the paraphernalia used in connection with this and other important festivals. The houses are solidly built of stones set in mud and well plastered. Roofs are of thatch and the

buildings are always two-storied.

Some, built against the steep hillside, will have a basement used as a cattle byre although this is usually a separate building. The lower parts of the outside walls are normally coloured dull red, and the upper half is whitewashed. A small balcony is common and the woodwork of window and door frames is often carved. It is an unusual house that cannot boast of some flowers near the doorway or in window boxes and hanging baskets. Taken altogether these little houses are gay and spotlessly clean.

A typical bati or teashop is built much after the same style as a dwelling house, but the ground floor will usually consist of one large room and the upper floor will be supported on wooden posts instead of division walls. The front opening on to the road will have wide doorways along most of its length, and which can be partly or wholly closed by planks sliding into grooved posts. A verandah completes the accommodation.

The hostess presides over a charcoal brazier where tea and various sweetmeats, popcorn and the like are prepared. The tea is strange to European palates at first. It is very sweet, made with plenty of milk and fortified with a lot of pepper. I can strongly recommend it as "gunfire-tea" or as a warming drink on a cold

day.

The village fields grow crops of wheat, maize, soya beans, potatoes and pulses, while the paddy fields are confined to the valleys. Each house has its vegetable patch, which will always have a generous proportion of chillies and radishes. Ducks are

very popular, and everyone seems to own a few together with an assortment of fowls ranging from bantams to fine big Leghorns.

In my wander round the village I came across a number of old soldiers all anxious to talk about the war and their former regiments and British Officers. Among them was a hale and hearty old fellow building a new house. He had left the Service twenty years ago, and confessed that he was a bit out of date with his regiment's news. I mentioned the names of those he might remember, but it was only the very senior officers, many now retired, who were of his time. It was interesting to him, however, to learn that the son of his old Commanding Officer had just been decorated with the Military Cross for gallantry in Italy.

Dusk brought an end to the stream of travellers, and the rest-houses filled up as the cold wind sweeping over the pass drove man and beast indoors. I was invited to join one cheerful party over a dish of boiled eggs and curried potatoes. It was very snug and matey, with the flickering light from the fire as the only light. A lady passed me a tin mug of what I expected to be tea, but which in fact held a stiff dram of rum. The bar of the White Horse in my own Gloucestershire village never held a warmer welcome.

The village Mukhiya, or headman, put in a brief appearance. He wanted help in getting into touch with his only son, who had enlisted two-and-a-half years ago.

"I had the enlistment notice which was brought back by the recruiter," he told me, "and a month later I received this postcard from the boy, which told me he was happy, but he's never written since."

The old man produced the carefully-treasured documents for my inspection while he rambled on.

"He met a sahib one day when he went to Nautanwa and that set him off. He cried when we came home and some of his friends went off. I told him to wait a bit as he was only seventeen and going to be married. I wasn't surprised, however, to find he'd run away one night after the Dashera in 1941. Now the girl has gone off with another lad, and it's time Indrabahadur came home on leave and got married."

I cheered the old fellow up as best I could with a glowing account of soldiering. "That's all right," he replied, "I was in the Nepalese Army once myself, but the boy's mother is worried about this marriage." Then a bright idea came to him.

"Sahib, you ought to get him as your orderly and then you could bring him here with you." We came to an understanding that the father would write a letter and I would do all I could to have it sent on to the boy. This I have since done, so if, by chance the company commander of Indrabahadur Karki, son of Lalbahadur Karki, Mukhiya of Maseng Village and Thum of the Jilla and Tehsil of Palpa, ever reads this I hope he will make the lad write home. He joined the 9th Gurkha Rifles Centre in October, 1941, and I fancy he is in the 4th battalion.

Bed called after a strenuous day and plenty of blankets were needed as the wind cut like a knife. The crowing of a rooster and the cackle of foraging ducks provided my reveille next morning, and I woke to as glorious a view as eyes could look on. Away to the north towered the ice peaks of the great snowy range. Rosered in the light of the rising sun, Dhaulagiri reared its more than twenty-six thousand feet of massive bulk into a sky still dark-blue, while to its east were the two peaks beloved of all Gurkhas, Machha Pukhara and Mango Pati. The peaks were some fifty-five miles away, but in the clear light of dawn they seemed but half that distance away.

Lesser giants filled the horizon, so that one saw some two hundred miles of the main axis of the Himalaya. Truly it was a sight worth going far to see. The only comparable view was that which I saw two years ago when I saw the main range from a hill to the north of the Valley of Nepal. Ominous-looking storm-clouds were collecting, and I worked as fast as chilled fingers would let me to try and capture something of the sight and get it in my sketch book.

After a hurried meal we spent the morning walking about the ridge and for some distance down the road to Tansing. The stream of hill-folk flowed afresh, carrying their piled-up basket loads. Girls had posies of Rhododendrons tucked in their hair, while even hard-bitten old men as often as not wore a flower stuck in their caps or over one ear.

Once more the fact was impressed on one that the load-bearers were mainly women and old men. I doubt if I saw a dozen men of army age among a hundred of them. All the time I kept meeting parties of men going on leave or hurrying back to rejoin their regiments after a visit to their homes. All had the same story to tell; most of the villages had sent practically all their young men to enlist, and only the old and immature or unfit remained of the fighting classes.

However, their womenfolk carried on, and where reasonable family allotments had been made, a certain amount of hired labour could be obtained from among the menial classes. There was no grousing, or indeed any other idea than that it was natural and proper that all who could should enlist. There was a very evident

desire to have a crack at the Japs.

There is no doubt that these men on leave do much to sustain morale on the home front, and it was pleasing to note that for the most part they were well turned out. A good appearance and a stirring tale to tell combine to cheer up the old folk at home. From a purely eugenic point of view it is also essential that the flower of the manhood of Nepal should lay the foundations of generations to come, and not leave the breeding entirely to those less fit who have remained at home; only thus will the lean years be tided over.

The black clouds of the morning had by now blotted out the hills and the storm broke with vengeance. Rain soon turned to hail, and for four hours everyone went to ground and remained there. Evening brought a sickly sunset, with enough light to

let one see that the little streams had turned to frothing torrents-cascading down every fold in the hills. The roar of falling water came from all sides, and gave point to the many reports I had listened to in years gone by when men explained why they were late from leave. In a land where roads are almost non-existent and bridges few and far between, travel is indeed a matter of chance. I could not complain, however, because I had come, I had seen and I had been conquered by a lovely land and its delightful people.

The time came when my leave was up, and I too had to hurry back to India. A final hankering look at the tantalising valleys to the north and the toad which leads to the never never land and we slithered down the hillside. Dhaulagiri and Machha Pukhara in the morning light gleamed with new snow, and seemed to throw out a challenge and a warning: "If you would enjoy my loveliness you must give me your heart in keeping." So down we went, while other luckier folk toiled up the slopes that led to Parnassus—only they called it "Home."

## A TRADITION OF INFAMY

"I cannot exaggerate the brutality of the Germans in Hungary. What the Germans are doing is nothing less than setting up abattoirs in Europe into which are shepherded thousands of Jews. They are dispatched with the sort of brutal efficiency in which the Prussians delight. This is the biggest scandal in the history of human crime, and the responsibility rests with the German people.

"They may say later: 'Oh, it is the wicked Nazis.' The German people have the responsibility and also the German General Staff, who could have stopped it. I hope that when the time comes for exemplary punishment of the people responsible for these outrages, the German General Staff will be the first to be dealt with.

"These generals in Germany talk about chivalry, and the traditions of the German General Staff. I have never thought much of those traditions, but there is now a tradition of infamy attached to them that will never die, and I hope that these men will pay for the bestial cruelties they are perpetrating against the Jewish people.

"What delights me so much is that the Russian general most likely to take his troops first on German soil is a very distinguished Jew."—Mr. Brendan Bracken, British Minister of Information.

## HOW SIMLA WELCOMES B.O.Rs. ON LEAVE

# BY MAJOR R. B. LATHERON

ONE RESULT of this war has been to remove the legend that Britishers are not friendly folk. At Home neighbours, fellow passengers and chance acquaintances have broken that reserve for which we are famous.

Here in India, too, that warm cordial atmosphere has shown itself in many ways—not least in the eagerness with which people try to make a holiday in the hills for the B.O.R. an occasion which will be remembered long after this war ends.

Simla, for instance, can be proud of the part she has played in this hospitality. There, amidst thickly wooded slopes and scenery unsurpassed in its grandeur in India, many a British soldier has already spent two happy weeks in a climate reminiscent of Home, and in as English an atmosphere as he could find in the whole country.

Most fortunate of all are those who come to the Leave camp in Viceregal Estates, for there, thanks to the kindly thought and generosity of Their Excellencies Lord and Lady Wavell, the lads from the Fourteenth Army, American soldiers serving in India and some sailors have been able to thoroughly enjoy their holiday.

The beautiful lawns and gardens, facilities for tennis, a club-room for rest, writing and refreshments, the Viceroy's own cinema, a billiard-room and squash-court are all available—and the British soldier has had his fill of them all. For tennis and squash, Messrs. Uberoi, the Sports Outfitters, have helped by supplying the necessary equipment.

Three zones have been set up in the Leave Camp, which has proved so popular that its accommodation has been increased from 174 to 230 and may, within a few weeks, be increased to 300. Each zone has its own central house, containing the dining rooms and lounges, while surrounding it are smaller houses used as dormitories; each zone has its Lady Superintendent. These houses are normally used by H. E. The Viceroy's personal staff.

Every zone is self-contained in the facilities the Camp provides. Each has its own hairdressing saloon, tailor's shop, washing arrangements and refreshment section. One zone even has its own "Ye Olde English Pub," called the "Elephant and Palm." At first it was an old stable, with a barrel of beer propped up inside. Their Excellencies allowed certain structural alterations to be made, and with the help of an artist in the Welfare Directorate, Captain Dast, the stable was converted into a small English country pub.

Its fame is spreading far beyond Simla, judging by the way our "holiday makers" foregather there for their morning beer, swapping stories, talking of Home, and generally enjoying themselves. Many of those who were on leave at the time will retain vivid memories of the opening day, when Lord and Lady Wavell,

their family, and many other well known visitors came in to drink with those present.

Here, incidentally, is an idea for other Leave Camp centres—and if any one wishes to know something of how it is all done, I cannot do better than recommend him to write to Lieutenant R. K. Harding, who is in charge, and who has done splendid work there. Here is a model which all concerned with providing the commodity of leave might usefully study and imitate.

Three "Zones" have been established in the Viceregal grounds. In the centre is the Club Wing, in which is the Club House for the whole camp. This Club was started by Lady Wavell, and Her Excellency never fails to take a personal interest in it and in those to be found there. Furnished with deep, comfortable lounge chairs, writing tables, a library, the visitor can sit back and relax, or he can join in games, partake of light refreshments, or read.

We must here pay tribute to the ladies of the W.V.S. of Simla who look after the refreshment side. They also deserve warm thanks for the excellent shop set up in the Camp. There the holiday makers find parcels of food and sweets already packed for dispatch to Home. All the soldier needs to do is to select his parcel, write the label—and the W.V.S. does the rest.

Above the Club house is the combined cinema and concert hall, a panelled chamber with a lofty, domed roof. Residents of Simla, too, give periodic concerts, some of which are held in the beautiful ballroom of Viceregal Lodge.

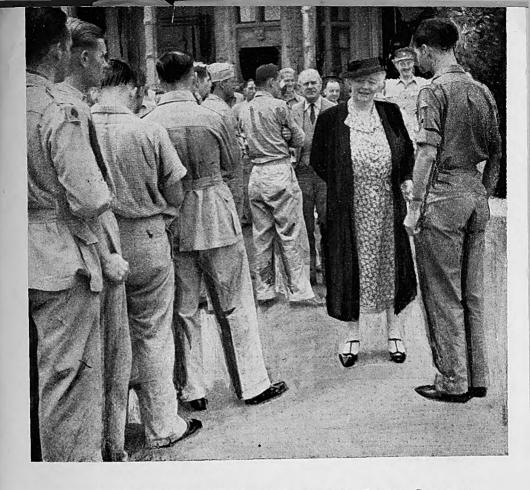
Men from the "forward" areas sometimes unfortunately fall ill soon after their arrival, and for them we are shortly to have a Sick Bay, with a medical officer in attendance. The nursing will be done by volunteers from the St. John Ambulance Brigade, and accommodation will be available for twenty-five patients.

"Informality" is the keynote of the whole Leave Camp. Everyone has complete freedom. Civilian clothes are available to everyone as soon as they arrive, and they can be used up to 8 p.m. after which uniform must be worn. Their Excellencies, when in residence, can frequently be seen among the troops, many of whom send Home "snaps" of the Viceroy and Lady Wavell chatting to their friends.

Residents of Simla, too, have played their part in extending a warm welcome to these soldiers, and, indeed, it is not going too far to say that it is rivalling the traditional hospitality of Cape Town and Durban. Foremost is the excellent work of the W.V.S., to all members of which the Forces are most grateful.

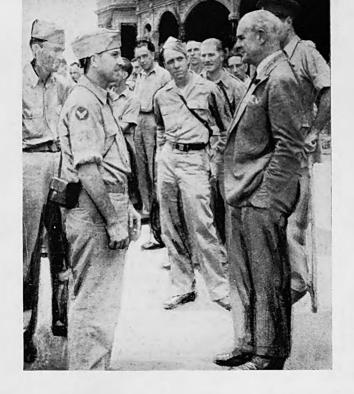
The W.V.S. arranges dances (and every soldier is guaranteed to have a partner), collect books, and maintain hists of people anxious to entertain soldiers on leave. Incidentally, Simla has an excellent "United Services Orchestra," which plays at dances, and its standard is very high.

Regular tea dances are organised and held in the largest hotel in Simla by a group of local people, and the scheme has proved successful that the management has decided to arrange similar functions at other hotels in India under their management.



Informality is the keynote of the Leave Camp at Viceregal Estate. Above: Lady Wavell Chatting to some visitors. Below: A group photographed with H. E. the Viceroy and Lady Wavell.





Lord Wavell meets some American soldiers on leave in the Viceregal Estate camp. Below: His Excellency with some of the Men in the Club House.



Another homely place is "The Ridge Club," the only really central building on a flat space in Simla. It is run by the W.V.S. There the Serviceman may read, write, lounge or have a meal at a reasonable price during his tours of the town. There, also, he will find the names and addresses and obtain introductions to hospitable residents.

The Y.M.CA. hostel, built it in one of the best positions in Simla, and overlooking a huge valley, also caters for a number of Servicemen.

Simla's famous Amateur Dramatic Society, which has been running for over a hundred years, arranges a special performance for soldiers on leave for all their productions, and there, in what is undoubtedly the most comfy little theatre in all India, the soldiers enjoy shows worthy of professional companies.

This, then, is Simla's welcome to the man on leave. It is as sincere a welcome as is extended in other parts of India, but this article may perhaps give other organisers a few ideas. It has not, I may add, been written with the object of attracting more visitors (one can gather why!) but rather with the thought of paying a tribute to kindly people. Those hosts may be sure that their thought for the soldier will not be forgotten, and that years hence their guests will remember their stay in India's finest Hill station with the greatest possible pleasure.

## A SCOOP MISSED

"Strange how we Allied journalists miss scoops. Here is Mr. Morgenthau in our midst, and the feature of his trip to Europe which will figure most in history was given us on the German wireless during the week end. The Secretary of the Treasury, it said, on his visit to Normandy had been to Bayeux, and there he had 'acquired' the famous tapestry! How those two eminent German collectors, Goering and Ribbentrop, must be kicking themselves for not having thought of it before Goebbels."

"Peterborough," in the "Daily Telegraph."

# AN ALTERNATIVE TO INTERNATIONAL FORCE

"General Eisenhower has recently mentioned the infinite possibilities of development of the flying bombs. Such devices, but of a more devastating thoroughness than the present missiles, should provide the Allied Nations after the war with the means of stifling every sign of renewed aggression by Germany.

"Co-ordinated emplacements of such missiles, each adjusted to a different German centre, could be situated, not only on the shores of England, but also in every one of the invaded countries. This would considerably relieve of its duties whatever international force is contemplated to maintain the peace, and would reduce, possible to zero, the casualties to be suffered in forcing Germany to behave. Incidentally, the Germans may be interested in seeing that even their devilish devices can be turned to a useful purpose.":

—"A Continental," writing to "The Spectator."

## ELEPHANTS IN BURMA

# By Major F. D. Edmeades

As the re-occupation of Burma draws near, some notes on these wonderful animals may be useful. The layman knows little about them, and in the following notes I have tried to give a non-technical description of the rôle they play in Burma, and how they should be treated.

Burma is the natural habitat of a large population of elephants, so it is only fitting that some should be harnessed. It is about the latter I intend to write chiefly, but a short note on the wild elephants which may be encountered by campaigners may be useful.

There were about 6,000 domestic elephants at the time of evacuation of Burma, but the number of wild elephants was of course unknown. About five years ago a census by the Forest Department of the wild elephants in Burma gave a total of some 15,000 animals, but as this was, of necessity, based upon hearsay, observation and intelligence guesswork, I may be excused for thinking that there were many more than this.

Wild elephants are usually found in herds varying from 10 to 100 animals, mostly females and calves, with only a small proportion of full-grown bulls. A few bulls appear to prefer a lonely existence at times. Usually one big tusker dominates the herd until his position is challenged, when he may be thrown out of the herd and is liable to become a "rogue"—an animal which is soured of his fellows and at variance with everything and everybody.

A "rogue" is also caused sometimes by an animal losing a tusk in a fight, after which the stump turns septic, causing intense agony and loss of mental control. *Musth* (described later) may also cause a temporary rogue. The July number of this *Journal* published a detailed article of rogue elephant hunting, so I will not mention him further.

The herds favour the more remote forest areas, but they are frequently attracted to cultivated areas in search of succulent paddy and sugarcane, so villagers on the fringe of dense jungle are frequently worried by marauding elephants, which usually become bolder and bolder in their depredations when they learn how defenceless the villagers are. Government was compelled to assist the villagers on the lines of the schemes practised in Africa, and large numbers of elephants were shot with the object of killing the bolder ones and frightening away the more timid animals into the remote forests.

Normally wild elephants are not as dangerous as fiction writers pretend, although one should always respect them. They are liable to charge if suddenly confronted, but normally they will stampede at any unusual noise. The stampede, however, should

not be taken lightly, as they are liable to trample one under foot if in their line of retreat. This line is usually downhill, and they travel at great speed, dislodging trees and boulders in their mad flight.

When grazing they are noisy creatures, and if one refrains from untoward noise when in elephant country it is always possible to hear a herd from some distance. One can then startle them out of one's path by making a noise or a shout from a point of vantage, with a protective tree or rock, just in case! A lone elephant, or perhaps a rogue, however, may hear the slightest noise and remain perfectly quiet for ten minutes or more. Then one is liable to stumble upon him unawares. This is the dangerous element, as he may charge from fright, but in most cases he would be frightened out of his wits—but not always.

Elephants have acute hearing and smell, but their sight is limited. They seldom look up into trees, but even so one would need to be at least 15 feet above ground to be out of danger of a determined rogue, and the tree should be able to withstand a charge by three tons travelling at speed. When confronted with a rogue it is surprising how few trees are climbable by a man wearing boots!

Shooting a wild elephant was described, in the July Journal. The head shot for the brain should always be taken. If this is impossible do not shoot. A charging elephant always has his head held high, with trunk coiled up as if to protect it, so the head shot will then be right into his mouth, if necessary through the coiled trunk. A side shot is directly into the ear-hole. The frontal shot when the animal is standing normally is through the bump of his forehead about three inches above the level of his eyes. No other shot should be taken as it is only liable to wound. Such a wound may, of course, prove fatal at some later date, but the doomed animal may suffer intense agony for days, or even months, with a gradually extending wound full of maggots. That thought should deter anyone but a Jap from ever wounding one of these fine beasts, whether rogue or otherwise.

Owing to the probability of causing this intense suffering with small bore rifles, the Government would only issue a license for shooting elephants to owners of rifles of a calibre of .450 or larger. In the event, therefore, of any shooting with a service rifle being necessary, the tip of the .303 bullet should be filed off to leave it blunt nosed. It is thought to have greater hitting power in this shape, and less likely to go right through the animal, thus causing only a wound.

In the last few days I was informed at (second-hand admittedly) that the crew of a bomber over Burma found it amusing to shoot at any elephants seen during the return from bombing missions. I hope they will read, mark, learn and inwardly digest the foregoing remarks. It must certainly be amusing to watch a stampeding herd from the air, but this can be enjoyed without firing at the elephants and would cause no harm.

The six thousand domestic elephants in Burma were engaged upon timber work, in addition to transport of baggage and stores

connected with that industry. Some four thousand were owned by the Government and the big European timber firms, and all these were left in the care of their native mahouts (Burmese: oozies) at the evacuation. Most of them bear the brand marks of their owners on their hind quarters, but the remaining two thousand owned by Burmans and Karens were usually recognised by other distinguishing features and did not carry brand marks.

In years of good trading, the average value of well trained tuskers was about Rs. 6/7,000, and females about Rs. 4/5,000. It will be realised what valuable animals they are compared with bullocks at, say, Rs. 70 each.

The difference between African and Indian elephants is generally known, but the Burma elephant is rather smaller than the Indian elephant in height, although more sturdily built and therefore more suitable for timber work. Even the Assamese and Cambodian elephants, although only separated by barrier mountain ranges, are of a more "scraggy" type than the sturdy Burma variety.

Only the males have tusks, but a few males are found with only one, and some have none at all. A few females have tushes, as do some of the tuskless males, but they generally only protrude a few inches from the lips. Most of the single tuskers have suffered the loss of one tusk by accident or ill-growth.

Working elephants are acquired by captures from the wild herds, or from breeding among the domestic animals. Captures of wild ones are made by "kheddah" or by "melar shikar." The former method entails driving a herd into a bottle-neck stockade, while the latter is the term applied to capture of individual animals by trickery.

"Kheddahs" are run under a Government license by Burmans, Karens or Indians, although the latter usually prefer "melar Shikar." The "Kheddah" entails a big "V" shaped stockade, either arm of which may be 600 yards long, with a long narrow corral at the apex. Observation is first maintained to locate a herd of suitable animals for capture and to ascertain their habits, i.e., where they graze and water.

At the appointed time the herd is slowly headed off in the direction of the stockade, great care being taken not to stampede them. This drive may cover many miles, and may therefore take several days. The men surrounding the herd must never be seen; they drive the herd by "noises off" while hidden in trees or undergrowth—mostly in trees. They have to sleep or rest in situ, as their vigilance can never be relaxed.

After several days of this active watchfulness, the herd is finally driven into the stockade leading into the long narrow corral in which the animals are wedged tight in single file. Then pandemonium breaks loose, as one can well imagine. By means of trained elephants the captives are removed one by one, and led away to nearby trees to which they are tied. By degrees their training is undertaken.

The first performance is, of course, to accustom them to human beings and the men sit round them and sing. Thereafter,

slowly, slowly, they are taught to behave. It may take six months before some animals can proceed alone, *i.e.*, not strapped to another elephant.

Even after six months they can do little more than march under control, and it is probably a year or two before they can be put to work, depending upon the temperament of the animals and the skill of the men. It is, however, astonishing to think that this "Lord of the Jungle" can be harnessed to hauling of timber one year after capture.

"Melar Shikar" calls for very great skill, but only young animals can be caught in this manner. Two specially trained elephants known as "koonkies" are used. By means of special gear the riders are able to conceal themselves on the off side, away from the elephant to be captured. The "koonkies" come up on either side, and jostle close up against the wild one. A rider silently and deftly applies ropes round the wild elephant and fixes them firmly to the "koonkies," which then move off to a nearby tree, to which the captive is tied. The training follows as for a kheddah capture.

The capture of wild elephants is a dangerous game, and one must doff one's hat to the bravery and skill of the men who elect such a hazardous livelihood. As with most junglies, however, they frequently have little thought for their victims, and a strict Government control is necessary to see that the animals receive veterinary attention, and medical care from the attendants.

Some of the captures suffer mental shock from the change of life, but most seem quite happy a year or so after capture, and soon settle down to a life where their every mood is studied and great care is taken to preserve them in full health.

Elephants born in captivity are generally better trained than wild captures, but this is not always the case. Until a few years ago a youngster was weaned and "broken-in" at the age of 5 or 6 years, but nowadays the European firms have succeeded in training them from birth, and no proper "breaking in" is necessary.

They are taught to behave when less than a year old, and when three or four years of age have a little howdah (Burmese: kah) which is increased in size as the baby increases in stature. At the age of four it is weaned by removing it from its mother and a rider (Burmese: oozie) is allotted to it. At seven or eight it carries a small load, say a bedroll, and becomes a member of the transport. It remains a transport animal until about 15 years old, when it is taught to haul timber, though only hauling small logs until it is hardened to the job.

An elephant reaches its prime at about 25, and continues so until about 40, when it slowly declines until at 55 most animals have to be taken off work. Its span of working life is thus much like a man's—he begins work at 15/17, and at 55 has reached pensionable age as far as active work is concerned. Females are worked the same as males, but they, of course, are not as powerful.

Once properly trained, an elephant is usually well-behaved, although there are exceptions. A very small proportion of tuskers

are wicked brutes, requiring very special care on the part of the attendants to prevent them from injuring or killing other animals, or even humans. Such animals have two men in attendance all the time they are at work, but as often as not they are the most powerful animals and the best workers, otherwise they would not be tolerated. Females very seldom are, or become, "wicked," but this is usually due to mental deficiency rather than temperament, and they have to be destroyed.

The condition of "musth" comes upon most male elephants periodically. Much has been written on this subject, and I do not propose joining in a controversy as to its cause and effect. It is apparently a form of sexual lust in the males which develops a state of temporary insanity, due to pressure on the brain. Some tuskers go on "musth" every year, others at variable periods, but it usually follows a period of rest.

They all behave differently when in this condition, but individual animals generally react similarly every time it occurs. Most tuskers seek out a consort on these occasions, but sometimes they savage a female, perhaps because their attentions are rejected. A few animals become completely unmanageable and really vicious, and woe betide any attendant who has not observed the condition approaching. Such a beast has to be tied up in good time and not released until he has calmed down.

Different animals have different degrees of viciousness, while some are quite normally behaved while "musth." Vicious brutes which escape, or which have not been tied up in time, can terrorise the countryside, and unless great skill is exercised in their recapture, may have to be destroyed before causing hurt to humans.

The onset of "musth" is observable by moisture oozing from the glandular apertures or ducts just behind the eyes. This increases to a flow of moisture over a period of 6/8 days; thereafter he begins oozing from the nether regions until there is a steady flow. This remains until the condition has passed off. It may subside in a week or two, or it may continue for months, but the latter is not common.

At the first sign of the moisture at the temporal duct, "musth" precautions should be taken, depending upon the known behaviour of the animal when in that condition. Usual precautions amount to heavier fetters and tethering chain, and if liable to become vicious, the animal should be tied up. When tied up it is of paramount importance to see that unlimited water supply is maintained. If very violent it may be necessary to curtail food supply, but water should never be restricted.

Some authorities think females are also liable to "musth" but I have never thought so, although there are times when moisture exudes from the temporal duct and when certain females behave queerly, but this is never seen to the extent it occurs in males.

The period of gestation is about 21 months, but varies a week or two either way, and is usually longer in the case of male calves. It is sometimes quite difficult to observe that a female is in calf, and experienced elephant men are frequently deceived. It is customary to rest a female three months before and six months after the event—the latter is, of course, to give the calf a chance to grow strong enough to follow its dam.

Calves are usually about 3 feet in height at birth, and frequently are covered with hair, which is absent in the case of older animals. They are on their feet a few minutes after birth, like other animals. Occasionally mothers desert their calves at birth, but generally they have no objection to anyone approaching the new calf. There is often a "foster mother" which never deserts the young calf, and this probably is Nature's protection against tigers, which sometimes attack calves but never full grown elephants.

There are many cases on record of females giving birth at 13 years of age, which means that they reacted to the male's attentions when only 11, and at that age they are little more than half grown. Such calves are normal in every way.

There have been two or three cases of twins in the past 25 years, so it is not a common occurrence.

Timber elephants are not stall fed, but fend for themselves in the jungle. They are hobbled by means of fetters on their forelegs to prevent them running away, and it is best to attach a tethering chain about 25 feet long so that there should be a more obvious trail to enable the rider to follow up the elephant. Each animal also has a wooden "bell' round its neck; the different tones are known to the riders, and by this means each can identify his own elephant from a distance. A metal bell indicates an animal which is vicious, and is a warning to villagers to keep well clear of the wearer. It is essential to see the fetters are in good repair and fit properly, for if they come apart the elephant is liable to run away, and possibly join a wild herd.

Wild fodder is sometimes supplemented by a paddy ration of 15/20 lbs. a day, preferable soaked or half-boiled. If wild fodder is scarce it may be necessary to purchase plantain trees or sugarcane, and this applies also where they have to be kept in cultivated areas. They require about 600 lbs. of green fodder daily. When "stall fed" much of this is trodden under foot, but this much is required, nevertheless. Abundant water supply is essential and if there has to be a preference between good water or good fodder, the former is the more important.

Hobbled elephants, when grazing, sometimes wander long distances during the night, and when fodder is difficult to find, may be located up to four miles away from the camp when the riders follow them up next morning. When there are a number of elephants released from the same camp in the evening, it will be realised that each rider has to exercise some skill in tracking his own elephant in the half-light of early dawn. A mistake will entail another long walk after his own animal.

Such mistakes do occur, however, especially during the rainy season, when swollen torrents obliterate tracks, and it is most annoying on the march to be held up while a missing elephant is tracked down.

When an animal is really lost, all hands are turned out to the search, which may extend to several days. This may reveal that the animal's fetters have parted and that it has joined a wild herd. A small party is then told off to follow the herd until an opportunity offers to separate the tame animal, in order to recapture it. This may take days or weeks, or even months, but as long as the elephant can be traced the chase is not abandoned.

The Burma timber draggers are not as highly-trained as the Indian elephants are, as the Burmans are satisfied if they perform their work reasonably well. They are very hardy, however, and are able to haul heavy logs from crags and gullies in the steephills which would seem quite impossible to the uninitiated. In Kipling's days they were extensively employed in the mills in Rangoon, but modern electric cranes have now taken their place for piling the teak squares and baulks.

In Moulmein, however, custom dies harder. In 1942 some 20 animals were employed in the different timber yards there, and proved a source of amusement to all visitors. They were, of course, very highly trained to work among the whirl and noise of machinery and to pile the timber in the orderly manner necessitated by restricted space.

It was uncanny to watch them drop whatever they were carrying as soon as the mill whistle sounded the midday break. No amount of goading and enticement would get them to touch another stick until they had finished their feed and the restarting whistle had sounded. The carrying of heavy baulks of timber caused considerable wear to their fine tusks, to an extent which necessitated the fitting of steel sheaths to protect the ivory from wearing right away.

As timber draggers, big elephants can haul two or three tons on level ground. For larger logs they are used in tandem. Sometimes as many as three are used thus. Most of the domestic elephants are draggers, and are therefore not used to carrying heavy loads on their backs. When engaged upon transport, about 500 lbs. inclusive of harness, is a good load. with smaller loads in proportion to the size of the animals.

Ten or twelve miles is a good march for loaded elephants, but they can do longer with suitable rest afterwards, and provided they are not exposed to hot sun. Always beware of the sun. Marches should preferably be done at night in hot weather. Two and a half miles an hour is a good pace for loaded elephants on the flat.

Pack saddles known as guddees or Sanderson's gear, are the best for transport purposes, but the Burmese "kah" can be used if proper care is taken to see there is sufficient padding. Padding usually consists of the bark fibre of a tree (Bambwe). Sanderson's gear is an item of Ordnance supply.

There should be a girth, with neck and crupper ropes, to keep the pack saddle in position, otherwise a sore back is certain. Sore backs usually appear in the nature of hard and hot swellings.

sometimes the size of a football, and these may take months or even years to heal. Once a sore back has been caused it is likely to be a weakness for life, even after it has seemingly healed up.

Loaded elephants can follow any hill path, no matter how steep or difficult, providing they are given their own time and speed and if their gear is fitting properly. They require at least 15 hours per diem to search for food and rest, so that marches in hilly country should be measured by time under load, rather than distance.

They usually lie down once or twice for short periods during the night, but are never found lying down in the daytime, when in good health. During the day they may rest under the shade of a tree, gently flapping their ears and swinging their tails to ward off the many insects which worry them. Six to seven hours under load is generally enough, but they can do more in an emergency if well rested afterwards. Elephants on normal work are usually given two days complete rest in seven.

Burman elephant owners and the trained staffs of the timber firms and Government usually understand all the duties of elephant attendants, and can be relied upon to look after their charges to the best advantage. Since the evacuation, however, many of the elephants have fallen into hands which are not so well trained, and it may be necessary to check their activities and keep them up to scratch.

The Japs have been using elephants extensively for transport purposes, and some have been employed on timber work under their previous attendants. It is feared, however, that many of those used for military transport will have been badly treated or overworked, so there is likely to be a great shortage of elephants for the timber industry after re-occupation.

It will be in the interest of campaigning troops to take the best possible care of all the elephants which come into their hands during the campaign, and it is suggested that if it is necessary to use a number of such animals it would be as well for them to be supervised by men familiar with elephant management and with the men who will have to ride them. It will also be necessary to arrange for a certain amount of elephant gear and chains for use with animals found, as most of such equipment is likely to have been worn out or lost.

Veterinary attention for elephants is of course a specialised subject, but any Army Vet. should be able to attend to surface wounds or sores. These are most likely to be in the form of swellings, which should be treated in the normal manner by incisions, with due attention to drainage, and then healed with disinfectants and fly repellants.

The skin of an elephant is thick, but it is of such texture as to preclude its use as a hide. For this reason they should be regarded as very thin-skinned animals, and the absence of fur renders them vulnerable to all the myriads of stinging insects which the jungles conceal. Horse flies, mosquitoes and "sandflies" (misnomer) surround them in a cloud and cause the riders considerable discomfort.



When loosed, the elephants usually head straight to a mud bank or wallow, whereat to smother themselves with mud by rubbing or by throwing it over themselves with their trunks. By this means they hope to keep off some of the attackers. They are also infested by ticks, leeches and warbles, so it is necessary to watch for these pests, which are thought to affect their health and condition.

When loading kerosene or petrol care should be taken to see there are no leaks, otherwise their tender skins are liable to suffer severely.

Their internals are infested with numerous parasites, but Nature seems to provide for them as long as an animal is in good health. A falling-off in condition, however, appears to favour these parasites, and resort to medicines is necessary to check their incidence. Of recent years research into this subject has been intensified, but there is still vast scope. Arsenic is a drug commonly used both as a tonic and as a destroyer of parasites, and up to 10 gr. per diem can be given continuously with good effect.

Anthrax and surra are dangerous epidemic diseases. In recent years annual anti-anthrax inoculations were carried out extensively to good effect. Surra is generally warded off by prophylactic courses of arsenic, but the drug "Nagonal" is the only effective treatment when the disease reaches epidemic form. Elephants employed in marshy country should be given an arsenic tonic weekly as protection against surra.

If any Army Vet. is interested in the subject of elephants I shall be pleased to direct him to the proper authority if he communicates with me through the editor of this *Journal*.

The intelligence of an elephant compares favourably with that of horses or cattle, but for such a large animal one would have expected it to be higher. Stories of the "Elephant-never-forgets" type convey an entirely wrong impression, although in the few cases where a domestic animal turns "rogue" one can detect a degree of cunning sagacity which is not ordinarily noticeable among either wild or tame elephants.

It is not generally realised that the teak industry of Burma depends upon elephants, and that without them only a very small proportion of the annual teak output could be obtained. Unlike most other timbers, teak trees do not grow en masse, and teak forests comprise many different species, most of which are useless. Only the largest trees are felled, the smaller trees being left to attain exploitable size, when they also are felled. This means that the system of working is to cover the whole area of teak forest every thirty years, felling only those trees which have reached a certain size.

The result is that the incidence of extractable trees is very small, generally as few as one per acre, sometimes very much less, and as the teak forests cover some of the most hilly country it would not be an economical proposition to extract the timber by any means other than the elephant. Once the timber has been hauled into concentrated depôts it is possible to supplement

elephants by mechanical power, or by water buffaloes and bullocks, but there is no other means by which the logs can be hauled out of the crags and crannies of the steep hills.

Even after the timber has been thrown into the streams the necessity for elephant help remains. Most of the logs have a very long journey down the various waterways and elephants have to-patrol them to keep the logs moving. In America this work is done by men, but elephants are more proficient and the "lumber-jacks" would be very thankful for a few elephants to help them. It is a very fascinating sight to see a party of well-trained elephants working on a jam of logs in a roaring torrent, the noise of which is sufficient to drown all the shouts and upbraidings of the riders, but they do not desist from their labours until the mass of logs is once more on the move. One forms the impression that the animals themselves quite enjoy this side of their work, and one can almost detect a sigh of joy, or relief, when the logs start to move again.

Sometimes large numbers of logs, maybe thousands, are left stranded on sandbanks when a high flood subsides, a most galling sight to the elephants, which have to haul them all across the sand, back to the shrunken waterway. Machinery could help in such instances, but the problem of getting a tractor to the spot would present an unsurmountable difficulty, whereas elephants are able to march there without let or hindrance, carrying all their kit, rations, and gear.

It will be realised then the extent to which the large revenues which Government receive from the teak output are dependent upon the elephant, and how important it is for all the trained elephants to be treated with the care and respect they deserve.

#### A VISIT TO POTUGUESE DAMAN

By Major John L. Christian,

General Staff Corps, U. S. Army

OLD GOA was undoubtedly the most fabulous city ever built by Europeans in Asia, and the prospect of visiting the place, and the other two small enclaves of Portuguese territory on the West Coast of India has intrigued me for a long time. I have, however, recently been fortunate enough to visit Daman, the second largest unit of the Portuguese "State of India," and about 100 miles north of Bombay.

Within a single generation, from 1498, when da Gama dropped anchor in Calicut, to 1542, when Fernando Mendes Pinto reached Japan, the Portuguese established a remarkable string of fortifications and trading posts extending in a great arc from Mozambique to Ceylon.

From Ceylon another great semi-circle curved around the Bay of Bengal down to Malacca, and thence up the China coast. Serrao coasted off Malacca and Sumatra in 1501, and Jorge Alvares reached Canton in 1514. The great Albuquerque won Malacca in 1511 and extended Portuguese power into the Gulf of Aden. In 1514 he seized Ormuz, at the gate to the Persian Gulf.

Meantime, other Portuguese adventurers visited Bengal, Burma, Siam, the Nicobars, and were fighting with Achinese pirates from the northern tip of Sumatra. Of their once extensive interests in Asia, only Macao, Timor\* and the three units of Portuguese India now remain under the flag which has as its centre medallion a map of the globe to commemorate their great discoveries.

To return to Daman. The little colony, which has a total area of 82 square miles and a population of about 60,000, is divided into two parts. The capital is situated near the centre of an irregular coastal strip about five miles long and three miles wide. This territory is divided by the Damanganga River, the mouth of which is guarded by two ancient fortresses. The fortress of St. Jerome, a sturdy example of medieval fortification, was being put to practical use at the time of my visit. I was shown the massive padlocked door to the keep, and was told that it guarded the town's supply of rationed kerosene oil.

This coastal portion of Daman was acquired by the great Viceroy, Dom Nunha da Cunha, in attacks from 1531 to 1534. By 1559 the Lusitanians were in control of more than one hundred miles of the shore of the Arabian Sea north of Bombay. The warlike Mahrattas, under the successors to their great hero, Shivaji, later recovered much of this territory, and by 1740 had compressed the Portuguese into their present holdings about Daman town. Forty years later the Peshwa of Poona molested

<sup>\*</sup> Temporarily in Japanese hands.



Portuguese shipping, and was forced to yield seventy-five villages in reparation.

These villages were situated inland, beginning about 10 miles from Daman town, and include an irregular area of some 60 square miles. This region is known locally as "Sylvass," and it is even more of a jungle than its name would indicate. The official name of these later acquisitions is Nagar Aveli. The boundary between this second part of Daman and British India was not demarcated until 1867.

Near the centre of Sylvass is a small area belonging to one of the Indian states. The two parts of Daman are separated by a corridor of British India through which passes the main line of the Bombay, Baroda and Central India Railway from Bombay to Delhi.

This jumble of frontiers produces some curious difficulties. Andrew Porteus, a good Scotsman who for many years owned a large farm near Sylvass, took me in his Ford to see the inland sector. We travelled by direct route which crossed and recrossed the Portuguese-British Indian frontier. Each crossing required a halt while we convinced the customs guards of both nations that nothing dutiable was being carried.

We were in Sylvass the day before Good Friday. The little town was spotless. We visited the hospital, the church, the school, and drove around the market square. Scores of groaning cartloads of firewood and grass were on their way to the markets of Bombay, where war prices were bringing Daman its first prosperity in a generation.

Later in the day Porteus and I drove by two-horse tonga to Daman-by-the-sea. About three miles west of the Daman Road railway station we passed through the British and Portuguese customs stations, again without difficulty. Once across into Portuguese territory the road was tarred and strongly bridged.

Daman has a sort of old-world quality, with carved wooden doors, grilled windows and balconies, brightly-coloured houses, courtyards and dozens of gaily-painted little sailing boats all reminiscent of Algiers or of Portugual itself. It is quite the cleanest town I have seen in India. Porteus turned me over to the competent hands of the two de Brito brothers, who were most hospitable and courteous guides during my four days in Daman. I stayed in the Salt Inspection Bungalow. These cosy quarters were built in 1853, and age seemed only to have improved the massive walls, tile roof, teakwood furniture and the Sheffield cutlery. Known as the "English Bungalow," it stands in a small compound which is held by the Bombay Salt Department on 99-year lease.

On my first evening I called to pay my respects to Captain Joao Feyo Basto Folque, Governor of Daman, who was staying for a few days in a rest house on the "little Daman" side of the river. Captain Folque, of an old Portuguese-Italian noble family, came to India as Governor of Daman at the outbreak of the War

of 1914. Later he served as Governor of Diu, the Portuguese island fortress of the Kathiawar coast, and more recently returned to Daman. He is now 62 years of age, kindly and beneficent, and due to retire shortly from the colonial service of his country.

His Excellency invited me to lunch at his palace across the river in Greater Daman. I took his photograph besides a huge and ancient anchor which was retrieved from the river about 1933. The Governor suggested, "The anchor and I are both relics of the old days of Portuguese rule in Daman." Later he took me for a tour of his residence and the Secretariat buildings, and showed me the walls of his bedroom. These were formed by the old bastion of the Abyssinian fortress which the Portuguese captured when they took Daman. I measured the walls and found them seven feet thick. The Governor mused, "They are bullet-proof," a protection hardly necessary as crime and unrest are practically unknown in arcadian Daman.

Portuguese military architecture in India was indeed formidable in its day. The bulwarks of Fort St. Jerome are extremely massive; at one redoubt the wall measured more than forty feet thick. The bulwark of St. Francis Xavier was almost its equal. A nice refinement is the nez for pouring hot lead or pitch upon too ardent attackers. Castles of this type are, of course, common enough in England and the Continent. But there is not one castle or fortification of the "Crusader" type in the whole of the United States, and I viewed the old fortresses of Daman, Goa and

Bassein with the greatest interest.

Most of them are well preserved and nearly all have the Portuguese royal coat of arms showing the Seven Castles (conquered from the Moors) and the Five Wounds of Christ. Canada has examples of early French military architecture, and Spanish fortifications with all the story-book features are fairly common in Latin America, but the Pilgrim Fathers seem never to have built anything of this type for protection against the noble red man.

The great wooden gates of Fort St. Jerome are studded with huge wrought-iron spikes to prevent use of elephants to force them open. These gates are substantially intact, and were last renewed in 1818 if the date carved on one of the beams can be trusted. I was told that six small boys of Daman had closed the gates the week before my visit and the efforts of several of the city

fathers were required to get them open.

On top of the wall are the remains of a gallows which according to local tradition, was the scene of the last public hanging in the Portuguese Empire. This was shortly before the abolition of capital punishment in 1870. The neat church within the walls is modern, having been erected in 1901. I attended the Easter Sunday service here, and was a spectator at the torchlight procession around the interior walls of the fort in the evening.

This fortress has a statue of St. Jerome set into the wall above the sea gate. He is guarded by two fearsome giants armed with huge clubs. I should think that one look at the *ensemble* would be likely to have a wholesome effect in prevention of juvenile delinquency in the immediate vicinity. I was told that in the eighteenth century this image drew the pay of a Gaptain in the Portuguese army. This allowance was saved until the feast of Saint Jerome, when the garrison had a gala occasion on the Captain's accumulated pay.

Across the river in Daman proper there is a much larger fortress. I walked around its perimeter (perhaps two miles) with Captain Lopes-Pereira, the local Commandant. The moat is still virtually intact as are the walls, sentry towers, the sea gate and the land gate. A marker informed us that the land gate was completed on May 5, 1789, i.e., Bastille Day. Part of the old military barracks is now used as a hospital and another section has been restored for use as a convent. The secretariat, the Governor's residence and the Customs House are within its walls.

Sufficient old iron cannon to fire a salute to visiting men-of-war are left emplaced upon the walls. One of the oldest buildings in the fort is the Convent of St. Augustine, built in 1620. After a varied career, during which it was a battalion headquarters and later a seminary, it is now an orphanage. Nearby are the ruins of the Dominican monastery and the Court of the Inquisition. Here a young French physician, Dr. Dellon, who came out to Daman by way of Brazil, was imprisoned in 1673 for heresy and for being too friendly with the Governor's mistress.

I visited the modern prison where some attempt was being made to teach the usual prison trades to the dozen guests of the state. My guide took me two or three miles up the coast to see the buildings of a Parsee colony along the sands. On the return trip we saw the landing ground, and had a look at the state-operated distillery which was turning out a potent brand of local liquor. A dhow in the harbour was loading two huge casks of this dharu for Diu. Some timber, firewood, rice, and other cargo was going aboard as well.

The one dhow for Goa was being loaded principally with the household effects of an official under transfer. There is less than two feet of water over the Daman bar at low tide, but vessels of lifteen feet draft may enter at high tide. The river is crossed by municipally owned ferries, which sail across every fifteen minutes.

Several years ago an Italian firm secured a contract to build a reinforced concrete arch bridge across the Daman river. After having been in service only three years its two central spans collapsed one evening without warning. The remaining spans reach out gaunt and useless arms toward each other. Their construction is light, the reinforcing obviously inadequate, and the arches much too flat considering their length.

An occasional dhow puts into Daman from Diu or Goa, or from other ports on the Malabar or Kathiawar coast. Less frequently one comes in from the Persian Gulf or East Africa. But the harbour is silting up, and there is little traffic with the outside world. I was shown the old opium godown, the customs house, and the area where ships once were built. My guide assured me that the last ship built in Daman is still in service in Europe as a training ship for the Portuguese navy. The men of Daman

have a great reputation as sailors, and I later rode down the coast from Bombay in a small steamer, whose skipper and engineer were both from Daman.

On the way to Bombay I stopped part of the day in Bassein, forty miles up the coast. Here are found the remains of what was once one of the greatest fortifications in western India, in size exceeding anything in Daman or Goa. Part of the walls may be seen from a long bridge on the railway if one knows just where to look. The oldest dated tomb in the Francisan church is from 1580. The Portuguese attacked Bassein in 1528 and again in 1533. They were confirmed in possession by treaty in 1534, and held it just over 200 years until May 23, 1739. The Portuguese garrison, having withstood a long seige by the Mahrattas, were allowed to march out with their arms and personal possessions.

Likewise, north of Daman there is what is known as the "Portuguese factory" at Surat. I had been told that some Portuguese records were still kept there, but I was unable to find any. In fact reconstruction of the building had just been completed at the time of my visit (April, 1944), and it is now being used as a residence by an Indian family. It is an imposing 21-storey building with an inner courtyard and an open space about 150 feet square in front, possibly the old plaza.

The Portuguese factory is just behind the old British and French factories, which fronted on the Tapti. Under a firmin granted by the Great Moghul in 1714, the Portuguese in Surat were able to import goods, including wine, subject to a duty levy of only 21 per cent. They continued to receive this preferential treatment until September, 1872, when the privilege was abolished.

Once the war is over and one feels the urge to "get away from it all," Portuguese India offers some quiet retreats where the modern world has intruded only in its more comfortable aspects.

## THE REASON FOR PUNISHMENT

"Critics of Lord Vansittart are like that inevitable body of people which makes so much noise in times of peace when a murderer is brought to book. They sign petitions for reprieves, make eloquent speeches on behalf of the murderers, condemn capital punishment, but never give a thought to the victim.

"To-day this curious school of thought has much bigger business afoot in the desence of Germany. The trouble is that these people let heir thoughts be governed not by logic but by emotion. They cannot grasp the fact that punishment is intended not for revenge but for the protection of potential victims of the one punished.

"People of reason must see that if we have a duty it is surely to see that Germany will never be the dreadful menace to posterity that she has been to us."—Mr. Frederick Willis, in "The Spectator"

## EDUCATION AND LEADERSHIP IN INDIA

By Colonel D. Portway, T.D., M.A., A.M.Inst.C.E.\*

AS the war draws to its close, all countries are concerned with the planning of the future on scientific and logical lines. It is recognised that the old, happy-go-lucky and empirical methods are just not good enough. If a shattered and war-wracked world is to be put on its feet again we must make the most of our assets. The greatest of these in all countries—indeed almost our only surviving asset in Britain—is the high potential quality of our young men and young women.

In many countries—and in India not less than most—education has been mainly concerned with the imagined improvement of the few who are expected to rise to the higher positions. It is hardly realised here in India that there is no hope for success unless educational plans are laid for all, and for women just as much as for men.

Moreover the patent absurdity is still in vogue of regarding brain workers as an altogether superior product, far removed from their manual brethren. After all, the brain is the root of all human activity, and the community must see to it that each individual is given the opportunity to develop individual talents.

The real problem is the getting of the right man into the right place. It is an activity that is called by the somewhat pompous title "Personnel Selection" in the Services, and it is a problem that is being tackled by the Army in particular, both at home and in India, with vigour and with imagination. It brings about the avoidance of missits—so appallingly prevalent in the last war—and the discovery of hidden talent. The aim is to find the right man for the right job, and especially the right man for leadership.

Much has been written on this subject of leadership. To the Psychologist in particular, whose science is the study of human behaviour, it is an all-absorbing topic. Moreover, whether we are concerned with the Services or with any other branch of human activity, leadership involves certain basic qualities. Nor is leadership to be regarded as a rare attribute except in its higher ranges, nor as one that is liable to atrophy under modern mass-production conditions. In real fact it bubbles up on every possible occasion and simply won't be denied. Look, for example, at what happens in an everyday occurrence, such as a car accident in a street. A leader comes to the fore as soon as a group collects, and the rest of the party accept his leadership. One even finds the leader emerging from the ranks of a group of animals.

Types of leadership vary widely in accordance with the personality of the leader, the purpose of the leadership, and the

<sup>\*</sup> Colonel Portway is President of a Selection Board in India and was Senior Tutor of St. Catharine's College, Cambridge.

nature of the followers. In general it is possible to divide leaders into three main groups:

Firstly, we have the institutional leader. His authority mainly depends on rank, privilege and tradition. He uses these to support his powers of leadership, which may be in themselves severely limited. A love of ritual, pomp and uniform is an almost necessary concomitant of such a leader, and he tends to maintain an aloofness from the group he leads.

The institutional leader is at his best when he comes from a class distinct from his followers, and, if this is not the case the ceremonial side of his leadership tends to be even more pronounced. A good example of such a leader is the old-fashioned Sergeant-Major. We may laugh at the institutional leader and call him Colonel Blimp, but his make-up for the purpose of dominating the group he leads is no doubt perfectly correct, and many a man is able to be a competent leader under such circumstances when his own personality will not allow him to take the lead under less artificial conditions.

The second type is the dominant leader—the natural leader who enforces his authority by the power of his own personality. Great military leaders come into this category almost to a man. It is of this type, and of this type only, that the dictum is true that leaders are born and not made. Even then it is only true to a limited extent, as training and purpose come into the picture quite as much as heredity, strong though the influence of heredity undoubtedly is.

Lastly, we get the persuasive leader, the man who takes charge by the force of his own powers of persuasion and by his association with the group. We all know this type—the man, usually of high intelligence, who is a good mixer and who persuades rather than dominates. The persuasive leader is specially to the fore in civil life where he takes charge of Boards, Committees and institutional activities. In the Forces he tends to find his way into the administrative side. The institutional leader may hardly regard him as a leader at all, because he expresses his followers rather than impressing them. But a leader he undoubtedly is, and many of the world's greatest leaders have been of this type, particularly in altruistic activities.

All this may sound delightfully simple, but in practice it is a matter of mere generalisation. All leaders are compounded of these three types in varying proportions.

What are the various ingredients of which leadership is composed? If the average man is asked what the basic qualities of leadership are, he will name a variety of moral attributes, such as integrity, self-reliance, determination, sense of discipline, alertness, adaptability, readiness to accept responsibility and so on. These and other ingredients are all desirable in the leader, and he must possess some at least of such qualities, but surely there is one outstanding essential, whether we are considering the Services or any branch of civilian activity. This essential is a knowledge of his job, and most of us would prefer to serve under a leader whose efficiency was undoubted, even though his moral stature

left much to be desired. The Saint who doesn't know his job is likely to be a trying chief to work under!

Knowledge of his job is, then, the first essential, and as everyone has to learn the job at some time or other the first essential of a potential officer, whether in the Services or outside, must be trainability. It is now generally recognised that trainability is a matter of innate aptitude, and not of acquired knowledge, and that it is directly dependent on what the psychologist calls "general intelligence" and what the ordinary man calls "mother wit." This is the factor that governs all human action, and it is an indefinable something without which no mental activity is possible.

Furthermore, during the present century it has gradually been realised that it is an entity that is capable of fairly exact measurement by means of simple tests, quickly and easily carried out. Moreover, no adult can alter or improve his general intelligence, which reaches its full value soon after the age of puberty. After that age his general intelligence remains roughly constant, but long after that stage he can and usually does go on improving the use of his intelligence, both by experience and by acquiring further knowledge.

It is therefore only logical that in the quest for leadership these well-established tests of general intelligence should come first, closely followed by vocational tests in any consideration of technical leadership. But having done this, we have still a long way to go before we find the leader. We all know the type of man or woman with ample intelligence but wholly devoid of all those human qualities that are summed up in that all-embracing word "personality." Some of those moral ingredients that go to make up the leader have already been enunciated, but over and above these the leader requires a philosophy, or better still a religion, that will serve as the main spring for his actions and an inspiration in his work. Few leaders have been successful in their work without such, though admittedly it may well be a bastard philosophy, such as that of the Nazis.

Having measured intelligence in our search for the leader, we have then therefore to assess those versatile personality traits in which the moral, the physical, the social and sometimes the technical, are embraced. No one can pretend that these are capable of exact measurement in the way that we can measure general intelligence, but there is also no doubt that we can do much better than resort to the old method which often depended wholly on an interview.

A shrewd and skilful interviewer can often assess personality with uncanny accuracy, but he is often very much off the mark. It is so easy to over-assess the thruster, and to underrate the shy and retiring type of man. Moreover, leadership involves the relationship between the leader and the group that he leads, and this can never by any possibility be discovered by any interview technique, however carefully it is carried out.

The Selection Boards that the Services have set up delve into these personality characteristics by a technique extending over a period of days. This is done by a team including experienced regimental officers working with officers having psychological knowledge. Such teams are far from claiming infallibility in their methods, but they do detect and appraise those personality characteristics vital to the leader to a far more successful degree than

was ever possible under the old hit-and-miss methods.

No one expects that any human system will reject all unsuitables, discover all lights hidden under bushels, and measure with mathematical accuracy all future progress—these boards do not pretend to be astrologers—but statistics show that valuable progress is being made, and that we are thereby avoiding much of the waste of human material, the frustrations and the loss of training time and training facilities that was inevitable under the old empirical system.

But the problem that faces all countries in the task of finding the right leader is in the main a matter of education, and of education in the highest sense. The conception of the born leader is really a myth—leadership is a matter of education and training, though the most rabid democrat would not deny heredity comes into the picture here as in many other human problems. The very word "education" expresses the ideal—the bringing out of all those desirable qualities that are latent in human personality.

The importance of education is at long last being appreciated in Britain, where it is recognised that the old system tended to produce a race that could read and write, but which was far from being educated. In only a few of the schools of Britain has it hitherto been appreciated that an important function of the cultivation of learning is to furnish a succession of men capable

of leadership in the State.

There is a wide difference between learning and culture, for men of extreme learning are often quite uncultured. Bacon tells us that reading maketh a full man, but we all know the dangers of indigestion. Against knowledge is to be put the stricture that a cynic observed of a certain lady's past—that there was so much of it! How few realise the merciful fact that a high degree of culture is quite compatible with a small amount of learning. It is the quality of the mind rather than the weight of erudition that really counts.

But what of India and how she stands in the matter of education? It requires only a short stay in this country to appreciate that India has adopted many of the worst features of the British system, and has made little effort to inculcate so much that is good in that system. For British education at its best does much in the inculcation of initiative, the encouragement of independent thought, and the stimulation of the spirit of service. It is not knowledge but the means of gaining knowledge that is wanted.

In general we find in India, and especially in the Indian Universities, the ignoble art of cramming reduced to its most debased and most degrading form. Little effort seems to be made to fit the student for leadership, or to implant in him a right sense of judgment. The high capacity for memorising that many Indians possess enable them to retain facts and formulæ for the limited space of time necessary to tide over examinations, whereas the basic underlying principles are often quite undigested.

Moreover, manual labour in any shape or form is regarded as debased and undignified, and theory gets enthroned above practice. The writer has often asked Indian graduates if they have ever handled a spade or shovel, and the percentage of answers in the affirmative is very small. It is not too much to say that India must rebuild her educational system ab initio if she is to create the leaders that are already required and will be wanted still more when she attains full Dominion Status within the British Empire.

I believe that a vast improvement in the Indian Universities would be brought about almost at once by a large reduction in the quantity, and a large increase in the quality, of the student and of the instruction. At present the Universities are packed with relatively low-grade students, and the subsequent expectations are correspondingly mitigated. Let the young Indian realise, moreover, that a degree is not merely a passport to some low-grade employment, but a means of making a start on a steep ascent that leads to something that is not to be measured by mere rupees.

The initial propulsive force of a B.A. or a B.Sc. is in any case soon spent, and to spend a lifetime working under a fan at a miserably low wage is not a high ideal. The Indian Services, both Military and Civil, require officers with the qualities of leadership in the highest sense of the word, but such posts will never be adequately filled by the type of candidate with the Safety First outlook that is so conspicuous at present. If the man with the right qualities presents himself, modern Selection Methods will secure that he gets suitably rewarded.

But even if we admit that Indian educational methods are defective to a degree, it is also surely true that there are even now potential leaders of the better type available who have yet to offer their services in the Indian War Effort. How then are we to secure the services of these? Posters and appeals are not lacking, and in the main pander to the attraction of the higher pay than that offered by civilian employment, to the enhancement of social status, and to the avenue to Civil Service employment after the war. It is also emphasized that Japan wants to swallow India, and this is, no doubt, true, but every Indian is equally aware that Great Britain and U. S. A. will defend India to the last against Japanese aggression, as far as the present struggle is concerned.

No one will deny that a volunteer is fully justified in paying due regard to economic considerations as well as to social advancement, but the right type of man to lead the Indian soldier, sailor and airman is not the man to whom mere selfish motives make the greatest appeal. It is surely the patriotic motive and the patriotic motive alone that will persuade the better type of Indian to risk the supreme sacrifice in the defence of his country. It is not the man who is seeking safe administrative employment that is wanted, but the fighting leader, whether on land, on sea or in the air.

Surely it is no good burking the political implication. We must educate the Indian to realise the need for leaders in the defence of an India of full Dominion Status. It is an appeal to

higher motives, and ethics rather than self-interest, are involved. For India can acquire the spirit of service quite as much as any other nation, but it will never be achieved under the present educational orientation.

It is a right sense of value that is so much wanted, and the Greeks appreciated the meaning of the word "value" better than most. The value of tradition and a sense of duty is so necessary, and few Indians appreciate its importance. Simonides gauged this sense of duty and proportion in his inscription on the memorial stone set up over the three hundred Spartans who died at Thermopylae: "Passers by, tell the Lacedemonians that we fell here obeying their orders." We tend to think of "value" as a matter of purchasing power: Greek philosophy thought of it in terms of proportion and a sense of distance.

A sense of humour comes into this matter of proportion as well. Perhaps nothing is more striking to the European coming to India than the seriousness of everyone, and the relative lack of smiling faces. A sense of proportion constitutes an important part of a sense of humour, and it is this sense of value that is so important to the young Indian in getting the best out of life. It was, I think, Dean Inge-perhaps a Platonist even more than a Christian—who reminded us that "the wise man is he who knows the relative value of things."

For India it is education that will alone provide the key to this right sense of value, and it must be recognised that education for women is no less important than education for men. India has much to learn from both Russia and Turkey in this respect. It is permissible to wonder how much of the improvement that military service has given the Indian soldier—officer and manwill remain when he returns to a home run by a woman who is merely a drudge and an ignorant drudge at that.

India stands at the cross-roads to-day. Much is made of the privileges of self-government, but few have the courage to emphasize that privilege involves responsibility, and heavy responsibility at that. For no nation can maintain her independence unless her citizens are prepared to fight, and not only to fight when war ensues but to make preparation betimes. In some respects the position of India to-day is not unlike that of Britain in the twenties and early 'thirties—the years that the locusts had eaten. Self-realisation then came to be regarded as the whole duty of man and woman, and self-discipline as an outworn fetish.

India must realise that the fighting instinct is part of the normal make-up of humanity, and that it is only by means of discipline and self-denial that peace can be maintained. Leadership of the right kind will never be produced from the ranks of long-haired Liberals and pansy Pacifists. When the Indian young man—yes and the Indian young woman, too—comes to realise that everything worthwhile in the world demands some service in return, then and only then will India be in a position to make the best use of the freedom that is hers when she likes to have it.

# A T. A. NURSING SISTER IN ASSAM

March of the distribution of the

## By Sister M. MacLennan

HOSPITALS on India's Eastern frontier may not be like the fine buildings one sees at Home. We have no lofty, bright wards, and only the essential equipment, but as everyone who has been in hospital knows, the building is not the chief thing. Our thatched roofs and wooden shutters in place of window-panes in the wards may make the place a little unattractive, but a smile, a cheery word and a little help soon convince our lads from Burma that they are welcome.

Brought out by plane from the mud swamps and hardships of the jungle were the "Chindits," our first casualties. Everyone knows they had a very rough time. Many of the injured had had an exhaustive journey for miles on bamboo stretchers to the air strip. Many were badly injured and worn out with fatigue.

Some arrived adorned with brightly coloured torn parachutes in place of trousers; others with only a blanket wrapped round them. Most had masses of glorious auburn-tinted curls, possibly bleached by the sun, and much admired by the opposite sex. Their long beards and well-bronzed bodies gave them a distinctive appearance, reminiscent of the men in technicoloured films set in tropical surroundings. Some, on the other hand, were covered with mud from head to toe.

Much has been written of the stamina of these lads, but it is hard to believe that human nature could outlive the hardships they had undergone. Yet such was their spirit and grit that it was not long before their dazed senses changed into an alertness of mind and spirit.

Our hospital has a reception ward to which all patients, stretcher and otherwise, are admitted on arrival. We waited for hours for the stream of ambulances to arrive—and then everyone got down to it. Hours of duty just went by the board; but the reward was a feeling of satisfaction that we had done something really worthwhile.

Some of the boys had not seen nursing sisters before in slacks and bush shirts. One night 50 casualties arrived, and I heard whispers all round. "Who are these people?" some of them said. The spokesman of the party was a little Glasgow boy of 21. "Man, d'ye no ken? They're oor ain nursing sisters frae hame. We're a'right noo, boys." His words were at least encouraging.

Most parties arrived forlorn, despondent. But after a rest, food, cigarettes and many mugs of well-sweetened tea their entire expression changed, and it was not long before they were laughing and joking, telling each other of their narrow escapes. Brave little Gurkhas roared when asked why they hadn't brought the dushman along but by signs they made it evident that the Japs they had met would not fight again.

Those who could walk to the bath were given a bag containing a razor (most essential), soap, toothbrush, toothpaste and a comb. They were like excited children at a party, and could hardly take time to open the bag. All jungle kit was discarded, and they went to the wards refreshed and clean. Next morning some of them said they had found their beds so comfortable that they couldn't sleep, but others went to sleep in two minutes. The barber had a busy time. Certainly out of the 80 patients in my ward it was almost impossible to recognise them individually without their beards.

Vivid and varied descriptions of their experiences came from some of the men who were not very ill. But all agreed on one thing—pleasure in the knowledge that they and their pals and the Indian troops had put one over the crafty Jap. One heard the story told with great relish of how on one dark night a Jap officer (now unable to tell the tale) called out to the Indians: "Thik hai, Johnny Gurkha." The reply went back: "Bilkul thik," but it was accompanied by some accurate firing.

One naturally meets all sorts of types. One boy, a real Cockney, told me that whenever he met a Scot in the jungle he asked him to say: "It's a braw bright min light night th' night. Mrs. Richt, is y' dochter comin' oot the night?" It wasn't long before my turn came, though I'm afraid the broad Scots accent in this case defeated him. However, it did give him his daily laugh, which was something.

The beer ration brings smiles all round and a sparkle to their eyes. Those unable to have beer are allowed a little whisky, brandy, port, sherry, and the very ill, champagne. It all makes them very, very happy and contented. Fresh lime drinks with lots of sugar are a great favourite, and those not confined to bed help willingly to make jellies—and they, too, are in great demand.

West African soldiers are an unusual lot of fellows. When very ill they appeared to disapprove of being fussed over. I asked a sergeant who could speak a little English the reason for this and he replied: "The boys no leek it. Seester: makes 'em feel leek leetle babies." That was too much, for all were tall and of very fine physique. But they were a happy, care-free crowd when they were well.

Night duty, as always, brings with it problems, but here there are some unusual ones. The other evening, for instance, a very large ugly cow stood placidly in the centre of one of the Indian wards. With difficulty I persuaded it to get outside the door, but it decided to stay on in the verandah until dawn.

Hurricane lamps at night are not only a comfort to us. One night an officer who was seriously ill from typhus fever greeted me with the remark: "Sister, you've no idea how glad I was to see the lamp coming along; I felt better at once and didn't feel so lonely."

The bashas in which we live cannot be said to be luxuriously appointed, but we are quite comfortable, except for the huge spiders, flying beetles, lizards and insects of all sorts. Strange

visitors are sometimes found in our quarters, and only the other day I found an old goat, complete with family, inspecting the inside of one room. Our only grouse is that the familiar bath in one's camp kit is not made of elastic.

Nursing sisters will agree with me that hospitality is a byword in India, and Assam is no exception. Everyone is kindness itself making our leisure hours happy ones. We are usually stationed in outlandish places, but the Army never fails to give us a lift should we want to go to the nearest town—in our case some miles away. There we can visit the cinema and enjoy a shopping expedition on a small scale. Occasionally a mobile cinema comes to the hospital to entertain our patients.

Our work in the Burma Campaign is a humble one. It is simple and satisfying, but it has given us a chance of helping some of the grandest men we have ever met.

#### THE TIDDIM TRACK

## BY LIEUT-COLONEL G. W. TOWERS, R.E., D.S.O.

[One of the finest engineering feats of the war has been the construction of great mountain roads into Burma. Thousands of troops who will traverse them know little of the difficulties of the builders. Here is the story of one of them. It is published as a tribute to the men who sweated and toiled in lonely places, away from the limelight, and without whose courage and toughness our future reoccupation of Burma would not have been possible.—Ed., U.S.I. "Journal."]

IN SEPTEMBER, 1942, the "Great Ones" decided there should be a road between Imphal and Tiddim, and in the manner of the "Great Ones" someone took a rule, drew a line on the map

between the two places, and said: "Let there be a road."

When my Unit (three officers and myself) arrived, there was a road between Imphal and Churaganpur, 17 miles partly shingled, and 17 miles of something that in places aspired to the dignity of a 12-foot road, but was mostly a rather forlorn-looking carttrack, obviously used for light motor vehicles to the Mission at Churaganpur. The missionary had however, departed, and culverts, bridges and the road were in an advanced state of decay.

The only information regarding possible routes for a road to Tiddim consisted of a recce. report by an officer who had walked over two of the mule tracks shown on the half-inch map. He had written: "The realignments suggested have not been recced as the hills were covered with trees, and as there was

usually a mist, it was hard to see if they are suitable."

We established camp at Bishenpur (Mile 17). My instructions were to convert the Imphal—Torbung (Mile 33) section into an all-weather road, single track with by-pass points, and make a Jeep road from Torbung to Tiddim, to be converted later into an M.T. road behind forward units.

Our forces and resources consisted at that time of one section Tehri-Garhwal Field Company, Manipuri labour, who, working between holidays, sometimes managed to get in four working days a week, one D2 tractor, Light Roller and Scarifier, one six-ton roller (which worked when the driver in periodic fits of depression had not broken the steam gauge glass), 25 three-ton lorries, two of which were the proud possessors of headlights, and three Jeeps, one of which had no engine, the second ran on the front-wheel drive only, and the third in spite of the strenuous efforts of everyone with the slightest pretensions to mechanical knowledge, we never did succeed in starting.

After a week in mosquito-ridden Bishenpur we moved to Torbung and, for the next ten days, units began to arrive, including a F.S.D. with all its stores, an anti-malarial unit, an E.S.B.D., a C.C.S., an Ordnance Field Depôt, a Field P.O. and two Auxili-

ary Pioneer battalions, each 1,400 strong.

Preceded by a small party headed by Major Hellicar, I went out on October 23 with Captain Alexander, R.E., to recce. the route to Manipur River. He and I had already done a recce. as far as Hengtam (Mile 65). On that occasion "Alex" determined to show that he could walk. So did I, and as a consequence we reached Hengtam at 20-00 hours in pouring rain, having covered 32 miles with neither of us having the moral courage to admit we were dead beat. On this later occasion, however, we were more sensible and covered 15-16 miles a day.

The Chief at Hengtam showed that he was human, like the rest of us. We had with us a supply of new rupees and eight anna pieces for paying porters, etc., and the Chief was due to receive 50 rupees for the bashas he had built. As it was raining hard, half the village had congregated in his house, and for propaganda purposes I decided to pay him in front of the assembled multitude.

In a moment of mental aberration, having previously paid out eight-anna pieces, I solemnly paid out a hundred instead of fifty rupees. The old Chief sat there, smiling all over his face as the rupees lay in front of him, but he made no attempt to pick them up. Although we did not understand the language, it was clear that his wife and elders were egging him on to count the money. At last he did so—and then I realised my mistake and took back the extra fifty rupees.

The Chief rose up in a fury, smacked his wife across the face and chased the various elders out of the house with a lump of firewood. In quite matter-of-fact tones he told us, through our interpreter: "See what a lot of fools I have in my village. If they hadn't persuaded me to count the money, I should have been fifty rupees better off."

At our next stop—Kansau—we decided that the Hengtam—Kansau route was of no use, so we pushed on to Tongzang, where we met the party headed by Major Hellicar and also Mr. N. Kelly, A.P.S., Chin Hills. The only means of communication in these hills has always been by mule path, which used to be kept in good repair, and the grades of which seldom exceeded one in six or one in seven. As time was limited, we had to keep to these mule paths to view the country and seek possible alignments for a road.

At Tongzang lives a Chief named Poom Zaman, head of all the Kham How Chins. He had played a great part in supplying all the Chin labour for the Tiddim—Burma border road, and, in fact, the whole of the Tiddim—Manipur River road was cut by Chins from villages under his authority. He rather fancied himself as an engineer, and I remember him making two classic remarks apropos engineering. There are numerous suspension bridges all over the Chin Hills, nearly all of them built by Poom Zaman or his father. The one over the Manipur River is a particularly large one, with a span of 300 feet and, incidentally, one rope is two inches and the other 1½ inches.

On being asked how he knew what size of rope to use on any given bridge, he airily replied: "Oh! it just depends on how much money I have got to spend." On further questioning as to

how he knew what weight the bridge would take when it was erected, he explained: "We send one mule across, and if it seems all right we then send two mules across; and then three, and then four. If it looks dangerous with four we declare it to be a three-mule bridge." We said that it seemed a little extravagant on mules if the bridge collapsed, to which he replied in a rather horrified voice: "Good heavens! They're the Deputy Commissioner's mules, not mine."

The country in which we were operating was not a road-builder's paradise. The Manipur River is fast-flowing and some 300 feet wide, with mountains rising sheer on both sides, that on the north bank rising to 7,000 feet, while the mule path rises from river level to between 50 feet to 100 feet, continues along the bank for about five miles, rising to 500 to 600 feet at the mouth of the Kaphi Lui, and running north-ward along the side of the hills some 600 feet above the Kaphi Valley, through Mualkawi, in and out of the long re-entrants that add miles to the road until it reaches the junction of the Kaphi Lui and a stream from Khuabem.

Lower parts of the hills are covered with scrub indine on the spurs and thick mixed jungle in the re-entrants. Pine trees flourish on the heights between 5,000 feet and 6,000 feet, while a species of wild rhododendron grows on the higher ridges. The Chin system of "shifting" cultivation, i.e., cutting down every tree over some acres, clearing and burning the undergrowth, planting for a maximum of three years (but usually two) and then moving off, gives the country a curiously scarred appearance.

From the Kaphi Lui (christened by Captain Bagley "Cafe Louis" when a camp was established there later) the path is practically level for three miles and then rises steeply into Khuabem, from which it again rises steeply to a good path through lovely pinewoods into Zampi. There I enlisted the services of one Vung za Nyun as my personal servant. He was an ex-Burma Rifleman, a queer little gnome of a man, always grinning and working hard. He always alluded to his wife as "Mere chalis rupiya wala" in allusion to the offer of his wife to sell Captain Alexander a piece of handwoven cloth for Rs. 40—a price he evidently thought extortionate.

Through delightful pinewoods and open grasslands the ridge runs from Zampi to Mauvum, and to us it seemed like a ready-made road after the wretched paths and steep grades we had come over on our outward journey. Those receing jungle roads in mountainous country for the first time, however, should take warning. It is very, very easy to be mish into neglecting the true engineering problems connected with roadmaking through this type of country when, after days of marching over bad tracks one suddenly finds a wide, well-graded mule path and decides on the spot that this is the very route. In this case, we discovered after leaving Mauvum that we should have to come down into the Tuivai Valley for our road, as there were two breaks in the ridge between Mauvum and Khuaivum and Khuaivum and Beheng, and a very steep climb up to Beheng from salt springs.

Throughout the Chin Hills the ground is treacherous and prone to landslides, which can be avoided by keeping the road either on tops of ridges or down in valleys. We kept our road trace on the South side, as the North side was invariably wet, liable to slip, and to be either up or down, i.e., on top of the ridges or down in the valley.

Meantime, preparation of the Jeep road had gone on to Mile 43 when we returned on November 5. Beyond Mile 33 all the work had had to be done by Auxiliary Pioneer battalions. They had to be in front, making the road until the machinery arrived; they had to be fed; their sick had to be evacuated. But our only transport was one section of 64 G.P.T. Company's three-ton lorries, which at that time could operate to Mile 40.

On November 8 the rest of my staff reported, and the following day they left on foot with porters to make their various camps between Torbung and the Manipur River, each with detailed instructions for trace-laying over his own particular area. Five angledozers arrived at Mile 43 eleven days later, the road up to that point having been made by hand.

These angledozers had already built the Tamu Road, over which the army had travelled on its way out of Burma, and after that hard job it was not surprising that they were on their last legs when they came to us. There was no sign of Jeeps to use a Jeep road, so we decided to continue with a 14-foot lorry road, and Indian operators took the machines over and laid the road to Mile 51, after which British operators arrived.

On December 10 we moved camp to Mile 56, and there established new headquarters. Our procedure was to construct light bashas 20—30 miles ahead of roadhead, so that when we were ready to move H.Q., the camp was there. Chins constructed these bashas then for about Rs. 20 for a basha 30 feet by 20 feet. Bashas permitted fires, which tents did not—and it was remarkably cold at 4,000 feet.

My H.Q. had swollen, and a big camp was necessary. We had a Field Bakery, P.O.L., Post Office, Ordnance Depôt, Forestry Company, E.S., A.B.D., F.S.D., two C.S.S's. and three auxiliary battalions. Not one of these units had a ha'porth of transport between them.

No. 309 G.P.T. Company did grand work in moving this cumbrous organisation three times, apart from the number of times they moved the pioneers, for all of which work tribute must be given to my Adjutant—Captain Tidy, R.E. It will make most engineer officers, mouths water when I say that my headquarters were not only in charge of the construction of the road, but in administrative command of all the other units as well. Ah! me, another Paradise like that will never happen again!

Our first serious accident with bulldozers occurred on December 13. Sapper Speakman, running too near the edge on a particularly steep side slope, could not get his machine back on to the cut, and was forced to run down the *khad*. He kept control of his machine, and had it not been for the fact that about 150 feet down was a rocky *nallah* with a 20-foot sheer drop, he might

have saved himself and his machine. But the machine turned turtle and threw Speakman off. He was lucky to lose only his arm.

At last, on December 19, the long-promised Jeep Company arrived—straight from the plains of Delhi! Their arrival meant that we could now open up new faces for machines to work in different places instead of having to trail one behind the other. One bulldozer forged ahead, clearing a construction track regardless of gradient, etc. This we could never do before, as we could not keep machines supplied with diesel oil. I shall never forget "Jeepo" Reid's face when told his beautiful new jeeps would have to perform over rough jungle tracks, with gradients of 1: 3 in places!

Readers not familiar with modern earth-moving machines for cutting mountain roads may like to know how it is done. From experience, it may be said that the speed of formation construction depends on how many bulldozer faces can be opened up and maintained at full capacity along the alignment. Generally three faces is the maximum from one free access point, i.e., a porterage camp seven miles ahead of the face, with machines working faces forward and backwards from this point, and the third face at the access point.

Speed of advance depends on the ground encountered. Rock is the worst obstacle, and where it is found by trace-making and clearance parties, the normal practice is to make a passable road around, even if it involves steep grades, while the blasting parties tackle the rock. The best possible average progress for a singleway 12-foot lorry road in the Chin Hills is 400 yards per day per working face. Normal equipment for each face should be one angledozer leading, one behind it widening and another spending part of its time widening and part-grading with the blade-grader. Survey and clearance parties and those engaged on culverting, bridging, blasting, etc., require assessing in advance to match the All these working parties should be set progress programme. freed from everything not pertaining to their own particular job. Advance camps should be prepared for them, food and all stores brought to them and signal personnel, with instruments provided to establish telephone contact with each working face.

With these five tottery old machines our progress was hampered. Captain Burch and his hearties tried to keep them going, but they could not work miracles. New machines, however, arrived in the middle of January, and on February 9 we moved our cumbersome H.Q. to Mile 83. In the interval hundreds of round timber culverts had been constructed and three major bridges were being built. Most of this work had been done by the Tehri-Garhwal Field Company and the 424 Madras Sappers and Miners.

What was the object of this road? The main objects were two, first, to maintain a force in the Chin Hills and, secondly, to get in supplies to feed the civil population. So much labour had been utilised in the construction of the Tiddim—Manipur River section and for portering supplies that little or no cultivation had been done. Thus unless supplies could be got through

before the rains broke on May 1, the civil population faced famine.

By mid-March we were over the Singel Ridge and starting on the downward journey to the Kaphi Lui. My unit was then ordered on to beyond Tongzeng to make a trace over the Letha Range to Fort White.

Chief honours for the road—and, when all is said and done, there was a road by the appointed date where no road had existed before—go to the boys who worked the bulldozers and other machinery. From Mile 43 onwards the road was cut into the side of hills, hundreds of feet above the valleys, often with side slopes of 1:1 and 1:2. It takes a stout heart to work a bulldozer under such conditions, but these boys had the right hearts and were imbued with the determination to get to the Manipur River at the appointed date. They did it. Living under primitive conditions, with an unending diet of dry rations (no eggs, fowls or vegetables in the Chin Hills), they did their work willingly and cheerfully.

The Tehri-Garhwal Field Company, too, deserve their meed of praise. They did magnificently, moving themselves in their ancient old transport which should have been on the scrap heap ages ago. Yet by some magical means they kept going. They, too, lived under primitive conditions, refusing to report sick when some of them could barely stand on their feet.

My officers and Staff Sergeants must not be omitted. In tiny camps in the depths of the jungle, their sole companions Chiracoolies, they pushed their way on through impenetrable jungle. And, finally, a word of praise to stout-hearted Norman Kelly. Political Superintendent at Tiddim, who put his heart and soul into the construction of his portion of the road.

The criticism always levelled at this sort of task is that it suffers from lack of planning. I wonder!

## WHAT'S IN AN INDIAN NAME?

BY LIEUT.-COLONEL F. R. GIFFORD, O.B.E.

THE TRAIN came to a standstill with a grinding of brakes. Bill, who had been snoozing on the other berth, woke up with a jerk, his jaded consciousness lured into activity at the prospect of further refreshment. Struggling with the window, he lowered it and put his head out. "What is this place called?" I asked. Bill looked in both directions. "I cannot pronounce these awful names," he said, "Call it Ramsbottom for luck. Every place seems to be a Ram-something or Ram-somebody, as far as I can see."

George came out on to the verandah and gingerly lowered his massive frame into a long chair. "Ha!" he exclaimed, "the sun's over the yard-arm, I think. Let's ring for the Sammy."

A few minutes later, George wiped his moustache and, in keeping with the peaceful spirit of the moment, began to ruminate.

"I wonder why all these servants are called 'Sammy.' It cannot be their real name," he opined.

"Oh!" said I, "I can tell you that one. Sammy is not their whole name—it's only the last piece. Heaven only knows what the other part is! It's like all these villages or towns. They are all 'Cherries', or 'Vellies" or 'Lores' or 'Pattams'. It's the rest I can never remember. There is somehow nothing to get hold of."

These are perhaps rather common-place vignettes of life in India; they do, however, reflect an attitude of mind too often to be met. Still, it is no exaggeration to say that to the enquiring mind (and, of course, every officer should have one) even a cursory study of Indian names will reveal that they are a rich mine of information. It is a truism that the names of its towns and villages give an illuminating cross-section of the background and history of any country. Places are not named haphazard. They are usually either descriptive or commemorative. In other words, people (or sometimes people's immediate neighbours) have adopted a name which gives an idea of what a place's surroundings (or its inhabitants) are like, and, in other cases the town has been named because of some historical or religious association.

The first category is obvious, and needs little explanation, although it sometimes happens that the aptness of the descriptive name has been lost by the lapse of centuries. From a review of place names of the second category, however, we learn one very big thing; and it is characteristic of the country. In spite of the many vicissitudes through which she has passed, the rise and fall of the many empires which she has survived, and the periodical

invasions of foreigners from the North which have passed over her, history has borne comparatively lightly on the soul of India, while her religion has ever been the firm rock which lies at the foundation of her very being.

In the path of anyone who is interested in the derivation of the names given to places and persons in India, there is one rather trying obstacle, of which he should be warned at the outset. The recognised English spelling of these names often serves to conceal their origin only too successfully. Orientalists have categorised existing systems of transliteration under three headings:

- 1. The "Haphazard," which is, of course, no "system" at all.
- 2. The "Gilchristian," evolved by Dr. J. B. Gilchrist about 1800.
- 3. The so-called "Hunterian" system, which was originally invented by Sir William Jones, when the Asiatic Society was founded in 1784, and later popularised by the Government of India under the inspiration of Sir W. W. Hunter.

As examples of the three styles, take the name of the infamous Nawab of Murshidabad, whose depredations and excesses in Bengal led to his ultimate defeat by Clive at the battle of Plassey. The "Haphazard" would give "Sou Raja Dowla," if not, indeed, "Sir Roger Dowler." This latter reminds us of the "Isle of bats" of the old-time British soldier trying to pronounce "Ilahabad" (Allahabad). Gilchrist would have written "Serajood-doula," while the Hunterian system transliterates it as "Siráj-ud-Daula." The last is the only really satisfactory one, being scientific as well as straightforward.

In addition, however, to the confusion caused by European enthusiasts, the modifications introduced by Indians themselves in their own spelling of Sanskrit names, which they found so difficult to pronounce correctly, often further complicate the issue. Thus for "Vishnu" we get frequently "Bishan" or "Bishna:" "Shiva" is spelt "Shib," "Sib," "Siv(a)".\* For "Krishna" we get "Krishan," "Kishan" and "Kisan" (further garbled by Gilchrist into "Kissen"). More will have to be said with regard to this confusion when South Indian place names are discussed.

The existing sources of information on the subject, though often voluminous and diffuse, are not readily accessible. The official district gazeteers are not to be found in the library of the ordinary student. The famous "Hobson-Jobson" of Yule and Burnell is strongly recommended; it is quoted as an authority on Anglo-Indian words and phrases, and is very useful in elucidating the origin of many names. It is suggested that it might with advantage be obtained as a standard work of reference by Mess Libraries: it would serve to settle many a heated after-dinner controversy.

<sup>\* &</sup>quot;V" is frequently changed to "b", as will be seen later; also "sh" is modified to "s."



It is, of course, impossible to give, within the limits of a paper of this kind, anything like a close examination of even a quarter of the place names to be found either on a detailed railway map or in the Post and Telegraph Guide. Nor is this necessary in order to illustrate the present theme. Enough names will, however, be analysed to give the enterprising student sufficient matter to serve as a foundation for further research.

A second point is that, owing to the difference between Aryan and Dravidian languages, it is best so to divide the inquiry, as to deal with places in Southern India separately from those in other parts of the country. The Aryan section may conveniently be dealt with first, not only because most of us have, at any rate, a nodding acquaintance with the most widely spoken Aryan language of India, i.e., Hindustani or Urdu, but also because Hinduism has spread from its original home in Aryavarta southward, carrying with it the sacred language of the Aryans, Sanskrit, As a consequence, a great deal that will be said concerning the religious origin of names in Northern India will apply to many to be met with in the South, with very little modification

Thirdly, names of Muslim origin will be considered afterwards, as they are, by comparison, new arrivals

Let us, therefore, proceed to cut away the undergrowth, in order to enable ourselves to see the solid wood of the trees. The commonest Aryan terminations are:

Example			Meaning	
Půr. půri	(pore):	Nagar	"landing or bathing place"	
(nagore)	•	•••	•	
Kot, Garh		•••	"city" or "town".	
Ghát		•••	"fort".	
Hát (hati)		•••	"market".	
Ganj (gunj	or gung	c)	"store", "mart".	

To these terminations are to be found affixed the names of the gods and goddesses in the rather overpopulated Hindu pantheon, heroes and heroines, and words expressing a characteristic or other descriptive term.

Let us deal with religious associations first. The three great gods of the Hindu Trinity (Tri-Murti) are Brahma (root meaning "grow", "increase"), "Vishnu" ("pervader") and "Shiva" ("auspicious"). It is an interesting fact that whereas temples, holy places of pilgrimage, local shrines and groves, sacred either to Vishnu or to Shiva, are to be found all over the country, there is only one temple, and that of very minor importance, dedicated to Brahma, in spite of the fact that he is the "Creator".

To the mind of the common people the dread arbiters of "Preservation" and "Destruction" have, it seems, made a stronger appeal, as being more obvious and profitable objects for propitiation. We should, accordingly, expect to find many such names

<sup>\*&</sup>quot;The land of the Aryans", in other words, the stretch of country bounded by the Himalayas on the North, the Vindhya Range in the South, the Bay of Bengal in the East, and the Arabian Sea on the West

as Vishnu-ghát, Vishnupur, Shivghát, Shivnagar in large numbers on the map of India. But we regret to say that you will have a long search to find many of them. In the Post and Telegraph Guide, which is very comprehensive, there is only one Vishnupur, and very few others apparently containing the name at all. Shiv is a more fertile source, as we find Shivagarh, Shivpúr, Shivpúri and Shivrajpúr; but still these are much fewer than one might

expect, even including Sibgarh, Sibpur and Sivapur.

The enthusiastic amateur might well give up such a line of enquiry in disgust, and imagine that religion is not such a vital element in the life and background of the Indian countryside a it has been alleged to be. It would be a pity, as he would have been defeated through causes for which he personally was in no way to blame. The trouble is that he would not know, unless he were told, that these two great gods are held in such reverence and awe that their names are not bandied about from mouth to mouth freely or lightly. They are, more often than not, referred to by their worshippers under the propitiating veil of a euphemism, in order at once to placate their wrath and conciliate their mercy. The following are the commoner titles of Shiva (itself a euphemistic name):

Word:	Meaning	Example	
Bhairav	"Terrible"	Bhairopur (Muzaffar- nagar)	
Bhay	"Life, existence"	Bhavnagar (Kathiawar)	
Mahesh or Mahadev Rudra Shankar	"The great god" "Terrible" "The Benefactor"	Mahadevpur (Purnea). Rudrapur (Bengal). Shankarganj (U.P.). Shankarpur (Nagpur).	
Shambhu	"The Benign"	Shambhuganj (Bengal). Shambhupura (Udaipur).	

and, most important of all, Har ("seizer").

The female counterpart of the great god Shiva was "the daughter of the mountain," namely Parbati, who is widely worshipped under many felicitous designations expressive of her various awe-inspiring attributes. She is Mahádevi—"the great goddess", or, simply, Devi; also Jagadamba—"mother of the world." Then again we find her referred to as Káli ("black") Bhawáni [wife of Bhav (Shiva)], Durga ("difficult to approach") and Gauri ("brilliant").

In the same way Vishnu is respectfully known as:

	1111	,
Word	Meaning	Example
Hari	"Tawny"	Many places.
Kesha <del>v</del>	"Having luxurious hair"	Keshabpur, Kesarpura,
· _	•	Keshavgan.
Madhav	"Sweet"	Madhavpur, Madhoganj.
Narayan	"Son of the original man"	Narayan-ganj (Narain-
		gunge) -garh, -pur.

Vishnu, in his capacity of the "Preserver", has, according to Hindu legend, appeared on earth at various periods when the powers of darkness had become paramount in the world and the supremacy of the gods was threatened. These appearances are known as avatara (incarnations). So far there are held to have been nine, and the two best known are the seventh and eighth, namely, those in the characters of "Ram"—"the pleasing or

beautiful one"—(pronounced to rhyme with "arm", not "am") and Krishna ("dark").

Ram (the hero of the Ramayana) is looked upon by the people as such an approachable saviour that their undoubted reverence for his divinity is not in any way tinged with terrory as a consequence, he is usually referred to by his own name (in full, "Shri Ram Chandra-ji"), and his simple name (i.e., "Ram") is held by his devotees to be the all-sufficient means of final salvation (moksh). It is therefore unnecessary to employ any euphemistic cognomen for him, and places named after him fill more than two closely-printed pages in the Indian Post and Telegraph Guide.

There is, however, one very common patronymic applied to him namely, Rághav (of the line of Raghu). Raghu was Ram's great-grandfather, and founded a dynasty of Suryavanshi\* Rajputs in Oudh—(Ajodhya—"not to be fought against"). Hence are derived such men's names as Raghunandan, Raghubir, Raghunath, etc., and places like Raghopur, Raghunathpur, Raghurampur and so on.

The wife of "Ram", "Sita" + ("Jánaki"), is in every way the female counterpart of her husband. She is revered as the ideal of Indian woman—and wifehood. Her name is commemorated in Sitapur, and, associated with that of her husband, in Sitarampur.

"Krishna", known usually as "Shri Krishna", has made quite a different appeal to simple-minded folk from that inspired by the benignly heroic character of Ram. The stories of Krishna's childhood, his boyish pranks and the very human extravagances of his early manhood have endeared him to millions. Accordingly, we find that, although he is referred to by many titles, they are not euphemistic, but rather are expressive of love and affection. Chief among them are:

among uich	aic.		
Word		Meaning	Example
Gopal		"cowherd"	Gopalpur, -ganj, -nagar, -garh.
Govardhan		"hill supporter"	Gobardhan.
Govinda		"cow finder" (or keeper)	Gobindpur, -garh, -ganj.
Kanh, Kar	haiya	the rustic pronunciation of the difficult Sans- krit word 'Krishna'	Kanhpur (written by us Cawnpore).
Lal(a)	••	"frolicsome" (not "red") (alo affectionate nick- name for a beloved child)	Lelapur, Lalganj -garh, -pur.
Mohan	••	"delight"	Mohanaghat, Mohanganj, -pur.
Nan <b>d(i)</b> Sham (or		"joyful"	Nandigram‡, Nandpur.
Shyam)		"dark hued"	Shamgarh, -ganj, -kot, -nagar, -pur.

<sup>\*</sup>There were two great sections of the Kshattriyas, one deriving its origin from the Sun (Suryavanshi) and the other from the Moon (Chandravanshi). It is interesting to note that while Ram was born in a family belonging to the first section, Krishna's parents, Vasudev and Devaki, were Chandravanshis.

†Sita means "a furrow". She got the name as she is said to have

† Sita means "a furrow". She got the name as she is said to have sprung from a furrow ploughed by her father Janaka, during a sacrificial ceremony held by him to obtain progeny.

‡"Gram" is the old form of the modern "gaon", "village."

Think of the many Hindu men's names derived from the above. Among the most common are Kishanlal, Nandlal, Kanhaiyalal, Mohanlal; then the Rajputs and Sikhs with Nanda Singh, Gopal Singh, Mohan Singh, Kishan Singh, etc.

Associated in legend with Krishna is his beloved, Rádha ("goodwill"); and her name, both by itself and also in conjunction with that of Krishna, is found commemorated in many parts.

Enough has been said above to show how the names of the great Hindu deities are inherent in Indian place names. Minor deities, of course, are legion, and often are only of local significance; but mention may be made of such as "Ganesh" ("Lord of the hosts"), son of Shiva and Párbati, whose head was destroyed in his infancy and he had to be furnished with that of an elephant He is particularly worshipped as the "Lord of as a substitute. Obstacles", and is, therefore, to be propitiated at the inception of any ceremony or undertaking; for instance, he is always invoked by authors in the opening words of their books. Incidentally, it may be news to many that this elephant-headed god, whose picture or figure will be familiar to most of us, has only one tusk. How he lost one is another tale, which is out of place Then we have "Madan" ("the god of in the present article. love"), and "Hanumán" ("having large jaws")— the "monkey god" and ally of Rám.

Secondly, there are the legendary figures of semi-divine epic heroes such as Lakshman—"having lucky marks"—(Ram's devoted brother) from the Rámáyana, and Bhima ("the terrible") and Arjun ("white, shining")—of note from the Mahábhárata.

There are certain well-known Indian cities, called after the names of gods or goddesses, whose derivation has been fogged by European spelling. The chief among these are "Calcutta", "Bombay" and "Cawnpore".

Many ingenious derivations have been suggested for the modern name "Calcutta". The most surprising of all is that, in some dim dark age, the site of the city was visited by a Dutch traveller, just after a number of people had been put to death by a local tyrant. Their skulls were to be seen lying on all sides; so the Dutchman is alleged to have named the place "Golgotha"! The simple, and probable derivation is Káligháta—"the bathing place dedicated to the goddess Káli."

"Bombay" is originally derived from one of the titles of the same goddess. We have mentioned her as being called "Jagadamba"—"mother of the world"; another, with the same implication, though not quite so common perhaps, is "Mahamba", "the great mother." It may not be generally known that what we spell and pronounce "Bombay", is spelt and often still pronounced locally by Indians as "Mumbai", which, allowing for a very minor dialectic variation, gives us a clue to the whole matter.

"Cawnpore", as mentioned earlier, is our (not even phonetic) spelling of Kahnpur—"the city of Krishna."

The following are the derivations of the names of some important places of pilgrimage:

- 1. Benares.—Students are often told that the ancient name of this famous Hindu city is "Kási". Actually this is not the case. The ancient Sanskrit name is "Váránasi"; and this may be explained by the fact that the limits of the city's water front on the river Ganges were marked originally by the streams named "Varna" (mod. "Berna") and "Asi". "Kási" should really be spelt "Káshi", and means "shining one."
- 2. Hardwar ("Haridwai").—"the gate of Vishnu." Dwar, of course, is the origin of our English word "door", and Hari is one of the names of Vishnu given above. It is situated on the banks of the Ganges, where that sacred stream issues from the mountains, and is called "the gateway of Vishnu," because this great god's heavenly abode, Baikunth, is situated in the Himalayas beyond the source of the Ganges.
- 3. Puri, literally "the city" (compare the Arabic Al-medina), In full it is Jagannáthpuri, "the city of the Lord of the world" (Vishnu).
- 4. Nasik means "nose" (nasika), and is so named because Lakshman, Ram's brother, there cut off the nose of a demon called Surpanakha. This happened while Ram. Sita and Lakshman abode as exiles in the forest of Brindában (forest of basil). It is situated on the banks of the sacred River Godávari (cowgiver), now spelt Godavery.
- 5. The junction of the rather muddy waters of the Ganges and the Junna's bluer stream with the supposed subterranean river Saraswati at the "Tribeni" just west of the modern Allahabad, is the site of the Magh and Kumbh Melas, and is one of the foremost places of Hindu pilgrimage. Its Hindu name is "Prayag", which means "place of sacrifice."
- 6. The holy city of the Sikhs is called Amritsar. Amrit is "nectar" which confers immortality. Sar means "lake" or "tank".

The derivations of such landmarks in northern India as the Ganges (Ganga), the Jumna (Yamuna), Gaya, Agra and Lahore (Lahaur) are very doubtful and it is dangerous to hazard a surmise. Among the great rivers are:

- (a) "Brahmaputra", "son of Brahma", the ancient name for which was Lohitya (the modern Loheet).
- (b) "Indus" or "Sindh" "ocean, river". It may be described as "the river" par excellence; in other words, the river, the crossing of which cut off those Arvans who migrated to India from those wno remained in Iran. We are reminded of a similar event in ancient history when Abraham and his family left Ur and crossed the Euphrates into Canaan, and were thenceforth known as "Ibraim" (those who crossed the river), i.e., Hebrews.
- (c) "Nerbudda" should be spelt "Narmada", and means "giving happinesss".
  - (d) "Kistna" is really "Krishna".
  - (e) "Ravi" represents Airavati, "possessing water".

- (f) "Sutlej" comes from "Shatadru", "flowing in a hundred channels".
- (g) "Beas" is really Vipásha, "unnoosed", said to have been so named because its waters untied the noose with which the Rishi Vashishtha was about to hang himself in grief at the killing of his son by Vishvamitra, another great adept.
- (h) The river "Jhelum" is now named after the town on its banks. Its ancient name was Vitasta (the Hydaspes of the Greeks, from which Alexander the Great's invasion of India recoiled).
- (i) "Chenab" represents "Chandrabhága", one of whose streams was called the "Chandra" and the other the "Bhága".

Other words in common use for names are:

- (a) "Raj", "Rai", "Raja", "Rani", commemorative of the ancient seats of rulers and princes.
- (b) "Jay" ("Jai"), "Vijay"—"Victory". Curiously camouflaged variants of these are "Bijapur" and "Vizianagram".
  - (c) "Shánti" ("sánti") "Peace".
- (d) "Chand" ("chandra") "Moon". "Chandernagore" is, of course, "Chandranagar".
- (e) "Súraj" ("Sun"). Care must, however, be taken in dealing with this word. Note the pronunciation. For instance, is it "Súrajpur"—"city of the sun", or Surájpur "city of good government"? The prefix su, meaning "good" is quite common, and is to be found in "Surat", which was originally "Su-ráshtra" ("good domain").
  - (f) "Padam" ("padma") "Lotus".
  - (g) "Tulsi", "the holy basil shrub".

Finally, here are a few derivations of well-known places of Hindu origin, which do not conform to the pattern described so far:

"Cuttack"="Katak" "fort", or "royal metropolis."

"Patna" = "Pattana" "the city"; the ancient name was "Pataliputra", where Chandragupta and Asoka had their capital.

"Lucknow" is probably Lakshmanávati, named after Lakshman, the brother of Ram.

"Gwalior" was so named because a legendary king was there cured of leprosy by drinking water given to him by a local hermit called "Gwalipa".

"Gorakhpur" is not "Gurkha city", in spite of its being the headquarters of Gurkha recruiting. It is the "city of Gorakh", in memory of "Gorakhanáth", a well-known ascetic, who lived in the neighbourhood during the 15th century and founded a sect. Gorakha means "cow protector or keeper" ("Goraksha").

The well-known Rajput States of Udaipur, Jodhpur, Bikaner, and Jaipur are called after their founders, namely Udai Singh Rao Jodha, 1459, Bika (second son of Rao Jodha) 1488, and Jai Singh, 1728, respectively. Ajmer was founded in 145 A.D. by Ajaypal, one of the Chauhan Rajput kings.

And, to wind up a rather rambling disquisition, mention must be made of the modern "Delhi". The adopted spelling is perverse. Either the "h" should come before the "l", or there should be no "h" at all. "Dehli" in Hindi means a "threshold" or "porch", and as the name of the headquarters of an imperial government it is reminiscent of "The Sublime Porte". This name is derived by Indian lexicographers from a king called "Dihlu" or "Dilu". A more probable spelling is Dilli, which was one of the names of the ancient city of Hastinapur ("city great as an elephant") renowned in the Mahabharata as the capital of the Kurus under Dhritarashtra, and the place where the victorious Pándava, Yudhisthira, was crowned after the epic battle of Kurukshetra. This, at any rate, has the sanction of the Puranas.

(To be continued.)

## BRITAIN'S INTEREST IN EUROPE

"During the year between the two wars we allowed ourselves to become open partisans in every continental problem. The Foreign Office had its French party and its Catholic group. The Front Populaire roused passions in English breasts hardly less violent than in France. The nation was divided into those who thought that Soviet Russia could do no wrong and those who thought it could do nothing right, into those who bled with republican Spain and those who welcomed Franco as the paladin of human-decencies.

"For the few who were acutely conscious that the world could not rely on Hitler or Mussolini to keep his word and that little else about them mattered, there were many whose faculties were blunted and whose judgment was warped by contemplation of the facade of order and organisation erected by the Nazi and Fascist regimes in the day of their material splendour.

"Every racial minority in Europe had its active and intolerant supporters amongst us, and there was nothing strange in the appearance of the late Lord Rothermere as the champion of the Magyars except his failure to strike a deeper chord in the hearts of his fellow-countrymen. Their sense of the ridiculous had for once got the better of their weakness for an exotic cause."—"The Round Table."

### WAR WITHIN WAR!

BY LIEUT.-COLONEL W. F. P. SUTTON

AS AN exercise in the fantastic the reader should "acquire" acopy each of the Navy, Army and Air Force vocabularies of stores, and compare the sections on "Lamps, electric"—"electric lamps" to you and me. Having deciphered the queer descriptions in the Army vocab, and made his comparison, the bewildered reader will appreciate that something is rotten in the State of Denmark, regarding lamps.

The writer for his sins recently sorted out this position, with the outcome that twenty ordinary trade lamps met all the requirements of no less than one hundred and ninety-one lamps in the Service vocabularies!

Another instance. A state of affairs was discovered not so long ago where the R.A.F. ran the grave risk of being supplied with stores rejected by the Army, owing to a mix-up in specifications. The stores themselves were intended to be identical in every respect.

Supposing a fire occurred in which the fire-fighting arrangements of more than one service were called for. It would be a thousand pities if they had different sizes and types of equipment, methods of fitting and connecting, and could not interchange pieces of equipment in emergency, wouldn't it? But in fact the fire-fighting equipment has this variety!

Spoons. Is there any sane reason why a soldier, sailor or airman requires "Spoons, egg," ditto, "coffee," ditto, "tea," and, further, that these things should be electroplate for some, nickel plate for others? It's silly, but it happens. The whole gamut of catalogues shows this state of things, on all sorts of items—brushes, combs, towels, furniture. The list is endless.

Recently a case cropped up where a branch of one servicealone was ordering one chemical under three different names, just because it had three uses, and appeared three times in their vocabulary; so the man who required this chemical for soldering, one of its uses, could quite well be waiting for supplies while hisfriend in the next hut had a surplus of it after he had used it in his batteries.

Still another. (Don't be bored please.) The Army uses a bare wire which is identified 100 lbs. per mile. It also uses a wire identified by a gauge size, 14 S.W.G., which weighs 102 lbs. per mile. Can you appreciate the difference in diameter between these two wires to spread two lbs. of copper over a mile of it?

An Empire country made some pontoons, ordered to a particular description and specification. They were sent to a certain

theatre of war which already had either in stock or under construction the remaining parts for the complete equipment. Simple!! Just a case of playing "Meccano" and everything went together. Unfortunately it didn't, because the pontoon-making country had decided to shift certain fitments about a bit for reasons best known to themselves, and nothing would join up until modifications had been made after receipt in the theatre. Time and manpower wasted, possibly a battle postponed or lost; all so unnecessary.

On top of all this, the jargon used to describe so many stores is beyond hope. There are cataloguing and indexing considerations which may justify some instances, but it is so baffling for a man to come from civilian life into one of the Services and find that he has to learn new and often silly names for things he has been dealing with under international commercial names for years.

These are just a few instances that have come within the writer's own experience during the last year or two. He is fully aware that some measure of straightening out has been done, on a small scale, and mainly as a matter of expediency and not of policy. He only knows of one instance where inter-service action was taken, and a very useful piece of work was done. The surface has hardly been scratched though, and this article is intended to give constructive thought to a new system of co-ordinated provision on a British Empire basis and inter-service. It tackles the problem from the various angles illustrated by the examples given in the first part.

We are faced with the position that the Navy, Army and Air Force "buy" competitively, have their own designs, ideas, fads and standards, in many cases for items common to them all, with resultant uneconomical use of production, lack of inter-service interchangeability, higher cost than need be and large providing, as distinct from supplying, organisations.

This is further aggravated by each producer-country in the British Commonwealth indulging in variations on the main theme, and equipping its forces with weapons of war to its own ideas, and to meet its own peacetime conditions. The variations may be minor, may be major. They are sufficient to cause a big loss in what, for want of a better term, may be called "Fighting quality." Personnel have to learn to handle a wide range of fighting tools, storemen to be able to recognise all these things, and the most important aspect, a terrific range of maintenance spares has to be produced, stocked, recognised, catalogued, moved about and repair services trained in their application.

So far this article has been negative, raking the muck-heap of difficulties, snags, indications of inefficiency. The picture has been painted in as vivid a range of colours as may be allowed within the framework of security. Let us now try to be positive and suggest a way out.

An Inter-service Provision Service (I.P.S.) should be established, made up of provision officers concerned with co-ordinating and ordering the requirements of all service users. In other words, the buyers. They would have technical officers working with them as advisers. Orders would be placed for the bulk requirements of Navy, Army and Air services at the same time, enabling sound economic planning of production to be made.

The first task of this Service would be to "vet" existing catalogues and categorise stores into "special" and "inter-service." The special stores, that is, those peculiar to one service—torpedos, hangars, Sam Browne belts and so on would appear in the catalogues of the particular user, though they would be provisioned by the I.P.S.

The inter-service items call for different handling. A standing committee would be set up to scrutinise the vocabularies and decide on items common to more than one service. Agreement would be reached on a pattern satisfactory to all. Manufacturers would then be consulted on the production and cost aspects, a sensible name given to the item, specification drawn up, and finally it would appear in the Co-ordinated Catalogue of Inter-service Stores; then everyone would speak the same tongue, use the same item, cut out queer jargon and, dare it be suggested, have a better-quality range of stores than at present. Strange as it may sound, the civilian market is very exacting and a manufacturer producing goods poor in design or of shoddy material soon ends up in Carey Street!

Such a catalogue would result in a sailor and a soldier "poshing" their hair with an inter-service comb and brush, a soldier and airman delving into the breakfast egg with a RAN (R.A.F., Army, Navy) spoon, and all three drying their bodies with a tower so big by so big.

Having produced the basic catalogue, new items would be introduced into service by this standing committee, with manufacturers in the party, and the following sequence of points would be considered: What is required? Is it required at all? Is there a suitable alternative already in service? Is there a standard item already in production for the civilian market that will do the job? The views of Commonwealth countries would be obtained, as needless to say, they have problems of their own. It is a cliché to say that by the very nature of things war is global and no longer "pin-pointed." Forces must be equipped and trained to fight anywhere, pole to equator—desert to jungle.

Which brings us to the next point, research. A round of .303, a blockbuster, grenade and naval A.P. shell all resolve into a matter of ballistics. A wireless set on an infanteer's back and a battleship installation are children of the same parents, etheric communication. A length of hose is a length of hose, and it is called on to convey water or petrol or gas from here to there and not burst. The basic problems of research, design, development are common to all services and countries, and the obvious answer

is a Commonwealth Inter-service Research Department, bringing together the best brains and laboratory equipment to ensure that the fighting man, who after all is the one who matters, has the very best tools for his job. It may even ensure that the newest technique is utilised. The writer knows of certain equipment that technically was obsolete before it even went into production, due entirely to the cumbersome system of design that prevailed prior to 1939.

These are a few "pen-thoughts." Much has been omitted, many other considerations could have been put in. But if this article stimulates thought and brings criticism, it will have served its purpose. Obviously this is a post-war problem, though there is nothing to stop a spot of constructive thinking now, so that the next war will not catch us on the wrong foot on provision. Let us hand on to posterity at least one piece of commonsense.

There is the target. Shoot holes in it. Be sure, though, that you have an Army gun, with R.A.F. sights, that will take Navy ammunition, and that it will shoot in Iceland and Thailand. In short, RAN pattern!

# PERFECTLY CLEAR

"Any reference in any control of paper order to any other control of paper order shall unless the contrary intention appears be construed as a reference to that control of paper order. And any reference in any control of paper order to any article of or schedule to that order, shall unless the contrary intention appears be construed at the reference of that article or schedule as amended by the subsequent control of paper order. For the purpose of this article, any direction made under any control of paper order shall be deemed to be a part of the order under which it was made."—From an official document in Britain.

## CAN WAZIRISTAN BE MADE PRODUCTIVE?\*

By "Experimentia Docet"

THE DRAMATIST Sir W. S. Gilbert propounded a riddle in one of his plays: "What is the difference between the Archbishop of Canterbury and a poor jester?" The answer was that "whereas His Lordship is paid £10,000 a year for being good, the poor jester is good for nothing."

This chestnut seems to have an analogy (with a paradox) in the tribes of Waziristan. They are in fact paid £10,000 a year (and a great deal more) for being good and, paradoxically, are at the same time good for nothing. I hope no one will question this latter statement; for it surely cannot be seriously argued that the contributions of the Wazirs and Mahsuds to the common good, the war effort, or anything else, whether in the form of khassadars, recruits to armed forces or transport contractors, are commensurate with the potential of their manhood or what they could do if they exerted themselves.

Why should this extraordinary situation continue? Why should not the Wazir and the Mahsud be paid their money not only for being "good," but for being "good for something?" more accurately, "good for producing something."

The writer once heard a General Officer Commanding-in-Chief of the Northern Command remark: "If only oil were to be found in Waziristan, all our problems there would be solved." The inference was that if Waziristan could produce something for which there is a cast-iron gilt-edged demand, the inherent indolence of the local tribesmen would be cast off in the urge to make money, working in the oilfield. The theory is an entertaining one, and though many might shake their heads and say "nothing will make the tribesmen other than lazy and unenterprising, there is no doubt that if oil were struck in Waziristan something would be done about it.

Oil, however, is not the only thing for which there is a demand. A questioner of the lecture at which this subject of Waziristan was discussed, at the end asked if, as a long-term plan. the idea had been considered of developing the higher tracts of fertile land in Waziristan for the production of vegetables and those crops generally that will not grow in the plains of India during the hot months? The lecturer's reply was somewhat "Yes, the local administrators do what startling. He said: they can and such an idea is feasible, but Government would not put down the money for any large scheme of the kind which would involve development of water supply. etc."

Here, surely, is blindness or inertia or both! We are living in an India (if not a world) where the demand for everything is acute and rationing is universal. In the future it will be more so. and it will last for years after peace returns. Yet Government pre-

<sup>\*</sup> Being some musings on a discussion at a recent lecture given in Delhi by a Political Officer on the problems of the N. W. Frontier.

fer to go on paying the tribes of Waziristan large sums every year

for good behaviour and little else.

Why not alter the basis of payment, and make it conditional on producing potatoes or other vegetables for which there is such It would even aim at killing two birds with one stone: helping to solve one of the aspects of the economic problem by putting a spoke in the wheels of the vegetable profiteers of Kashmir, Abbottabad and the Simla Hills (but more of that anon); and giving the tribesmen a remunerative job to do, which is the only thing likely to help pacify Waziristan.

But it is not as easy as all that, and the writer has no delusions in the matter. For generations the tribesman has lived the life of a lazy marauder and murderer-too lazy even to clean the risse with which he perpetrates his blood seuds. To inculcate an urge towards production or a taste for cultivation instead of the far more exciting occupation of raiding banias may well take a generation. Moreover, in that time lives will be lost, obstacles placed in the way of progress, and every kind of difficulty will be encountered. But none of these are insuperable if the will to succeed is there.

As for the dangers, those who devote their lives to the Frontier tribes will be as ready to work as teachers and promoters of agriculture as they are now in the rôle of engineers, administrators, police or medical men. We shall always have our Handysides, our Barneses and our Starrs and we honour their memory.

So much for generalities; now a few words in greater detail. The two obvious questions are: "Where is the fertile land in the barren mountains of Waziristan and what about the water for it?"

As regards the first, there are many tracts of fertile land above 4,000 feet, where valuable summer crops of vegetables could be grown. The Razmak plateau, the Tochi Valley at Datta Khel and the Shawal Valley are three. If these alone were developed with market garden produce, the potential output and the employment afforded would be enormous. All three can only be cultivated in summer (in winter they are generally under snow).

All three are handy for roads to get produce down country, though the Shawal would require some extension of existing com-As regards water, this would need outlay and munications. development, though Razmak and Shawal are visited almost daily by rain showers throughout the summer months. Sub-soil water. however, exists, as dowsers have often demonstrated. developed on scientific lines, that question would be answered beyond any doubt.

I have remarked that there is a great demand for market garden produce in the plains of India during the summer months at the present time. Not so many years ago, in fact, those who had to remain in the plains in the summer lived for the most part on pumpkin, brinjal. bindi and such other plants as will grow in the Indian summer. The advent of the lorry on the roads of the Himalaya has brought vegetables grown in the hills to the markets of the plains.

In peacetime they were reasonable in price. With the increased number of military personnel in India as a result of the war, they have become expensive. At the same time large numbers of troops are supplied with their vegetables and potatoes by

contract, and the figures involved must be huge.

To judge by current prices, the profits at present being made by vegetable contractors for the supply of the type of vegetables that have to be grown in the hills must be colossal. Moreover, a large number of these contracts are Government ones, and are entirely in the gift of Government. That is the other side of the picture, and it is one which should surely offer an opening for an enterprising agricultural policy in Waziristan.

To summarise it: on the one hand there is a heavy demand with high prices for the kind of produce that has to be grown at an altitude; while Government contracts for the supply of this produce to troops, etc., are being given to hill contractors, who force Government to pay through the nose, and are getting fat in

the process.

On the other hand, in Waziristan large tracts of fertile soil where tribesmen could be employed and taught to grow these profitable crops are lying idle. Tribesmen themselves are incidentally suffering from the economic stress, and Government is paying them high allowances for good behaviour. When behaviour is bad, the cutting off of allowances does not pay a fraction of the cost of air or land forces that may have to act; and that means still more expense for Government.

And yet, to the question: "Has the idea of summer crop production in Waziristan been considered?" the answer is: "Yes, but Government will not pay for financing the scheme." It would almost seem that Government is paying heavily for not financing.

it.

As part of India's post-war development, large projects are being publicly promised to develop Indian agriculture. Is Waziristan to be left out of these? Surely the opportunity is too good to miss, no matter what the initial obstacles and outlay.

At the lecture which gave rise to these meditations, the Adjutant-General observed that those who now know Waziristan would not recognise the country from what it was between 1930 and 1936, when cars drove at will along permanently open roads, and parties of officers made Sunday picnics to Shuidar and other mountains round Razmak.

Thus was lost a splendid opportunity for developing the country. The truth of this is unquestionable, but is the comparative unrest of to-day to be an insuperable bar to progress? From the point of view of the financial balance sheet, the opportunity

must be reckoned to be greater now than ever before.

Are we to be deterred because a few gangs of hostile bad characters are roaming the countryside? Troops came to the rescue in the Bengal famine. Why should they not safeguard agricultural projects in Waziristan? If a sufficiently widespread scheme could be successfully implemented on the lines suggested, a generation hence Waziristan might well become a comparatively peaceful self-supporting countryside.

Then such clichés as the "Forward Policy" and the "Close Border Policy" might be relegated where they should belong, i.e.,

to the archives of an historical museum.

## REVIEW OF N. W. FRONTIER POLICY FROM 1849 to 1939

# By Lieut. Colonel F. C. Simpson, O.B.E. 1938 and 1939

SPACE forbids more than a passing reference to these two years. The aftermath of any big frontier upheaval often lasts for two or three years after large scale military operations have ceased, and the years 1938 and 1939 after the fighting of 1936 and 1937 in many ways resembled 1922 and 1923 in Waziristan after the operations in 1920-21. That is to say, they were years of general unrest, with conditions generally disturbed. Hostile gangs urged on by Ipi and led by lieutenants in his pay were active throughout Waziristan, and were responsible for numerous minor incidents.

Reference must be made to the operations of two Brigades plus a detachment of several platoons of Tochi Scouts in July 1938, in the Kharre area on the Afghan border north of Datta Khel. These operations were marked by one significant departure from the usual stereotyped military procedure.

On the night of July 14/15 the whole Force remained out in laagers or defensive boxes in its battle positions, instead of forming the usual perimeter camp. This manœuvre was successful and the Force spent a relatively quiet night. It is difficult to say whether this can be attributed to the fact that the enemy had suffered heavily during the fighting on July 14th and was tired, or to his perplexity at being confronted with an unexpected situation. The fact is, however, that this manœuvre was successful for the one night on which it was done.

Though during these two years many other incidents deserve mention, such as the attack on Bannu City by a gang in September 1938, and operations against this same gang in the Ahmadzai salient in the same month by Scouts and Frontier Constabulary, we must now leave the outline of events on the Frontier and turn to review the whole of our Frontier policy during this period.

But in closing the outline of events, it may be said that the Frontier has remained outwardly calm during the present World War. Those whose lot has kept them in Waziristan since 1939 could, however, probably tell the same old story of raids and counter-raids; of endless minor brushes with hostile gangs, and of the ceaseless daily round of watch and ward demanding the greatest and constant alertness and vigilance on the part of all troops and civil armed forces.

Finally, no record of events would be complete without paying tribute to the unceasing and ever-increasing share taken by the R.A.F. and I.A.F. in keeping the Frontier under control.

<sup>\*</sup> Being the third and final instalment of an article which has appeared in our January 1944 and July 1944 issues.

Their work has generally taken the form of independent air action by proscription of definite areas or of close co-operation with ground troops, besides, of course, continuous reconnaissance of every type. Their record is magnificent, and it is only to be regretted that the air arm is still not allowed full scope for its activities on the N.-W. Frontier.

## THE REVIEW

So, perhaps laboriously it may seem, the stage has been reached when with some idea of the history of events from 1849 to 1939 to help us, a balance sheet can be prepared and some final remarks made on the more important features of the Frontier problem.

All who have studied this vexed question know it is one of the most controversial, and one on which even eminent authorities often disagree, so that the writer penning the words that follow is well aware that many will not agree with what is written, though possibly a few may read with sympathy.

To hark back for a moment to the objects of this article, which were stated in the opening paragraphs of the first instalment (in the January 1944 issue of the Journal), an attempt will now be made after making due allowance for the difficulties which have faced us, to summarise our achievements, and finally to assess what progress has been made towards a permanent solution of the problem.

First, let us examine some of the major difficulties or complications that have had a definite bearing on frontier policy.

(a) The International aspect.—Undoubtedly the international or imperial aspect of the Frontier has throughout the whole period under review had a dominating influence on policy and events. Politics and strategy alike have demanded consideration and, in the period 1850 to 1890, the unsatisfactory tribal situation between Afghanistan and British India also called for a settlement. In result the Durand Line was demarcated in 1894, a line which is still to-day recognised as the official frontier between India and Afghanistan, despite its unsatisfactoriness in certain respects and the fact that it is by no means a truly ethnic boundary.

The Simon Commission stated that the North-West Frontier was an international frontier of the first importance from the military point of view for the whole Empire. It is thus little to be wondered at that considerations of Imperial defence dominated Frontier policy and have often overshadowed the local aspect of this policy to the detriment of the latter.

Since Imperial policy was the concern of the political party in power in Great Britain, Frontier policy has always been liable to frequent and sometimes violent fluctuations in accordance with the vagaries of British party politics—a most undesirable but apparently unavoidable complication.

It is not proposed here to discuss the pros and cons of the various frontier policies which have from time to time been the

subject of endless argument and fierce debate,—such as the For ward policy and the Close Border policy and other variations between these two, but it must be emphasised that the current policy of the Indian Government,—whatever it has been at the time—has largely been dictated by international considerations and by the current foreign policy of the British Government, and it may be said that this still remains the case.

(b) The barrenness of the tribal areas.—There is no need to recapitulate what has been said earlier in this article of the type of country with which this problem is concerned. It is barren and very far from self-supporting for its inhabitants in any of the recognised means of livelihood. It may be capable of development in certain directions, but only in a small way, and no expenditure of Government money, however generous, would ever develop this inhospitable tract of hills into either an agricultural or an industrial area.

Government has frequently been criticised for its failure to develop the tribal areas, but it would appear from actual facts that these criticisms are somewhat unjust. Developments have been considered, schemes of various kinds for improving irrigation, for afforestation and for the development of mineral resources, etc., have on several occasions been put forward, but they have never come to anything much. It may be that at times the Central Government has not been prepared to put its hand in its pocket to promote these projects to the extent the N.-W.F. provincial government would wish.

The hard fact must, however, be accepted, that from Chitral to Waziristan the country between the Durand Line and the administrative border is not susceptible of economic development on any large scale, and could certainly never be made a self-supporting area in any of the major necessities of life.

The suggestion which has been made at times that the tribesmen should be transferred or deported from their own country into the more fertile tracts of administered territory probably has as its origin, not the idea that softer surroundings might tame an otherwise intractable race, but a realisation of the fact that tribal country can never be developed to such an extent that it would ever become a potent factor in helping to civilise these turbulent hillmen.

(c) Afghanistan and the Durand Line.—Afghanistan is indeed very closely connected with the international aspect of the Frontier problem, which has already been mentioned. The history of our relations with this country, however, has such an important bearing on the whole question that it deserves separate mention.

Our relations with Afghanistan, which have frequently been stormy and have seldom been anything but uneasy, have been governed almost entirely by the European political situation. British foreign policy has always recognised the importance of a friendly Afghanistan, which would form a buffer state against the threatened advance of any great power towards the N.-W. Frontier of India.

The Russian "bogey" is too well-known to need explanation. In the early years of the present World War even a German "bogey" loomed quite threateningly on the distant horizon. Naturally our aim and hope has, therefore, been to promote and to see established in course of time a politically stable, military efficient and friendly inclined Afghan Government, and through the vicissitudes of the last hundred years this aim has remained constant.

It was chiefly in pursuance of this aim that we finally attempted between the years 1890 and 1894 to demarcate the boundary between India and Afghanistan, in order to eradicate once and, for all the existing uncertainty between the two countries as to their respective spheres of influence over the tribes of the Indo-Afghan border.

Although the Durand Line did, in fact, put an end to this uncertainty, its imperfections have only served to make the Frontier problem more acute. The line itself was not based upon accurate topographical information, it had no strategical importance from the Imperial defence aspect, and many ethnic blunders were committed.

The situation as it is to-day, and has been since 1894, is that on parts of the Frontier there are important tribes, such as the Mohmands and Darwesh Khel Wazirs, living on both sides of the border.

When the Afghan Government is unhappy in its relations with the Indian Government the temptation to stir up the tribes against us is one which at times has clearly been difficult to resist. The Indian Government, on the other hand, has on occasions, when there has been internal trouble in Eastern or Southern Afghanistan, been hard put to it to prevent the tribes on its side of the border from crossing into Afghanistan to join in the fun.

The complications of such a position are obviously endless, and the Durand Line, however excellent was the policy behind its inception and delimitation, has quite definitely been a hindrance to any effort on the part of the Indian Government to reach a permanent solution of the local, as opposed to the international, problem of the N.-W. Frontier.

(d) Nature of the Country.—It is a commonplace to say that good communications are indispensable to any policy of economic development. The country of the tribal areas was completely lacking in any means of modern communications when we first came in contact with it in 1849, and roads and railways were almost unknown to the tribesmen. Since those times communications have been well developed as far as the administrative border. In the no-man's land of tribal territory, however, we have in the main only made roads when military operations have been the excuse for doing so, and no railway has ever been extended into tribal territory.

One of the main reasons for this failure on our part to develop communications in such a way that they might aid economic development has undoubtedly been the difficult nature of the country and the prohibitive cost of making roads and railways,—except by using military labour,—with little hope of any appreciable return on the money spent for a considerable period of years. The difficult and rugged nature of the Frontier hills and the very general lack of water in the area has definitely discouraged the development of good modern communications, such as roads and railways, except on the grounds of military necessity.

(e) The Character of the Tribes.—Last, but not least, we have had to contend all the time with a fierce and fanatical people who prize their liberty above all else, and resent any attempt at interference or any tendency on our part to penetrate their country. They are poor and ignorant and superstitious. They are proud and brave and excellent guerilla fighters. For a hundred long years they have fought for their freedom and their poverty because we have unfortunately had nothing better to offer them, and so far they have succeeded.

#### OUR ACHIEVEMENTS

It is advisable at this point to repeat what is considered to be, or should be, the object of our Frontier policy, namely a peaceful law-abiding and settled Frontier. How far, then, have we progressed since 1849 towards this object, despite the major difficulties referred to above and the many minor obstacles which space will not permit to be mentioned?

It may be said that our legacy from the Sikhs was a frontier some 1,000 miles in length, stretching from Chitral to the Persian border permanently unsettled and restless throughout its length.

The subsequent history of events narrated very briefly in the two preceding instalments of this article shows quite clearly that slowly but surely we have established more or less peaceful conditions along the greater part of this 1,000 mile stretch, and narrowed down the areas of permanent unrest almost exclusively to the district of Waziristan. This in itself is no mean achievement—in fact it is an outstanding memorial to the devotion, loyalty and perseverance of generations of frontier officials and soldiers, who have given of their best according to their own lights in a cease-less attempt to grapple with the Frontier problem.

We have to some extent gained the confidence of the tribesin the sincerity of our intentions towards them, though this confidence naturally varies amongst the different tribes and with the degree of accessibility of their districts to Government's influence.

An internationally recognised frontier between India and Afghanistan has been demarcated, and both countries have honestly accepted the conditions thus imposed to control the tribes within their respective borders, although minor incidents have on occasion been difficult to avoid.

Some attempt has been made to spread education amongst this ignorant and illiterate folk, though it must be admitted that the very essence of our present local frontier policy prevents proper measures being taken to spread education on anything like a grand enough scale to have a real and lasting influence in civilising the tribes. Economically, development of what meagre resources the tribal areas contain has been hindered by our refusal to occupy these areas up to the Durand Line. Within these restricted limits a lot has been attempted, but with only fair success.

Apart from the building of roads on which tribal labour has been employed, and this principally in Waziristan, there seems to have been little real attempt made to encourage the tribesmen to make themselves self-supporting—or partially so,—in either agriculture or industry. Even road-making has tended to appeal to the baser money-making instincts of the tribesmen, and has resulted in competition and inter-tribal rivalry over contracts and labour.

Facilities for other forms of employment, such as service in the Army and in the Civil armed forces, and in civilian governmental employ, do exist, and have no doubt been gradually widened and encouraged by local frontier officials. Here again, however, lack of education has in most cases prevented the tribesmen from being able to seize the opportunities so offered. Indeed, it may seem that the sum of our achievements make a poor showing. This is so when these various achievements are considered separately.

But to assess these more fairly it is necessary to combine them all together, and to get the big picture. It may then be seen that, despite our apparent failure to make much headway in any single direction, there has on the whole been a general and steady progress along the whole length of tribal territory towards better conditions of life and towards a more settled existence.

More than this, gradually through the years and in spite of extraneous events, different parts of this troubled frontier have in turn become outwardly quiet and their inhabitants apparently contented with their lot. Since 1897, in fact, the regions of unrest have been slowly eliminated until from 1914 onwards—that is for the last thirty years—only three tribal areas have continued to be troublesome and restless and of these three only one—Waziristan—has permanently remained so.

When, therefore, these achievements are considered against the background of world events, which have continually been setting the international problem of the N.W. Frontier against its more humble local counterpart, there is indeed good reason to be proud of what has been done in the face of many obstacles and many distractions.

But what has been done has not brought us to within sight of our object, though it may have carried us some way along the road.

## **OUR SHORTCOMINGS**

When, after making due allowance for the difficulties of the Frontier problem, the sum of our achievements appears disappointingly small and progress towards our object, though solid, has been slow, it would appear that there must be some sins of omission on our part which may account to a greater or lesser degree for our failure to solve the Frontier problem up to the present time.

Some of our more obvious alleged mistakes have been the subject of separate treatment by many writers. In this article only a brief reference can be made to the more important and generally well-known short-comings, which can fairly be laid at the door of both the civil and military authorities charged with the conduct of our Frontier policy in both peace and war over the last ninety odd years.

(a) Contact between civil opicials and the tribes.—Sandeman settled Baluchistan by advancing into the heart of the country and establishing direct contact with the tribes through their tribal chiefs. Much the same method was tried in Waziristan towards the end of the nineteenth century, but it met with little success owing to the extremely democratic nature of the Mahsud and Wazir, and the failure of tribal maliks to control their tribesmen. It has been alleged by one writer in particular that the Sandeman method was never given a fair trial in Waziristan or elsewhere. The basis of Sandeman's policy was the welfare of the tribes, and this was achieved by occupying their country and obtaining direct contact with them, thereby winning their confidence and ultimately pacifying them.

In Waziristan and in other parts of the Frontier the essence of the Close Border policy has been to leave the tribes to themselves, and whatever advances have been made into their territories from time to time have been mainly on the grounds of military necessity. The occupation of Razmak and Wana by military garrisons are examples of military necessity.

It is difficult to see how any Frontier policy which is based on non-intervention in, and non-occupation of, tribal areas will ever succeed in gaining that intimate contact between the civilian official of the Frontier and the tribes which must be the forerunner of permanent occupation and ultimate pacification of the unadministered tribal areas.

It seems that at times the Sandeman method had been tried but, as first results were not encouraging, it had later been discarded. The alternative has been to adopt a policy of non-intervention, except when disorder has demanded punitive action by regular military forces and to leave the tribesmen to work out their own salvation as best they can with whatever help the Indian or Provincial Government of the time has been prepared to give in promoting their economic welfare.

Apart from Baluchistan and Sind our local frontier policy has never apparently aimed at the single goal of promoting the welfare of the tribesmen first and last, and it has, therefore, never achieved much. Certainly, again apart from Baluchistan and Sind, we have never succeeded in winning the friendship of the tribesmen or their confidence that we were genuinely and disinterestedly concerned for their welfare. We have never succeeded in establishing real, lasting and direct personal contact between our own officials and the tribesmen through their tribal maliks or jirgas.

(b) Disarmament.—Most people are well acquainted with this thorny problem, and there is no need to say much about it.

Disarmament is clearly the last logical step to be taken towards final pacification. But no disarmament could be undertaken with any hope of success without permanent occupation at the same time. It stands to reason that no Government would agree to disarmament of a warlike tribe in possession of large quantities of arms, and then leave them to their fate and at the mercyof their armed neighbours. Disarmament must, therefore, be linked with permanent occupation by regular troops, who would afford protection to the disarmed tribesmen from attack by other armed tribesmen either within tribal territory or from across the Indo-Afghan border.

It also follows from this that unilateral disarmament of one tribe, or of the tribes in one area, only would be equally dangerous. If we disarmed the Wazirs and Mahsuds of Waziristan, how could we possibly leave the Afridis and Mohmands with their arms, or how could we leave the Wazirs in Indian territory at the mercy of the armed tribes in Afghanistan? The probem is clear-

ly very difficult.

At the same time it can be and has been done in Baluchistan, and by the French under Lyautey in North Africa. It was, in fact, a popular habit at one time to draw an unfavourable comparison between the success of Lyautey's methods in North Africa and the lack of success of our efforts on the N. W. Frontier, and particularly in Waziristan. Such a comparison was both odious and dangerous, as the circumstances of each case were entirely different and there was no parallel to be drawn.

Yet disarmament, if it had been faced in the early days of our administration on the Frontier, might have been achieved. Each time that it has been considered and put aside the problem has become more difficult and more beset with dangers, while at the same time the expense of such a step has become increasingly dis-

proportionate to the results to be gained.

(c) Not seizing our chances.

Not allowing troops to fraternise.

Using troops as an instrument of fear only.

These three points have been grouped together as they are closely interrelated. All through the period under review there has been an apparent lack of eagerness, more especially on the part of the political authorities, to seize the opportunities offered during times of comparative quiet to establish a closer and more intimate contact with the tribes. The fault lies, not with the local frontier officials, who have at all times given of their best under trying circumstances, but with the Central Government, which has failed to pursue any consistent policy towards the tribal areas.

At one time during the nineties of the last century there was a strong tendency to go forward into unadministered territory. Unfortunately, this policy received a set-back in the general conflagration of 1897. The policy under Lord Curzon then swung back to one of non-intervention. Since Curzon's time the policy has fluctuated between non-intervention and intervention only in times of unrest, and then usually mainly military intervention. In fact, as one writer on this subject aptly described it in an article

in this Journal a few years ago, our policy appeared to be a "half-forward betwixt-and-between" policy. A policy, in fact, of opportunism and of peace at any price, so long as the frontier tould be kept "sweet" in case external aggression should find the Government involved in large scale punitive operations.

With no settled policy there has been no incentive to seize any chances offered by an improvement in local frontier conditions.

If this is true of the political sphere, it is equally true in the military sphere, in so far as fraternisation of the troops with the local tribesmen is concerned, and through no fault, it may be added, of the troops themselves. Thomas Atkins is universally acknowledged as the British Empire's best ambassador. The same may be said of the Indian sepoy, and he has exhibited this priceless quality in many countries during the present World War.

Yet never have the troops either temporarily or permanently in occupation of tribal territory been allowed to exercise their great gifts of comradeship and friendship in their relations with the tribes.

What of Waziristan during those years of quiet, 1924 to 1935? How much could not the troops have done then, by friendly intercourse with the tribes, towards helping the tribesmen to a better understanding of the British and Indian soldier in general, and to a better appreciation of their many outstanding qualities?

But this is not all, for in another respect, too, the troops have been greatly handicapped. They are only used as a means of repression. They are the instrument of fear in the hands of Provincial or Central Government, and they are only seen by the tribesmen when in the act of dealing out to them death and destruction, death to their friends and relations and destruction to their villages and towers. For the rest of the time they are stationed behind barbed wire in permanent cantonments like Razmak and Wana, or in the many semi-permanent camps along well-established lines of communications or again in perimeter camps during actual operations.

It is therefore little to be wondered at that the regular soldier has always been loathed, hated and distrusted by the Pathan, as a disturber of his peace, as a ravager of his villages and lands and as an infidel for whom death is the only just punishment.

Who can say how many are the opportunities that have been missed or the chances that have been allowed to slip during these ninety years? Certain it is, however, that with no settled policy, and by preventing the soldier from doing his bit to help, the authorities have never really been in a position to take advantage of whatever fate has offered.

(d) Failure to develop the country economically. This has already been discussed both under the heading of "Our Difficulties" and under that of "Our Achievements".

It is clear that no economic development on any appreciable scale—if in fact any such development is a practical proposition—can be undertaken unless and until we take over the whole belt of independent tribal territory and administer the country up to the

Durand Line. Roads have been developed considerably in Waziristan, mainly for military purposes, though they have of course an economic role.

At the same time, roads are not the civilising influence that many people believe them to be. In this respect railways rank much higher, and any development of railways in tribal territory might conceivably have unexpectedly favourable results. It can only be assumed that unfortunately the building of railways in tribal territory has been frowned on from a strategical point of view, as being likely to aid any invading power.

With regard to other forms of economic development, it is perhaps not unjust to say that in the absence of a settled local Frontier policy such schemes as have been considered or started have not been pursued with sufficient vigour or consistency to enable them to yield worthwhile results.

In short no policy of economic development or civilization in the tribal areas will succeed unless it has as its object the welfare of the tribes, and is undertaken with a genuine intention to improve their lot by every possible means. It is difficult to gauge from the history of economic development on the N.-W. Frontier up to recent times whether this object has really been the true actuating motive behind what limited development has so far been carried out.

(e) Restricted use of air power.

Lack of punch in military operations.

Stereotyped military tactics.

Hampering effect of political control on military operations.

Strictly speaking, these four points should not be mentioned when discussing Frontier policy, as they relate to the means by which policy is put into effect and not directly to the policy itself. It has, however, been thought necessary to touch on them because they are connected directly with our relations with the tribesmen, and with the opinions they thus form on the efficacy and potency of our military might.

Soon after aircraft were first used in Frontier operations certain enthusiasts proclaimed that air power by itself would beable to deal with and dispose of further tribal uprisings without having to call on ground forces for assistance. From the start, however, the employment of aircraft has been handicapped by various restrictions, and they have never been allowed to use their full powers. The enthusiasts have thus had no chance to provetheir case.

There seems little doubt that were real "blitz" tactics to be employed the effect on recalcitrant tribes would be immediate and decisive, and might either nip incipient trouble in the bud or, if used too late for this, greatly accelerate the course of operations by land forces. It has been said that humanitarian considerations demand that aircraft be only employed with the soft pedal, as otherwise their action would embitter the tribes and also blacken our fair name in the eyes of a peace-loving world.

The other three points have a bearing on policy only to the extent that the quicker and the harder we hit when we have to fight, the greater the impression produced on the tribesmen and the higher becomes our prestige. The tribesmen of the N. W. Frontier are a warrior race who give and expect no quarter when fighting amongst themselves. The more punch and speed with which we deliver our military blows, the greater will the tribesmen respect our power and the less likely will they be to call down similar measures on their heads in future.

#### Conclusion

Destructive criticism of itself is a poor game, and he who criticises the action of others without making constructive proposals to meet his criticism lays himself open to abuse.

In this article no thought has been further from the author's mind than that of criticising adversely. Lack of space, however, precludes the inclusion in this article of concrete suggestions for the future. At the same time, some of the comments made have been framed in such a way that it is hoped the steps needed to remedy alleged shortcomings will suggest themselves to the reader.

The problem of the N. W. Frontier of India is no mean problem, and some of the best brains in the British Empire, who have spent a lifetime in wrestling with the problem, have not yet succeeded in the course of almost a century in finding a satisfactory and permanent solution.

It is hoped this article has made it clear that the local frontier problem, the problem of reaching a peaceful and lasting settlement with the tribes along this thousand-mile stretch of barren and mountainous country, has all the time been subordinate to that greater frontier policy, the defence of the N. W. Frontier against external aggression. British foreign policy has consistently demanded that the N. W. Frontier be kept as subdued as possible, lest in the event of external aggression the tribes should be a liability to the forces defending India rather than an asset.

It has, therefore, been extremely difficult—if not impossible—for the Government of India to pursue any settled local frontier policy for fear of the repercussions that any bold experiment in settling the tribes might have on the international situation. Unfortunately, it is the tribesmen themselves who have been the victims of this situation. Many able frontier administrators with the welfare of the tribes at heart have felt keenly the lack of a settled and vigorous local policy and have said so in no mean terms. But possibly their laudable enthusiasm for the tribes blinded them to the restraining influence imposed by the big brother of the international frontier problem on its smaller brother the local problem.

No one can deny that the present local policy, which appears to be to leave the tribes to themselves, prisoners in a barren land, to be helped and induced to better themselves when they are good, and to be beaten with the big stick of a punitive expedition when they are naughty, is anything but unsatisfactory. The problem is further complicated by the fact that no one solution is ever likely to be found that will apply to all the various tribes

along the Frontier. Each tribal area presents its own particular problem and demands its own particular treatment.

It may well be that any big step forward towards a local settlement must wait for the international problem to be cleared. All bogeys must be removed from the international horizon, and every effort made to make Afghanistan firmly master in her own house. Then, and then only, will the little brother be able to develop freely, released from the restraining influence of his big brother, and the Government of India will be able to devote itself whole-heartedly to solving the local frontier problem with all the resources at its disposal.

For almost ninety years we have struggled with the problem. We have not yet succeeded, but neither have we failed, and yet we must continue to struggle. If to-morrow the British administration in India were to hand over the reins of office to a national Indian Government, it could do so, as regards the N.W. Frontier, with justifiable pride in its record of solid and earnest endeavour under conditions beyond its powers to change. In doing so it surely would not fail to pay a silent tribute to the memory of those countless servants of the Crown in India who had loved the Frontier and its wild but attractive inhabitants, and had spent their years of Service in a loyal attempt to improve their conditions and settle their problem.

## THE COLONEL'S GHOST OF SIRUR

#### By "HYDERABAD"

THE OLD cantonments lie scattered over the length and breadth of India. Some were never reoccupied after 1857, and others abandoned in 1903, when K. of K. concentrated his army; many more went out of use in the early 1920's as the result of another military reshuffle. In the last few years, though, quite a number have come into their own again, though three-tonners and "jeeps" have taken the place of the Light Cavalry in their french-gray uniforms, or of batteries of smoothbore muzzle-loaders drawn by bullocks and elephants.

With the return of troops the local inhabitants have seen a revival of their old prosperity; and there has been nothing but welcome for the new armies of India; but one wonders what certain other residents of long standing think of rumbling tanks and chattering machine-guns. For nearly every old cantonment has a ghost on the establishment: a ghost often identifiable by rank, name and regiment, and accepted as an institution in whom the place takes a proper pride.

No one ever thinks of questioning his—or her—authenticity, which is indeed often supported by evidence as good if not better as you would find led by either side before the Sessions Judge; and since the poor things almost always do more good than harm, there seems no reason why we should not treat them with the same tolerance. I do not think that new and noisy mechanised counterattractions steal the ghosts' thunder. They are not likely to be forced off the local stage by such upstart sideshows, for they are established favourites and enjoy great prestige on their own ground.

Typical of the old cantonments is Sirur, forty-three miles from Poona and thirty-three from Ahmednagar. It was set up as a brigade station about 1805 and abandoned in 1907. From 1817 to 1901 it was the headquarters of the Poona Horse, and the regiment was always stationed there when not engaged in one of its many campaigns. Now the Mess, houses and barracks have all fallen down, and nothing remains except the Dik Bungalow, the old-cemetery—and, of course, the Ghost of Colonel Wallace.

Amongst the lifty or sixty epitaphs which can still be read in the cemetery is that of Colonel William Wallace, of His Majesty's 74th Foot, and Commander of the Force subsidized by His Highness the Peishwah, who died on the 11th of May, 1809, at the age of 47. Wallace had commanded the Second Brigade of young Arthur Wellesley's Division in the famous campaign of 1803, and had distinguished himself at the actions of Ahmednagar, Assaye and Argaum, and at the storm of the fortress of Gawilgarh.

As a result of these exploits he is said to have become known to the people of the Deccan as Sat Purush, the "Holy Man." And, despite the usual need to discount monumental eulogies, it is probable that in his case the epitaph speaks fairly enough when it describes him as "a Man respected and loved for his Gallantry, Devoted Publick Zeal, Ardent Honorable Rectitude, and Noble Character."

At any rate, it was not long after his death that his tomb, the care of which had been assigned to his former syce, now pensioned for the purpose, became an object of local veneration. Many Hindus of the neighbourhood worshipped there, and in harvest-time tendered the first fruits as offerings. The cult developed: indeed, it continues to this day; and it soon assumed a supernatural character. The story now becomes a little involved. On the one hand, we have a cult of a type for which folklore and ethnology can find many parallels: on the other, we have a fairly straightforward ghost story.

The ghost is thus described. It took the form of the Colonel himself, mounted on his favourite white charger. His task was to warn Sirur of the coming of a calamity, such as a famine or pestilence, and to this end he would patrol the cantonment on the nights of full moon or no moon. The calamity might then be averted by the making of offerings at the tomb. These became the perquisite of the custodian, whose son succeeded him in due course.

The first incident was some ten years after his death, when it is said that the then G.O.C., General L. Smith, proposed to stop the caretaker's pension. Upon this, it is related, Colonel Wallace's ghost "troubled the General," who was thus induced to continue the pension and to place the former syce in charge of the whole cemetery. No further details are given.

The second incident cited in support of the story is stated to have occurred about 1845, when the Reverend Oxro French, of the American Mission at Sirur, tried to stop the worship at the tomb. According to an aged villager "the curse of the ghost rested on him who tried to interfere;" and in support of this one are shown, in the same old cemetery, the tombs of three children of Mr. French, who all died about this time. The evidential value of this is rather weakened by the fact that their deaths were spread out over more, than five years (May, 1842; February, 1844; and July, 1847), though it is rather curious that their ages at death were similar (1 year, 3 months, 3 days; 1 year, 5 months, 13 days; and 1 year, 4 months, 4 days, respectively). But such a row of infants' graves is, alas!, no uncommon sight in the graveyards of old cantonments, the cause of death being almost invariably dysentery in those days of unhygienic ignorance.

The last incident, and the one which is narrated in most—though not enough—detail, was the Cat Plague of 1883. The Colonel's Ghost had appeared more frequently than usual, both in the cantonment and in the village, for some time; but the younger generation took no heed either of it, or of the warnings of their elders, and no offerings were made at the tomb.

Then the plague began. In all three hundred cats died: from the 1st to the 21st of June there were 125 of them. And there was a cholera epidemic too, but its incidence is not stated and one may suppose that cholera is more or less endemic round about Sirur at this time of the year.

It is related that just previous to 18th June the ancients of Sirur went in a body to the tomb, and the Cat Plague ceased, the cholera also coming to an end on the 22nd June. But what we should make of this I do not know, for there had been a similar epidemic amongst the cats of Ahmednagar two years before, and the suggested connection between cholera and cats is left in the air.

I know of no later incidents. The cult, though diminished in volume, continues to this day: pilgrimages to the tomb are still made especially on Thursdays and Sundays: vows to avert barrenness are taken there, and illnesses are submitted for cure. The Colonel's Ghost, qud ghost, has suffered from being entangled with the cult, but of local belief in it there can be no doubt, and the most striking proof of this is that the guard of the Poona Horse on Piquet Hill used to turn out at midnight and pay the compliments of his rank to the Colonel on his white charger.

## FIRST-AID AND SANITATION FOR TROOPS

"First-Aid and Sanitation for Troops" is a very sensible and practical booklet which seeks to remove from a somewhat grisly subject the atmosphere of mystery which, to a layman, still hangs about it. As the author points out: "There is nothing mysterious in the art of surgery as you will be called upon to perform. It is merely intelligent tailoring or carpentry, based on a knowledge of anatomy and physiology."

That such knowledge is necessary is due to the nature of modern battles. "As a result of dispersal and infiltration, fighting takes place in small isolated groups, and when squadrons or companies may be dispersed over a distance of five or ten miles or more, it is impossible for the M.O, to be where the casualties are occurring. The casualties will have to be brought to him. Meantime, to sustain the morale of his men and also assist in the more rapid recovery of the injured man, it is essential that the Officer or N.C.O, has a sound knowledge of elementary First-Aid."

The author then sets out to provide this knowledge. He begins with a clear and businesslike outline of Anatomy and Physiology, passes on to the different methods of bandaging and explains how dressings or splints are applied to the different types of fractures,

Next he deals with dislocations and injuries to joints, mentioning, incidentally, that "a dislocated neck has been known to survive, but this rare occurrence is the result of the dislocation not having been detected and meddled with at the time of the injury."

He then deals with wounds and details the treatment for bleeding, burns, frost-bite, shock and heatstroke. It is interesting to note that in the last case ice should not be rubbed over the body. "This only closes up the pores of the skin and prevents sweating, whereas sweating, the chief means of lowering temperature by evaporation, should be encouraged."

The section on snakebite begins with the very practical remark: "Having made certain that the individual has been bitten,," and later adds: "Assure the patient that every snake-bite need not necessarily be fatal." Following a section on sanitation come some very sound remarks on flies, mosquitoes, sandflies, fleas, bugs, lice and ticks.

The net result of studying this pamphlet is, from the point of view of morale, distinctly good. Medical science, as usually presented, conveys to the average man the impression that, with such an infinite variety of shocking possibilities lying in wait for him it will be sheer luck if he survives very much longer. So, human nature being what it is, he declines to anticipate his end more than can be helped, and sidesteps these studies if he can.

"H.J.M.C.," the author, reduces matters to their proper proportion. These things may happen and, if they do, what is important is the correct action to take so as to make matters better, and not worse, till the M.O. can deal with the case. So much confidence-inspiring knowledge has seldom been supplied at so low a price.

Copies of the pamphlet can be obtained from No. 1 Training and Depot Centre, Indian Army Medical Corps, Rawalpindi, at eight annas per copy.

Digitized by Google

## THE WEST AFRICAN'S ENGLISH

## By Major F. C. CARNELL

THE presence of the West Africans in India has possibly aroused a certain amount of interest and curiosity as to their West African background, their past record, their reaction to India and the organisation and methods of training of the R.W.A.F.F.

But perhaps the most striking feature about the West African A.O.R. is that he speaks English. True, it is often an English of a very bizarre kind, and seems to revolve perpetually round those two famous pantechnicon or general utility words "palaver" and "humbug." An African Other Rank will express himself as being "humbugged" by his belly, by his "mammy" or just by the weather. In each case he merely means that things are not going according to plan.

Similarly, an A.O.R. can have "belly palaver," "chop palaver" or "mammy palaver"—the latter very common! By such expressions he means that he has stomach ache, that he doesn't like his food or has had difficulty in getting it, that he has fallen out with his wife or got himself involved with somebody else's wife.

A great deal of the A.O.R.'s English is based on "pidgin" or "Kru English," which is the language the Kru boys or bumboat boys at the West African ports have evolved in their dealings with the white man.

An orderly room inquest into the theft of some rice from the cookhouse might in a West African unit develop along the following lines:

"Abu Kamara, why you do this ting?"

"Sah?"

"Dis rice which side you done go pull um? I tink you tief um."

"Sah, I no tief um. I no tief um at all. Dat Mende cook nar done go for bush, he tief um. Dat boy he fit for hell for true, Sah."

"You no tief um?"

"At all Sah, at all."

The Sierra Leone A.O.R's. English derives to a considerable extent from the Creole language, which is the "pidgin" English handed down from the time when the Colony was first settled in the 18th century by emancipated slaves.

The Creole language is composed of a great many phrases of African, English, French, and Portuguese origin. To be properly understood it has, like Urdu, to be learnt by the newcomer to the country. A European fresh to Sierra Leone listening to the chatter of a "market mammy" in a Freetown street would be unlikely to understand a single sentence, although a large number of English words would be used.

The Portuguese who once settled in West Africa have left their imprint in certain words used a great deal by the A.O.R. The word "palaver," for instance, is quite clearly from palabra, whilst Dash—a gift (the West African equivalent of backsheesh) is also probably of Romanic origin. Similarly, ju-ju no doubt derives from the French jou-jou—a toy, and plenty a word much favoured by the A.O.R. to describe number, probably comes from the French plein.

Though it must be confessed that the West African's English is only too often a broken and barely comprehensible English, in his command of English at all the West African soldier is unique amongst all other Imperial troops. Moreover, it may not be generally known that the momentous step of introducing English as a lingua franca amongst West African troops was only taken during the present war.

This notable innovation was necessitated by the new needs and conditions created by the growth of the West African Force.

At the beginning of the war local military forces in West Africa were limited to the Imperial Garrison at Freetown and the various units of the West African Frontier Force scattered over the four West African colonies of Nigeria, the Gold Coast, Sierra Leone and the Gambia. The pre-war W.A.F.F. consisted of a company of infantry in the Gambia. an infantry battalion in Sierra Leone and a regiment in each of the colonies of the Gold Coast and Nigeria.

In 1940, units of the W.A.F.F. from the Gold Coast and Nigeria, organised in a Nigerian Brigade and a Gold Coast Brigade, left to take part in the East African campaign. In East Africa they were formed into the 12th African Division under the command of Major-General Goodwin-Austen, and distinguished themselves in the Juba River fighting of the early months of 1941. Both the Gold Coast and the Nigerian Brigade played an important part in the lightning campaign whereby the Italians were driven out of East Africa.

After the fall of France, the strategic importance of British West Africa as a vital link in our lines of communication to the Middle and Far East was greatly enhanced. It became clear that a force which in peace time had been intended to defend a coaling station and to fight "small wars" in the African bush (such as that against the Moslem Idara in Sierra Leone in 1930-31) was incapable of shouldering the new responsibilities which were now demanded of it without considerable expansion.

It was in response to these new demands that the local military forces in West Africa very quickly expanded into the West African Force under the command of the G.O.C., West Africa, General Sir George Giffard.

During 1941 and 1948 there was unparalleled expansion in the infantry units of the W.A.F.F. The Gambia Regt. and the Sierra Leone Regt. were formed out of the nucleus of the Gambia company and the Sierra Leone battalion, whilst a number of new West

African Corps were formed—the West African Artillery, the West African Engineers, the West African Service Corps, Medical Corps and Ordnance Corps.

With the creation of this large force on the West Coast, there immediately arose the problem of a lingua franca.

In West Africa, as in India, there are a large number of quite distinct languages. Indeed, there are almost as many tongues as there are tribes, each large group speaking a different language, which, though often a dialect of a principal language, frequently bears but the slightest resemblance to that of a neighbouring tribe. Though each Colony has its principal languages, such as Yoruba and Ibo in Southern Nigeria, Hausa, Nupe and Fulani in Northern Nigeria, Ewe, Twi and Gu in the Gold Coast, Mende and Temme in Sierra Leone, and Wolof in the Gambia, a large number of other languages are also spoken. In Freetown, for instance, you are supposed to be able to hear at least 20 different languages.

Though A.O.Rs. were being recruited from a very wide area -ranging from territory adjacent to French Senegal in the west to remote Tchad in the east, there was no lingua franca known to all. It has been claimed that Hausa is a lingua franca of West Africa, as widespread in its use as Swahili in East Africa. This, however, is not so. Hausa is not the lingua franca of West Africa but the language of Northern Nigeria. It is true that it has spread more and more westwards from the great Nigerian markets of Kano and Zaria through the influence of traders, and may be heard in Dahomey and parts of Gold Coast, but it is not spoken in Sierra Leone or the Gambia. It is the great commercial language of a large part of the West Coast, and of all the West African languages has the greatest claim to be regarded as a language; it has a vocabulary of about 10,000 words, has been reduced to writing for over a century, and has a small literature of history and poetry.

Until the present war Hausa had, however, been the lingua franca of certain units of the R.W.A.F.F. In the Nigerian and Gold Coast Regiments, for instance, all orders and commands were given in that language. English was never used. British officers atached to those units had to pass their examination in Hausa just as an Indian Army officer has to pass his Urdu examination.

But though Hausa could not be regarded as the lingua franca of West Africa as a whole, neither could a knowledge of English be regarded as widespread. In West Africa, English is spoken and understood only by those Africans who have been educated in English at Government or mission schools or colleges and who find employment in Lagos, Accra or Freetown as teachers, or as clerks in banks, European trading companies like the United Africa Company, or in lower grade Secretariat posts. A still smaller number who have been educated in England or America practise as barristers and doctors. The whole English-speaking population is only a minute fraction of the entire population of the four colonies. The great mass of A.O.Rs. were bushmen with no knowledge of either English or Hausa.

The problem was especially acute in Sierra Leone units. There are, for instance, about 14 principal tribes of the Sierra Leone Protectorate, and although in practice only about half a dozen tribes are recruited, it was clear that recruited bushmen from such tribes as the Kissis, Temnes, Mendes, Konnohs and Korankos, if in the same unit would be unable to communicate with one another unless a lingua franca was decided upon.

The problem was equally acute from the side of the British officer and B.N.C.O. The number of regular R.W.A.F.F. officers in West Africa at the beginning of the war was of necessity very small. Though there was recruitment to a limited extent of Europeans serving in West Africa—in particular of a small number of Governor's commissioned District Officers who did know African languages—it was not to be expected that the large number of E.C.O. reinforcements coming from U.K. could, in an enervating climate such as that of the West Coast, quickly learn either Hausa or any other African language. It would also have been unreasonable to expect the Polish officers who were serving with most units of the R.W.A.F.F. to learn an African language, seeing that many of them had no more than a smattering even of English.

Hausa, it is true, is not a particularly difficult language to learn, there being few sounds that a European would find impossible to pronounce, but the majority of West African languages are extremely difficult to acquire and can only be learnt over a number of years. Indeed, Colonial Service officers normally spend a year at Oxford or Cambridge learning the rudiments of the particular African language they will need. In many of the African languages a great deal depends on intonation rather than inflection. In Yoruba, for instance, the same word "Eru" with five different intonations may mean (1) fear (2) handle of an axe, or a slave (3) a load or a spice (4) ashes (5) deceit.

The language problem was further complicated by the distinctive position of the B.N.C.O. who, as is well known, in the R.W.A.F.F. corresponds more or less to the V.C.O. in the Indian Army. It is on the broad shoulders of the B.N.C.O. that falls the greater part of the burden of training West African troops. He is brought into close and continuous contact with the A.O.R. Like the V.C.O., the B.N.C.O. is the vital link between the British officer and the A.O.R. Having been sent out to a part of the Empire which to say the least is extremely unhealthy the question was could the B.N.C.O. in addition, be compelled to learn an African language?

From the beginning it was clear that the only feasible lingua franca was English. The arguments in favour of English were overwhelming. If Hausa had been adopted, it would have meant that practically all British officers, B.N.C.O.s and the vast majority of A.O.R.s would have had to learn that language. In the event of large scale operations and heavy officer and B.N.C.O. casualties there would have been the serious disadvantage of reinforcements arriving from U.K. with no knowledge of the African lingua franca and no time or opportunity in which to learn it. Moreover, West Africa is not like India. There is no munshi class. If Hausa had

been adopted it would have entailed bringing bi-lingual English and Hausa speaking Africans from Nigeria (even if they could have been found) to act as *munshis* in colonies like Sierra Leone and the Gambia where Hausa is not spoken.

Since it was clear that in any case a lingua franca would have to be learnt by the great mass of A.O.Rs., it was inevitable that that language should be English.

Accordingly, in 1941 it was laid down in an order circulated by General Giffard to every British officer and B.N.C.O. of the West African Force that henceforth English alone would be spoken in all units of the Force. The G.O.C. stated that it was his desire that ultimately every A.O.R. should be able to read and write in English. To this end, all African recruits were to be taught English at their training centres, and subsequently with their units were to receive six periods a week English instruction. To carry this order into effect civilian "African schoolmasters" were attached to each unit as enrolled followers (a battalion was allotted about six) with the duty of coaching the A.O.R. in English.

I can speak only of the results achieved in Sierra Leone and Nigerian units, where the main task was to teach English to A.O.R. gunners and infantrymen. A.O.Rs. in specialist corps such as the signals and Medical Corps had to know English as a qualification for enlistment, and were generally Africans who had been educated in English at Government or mission schools. The A.O.R. recruit in an artillery or infantry unit on the other hand was almost invariably a bushman with no language other than that of his own tribe.

Excellent results were achieved in Sierra Leone units. Owing to the great diversity of languages in these units, recruits from the various tribes could not converse with one another without a knowledge of English. There was therefore a considerabe incentive to learn English. Freetown, moreover, is probably the most sophisticated of the West African cities, and is a constant lure to the "up-country" bushman. A knowledge of English there is of commercial value in the trading stores and at the port. Most Sierra Leone A.O.R.s. after 12 months service were capable of easily understanding English in simple words of command, and to name in English their articles of equipment. Sierra Leone A.O.R. gunners on Ack-Ack sites similarly were able to read easily scales of figures on predictors.

Progress was slower in Nigerian units. The introduction of English as a lingua franca in Nigerian units had indeed been something of a revolution. Many of their officers and B.N.C.Os. already knew Hausa, which has always been the lingua franca in the Nigeria Regt. and quite understandably argued that it saved time and misunderstanding to give an order in Hausa which they knew would be understood and carried out, rather than in English which their A.O.Rs. had only just started learning. Progress in Nigerian units was therefore not as good as in Sierra Leone units.

A great deal of the success of the scheme depended upon the supervision given by British officers and B.N.C.Os. to the African schoolmasters. The capabilities of the latter varied

considerably. Though some were ex-teachers from Government schools, many were only semi-literate themselves with little idea of teaching methods. The method of instruction adopted was the direct one based on a book specially written by a British official of the Nigeria Education Department and an officer of the K.A.Rs. Ogden's "Basic" was not used.

The teaching methods of most of the African schoolmasters were a good indication of the traditional attitude towards education in West Africa, a tradition founded in the past by the mission schools. The majority of West African schools and colleges until recently provided an education which was almost wholly non-technical, mainly literary in content and based on the arts and classics curricula of English schools. A Gold Coast mission school, for instance, in 1938 asked for financial assistance from England on the score that it performed a Greek play every year and "rendered the odes in the original Greek"!

The penchant of the African for the literary conceit and the misused Latin derivative is revealed by a letter which an A.O.R. Signals corporal wrote to his sister to congratulate her on the approach of the birth of a child in which he rejoiced "that my sister has at last been effectually impregnated." It may be certain that he did not learn English like that in the Army.

Many of the African schoolmasters did, however, bemuse and fog the minds of the A.O.Rs. with the intricacies of syntax, and having no military experience were quite unable to concentrate on her coming across a squad of shaven headed Nigerians of an "upthe essential words which the A.O.R. needed to know. I rememcountry" Unit in Sierra Leone squatting on their haunches underneath a "barri" reiterating gloomily, uncomprehendingly and unendingly after their instructor "I am a gentleman; you are a gentleman; he is a gentleman..." but when asked what a palm tree was—the most characteristic feature of any West African landscape, a complete blank was drawn.

On the whole, the African schoolmasters were not an unqualified success. They were, however, the only kind of instructors that could be found at short notice who knew both English and the requisite African languages. Progress was at times difficult to assess accurately because no tests were imposed; there were neither penalties nor rewards to serve either as a threat or as an inducement to learn English.

But in spite of the difficulties which were initially experienced, the adoption of English as the lingua franca of the West Africans must have far-reaching results in the future. There is a growing desire on the part of West Africans themselves to learn English, for whatever anthropologists may say about the need of preserving vernaculars as expressions of the life of a people. West Africans realise that under existing conditions a knowledge of English is not only of commercial value but is the key to intellectual development.

Moreover, in West Africa the spread of English is unlikely to founder on any local feeling among Africans that it is an attempt to impose an alien tongue on them. In this respect, those who see

Digitized by Google

the future of the West African colonies as necessarily bound up with the spread of English can feel without any qualms that there need be no ousting of any widely-spoken African vernacular deeply-rooted in the life of the people.

The popularity of English indeed has increased, and is likely to increase still further owing to the great scarcity in West Africa of printed literature in the African vernaculars. Though West Africa is a part of the world in which mildew and white ants have always made the production and distribution of books difficult, in any branch of the C.M.S. Bookshop it is always infinitely easier to buy books in English than in the African languages.

Reading is becoming a newly discovered pleasure for a great number of West Africans, as is shown by the growing circulation of a number of flourishing West African newspapers and by the recent visit to Fleet Street of a number of West African editors to study English methods.

The amount of English which the A.O.R. can learn in the army is necessarily limited, when a recruit, by the demands of the training programme and later by operational necessity, but if he goes back to civil life with but a bare smattering of English then a blow will have been struck both for greater unity and for the uplift of the West African himself.

#### **EVACUATION**

#### By Matlow.

From March 27 to April 15, 1942, the small Arakan seaport of Kyaukpyu on Ramree Island was evacuated. As elsewhere in Burma with the breakdown of the civil administration, so in Kyaukpyu dacoits found the time ripe for raids, which despoiled and terrorised the inhabitants. They fled to the jungle, leaving the shell of the once-busy and peaceful little township.

To this empty town hordes of Indian refugees from the interior of Burma came via the Taungup Pass, suffering incredible hardships of persecution and lack of food and facilities. At this date the Japanese were pressing northward on the Irrawaddy plain towards Yenangyaung, and a force of armed Burmans under Japanese officers was making its way up the coast.

On April 11 they reached Taungup and remained there while the evacuation of Kyaukpyu a few miles to the west was being completed. Before the orders came to abandon the town twenty thousand people had been sent away in ships to India.

I wrote the following notes whilst on duty in Kyaukpyu.

TO THOSE who really know it, Kyaukpyu is probably not so bad. Indeed, the Deputy Commissioner had become so much a fixture of the place until ill-health forced him to leave it a few days ago that there must be something in its favour.

I would go so far as to say that sometimes in the glow of a warm sunset I can almost imagine myself staying a week or two longer and liking it. It is such an evening now. I am sitting on the bridge of a river steamer, in shape rather like a top heavy doll's house afloat and not at all unlike the Ark with its ducks, chickens, goats, rams, cats and dogs littering the decks.

There is the murmur of a great multitude; and for the moment I amuse myself trying to disentangle the drone of human beings from the buzz of flies and whine of mosquitoes. My legs are covered with bandages and my right hand has a broken knuckle and is hurting like hell.

But the old serang has just brought me a cup of black tea and a couple of chappattis with jam. Have you ever noticed the effect of a chappatti rather like a pan-cake laid on thick—on a much neglected stomach? When you are thoroughly tired and famished nothing is more satisfying. At least, so I think this evening as I fight the flies for possession of the jam, and try to forget the stench of thousands of unwashed bodies including my own.

We did a good job of work to-day. No less than three thousand souls evacuated in quite orderly fashion. The ship which has just steamed out is carrying them to India and, I hope, to some sort of

relief from the hell they have suffered. Poor devils! How I loathe them until they go away, and then I feel as though something valuable has been lost.

Was it 17 days or 17 years ago when the Commodore sent for me and ordered me to take the "Torotyua" to Kyaukpyu, which was filled with refugees, and to stand by to evacuate them? After the fall of Southern Burma Indians of all classes, but mainly the poor coolie, his wife and child, made their way on foot northward. Their Mecca is Buthidaung, far to the north, the gateway into Bengal.

But the dangers of the trek, food shortage, and failing strength have diverted a huge stream from the inland plains, through the mountains of Arakan by the Taungup Pass, to the sea. Somehow they seem to think that their troubles will be over when they see the green waters of the Bay. They never anticipated the "cul-de-sac" of Kyaukpyu,

It is extremely dangerous for unescorted shipping to come here so far south when Akyab, seventy miles to the north, is subjected to multiple, daily bombing. But the refugees came, and their cry reached Akyab. The naval authorities responded. Ships would be sent. My job, I was told, was merely to get them aboard when the ships came. It sounded easy enough. These things always do.

The launch I have is manned by Chittagonians, not naval men, and their cheerful courage has been quite amazing. We have a naval M.L. standing by for wireless communication with Akyab, since the telephone and telegraph connections have long been cut.

A last-minute affair, we had to forage for food while the launch coaled at a deserted dump in Akyab. A couple of stray bullocks were persuaded to swim the creek and were hove aboard, and a number of goats of uncertain age added to the fresh larder. My contribution was a stock of tinned provisions augmented by a cup, plate, knife, fork, spoon and a bottle of sherry filched from a deserted house nearby. With that, and a quantity of rice, we sailed away; a thirty degree error on our compass, the mournful lowing of cattle and bleating of goats wafting astern.

As we sailed into the spacious natural harbour of Kyaukpyu, a dead body floated out. We had arrived. I have formed part of many football match crowds at close of play. Never till now did I realise how essentially gentle and friendly they are by some standards. The small creaking jetty was black with figures swarming like ants over a pot of honey. The water was full of swimmers. Never was such a civic reception.

It was difficult to keep parts of it out of the propellers as we came alongside; impossible to stem the rush as the multitude poured aboard. We took in an alarming list to port. It was for all the world like the opening wide of the gates of a lunatic asylum. The poor creatures, clutching at any straw to save their lives, saw in this one small launch the salvation of thousands; and before I could stop the rush we were pretty well awash.

In the interests of all it was necessary to be rough and ready. When some semblance of order had appeared I set about clearing

the launch. It took a long time to make intelligence sink into the minds of these crazed, half-starved creatures. It was pathetic to see dumb listlessness steal into faces just now infused with a crusading fervour as their owners had bitten, scratched and clawed their way aboard, trampling women, children and cripples underfoot. But at length, it was done.

The refugees trooped off the launch with their pathetic pots and pans, leaving behind a dense swarm of flies and an overpowering stench. They retreated from the protesting jetty to the Police Lines behind which there was a large open stretch of turf. Men cast many a backward glance suspecting I had played a grim joke in turning them off, and would suddenly crook a finger to invite

them back again.

The ex-officials of the town were living in the Post Office with their wives and families. Arakanese dacoits had made occasional raids after dark, and it was safer for everybody to crowd together into one large, bare, upper room than to live isolated in their little stone and wooden bungalows on the outskirts of the town. The room teemed with humanity of all ages and both sexes, and baggage was strewn about in every untenanted square yard. They told me that somebody had fired a revolver through one of the windows of the Post Office the night before, and the women and children were terrified. Fear is dreadfully contagious.

The few Gurkha military policemen in the Post Office brought little comfort. The civil police, locals all, had been disarmed and disbanded some time previously, as they were considered untrustworthy. It was all a waiting game, and in the meantime everybody was getting on the nerves of everybody else. Someone had a wireless which seemed automatically to pick up broadcasts from Bangkok. These, probably because they were such cold comfort, seemed to exercise a dreadful fascination and

finished off the work begun by feverish imaginations.

The Deputy Commissioner remained in his own bungalow with an Arakanese servant and his wife, and two enormous mastiffs. He considered "protection" absurd. He had lived so long among his people, knew them and their troubles so intimately, was so well liked, that molestation of any kind was laughable. But he was very ill with malaria. He asked me to take all measures I saw fit for the protection and welfare of the refugees and the town. The situation had become a military one.

I was lucky. The handful of military policemen began by keeping a night guard round the whole area of the refugee lines. Soon they were reinforced by thirty-five more of the Military Police (Gurkhas) who had made their way on foot from the Delta with the ordinary refugees. This was the beginning of the end of the forces of disorder at Kyaukypu. When the ranks were further swelled by the coming of a few British troops, stragglers after the Sittang battle, we were sitting pretty. I now had sixty trustworthy soldiers, rifles, machine-guns and adequate ammunition.

One night an Arakanese entered the Lines. He seized a young Bengali girl and tried to rip the rings from her nose and ears. Her screams brought the guard. With commendable self-control the Gurkhas brought him to me alive. I held a drumhead

Digitized by Google

courtmartial and prescribed a thrashing. It was administered most thoroughly, and the wretch allowed to go. He took a message that any more of his kidney caught would be summarily shot. Arakanese were also warned by proclamation to get clear of the lines by sunset and to stay clear during darkness. The order has been obeyed, and in the Lines at any rate the refugees have since had peace, if not much comfort.

Kyaukpyu, a small Arakanese township and the seat of local government, would amount to little in the scale of English villages. But by Arakanese standards it was until recently a fair sized community. By the beginning of April that community had fled into the jungle, fearing the depredations not of the Japanese,

but of their own kind.

The dacoit has always been a strong factor in the history of settled Burmese village life. He has seized every opportunity to rob, murder and pillage, and one of the biggest realities of the British rule to the simple Burman was security from the dacoit. It needed only a few visits by the bandits to clear the town, but only one defeat of them to bring the townsfolk back again. One alternoon we were able to shoot up a party of armed looters pillaging the remains of a shop. After that, there was no repetition of the nuisance, and soon one, two, then many families returned to their old homes.

A number of elderly, respectable-looking Arakanese gentlemen came to the launch. They were closely attended by a train of ducks and chickens. They had some proposals; the ducks and chickens suddenly appearing in this denuded countryside were very definitely a strong argument. Briefly, they asked that they, the elders under the ex-schoolmaster, should be permitted to set up a town government and to administer town affairs as their forefathers had done.

The young men undertook to keep the peace and to see that everybody else kept it. They would do watch and ward duties nightly. They would not in any way interfere with the refugees but would, in fact, help them by bringing produce back to the town. But what they needed were rifles and ammunition; they could do very little against armed dacoits with sticks and stones. I was enthusiastic about the new town Government; not at all about the arms.

Eventually we agreed on a little treaty. The elders would administer the village, with a separate rule for the Mahommedan Arakanese section, and I would provide on application all the military assistance necessary. They had to be satisfied, and, as a matter of fact, the arrangement now works extremely well. The little community has returned and has opened up its tiny shops selling nga-pi, vegetables, rice and eggs. Hearing of all this apparent municipal prosperity the Commodore sent a message from Akyab asking for shaving cream and razor blades. . . .

Food was the great problem when I first arrived. The refugees then appeared to be down to their last few grains of rice, and the deserted village could not help out. A number of bags of rice were discovered in a godown and we attempted the

miracle of the feeding of the ten thousand. Fortunately more rice was sent by ship from Akyah before the paltry supply was exhausted and we discredited.

Distribution of food was the next problem. First, some dicipline had to be inculcated into the disorderly throng; secondly, the people had to realise that their welfare depended very largely on their own efforts. A number of the huskier coolies made great play with their elbows, and so we made everybody squat. Elbowing is much more difficult in that position. The drill was simple; on the command "Sit" those men who did not were promptly pushed over. They learnt very quickly. Next, the more intelligent among the refugees, many of them ex-clerks, were called upon to superintend the actual distribution.

Very soon, the crowd learned to pass through a gate, where each person received a ration, and so into a wired compound (the graveyard!). This was guarded and nobody could get out until the last had been served. There was thus no object in being first and impossible for people to join up again at the end of the procession—the two great arguments for shock tactics. They have now become quite manageable, and, better still, with work to do, they have less time to mope and to let their fears play upon their imaginations.

Of work there is plenty. Not only for the clerk type of refugee, but for the coolie proper. If there is one thing more distasteful than another it is the return of the dead. A good, wholesome ghost would be welcome, but the green corpses which make a habit of popping up around meal times and getting entangled in the moorings of the launch or the jetty supports are not greeted with a loud "Hosannah."

Ashore, too, unburied corpses were quite common, though they are fewer now. This is due to the efforts of a number of Indian doctors among the refugees, and to the gangs of voluntary sweepers they enlisted. Between them they cleared the refugee area of the bodies and other refuse strewn haphazardly about when I arrived. Also, the doctors treated the sick and wounded. I myself, am grateful. Poor food, flies, and insanitary conditions generally gave me a number of sores and dysentery.

And I was infinitely fitter than most of the refugees; or than the white troops who, however much they had already endured, volunteered to stay with me to the end. I shall long remember the fury of the soldier whom I sent away a short time back in a naval ship. He had pleurisy, but insisted that it was nothing worth talking about.

We have no method of water purifying, and there have been a few cases of cholera. We have become ardent tea drinkers, of course; and the doctors are dealing so drastically with the disease that there has been no spread. Deaths now average about four a day, but are due mainly to exposure, hardships and undernourishment on the trek. The Taungup Pass, they say, is so choked with dead that carts using the route are obliged to plough their way over corpses. And all the time the refugees are open to attack from robbers.

Perhaps the most terrible of these is the boatman. Not all the boatmen are dacoits, or Kyaukpyu would never need evacuation; but there are grisly tales told. The creeks from Taungup are descreted, mangroved mazes. The boatmen are armed, at the very least, with "dahs;" some have home-made shot guns, and even rifles. Nothing is easier than to stop in an unfrequented waterway and to strip the unfortunate refugees, most of whom are old men, women and children. I didn't believe these lurid tales, setting

them down as the product of overheated imaginations.

But it was only a couple of days ago that I went down the creeks to see how many refugees were still filtering through my boat. They kept coming in dribs and drabs, and it looked as though the stream would never cease. Rounding a bend we saw three large country craft alongside a small, deserted, mangroved mudbank in the middle of the stream which had, at this point, widened to about two miles. The country adjoining the creek was very wild and deserted. The thick mangrove swamps were backed by densely jungled hills. As we drew nearer I saw signs of a commotion aboard the craft. There was not sufficient water for the launch, so a sampan was lowered and we rowed over.

The sight that greeted me as I climbed aboard the first boat was that of an Arakanese boatman ripping the necklace and bangles from the neck and arms of an Italian woman. He dropped the jewels into a big tin box, and pushed the woman overboard. Meanwhile, a young ruffian near me bestowed a hearty thwack with his "dah" on the buttocks of an old cooly, urging him to jump ashore. There was a babel of shrieks, cries, weeping, cursing,

pleading. I was unnoticed in the confusion.

I can remember thinking "Why the hell don't they do something about it?" (the persecutors numbered sixteen, the persecuted about three hundred), and noting that the tin box was nearly full of loot. The young ruffian still laid about him lustily with the flat of his big knife. Then I hit him square on the chin, and he went overboard backwards. Mopping up operations did not take long. Thoroughly aroused, (dysentery proverbially makes for bad temper), it was with great joy that I punched the lights out of another boatman with a left-right that would have done a Dempsey credit. The rest fled ashore. There was a momentary silence before the babel broke out again with added violence.

The Indians scrambled aboard, and the three craft slipped from alongside the mudbank into the stream, where the launch picked them up and took them in tow. By this time I hated the persecuted as much as I had hated their persecutors. There was a lot of hating that day. It was not until it was all over that I remembered that on entering the sampan I had left my revolver behind on the launch. One of the boatmen, I noticed, made his escape ashore with a tifle. I hoped that his eyesight was not too

keen; apparently it was not.

I wonder what happened to those would be robbers! The mudbank is awash at high water, and they say there are crocodiles

about. A fair return for a broken knuckle, anyhow.

Thank God ships are coming at last! We are beginning to make inroads into this colossal crowd. Every time smoke appears on the horizon there is a murmur among the multitude as of a "mighty, rushing wind" far off. Now, there is merely an advance

upon the jetty; when the first ship came they all rushed down into the water like the Gadarene swine. Many struck out for the distant ship long before she had anchored. The waters abound in sharks attracted by the dead bodies. Twice I have turned my Bren gun on them as they squabbled over a corpse, turning it over and over like a rag doll. Even had they the strength to swim the distance to the ships, refugees would have to outswim the sharks. It was necessary to fire at swimmers pour encourager les autres. One man was shot through the leg, and since then there has been no mixed bathing.

The troops control the flow of passengers into the launch which, when piled high with humanity and with very little free-board remaining, pushes off for the ship and unloads. Being a question of lives or luggage we have to harden our hearts against ear splitting lamentations. Pots and pans go overboard. Men descend to the most surprising subterfuges to get away with an empty kerosene tin. To many, an ancient tin appears more important than their very lives. Old bits of calico, stinking scraps of rotten fish, and messes of rice are the subjects of most desperate and heartrending wails. But they go overboard. They must. If each man took all his junk along with him he would fill the space for three unencumbered people.

At last the ship sails, crammed with her cargo of pitiful humanity. Sometimes a skipper gives me a bottle of whiskey or a tin of tobacco which, when all's said, is preferable to Brooke Bond's tea as a smoking mixture. I have sunk even to those depths, and have considered likely kinds of grass should the tea fail.

Men said, soon after I arrived, that the enemy were in Sandoway. Later rumour had it they intended moving to Taungup. Yesterday I went to Taungup and arrived two hours after the Japs. Fishermen we met were most anxious to tell me this, and, when at dawn we nosed round a bend in the creek and saw troops on the jetty, I took the fishermen's word for it that they were Japs and beat it. After all, my province is Kyaukpyu, and a small launch manned with Chittagonians and no guns is not an assault force. To-day my spies confirm the report, and I have passed it on to the naval patrol ship to transmit to Headquarters.

One is apt to take these reports with a large pinch of salt after that erroneous news flash from the B.B.C. a few nights ago. According to that, Akyab had fallen to a force landed from units of the Jap Navy. The Jap Navy being our particular worry at Kyaukpyu, we spent a thoroughly miserable night spotting Japanese destroyers approaching. These turned out next morning to be the rocks to seaward. . . .

Meanwhile I can smell a very fine goat curry preparing for dinner. It will be washed down by a cup of liquid tannin. And I might as well have another spot of whiskey to counteract the mosquitoes. The sun is sinking, casting a gleam on the green, jungle clad hills backing Kyaukpyu, and lighting up the sandy strands, grim rocks, and grey waters fringing the harbour. Ashore, the lights of a thousand small fires wink from beneath the cooking pots. The Gurkhas are just moving off on their evening patrol. The mosquitoes have already begun theirs. Dinner's ready. And so to bed. . . .

## MILITARY BRIDGES FOR POST-WAR RECONSTRUCTION

## By Captain W. T. Reeve, R.E.

DURING this war the comparatively light assault bridges used by the military in former wars have been largely replaced by equipment bridges designed to take loads of a heavily armoured army. After the war numbers of these bridges will probably be in stock or in course of production for the peacetime army.

Many of these bridges could be usefully employed by the Civil Government in areas where rapid reconstruction and development of communications are of vital importance. But it is well to sound a note of warning. The use of military bridges for civil purposes will be, in some respects, like using a razor to chop wood, and in others rather like using an axe to shave with. In other words, the tool is not made for the job.

Considerations governing the design of civil and military bridges, particularly military equipment bridges, are very different, and the differences in design will impose limitations on the use of equipment bridges for civilian traffic. They could, for instance, be used as substitutes for civil bridges in districts where rapid development of communications is essential; where a low traffic density may be expected; where relatively high point loads will only rarely be met with; where skilled supervision and labour is at a premium; and where aesthetic considerations may be regarded as secondary.

These limitations would not preclude the use of such bridging in huge tracts of Asia, Africa and America.

The main considerations affecting the design of a military equipment bridge are, first, that it should be a pre-fabricated bridge composed of parts that are standardised so far as design and material are concerned; this eliminates the necessity of hasty calculations and designing in the field—a fruitful source of error. Secondly, the erection of the bridge should be a simple task, and capable of being very speedily carried out; thirdly, the launching of the bridge should be designed to minimise the use of falsework and piers; preferably so that the major portion of the erecting party is enabled to be on one side of the gap.

Other considerations are that, within desired limits (fixed by purely military considerations), the bridge should be readily adaptable for varying load classes and varying spans; that it should be as light as possible in relation to its strength, and should be readily transportable; no one component of the bridge should be so unwieldy or so heavy as to necessitate the use of special equipment; and, finally, that it may be designed to carry heavy loads in one direction at a time only.

These considerations apply only in part to the designing of civilian bridges. Other considerations, such as the economic and aesthetic aspects, largely ignored by military designers, acquire

greater importance. Civil road classification, too, is quite different from military classification, being designed not on the basis of heavy point loads at controlled intervals, but presuming a maximum density of traffic composed of relatively light loads.

It is not possible here to consider the design of each kind of military equipment bridge in detail. Let us consider common features of all equipment bridges and check them against civil criteria, for the object of this article is to show that equipment bridges as such, with as few modifications as possible, are suitable, with their many advantages as regards speed of erection, availability and economy in the use of highly trained engineers, for use as civilian bridges.

Traffic for which civilian bridges are designed consists of a number of vehicles, light in comparison with modern military loads, travelling close behind each other. Military classification, however, pre-supposes that traffic crosses bridges with an interval between vehicles of never less than 80 feet, and normally about 150 feet.

The bending moment and shear set up by military loads over short spans are very much greater than any set up by civilian loads. This discrepancy decreases as the span increases; in other words, if a short span or a deck system will take a military load, it is most certainly more than capable of taking a civilian load. The limiting factor, then, in considering the strength of military bridges for civil purposes will be the main girders.

Taking a military bridge Class 40 as a basis, we can safely assume this bridge capable of bearing class 40 loads at 80-foot intervals; so far as the main girders are concerned, this load may be spread, provided it is not so spread that any part of the 80-feet of span or under in length is subjected to a load in excess of that of a Class 40 vehicle.

Few normal civilian vehicles travelling closely behind each other will be of a classification higher than class 9 (about 14 feet in length). Even under normal civilian driving conditions, it is unlikely that more than four such vehicles will be on any given 80-foot span at the same time.

As equipment bridges are designed to take heavy point loads far in excess of any loads a civilian bridge will have to bear, it may be safely assumed that the strength of the deck system is more than adequate for civilian traffic.

The design of the deck system of the military bridge is influenced by the same considerations that affect the design of the military bridge as a whole: it is desirable that each component part should be capable of being easily man-handled and transported; parts should be standardised and, as far as possible, interchangeable.

Usually it consists of steel or timber roadbearers and stringers decked with timber chesses. Dependent upon the design of the roadbearers, stringers and transoms, these chesses vary in size with the type of bridge. In the case of the bridges under consideration, the thickness of the chess varies from two to five inches; in the

case of one obsolescent type, the decking may consist of 2½-inch steel troughing filled with timber and used timber side up.

Such a decking is far from the ideal answer to civil traffic's requirements. It is uneconomically designed; a far lighter system would serve our purpose quite adequately. In addition, the timber surfacing is very susceptible to wear and to deterioration, owing to climatic conditions; it has often been desirable to add a wearing surface of 1½ or two-inch planking placed diagonally to the decking of bridges used for purely military traffic.

It would be quite possible to design special permanent decking for each bridge (some form of reinforced concrete or asphalt roadway would suit) but the introduction of this refinement defeats one of the objects of using these equipment bridges, i.e., the erection of bridges in areas where skilled labour and supervision are at a premium.

The writer suggests a compromise. The timber decking should be retained and used; if opportunity offers, it should be surfaced with a thin layer of tar and gravel, preferably after some wear has taken place. Alternatively, a wearing surface of diagonally placed lumber can be used. In either case, worn chesses should be removed and replaced as soon as excessive wear is noted. In areas where large stocks of timber are available (in India or Burma, for instance), this would probably prove more economical than laying a specially designed roadway.

Bank seats, abutments and piers present a problem. Generally speaking, the military engineer is concerned, when using equipment bridging, in effecting the speedy crossing of a gap, and is not so immediately concerned with the erection of a permanent structure and its attendant problems. His bank seats and abutments are of the simplest construction, easily and quickly erected, and the use of special materials is avoided as far as possible.

The bridge for civilian traffic must have better piers, bank seats and abutments. Particularly is this essential in India and Burma and other areas, where water-crossings show a great difference between normal and flood-water levels.

For this one purpose only, i.e., the proper design of piers and abutments, the principle of using as little highly skilled labour must be ignored. So great is the danger of scour and possible collapse of piers or abutments that are hastily improvised and built other than by experts that a specialist must be engaged for the work. Here again we might compromise, for there is no reason why temporary abutments and bank seats after the military style should not be installed as a temporary measure, the permanent ones being erected when time permitted.

The greatest advantage of the equipment bridge is the speed and ease with which it can be launched and erected—days and weeks against weeks and months expended on a normal civilian project. It can be erected by those possessing only limited knowledge of engineering. Ex-junior officers, warrant officers and N.C.Os. of Engineer Corps would be capable of supervision, and



semi-skilled labour could be trained to carry out the actual work of erection. A small maintenance cadre could be recruited from among these.

Indeed, actual engineer troops might gain valuable experience and training by erecting these bridges should the R.E. and I.E. decide to emulate the excellent example of the U.S. Corps of Engineers by employing their personnel on public works in peace-time.

bridges for civilian purposes is not satisfactory; purposely designed bridges would be far cheaper and more beneficial. It is, however, not intended that we should have fabricated equipment bridges especially for this purpose. The suggestion is that we should make use of surplus or obsolete or obsolescent stocks that would otherwise only rust in depôts, or be got rid of as scrap.

The æsthetic objection to the use of these bridges will be strongest in urbanised, built-up areas, where some form of town-planning or planned reconstruction is in prospect. These areas, however, are not suitable areas in which to build such bridges; they will usually have a high traffic density, and double-track purpose-made bridges will be essential.

Finally, it would be practicable and advantageous to use equipment bridges for the conveyance of civil traffic in areas where the speedy erection of bridges to restore or facilitate communications is a desideratum; where communications are bad owing to lack of development or to enemy action; where traffic will consist of light point loads and will be of relatively low density; where skilled labour and supervision is comparatively scarce; and where bridges are required to be built as inexpensively as possible. The expenses of these bridges amount to little more than the value of the military bridge as scrap, plus the cost of the labour.

# LETTERS TO THE EDITOR

# RE-NUMBERING INDIAN BATTALIONS

To The Editor of the U.S. I. "Journal."

DEAR SIR,—Whilst the magnificent achievements of the Indian Army in many theatres of the present war have been a source of great pride to those of us who are privileged to serve in it, there are few who will deny that the constitution and class composition of the Army have not stood up well to the test of war and that, with the coming of peace, far-reaching reorganization must take place if the Indian Army is to achieve its maximum efficiency.

The outbreak of the present war found the Army with a majority of Regiments containing four or five classes, each with completely different customs and background. This organization had been in existence since the Mutiny of 1857 and has remained in most Regiments until the present day, in spite of the experience that the one-class Regiment, such as is found in the Gurkha Brigade or Mahratta Light Infantry, is a more efficient organization.

The defects of the mixed organization were not fully apparent in peacetime, but as war expansion proceeded, the disadvantages of the system became more and more obvious. The inability of certain classes to provide sufficient recruits to maintain their Regiments led to the necessity of filling the ranks with new classes, not previously enlisted in the Regiments concerned. This was naturally unpopular in the Regiments, where officers already found it difficult to have a full knowledge of the characteristics of four or five classes. In addition, it was seldom that sufficient V.C.Os. or N.C.Os. could be obtained to form a nucleus of the new class and the recruits were, therefore, under the initial disadvantage of being commanded by strange V.C.Os. and N.C.Os., lacking that intimate knowledge of the individual and his background which is so essential in the Indian Army.

A further disadvantage is the fact that wartime officers must start from "scratch" in their study of the men, and they are now faced with up to eight or nine classes, as against a peacetime four or five. In these circumstances, an intimate knowledge of the troops is a practical impossibility.

Such a state of affairs is obviously undesirable, and the following suggestions are made in the hope that a full discussion of the situation now will enable a sound reorganization to be put into effect when the war ends. The ideas put forward are not original and are the result of discussions which the writer has had on various occasions with brother-officers.

It is suggested that no Regiment should enlist more than one or two classes, and that these classes should be selected to conform with the regimental traditions and connections. For instance, the Sikh Regiment would enlist only Sikhs, the Jat Regiment only

Jats, the Punjab Regiments only P.Ms., the Dogra Regiment only Dogras, the Frontier Force Regiment and Frontier Force Rifles

only Pathans, and so on.

By this means, it would be possible to assess accurately in peacetime the recruiting capacity of the Regiment, based on the size of the class supporting it, and the number of peacetime battalions could be fixed to permit an easy expansion to the full warpotential of the Regiment. Officers would know their men and their recruiting areas intimately, and the troops would not have to fight under the disadvantages of an outworn and inefficient organization.

Since writing the above, I have read "ISTUFEEN'S" letter in the July issue of the Journal. The advantage to be gained from associating the name of a Regiment with its class composition or recruiting area is sufficiently obvious to need any stressing and it is an inherent part of the scheme which I have suggested above.

Few Regiments will regret the passing of a system of names which has lasted barely 20 years. All, however, will be sorry to lose classes who have fought loyally and stoutly in many campaigns. Nevertheless, sentiment must not be allowed to hinder a reform which will be of such obvious benefit to the Indian Army as a whole, and it should be possible to ensure that in every case, the new class composition will retain the class or classes having the closest connection with the Regiment.

Yours faithfully, G. L. W. ARMSTRONG,

H.Q., S. E. A. C.

Major.

## RENAMING INDIAN BATTALIONS

To The Editor of the U.S. I. "Journal."

DEAR SIR,—I would like to add my appreciation of ISTUFEEN'S letter in your July issue on the re-naming of the Indian Infantry Battalions.

For the last twenty years the Punjab Battalions have had to suffer the indignity of identifying themselves under the heading of fractions, either vulgar ones or those more refined. These fractions mean little to the public in England or in India, and a distinctive name for each regiment would certainly be welcomed.

While all may not agree with the actual nomenclature suggested in the letter, the dropping of the numbers would certainly

be popular.

Sialkot.

Yours sincerely, "PUNJAB INFANTRY."

## FEEDING THE INDIAN SOLDIER

To The Editor of the U. S. I. "Journal."

DEAR SIR,—"MEDICAI. OFFICER'S" remarks in your July issue led me to try his "three-meals-a-day" for Indian troops over an extended period, and, as far as practicable, to improve the standard of cooking Because I feel others may benefit from "MEDICAI OFFICER'S" valuable advice I should like to tell your readers the results of our combined labours.

Having formed a Messing Committee, consisting of one of each caste in the Unit (six in all), the three-meal-a-day diet was decided upon. We fixed the following meal times: Reveille at 0545 hours, with the first meal at 0625 hours of tea and puri (which is similar to a chapatti, except that it is fried in ghi).

Work begins at 0730 hours, and continues to approximately 1200 hours, when the men have lunch; the food at this meal varies according to rations received and the extras obtained, but chapat-

tis, rice and dhal are the usual food items.

At 1300 hours work is resumed and continued until approximately 1900 hours, with a short break for a drink of tea. Games, followed by a bath or swim, are organised every other evening at an earlier hour than 1900 hours. These games seem to give the personnel a real appetite, and the evening meal is very popular. The food varies; sometimes mutton, goat's meat, fish (curried or boiled), with vegetables and rice, with *chapatti*, followed each alternate day by fresh fruit.

From records which I have kept carefully, this diet has resulted in a reduction of hospital admissions for stomach disorders (usually indigestion), and a slight increase in the output of work. It is encouraging, and satisfying, to feel that, after breaking centuries-old traditions, we can show and prove an improvement in

the health and in the welfare of one's Unit.

Naturally, a few disagree with the change, although they have benefited from it. Close questioning, however, revealed that the individuals in question had hoped that three meals a day instead of two would mean a reduction in working hours. A few men said they could not express an opinion as to the benefit of the new practice, but the majority were all in favour of three meals a day.

It is, however, only fair to mention that diet alone did not bring about this substantial improvement. The cookhouse is now provided (by our own labours) with a long four-grille range built of brick, with a *chapatti* plate at the end. A chimney through the roof takes away the smoke; this chimney, I may mention, was made from unserviceable four-gallon tins found on the local salvage dump.

A mixing table has been erected in the cookhouse, and also a table on which the cooked food is placed. The latter is covered by a condemned mosquito net to make it fly-proof. Thus the cooks now work standing, instead of squatting down in a cramped position. A concrete stillage has been erected for draining off of water from the food, and a pipe leads to a soakage pit dug well away from the cookhouse. To finish off the improvements the walls and ceiling were whitewashed.

Welfare grants, small though they be, will one day be utilised to purchase enamelled plates and mugs to take the place of the issue mess tins, which so very quickly become unserviceable and unfit to be used as food containers, as already the idea of sitting down to a table instead of crouching on the floor is being taken up, especially by the more educated of the men.

Looking back, and realising that the whole of the above cost absolutely nothing, I feel that perhaps others may benefit from these hints for improving the "feeding of the Indian soldier." I—and I hope others—have certainly benefited by "MEDICAL OFFICER'S" article.

Yours faithfully, S. D. HOLLOWAY, Captain.

#### N. W. FRONTIER POLICY

To The Editor of the U.S. I. "Journal."

DEAR SIR.—May I suggest three corrections to the statement of facts given in the second instalment of Colonel Simpson's valuable review of North-West Frontier policy which appeared in the July, 1944 issue of your Journal?

On page 304 the writer states that "... the Lower Mohmands, known as the Assured Clans, since Government had guaran-

teed their protection. . .

The assurance given to certain clans (not all) of the Lower Mohmands was not of protection, but of continuance to them of their allowances which they were receiving from the Afghan Government at the time of the demarcation of spheres of control between the two Governments. This assurance carried with it no guarantee of protection; such a promise was only given to the Halimzai and certain others of the Assured Clans, which were being bullied by the upper Mohmands, shortly before the operations in their support in 1936.

On page 307 it is stated: "... in November, 1936, two brigades were ordered to visit the Lower Khaisora area, more as a peaceful demonstration than anything else, as serious opposition

was not expected."

Serious opposition may not have been expected, in the sense of being regarded as probable. But its possibility, which was indeed 'obvious, was pointed out by the officers on the spot, who strongly emphasised the necessity for retaliatory measures in the event of its being offered. Demolition parties were actually attached to the two columns entering the Khaisora area, but orders were at the last moment received from the higher command prohibiting demolitions, which were accordingly not carried out, though the columns were easily in a position to do so from their camp at Biche Kashkai. This abstention from retaliatory action was misunderstood by the tribes, and was probably an important cause of the prolongation of the disorders.

On page 308 Colonel Simpson writes: "Tribal disputes, excluding those about women or cases directly concerning Government, are settled by a Political Agent, helped by a tribal jirga."

All serious disputes in a Protected Area, whether tribal or private, are settled by the Political Agent, women cases or cases directly concerning Government not being excluded. The Political Agent acts usually on the findings of ad hoc panels of arbitrators, usually four in number, though occasionally an important dispute or point of custom may be referred to all the elders of a tribe for their opinion.

Yours faithfully.
"SPINGIRAL."

Digitized by GOOGLE

#### **BUSSIAN BADGES OF RANK**

To The Editor of the U.S. I. "Journal"

DEAR SIR,

Your issue for July 1944 contains a letter signed "D'A" giving some information regarding the Russian badges of rank. As I have made a close study of this subject I am venturing to point out a number of inaccuracies which occurred in the course of this letter.

The order of the ranks of General Officers in the Red Army has been given wrongly, the rank of General being higher than that of Colonel-General. There are, moreover, no epaulets with five stars, the largest number of stars being four (in one vertical line) for a full General, three stars (in one line) for a Colonel-General, two stars for a Lieutenant-General and one star for a Major-General.

Other Arms of Services, such as Artillery, Aviation, Tanks, Engineering and Signals Corps do not have a rank of full General, the corresponding rank being that of Marshal of Artillery, Marshal of Tank Corps, Marshal of Engineering Corps, Marshal of Signal Corps. Their epaulets do not have four stars in a vertical row, but they have one large (40 mm.) silver star and above it the badge of their Arm of Service, viz: crossed barrels of guns, crossed propeller and wings, a tank, etc.

The highest ranks in these five Arms of Service is Chief Marshal of Aviation (Artillery, etc.) which corresponds to the Marshal of the Soviet Union of the Infantry or General Staff. Their badge has a 40 mm. silver star surrounded by a wreath (the star of the Marshal of the Soviet Union has no wreath, but is 50 mm. in diameter).

Yours faithfully, F. SHIBAYEV. Editor, Soviet Union News.

Delhî.

#### **BOYS' BATTALIONS**

To The Editor of the U. S. I. "Journal"

DEAR SIR.

With reference to the article on Boys' Companies in the July, 1944, number of the Journal, it is desirable to record that boys' battalions were established some time ago at each Sapper and Miner Group Headquarters, with marked success.

Yours sincerely, CLARENCE A. BIRD, Lieut.-General.

New Delhi.

#### LEADERS OF THE FUTURE

To The Editor of the U.S. I. Journal

DEAR SIR.

Many of your readers must have been very interested, as I was, in the article entitled "Leaders of the Future" which appeared in your July issue. The writer refers specifically to Infantry Centres, and it may interest readers to know something of the Boys' Companies in the R.I.A.S.C. (M.T.), which are organised on very similar lines to those in the Infantry.

Points of similarity between Infantry and M.T. Boys' Companies are: feeding without caste distinction; the wearing of special pugri fringes and proficiency badges; special cadre course for ex-Boy recruits who are going on a junior M.T. N.C.Os. course; and a Boys' Club, with its own challenge cups, challenge shield, and the company flag.

Troops (equivalent of platoons) are affiliated to Battalions, and their colours, shown by the pugri fringe and the separate troop flags, correspond to those of their parent Battalion. Specialised training is naturally different, and every effort is made to maintain a high standard of mechanical knowledge in order to produce a boy who, in addition to his education and basic infantry knowledge, is also a qualified driver-mechanic.

To this end, syllabus of Boy Recruit training in an M.T. Training Centre includes a generous allotment of Vocational. Training hours, in which Boys are taught useful trades, such as fitters, electricians, tinsmiths, carpenters, etc.

In one respect M.T. Boys' Companies—or at least one particular (and largest) M.T. Boys' Company—differ. That is in their attitude towards Scouting. Undeniably, the future of India depends on youth, and it would be useful to know how youths in India are being influenced in this respect.

Take the benefits Scouting can confer—first, on the War Effort. It teaches him how to tie knots, camp discipline and organisation, the use of signs; first-aid, fire-fighting and cooking; fieldcraft and jungle lore. It sharpens his mind and teaches him to think for himself. It enables a more personal contact to be established between officers and boys (the "off-parade" contact).

Character, honesty and loyalty are developed—all vital matters which tend to be neglected in normal military training. The Scout Law lays down a moral code, which can be easily understood by both British Officers and Indian troops. Normally the B. O., ignorant of the intricacies of Indian religions, has no moral code to which he can make an appeal when he wishes to preach honesty, loyalty, etc., to his men. The Scout moral code can be appealed to, and the Scouts' izzat held up as an ideal of loyalty and honesty. Moreover, Scouting reduces and combats the harmful prejudice of caste. The Scout keeps places clean, lights fires and cooks for himself—obvious advantages in the Army and especially on Field Service.

Another direction in which Scouting helps is that it forms a bond between the military and civil sections of the community.

The vast civil Scout population in India, numbering 315,755 (Punjab: 83,810; Mysore, 19,865; Madras, 15,043), offers an excellent field for the recruitment of the right type of boy and man.

As to the post-war world, Scouting trains the boy to be a good and useful citizen, breeds a spirit of progressiveness, combats the parochial outlook of the villager and stands for honesty of purpose in public as well as in private life.

Many units of the Army have borrowed ideas and methods from the Scout Movement, but are unwilling to acknowledge the value of the Movement and refuse to accept Scouting as such. They argue that a man cannot be a Soldier and a Scout at the same time. The fallacy of this viewpoint can be proved not only by reference to great Soldiers, Sailors and Airmen who have also been prominent Scouts (of the 90 V.Cs. won in this war, 10 have been won by former Scouts), but also by an examination of the law and ideals of the Scout Movement.

Hence, if Scouting were to be included in the curriculum of Boys' Training (even if only in Welfare and Wartime Education time) it would dovetail with the normal military training. In other words, Scouting represents the British way of life as against the Nazi philosophy of young thug-ism. It approaches the boy as a boy, and not as an adult, thereby achieving results not possible under systems less well adapted to the peculiar nature and mind of youth.

Yours faithfully, W. H. LAWRENCE, Captain.

Lahore.

#### POLITICAL FREEDOM IN MALAYA

To The Editor of the U.S. I. Journal

DEAR SIR,

Sir George Sansom, in "The Story of Singapore," in your last issue, states that advocates of colonial reform have urged that, had the people of Malaya been given political freedom, they would have fought vigorously on the British side and saved the country from the Japanese.

To the soldier, one fallacy of this argument is so obvious that it requires no mention, but even a civilian should know that civilians cannot fight an army. Sir George, himself, appears to miss the other fallacy. After living for 12 years in Malaya, I say without any hesitation that Malaya was politically the happiest country in the world, as there were no politics to cause discord and no desire to introduce politics on the part of any of the nationalities in the country.

If it were not for the British Government of Malaya, it would long ago have been ruled by the Chinese, who are the major nationality and the real workers of the country. The Malays are mainly country gentlemen and the Indians temporary residents, chiefly rubber estate coolies and a few clerks with a sprinkling of lawyers, moneylenders and a very few shopkeepers. All the large trade of the country is in British or Chinese hands and would all be in Chinese hands but for the British. The Malays certainly desire no change; I never heard a Chinese resident want a change, and no one else is concerned.

Yours faithfully.
N. R. CORKE,
Major (Retd.)

#### THE PEOPLE OF ARAKAN

To The Editor of the U.S. I. Journal

DEAR SIR.

During my service in Arakan I found among newcomers an alarming ignorance of the people, customs, language and religion of that part of Burma. I hope that endeavours may be made to remedy this, and as a lead I append some facts about the district which may be helpful to those who are called upon to serve there.

Atakan is a division of Burma divided into three districts, plus the Arakan Hill Tracts. At present we are in occupation of part of the two northern districts, i.e., Akyab and the Hill Tracts. The majority of the people in that part of the Akyab District under our control are Chittagonians; these are settlers from Chittagong and their descendants. They are staunch Muslims and pro-British. They speak a Bengali patois of their own which they do not read or write.

In the south, near Akvab and also in the Rathedaung and Kyauktaw townships, the Chittagonians use Arakanese as much as Bengali. But they learn to read and write two other languages, i.e., Urdu, the language of their religion, which they are taught by their Maulvis in the villages, and Burmese, which is the official language of the country and which is taught in all Government schools. To be a good Muslim, the Chittagonian (or "C.F." as he is known in Arakan to-day) learns Urdu; to secure a Government job he must know Burmese. Yet he speaks a bastard Bengali and/or Arakanese.

In the Arakan Hill Tracts, of which Paletwa was in peacetime the administrative capital, the natives are Mongolian hill people like the Chins and Nagas. The chief tribes are the Kwemis and Marongs. They are animists or Christians; some are Buddhists. Their language is their own, and the majority are Illiterate. They also are pro-British.

As regards the rest of Arakan, the southern part of Akyab district and the whole of Kyaukpvu district is predominantly Arakanese. Their main aim in life is to achieve complete autonomy. Arakan was always an independent kingdom, as Collis tells us in his "Land of the Great Image." The Burmese invaded this kingdom and annexed it to Burma. The Arakanese fled to parts of Bengal and thus we find them in settlements, such as Nhila and Teknaf on the west bank of the Naaf River, as well as Ramu, Cox's Bazar, Dohazari and Banderban on the Sangu River.

Digitized by GOOGIC

Erroneously, many British in Arakan and Burma refer to an Arakanese as a "Mugh", because this is what an Indian calls him. Actually the word "Mugh" is a Bengali term to denote a Buddhist of Bengal, be he a native Bengali or Arakanese settler.

The Chittagonians, hardworking, thrifty and on the whole, people of good behaviour, have always been hated by the indolent, easy-going, pleasure-loving Arakanese because they are foreign settlers and because they are able to live and work cheaply and so keep wages low and prices down. Yet the Arakanese, although they resented this Chittagonian infiltration, found it more profitable to employ the latter to till their rice-fields, cut their paddy, carry their goods and, in fact, provide the labour everywhere. Since they are excellent seamen and boatmen, Chittagonian crews monopolised all the river-steamer and motorboat traffic. In the Akyab rice mills they provide the majority of the skilled workmen and practically all the labour.

So far no mention has been made of the fourth and southern most district of Arakan, i.e., Sandoway. Here the chief language is Burmese and not Arakanese or Chittagonian. The people are more Burmese than "Rakhain" (Arakanese) and there are very few C.Fs. Sandoway District is also inhabited by Muslims of pure Burmese origin.

May I conclude with a few words about maps in Arakan? On official maps many of the names are in Burmese-a language which is seldom used in the Arakan we hold to-day. In some cases Arakanese names are given while in the Maungdaw area Chittagonian names predominate. On the other hand, it often happens that in a C. F. area the map will only give the Arakanese name of a village—which is quite useless to anybody. A case that comer and to many of the old-stagers, this sort of thing is apt to locals have never heard of this place, which they call Sheikdapara. Yet it is marked Kanvindan on the map. To the newcomes to mind is Kanyindan village, just east of Maungdaw. The be confusing.

Yours faithfully,

Calcutta.

"A MEMBER."

Printed by E. G. Tilt (Manager) at The Civil & Military Gazette, Ltd., 48 The Mall, Lahore, and edited and published by Major H. C. Druett for the United Service Institution of India, Simlo.



Sp Appointment

To The Late King George V

# RANKEN & Co., Ltd.

CALCUTTA, SIMLA, DELHI, LAHORE, RAWALPINDI & MURREE

ESTABLISHED IN CALCUTTA 1770 .

# CIVIL & MILITARY TAILORS GENTLEMEN'S OUTFITTERS AND BREECHES MAKERS

ESTIMATES SUPPLIED FOR FULL-DRESS AND MESS DRESS UNIFORMS OF ALL REGIMENTS

Sp Appointment to

His Excellency General Sir Robert A. Cassels, G.C.B., C.S.I., D.S.O., Former Commander-in-Chief in India.

## A SERVICE PATTERN Officers' Popular

### RAINCOAT

That will keep out Wind, Cold and Water.

Have you one in your Kit?

Military Regulation Service Pat-Officers' Khaki Waterproof. "Trench-Coat" (roomy and comfy and extremely serviceable and lighter in weight than Greatcoat).

Made from thoroughly Dustproof, Windproof and Waterproof, double texture fine Rubberised Cloth of Regulation Khaki Colour.



Price Rs. 45 each

FRONT: Double breasted style, cut with a curve to Military shape with broad lapels. Open and Broad Military Storm Collar to stand and fall with Tab to button to throat. Armpits with ventilation eyelets.

Note.—With order please state size round CHEST and WAIST taken over jacket and your full height or length of coat required.

## BADGES OF RANK

(For wear on shoulder straps of above Trench-Coat)

STARS Bronze (Waterproof)

.. @ Rs. 2-0 per pair.

CROWNS Bronze (Waterproof) .. .. @ Rs. 2-4 per pair.

(Raincoats for Lady Officers also supplied)

Please address your orders to:

(Late of Holdings, Oxford Circus, London, 1914-18)

MILITARY & POLICE TAILORS. LUDHIANA (PUNJAB)

Note.--Where V.-P. P. system is not available, please send remittance with order plus postage.

> Branch at: Juliundur Cantonment, B. I. Bazar Telegraphic Address: "MAYFAIR," Ludhiana.

#### ROYAL SOCIETY FOR THE ENCOURAGEMENT OF ARTS **MANUFACTURES** AND COMMERCE

PATRON-HIS MAJESTY THE KING

#### COUNCIL

#### PRESIDENT

E. F. ARMSTRONG, PH.D., D.SC., LL.D., V.B.S. VICE-PRESIDENTS

LORD ABBRCONWAY, C.B.B.

W. H. Ansell, M.C., P.R.I.B.A.

A. C. Bossom, F.R.I.B.A., M.P.

SIR ATUL CHATTERJER, G.C.I.B., K.O.S.I.

LIEUT.-COL. P. J. COWAH, M.B.B., M.INST.C.B., M.J.MECH.B.

SIR JOSIAH CROSBY, K.C.M.G., K.B.B., C.I.B.,

SIR EDWARD CROWE, K.C.M.G., Chairman, Ezaminations Committee.

SIR WILLIAM DAVISON, K.B.E., M.P.

T. C. DUGDALB, R.A., R.P.

SIR EDWARD A. GAIT, K.C.S.I., C.L.E.

E. W. GOODALE, M.C.

LORD HORDER, G.C.V.O., M.D., B SC., D.C.L., F.B.O.P.

LORD HUNTINGFIELD, E.C.M.G.

SIR HARRY A. F. LINDRAY, K.C.I.B., C.B.B., Chairman, Dominions and Colonies Section Committee.

SIR HENRY MCMAHON, G.C.M.G., G.C.V.O., K.C.I.Y., Q.S.I.

G. K. MENEIRS, C.B.R.

JOHN A. MILNE, C.B.B., Chairman, R.D.I. Committee.

C. C. PATERSON, O.B.B., D.SC., M.I.B.B., P.R.S.

B. M. RICH, C.B.E., F.C.G.I., B.SC.

M. MUNBO RUNTA.

SIR JOHN RUSSELL, O.B.B., D.SC., F.R.S.

CAPTAIN A. H. RYLLY, Chairman, Thomas Gray Committee.

SIR NORMAN VERNON, B.T., M.A.

W. W. WARRFIELD, M.A., M.P.

#### ORDINARY MEMBERS OF COUNCIL

SIR FRANK BROWN, C.J.E.

MAJOR W. H. CADMAN, B.SC., F.I.C.

G. D. H. COLE.

PROFESSOR E. C. DODDS, M.V.O., D.SC., M.D., F.R.C.P., F.R.S.

SIR THOMAS DUNLOP, K.C.M.G., C.M.G.

REV. ETHELBERT GOODCHILD.

MISS CAROLINE HASLETT, C.B.E., COMP.I.E.E.

F. R. HIORNS, F.S.A., F.R.I.B.A., M.T.P.J.

ROBERT W. HOLLAND, O.B.E., M.A., M.SC.,

C. GEOFFREY HOLME, M.B.R.

ALLAN WALTON, R.D.I.

JOHN G. WILSON.

B2-officio MEMBER OF THE COUNCIL

PEROT SMITH, R.D.I., Master of the Faculty of Royal Designers for Industry. TREASURERS

WILLIAM WILL

OSWALD P. MILNE, P.R.I.B.A., and Chairman, Industrial Art Bursaries Board. **SECRETARY** 

K. W. LUCKEURST, M.A. (absent on Active Service).

Acting Secretary-MISS J. SCOTT ROGERS.

Assistant Secretary, and Secretary, India and Burma and Dominions & Colonies Sections

D. C. MARTIN, B.SC., Ph.D. (absent on War Service).

Acting Assistant Secretary-Miss S. Heslop-Davies.

Honorary Solicitors-Messes. Bristows, Cooke & CARPMAEL.

Auditors-Musses. Delotte, Plender, Gristites & Co.

Full particulars relating to the work of the Society and conditions of membership may be obtained from the Acting Secretary. The Annual Subscription is Three Guineas; the Life Subscription Thirty Guineas. There is no Entrance Fee.

The Society's Journal which contains full reports of the Society's Meetings, together with general articles, book reviews, etc., normally issued weekly, is published fortnightly during the War. It is posted free to Fellows,

All communications for the Society should be addressed to:

THE ACTING SECRETARY, ROYAL SOCIETY OF ARTS, 6-8 JOHN ADAM STREET, ADELPHI, LONDON, W.C.2.







The Wool-Wear for India



The Footwear for India

# BARR & STROUD BINOCULARS



Type C.F. 5. (6×24 mm.)

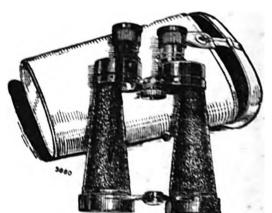


Type C.F. 10. (6×30-5 mm.)

& BEROUD LITO. REGRET THAT THEY ARE UNABLE MEANWHILE TO ACCEPT PEVATE ORDERS



Type C.F. 24. (8×80.5 mm.)



Type C.F. 30.  $(7\times50 \text{ mm}.)$ 

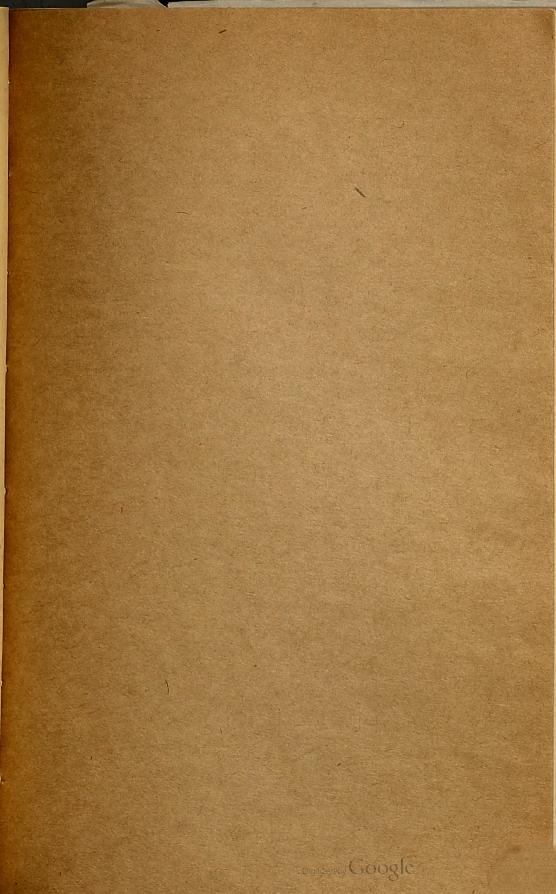
BARR & STROUD, LTD.,

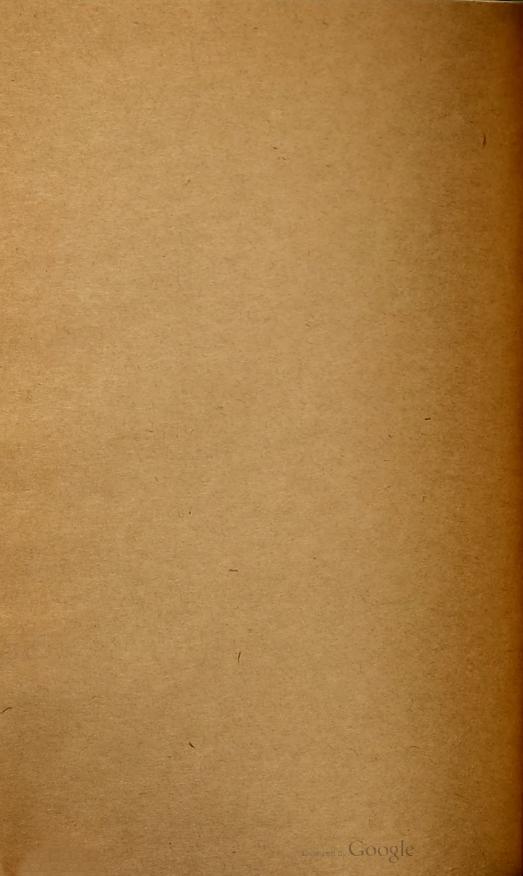
ANNIESLAND, GLABGOW, W.S. and 18 VICTORIA STREET, LONDON, S.W. 1.

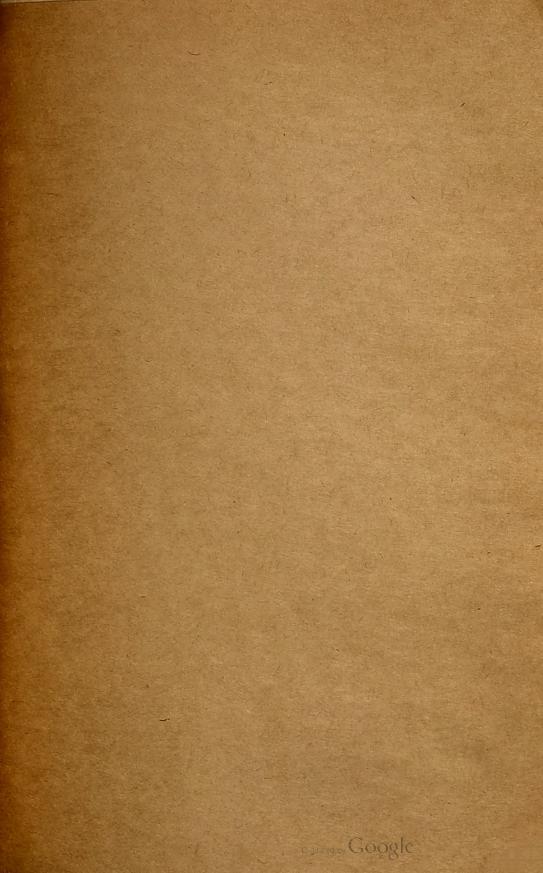
Telegrams :-Telemeter" Glargow

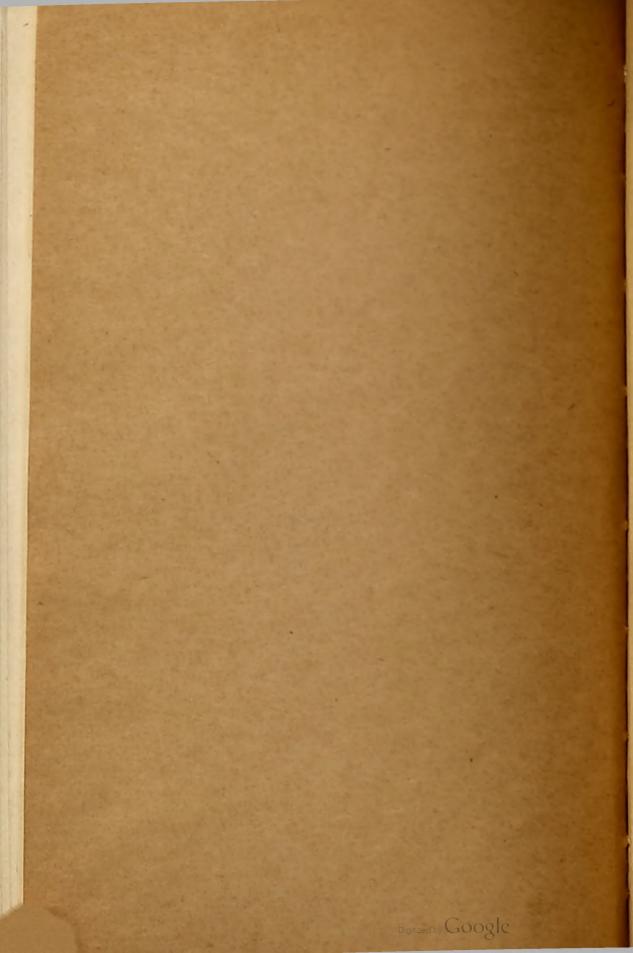
Codes :-5th and 6th Editions, A.B.C.

Telegrams :-"Retemelot Sowest" London









## THE JOURNAL

OF THE

# UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION

OF

## INDIA

#### PRINCIPAL CONTENTS

"Penny Wise, Pound Foolish"			Colonel J. F. R. Forman
Gongs and Things			"Mouse"
Britain's Post War Army			"Hansard"
What's in an Indian Name?H			LieutCol F. R. Gifford
Malaria Control in S.W.P.A			Major-General G. Covell
Power of Manoeuvre			"Auspex"
The First Burma Campaign			Colonel E. C. V. Foucar
Sinks-And Doodle-Bugs		Major-	Gen. Sir Dashwood Strettell
The Burma Rifles			Brigadier B. Fergusson
C. I. D. In Khaki			J. G. Ellis
Careers for Young Officers			
Water Supplies in the Field	-		LieutCol. F. L. Roberts

(A Complete list of Contents appears on Page xiii)

Rs. 2-8-0

# Banking by Post



If you are unable to call personally at any of the Branches of Lloyds Bank, Managers will be pleased to explain the Bank's facilities or answer any enquiries by post, if you will write to them.

Every kind of Banking Business transacted.

CURRENT ACCOUNTS opened, INTEREST ALLOWED on terms which may be ascertained on application.

FIXED DEPOSITS received at INTEREST.

SAVINGS BANK ACCOUNTS allow WITHDRAWALS by CHEQUE.

STERLING and FOREIGN CURRENCY DRAFTS sold and direct REMITTANCES made.

TELEGRAPHIC TRANSFERS effected through Banks in ALL-COUNTRIES.

WORLD LETTERS OF CREDIT
TRAVELLERS CHEQUES
BANK OF ENGLAND NOTES
BANK OF ENGLAND NOTES
SALARIES, PAY & PENSIONS collected.
PERIODICAL PAYMENTS & SUBSCRIPTIONS effected.
STOCKS & SHARES purchased and sold, and held in SAFE CUSTODY.

EXPERT OPINION on INVESTMENTS obtained from Brokers.

DIVIDENDS & INTEREST collected.

ADVANCES allowed against Approved SECURITY.

## Lloyds Bank Limited

(Incorporated in England.)

#### Branches in India:

BOMBAY (2 Offices), CALCUTTA (2 Offices), DARJEELING, KARACHI, DELHI, NEW DELHI, SIMLA, LAHORE, RANGOON EVACUATION BRANCH (Lahore), AMRITSAR, PESHAWAR, (Cantt. & City), RAWALPINDI, MURREE, SRINAGAR, GULMARG.

#### UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION OF INDIA

The headquarters building of the United Service Institution of India in Simla is open daily, including Sundays, from g a.m. to sunset. It contains a reading room, in which is available a wide range of illustrated periodicals, newspapers, magazines, etc., as well as a number of Service journals. A well-stocked a library is also open to members, who may borrow volumes without charge, while members stationed elsewhere may obtain books on loan post-free.

Members also receive, post-free, each of the quarterly issues

of the Journal of the Institution.

Rules of Membership

1. All officers of the Defence Services, whether they belong to the Imperial Forces, to forces raised by the Government of India, by an Indian State, by a British Dominion or Colony, and all gazetted officials of the Government of India or of a Provincial Government shall be entitled to become members, without ballot, on payment of the entrance fee and subscription.

Other gentlemen may become members if proposed and seconded by a member of the Institution and approved by the Council. They will be entitled to all the privileges of membership, excepting voting. 2. Life members of the Institution shall be admitted on payment

of a lump sum of Rs. 160, which sum includes entrance fee.

3. Ordinary members of the Institution shall be admitted on payment of an entrance fee\* (see para. 4) of Rs. 10 on joining, and an annual subscription of Rs. 10 (or 15s.) to be paid in advance.

The period of subscription commences on January 1. An ex-member on rejoining the Institution will be charged a second entrance fee of Rs. 10 if since the date on which he ceased to be a member he has served or resided in India. In other cases no charge will be made.

4. British Service, Dominion and Colonial officers serving in Andia shall pay an entrance fee\* of Rs. 7 only.

5. Members receive the Journal of the Institution post free to any part of the world. Members in India may obtain books from the library; they are issued postage free, the borrower paying the return postage.

6. Government institutions and offices, military libraries, messes and clubs wishing to subscribe for the Journal shall pay Rs. 10 per arnum. Non-members shall pay Rs. 10 per annum plus postage. Single copies of the Journal will be supplied to non-members at

Rs. 2-8-0 per copy, plus postage.

7. If a member fails to pay his subscription for any year (commencing 1st January) by 1st June of that year, a registered notice shall be sent to him by the Secretary inviting his attention to If the subscription is not paid by 1st January following, his name shall be struck off the roll of members and, if the Executive Committee so decide, posted in the hall of the Institution for six months, or until the subscription is paid.

8. An ordinary member wishing to resign at any time during a year in which one or more Journals have been sent to him must pay his subscription in full for that year and notify his wish to resign before his name can be struck off the list of members.

9. Members who join the Institution on or after the 1st October and pay the entrance fee and annual subscription on joining will not be charged a further subscription on the following 1st January, unless the Journals for the current year have been supplied.

10. Members are responsible that they keep the Secretary carefully posted in regard to changes of rank and address.

copies of the Journal will not be supplied free to members when the original has been posted to a member's last known address and has not been returned through the post.

11. All communications should be addressed to the Secretary, United Service Institution of India, Simla.

For the duration of the war, the entrance fee has been waived.

## UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION OF INDIA

The Secretary, United Service Institution of India, SIN	LA.
Date	
Dear Sir,	•••
Please enrol me as a member (or Life Member) of the Un Service Institution of India.	
Yours faithfully,	
Name	•••••
(In block caps.)	
Rank and Unit	
Permanent Address	
Present Address	••••
BANKERS' ORDER FORM	
To Messrs (Bankers), at	
On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Sir for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 10 (to being my annual subscription for 19 and the sum of Rs. 10 every succeeding January 1 until further notice.	en)
Date Signature	. • • •
To Messrs , (Bankers), at	
On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Sin for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Ra. 150 (chundred and fifty), being Life Membership subscription of Institution.	
Date, Signature	
To The Secretary, United Service Institution of India, SIM Date	
Dear Sir,	
Please enrol me as member (or Life Member) of the Unit Service Institution of India.	bed
Yours faithfully,	
(In block caps.)	••••
Rank and Unit	
Permanent Address	
Present Address	
BANKERS' ORDER FORM	
To Messrs (Bankers), at	
On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simfor the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 10 (te being my annual subscription for 19 and the sum of Rs. 10 every succeeding January 1 until further notice.	ila, m).
Date Signature	
To Messrs (Bankers), at	••••

## V SERVICE FOR SERVICES

V

Rs. 35.

We are giving below our brief list of Officers' equipments with latest prices for the convenience of our patrons.

Kh. Barathea Peaked Cap soft Rs. 16. (All officers' Caps supplied) Kh. Barathea Side Cap Rs. 15 Khaki or Black "BERET" Cap Shoulder Titles, Gilt or Bronzed Rs. 2 p.p. Shoulder Titles, Cloth "SLIP-ON" Rs. 1|8|- p.p. 1939—43 Star or N. Africa or Any other Medal Ribbons Rs. 18p.ft. Cap Badge Gilded and Bronzed Rs. 4. Oakleaf Gold Embd. Gorget Rs. 15 p.p. patches Green Silk · Lace Gorget patches ... Rs. 10 p. p. Collar Badges Bronzed or Gild-Rs. 6 p. p. Leather Thong Buttons E/made Rs. 5 p. set. Rs. 5 p. set. BUTTONS Gilded or Bronzed of All Descriptions Rs. 7-3 p. set. CROWN Gilded Bronzed Rs. 2-4 p. p.

Do. Kh. Worsted Rs. 1-4 p. p. STAR Gilt-enamelled or Bronzed Rs. 2-4 p. p. Do. Kh. Worsted Rs. 1-4 p. p. PITH Helmet Khaki Rs. 7-8 HELMET Flash Ribbon in your Colour Rs. 1-8 p. ft. WHISTLE & Lanyard Rs. 2-8. Revolver LANYARD Rs. 2-8. Sam Browne Belt complete Rs. 25. Ribbon Bars with Safety-pin mounted with one Ribbon - 8|-.

kh. Woollen STOCKINGS.

Rs. 7 p. p. Kh. Woollen Socks Rs. 4-4 p. p. Kh. Woollen HOSETOPS Rs. 3-8. Kh. Mercerised Stockings Rs. 5

Kh. Mercerised Stockings Rs. 5

FOX'S Ankle Puttie Rs. 8-8.
Kh. Silk-knitted TIE Rs. 2.
Silk wide-end TIE in every regtl. and deptl. colour Rs. 4.
Silk Square 36"×36" Rs. 15
Servants' WAIST & PUGREE BANDS complete with np

buckles and runner in every deptl. & regtl. colour 4", 5" and 6" wide Rs. 4, 5 and 6

(Special Clubs, Messes and Regtl. made to order.)

Servants' Silver-plated Badge for Pugree Rs. 2-8. A to Z initial Rs. 1-8. MILY. BRUSH CASES, E made

(Garstin & Co., Ltd.)
Fitted with Two Natural Ebony
Hair Brushes, Real Bristle and
Comb, hide case to resemble
Ebony.

Size 5% 23" × 2" Size 5" × 23" × 2"

COLLAR BOXES, E|made. Real Hide. Long strap over lid, lined imitation pigskin.

Size 7½ diameter Rs. 15. Size. Rs. 12. TROUSER-PRESSES, E made. Made in polished Oak grained wood, nickled fittings and detachable stretcher, size 26"×12½"

#### **GOLF BAGS**

Nut-brown cowhide, lined drill, outside pocket, strong leather sling, blocked bottom. Rs. 25. White Washable GLOVES E/made .. Rs. 30 p. doz. Gold and Silver Kullahs and Loongies in any design (made to order.)

80 Best Quality Letter Papers and Envelopes, embossed with your Crest in blue . . . Rs. 6.

Xmas Cards, crested, bound with your colour with envelopes, per dozen . Rs. 4-8. Silk ribbon in your colour for Invitation Christmas Cards, per yard . Re. 0-8-0.

AIR FORCE
Peaked Cap Blue complete Rs. 26.
Side Cap complete ... Rs. 15.
Silk Rank Braids, Blue or Khaki,
1", 1" and 21" wide Rs. 1|-, 1|4,
and 6|- per yard.

ALL OTHER ARTICLES STOCKED

## K. MAHMOOD SHAH'S

MILITARY, R. A. F. & POLICE Contractors and Outfitters LUDHIANA (Pb.)

## Outstanding Books Published by Thackers, Bombay

#### THE SONG OF DERNADETTE

More than a hundred thousand copies sold! Few novels pose a problem of more fascinating human complexity than this story of an en-lightened civilisation suddenly faced by the Rs. 3-12 inexplicable.

#### FOR WHOM THE BELL TOLLS

Ernest Hemingway

One million people bought it. Five million
people read it. The greatest love story of all
Rs. 8-12

#### INDIAN INTERLUDE Erlo Becoroft

The author has created a number of delightful personalities, he succeeds in conveying to the reader a true atmosphere.

RS. 6-14 reader a true atmosphere.

#### MOTIVE FOR MURDER Florence Klipatrick

Clyde Moncrieff has to make a dash for Engdand to escape from being involved in a murder he witnessed in an opium-den in Rio. His further adventures make an absorbing detective story.

#### D DAY

John Gunther Mr. Gunther is well known for his "Inside Europe" and other books of a similar type. "D Day" is recommended as one of the best books of the week by the "London Times Literary Supplement."

#### WITH THE 14TH ARMY

D. F. Karaka

This latest book by Mr. Karaka is an outstanding feat of close observation and accurate recording. Recent developments on this front make "With the 14th Army" a book of particular interest just now. Rs. 4-12

#### WINGATE'S PHANTOM ARMY W. G. Burchett

"More thrilling than any fictitious thriller."

#### PACIFIC TREASURE ISLAND

The book tells of New Caledonia, the Pacific Treasure Island—the Malta of the South Seas. Of the author it is said "Burchett has become a to be reckoned with. His waitings have rightly become popular among the peoples of South East Asia." Rs. 9-12

#### THE WORLD THAT WORKS George West

This is a book about the end of a world that did not work and news of a world we're all looking for—a world that works.

#### THE LIVING AND THE DEAD Beverley Nichols

book that has caused much bitterness and relative criticism. Rs. 2-12 much more constructive criticism.

#### INDIA IN FABLE, VERSE AND STORY L. H. Niblett

Here is a feast of good reading: stories ancient and modern—weird, bizarre, elevating, humour-ous, and serious—illustrating diverse aspects of Rs. 4-5 Indian life.

#### **JOURNALISM**

C. L. R. Sastri A rare find and a real acquisition to Indian Rs. 11-8

#### TRY ANYTHING ONCE

"A record of true vagaboudage, amazing in the variety of its icidents, and told with a naive candour, which leaves the reader rather breath-

#### ONIONS AND OPINIONS N. G. Jog

These little essays are a sheer delight. Re. 6-12

#### PEOPLE OF BOMBAY Percival & Olivia Strip

This book describes the origin, history, religion, commercial activities inherent traits, etc., of the Parsees, the Khojas, the Banyas, the Borsa and other communities of Bombay. Rs. 8-12

#### SUNLIT WATERS Capt. C. W. W. S. Conway

This book gives an extremely practical exposi-tion of the methods and advantages of fishing with light tackle—and brings fishing history in India up-to-date.

#### MY STORY Sheelagh O'Flynn

A Baby's Record Book and Photograph Album combined.

#### KNITTED 200 Anna Politzer & Thora Stowell

What is more fuscinating than making your own toys at home? Here is a book of complete instructions for knitting toys, with details about materials and making up, and expert guidaced throughout.

#### THE GALLANT WAY

A collection of twenty-three spirited poems extrolling the best in the British martial tradition.

#### THE TRIAL OF MUSSOLINI "CASSUS"

Did you read "Guity Men" if so (or if not) read "The Trial of Mussolini" by "Cassius." The first four editions total 100,000 copies. Rs. 2-14 I WADE MY OWN DOLLS
Thora Stowell The

The patterns given in this book have all been made over and over again and have stood the test of being sold in competition with professional models and all have sold very well.

#### LENINGRAD

Alexander Werth
Out of the beleaguered city—the starved, bombed and shelled city—he brought a story that no reader will very easily forget. Rs. 8-14

WHRT TO QO WITH GERMANY

Louis Nizer

His book is a triumph of brief, lucid statement, sane argument and imaginative planning, facing all the major issues and omitting no essentials.

STRANGE ISLAND

Molley Kaye

This is a thriller in the classical tradition of Edgar Wallace and Agatha Christie, brilliantly constructed and told with many flashes of Rs. 9-12

Through Japanese Barbed Wire (in the press). G. Priestwood

## THACKERS PUBLISHERS, BOMBAY

Digitized by GOOGLE

### BURMAH-SHELL

# have pleasure in announcing THE 5th ALL-INDIA



### **EXHIBITION**

The prospectus for the 1945 Exhibition is now ready and copies may be obtained from all Burmah-Shell offices and leading art schools. The scope of this Exhibition is wider than ever and in addition to sections devoted to all types of commercial art, the following are included—commercial photography, typography, interior decoration, film scenarios, window displays, textile designing, and handicrafts. The prize fund exceeds Rs. 25,000/- and many sections are open to all artists at present in India including Services personnel.

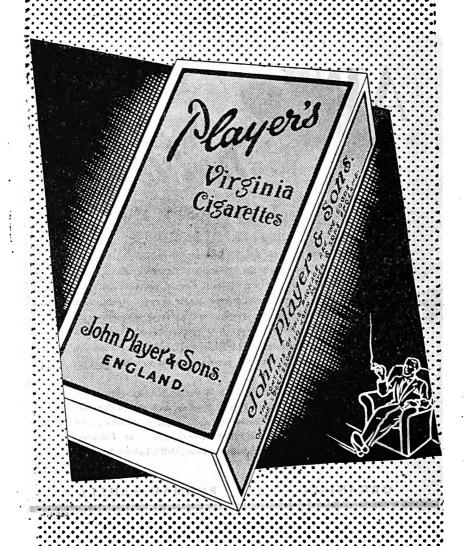


The Exhibition will be held during January 1945 at the Sir J. J. School of Art, Bombay, and the closing date for entries is November 20th, 1944, in Bombay, and November 1st in Burmah-Shell offices at Calcutta, Madras, Secunderabad, Lucknow, Delhi, Lahore, Karachi.

ORGANISED

BY () BURMAH - SHELL

BAX -115



JOHN PLAYER & SONS, ENGLAND

## OFFICERS' UNIFORM



## BATTLE DRESS

Made from best quality English Khaki Serge. All details correct according to Regulations. Blouse and Trousers Rs. 100.



#### gainers of fillion How are ... KHAKI BARATHEA

mode , eem Service Dress Jacket and Trousers Rs. 200. Buttons and Badges extra.

## KHAKI OFFICERS GREAT COAT

Made from best English Treblemilled and waterproofed Melton. Correct in all details Rs. 175. But-

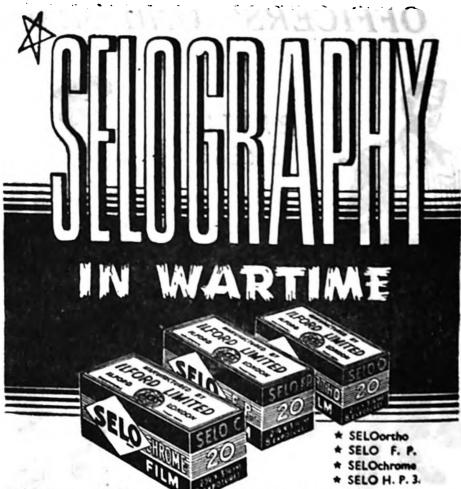
Patterns and self measurement form on request."

## ARMY & NAVY STORES LTD.

Telegrame : "Armistice "

BOMBAY

Telephone: 2500



A great number of discriminating photographers all over India find that, although SELO films are less plentiful than in peacetime, they are well worth searching for—because of their quality, We would only add this: When you have bought them, use them sparingly?

## MARCHING ON STILL I

ILFORD-SELÓ (INDIA) LTD. Bombay - Madres - Labore - Calcutt



					Rs.	<b>a.</b>
Khaki Barathea Service Peak Ca	p and Bad	ge		••	20	0
Khaki Barathea Field Cap and B	adge	(Side (	Cap)	••	15	0
Blue Barathea Field Cap and Ba	dge	(Side	Cap)	••	20	0
Green, Black or Khaki "Beret"	Сар	• • •	•	••	15	0
R.A.F. Blue Barathea Peak Cap	and Badge	•		••	25	0
R.A.F. Blue Barathea Field Cap	and Badge	(8)	de Cap	).	18	O.
Collar Badges, Bronze for Khaki	Jacket		a pair	••	6	0
Cap Badges, Bronze for Khaki Ca	DB	• •	each	••	4	0
Buttons, Gilt or Bronze for Khal	i Jacket		a set		7	8
Buttons, Gilt for Patrol Jacket	••		**	••	7	8
Buttons, Gilt for Greatcoat	••		**		9	0
Shoulder Titles, Gilt or Bronze	••	• •	a pair		2	0
Shoulder Titles, Cloth slip-on	••		-,,		1	8
Stars (Pips), Gilt-enamelled	••	•••	•••		2	4
Crowns, Gilt with Red Velvet			,,	••	2	8
Stars or Crowns, Bronze or Black		••	"		2	0
Stars or Crowns, worsted on Kha		••	**	••	1	8
Khaki Cellular Bush Shirts			**		10	8
Khaki Drill Shorts Rs. 6-8 a pair,	Khaki Del	II Slac	ks		15	0
Khaki Woollen Stockings			y,		6	Ò
Khaki Ankle Putties, Fox's Pate	nt	•••	"		9	Ō
Khaki Woollen Hosetops			"		3	8
Field Haversacks, leather botton		• • • •	each		` 10	Ō
Field Waterbottles Rs. 10 each.	R Relt.	•••		:	25	Ŏ
Whistle and Khaki Lanyard Rs.	9-8 Pav				2.	8
1939-43 Star or N. Africa Star or	annother	Medel	Ribbo	ne.	- ;	Ξ.
1838-43 Dest Of M. Willes Dear Of	any conci	Mcda	a foot		1	8
Bars mounted with any ribbon.			each	••	ō	6
Officer's Greatcoat	••	••	"	••	275	Ŏ.
Khaki Raincoat	••	••		••	45	õ
	• •		••			

## Servants' Waist & Pugree Bands, Badges, Silk Ties and Sports Squares

(Stocked in your Regulation approved colours and designs.)

#### Servants' Waist & Pugree Bands & Pugree Badges

(Your Servants will look neat and smart when wearing Bands and Badges.)
Waist & Pugree Bands in your Corps, Regiment or Departmental
colours fitted with electro nickel-plated buckle and runner
adjustable to any size waist
Servants' Pugree Badges, electro silver-plated of your Corps,
Regiment or Departmental design
at Rs. 4/- each

#### WIDE-END TIES

Wide-End superior Cord Silk Ties, well made with reinforced neck bands, with diagonal stripes in your Regulation colours at Rs. 5/- each

#### **MUFFLERS**

Mufflers 36 inches square made of superior cord silk striped in your Regulation colours . . . . at Rs. 15/- each

#### **BLAZER POCKET BADGES**

Pocket Badges with your crest worked in Gold or Silver embroidery on blue or your own material ... at Rs. 8/- each Pocket Badges, with your crest embroidered in white or any coloured silk, on blue or your own material ... at Rs. 4/- each

#### CRESTED STATIONERY & XMAS CARDS

80 best quality Letter Papers & Envelopes to match, embossed with your Depttl. Crest in any colour at Rs. 5/8

Xmes Cards, embossed with your Corps Crest and tied with ribbon in your Corps colours, in Envelopes at Rs. 5.4 per dozen.

Silk Ribbon in your colours for Invitation & Wedding Cards As. 8 per yard.

## YOUSAF & CO. MILITARY & POLICE TAILORS, LUDHIANA (Punjab)

(Branch at: Juliundur Cautonment, B. I. Bazar)
Where V.-P.P. system is not available please send with order
cost of goods plus postage.



Yet, this is exactly what happens every time you make an unnecessary purchase. The prices of most things are abnormally high and you lose money every time you buy something you do not really need. Be wise. Do not buy unless you must. Wartime prices are bad value for money.

You risk your money if you buy jewels, land, buildings, commodities or manufactured goods. Their prices are subject to fluctuations and make no mistake, the trend of prices is now downward and not upward.

These investments are both safe and profitable:

- \* Insurance,
- \* Co-operative Societies,
- \* Savings Bank,
- \* Post-Office Savings Bank,
- \* Government Loans and
- National Savings Certificates.
- The returns on a safe investment may be smaller, but the capital is <u>eccure</u> - and that is what counts during wartime,

# Salg All you can And invest All you save

A NATIONAL APPEAL BY THE NATIONAL WAR FRONT

AAAM

## United Service Institution of India

#### PATRON:

His Excellency the Viceroy and Governor-General in India.
VICE-PATRONS:

H. E. The Governor of Madras.

H. E. The Governor of Bombay.

H. E. The Governor of Bengal.

H. E. The C.-in-C. in India.

H. E. The Governor, United Prov.

H. E. The Governor of the Punjab.

H. E. The Governor of Bihar.

H. E. The Governor, Central Prov.

H. E. The Governor of Assam.

H. E. The Governor, N.W.F.P.

H. E. The Governor of Sind.

H. E. The Governor of Orissa.

The G.O. C.-in-C., N.W. Army.

The G.O. C.-in-C., Southern Army. The G.O. C.-in-C., Eastern Army.

The G.O. C.-in-C. Central Comd.

#### MEMBERS OF THE COUNCIL, 1944-45

#### Ex-officio Members:

The Chief of the General Staff (President).
The A.O.C., Air Forces in India (Vice-President).
The Flag Officer Commanding Royal Indian Navy.
The Secretary, Defence Department.
The Secretary, External Affairs Department.

#### Elected Members:

Lieut.-Gen. Sir Clarence Bird, K.C.I.E., C.B., D.S.O.

Lieut -Gen. Sir Thomas Hutton, K.C.I.E., C.B., M.C.

Major-General D. A. L. Wade, O.B.E., M.C.

Major-Gen. H. V. Lewis, C.B., C.I.E., D.S.O., M.C.

Major-General R. A. Savory, C.B., D.S.O., M.C.

Commander H. E. Felser Paine, R.I.N.

P. Mason, Esq., O.B.E., I.C.S.

Group-Captain E. L. Tomkinson, D.S.O., A.F.C., R.A.F.

#### Honorary Members:

Lieut.-Gen. H. H. the Maharaja of Jammu & Kashmir, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., K.C.V.O.

Air-Comm. H. H. the Nawab of Bhopal, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., C.V.O. Air Comm. H. H. Maharaja Bahadur of Jodhaur G.C.S.I. G.C.I.E.

dur of Jodhpur, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., K.C.V.O.

Colonel H. H. the Maharaja Jam Saheb of Nawanagar, G.C.I.E., K.C.S.I.

Major H. H. the Maharaja of Patiala, G.B.E. Major H. H. the Raja of Faridkot,

Major H. H. the Raja of Faridkot, K.C.S.I.

Lieut.-Gen. R. A. Wheeler, U. S. Army.

Major-Gen. George E. Stratemeyer, U. S. Army.

Major-Gen. Dan I. Sultan, U. S. Army.

Major-Gen. W. E. R. Covell, U. S. Army.

General Sir George Giffard, G.C.B., D.S.O.

Air Chief Marshal Sir Richard Peirse, K.C.B., D.S.O., A.F.C.

Admiral Sir James Somerville, K.C.B., K.B.E., D.S.O.

Lieut.-Gen. Sir Henry Pownall, K.B.E., C.B., D.S.O., M.C. Air Marshal Sir Guy Garrod,

K.C.B., C.B., D.S.O., M.C.

#### MEMBERS OF THE EXECUTIVE COMMITTEE, 1944-45

President: Major-General D.A.L. Wade, C.B.E., M.C. Members: Lieut.-General Sir Clarence Bird, K.C.I.E., C.B., D.S.O. Lieut.-General Sir Thomas Hutton, K.C.I.E., C.B., M.C. Commander H. E. Felser Paine, R.I.N.

P. Mason, Esq., O.B.E., I.C.S.

Secretary and Editor: Major H. C. Druett. Bankers: Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla.

Digitized by Google





JAMES CARLTON LTD., LONDON, ENGLAND. EASTERN LICENCESS.
P. O. BOX 470 CALCUTTA

Digitized by Google

## The Journal

of the

## United Service Institution of Endia

n	n		77	N)	7	NT.	7	S
U	v	ж	u,	L	Pa.	v		

	Page
Matters of Moment	1
"Penny Wise, Pound Foolish," by Colonel J. F. R. Forman	8
Gongs and Things, by "Mouse"	20
Britain's Post-War Army, from "Hansard"	25
What's In An Indian Name?—II, by LieutColonel F. R.	
Gifford	33
Malaria Control in the South-West Pacific, by Major-	
General G. Covell	<b>3</b> 8
Power of Manoeuvre, by "Auspex"	<b>4</b> 8
Pony Pack Ballad, by H. F. H	<b>5</b> 8
The First Burma Campaign, by Colonel E. C. V. Foucar	5 <b>9</b>
Peace Terms, by Colonel H. F. Humphreys	73
Things People Say	79
Invasion Build-up, by LieutColonel W. H. Kingsberry	83
Sinks—And Doodle-Bugs, by Major-General Sir	
Dashwood Strettell	88
The Burma Rifles, by Brigadier Bernard Fergusson	91
C. I. D. in Khaki, by LieutColonel J. G. Ellis	95
My Last Days as a Free-Englishman in Italy, by E. X. Pow	100
Rationing in England, by R. de K. M	107
Military Reading—II, by "Siegfried"	111
Post-War Careers for Young Officers, by Alan Rasp	113
Further Reflections on Waziristan, by "Mir Dod"	120
Southern England and Its Flying Bombs, by "Ex-Thakur"	125
Functions of Air Landing Troops, by F. J. C. P	128
Water Supplies in the Field, by LieutColonel F. L.	
Roberts	131
Book Notes	136
Letters to the Editor	141
Notes by the Secretary	149

Will readers please note that the "Notes by the Secretary" feature now appears on page 149.

#### GOLD MEDAL PRIZE ESSAY COMPETITION

The Council has selected the following subject for the Gold Medal Prize Essay Competition for 1945:

"During the present war there have been certain limiting factors to the expansion of the Armed forces of India as regards permanel, equipment and armaments. Consider in relation to any one, or all three Services, in what manner they could in future best most their peace-time commitments within the probable limitations of post-war finance, and at the same time form a sounder basis for expansion if the need should occur."

Entries are invited from all commissioned officers of His Majesty's Forces, from gazetted officers of the Civil Administration in India, and from officers of the Indian States Forces.

Essays, which should be typewritten (double spacing) and submitted in triplicate, must be received by the Secretary, United Service Institution of India. Simla, on or before June 30, 1945. In order that the anonymity of each candidate should be preserved, a motto should be written at the top of each entry. A sealed envelope, bearing on the outside the motto, and containing inside the name and address of the author of the essay, must accompany each entry.

Entries should not exceed fifteen pages (approx. 8,000 words) of the size and style of the Journal. Should any authority be quoted in the essay, the title of the work referred to should be given.

Three judges chosen by the Council will adjudicate. They may recommend a money award not exceeding Rs. 500, either in addition to, or in substitution of, the Gold Medal, and will submit their decision to the Council. The name of the successful candidate will be published in the October, 1945 issue of the Journal.

Copyright of all essays submitted will be reserved by the Council of the United Service Institution of India.

## The Journal

of the

## Anited Service Institution of India

Vol. LXXV

JANUARY, 1945

No. 318

The views expressed in this Journal are in no sense official, and the opinions of contributors in their published articles are not necessarily those of the Council of the Institution.

#### MATTERS OF MOMENT

D ESPITE recent setbacks in Europe, we enter 1945 with firm faith and optimism, for a panoramic view of the World's greatest battle-fields gives convincing proof of victory. Though the only things certain in war are said to be unpleasant

A Year of Destiny surprises and disappointments, we have reached the stage when we know victory is certain. The last twelve months have been months of initiative for the United Nations:

we have the mastery of the skies, an impregnable position on the seas, and valour in our armies. Commanding that substantial power we shall make 1945 the year of victory. Sustained, even in our darkest hours, by conviction in the justness of our cause; invigorated by a leader whose oratory is equalled by his aggressive qualities; and inspired by love of our Empire and our heritage, we and our Allies march into a year of destiny.

What were the highlights of 1944? Pride of place must go to the greatest amphibious operation in history, and to those

Highlights of 1944 who planned and took part in it; quickly following must be the brilliant strategy of the Allied leaders in the sweep across France and

Belgium. In Italy what is probably the most cosmopolitan army in history has slowly pushed its way northwards; Russia has been cleared of Germans, and our mighty

R.A.F. and the colossal American air force are daily destroying Hitler's war machine. Thousands of miles away from that front Allied armies have evicted the Jap from 30,000 square miles of Burma; the Americans and Australians are combining in a series of major actions to destroy the remnants of the Japanese Army tenaciously clinging to the outposts they captured three years ago; Japan is being heavily bombed; and the noose of sea power has been tightened around Japan itself. The sea war, in which there are no famous place-names and only the occasional thunder of big guns, is being won. The "Tirpitz" has gone; the German Navy has been rendered ineffective, and the U-boat is no longer a menace. Paris. Rome, Brussels, Bucharest, Budapest, Belgrade and Athens have been liberated, and the lamps of most of Europe's capitals, darkened since 1939, now shine with the flame of freedom.

What of the early post-war period? Only vision and courage and co-operative endeavour on the part of Allied and

The Tasks Aboad national leaders will win the social revolution which will sweep over the Continents when fighting is over. The peoples of backward countries, suborned by Axis propaganda, know

nothing of the measures to be taken to rehabilitate them, nor of the new democratic ideals which have been planned for them. Millions of human beings in Europe know nothing of the trends of political and social thought which have been born of the struggle. Their minds, poisoned by falsehoods, will have to be cleansed; the deceit which the conquered but rebellious peoples of Europe have had to practise to preserve their existence under the Gestapo rule of their conquerors may have become by this time part of their sub-conscious life. Proper and timely treatment will be needed to eradicate the basenesses forced on human nature by terror of torture and "Governments of all the talents" will be needed to death. instil constitutionalism into the minds of their subjects if the tragedies which have beset Greece are to be avoided. With victory, all these difficulties will arise; they cannot be overcome quickly, but the progress of mankind is measured by endeavour as well as by achievement, and perseverance and right thinking will guide us along the road which it is hoped we and millions of our fellow-creatures will tread towards dignity, greatness and peace.

Digitized by Google

a plan that does not look upon Germany as a possibly dangerous enemy for at least twenty years." Thus spoke a member of the House of Lords in a recent debate on the post-

war British Army. Admittedly, Germany's Britain's position at the end of this war will be very Post-War different from that in 1918; her losses in killed Army and incapacitated may well be three times as high as in the Great War; countries which have been ravaged by Germans may demand Germans to rebuild their cities: the treasures looted by Germany (and America estimates their value at £10,000,000,000) will have to be given up; and her industrial plant has been, or will be, destroyed. These facts make it certain that Germany will not be able to re-arm as she did in 1932, helped as she was by loans of £150,000,000 from the Allies. Nevertheless, we are dealing with a cruel and crafty nation, and one of the most important dangers to be faced may come from "secret" weapons. Vast improvements and discoveries can revolutionise war, as we have seen in the present struggle, and we feel there will be wide support for the suggestion that there should be established a Scientific Research body of international scientists, to counter the inventions of aggressor nations and to secure that our own armoury is up to date. More important, however, is the maintenance of a strong Force which, when needed, can march on a country which threatens attack and say "Stop." mean conscription; it may upset the careers of young men; but if it assures peace it will be well worthwhile.

OFFICIALDOM has in this war embarked on many publicity campaigns, one of which emphasised the dangers of "careless talk." To judge from the "security-mindedness" of Service personnel and civilians alike, it has been a success,

especially in Great Britain. There the teachings of one advertising campaign have been well applied, for even such enormous operations as those in the Normandy and North-

African landings achieved surprise in large measure because widespread and constant advertising had convinced people of the soundness of "keeping their mouths shut." Here in India similar caution is essential. Japanese spies in India are no figment of the imagination any more than were German spies in Great Britain. The Japs have their contacts in India just as the Germans had in the U. K. and America. The Japs do not

send round a man with protruding teeth and horn-rimmed glasses, nor can any thinking man looking around him fail to see those opportunities which the enemy would grasp if he had the chance.

"Next of Kin," one of the finest military training films yet produced, gave a vivid picture of how the German acquires

Lessons to be Learned information, and practically every lesson that film taught applies with equal force to India. The sentry who failed to ask for a pass or identity card is just as guilty as the man who

discusses military matters over the phone without checking the identity of the man to whom he is speaking. (Incredible as it may sound, it does happen.) Another source of leakage may be the supplier of goods to the Mess; everyone is anxious to square up accounts before a move, and the Mess Secretary is no less anxious to do so than the individual officer, with the result that, especially in India, news of an impending move can come from the most surprising places. What is one of the main causes of bad security? It is vanity—the speaker's vanity in trying to impress someone else with his own importance. Finally, there is another personal angle. If any Serviceman feels that he may have revealed a secret, it is better that he should report it and face the music, rather than live for years with the lurking suspicion that it may have led to the death of one of his brothers. This question of security is a duty thrown on every officer and man in the Services. If it is obeyed it brings no medal—but it can and does inculcate a sense of satisfaction in playing even a small part in the victory which is to come.

DDED recognition of the importance of welfare work for the troops in India has been amply afforded by the report of Lord Munster on his recent tour of India and S.E.A.C. Army welfare work is essentially for enthusiasts, and everyone who has Welfare had contact with the officers, high and low. in responsible for this side of Army life will India testify to the eagerness, vision and sympathetic consideration with which they have put welfare "on the map" in India. Difficulties and shortcomings due in large measure to war risks have been encountered, but whatever critical and mainly uninformed newspaper critics may say, the job has been done with a will and with success.

HOUGH it had little direct reference to Lord Munster's mission, we feel constrained while on the subject of amenities to refer to the unfortunate comment in a London newspaper on the hospitality—or lack of it, according to that

A Matter of Hospitality newspaper,—extended to British soldiers in India by British residents. It resulted in much correspondence in *The Statesman*, which is to be commended for fastening attention

on one aspect of the subject which appeared to have been overlooked by readers-the gratitude of the thousands of British soldiers whose experience did not coincide with the journalist whose nose for news led him to cable his views to his newspaper. That gratitude is no ephemeral gesture; it is real and lasting and sincere. In this connection we should like to pay tribute to at least one civilian community in India which is doing yeoman work in entertaining British soldiers. It comprises every European living in Kalimpong, a hill station a night's journey from Calcutta. That hospitable British colony, remote from the Army (there is not even an S.S.O. in the town) accommodates and entertains soldiers in an atmosphere of complete freedom, far removed from war, and in surroundings and houses which are as near like those at Home as are to be found in India. Those people, many retired from business, do their work out of the limelight; they do it cheerfully, and (as one put it) as a part of their war work; and they have earned the thanks of thousands of our soldiers. Their generosity and warm-hearted friendliness came under our notice recently when passing through Kalimpong, and it is a pleasure to pay this public tribute to them.

Few spheres of an officer's life have such wide scope as welfare, and an illuminating instance of how one officer's

An Officer's Initiative ly in Bareilly. There the Commandant, finding discussions among the staff and patients were so warmly received, decided to instal a hospital broadcasting system. He appealed for help to the Commissioner of the Rohilkhand Division, Mr. M. H. Nethersole, who, with his friends, subscribed the money to purchase the apparatus. As a result, discussions were relayed to the wards by loudspeaker, and patients were then invited to send in questions on the particular subject to a Brains Trust composed of patients

and staff, the meeting of the Brains Trust also being broadcast to the patients. These talks not only helped to relieve the trials of hospital life, but, by the stimulus and distraction they afforded, aided considerably the rehabilitation of the patients. The hospital in question has a tradition going back to Dunkirk, and one of the talks they have heard from their Commandant, Colonel H. F. Humphreys, on "Peace Terms for Germany," is reproduced in this issue.

THE Fighting Services of India are playing an important part in fashioning post-war India. In the engineering field particularly the experience gained by tens of thousands of soldiers and craftsmen will have a profound effect on the

industrial life of the country. From the driv-**Engineers** ing of tanks to the making of intricate and machine parts, Indians in this war have Post-War shown a skill which augurs well for their future after the war. Will they seize this golden opportunity to raise their standard of living? Opportunity there will be, for we are told that in the electrical field alone it is planned to increase generating capacity by 700,000 kilowatts within the next four or five years, which in itself will give openings for practically double the number of electrical engineers; moreover, as new industries are established, each one will require its quota of engineers; roads, bridges, railways, port extensions -all will present employment to ex-soldiers who have had .practical experience of engineering in this war. The subject is too vast to deal with in a brief editorial note. The provision of teachers for young students; financial support of engineering and technical colleges so that teachers may be remunerated on a scale comparable with that offered by industry; an improved system of technical education; closer co-ordination between industry and university for the senior posts; and a longterm policy in engineering education are all important factors It is opportune for an India which will rise industrially. that India has a live Institution of Engineers, whose influence and assistance will help forward the future of those who have chosen this profession. But in the early stages the country can count itself as fortunate in having at hand so many men trained under the best auspices in all Services. Their knowledge and experience will lessen the risks of industrialists, who can embark on new ventures expeditiously and with wellfounded confidence.

HE bestowal of the G.C.B. on H.E. General Sir Claude Auchinleck, Commander-in-Chief in India, has afforded great pleasure to officers and men of all Services in India, and especially to the Indian Army, in which he has served for

The C.-in-C. 42 years, His keen personal interest in the sepoy is no facade, for in his public speeches and on innumerable inspection tours throughout the length and breadth of India he has never failed to pay handsome acknowledgment to the fighting skill and courage of India's soldiers. They, too, have a warm admiration for him, and for his work on their behalf in India and in the Middle East.

### Corrigendum .-

An unfortunate misplacement of lines occurred on page 470 of the October, 1944 issue of the Journal in the article entitled "What's In An Indian Place Name?" In order that readers may correct their copies, the following accurate rendering of the lines is appended:

Pur, puri (pore); Nagar "city" or "town". (nagore)

Kot, Garh "fort".

Ghát "landing or bathing place".

Hát (hati) "market".

Ganj (gunj or gunge) "store", "mart".

The second article of the series appears on page 33.

# "PENNY WISE, POUND FOOLISH".\*

BY COLONEL J. F. R. FORMAN, f.s.

"In the past it has been the policy that the training of the armed forces of the Empire should not be related to any particular type of terrain. Discuss this policy in respect of both land and air forces in the light of experience gained in the present war."

Let IT be said at once—the policy was sound. With a small army and air force and a government with no thought of aggression, what other policy was possible? We could hazard a guess at some potential theatres of war—Western Europe, the Middle East, possibly Malaya—but no more. Where was the prophet in 1939 to say that, within four years, our army or air force, or both, would be fighting in Norway, Russia, Crete, Sicily, Tunisia, China, Burma, the East Indies, New Guinea and the Solomons? The Earth's the limit in this greater World War.

No: where the policy failed—if it did fail—was in the fact that money was not available in sufficient quantity; our forces were too small; they were comparatively ill-equipped—especially the army; and funds for training were meagre. Moreover, in certain respects (in both services), the policy was not fully put into effect: the army failed to train adequately for fighting in at least one type of terrain; and the air force gave too little attention to the principles of mobility and co-operation with the other services.

The corollary of the subject matter is, I presume, that our army and air force were meant to train to fight in any—or in the case of the air force it would be more correct to say from any—type of terrain. For the army, that means "civilized" terrain, i.e., country in which there are good communications, large industrial towns, plentiful supplies and usually a temperate climate—for instance, most parts of Europe; and mountainous country, desert country and jungle—in all three of which the advantages shown against "civilized" terrain are conspicuous by their absence.

For the air force, it means operating from bases in highly-developed countries, with all the attendant advantages normally available in such countries; or from inadequate strips in mountainous and jungle country, or wind-swept, dusty, scorched air-fields in the desert. In addition, there is one other very important form of training that does not conveniently come under any of the above, namely, training in amphibious warfare, which will, however, culminate in operations in or from one or other of the types of country given.

<sup>\*</sup>This is the winning essay in the 1944 Gold Medal Essay Competition of the United Service Institution of India. Details concerning this year's competition can be found elsewhere in this issue.



Now let us consider where, how and why we failed, in so far as actual training was concerned. We will take the army first, and we will, for the time being, not flog too mercilessly the financial horse (or is mule a better description?). At home, considering the restricted areas available, it is fair to say that training for "civilized" warfare was carried out thoroughly.

The Army, such as it was, was well trained—very well trained—in M. T. and all that M. T. implies. Staff training was good on both the operational and administrative sides. The Staff College and sundry large paper exercises for our staffs saw to this; and, on occasions, more frequent as time went on, commanders and staffs were given the opportunity of handling forces more or less commensurate with those they would lead and direct in war. Other officers were trained to a standard favourably comparable with those of foreign armies (pace Auspex).

The men were reasonably, though not sufficiently, tough, and were competent in the handling of their weapons, and in minor tactics and field-craft. Our old, time-honoured military virtue of discipline—and by that I mean the somewhat "stupid" type of discipline that made our troops in 1914-18 (and before) walk straight to their front, or defend a shell-hole in Flanders mud till all had perished—was rather at a discount. This was foolish, since by and large it was this particular virtue—coupled with skill-at-arms—that had always won us that vital "last battle" in the past.

All in all, however, our home army was well trained for war in Western Europe. Other forms of warfare were barely considered. Indeed their practice was, to all intent and purpose, impossible. Mountain, desert and "bush" warfare had small sections allotted to them in our little books, but they were fuzzy-wuzzy types of warfare for consideration by "catch-em-alives" like the Indian Army, the K. A. R. and other "coloured troops."

True, the Staff College went to the Royal St. Davids at Harlech and, for one glorious week, the I. A. instructor puffed out his chest on the slopes of Cader Idris; but—it was summer in North Wales, there was a very nice golf course and excellent Welsh mutton and beer and, anyhow, a chap ought to be thinking of tanks, not mules, with that carpet-chewing mountebank just across the way. So it was all a bit of a joke, though a nice joke withal. Amphibious warfare was studied in great detail in theory by the Trade Union and its apprentices at the three staff colleges, but I can recall few occasions when it was put into practice and then only by small forces.

A great deal of the blame for these shortcomings can be laid at the stable door of our old friend the financial mule, but I have promised not to give him the whacking he deserves—yet. And let me explain here and now that when I say "Finance," I am not referring to the officers of the Treasury and their brothers in India, who, poor chaps, are only doing a distasteful job to the best of their ability; no, I mean the lack of funds for the armed forces generally which was prevalent between 1920 and 1939, for which most of the citizens of the Empire should bear some of the blame, though our leaders must shoulder the main responsibility.

In India, on the other hand, training was more varied. With the modicum of equipment available, we had at least started to train for "modern" war. We had little equipment and not much M. T., and what we had had to be used sparingly, but mechanical warfare was studied by commanders and staffs and, to a lesser extent, by other officers and troops.

In addition, thanks to the Faqir of Ipi and his predecessors in the hierarchy of "senior umpires" for the Indian Army's fun and games on the Frontier, nearly all our troops knew how to fight in the mountains, with one hand tied behind the back as my friend "Auspex" truly says.

Why, we even used tanks: we were sometimes moved and supplied by air; we had evolved a method (and not a bad one either) of direct air support. Our tactics were probably not suitable for a mountain war against the Germans (as we found out in Norway and Greece), but at least our men were tough, good at improvisation, skilled in the use of weapons and the management of animals, and able to appreciate the tactical niceties of mountain country. It was all "fighting," and fighting against a cunning opponent on his own ground. The troops who had done it had a great advantage over those who had never heard a shot fired in anger.

Then, due to the terrain in many of our training areas, we did, though we hardly realized it at the time, know something about desert warfare. Any comparatively unrestricted exercises in the plains of India in good weather, with the consequent ability of being able to move fairly freely away from main roads, bears some resemblance to desert warfare: movements can be big and wide, dust gives away day movement, water is often a problem and cover is scarce. And, as our intelligence all pointed to our fighting in the Middle East, we felt that mountain and desert warfare ("extensive" was the word in vogue then) were just about what the doctor ordered. (Give me that stick and lead on that mule just for a second—our equipment, our training funds—Whew! No, I must restrain myself.)

But our intelligence was incomplete, and Japan, and the likelihood of fighting in jungle country, were ignored (remember I am speaking about before the war). Later, the troops in Malaya trained, though insufficiently, in jungle warfare, and, in India, a brief pamphlet—afterwards proved to be not at all a bad pamphlet—was produced, but unfortunately its contents were hardly practised at all.

As in England, amphibious operations were studied in theory only and, in effect, only by the Staff College. The training was not at all bad so far as it went, and must have stood many officers in good stead in this war. But it is curious and blameworthy, when you look back on our military history and note the positions of Britain and India vis-a-vis what were then considered likely theatres of war, that this form of training was not studied and practised extensively.

Our C.I.D. and its satellite the I.D.C. would appear to be responsible here, and I can again see the wagging ears of our friend the mule calmly chewing his fodder of lost opportunities. But, generally speaking, the Army in India in 1939, always allowing for out-of-date and insufficient equipment and indifferent intelligence, was, largely due to the Frontier problem and fine training areas, pretty well trained. Its exploits in the Middle East bear out this contention.

Other Empire forces will not be considered in detail. Most of the Dominions maintained only cadres of regular troops and the bulk of their forces were akin to our Territorials. The few long service corps, such as the K. A. R., were probably as well trained in their own line of country as the Army in India.

From a study of what has already been written, it is clear that the policy shown in the subject was sound in so far as the army was concerned. It was the lack of numbers, paucity of equipment and the somewhat half-hearted execution of the policy that were at fault.

The Royal Air Force were similarly handicapped by shortage of numbers and equipment. It was not until about 1934 that any expansion worthy of the name was agreed to and, thereafter, it was a long time before modern aircraft became available, and then in insufficient numbers. Besides, they were faced with one over-riding problem—the defence of Great Britain—and, due to the shortage of equipment, etc., the solution of that problem, in default of all others, was vital, in the proper sense of that much misused word. By ceaseless energy on the part of all ranks, the problem was solved—just; and its solution saved the Empire, make no mistake about that. In view of this, it is somewhat ungracious to criticize their lapses: but they were lapses, and at least some of them need not have been so serious.

They, like the army, had the good fortune to have units—woefully few and ill-equipped—stationed in many parts/of the world. They had, therefore, the advantage of possessing pilots and crews trained in operating over all kinds of country, mountainous, desert and jungle. Their ground crews, too, had experience in the maintenance of aircraft under various climatic conditions—heat, cold, wet, sand and dust.

What they lacked was real mobility. Given good communications and plenty of landing grounds—as in Britain and Western Europe—they proved their ability to move reasonably quickly and operate again from new and often indifferent airfields in a comparatively short time, though even then they were usually dependent on the army to help them out with protection, labour, supplies and transport.

In undeveloped or semi-developed countries, however, their mobility was practically nil. They were anchored, with a length-of chain depending on the range of their aircraft, to their slap-up bases. Operating (as opposed to just landing and taking off after, say, refuelling) from anything but well-equipped aerodromes was practically impossible. The rapid moves necessitated by quick-moving, modern operations just could not be undertaken with success.

Digitized by Google

They could neither prepare the equivalent of the modern strip or satellite quickly, nor—even if they had been able to—could they transport all their ground personnel, bombs, ammunition and "nuts and bolts" to them. They had insufficient M. T. and practically no transport aircraft, which, in view of our insignificant and water-bound civil air fleet, was a serious deficiency. They were barely conscious of the potentialities of air supply at all. They were, to all intent and purpose, immobile.

Their second big failing (and I know many airmen who agree with this) was not so much their lack of suitable aircraft for cooperation with the other services and, consequently, lack of training with them, but their disinterest in the subject. Reconnaissance for the Navy or Army was dull work compared with fighting or bombing. And, in any case, there was a feeling that the other services were a bit "bow and arrow" and that it was bombing particularly and fighting that would win the war; so why worry?

No one blames the actual pilots. Those who worked with the Navy (even after the Fleet Air Arm changed hands) and the Army put their backs into it; and, when war came, those doughty but pathetic aircraft, and their gallant crews—the Ansons and "Lizzies"—did noble work.

No: it was those at the top who must take the blame. How many of them really took any interest in this "side line?" Who, among them, had given any real thought to close support of the Army, or the Navy for that matter? Precious few. And yet the German methods were known and, in spite of the Battle of Britain, came perilously near winning the war. Co-operation with the other services was, in the view of some at the top, a poor relation and was treated in the way that those faded spinsters and drunken ne'er-do-wells are normally treated—pretty shabbily.

It was a grave error, but things have improved, and the army has nothing but praise for the airmen on the Western Front, in North Africa, and Italy, and the Navy is presumably satisfied now that it has a big say in the operational control of Coastal Command as well as a hand in the strategical selection of Bomber Command's targets.

And so, by and large, one can say that the Air Force was, before the war, superbly trained for its most vital task, that it had a fair knowledge of operating under differing and difficult conditions from many types of terrain and in all sorts of flying conditions, but that it had tended to ignore two very important aspects of training, mobility and inter-service co-operation.

But, in case I be accused of carping criticism, let me say again that a late start and inexcusable parsimony made it very difficult for them; though the late start unexpectedly and indirectly helped to win the Battle of Britain in that we fought it with aircraft designed and tested between 1934 and 1939, whereas the Hun, who had gone into mass production earlier, was equipped with aircraft that were slightly out-of-date, if not obsolescent. But don't chalk that one up to the high-ups; enter it on the credit side of the designers, test-pilots and "the few" to whom the many owe so much.

Now before I get down to the job—the much harder job—of planning for the future, let us shoot down in flames the training policy opposite to that which was decreed for pre-war preparation. By that I mean that we should have trained and equipped parts of our army and air force to fight in and from particular types of terrain. For instance, our home forces might have been trained for war in Western Europe; our Middle East and Indian forces for war in desert country; our Far Eastern forces (such as they were, even including Australians and New Zealanders) in jungle war; and so on.

Is this sound with limited forces? What would have happened if the war had been confined to one type of country only (and who was to say it would not)? The training problem would not have been insoluble; the troops of a long service army and air force could have picked up another form of training reasonably quickly; but the equipment and transport would have been wrong. We should have been forced to re-train and re-equip all those who had been trained in, say, three types of warfare to reinforce the inadequate quarter trained in the fourth type. Huge continental armies can do this, and, in fact, do it satisfactorily, but with small forces it is obviously dangerous.

As a small example, the maintenance of a special force for defence of the Indian Western Frontier was a failure. Not only did reinforcements, called up for large-scale operations on the Frontier, know little about the job, but, when the 1914 war started, the special force itself was needed for bigger game—and was incidentally not well suited for it—and troops ill-trained in mountain-tribal war had to take their place.

It is clear, therefore, that a long-service, small force (army or air) should be trained for all types of warfare. The fact that it can do so is one of the main advantages it has over large, short-service, continental armies. But the equipment and transport required for war in *every* kind of country must be available. For instance, with the policy laid down, we were surely very short-sighted and foolish to muster out nearly all our animals when we did. Such action was, in fact, contrary to the policy.

And now, plans for the future, which is, I presume, what the Council of the U. S. I. want from those who attempt to write papers on this subject.

First, some assumptions. There is, I fear, little hope of our Empire armies remaining large for very long after the war. The calls of the Navy and the Royal Air Force, of industry and land—let alone the natural disinclination of our peoples as a whole to serve in the army in peace-time—will forbid it. Some form of "national service" may be imposed, but the professional element will remain the backbone of the army in future as it has been in the past. The Air Force, on the other hand, is likely to be better off, and, for a time at any rate, is certain to be powerful in strength.

Next: I assume that—again for a time—parsimony will be held in check, and that any reasonable demands to ensure high

efficiency will be met (I assume this with a prayer in my heart; actually I view with some alarm the longevity and tough hide of that wicked mule). Then I take it that there will be a mass of shipping and aircraft in the world that our wise rulers will wish to keep in fighting trim, but which will be surplus to, or unsuitable for, ordinary civilian needs.

Next. I assume that our national policy will still be non-aggressive (how much easier and what fun it would be to be blatantly aggressive for a time!). Finally, I assume, with bated breath, that our leaders, political and military, will be as long-sighted and co-operative then as they appear to be now.

The policy—rather an anti-climax this!—must remain the same. Navy, army and air force will not restrict their training to any particular line of country or, to be more explicit, they will train to light anywhere. Our intelligence must be accurate, so that we can, at times, concentrate more on one potential theatre of operations than on the others—not, however, to the exclusion of the others.

The next point—and I look upon this as truly vital—is that there must be one service and not three. At the top there must be a Commander-in-Chief and, to settle that thorny problem straight away. I nominate the one obviously suitable candidate—H. M. The King. We must have a Ministry of War (not Defence) and its minister must again be the head man, namely, the Prime Minister: and this must be his most important duty, as it is now. Under him, there will be three deputy ministers—naval, military and air—and three chiefs of staff.

All the way down, there will be mixed staffs, the senior members of which will be trained at a super war college. Commanders—where forces are naval and military or military and air, etc.,—will be chosen from the force that is predominant in the area. The staff college, too, will be a joint affair, with three wings working in closest touch.

The name of our armed forces is immaterial: let us call it The Service. We will have one uniform. Terrible! Why? All the three services are continually changing their uniforms now, so why not a change to a common uniform?

I would like common titles, too, and, in order to cut the cackle, let our first Chief and our first Minister choose them. I can't resist giving my advice: so, cutting out certain superfluous ranks, how about: —sub-lieutenant, lieutenant, major, captain, commodore, general, admiral and marshal? Or, if that is too much of a hotch-potch, what about something strictly practical and dull—on the Russian model—just plain 1st officer down to 8th officer?

I have not included some quite nice and suitable titles like commander and leader, though the latter may be thought to smack too much of Fascism and kindred cults. The point is to have them all the same and to eradicate some of the more far-fetched, cumbersome titles and annoying half-ranks that have crept in comparatively recently. It is surely a confession of weakness to

have to publish tables of comparative ranks, not only for our allies and our own civilian public, but even for men actually in the fighting forces. Non-commissioned titles should also be common throughout The Service.

Now for the training of the army. There are two prerequisites of success. First, all troops must be stationed in places in or very close to good and freely usable training country. Apart from certain naval bases abroad (in which the troops gain other training advantages), this should not be impossible.

In the future, the movement of troops by air and/or road or rail to "strategic" points, where, as in India, it has been thought necessary to station them up till now, should present no difficulties: in fact, there are definite training advantages in doing so. Money will be required to bring this about. Old barracks, cantonments and water-supply systems will have to be scrapped and new ones built. But it must be done. In India, it will mean a definite trend to the centre and south of the country where, not only is the ground better, but the climate allows of all-year training too, even for British troops.

Secondly, units must be collected into formations of at least brigade group size, including all supporting arms and administrative units, and the air force must be adjacent and available for collective training. Nothing is more detrimental to efficiency than the habit of placing units in one-unit stations. There is no competition—the best spur of all to efficiency. Brigades must be formed, if possible divisions too, and the units in them must be kept together. On relief, the whole formation—infantry, artillery, engineers and administrative tail—moves together.

No one training area will, however, provide facilities for all kinds of training. In one area (even in one country) the ground and general conditions will be suitable for training in one or, at most, two forms of warfare. Other training will of necessity be theoretical, which is not sufficient. We must, therefore, keep our formations moving, not only within any one particular country, but between them too.

Thus, in Britain, a division will train for, say, a year in the South in Western European warfare. It will then move to mountain country in Scotland or Wales, where it will train in mountain warfare. It may then have a spell near some naval base, where it will train, primarily, in amphibious operations, and so on. Finally, it will be moved lock, stock and barrel to, say, India, where it will spend a spell on the Frontier (active service conditions guaranteed throughout the ages!), a period in Assam for jungle warfare, a tour in the Deccan for open warfare under Eastern conditions and, perhaps, a tour with the Navy again in Ceylon, learning the particular problems of the East so far as amphibious operations are concerned.

Frequent moves—always as a formation and wide experience. Money again, but money well spent. As the political situation varies, so will we attempt to keep pace with it by training our formations primarily—not wholly, since our political intelligence is not infallible—for war in the area of the potential threat.

All the Empire countries must come in on this scheme. I am assuming that the Dominions will, after this war, keep in being at least small standing armies. And so, we shall find formations of Canadians in Britain, British troops in Australia, New Zealanders in India, Indians in the Middle East and so on. We shall, thereby, ensure that our common doctrine of training is carried out, speed up valuable interchange of ideas, encourage healthy rivalry, appreciate the worth of those who dwell in distant parts of the Empire, simplify exchanges of officers and, finally, and this is most important, strengthen the existing bonds and, indeed, forge new links in the chain of Empire unity, on which the peace of the world will largely depend.

The ships and aircraft that I have assumed will be available will be almost continuously used on these interchange trips. There may be ships for two divisions and aircraft for two brigades in use all the time. Apart from the immediate advantages, consider the value to the Empire as a whole of these fleets and their trained crews and connected shore and ground personnel in time of war. Not only will they be available to rush reinforcements to threatened areas, but they will be fitted for such tasks and trained in the handling of service cargoes.

Such moves will always be carried out under war conditions. Ships will sail in convoy; aircraft will fly in formation; escorts, naval and air, will be provided; attacks will be made en route. When passing British territory, amphibious operations can be carried out, giving training to those in the convoy, as well as the defending forces on and operating from the shore. Thus voyages will not only result in the essential carriage of troops from A to B, but will also provide a period of most valuable training.

Some troops will inevitably be locked up in the defence of important naval bases (not air bases, as it is assumed that the R.A.F. Regiment—or its successor—will remain in existence), but these must be reduced to a minimum. Possibly the Navy will consider the increase of Marines for this task and, of course, full use must be made of local volunteer forces, the ranks of which, it is hoped, will be well filled after the war. Such regular army troops as are needed must be changed as often as possible and, during their tour of duty, must take full advantage of the opportunities available at such places for training in amphibious warfare. It is incredible that all three branches of The Service will not leap at the chance to practice such training after the experiences of this war.

Journeys from one type of training area to another within any particular country can also be made valuable. Formations will move complete and worth-while exercises in rail, road and air moves can be devised. Exercises with other formations en route, including such little practised operations as river crossings, can be arranged and, generally, the move can be made as useful a training period as any.

Certain items of equipment and transport, e.g. landing craft, mules and other jangli forms of transport suitable for specific

types of operations only, and even certain weapons such as mountain artillery, must "stay put" in the areas where they belong; but the great bulk of our equipment and transport is nowadays common to all types of warfare and will go along with its formation. This, of course, will not apply to heavy equipment such as artillery and lorries in an inter-country relief, when such equipment can be taken over on arrival from the relieved formation.

By these methods, all officers and many of the troops (probably the majority of the N.C.O's) will, in a fairly short time, be welded into fixed formations, which are accustomed to operating as formations, and will be trained for warfare in any part of the world—or at least in two or three of the types that I have specified. Tours outside the home country should be limited to—say—six years. Thus an Australian division, having been stationed near Sydney for two years, training in "civilized" and amphibious warfare, might then move to South India for two years, followed by two in Assam and two in the Middle East, thereafter returning once again for a reasonable spell in the homeland. At the end of its foreign tour, it would undoubtedly be a far better formation than if it had stayed at home all the time.

If a proportion of the men who finish their colour service during their foreign tour, wish to settle in their temporary home, so much the better. Migration between the various parts of the Empire of fit, disciplined men, such as our Service men will be, is surely one of the best methods of holding our Empire together. The very valuable but pathetically infrequent exchange of officers between various armies would be made simple and should be used to the full, and spells of duty with the other branches of The Service, i.e. naval and air, must also be arranged as a regular feature of service.

It should, in fact, be the rule that every officer with between fifteen and twenty years' service (at which age he should be getting command of his unit) has done at least six months with the naval and 'air branches and with two "foreign" armies. If he only succeeds in picking up the jargon and making some friends, his time will not have been wholly wasted. If, on the other hand, he learns to fly or navigate an aircraft, to handle a L.C.A., to drink beer like an Australian, to talk a little Urdu or Swahili and, perhaps, he marries a Canadian girl into the bargain, the sun certainly will never set on this Empire of ours: and was not our Prime Minister expressing the views of all right-minded Britons when he said that he, at least, had no intention of speeding the advent of that twilight hour?

Much of what I have said applies to the Air Force just as much as it does to the Army. Dressed in the uniform (it's all right, they shall keep their wings!), with the same titles of rank—instead of the somewhat grotesque ones invented some twenty-five years ago—serving under one C.-in-C., one minister and mixed staffs, and with frequent attachments to other branches, they will continue the magnificent co-operation which this war has taught us all is a prime essential to victory.

No longer will there be somewhat degrading squabbles over Fleet Air Arm and "Air Control." We shall, in truth, "be all of one companie." Not that the squabbles were the fault of the Air Force only: far from it. It takes two to make a quarrel and, in both the cases cited above, there was great force in many of the Air Force arguments.

What the Air Force must insist on, however, is the widest possible exchange of squadrons between countries in which flying and ground conditions vary. The pre-war, feeble trickle of personnel is not enough. Subject to technical difficulties—of which I have little knowledge—whole squadrons or, better, whole air formations, must move round from country to country in exactly the same way as I have described for the army, so that, when war comes again, as it most certainly will, the Air Force will have men—crews and ground staff—used to operating in all conditions.

There is this difference however; the air formations will fly from country to country carrying their men and equipment along with them in their attached air transports, thus ensuring the keeping open of communications which will be vital in war. The means to do this are now being fast developed and must not be allowed to fall into disrepair.

In addition, frequent exercises with the army branch in advance and withdrawal exercises, including the preparation and destruction of strips and other temporary landing grounds, must be carried out: and, with the naval branch, exercises including the carriage and operation of non-F.A.A. aircraft in and from carriers, an operation still sometimes necessary for short range aircraft in certain theatres of war. In this way, the hard-learnt lesson of mobility of air forces, first solved by the Germans, will not be forgotten.

Truly mobile air forces can afford to group themselves in large numbers in strategically sited areas, thus simplifying administration of all kinds, but the demands for training of the naval and army branches must be met. All squadrons of suitable type must be practised in this inter-branch co-operation in turn, even though, as seems probable, the naval branch has its own aircraft and the army, perhaps, its own irreducible minimum for purely army reconnaissance and transport purposes.

All my schemes depend, of course, on our Service having the very best equipment, in the largest sense of the word. This, and the cost of the schemes themselves, spell f s. f. But does not modern war spell the same, and in astronomical figures too? Moreover, unlike peace-time expenditure, it entails unpriceable horrors of misery and devastation. I have no idea what forces we—and the Americans too—would have had to keep up to prevent this war ever starting. Perhaps armies and air forces of twice the size that we had, perhaps three times. Would that have cost us in treasure, "blood, tears and sweat" more than the war has cost us up till now and will cost us in future? Of course not.

And even if it had, would it not have been worth it? Think of the misery, squalor and hate that would have been prevented, and think of the demoralization from unemployment that would have been avoided. Somehow or other parsimony in matters vital to the peace of the world must be rooted out in future.

We can play our part. Let us not insist on a very large Service. Let us rather pitch our demands moderately, but fight tooth and nail for one hundred per cent., hard-hitting efficiency. With the King as our C. in C., and the Premier as our Minister, we have a good start, but more may be needed. Pressure must, if necessary, be exerted by The Service chiefs themselves. If necessary, agreement must be forced by resignation or its threat. Robertson and Haig did it, but how often has it been done since?

There will be no room for time servers. It may seem terrible for our marshals to exert political pressure, but what of it, when our existence is at stake? What is the good of saying later, "We did our best, but we were overruled?" It's the answer of a weakling and The Service will have no room for such. The Beveridge Plan, or its successor, will cost hundreds of millions a year, but what good will it be if, in 1960 or 70 or 80, our children are wiped off the face of the earth or ground down in slavery by the new Feuhrer and his jackals, the new Duce and the new All-highest of Nippon? The answer is clear.

Let us then spend a few hundred millions of the Empire's great wealth on The Service too, even if the income tax does stay at seven or eight shillings in the pound. Let us realize at last what our great leader and many thoughtful foreigners know now, but which is still hidden from most Britons, namely, that we are members of the most successful experiment of all time—the British Empire or Commonwealth or what you will—in which true democracy and, generally speaking, unselfish tutelage of backward peoples are the paramount principles; and let us get into our heads the fact that membership carries full responsibility. It saved the world in 1940; it is still playing a leading—if not the leading—part in that salvation. We are all fighting for it now; let us continue to do so when peace comes.

# The Raj Rifs of the control of the c

Reviewing "The Tiger Kills," The Times Literary Supplement says:

"Many units of the 4th Division are often singled out for appreciation, and some readers may think that too much of the narrative is devoted to the exploits of the 1st Battalion oth Rajputana Rifles, otherwise known as Wellesley's Rifles, or more profamely as the Raj Rif.

"There was good reason for that. The authors do not often turn back the pages of history; had they done so in this case they could have pointed out that this is the oldest rifle unit in the Indian Army.

"In North Africa it was really celebrating its centenary as a rifle regiment, for it had been converted to that form in 1841, and a few years after that showed its mettle in a memorable forced march and assault on Multau."

#### **GONGS AND THINGS**

# By "Mouse"

AS DISTINGT from the domestic problems of beer, work, and women, what matters exercise an average officer's mind most? I would be inclined to say campaigns, promotion, pay, and, if p.s.c., jobs. These thoughts, overshadowed occasionally by controversies of military procedure regarding the correct method of Easing the Mark 4 Spring, or of wearing the Mention Emblem, are always with us.

This opinion does not necessarily imply that many others are not far more interested in higher European strategy, Lower Burma tactics, problems of post-war reconstruction and the future of the Indian Army; these weighty affairs have their students to whom medals, promotion and pay are so much dross, trivial concomitants of their profession, hardly worth the paper and forms used in their creation and promulgation. These students are, however, more rare.

The history of medals, promotion and pay in the British and Indian Armies would fill several volumes without being exhaustive. It would possibly be exhausting and tedious, so I will confine myself to some observations on these matters as the existed in England and India before the Mutiny, 1857. The information is taken from "Hart's Army List, 1850" "The Bengal Army List, 1857" "Ribbons and Medals" by Dorling and, of course, Fortescue.

The impetus given to medals and decorations of all kinds dates from 1847, when a Naval and Military General Service Medal, 1793—1840, was granted after considerable agitation in Parliament. Heretofore, exclusive of Waterloo, only Senior Officers were granted a gold medal with a gold clasp for their part in campaigns and actions; junior officers and the rank and file got nothing.

The Naval medal had 230 bars, which may be one of the reasons why sailors commence their medal-ribbons on their collar-bones. One of the recipients of the first Bar "1st June, 1794." was Daniel Tremendous McKenzie, who was born on board H.M.S. TREMENDOUS a few hours before the action began. The Military G. S. Medal was less lavish and had only 29 Bars, which excluded the campaign in Egypt of 1801.

For those who feel aggrieved at missing the 1939—43 Star when so many less meritorious people wear it, it may be of comfort to know that permission to wear the medal for Egypt, 1801, was granted in 1850 for those officers and men "who are still alive." This G. S. Medal covered all the famous engagements of the Peninsula War, but also had bars for "Java, 1811," and for "Fort Detroit" and "Chrystler's Farm," North America. The ribbon was the same colour as the present D.S.O.

Digitized by Google

The award of the Waterloo Medal was not open to any criticism. It was awarded only to those officers and men who had been at Ligny, Quatre Bras or Waterloo on the 16th, 17th and 18th June, 1815. (Such officers were also granted two years' additional service.)

The first India Medal was awarded for various campaigns fought between 1799 and 1826, and has a glamorous Bar inscribed "Poona." Between 1826 and 1854 the issue of individual medals for battles in Afghanistan, Sinde, Gwalior, the Sutlej and the Punjab became uneconomical and a burden on the Finance Department so, on the suggestion of Lord Dalhousie, an Indian General Service Medal was instituted in 1854 which lasted until 1895 (23 Bars). It dovered the local war fronts from Persia to Perak.

During the period under review, i.e. until 1856, when the Victoria Cross was instituted, honours and decorations according to modern standards were meagre. The Army Lists show only thirteen decorations, all outside the range of ordinary mortals. The Orders of the Garter, the Thistle and St. Patrick, three ranks each in the Orders of the Bath and St. Michael and St. George, and three ranks in the Order of the Royal Hanoverian Guelphic Order, designated G.C.H., K.C.H., and K.H. The thirteenth Order was K.C., Knight of the Crescent.

In our present Army Lists recipients of the Victoria and George Crosses are properly distinguished by the prefix U.C. or G. C. in Gothic capitals before their names. A similiar device was used in Hart's Army List, which prefixed entitled officers names with the Gothic capitals T.D. and of to denote their participation in the actions of Trafalgar, the Peninsula War and Waterloo. Thus: "P. C. B. Field-Marshal His Grace Arthur, Duke of Wellington, K.G., G.C.B. & G.C.H." "D. Lieut.-General Sir Charles J. Napier, G.C.B., 22 Foot, General and Commander-in-Chief in the East Indies."

(This is a pretty practice which might or might not find favour when this war is over. It would certainly lead to contentious arguments, which are always enjoyable; as to which actions deserve a Gothic initial. Tobruk and Arnheim suggest themselves.)

The Colonel of the 11th (or Prince Albert's Own) Regiment of Hussars is designated thus: "B.M. Henry Wyndham. Ensign March of. Lieut. Col. Jan. 14. Lieut. Gen. 46." It will be noticed that he has no decorations, although his war record is as follows: "Served the Peninsular campaigns of 1808, 9, 11, and 13, including the actions of Roleia, Vimiera, Benevente, Albuhera, Usagre, Morales de Toro, Vittoria and the Pyrenees. Served also the campaign of 1815, and was severely wounded at Waterloo, He has received the War Medal with five clasps," This distinguished officer presumably wore only two medals.

A Captain John Kincaid, with the prefixes \$\mathbb{B}\$ and \$\mathbb{B}\mathbb{C}\$, joined the Rifle Brigade in 1809 and retired as a Captain after 22

years' service. He served on the Wakheren expedition of 1808, and subsequently in the Peninsula War for three years without repatriation. He led the storming party of the Light Division at Ciudad Rodrigo and fought in every major engagement. He also served in the 1815 campaign and was present at Quatre Bras, Waterloo and the capture of that battle-scarred city. Paris. At Waterloo his horse was wounded in five places and killed under him. "He has received the Silver War Medal with nine clasps" is his citation. One wonders what such an officer would have collected in 1950—45.

Promotion and Pav are always interesting. In the present war when one can go to bed as a subaltern and wake as a Temp./ Major, or sleep as a Brigadier and be aroused by a bowler hat, the subject has its excitements and pleasures shared by everybody in India except the F.C.M.A. These wartime appointments are often transitory, and may give a false impression of what may happen when Japan is destroyed. A short examination of the slump which occurred in promotion after the Napoleonic wars may be of interest. It had its parallel in the British Army after the last war.

The regimental list of the 1st European Bengal Fusiliers, 1857, shows the C.O. to have 37 years' service, the 2nd-in-Command. Major J. R. Poud, had 30 years, the senior captain 20 years, and the 1st Lieutenant 12 years. The 7th Regiment of Native Infantry (Burra Crawford ka paltan) had a similar lot of elderly gentlemen in command. The C. O. 44 years' service, the senior captain 22 years, and the subaltern adjutant 10 years. No wonder that the more adventurous-minded of these officers fled to the many Irregular Corps and Contingents which were spreading throughout the half-conquered peninsula.

The Queen's regiments in Figland were not quite so senile. For instance, the Commanding Officers of the Coldstream Guards 40 years (exception) the Cheshire Regiment 27 years, the Cameronians 26 years, were youngsters, although their Majors and Captains ranged between 30 and 20 years. The historian. Fortescue, appears to accept these aged warriors during this period as commonplace, and reserves his wrath for the scandalous rates of promotion in the Royal Regiment. He says: "In 1836 a Captain of Artillery who had served in that rank in every battle of the Peninsula War was still a Captain; and Sir George Wood, who had been in supreme command of the Artillery at Waterloo, was twenty-one years after the battle only a Major in the Royal Regiment."

Things appear to have been as bad and as slow in the Navv. where there was a midshipman of twenty five years' meritorious service who was married and a grandfather. If there had been a R. A. F. in those days the pilot's hoary whiskers would probably have jammed the controls.

The reason for this slow promotion was, of course, the system of purchase of commissions, which Hart's Army List publishes

Digitized by Google

without shame as a Pfice Control Schedule!

thout

on at

also Bras, At nder

col-

war

the y in ften may

vars

rs,

Oľ

#### dingle) with part to december 2002, in case of a part 2 2014 **PRICES OF COMMISSIONS** (Laborated Case)

RANK	Full Price of Commission	Difference in value between the several commissions
Lieut-Colonel  Major  Captain  Lieutenant  Cornet	£5,850 £3,500 £1,785	£1,900.
Foot Guards, Colonel LieutColonel Major, with rank of Colonel Captain with rank of	£9,000	£ 700
LieutColonel Lieutenant, with rank of Captain Ensign, with rank of Lieutenant	£4,800 £2,050 (); £1,200	£ 850
Regiments of the Line.— LieutColonel Major Captain Lieutenant Ensign	£4,500 £3,200 £1,800 £ 700 £ 450	£1,300 £1,400 £1,400

To us such a system appears laughable or revolting, but as Fortescue points out "the system being utterly illogical, iniquitous and indefensible, commended itself heartily to the British public." It saved the tax-payer the cost of providing pensions and it appealed, so they say, to the gambling instructs of every well-bred officer. The gamble was that one could not sell one's commission if one were dead, and the next on the list stepped into the warancy without having to pay the transfer fee.

The rates of pay differed for officers in the Life Guards, Foot Guards, Dragoon Guards and Foot, but owing to the high cost of living in London officers of Line regiments were incomparably better off than Guardsmen. In 1850 a Lieutenant Colonel drew 17 shillings a day, a Major 16 shillings, a Captain eleven shillings and sixpence, a subaltern six and sixpence, and an Ensign five and threepence. In 1914, so far as I remember, these rates showed only a trivial increase although they continued to include the Prince Regent's (God bless him!) bounty.

This allowance provides for two or three glasses of wine per day per officer who could afford to drink only water in Mess, a

growing custom which grieved this generous-minded Prince. At about this time it may be noticed that the Guards opened their Club—followed by the United Service Club—so that young officers could feed cheaply in London. (Lunch, consisting of as much bread, beef and beer as the officer could swallow, cost sixpence.)

Despite the low cost of living officers were shockingly paid. I am often driven to believe that both the Treasury in England and the Finance Department of the Government of India still hug to their acrid bosoms the illusion that nobody, except the attractive fools of moneyed families, would ever join the army except for fun. In 1846 General Sir de Lacy Evans denounced the purchase system in the House of Commons without eliciting any sympathy from the members. He reckoned that the annual net emoluments of a Line officer were: Lieut-Colonel £314; a Major £93-15; A Captain £108; and a subaltern £73-5-10.

Parliament moved quickly. Three years later these figures were challenged, and in 1849 this sum was produced in the House:

Pay of a Lieutenant-Colonel:	£365
Cost of his Commission:	£4.540
Interest on above, 5%	£220
Regimental expenses	£20
Income-tax	£11
Total	£251
NET PAY	£114

These calculations can be of only academic interest: a licut-Colonel's pay has always been increased to pay his incometax. During these pre-Mutiny days it is hardly surprising to learn that almost every God-fearing senior Major in the Empire knelt at his pallet each night and prayed for the early demise, by bullet, brandy, or bubonic plague, of his dearly respected Commanding Officer; £1,300 at the one fell swoop or sweep.

Medals, Promotion and Pay remain the most cherished grouses of the Army. I have tried to show that they are as old as the hills around Simla, as dusty as the plains around Meerut, and as active as the leaches in Burma. We can belly ache about them to our hearts' content, but—speaking cautiously—when we survey our own history and all the signs of the times about these momentous affairs, it should not be impossible to venture to say that in the not-too-distant future neither stones will be left unturned nor avenues unexplored—nor history forgotten—when, if ever, the right time comes to do something about it all.

Some, indeed, think that far too much has already been done.

their

officers

much nce.)

paid.

gland

l hue

ttrac-

cept

pur-

anv

net ajor

ures

the

condit add notes of the state of the specific of the specific

I ORD TRENCHARD, who asked whether the Government could indicate in broad outline the organisation of the three Fighting Services to be adopted after the war, said, inter alia:

The post-war organisation of the Forces cannot be settled until the size of the Forces necessary to ensure peace is laid down by the Allies. The Government, before they can determine the size of the Forces, will also have to decide how large will be the Armies maintained in the Colonies, for this war has shown what Colonial troops can do; it may be that Colonial armies could be increased substantially.

"It has been suggested that the three existing Services should be amalgamated into one Defence Service. I think it would be a great mistake. It is the fashion nowadays to want to do away with individualism, but the British Empire was built on individualism, and led the world on it.

"Then there is the question of Colleges, of which there are three kinds: Cadet Colleges, Staff Colleges and the Imperial Service Defence College. Those who advocate amalgamation of the three Services suggest that if that is not done, it would be a good thing to amalgamate the cadet colleges, of which there are four: Sandhurst and Woolwich for the Army, Dartmouth for the Navy and Cranwell for the Air Force. That, too, would be a great mistake. Cadets have knowledge to acquire in their own special Service, and if you overload the curriculum by teaching your young Naval, Army or Air Force officers about the work of the other two Services, you only produce amateurs who know a little of everything and not enough of anything.

"What of the Staff Colleges? There are three: Camberley for the Army, Greenwich for the Navy, and Andover for the Air Force. To those who advocate their amalgamation, I, say, 'No,' Every subject has to be learnt thoroughly, and you want to keep those colleges separate so that the officers learn the Staff problems peculiar to each Service. These colleges could and should be adjacent to each other, so that each could see much of the other's work.

Digitized by Google

"The Imperial Defence College wants drastic improvement and enlargement. That is where, when the three Services know their own subjects thoroughly, they should join together. It should not be a college where officers only go to lectures, but one where they live together and absorbother's ideas. The best of the officers in their own colleges should be chosen to go to this Imperial Defence College, from which must be chosen those who one day will join the Combined General Staff.

"We now come to the technical training of the rank and file, which has a bearing on the internal efficiency of each of the Services, and also in its relation to the problem of recruisment. After the last war we set up at Halton a large training school for the R.A.F. It was an experiment, but it has richly justified itself. Halton and the Halton spirit have been a pillar of strength to the R.A.F. all over the world. Halton-trained men provided the nucleus on which the great expansion of the Air Force was centred. Look at the promotions and honours they gained! Over 1,000 high honours have been won, and a large number of these men are very senior Air Vice Marshals and Air Commodores.

"When we originally formed the Air Force we were told that we were spending all our money on bricks and mortar, on ground staff and ground personnel. It was called 'The Ground Force' and I was once described as 'G.O.C. Ground Force.' That was because we put all the pressure we could on getting a sound foundation for training, in spite of the expense. Has not that policy justified itself? Is it not one of the main reasons why the Luftwaffe has been defeated. The whole work of the Air Force has shown what training is doing, but—it is expensive. There is nothing to show for it in peacetime, but in wartime there is just this difference—the difference between defeat and victory. I hope, therefore, that Halton will be enlarged to take at least 4,000, and at least one other Halton built.

"The training of the modern Army is just as complicated as that of the R.A.F. It is not realised what a great need there is for fully equipped training establishments, like Halton and Abborfield. They would have come before the last war if the Army had been allowed to spend as much money on training in proportion to their size as we spent on our Air Force. The same thing applies to the Navy. Therefore I hope we shall enlarge and extend the training colleges of each Service. The nation must not expect to see much without spending a lot of money.

"Selection of the right type of boy for these schools of technical training is important. There is no danger of not getting a sufficient number of the right type to fill the schools, if we can keep up the scale of education we gave at Halton. By those means we shall get our long-service men by volunteering.

"Is the question of compulsory service under consideration for after the war? I assume that some form of compulsory or national service will be necessary, and if that is so, it is essential that it should be such as will get the best out of everybody. To do that we must ensure that the training gives full play to everybody's individuality and character.

"We must not try to work out an organisation that looks easy and perfect on paper." We must have an organisation that will not ignore the human element, that will encourage the greatest number of boys to join the Service they want to serve in on a voluntary basis. We must have an organisation that will make the men feel that the time they spend in one of the Services is going to be a help to them in their future careers.

"We must examine carefully how service with the Armed Forces can be linked up with the activities of other professions, and see how the Service can best be dovetailed into the educational curriculum. For instance, we are told that a much larger intake will be needed for the teaching profession. We are also told that a defect of that profession in the past has been a lack of contact with the outside world and with men of other callings. I should like to see matters so arranged that a man whose main business is that of a teacher should serve for a period in one of the Defence Services for two or three years before getting a permanent position in the teaching profession. We want it recognised that a man who has served in the Army, Navy or Air Force will not be a worse, but a better Government servant or teacher.

There will be strong public feeling to make conscription as short as possible—say, for 12 months. This would be of value to character and physique only, and the three Services would largely consist of training establishments. The Services would lose too many of their personnel long before they were trained, for during this war we have seen how long it takes to train for the Services. It has been shown to be the case all over the world, and means that a medium-length service of from two to five years would be of use to fill the gap between the permanent service and the irreducible minimum of compulsory service.

"How shall we get sufficient officers in the future for all Services? Just after the last war we instituted a short-service system for the R.A.F. We saw that the Services needed many more junior officers than they could provide a

whole-life career for. We also knew that in the first year of war we should want a very large reserve of young officers. How did we meet this need? We worked out a plan for a force that would require 3,000 officers, a very large number junior. We could only provide a good curve for promotion—in other words, a career, for between 1,500 and 1,800. The remaining 1,200 to 1,500 were the problem.

We took them on for four years, after which they were to do four years in the Reserve. When they joined they were asked and persuaded to make up their minds what they were going to do when they left the Service. During their four years' training they were educated in whatever walk of life they intended to pursue. We also approached industrial firms, suggested that they should go to the Appointment Boards at universities, select two or three likely candidates for their business, and then say to them that, provided they passed their examination and did four years' service in the Air Force, at the end of that time they would be taken into the firm. A good many men went to these firms and, I believe that, up to the beginning of this war, of the young men who were on the short-service system only one was unemployed.

"We hoped that the Army and the Navy would adopt the same sort of system, and that it might be applied in the Higher Division of the Civil Service to those who joined between 20 and 23. We did not want to interrupt their education, but we hoped that when they had passed their final examination they might be asked to do two or three or four years in the Fighting Services before they took up their administrative appointments.

"Both they and the Services would have gained. The same would apply to other professions, architecture, the law and medicine, and even to the spiritual profession. Would it not be a good thing for a curate, when he has passed his examinations, to do two or three or four years in one of the Services, so as to rub shoulders with his fellow men before setting down to his curacy?

"You can apply this scheme in some measure to other ranks. Take the lower division of the Civil Service and many municipal services. Normally these services are mainly recruited from youths who enter at 16, and of others with higher qualifications who enter at 18. The scheme I envisage would take them at these ages on condition that at the age of 19 or 20 they would give at least two or three years service to one of the Fighting Services. Then if they did not disgrace themselves they would be given permanent positions in the Municipal or Government service.

Digitized by Google

"What of the selection of officers? Quite frankly, I am not in favour of everyone, or even of the majority, coming from the ranks. It does some good, but it does some harm. We should take some from the ranks, and many more from colleges such as Cranwell and Sandhurst, and others from technical colleges like Halton. In that way you get the broadest possible basis... We want every type of person, the clever, the less clever, the practical, the crank, the poet and the musician.

"I hope that each of these points will be really considered by the Government, by the officers concerned, and by those whose task it is to draw up the future organisations of our three Defence Services."

Brief extracts from other speeches in the debate are given hereunder:

LORD MOTTISTONE: "Are we in the future going to continue some form of universal service? If we are, what form should the training take in the entirely new circumstances of attack? This method makes everything new strategy, tactics, everything. I suggest that the answer to the first question must be 'Yes.' It surely would be wise. We have escaped devastation on a scale undreamed of simply because our soldiers, sailors and airmen have overtun the launching sites.

"We are the outposts of liberty, and in this new world it will be a good thing if we act with the other champions of liberty, the United States. There the President was recently asked whether he expected universal training legislation to be introduced soon. He answered that he hoped so. He indicated that he favoured in broad lines the Wadsworth Bill, stressing that the idea was for each boy to give one year of his life between the ages of 18 and 23 to his Government.

"Before the last war I championed voluntary enlistment, and I still believe that is the best way to get the best men for each particular Service. But in spite of that, I am now definitely of opinion that it is vital for the well-being of this country, and indeed for its survival, to, say boldly: Yes, we will have compulsory training.

"What is written on the wall is that if those who love Nazidom say: 'We will fight for Nazidom' and those who love Freedom say: 'We will talk about Freedom,' then Freedom will be destroyed. But if those who love Freedom say: 'Ah, you will fight for Nazidom; we, too, will fight, but for Freedom,' then Freedom will prevail."

LORD STRABOLGI: "It is essential that a Combined General Staff should be established permanently after the war. I am not quite sure we have got a real Combined General Staff even now. I believe General Einsenhower has a Staff in the Western European theatre which can properly be described as a Combined General Staff, but I do not think that even now we have a Combined General Staff for the whole theatre of operations. The Committee of Chiefs of Staffs in Washington is not a Combined General Staff.

"We have been warned about the danger of new weapons. I would suggest on this subject that the present system of employing scientists to advise the Services will be made permanent after the war. What I have in mind is a General Scientific Staff of the very best available brains in the scientific world to advise the General Staff and the Cabinet on the development of new weapons.

"As to compulsory service, I believe the advantages outweigh the disadvantages. It is fairer, and I am coming to the conclusion that it is more democratic. May I, at the same time, ask what is the Government's future policy with regard to the Home Guard? Here was a great Force, and its members felt that they have been prematurely stood down. Is it going to be continued in some form in the future?

"Lord Trenchard said he did not think that promotion in all cases from the ranks was a good thing. We in our party think it is a good thing. We have advocated it for years, and are glad it was brought about in this war.

"I was glad to hear what Lord Trenchard said about Colonial troops, but one of our difficulties in framing the postwar military programme is that we cannot yet decide what use we shall be able to make of them... Some of us have protested that Singapore and the Malaya Archipelago were thrown away because more use was not made of the indigenous inhabitants and the Chinese there to form native battalions. We hope that we have learnt our lesson. All this affects the structure of your future Army. If you can rely more on East and West African troops, on Malays and the Fijians to safeguard their own Colonies, it affects the structure of your post-war Army. I suggest that most suitable will be a long-term professional, highly-trained Army, very well paid and attracting the best type of men for overseas service, and a short-term Army for home defence."

THE EARL OF CAVAN: "It would be a mistake to adopt the suggestion that the three Services should be amalgamated. You can never get away from the simple fact that there are three elements—land, sea and air. To fight well on each element or in each element requires specialised training.

and with the multiplication of modern weapons one Service is as much as one man can master.

"As to the Combined General Staff, before you superimpose another bureau between the Chiefs of Staff and the Secretary of State you must be sure of two things: that it is now really wanted, and that it will work. In 1922 Mr. Lloyd George, then Prime Minister, demanded of the late Lord Beatty, Lord Trenchard and myself a joint appreciation of the delicate situation at Chanak. That was the very beginning of combinations.

"Now, twenty years later, selected men from all three Services must have worked well together to produce the perfect combination that resulted in the North African and Normandy landings. Given that the principle of a joint appreciation by the Chiefs of Staffs Committee is maintained, then in my view your Combined General Staff is actually in being and working superbly.

"The talent that has been discovered by the Chiefs of Staff consisted, I presume, of graduates from the Staff and Imperial Defence College, and it seems to me that any demand for a change in the system of Combined Chiefs of Staff Committees must be supported by convincing arguments that something new will work better before any change is made. And I think that will be a difficult thing to do.

"I would advocate a Bureau or Department of Science and Research, the head of which should be a member of the Army Council. I want to continue to invent and produce new weapons. There is always a tendency after a big war to live on one's fat and perhaps for a year or two that is safe. After that we begin to lag behind in invention.

"As to our post-war Army, we shall have at the end of the war battle-trained warriors who will be a priceless asset of the nation. Every encouragement should be given to them to continue as trainers and mentors of the future Army... The Army has been through a sufficiently gruelling time to enable commanding officers and brigadiers to know the best of their officers and men. I hope that in any process of selection their reports may be accepted as adequate, and that neither officer nor man who has been through the test of war and who is recommended as a soldier will be subject to further examination, either by the Civil Service Commissioners or by psychiatric professors.

"In education, methods of instruction, such as educational films, A.B.C.A. discussions, visits to the Royal Electrical and Mechanical Engineers school, can be made attractive, and not just another fatigue. The greatest credit is due to the Army Educational Corps for all their efforts in

that direction. Generally speaking, we assess the brains of the soldier too low. Many bits of evidence point to the fact that the standard of education in the modern Army is much higher than is generally believed."

Advocating the extension of the Imperial Defence College, Earl Stanhope said it should be resident, and should include officers from the three Services and the Civil Service. He said that after Germany and Japan are beaten we should require Services at least as large as those we had before the war for garrison and patrol duty. We should require armies and an Air Force of occupation for Germany and Japan, and we should probably be asked by the U.S.A. to allow the Royal Navy to take its part in patrolling the Pacific islands.

He reminded the House that on the last two occasions when war broke out, Britain was not the first to be attacked—it was France or Russia. Next time there would be no doubt which country would be the first. It would be Britain. Therefore, it was essential that some Home Guard system should be ready almost at an hour's notice.

We should have to have compulsory service of one year in the Forces, beginning at the age of 18. For the Armies of Occupation and contingents of the International Force he suggested a short-service Army and Air Force and probably a Navy, with three or five years' service. After the last war compulsory recruitment was stopped as soon as the Armistice was signed, and recruits were sent to the Army of Occupation. That was not good enough. All sorts of things happened under the noses of that Army which ought not to have happened.

Lord Hutchison urged the Government to study Lord Trenchard's proposals, and recalled that the Hamilton Gordon Committee sat after the last war to consider army reorganisation. Its report, however, was suppressed by the Chief of Staff of that day. Enlistment after this war should be for three, five and seven years, allowing some to extend their service for a long period, with a pension at the end. He thought we would be bound to continue conscription in the Army, and suggested that they should serve for one year and three months—three months to settle down and be taught their arms, and then a year of training.

Replying for the Government, Lord Selborne said a great deal of preparatory work had been done on the subject of the post-war organisation of the Services, but the governing factor of the problem would be the world security organisation which would be set up by the Allies, and the contribution which the Allies and Great Britain and the Empire would make to it.

Digitized by Google

# WHAT'S IN AN INDIAN NAME?—II

on the Proposition of the propos

BY LIEUT-COLONEL F. R. GIFFORD, O.B.E.

HERE ARE three main routes from Aryavarta to the southern parts of the Indian peninsula, namely by the Western Ghats, down the east coast, and following the central line running through the Vindhya (Divider) Range. In one respect, it matters little which route be chosen, for the traveller from the North soon finds himself in a new country, among new people, most clearly not of Aryan origin.

All the place names he reads on the railway stations have a bewildering appearance; although some of them may be reminiscent of what he had previously been used to, even these are subtly changed in their spellings, while others bear no resemblance to any he had met before.

Let us suppose that we are based on Bombay and intend to travel South by the Western route. Before we actually entrain, however, there are three very un-Indian names of places either in or near to the city, which we would like to mention in passing. They are the famous "Apollo Bunder", "Breech Candy" and "Elephanta", with its well-known caves.

The derivation of "Apollo Bunder" has been the subject of a certain amount of controversy, but it is most likely that the word "Apollo" is not its real name. Two suggestions seem reasonable, and of the two the first is to be preferred. Either "Apollo" represents palla, which is the name of a fish (usually called the hilsa), and the "bunder" was the "landing place" (Persian: bandar), where the local fishermen landed their catches; the second suggestion is that Apollo stands for poli, which is a particular form of small cake eaten during the celebration of the Holi festivities, and it is said locally that this was the place where these cakes were consumed. But if this is so, why is the word poli associated with the word "bunder"? It is natural that fish should be landed at a bandar, while it is not necessary to go to such a place to eat cakes.

"Breech Candy" is the European version of Burj Khadi, meaning "the tower of the creek".

Lastly, "Elephanta" was the name given to the island by the Portuguese, owing to the conspicuous carved elephant at the entrance to the caves, which was in situ at that time. The carving of the elephant was removed to Victoria Gardens in Bombay for safe keeping many years ago. The Indian name for Elephanta Island is Gharapuri (perhaps "rock city").

With these preliminary remarks, let us take our seats in the train and start off. The first stop is made at Kalyan (the "Beautiful" or "Happiness"!), after which we begin to climb over the Ghats ("passes"). On breasting the Ghats, we reach the plateau, on which the city of Poona is situated. Poona is the modern

abbreviated name of what had been called Punyapur, i.e. "City of Purification". The original site was at the confluence of the two rivers, Mutha and Mula, and in ancient times it was both a place of pilgrimage and a fairly important trade emporium.

At Poona we change to a metre-gauge train, which is to take us through the Mahratta\* country (Mahá-ráshtra, "the great region") into the "Kannada" ("the black country", so-called from the black cotton soil found there), the land where those who speak Canarese live. This region is often spoken of as the Carnatic (Kar-nádu). We pass Belgaum (Vennugráma - "bamboo town"), Harihar ("the city dedicated to a composite deity, half Vishnu (Hari) and half Shiv (Har) and hear as we travel such names as Goa ("go-en" "cowherd country") and Sholapur ("sixteen towns")

The big city for which we are heading is Bangalore. In this word we come across a termination which is very common in the names of towns in South India. It is properly spelt "air" and means simply "town". "Bangalu" is a kind of bean, and Bangalore is the town which has given lustre to its virtues (if abiv). The name has no connection with the word bangla "a bungalow" (Incidentally, the word Bangala means "Bengali", and it received its modern signification from the fact that this particular type of house was that built for themselves, albeit of very princely dimensions in those times, by the European traders who settled in those parts of India in the early days).

Many South Indian places are to be found with the same termination, for example Nellore ("rice town"), Vellore ("town of babul trees"). Cannanore (Kanh-ur-"Krishna's town", cf. Cawnpore), Cuddalore (Kadal-úr-"sea town"). Coimbatore (Kovammutur-pearl village of a local goddess named Koni), and so on.

Other common terminations are: -

(a) "--puram" and "-nagram", which are easily recognisable as modifications of "pur" and "nagar". The "-am" ending is Sanskrit.

(b) "-velly" = "hedge".

- "—cherry" (sherry) == "town". (4)
- "-patam" and "patan (am)" "cir.". **(d)**

(e) "-palaivam" = "estate".

# Examples are: —

(a) Malappuram, in Malabar ("mountain city"), and Virianagram (Vijav-nagar—"City of Victory"). Tinnevelly (Tiru-nel-veli—"sacred paddy hedge").

(c) Pondicherry (Pudu-cheri-"new town").

(d) Seringapatam (Srirangapatan—"City of Sri-ranga", i.e., Vishnu). Great care must be taken to pronounce this name correctly. We ourselves usually put the accent on the last syllable, which we pronounce as if it rhymed with "ham" or "cam". The stress should properly fall on the last syllable but one, and the word rhymes with "button".

(c). Mettupalaiyam.

· Digitized by Google

<sup>\*</sup> Spelt Marhata, Marhata, Marhata and Maratha, according to taste apparently!

While we are in Bangalore, let us look round the places and territories in the neighbourhood. First of all, the city is situated within the borders of the great Indian State called Mysore. The "—ore" termination here is not the same as that in Bangalore. The real name of the state originally was that of a famous demon (asura) called Mahesh, who was defeated after a bloody conflict by the goddess Kali—hence the word is "Maheshasura"; this was eventually boiled down to Maisur, which has now been anglicized to Mysore.

On arriving at Bangalore City station, we see a train standing at another platform grandiosely labelled "Blue Mountain Express". It runs to the Blue Mountains (Nílgiris, or, as we often write it, "Nilgherries"), in which are situated such well-known hill stations as Ootacamund and Coonoor. Ootacamund was probably named by the local "Badaga"—speaking inhabitants, when the first "brick house" ("uttangi mane"?) was built by a European in those parts, although the Madras Gazetteer prefers "Otta-gai-mandu"—"Toda village of the dwarf bamboo fruit". We wonder!

Near by is Coorioor ("Hill town"), although others prefer to derive it from the Sanskrit "Kunna"—"small" and "—ur"—"village": but why mix the languages? Such a combination is not natural.

Looking to the West, we come to the maritime area, which is called the "Malabar" coast. "Malabar" is derived from "malai" "hills", and "bar", which was the termination the Arab seafarers from the Persian Gulf added to the particular descriptive name adopted when referring to any 'region' or 'country'. It may have been the Arabic "barr" "a continent", or the Gulf Persian "bar". We find them using this termination when naming other places or districts on their far-flung trade routes; the best known is Zanzibar—"the land of the Blacks".

One of the chief towns in the Malabar district is Calicut, from which we derive our English "calico". The name is Kolikodu—"cock-fortress". Cochin is another, its name is really Kochchi—"a small place".

Along this coast going south, we meet a series of names, which from their spelling hardly look like Indian names at all. This was the coast first visited by the Portuguese. These folk made no effort to write the place names that they heard in any phonetically accurate style. They generally made no attempt to learn the local languages; so they did not trouble about derivations. They simply spelt the names approximately according to their Portuguese predilections, and from these approximations the English have evolved their own spellings. It is not surprising that the true names have become so camouflaged as to be almost unrecognisable.

Take the town in Travancore, which has fallen from its pristine importance, named Quilon. The Tamil form is now Kollam, which is an abbreviation of Koyilagam—"King's house". Travancore itself was originally Tiru-vidan-kodu—"sacred fortress". We

are now to be introduced to a new prefix which is very common. Note the following:—

Trivandrum is Tiru-v-ananta-puram—"sacred city of Vishnu".

Trichinopoly is Tiru-shila-palli-"sacred rock town", famous for its cheroots.

Tinnevelly is Tiru-nel-veli-"sacred paddy hedge".

Triplicane (a suburb of Madras) is Tiru-alli-keni—"sacred creeper tank".

The prefix "tiru" is a local form of the Sanskrit "shri" ("holy"), But, unfortunately, you cannot be absolutely certain, so garbled is the modern spelling, and we find that Trincomalee is really Trikona-malai—"three peak hill"!

While we are in the extreme South, what of Cape Comorin? This represents Kumari—"the maiden", a title of the goddess Durga, because of a temple dedicated to her on the promontory at the southernmost point of the Indian peninsula.

It is time to retrace our steps, but we decide to return by the east coast through the Tamilnád ("Tamil country"). We pass Madura, with its great temple, dedicated to Shiv. In spite of its close association with Shiv worship, the town is said to have been so named after Mathura (Muttra), the famous shrine of Krishna on the banks of the Jumna. Others prefer Madúra—"old town", which is at any rate a Dravidian derivation in keeping with its situation. But still, it is interesting to note that this name is found reproduced in other parts of the East to which Hinduism had spread, and we get Matura in Ceylon and Madura in Java.

This south-east coast of India you will see marked on most maps as the "Coromandel" Coast. Antiquarians have offered many explanations as to the meaning of this name. Some are most fanciful, others merely ingenious. The simplest derivation, which also is most probable as it fits in with history, is "Choramandalam", which means "the country of the Choras (or Cholas)," the powerful dynasty of Kings who bore sway in that region for some hundreds of years at the beginning of the Christian era. Their whole domains were called "Choramandalam" so it is not surprising that their coast line should be called the "Choromandal" Coast.

We come now to Madras. The City of Madras, as we know it, is not of ancient foundation (witness its artificial harbour). In old documents it was referred to by the local inhabitants as Madrasapatam. "Patam", of course, we can understand: it means "town". "Madrasa" is not a Dravidian word. It is of Muslim origin and means "a school", and it appears that there was a building of Muslim origin, which was spoken of as "the College", and was occupied by the East India Company's clerks, when the settlement was established at Fort St. George. It is probably from this that Madras got its name.

Further to the north we come to Masulipatam. This is really Machhlipatan, and it is said to have been so named, not because it was a fishing village, but because on one occasion a whale was stranded on the beach at that spot. Such a visitant was, in all probability, unheard of in the district, and its arrival must have been attributed locally to some divine origin.

Other well-known names in that part of India are: -

Tanjore-- "tanja-v-úr"-- "city of refuge".

Rajamundry — "Rajamahendravaramu" — "Chief king's town".

Perambakam (where a party of British troops were all but annihilated in 1780 by Haidar Ali)—"Parampakkum"—"big village".

Rameswaram—One of the most venerated Hindu shrines in India, traditionally said to have been founded by Rama himself, while he was preparing for his invasion of Lanka (Ceylon). This should be spelt Rámeshvaram and means "Lord Rama".

Conjeevaram (sometimes called "the Benares of the South", and a great centre of pilgrimage)—"Kachchivaram". In Sanskrit this is written Kanchipura "shining city" (cf. Káshi for Benares—"shining one"). In the case of Conjeevaram, its Sanskrit name is simply a corruption of its previous local name. In Tamil "Kachchi" means "heart-leaved moon-seed plant". The moon plant was known to the Aryans as "soma", and from it they produced a pleasantly intoxicating liquor, which, it was believed, was particularly acceptable to the Aryan gods in sacrifice. The chances are that Kachchi was revered by the Dravidians as a holy place before the Aryans arrived; and the latter, finding so auspicious a name, were encouraged to enhance its sanctity under the aegis of their own beliefs, and corrupted its name into Kanchipura, as appropriate to the "Benares of the South".

It will be noticed that the majority of these Dravidian names are purely descriptive, and it was only the spread of Hinduism that led to place names being derived from the names of deities. The old Dravidian gods were malign influences, reverenced in terror; they were not such as the people would naturally commemorate in their place names. On the other hand, the nature gods of the Aryans were generally friendly, if properly and respectfully handled.

Before we leave this part of the country, it still remains to consider one brief point with regard to men's names among the Tamils. Mention has been made of the termination "—sammy" in one of the introductory vignettes. It really stands for "Swámi"—"Lord", and is affixed to the names of deities. For instance, the generic name for Tamil servants is "Ramasammy". This is Rámaswámi, which literally means "Lord Rama".

Other names follow the same principle. There are Krishnaswámi and Govindaswámi, which are easy to derive. Others commonly met with are Naráyanaswámi (Lord Vishnu), Rangaswámi (Sri-ranga is a name of Vishnu), Muniswámi (often bestowed on men who have been born as a result of their parents having propitiated Munishvar, a malignant deity, much dreaded by the people) and Ponnuswámi (Ponnamma—"the Golden Mother" is a well-known village goddess).

(To be concluded.)

<sup>[</sup>The third and concluding article on this subject will appear in our next issue. The first article was published in the October, 1944 issue of the *Journal*.]

## MALARIA CONTROL IN THE SOUTH-WEST PACIFIC\*

By Major-General G. Covell, C.I.E., K.H.P., I.M.S.,

Consultant Malariologist, G. H. Q. (India).

GENERALLY speaking, the course of events as regards malaria casualties among the Allied Forces operating in the South-West Pacific Area has resembled very closely that on the Assam-Burma front. In both theatres the malaria rate was excessively high during the first year of operations, and in both the rates have since been reduced to a small fraction of the original figures. In recent months, however, the rates in the S.W.P.A. among both Australian and American troops have been very considerably lower than that recorded on our own eastern front.

Among Australian troops, the malaria rates recorded in wellestablished bases in malarious areas are approximately two per a,000 per week. Among operational troops the rates have varied greatly according to (a) the degree of anti-malaria discipline maintained, (b) the severity of the fighting, as affecting anti-malaria discipline in difficulties of supply, and (c) the scene of operations.

These examples may be quoted: (a) Rates in the 7th Division in the Ramu Valley operations rose to 93 per 1,000 per week at one period; the fighting was less severe than in the Huon Peninsula, and was of a spasmodic character. (b) In the Huon Peninsula operations, rates in the 0th Division rose to 42 per 1,000 per week at one period; fighting here was more continuous and severe than in the Ramu Valley. (c) In the 5th Division, the present forward division engaged in patrol activities in uncontrolled areas, the malaria rate over the past few months has been approximately a per 1,000 per week. Anti-malaria discipline in this division is said to be the best in the Force. These rates apply to all attacks among all personnel, irrespective of whether they had previously suffered from malaria.

By the system of recording statistics now used in the Australian New Guinea Force, a detailed statement of malaria rates in all areas is circulated within 14 days. The introduction of this system is said to have been a dominant factor in the reduction of malarial casualties in New Guinea, since it discloses immediately a rise in malaria rates in any particular unit. The strengthening of remedial measures, including disciplinary action where needed, is thereby facilitated.

The over-all figure for the Australian New Guinea force for the week ended August 11 was:

First attack rate ... 0.8 per 1,000 All attacks rate ... 1.5 per 1,000

These impressions were gained during a recent tour in Australia and New Guinea, the purpose of which was to study malaria problems in the South-West Pacific area, and to see whether any special measures employed there might with advantage be introduced in the anti-malarial programme of the Assam-Burma theatre.

Malaria figures for the American forces in New Guinea in recent months have been even lower than those recorded by the Australians. At the time of my visit the rates in the two forces were approximately equal.

The over-all rate per 1,000 per week for all forces operating in New Guinea and the adjacent islands, is, at present slightly less than the over-all rate per day recorded in the Assam-Burma theatre.

A number of factors, however, have an important bearing on the malaria problem in the South-West Pacific:

- (1) Troops are segregated from the local population. The area is comparatively sparsely populated, and any local labour employed is housed well away from any military camp. Local inhabitants who may be living near camps are deported elsewhere. This removes an important reservoir of malaria infection.
- (2) The absence of a long rail and road Lines of Communication, necessitating the maintenance of numerous staging camps in malarious areas.
- (3) There is only a single malaria-carrying species of mosquito throughout the S.W.P.A., breeding almost exclusively in small collections of stagnant water, such as wheel ruts and bomb craters. It is a most efficient vector, but now that its habits have been thoroughly studied it is more easily dealt with than formerly.
- (4) The character of the campaign.—With complete sea, air and artillery superiority there is now less need for dispersion. American troops are usually encamped in compact areas, completely cleared of jungle, with the ground surface flattened out with bulldozers. When landing in enemy territory a location is chosen wherever possible where no enemy is present, and since there are usually no local inhabitants either, the mosquitoes are not infected with malaria before the troops land.

These factors all tend to make the conduct of anti-malaria operations a less difficult task than on the Assam-Burma front, but they are not sufficient to account for the great difference between the malaria ratio in the two theatres.

Anti-malaria measures in New Guinea.—There is no basic difference in the organisation and conduct of anti-malaria operations in the S.W.P.A. and on the Assam-Burma front. Australian and American Malaria Control Units perform the same functions as the corresponding units in our own eastern theatre, and have reached an equally high standard of efficiency. The methods employed are essentially the same, being based on the principles laid down by the Indian school of malariologists.

No major anti-malarial engineering works have been undertaken in the S.W.P.A. and there is nowhere a system of drainage comparable in extent with that which has achieved such remarkable results in Dimapur. The usual minor drainage works have been carried out in base camps in New Guinea, and oil has been extensively used to deal with man-made breeding places, i.e., jeep tracks and bomb craters.

In one direction, however, the Australian and American forces have reached a level superior to our own—in the higher standard of anti-malaria discipline. I am aware that in certain of our units and formations there has been a vast improvement in this respect, and some have attained a standard equal to the best disciplined units in New Guinea. But the general level of anti-malaria discipline throughout our operational areas is undoubtedly inferior to that in the S.W.P.A.

After making full allowances for the greater difficulties of the malaria control alluded to above, I am convinced that we can lower our own malaria rate very considerably by adopting a regime as stringent as that imposed on the Australian and American forces. These remarks apply particularly to rest camps along the L. of C.; but there are a number of units in the field, in which the standard of anti-malaria discipline still leaves much to be desired.

Two major factors have contributed to the high standard of anti-malarial discipline in the Australian Army.

The first is the example set by the Commanding Officer of the 24th Infantry Battalion. He set out to prove that a high standard of anti-malaria discipline could be maintained, even when troops are in contact with the enemy, by meticulous and unremitting attention to detail on the part of all concerned. After eleven months in intensely malarious areas in frequent contact with the enemy, the admission rate for malaria in this battalion was only a fraction of that recorded among other units operating under similar conditions in the same area.

This so impressed the G.O.C. of the Brigade that he insisted on a similar regime being maintained throughout the formation, with equally striking results. The example of the 24th Battalion probably exerted more influence than any other factor in convincing the Australian military authorities of the practicability of reducing malaria casualties to an insignificant figure in the field, by maintaining a high standard of anti-malaria discipline.

The second factor was the convincing results achieved at the research centres at Cairns and the Atherton Tableland regarding the efficacy of mepacrin in suppressing malarial attacks. Several hundred volunteers who had previously not suffered from malaria were artificially infected by the bites of malaria-carrying mosquitoes which had been fed on malaria patients infected in New Guinca.

One group of volunteers received no treatment of any kind. The remainder were divided into groups, each receiving a daily dose of an anti-malaria drug for varying periods before being infected and for several weeks thereafter. Volunteers were bitten by batches of mosquitoes heavily infected with either malignant tertian (M.T.) or benign tertian (B.T.) malaria repeatedly, and it was calculated that under natural conditions in New Guinea each would have had to be bitten by more than 6,000 mosquitoes of the carrier species to produce the same effect.

To simulate operational conditions as closely as possible, the patients were subjected to various rigorous tests, such as excessive

exercise at the hottest season of the year, exposure to a temperature of minus 9°C., the simulation of starvation conditions and conditions of extreme emotion by the repeated injections of certain drugs, and loss of blood by venesection. One group handed over to the R.A.A.F. was subjected to conditions simulating those experienced at a height of 35,000 feet at a very low temperature, because it had been suggested that exposure to such conditions might cause relapse in spite of suppressive treatment.

The Cairns experiments proved conclusively that all types of malaria prevalent in New Guinea can be effectively suppressed by administering one tablet of mepacrin (=atebrin) daily, provided the dose is actually taken with unfailing regularity. Under this regime, all cases of M.T. malaria are actually cured, provided the drug is taken continuously for at least a month after leaving the malarious area, although B.T. malaria will, in a high proportion of cases, relapse when mepacrin administration is discontinued. This type of malaria, however, is completely suppressed so long as the drug is taken regularly every day. In the whole series of cases there was no single exception to this finding, even though the infected men were subjected to every conceivable privation during the period of observation.

The great importance of the Cairns experiments was the demonstration that the so-called "break-through" of malaria which so frequently occurs, particularly during a period of active operations, is due not to the direct effect of stress and strain, but to the fact that, under such conditions, anti-malaria discipline is apt to be relaxed and men will forget to take the drug, unless their training has been such that it has become an ingrained habit.

Two other important points demonstrated in these experiments were (1) that one tablet of atebrin per day can be administered over an indefinite period without harm to the person taking it, and (2) that persons taking this dosage regularly cannot infect mosquitoes which feed on them, so that all human malaria carriers are thereby eliminated from the force.

The incontestable evidence produced at Cairns, following the demonstration by the 24th Battalion, the 15th Brigade and the 5th Division, that the maintenance of strict anti-malaria discipline can reduce malaria casualties to an insignificant figure even under active operational conditions, has been followed by the issue of two very important and comprehensive routine orders on malaria control.

These extracts from a routine order of August 28, 1944, issued by the G.O.C., Australian New Guinea Forces, reflect the attitude now adopted by the Command:

"Success in fighting malaria will be treated as just as important as fighting in the field. Failure to fight malaria will be regarded in the same way as failure in the field due to neglect or incompetence.

"Discipline.—(a). Every breach of this order is a serious offence. If an officer or N.C.O. commits a breach, he will be court-martialled unless the Force Commander otherwise directs. Every officer and man is responsible for carrying it out.

- "(b) Every Commander, officer and N.C.O. will be held personally responsible for any failure in carrying out this order on the part of those under him.
- "(c). Science has proved that when a man develops malaria, there is strong presumption that he has not been taking his mepacrin. Every case is strong evidence (i) that the man did not take his mepacrin regularly, and (ii) that there is a loophole in the supervision.
- "(d). Every case will, therefore, be inquired into, to remedy any weakness, and punish any breach. If inquiry indicates that neglect took place in another unit, pass the report on direct to the Formation of H.Q. or Base Sub-Area commanding such unit."

Part II of this order applies to field conditions, and repeats in substance the orders which achieved success in the 24th Australian Infantry Battalion under extremely difficult conditions. Here are some extracts:

"At 1900 hours daily, Battalion Headquarters and Companies will have a muster parade of all ranks.

"Section Commanders will call the roll under the supervision of Platoon Commanders (where applicable). Each man will step forward on his name being called, and will receive and swallow one mepacrin tablet. Mosquito repellent will then be applied. The Platoon will then be inspected by the Platoon Commander, to ensure that gaiters are worn, sleeves turned down, and clothing is not torn.

"The Platoon Commander will inspect sentries whose tours of duty will be between 1900 hours and 0700 hours the following day, to ensure that such personnel are in possession of gloves, headnet and mosquito repellent.

"Each Platoon Commander will then report compliance to orders to his Company Commander. On receipt of reports from all Platoons, the Company Commanders will telephone Battalion Headquarters that orders have been complied with.

"If for operational reasons, e.g. because of distances involved, it is impracticable for Platoon Commanders to inspect their troops, then the N.C.O. in Command will act. This is an Officer's responsibility, and will not be delegated to N.C.Os., except in cases above mentioned.

"At 2200 hours daily, the battalion duty officer will notify Company Commanders and officers in charge of Staging Camps, that it is time to re-apply repellent. This notification will be made by phone, signal, or runner.

"Between 2200 hours and time of retiring daily, Platoon Commanders will inspect beds, to ensure that all personnel are in bed, under nets, with nets properly tacked in and free from mosquitoes. They will check that the hut or tent has been sprayed immediately prior to their inspection. If, on account of duty, or any other reason, personnel are not in bed by 2200 hours or later, the Platoon Commander will delegate the N.C.O. in charge of flying squad to make the inspection.

held

T on

aria,

his

not

the

hat

"Company Commanders will detail a Flying Squad in charge of an N.C.O. They will work in shifts of two! During hours of darkness they will inspect all personnel, and move away from nets any personnel whose bodies are touching nets. They will carry arms and a torch. They may act as lines patrol as well, or they may replace patrols. This rule will not apply to outposts whose numbers preclude the provision of this guard.

"The Commanding Officer will apply for a count-martial off any officer, or detachment commander failing to obey these orders. Evidence given by patients evacuated to hospital, who admit noncompliance with these instructions, will be used against the soldier's Platoon, etc., Commander."

A routine order issued on September 4, 1944 by the Commander of the Allied Land Forces in the S.W.P.A. and Commander-in-Chief, Australian Military Forces covered fifteen pages, and included most of the points enumerated in the New Guinea Force Order quoted above. The following extracts are of special interest:

"It has been established that malaria can be effectively controlled by the application, under strict military discipline, of the proven methods detailed in this order. Wastage from malaria is, therefore, a reflection on the standard of discipline of the unit concerned.

"Commanding Officers will be held personally responsible for ensuring the strict observance of these instructions contained in this order, and they, and all other officers, will, at all times, be vigilant and unremitting in the enforcement of such instructions.

"Neglect to comply with such instructions will be treated as a serious offence, and will be punished accordingly.

"The occurrence of cases of malaria in a unit which has been directed to take the dosage of mepacrin prescribed in this order will be regarded as *prima facie* evidence that the Commanding Officer has failed to ensure the observance of such instructions."

Concerning the administration of suppressive mepacrin, the Order states:

"Suppressive mepacrin, however, does not prevent malarial infection. It cures malignant tertian malaria, but only suppresses benign tertian malaria. Personnel exposed to infection in malarious areas will become infected unless they take stringent precautions against mosquitoes. When the taking of suppressive mepacrin is discontinued, most of those infected will suffer relapses of benign tertian malaria. The number and duration of these relapses will be related to the degree of infection, or, in other words, to the number of times the individual has been bitten by infected mosquitoes.

"Measures of personal protection, including the use of mosquito nets, mosquito repellent, and protective clothing are, therefore, still absolutely essential."

Two important paras of this Order relate to the movement of anti-malarial stores by land, sea, and air:

"Anti-malarial stores will be regarded as having priority equal to urgent tactical stores, and will be moved and distributed with the utmost expedition.

"They will be so loaded with respect to other consignments as to ensure that they are the first to be unloaded.

"In addition to the normal marking, packages of anti-malarial stores will be marked with three bands, each two inches wide, coloured red, blue and red respectively, spaced two inches apart, and passing completely round the package."

An important regulation in force in New Guinea, not included in the above, is that no case of uncomplicated malaria is allowed to be evacuated to the mainland of Australia.

That the prevention of malaria in the field is a function not of the medical services, but of the Command, was a point which struck me most forcibly in my conversation with senior commanders of Australian and American armies. They accepted this principle in toto. It is realised that the medical services have not the power to enforce the regulations they advocate, and the problem of malaria control is treated on exactly the same footing as the planning of an assault on an enemy position.

Although the regulations in both forces are extremely rigorous, and although military authorities are determined to enforce them with the utmost severity, the occasions on which it has been found necessary to take disciplinary action are comparatively few. On one occasion a Battalion Commander was removed from his command because the anti-malaria discipline in his battalion was proved to be lax, but courts-martial have been rare.

The reason for this is that both forces have to a large extent reached the ultimate goal to which we are all aiming, namely, the realisation by the individual of the effect that malaria can have not only on his own health, but on that of the Force and of his personal responsibilities for its control. Anti-malaria precautions have become such a fixed habit that they are carried out almost automatically.

Having been present at the daily anti-malaria parade of one of the Australian infantry battalions, I can testify as to its thorough nature. The whole procedure was completed in a surprisingly short time, obviously the result of long practice. The skin of all the men showed deep-yellow coloration with one exception, and this was the only individual who had had a recent attack of malaria. He admitted that he had not taken his mepacrin regularly.

I do not recall seeing a single Australian soldier who was not observing all precautions regarding protective clothing from dusk onwards. The American troops are said to be not quite so careful in this respect in their base camps, but the anti-malaria discipline of the forward troops whose bivouacs I visited on the banks of the Drinimour River, east of Aitape, was every bit as good as that of the Australians.

At every officers' mess I visited in New Guinea, whether Australian or American, mepacrin tablets were invariably on the table at each meal, and were passed round by the senior officer present with the same regularity as was the port in pre-war days.

At the risk of repetition, here are some extracts from notes made by the Commander of a Brigade which operated in the Ramu Valley early in 1944. Their significance lies in the fact that they express the opinions of a combatant officer with long experience of battle conditions, and not those of a medical officer:

"The Brigade moved into the Ramu Valley fully conscious of the dangers of malaria, and with a determination to keep their sickness casualties down to a minimum. . . The fatiguing work in the jungle and mountains, the demands of battle in close contact day and night with the enemy, long range patrolling in constant rain and mud, and the dispersal of the forces over a large area under the control of sub-unit commanders, in many cases junior N.C.Os., all tend to render the task more difficult. . .

"The men must carry on their backs the necessities for fighting and living. Each night they must construct new rain shelters, erect nets, take mepacrin and apply repellent. All this is not so casy when all ranks are wet through, hungry and exhausted. Weapon pits must be dug, patrols go out, sentries posted; but still the malaria precautions must be carried out."

In this Brigade the following precautions were adopted, in addition to those laid down by the medical authorities:

- (a) Education of the individual soldier in the effect malaria can have on the force, and his personal responsibility for its control.
- (b) The main basis of malaria control, and supervision with in the unit was parades, roll calls, and reports.
- (c) Malaria control became a ritual in the unit in the same way as weapon and kit inspections and parades. This can and must be done in battle, just as it is in training camps.
- (d) Every sub-unit commander was responsible, each night, to inform his next higher commander that his command had carried out the malaria precautions. This culminated in a signal to the Brigade Command from Commanding Officers each night. Sub-unit Commanders can be liars, but it affects their conscience to be liars every night.
- . (e) A daily study of malaria evacuations was made by the Brigade Commander. Charts were kept, and action taken immediately any increase was shown.
- (f) All individual cases of malaria were investigated. The close co-operation of the Field Ambulance by questioning the patient at times disclosed a laxness in a sub-unit. Immediate action was then taken, the Section, Platoon and Company Commanders of the individual concerned reporting personally to the Commanding Officer.



- (g) Operationally, the view was taken that in the main at least two-thirds of the force could use nets, even in contact, at night, the remaining third being on protective duties. There were several occasions when contact was so close throughout the night that the use of nets was not possible.
- (h) All patrols were briefed regarding malaria control and were interrogated on their return. The patrol commander, in his written report, stated the malaria precautions taken, a paragraph being included in every patrol report. Nets were always carried on patrol so as to be available. There are few patrols which cannot use nets. No sane recce patrol bivouacs so close to the enemy that nets cannot be used—due allowance being made for the necessary protective personnel. It would be expensive in manpower to send out a patrol of, say, ten men on a four-day patrol and lose 50 per cent. from malaria casualties.
- (i) In all operation orders and instructions, malaria control was always dealt with. It was invariably considered as part of the operation, and never allowed to be overshadowed by the operation.

This Brigade Commander concluded with some main points, among which were the following:

"Commanders must realise the necessity for conserving manpower by the maintenance of health.

"Precautions laid down for the prevention of tropical diseases must be adhered to.

"Ensure that every man accepts his individual responsibility for the control of malaria, and understands the effects malaria may have on the fighting force to which he belongs.

"The responsibility of constant supervision must be realised by every officer and N.C.O. from the Commanding Officer downwards. Supervision on an organised disciplinary basis has proved to be most effective.

"To realise the human frailties when the flesh and spirit is weak from long campaigning, and to take extra measures to combat any laxity in malaria precautions.

"Investigate every laxity relentlessly. Pursue the inquiry until the individual responsible is found. One careless, inefficient officer or N.C.O. may be the cause of innumerable casualties.

"Don't let the 'operations' bogey lessen the vigilance on malaria and other precautions. Far more casualties will come from malaria than from Japs. Malaria control should become part of the unit battle drill.

"Study figures and charts. These tell a story, and from them the Commander can most likely put his finger on the weak spot."

Malaria casualties in this Brigade after seventeen weeks of hard and exhausting campaigning were 267, or 8.5 per 1,000 per week.

## Summary.

- 1. The general course of events regarding malarial incidence in the S.W.P.A. closely resembles that expenienced in the Assam-Burma theatre. In the early stages, in both theatres malaria casualties were excessively high, whilst more latterly these have been reduced to a fraction of the original figure.
- 2. Reduction in malaria rates in the S.W.P.A. has, however, been much greater than that in Assam-Burma. The most recent figure in the former area is only about one-eighth as high as on our eastern front.
- 3. The principle that the prevention of malaria in the field is a function not of the Medical Services, but of the Command, is accepted in toto by the Senior Commanders of both the Australian and American Forces operating in the S.W.P.A.
- 4. The organisation and conduct of anti-malaria operations in the two theatres are essentially the same. The great reduction in the figures in the S.W.P.A. has been brought about not by the use of any new methods\*, but solely by the higher standard of anti-malaria discipline maintained in both Australian and American armies, backed by comprehensive and extremely forceful routine orders rigidly enforced.
- 5. A fundamental difference between the conditions obtaining in the two theatres of war is that in the S.W.P.A. senior officers are aware that if anti-malaria discipline among the troops serving under them is shown to be lax, they will inevitably be deprived of their command; whereas in the Burma-Assam theatre officers in a similar position know that whatever may be their shortcomings in this respect, the most that is likely to happen to them is a reprimand.
- 6. Certain factors operating in the S.W.P.A. render the task of controlling malaria in that area less difficult than is the case on the Assam-Burma front, and it is unlikely that the rates can be reduced to such an insignificant figure as that recently recorded in the S.W.P.A. Nevertheless, there is room for considerable improvement in the anti-malaria discipline among our troops, and by a more rigid adherence to detail in this respect in all operational areas, and more particularly along L. of C., it should be possible to effect a very substantial reduction in the malaria rate.

<sup>\*</sup>Wide publicity has recently been accorded to D.D.T. (Dichloro-dimethyltrichlorethane), which possesses remarkable insecticidal properties, and is likely to prove of great service in the control of malaria. I wish to make it quite clear, however, that the malaria rates in the S.W.P.A., were brought down to their present insignificant level before the introduction of D.D.T. into that theatre of operations.

## POWER OF MANOEUVRE

#### By "Auspex"

As WE see war to-day we are, I think, allowed to accept that the final act of war is the land battle. Whether that will be so in the future we have yet to decide. It is not the purpose of this article to discuss this problem of the future, but we may be allowed to make a certain contribution to it. Writing in this Journal in April, 1944, we suggested that the nature of war was regulated by these three things:

- (a) The existence of open flanks, or the ability readily to create the open flank by a break-in and through.
- (b) The predominance of the mobile arm or arms, which will exploit the open flank. (For land warfare the air arm is a mobile arm of bombardment, and a fast means of transport for airborne armies and supplies.)
- (c) The ability to administer the mobile arm to the point at which it will obtain a decision.

With these three conditions in mind we can predict what the next land war will be like, if there were ever to be another war. It will be a slow war of powerful defence lines or it will be a dynamic war of areas, fortresses and mobile field armies. We are in the latter phase to-day. But what is it that so decisively influences these conditions? Above all, the influence is the weapon that is to predominate in the next war. Thus in this war it is, on land, the armoured weapon that has re-created our power of manœuvre. Closely interwoven with it is the fresh new phenomenon of war, air power.

Therefore, in the peace years it is our first, urgent and vital task to engage soldiers and scientists together to determine the weapon or war device that is to influence decisively the next war. On that determining factor we base everything; on that we build up our whole operational policy, our whole tactical technique, our whole training—perhaps, also, our whole foreign policy.

It is axiomatic that the development of tactics is brought about by the development of weapons, so our research into weapons must always keep ahead of our tactics. If it proceeds too slowly then our tactics, from use, will become stereotyped: in the end the point will be reached, as it had been reached by 1930, when tactics are so stereotyped that staff duties, as represented by the perfect operation order, become the master of planning, as then represented by the stilted and conventional tactics that had substituted the dynamic tactical experiments that would have followed at once from the discovery of the new weapon. Staff duties must be kept in their place as the servants of good planning.

If research into the new weapon or war device proceeds fast enough, then it is we who introduce the dynamic quality into our planning, and it is we who spring the whole new method and technique of war upon our enemies at the outset and it is we who are best prepared to meet with our effective defence a sudden and surprise onslaught. It is we who fight and win a short war. Surely even finance can see the direct return from expenditure on this research,

The discovery of the weapon, or war device, is the business of the soldier helped by science. The development brought about by the evolution of society, its industries, its commerce, are the business of the civilian: but the soldier is intimately concerned in keeping a watch on these developments to turn them to his own warlike purpose. The petrol engine is one such innovation which not only rendered easy our administration and so enabled us to supply large forces to great distances, but also, applied to armour, produced the war device of the tank.

Since the final and vital act of war is the land battle, the vital fact in war is that that land battle must be won. Thus, little as we may care to acknowledge it, the whole effort of the nation at war is devoted to one end and one only—the winning of the final land battle. No matter what support the other services may give, that battle will only be won by a highly and expertly armed and trained land army handled by a master of his art. Let us be quite certain on that point, for we must realise that its armament must be in the end essentially an efficient offensive armament.

To this end, in peace, our researches into armament and its accompanying equipment must be directed. This research cannot be divorced from that of the sea and air forces into their own armament. All three must be centralised, with subordinate branches dealing with the needs of each service; information must be freely exchanged. Again we must emphasise, however, the vital importance to us of finding always the new weapon for the land army so that we shall not neglect that research, however important and pressing we may find the need for research into the requirements of the sea and air forces.

As we pointed out in April, 1944, every single army since the dawn of war has striven to gain power of manœuvre. In effect, it has striven for the ability to bring fighting power to the decisive place in proper time, and so to win its battles and the war. This is something more than pure mobility: it is the power of manœuvre. Having obtained a sufficient power of manœuvre, the natural outcome of this effort is that the army seeks at once to strangle the power of manœuvre of its enemy with the ultimate object of winning the final and decisive land battle. Thus, the earlier in the war that an army is ready to start in on this strangling process, the better, and the sooner will it finish the war successfully. For this object, it will seek every aid within its reach. It will seek the help of air and seapower. In fact, these with their longer reach will be the first to come into action in this process.

One does not get far in discussing the theories of war if one cannot find examples to illuminate one's thoughts. We first need general examples to show how a new weapon has produced the new battle technique, and how it has acted upon our own and the enemy's power of manœuvre. Then, we need more particular

examples over a period to show how the face of battle has expressed the strains and emotions produced by the new influence, the new weapon, and how the stress has been lightened by the answer to the new weapon.

The phenomenon of this war has been the growth of air power and its decisive influence on war in all elements. Superior air power has started in all cases the process of producing its owner's power of manœuvre, and of whittling down that of his enemy. The very first task of war has been so trounce the enemy's air power in both the strategical and the tactical field, so as to allow the whittling process to start. From this have come about certain lesser effects, such as the restriction of the power of manœuvre of naval fleets in the face of unbeaten shore based air power, and the growth of seaborne air forces to combat the restrictive influence of land air power and to limit the power of the opposing naval fleet. It is in the recent American operations in the Pacific that we see these great changes proceeding, following as they do on the loss of sea supremacy after the destruction of our warships in the Malayan catastrophe. Always, the first battle is for air supremacy general or local.

But perhaps the most important result of the arrival of great air power is the effect it has had on the general strategical conception of war. It has produced a new object before us, that of advancing our air bases in a scientific pattern so that the fullest power for destruction can be developed from our land based air forces. Following from this we get a new balance of values between the sea spaces and the land masses. Air power is utterly dependent for operational needs and for its very sustenance on the land masses, not on the sea spaces.

In the old days we regarded the sea with all its dangers as a strength to us. In the last war and again in this it nearly brought about our ruin, and would certainly have fuined us if our enemy had early grasped the value of long-range air forces as a destroyer of sea convoys, the most vulnerable of all forms of transport with so many eggs in each basket. To have lost our liberty to move on the seas would have killed us. Only when air power has virtually destroyed its opponent in the appointed area can we safely launch our combined operations of army and naval forces across the oceans. If the enemy has eyes with which to see our movements over the wide seas then he knows generally where we intend to land. He can then reinforce and redispose his forces and our problem is once more to strangle that movement. If the movement must come over the sea, so much the better for us, provided that he is unable to protect it. That is why we see island after island falling to American air, sea and land power. And so we set down one lesson, and it is that a nation must seek from the outset to fight its war where it can most easily and so swiftly strangle its enemy's power of manœuvre. In peace it must know how best to bring this about early in a war.

So in the Pacific and in Northern Europe to-day, our air bases are being thrust forward by the combined action of all three services, and bit by bit we are thereby tightening our grip on the enemy's capacity to move his fighting power to the decisive point of the land battle.

So much for the big picture of war to-day, and the influence on it of a new war device. Let us turn to pictures of the same scale in past history before we attempt to examine some of our smaller new pictures, our land battles of to-day. We are talking of power of manœuvre, so let us look at those devices that have been essentially mobile. Here are some of them:

The horse and the cavalry: the steam engine and the railway train: the petrol engine and the M.T. convoy and the tank.

Since Alexander the Great, in the 4th century B.C., first produced the new cavalry on the battlefield and thereby won his great victories, notably of Gaugamela and the Hydaspes, the wheel of war has turned many a circle between the supremacy of the mobile arm and of the infantry firearm. It is the history of cavalry and of its rise and fall in predominance that is the history of the power of manœuvre on land.

Hannibal at Trebbia and at Cannæ, a century after Alexander, confirmed the supremacy of the horseman. Before the infantry had time to recover, the Parthians perfected\* the precursor of our tank, the mobile firearm—the cavalry armed with bow and arrow. At Carrhæ in 53 B.C. Crassus' army was destroyed on the desert sands by this Parthian cavalry. First it shot the Roman horseman to pieces, then turned on the infantry. These sensibly retired into a town, a fortress, but then took the field again without a mobile arm, were beseiged in the open desert and there the Roman legions were destroyed. How much does this read like a modern battle of the Western Desert—Nov.-Dec. 1941, Gazala, 1942—as we shall mark later on in this article!

Four hundred years later Valens' infantry army was destroyed at Adrianople by the Gothic cavalry and it was not till 1356, at Poitiers, that the decline of the mobile arm again set in perhaps finally. This decline was brought about by the infantry's pike and by the infantry skill with the bow and arrow. Thereafter, firepower improved until in 1494 Charles VIII of France conquered Italy with a small infantry force, partly armed with the arquebus and with a quantity of mobile cannon. The Italian horsemen of the day would not face the fire of these weapons. With the mobile arm in the descendant power of manœuvre was being discounted. Somehow, it had to be restored.

So the cavalry now dropped its heavy armour, became more mobile and took to the sword. It found now that the infantry matchlock of Cromwell's day, its slow rate of fire, its consequent unwieldy infantry formation that made a change of front so very tedious and difficult, that these things gave it the chance to close. The infantry was chased like thistledown from the battlefield.

By the new flintlock and then by its squares it managed after another 150 years to come near to holding its own, till the invention of the percussion cap for the musket settled the matter and, by widening fronts in defence and so enabling flanks to be strongly sited, started once more to restrict the power of manœuvre of all armies. By 1914 that power of manœuvre was dead, killed by the

<sup>\*</sup> Alexander had used mounted bowmen in his army in the 4th Century B.C.

machine gun on the battlefield, by the huge, widely flung national mass armies which in size and battle requirements had outrun the capacity of horsed transport to keep them manœuvring, whose better fire weapons enabled them to stretch out their defensive fronts widely for hundreds of miles to impassable obstacles, but whose big mobile horsed and horse-fed arm lacked the power of manœuvre to obtain a decision by wide flank movement or deep penetration. The power to administer was lagging behind the greed of the weapons on the battlefield.

Almost worst of all, modern industry was producing such heavy defences and strong obstacles that no horse-drawn siege train big enough to start the hole for penetration could ever be concentrated. The siege train dropped out, only to be revived by British and Americans in Northern Europe in 1944 in a novel form.

In numbers lay security: Napoleon's battles of attrition were now wars of attrition. Signal communications, until the coming of W/T., were little better for a mobile force than in the days of Napoleon, but the forces to be controlled were immensely greater. One understands why Marshal Saxe in the 18th century held that no Commander could efficiently wield an army of more than 60,000 men.

The coming of the steam railway gave greater strategical mobility, but the system was too rigid to give power of manœuvre on the battlefield or beyond it. It helped Stonewall Jackson in his daring and rapid thrusts: it enabled the Prussians in 1870 to supply large forces on definite thrust lines to Paris: it enabled the second Moltke to launch a huge force on a continuous front but it did not enable him to manœuvre a mobile right wing on the battlefield. This ability had to await the coming of the motor vehicle and its general use.

The cavalry ride to Damascus at the end of the Palestine Campaign in 1918 was the worst thing that happened to the British Army for a century. It blinded our leaders to the truth, to the fact that a new war device had arrived. Fuller and Liddell Hart, avidly read by our enemies, strove with all their energy to direct attention to the armoured weapon and away from horseflesh, but they were up against the decisive success in Palestine and the ride to Damascus. They saw that on land the recovery of our power of manœuvre was now possible through the use of the new war devices, the tank supported by the petrol-driven lorry.

One can reasonably attribute the German failure in Russia to their having attempted to destroy the Russian army with an army that was in great part horsedrawn. Much of this army exerted so little power of manœuvre that it became more of an incubus than a help. With a powerful cross-country mobile force of armour and infantry and with a great mobile siege train and a properly-balanced air force, the Russian army should have been destroyed, a great part of it besieged and reduced in the field before relief could reach it.

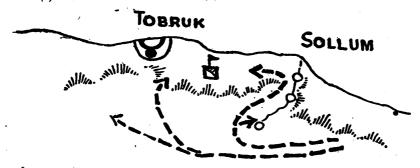
The petrol engine is the modern cavalryman's horse. It has started a new era in war as Philip of Macedon started a new era with Alexander's horsemen of Gaugamela and the Hydaspes. It is a separate study to determine where this invention and the advent of aircraft will lead us in war.

 $\mathsf{Digitized}\,\mathsf{by}\,Google$ 

This paper is only an introduction to that study.

Now let us look at a few battles of this war. We will select some that are clear-cut and well-defined. I apologise for giving no scales in the diagrams: time presses. Remember that these are only diagrams. British - - - Axis o—0—0.

(i) November-December, 1941—The Battle of Tobruk.



Rominel laid siege to Tobruk. To cover his siege opérations he occupied a field defensive position, virtually linear, with its right flank open. A field fortification is not designed to stand siege, for times and resources do not allow of its being munitioned and supplied to fight for a prolonged period once its flank is turned or its front penetrated. Turn to (a) at the beginning of this paper and then remember that in those days, in that open desert, (b) also obtained and so, with good staff work, did (c).

In our favour (a) and (c) already existed. But the Axis was more powerful than we were in the mobile arm. Before we could win a decisive battle we had to gain predominance over our enemy in (b). With these three in our favour we would finally gain absolute power of manœuvre and whittle Rommel down to impotence: with that, Rommel's infantry field defence would fall as the Roman infantry fell at Carrhæ, besieged by mobile troops. Thus, directly we threatened to lay siege to these infantry positions Rommel must try to relieve them: that is, he must dance to our tune. This would at once restrict his freedom of manœuvre and so his power of manœuvre.

• The British Commander, therefore, decided to stake every thing on getting this one thing (b) in his favour. Fortunately, Rommel had restricted the mobility of his armoured forces by so disposing them that they were almost penned in between the escarpment and the sea. General Auchinleck was going to destroy the enemy's mobile forces by every means at his disposal, air and land, starting with air attack to subdue his air power and to strike at his administrative means of retaining his power of manœuvre. For the rest, he mounted his infantry, and for nearly a month, completely mobile, he sought battle with the enemy's mobile armoured forces and, in the end, virtually destroyed them. Deprived of his arm of manœuvre, Rommel raised the siege of Tobruk and fled westwards. Our power of manœuvre had become absolute.

Behind him Rommel left his infantry of Carrhæ, which was besieged and reduced in the field.

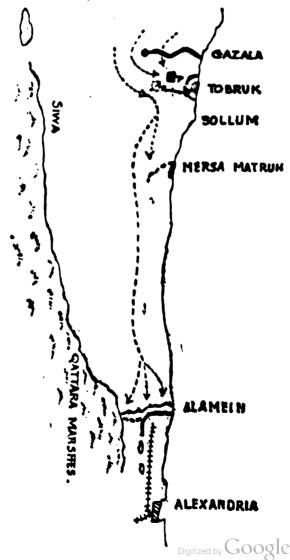
There are rules of what I may call "normal war," the war of forcesses, of sieges, of assaults and of mobile field armies.—whatever wise people may say. Rules are made to be broken, if one accepts the risk; and we are told that there are exceptions to rules.

Some rules of war change or disappear: some are cternal.

Here is one rule: Count the number of buttles that have been lost in this war through disregard of this rule. You cannot hold a tield defensive position if you are weaker, or become weaker, in the mobile arm.

What then are you, in these circumstances, to do? The answer is to get into a fortiess position. Here is a diagram which shows the battlefield of Gazala and the fortiess of Alamein on which General Auchinleck stopped the Axis rush for the Delta, and where, in October, 1942, was fought the great epic of the 9th Australian Division.

(ii) May July, 1012-Gazala to Alamein



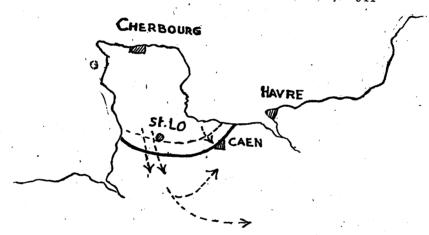
At Gazala we committed, our mobile arm, which was weaker than that of the enemy, to keep a linear field defence in position. A threat to the security of that position must of necessity draw our weaker mobile forces into battle. We had thus restricted the power of manœuvre of our reserves before the battle started,

Rommel, by a flank move, exerted the threat and brought our armour to battle and finally defeated it. A large part of our infantry force was cut off at Gazala and later on in the desert, and captured. The Tobruk fortress, lightly held, was stormed and taken. That any infantry got away from Gazala and Tobruk was solely due to the fact that some of them had their "horses" with them. Had this not been so the infantry would have been besieged in the field on the Gazala position and there destroyed.

Alamein was a fortress that held within it a large quantity of munitions and supplies.

A new power was coming into being, the heavy bomber, to take its part in the new siege train of a mobile army.

Here is a diagram of the battle of Normandy, 1944



The British and Americans had a powerful mobile force. The power of manœuvre of the whole German army had been reduced by tremendous air attacks against rail centres, bridges and other communications, and against all forms of mobile arms and motor vehicles. They tried to "seal off" our landings by getting into wide-flung field defences. Bradley employed the new weapon of air bombardment and burst through with a great mobile force: then the end came. The German northern wing was besieged at Falaise in the open field and virtually destroyed, its power of manœuvre gone. Patton, with absolute power of manœuvre, launched forward to what appears now to have been the limit of his administration at which point his mobility, and so his power of manœuvre died away.

And how do we stand to-day in November, 1944 on the Western Front? The German levee en masse has at last appeared. We find ourselves storming fortresses, one after the other. Has Germany herself become one great fortress? Are we now to scale

Digitized by Google

ns to rules. ernal,

-the war of

ies.—what-

en, if one

that have ou cannol r become

lo? The m which mein on ne Delta, f the 9th up all our ideas, with the vastness of to-day's war machines? Tothink of our armies on the Western front simply as a besiegingforce awaiting the time to deliver the assault on the fortress with our great assault siege, train and our heavy infantry? And after a burst into the fortress must we fight from city to city as our fathers fought from house to house when they broke into a fortified town? Must we starve out great areas of her country? Must we scale up our plans so that we aim to isolate and break into an area of Germany that will lead us closer to the ultimate thing, the complete strangulation of her power of manœuvre?

The answer to all this is "Yes." And we need not flinch from it for we have gone far already to neutralise Germany's power of manœuvre. Day by day her effort at resistance becomes more and more static; she cannot move, even if she possessed it, a mobile reserve of fighting power to gain a decisive success or even to prevent our gaining such a thing. The noose is tightening. If the German Army is to-day, November, 1944, static on a linear defensive system, the reason is that, lacking freedom of manœuvre, it cannot afford to allow us through the defences for it is in no state to stage a counterstroke to drive us out or to knock off the head of the attack. The German Army is lost.

What of Japan? The process of whittling down her power of manœuvre has only recently started, but she is the most vulnerable of all Powers, for she carried her fighting power over the seas with utterly insufficient air power to escort it to its destination. So weak is her power of manœuvre. It was an act of idiocy, manifesting the intellect of a moron, ever to enter a war as an island nation understanding little more than the four implications of air power that Germany had manifested to her in 1939-40: obviously not having grasped the vital need of all war, the retention of the mobility of a sufficient fighting power. To-day the tentacles of air power, moved by the sinews of sea and land power, are around Japan and she is being strangled: the life breath of war even now begins to whistle in her gullet: soon after we have strangled Germany we will suffocate Japan for ever, for the power of manœuvre is the breath of war.

Since I have rashly spoken of the rules of war, I must in all decency turn back to them though they hardly affect my subject in this paper. As I have said before, there are rules of normal war, so it is for me to collect a few for scrutiny.

Some are eternal and some apply to all forms of war. It remains for some good soldier to compile these rules: they must be short for the Platoon Commander to read and to digest. Here are just a few to start with. You will find recent illustrations for yourself, but I have suggested some in the brackets after certain rules. They are taken from "The Tiger Kills," as it is a book most of us will have lately read and may have by us.

Surprise must always be thorough. Throw every other consideration aside in order to achieve the type of surprise on which you have set your heart. (Akarit—1943; Surprise by silence. Medjerda, Tunisia—1943. Surprise by weight of fire at the time of day when it was likely to be most effective.

Never enter the hills in order to fight. Only enter them if you decide that there is an easier route through them to your objective than on the plains. Once you do enter them, go fast or the enemy will "seal up" ahead and a weakly held defile at once becomes formidable. (Matmata—1943.)

Never attack without surprise. (Medjerda—1943; Garci, where the attack was voluntarily stopped at once directly the sands of surprise ran out, and not renewed.)

If you attack at night, be "balanced" by daylight, i.e., either sufficiently on top of your enemy to be able to continue the attack without fear of being knocked off balance by counterattack or so settled that you can repel that counterattack. (Battle of Medjerda.)

What is almost impossible is often the best plan because you see that you can do it and the enemy thinks you can't.

These are a few of the more obvious rules of war; it is now your turn to produce a few less well-known rules. Try this bit from Marshal Saxe as an introduction to one of your rules!

"When you are in the presence of the enemy under arms and you see the soldiers changing shirts, it is certain that you are going to be attacked, because they put on all their shirts, one over the other, in order not to lose any...."

### A Youthful Team

"Twelve men whose average age is only 42 are planning the air offensive against the Germans in France. Only three are over 45; five are under 40; and the youngest is 28.

"Air Vice Marshal Horace Wigglesworth, Senior Air Staff Officer, is 48; Major General Hoyt Vanderberg, the American Deputy C.-in-C., is 45; Lieutenant-General L. Brereton, commanding the 9th U.S.A.A.F., is 54; Brigadier-General Richard Nugent, of Advanced H.Q., is 41; Brigadier-General Frederick Smith, Deputy to Air Vice Marshal Wigglesworth, is 36. Air Marshal Sir Arthur Coningham. C.-in-C., R.A.F., 2nd Tactical Air Force, is 49; the Group Commanders, Air Vice Marshals Basil Embry and Harry Broadhurst, are 42 and 38. Brigadier-General Samuel Anderson, C.-in-C., 9th Bomber Command, is 38, and Major-General E. R. Quesada, who commands the 9th Fighter Command, is 39.

"The youngest two of the team are Brigadier-General Herbert Thatcher, who at 34 is commanding a bomber wing, and Brigadier-General Richard Sanders, aged 28, administration officer, 9th Bomber Command."—"The Times."

### A "PACK PONY" BALLAD

#### By H. F. H.

I took down the Urdu of this ballad after hearing it sung by our pack-pony-walas during the tramp to Sissu. They chanted it to a shrill warbling air that was rather attractive, and I suspect they chose it because the journey described in the first two verses was the very same that we were making. Ajri appears to have been a village Delilah, and the singer a company clerk whom she cleaned out of his money. In the first two verses he describes the journey he wanted her to take. In the third verse, he tells how she had robbed him, and how he once got his own back by paying her in base coin. In the fourth verse, she taunts him and tells him to be off and join the Army. In the last verse, the infatuated fellow returns to his pleading. My translation is literal line for line.

URDU

ENGLISH.

Chuki lena Ajri, chuki lena; Kyelong gara lo sare chuki lena. Dekhi lena, Ajri, dekhi lena Sissu wala dak bungli dekhi lena.

71

Dekhi lena, Ajri, dekhi lena, Gondli wali sarai jo chali jana.

Dekhi lena Ajri, dekhi lena,

Chamba ki chakána dekhi lena.

III

Tu luti lena, tu luti lena,

Company-wála bábu tu luti lena.

Sissu walla dak bungli dekhi Pi lena, Ajri, pi lena ho, Mushk ki sharáb pi pi lena. Tu thági ho, Ajri, tu thági ho Khote rupie kane tu thági ho

Meri ján, Ajri, meri jána ho. Tere fikr men meri jána ho. Meri ján, Ajri, meri jána ho Rangruti di bharti jo chali jána ho.

 $\boldsymbol{\mathcal{V}}$ 

Chadi dena, Ajri, chadi dena,

Ek din anna kane babu chadi dena. Pi lena, Ajri, pi lena ho, Kyelong gara pi pi lena ho. Come, Ajri, come away with me To Kyelong and there abide. See. Ajri, that's the road you see

Sissu Dak Bungalow beside.

And look, my Ajri, look, we two At Gondla Inn will take our rest,

And after, Ajri, see the view

Of Chamba, of all vales the best!

III

You robbed me, robbed the head-babu.

(Drink Ajri, drink this wine so sweet).

But, Ajri, who was tricked but you.

For my fair coin was counterfeit.

IV

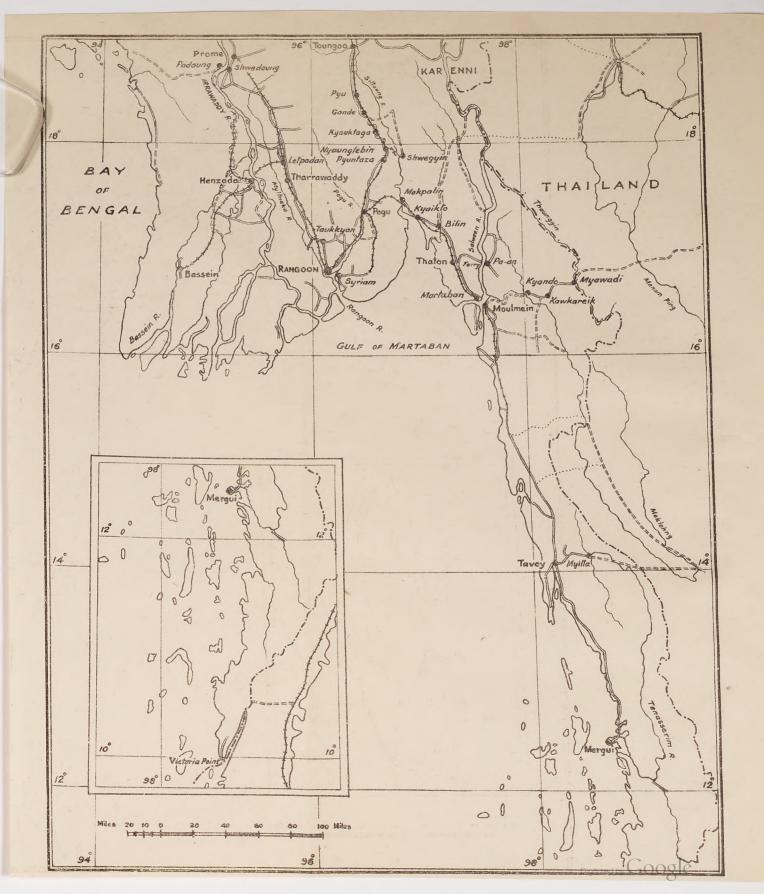
Ah! Ajri, I can ne'er exist Without vou if you stay unkind. I surely die. "Nay, go enlist, Better a soldier's death to find."

V

Break, Ajri, break to-day the link
That binds you to your home so dear.
At Kyelong, my Airi, drink
Oh drink, the wine that waits

Digitized by Google

you there.



# THE FIRST BURMA CAMPAIGN-I\*

By COLONEL E. C. V. FOUCAR

THE FIRST Burma Campaign gave rise to considerable criticism, much of it hasty and uninformed; but not yet can there be a full discussion of our preparations and strategy, nor of many other matters of importance.

This narrative avoids controversial subjects and is mainly an outline of the actual fighting. For a proper understanding of the story, however, it is necessary to sketch the military appreciation of the situation and the state of our forces in the country on the outbreak of hostilities with Japan.

Of the political situation it is proposed to say nothing, save that there were men in Burma opposed to British rule, and that a number of Burmese who later formed the nucleus of the so-called "Burma Independence Army" assisted the Japanese. Undoubtedly the bulk of the population was primarily concerned in avoiding the repercussions of war.

The eastern frontier of Burma, protected by rugged jungleclad mountains forward of the unbridged Salween, was considered a formidable natural barrier to invasion. The only motor road from Thailand crossed the frontier at Tachilek in Kengtung and, traversing the Southern Shan States, joined the main Rangoon-Mandalay road at Meiktila. It was thought that a Japanese invasion in force, if attempted at all, must follow this long road rather than the few short but difficult routes further to the south.

At that time the mobility of Japanese armies was not realised, otherwise the great advantages of an immediate thrust at Rangoon would not have been 'discounted. A successful southern attack must sever our forces from their only base, Rangoon; it would prevent entry of supplies and reinforcements from India; it would cur China's lifeline, the Burma Road; and the moral effect on the people of Burma must be great.

In 1941 the Empire, desperately hard pressed, remained very short of essential weapons and equipment. The United Kingdom and active theatres of war naturally received priority. Grave risks had to be taken somewhere and, quite rightly, were allocated to the Far East. The result in Burma was that our small forces were ill equipped. For the same reason India, although she had great reserves of men, was unable to provide adequate help or reinforcements. Men cannot fight, or trained to fight, without weapons.

The greater part of Burma's regular Army comprised battalions of the Burma Rifles, many of them new wartime raisings. In early December 1941 there were four Brigades in Burma, two of them Indian Brigades. Three of these Brigades formed the Burma

<sup>\*</sup>The present campaign now being fought in Burma lends added interest to this authoritative account of the first Burma Campaign, written by a contributor who has made a close study of the subject, and who writes with first-hand knowledge.



Division commanded by Major-General J. Bruce Scott, M.C. There were, in addition, a few battalions on internal security, the semicivil units of the Burma Frontier Force and Burma Military Police, and some Auxiliary Force units. There were only two British Battalions, the Glosters and the K.O.Y.L.I.

In the early stages of the campaign Headquarters of the 17th Indian Division (Major-General J. G. Smyth, V.C.) arrived. So, too, did three additional Indian Brigades, 4 British Battalions, and the Armoured Brigade. This last was a seasoned formation; but many of the Burman and Indian troops were young and by no means fully trained. Early losses in men and material were heavy, and after the evacuation of Rangoon could not be replaced. In the field were never more than two fast dwindling Divisions and the hard-worked Armoured Brigade.

Behind the fighting front the undermanned military administrative machine faced an equally uphill task. The unending jugglery of providing almost non-existent arms and vehicles; the maintenance of essential services such as railways, river transport, telephones and telegraphs; the immense task of feeding the Chinese Armies with no organisation of their own for this purpose, were only some of many urgent problems. All available civilians, office managers and their assistants, miners, planters, joined up to help. Makeshifts and improvisations were the order of the day. They worked, and the Army was kept in being. This account can do no more than record these facts, and pay tribute to Major-General Goddard, in charge of Administration, and the men under him.

A word about the topography of Burma. The great rivers, the Irrawaddy and the Salween, flow south. Between them runs the lesser Sittang. The Chindwin, main tributary of the Irrawaddy, flows through the thinly populated forests and mountains bordering Assam; turning south-east it joins its parent stream below Mandalay.

Mountains form every land frontier, and thrusting south from the Himalayan massif like the open fingers of a giant hand long ranges separate the rivers just mentioned. In 1941 the vast jungles-between these river valleys were roadless. In fact, generally speaking and save for the Shan States where communications were better, all the main roads followed the Irrawaddy and Sittang valleys. The main railway lines were similarly disposed. There was no road to India, only a few tracks crossing the Assam border west of the Chindwin.

In the Irrawaddy Delta and in the Sittang and Salween valleys are flat expanses of paddy land. In Central Burma lies the Dry zone. Here, beside the Irrawaddy and amidst barren hills deeply scored by *nullahs*, in 1941 towered the gaunt derricks of the oil-fields.

The campaign opened quietly. The Japanese occupied Victoria Point, the southern extremity of Burma, and small enemy forces displayed some activity in the region north of the Point. Tavoy and Mergui were bombed.

The main incidents of this early period were the air attacks on Rangoon on December 23 and 25, 1941. They did little military damage, but the first raid caused very heavy civilian casualties, resulting in the immediate flight of labour and the paralysis of the port. Thenceforward until its final evacuation the city functioned uncertainly. Our handful of A.V.G. and R.A.F. fighters had taken a heavy toll of the raiders, and shattered aircraft littered the paddy fields and jungles. Not again in daylight did the Japanese penetrate the air defences of Rangoon.

On December 27 Lieutenant-General T. J. Hutton, C.B., M.C., assumed command off the Army in Burma. Meanwhile, it became evident that the enemy was preparing to invade-Tenasserim. Our reinforcements entering the country went tothat area, and formations covering the Shan States were thinned out, every available unit being brought south. For the protection of more than 1,000 miles of frontier contiguous to Indo-China and Thailand our forces were wholly inadequate, and only the obvious danger points could be watched.

Towards the end of December the first troops of the Chinese-VI Army entered the Shan States, taking over the Mekong river sector. More units followed in January. Subsequent arrangements ensured that the entire Chinese VI and V Armies, already earmarked, should protect the Shan States, Karenni and, the Sittang valley about Toungoo, and so release the Imperial forces for employment in south Burma.

The enormous distances to be covered, lack of transport, and the limited capacity of the Burma Road, the only real line of communication with China, made these movements a lengthy undertaking. The Chinese Armies in Burma were under the British Commander. Their own Commander was Lieutenant-General J. Stilwell of the United States Army, with whom was associated. General Lo of the Chinese forces. There was always the closest cooperation between General Stilwell and our own command.

In southern Burma, in early January 1942, 17th Division held Mergui, Tavoy, Moulmein, and Kawkareik. Burma Frontier Force columns patrolled the Thai border. At the first three places named were important airfields on the route to Malaya and Australia; but a glance at the map indicates the difficulty of defending the Tavoy-Mergui area with its poor land communications with the rest of Burma.

On January 15 the Japanese began an advance on Tavoy, having crossed the frontier by a little used track east of Myitta. For the first time our troops in Burma experienced the jungle tactics of the enemy and were unable to offer serious opposition. Tavoy fell on the morning of January 19. The garrison of Mergui was thus isolated, and steps were at once taken to withdraw it by sea after the carrying out of demolitions.

Our force forward of Kawkareik, recently increased to a Brigade in strength, covered the road through the Dawna mountains to the frontier village of Myawadi. Here before dawn on January 20, the Japanese 55th Division advanced on a broad front.

At once the situation became confused. Two forward companies were isolated, and south of the road an enemy column with transport elephants made good progress along jungle paths. Hostile aircraft were active, heavily bombing our main positions. We fell back towards Kawkareik.

If the Japanese gained the open plain west of the Dawnas our Brigade would be cut off, and the Commander had been ordered not to let this happen. Accordingly, on the night of January 21/22 he withdrew from Kawkareik. At the crucial moment the primitive vehicle ferry across the Haungtharaw river became blocked by a truck which slipped into the stream. This effectively cut the only motorable road, and necessitated the abandonment and destruction of all vehicles and quantities of equipment and stores.

The Brigade then crossed the Gyaing river and was later carried by steamers to Martaban. Some days afterwards it was rejoined by the two missing forward companies. These had fought their way back.

The next Japanese objective was Moulmein, the port on the cast bank of the Salween just below its confluence with the Gyaing and Ataran rivers. Long and narrow, the town is pinned to the river by The Ridge. This pagoda-crowned height dominates Moulmein.

The defence was entrusted to a Brigade Group made up of a Mountain Battery, a troop of a Light Anti-Aircraft Battery, three Battalions (less two Companies) of Burma Rifles, and a Battalion of the 12th Frontier Force Regiment. The perimeter, a long parallelogram, included the waterfront on the west and north, ran east of the Ridge, and from the southern end of the Ridge went back to the Salween. The airfield, surrounded by jungle and rubber plantations, lay outside the perimeter south-cast of the town. It was held by a Burma F. F. detachment.

Communication with Martaban, some two and a half miles upstream on the west bank of the treacherous river, was difficult. The steamers were manned by civilian crews. These factors added to the problems of defence.

The attack opened on the morning of January 30 with a typical Japanese attempt at a surprise. Four of our own lorries, previously captured by the enemy, rapidly approached the road block in the southern face of the perimeter. Suddenly fire was opened from the vehicles; but our troops were on the alert, and the ruse failed. A heavy general attack from the south and east then quickly developed. On the east the Japanese made some progress, but were halted by the 12th Frontier Force Regiment covering the Ridge. The Mountain Battery gave our forward troops excellent support, also assisting the hard-pressed garrison of the isolated airfield.

Towards nightfall the Japanese redoubled their efforts to take the Ridge, but were repeatedly repulsed. Close fighting continued, and to strengthen his position the Brigade Commander withdrew the southern face of the perimeter by about 1,000 yards. The gallant defenders of the airfield were recalled.



Before dawn of January 31 the situation deteriorated. The enemy had landed at the northern end of the town and was pressing our Brigade on three fronts. Consequently, a withdrawal across the river was ordered.

anies

trans-

ostile

We

our

lered

1/22

rimi-

d bv

the des-

ater

re-

ght

the ing

he

Parties of Japanese broke through our lines. Determined counter-attacks flung them back. Keeping the box of their defences closed, our troops fell back fighting through the streets to the jetties. Under fire the greater part of them embarked. The river steamers were shelled and machine-gunned as they crossed the Salween but, luckily, hostile aircraft confined their attentions to Martaban.

In south Burma we were now on the line of the Salween, a strong position if adequately held. 17th Division was insufficient for this purpose, yet we could not afford to yield ground. Time must be gained for the arrival in Rangoon of reinforcements. The protection of the port required the maintenance of the forward warning system ensuring the safety of our small air force based on Mingaladon and its satellite airfields round Rangoon.

The lower reaches of the Salween and the coastal belt were the danger points. Here the enemy could gain the plain between the mountains of Karenni and the sea. This. plain is mainly paddy land cut by many tidal creeks. Inland, towards Karenni, the terrain becomes rugged, much of it covered by dense jungle. Across the plain runs the Rangoon-Martaban railway. In 1942 a motor road joined Martaban and Kyaikto, whence to the Sittang railway bridge a road was projected. It was The bridge itself was planked then merely an unsurfaced track. over to carry our motor transport. This road and railway formed our line of communication, the Sittang bridge being the vital link with Rangoon and central Burma.

We held Martaban and Kuzeik, the latter being opposite Paan and an important ferrying point. Patrols watched the river and coastal belt, but could not prevent infiltration. Japanese bombers were active over Kuzeik and Martaban, and our Martaban positions were frequently shelled from Moulmein. Our own aircraft harassed hostile concentrations.

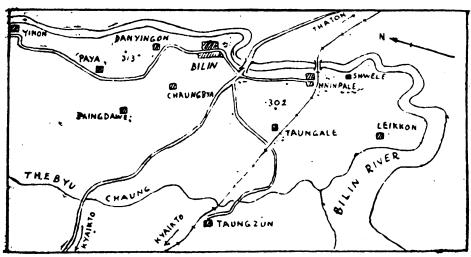
On February 10 the enemy made landings in force on the coast west of Martaban, establishing a block on the road between that place and Thaton. Near Martaban a company of the 7th Gurkha Rifles routed a body of Japanese; but the Martaban positions had been by-passed, and that night the garrison marched across country to rejoin its Brigade at Thaton.

A Battalion of the 10th Baluch Regiment held Kuzeik. Crossing the river both above and below the Battalion, the Japanese on the night of February 11/12 launched a general attack on the Kuzeik position. The enemy strength was estimated at a regiment. Throughout the hours of darkness bitter fighting continued. Young and untried, the Baluchis acquitted themselves magnificently in an epic battle until sheer weight of numbers overwhelmed them shortly after daybreak. Some seventy officers and men escaped death or capture.

There were now signs that the Japanese were moving round our left flank along jungle tracks north-east of the main road. Our forward Brigade fell back from Thaton, and 17th Division took up a position behind the Bilin river.

A Brigade group held a 7-mile front from Leikkon on the river estuary through Bilin to the north of Danyingon village. On the right, or southern, flank the 9th Jats kept the sector from Shwele to just south of Bilin where a Battalion of Burma Rifles was stationed. The line was then continued by the K.O.Y.L.I. to a point north of Danyingon, with a detached company further to the north at Yinon. South of Shwele the front was held by patrols, whilst east of the river the 17th Dogra Regiment and a company of Burma Rifles covered the main road from Thaton and the undamaged road bridge. Burma Frontier Force columns watched the northern flank and the coast. The 7th Gurkha Rifles were in Brigade Reserve.

Behind the main position the Gurkha Brigade was in Divisional Reserve astride the main road near the Thebyu Chaung. The third Brigade held Kyaikto. The river was fordable in many places, and except for the coastal strip the country was hilly and covered with large patches of jungle and rubber. For the limited number of troops available the line was not easy to defend.



BILIN RIVER LINE [NOT TO SCALE.]

Shortly after we were in position on the morning of February 16 the enemy, who had moved fast, was in contact with the K.O.Y.L.I. in Danyingon. Despite our repeated attacks the village could not be cleared and the line was established to the west.

Next morning a Battalion of the 7th Gurkhas assaulted the village and carried most of it. Pockets of resistance remained, the Japanese also holding Point 313, a dominating height to the north west. That afternoon the 4th Gurkha Rifles attacked with artillery and mortar support. They captured Point 313, which thereafter remained in our hands and made an excellent O.P. for our guns.

The heavy fighting in the north left the Brigade without reserves, and that evening the 17th Dogras were withdrawn across the river. They were engaged with the enemy at the time, and the movement was carried out under heavy and accurate mortar fire. The road bridge was then blown. After nightfall parties of the enemy crossed the river and entered Bilin.

It had become apparent that a single Brigade Headquarters could not control the extended jungle-broken front. The 5th Royal Gurkha Rifles had come forward, and on the night of February 17/18 the line was reorganised in two Brigade sectors.

On February 18 the situation deteriorated. Carriers proceeding to Yinon ran into a block half a mile south of Paya, and determined attacks failed to clear the road. From Point 313 bodies of men could be seen moving west through the jungle. Behind the southern flank the enemy landed west of the estuary, and along the whole front we were closely engaged.

The Japanese plan was to pin our forces to the Bilin line with their 55th Division. Meanwhile, their newly-arrived 33rd Division, moving through the gap between Point 313 and Yinon, struck for the vital Sittang bridge.

To counter the northern outflanking move the 12th Frontier Force Regiment was brought up from Kyaikto to sweep the hills from Paingdawe towards Paya village. This it did on the morning of February 19, and in face of heavy opposition occupied a ridge overlooking Paya. Later it was ordered to withdraw to a position about Chaungbya.

In the coastal area the 5th Royal Gurkha Rifles were that day engaged with the enemy at Taungzun and near Taungale, villages on the railway much behind our line. The 9th Jats, south of Bilin, found the enemy holding Point 302 west of Hninpale and behind them.

With both flanks seriously threatened, and with no reserves left, it was time for 17th Division to withdraw. Behind it lay the far stronger line of the Sittang, where open paddy lands provided a good defensible position. Reinforcements, including tanks, were expected. Therefore, to continue to stand on the Bilin against superior numbers was clearly unwise.

The danger of the Sittang position was its proximity to Rangoon. Both the main road and railway from Rangoon to Mandalay ran close to the river. In addition, our aircraft could not then count on warning against hostile raiders. In the Bilin battle they had given our ground forces splendid assistance.

On the night of February 19 orders were issued for a general withdrawal before first light next morning. Fighting continued all night, but contact was successfully broken, although the 9th Jats who were surrounded by the enemy were unable to get clear until mid-day. The two Brigades fell back on Kyaikto. From Yinon the K.O.Y.L.I. company marched across country on receiving an order dropped by aircraft.

Before dawn on February 21 a sudden attack was made on Kyaikto, where Divisional Headquarters still remained. The attack was easily beaten off, but it indicated that the Japanese were pressing forward. Their 33rd Division, unhampered by transport, was then advancing by jungle tracks well north of Kyaikto.

We now suffered from the restricting effect of our motor transport. Uneven and already several inches deep in dust, the 15-mile long track between Kyaikto and the Sittang was a bottleneck. Cut brushwood, recently cleared from the road trace and flung back to the fringes of the jungle, made a formidable enclosing obstacle. Along this vulnerable route 17th Division began to move on February 21.

That afternoon and evening our troops and transport were heavily bombed. There were many casualties, mules were stampeded, motor vehicles were wrecked, and the track was cratered. Considerable disorganisation resulted. To add to the trials of our men it was a day of intense heat, dense clouds of dust enveloped the track, and there was a shortage of water.

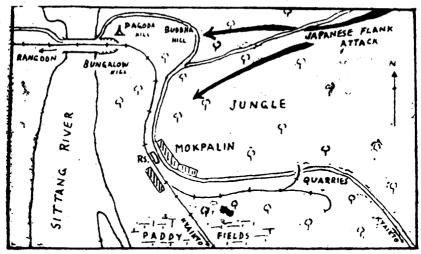
That night a covering force held the Sittang bridgehead, whilst the remainder of the Division was spread along the road between the Mokpalin quarries, some three miles short of the bridge, and the Boyagyi rubber estate just west of Kyaikto. At Boyagyi were two Brigades. The intention was that the Division should cross the Sittang next day.

Burma Frontier Force columns covering the northern flank on that same afternoon of February 21 were in action. The columns were out of touch with the Division and no information of these operations was received. Hence, although a Japanese outflanking move was suspected, there was no definite knowledge of it.

Late that night Divisional Headquarters ordered the two rear Brigades to march as early as possible next morning. The Commanders had already decided on this, but their movements necessarily depended on that of the troops and the mass of transport ahead. Vehicles began to cross the bridge that night. Progress was slow; then the over-turning of a lorry on the bridge stopped all traffic for three hours, and a growing column of double banked and halted transport extended east for some miles.

To understand subsequent events a brief description of the area is necessary. Save for Mokpalin village itself and an expanse of paddy land to the south, the ground on the east of the Sittang was jungle covered. Leaving Kyaikto, the track and railway south of it diverged to meet again at Mokpalin about a mile and a half south-east of the bridge. The two routes run side by side for about a mile until the railway turned west to approach the river by a cutting through a bluff, Pagoda Hill. The track, sweeping widely north-east and then west, rejoined the railway at the bridge. The sweep of the road enclosed the bluff, Pagoda Hill, and Buddha Hill to the east of it. South of the railway cutting was another rise, Bungalow Hill. Just above the bridge a steamer ferry had been established for the transport of animals. The river,

tidal and fast flowing, was five hundred yards wide at the bridge and broadened immediately below it.



SITTANG BRIDGE AREA [NOT TO SCALE]

Divisional Headquarters, the 4th Gurkha Rifles, and Headquarters of the Gurkha Brigade were across the Sittang by dawn. Shortly afterwards the Japanese, breaking out of the jungle to the north-east, unexpectedly attacked the bridgehead. The attack went through the covering force, overran an Advanced Dressing Station, and almost reached the river. Two companies of the 12th Frontier Force Regiment at once counter-attacked and retook the bridgehead defences.

Much disorganisation had been caused, and the situation was then so serious that the destruction of the ferry steamers and of 300 sampans assembled on the west bank was ordered. Whilst all this was happening other parties of Japanese thrust south to attack our few troops and the now stationary transport in Mokpalin.

At 09.30 a third attack developed against our near Brigade at that time some five miles east of Mokpalin. Here a block had been put down, and with the cut brushwood blocking the jungle on each side of the track our troops were in an unenviable position. The whole Brigade came under small arms and mortar fire. Pushing into the jungle our men sought to engage the enemy. There was confused fighting in the dense undergrowth as the column strove to continue its advance. Three distinct actions were in progress, at the bridgehead, in Mokpalin, and on the track to the east. In all these the Japanese 33rd Division appears to have been engaged.

The bridgehead force, augmented by all available troops, now comprised the 12th Frontier Force Regiment, the 4th Gurkha Rifles, the very weak 10th Baluchis, the remnants of a Burma Rifles Battalion, and a company of the Duke of Wellington's Regiment. Its positions covered the high ground round the rail-

way cutting and included Bungalow Hill.

In the earlier lighting in Mokpalin the 3rd Gurkha Rifles and the 5th Royal Gurkha Rifles played the main part. At the outset the 5th Gurkhas were the only infantry near the village and cleared it in splendid style. Without artillery support and with a single mortar in action, two companies of the Battalion then assaulted Buddha Hill. Under intense mortar fire they could do no more than hold the ground north of the village.

Some of our guns and the 3rd Gutkhas arrived, and another attack was planned. Our guns were grouped near the Railwav Station. No wireless communication with Divisional Headquarters west of the Sittang could be established, and this lack of communication was to have serious consequences throughout the Sittang battle. With artillers support, the 3rd Gurkhas, intending to clear the road and break through to the bridgehead, attacked Buddha and Pagoda hills. Unfortunately, part of the artillers concentration fell on our own bridgehead positions which under orders were temporarily evacuated.

Making good use of bayonets and automatic guns the grd Gurkha Rifles stormed Buddha Hill. Two platoons on the left broke through to the bridgehead. The Japanese then threw in reinforcements, sealed off the bridgehead, and isolated Buddha Hill from Mokpalin. Despite this the forward companies of the 3rd Gurkhas, every British officer a casualty, clung to their positions.

Towards evening the rear Brigades arrived in the village. The attack on the track to the east had been beaten off, but at heavy cost. In this fighting the 7th Gurkhas, the 17th Dogras and the Duke of Wellington's participated.

Following up along the track and railway the Japanese gard and 55th Divisions now closed in, and that night the situation round Mokpalin was most confused. Many units had become intermingled, but a perimeter about the village was firmly held. Fighting went on all night. There was no communication with Buddha Hill or the bridgehead, although some stragglers made their way into the latter by following the river bank.

At the bridgehead nothing was known of the situation in Mokpalin. Enemy pressure was maintained against the defences all night, and it was doubted if we could hold the bridge against a dawn attack. There were almost no troops west of the river, and the Japanese capture of the bridge would result in a major disaster. Accordingly, covering troops were withdrawn and the bridge was blown at 0530 hours on February 23. The effect of the tremendous explosions was remarkable. For a brief period there was a dead silence. Then the Japanese broke into excited shouts and chatter, and the battle continued.

During the morning aircraft bombed our positions and the massed transport in Mokpalin. Large fires broke out. Still closely engaged, our troops were now exhausted: the 3rd Gurkhas on Buddha Hill, with no ammunition but fighting to the last, had been overrun. The Brigadier in command decided that an attempt must be made to cross the river that day. Orders to this effect were sured, but could not be communicated to some forward posts.

Guns were disabled, and other weapons were thrown into the Sittang. Bamboos, petrol tins, and all available articles were utilised for building rafts, and on these as many as possible of the wounded were got away. Then the greater part of our troops fell back and began to swim the river under heavy fire. Many displayed great heroism in assisting the wounded and those who could not swim. Not a few failed to make the crossing. From the area of the broken bridge the Japanese had withdrawn, and here an officer and two N.C.Os. of the Duke of Wellington's Regiment swam the river. Returning with ropes they constructed a life line between the piers of the bridge. Themselves remaining in the river under fire, these three men then assisted large numbers to cross to the west bank.

Isolated posts continued to fight the Japanese, and in this final phase men of the K.O.Y.L.I. and Burma Rifles were conspicuous. Later these posts were also withdrawn, and more of our men crossed the Sittang. Resistance on the east bank finally ceased on the morning of February 24.

We had received a staggering blow, and could not now hold the river line. 17th Division was temporarily an unarmed body without transport. It had only the few guns brought across the bridge, whilst losses in mortars, automatic weapons, and rifles were very high. Many men were without boots or clothes. Had the Japanese been able to follow up their successes at once they must have gained an overwhelming victory. But their casualties were severe, and they paused to reorganise.

The Armoured Brigade had landed in Rangoon on February 21. With the Cameronians and the West Yorkshire Regiment it was rushed to the Pegu area, where it covered the reorganisation of 17th Division. Once again we had a small force quite inadequate for its task. This was made no easier by the masses of Indian refugees passing through our lines, and the depredations of gangs of Burmese. Much north of Pegu the Burma Division, relieved in the Shan States by the Chinese VI Army, was concentrating in the Nyaunglebin area to cover the main road and railway to Mandalay.

There was a gap of over 20 miles between our two forces, and the enemy was not slow to take advantage of this. By February 27 he was across the Sittang. Soon he had well defended roadblocks at each end of the gap. He did not like our tanks, and suffered several hard knocks from the Royal Tank Regiment, 7th Own Hussars and their supporting troops. This delayed his advance on Perm.

However, Japanese columns marching by night through the gap gained the dense forests of the Pegu Yomas, the range separating the Irrawaddy and Sittang valleys. Moving by jungle paths the enemy then struck south-west towards Rangoon, our patrols and aircraft observing this advance. In the Rangoon river estuary parties of Burmese under Japanese officers had landed; other bodies of Burmese were creating disorder.

These facts all indicated that our small southern force could not cover Rangoon for long. The few R.A.F. bombers had already moved to Magwe in Upper Burma, using landing strips near Rangoon as forward bases. Fighter aircraft of the R.A.F. and A.V.G. continued to protect the port where, in the first days of March, an Indian Infantry Brigade disembarked.

At this juncture, on March 5, Lieutenant-General Sir Harold Alexander arrived to take command of the Army in Burma. He had been appointed by the War Cabinet in view of the proposed great expansion of our Burma forces, and was promoted General early in April. Lieutenant-General Hutton remained as C.G.S.

On March 6 General Alexander ordered the carrying out next day of the denial scheme and the final evacuation of Rangoon. The general evacuation of civilians had already been effected on February 21. The Rangoon garrison, 17th Division, and the Armoured Brigade were to fall back to the Irrawaddy valley along the road to Prome, whilst advanced Army Headquarters, still in Rangoon, would join rear Headquarters at Maymyo.

Heavy fighting had broken out round Pegu on the morning of March 6, assaults on the town being made from the north and west. The Gurkha Brigade, with the Cameronians and the West Yorkshire Regiment, held the town. The area round the railway station was bitterly contested, hand to hand fighting going on all day. Here the British battalions and the 4th and 7th Gurkha Rifles were engaged. Four miles south of the town, in a patch of jungle astride the main road to Rangoon, the enemy set up a most effective block.

North of Pegu the 7th Hussars were fighting a separate action, supported by a company of the West Yorkshire Regiment. Four guns were captured and, later, three enemy tanks destroyed. It was long before Japanese armour again sought conflict with our fighting vehicles. In the afternoon the 7th Hussars concentrated in Pegu, and the imminent evacuation of Rangoon now required a general withdrawal. This was planned to begin early next morning. The road block to the south was to be attacked as soon as the ground mist had cleared.

The road bridges over the river and railway in the town were blown at first light, and troops and transport moved out. The rearguard was at once attacked, but held off the enemy. Soon, however, the whole column came under mortar and machine gun fire from positions west of the road. Japanese snipers were posted in trees and house tops, and parties of the enemy broke through to the road. A fine bayonet charge by the 4th Gurkhas, led by their Commander, eased the situation.

The guns of the R.H.A. battery attached to the Armoured Brigade concentrated on the block, then the 7th Hussars with a company of the West Yorkshire Regiment stormed forward. Some transport followed: but the road was packed with derelict vehicles, and there was a delay. Having forced the block the tanks and guns went on. The enemy closed in and re-established his position. Unsupported attacks had now to be made by the infantry and finally, in the afternoon, the block was again cleared by companies of the Cameronians and West Yorkshire Regiment. It had been a costly battle.

On that day, March 7, the oil refineries and installations at Syriam and elsewhere were demolished, and in Rangoon the telegraph office, telephone exchange, and other public and port utilities were destroyed. As the last demolition parties withdrew by road and ship the city lay deserted beneath a great pall of smoke.

The abandonment of Rangoon was a catastrophe of the first order. Although necessary if we were to save our forces and continue the struggle in Burma, it meant the severance of our communications with India and the loss of many base facilities unavailable elsewhere in the country. Henceforth we had to rely for additional supplies and men on the few transport aircraft in India. Work had been begun on the construction of a road between Kalewa on the Chindwin and Imphal in Manipur State, but it would be many months before it could be brought into use.

Fortunately, Burma had large stocks of rice and other foodstuffs, and sufficient of these existed or had been moved upcountry to maintain our troops and the Chinese for several months. To counter the loss of the Rangoon refineries, the production of petrol and lubricants on the oilfields themselves was stepped up. As long as we held the oilfields our motor transport could continue to operate.

Marching through the Pegu Yomas the Japanese reached the Prome Road on the morning of March 7, and north of Taukkyan, near Milestone 26 from Rangoon, the road was blocked. As usual this was in a stretch of jungle. Army Headquarters and the Rangoon garrison halted at Taukkyan. At that time 17th Division and the greater part of the Armoured Brigade was at Hlegu, seven miles to the east, or in action near Pegu.

The situation was very serious, and there were not many fighting troops available. Two tanks of the Queen's Own Hussars attempted to break the block but were compelled to fall back. Then, supported by the few guns present and two A.F.V's., two platoons of the Glosters went forward. Heavy mortar and antitank fire knocked out the carriers, and snipers posted in trees stopped our infantry. Two further attacks by the 13th Frontier Force Rifles also failed.

It was now 1730 hours, but already growing dark under the vast smoke cloud caused by the burning refineries. Army Head-quarters and the troops at Taukkyan accordingly leaguered in a rubber plantation, and General Alexander issued orders for an attack in force by infantry and tanks at first light next morning.

However, before this attack had time to develop, it was found that the block had been abandoned by the enemy. The remaining snipers and nuisance parties gave little trouble. On the other hand, enemy aircraft were active and some of our units suffered considerably.

Why the Japanese abandoned the block remains a mystery. Possibly it was held only to protect their left flank as they swung south for Rangoon; and there seems little doubt that when our troops were marching north the Japanese west of the Prome road were moving in the opposite direction. It may be that they thought we intended a withdrawal by sea and that the best means of preventing this was to seize Rangoon.

The Japanese advance on Rangoon, like the earlier dash for the Sittang river and the initial moves across the Burma frontier, displayed a remarkable knowledge of unfrequented jungle tracks. This same knowledge was to be exhibited again in the course of the campaign. It could only have been the result of careful pre-

By March 10 the Armoured Brigade and 17th Division, now commanded by Major-General D. T. Cowan, were reorganising in the Tharrawaddy area, and in the ensuing fortnight fell back towards Prome. During this period the Royal Inniskilling Fusiliers, flown in from India, joined 17th Division, and the

paration and assistance, enforced or otherwise, of men on the spot.

Glosters became its reconnaissance unit. As such the Battalio 1 distinguished itself in an attack on Letpadan when the Japanese were driven from the town, and in a further successful engage-

ment at Paungde.

Another heartening minor operation was carried out on the Irrawaddy, which was patrolled by a Royal Marine detachment in a flotilla of launches. This detachment accompanied a Commando force to Henzada, where a landing party encountered a force of Burmese tebels and inflicted heavy casualties on it.

Our withdrawal towards Prome was occasioned by General Alexander's decision to concentrate the Imperial forces in the Irrawalds valles and to make over the defence of the Sitting to the Chinese V Army. The Chinese to stand at Toungoo, and we moved north to come into alignment. On March 19 Burcorps was formed under the command of Lieutenant-General W. J. Slim, M.C., Burma Division being ordered to join the Corps as soon as the Chinese concentration was complete.

It now becomes necessary to follow briefly the earlier fortunes of Burma Division in the Sittang valley. On March 11 two Brigades attacked Pyuntaza on the main Rangoon-Mandalay road. and Madauk and Shwegyin on the Sittang river. The initial stages of the attack on Pyuntaza succeeded. The 7th Rajput Regiment carried the town and a road block south of it. The Japanese at once counter-attacked in superior numbers, the Rajputs being forced back. Eventually a line was established north of Pyuntaza.

Against slight opposition Madauk was taken by a Burma Rifles battalion, whilst the 1st Punjabis assaulted Shwegvin then occupied by Burmese rebels. There was heavy street fighting: but the Punjabis cleared the town, killing 50 of the enemy and taking 10 prisoners at small loss to themselves. The positions taken were maintained until March 15 when, as a preliminary to handing over to the Chinese, the Division withdrew north.

On the evening of March 16 a forward Brigade was in action at Kvauktaga. Following the withdrawal, a column of Japanese lorries approached to within 200 yards of the posts of the Burma Rifles. Fire was abruptly opened on the lorries with disastrous results to the Japanese. That night and throughout the next day the Burma Rifles were closely engaged. The withdrawal then continued.

It was the turn of another Brigade to halt the Japanese on This time, at Gonde, an infantry column was caught at close range by the mortars and automatics of another Burma Rifles Battalion. The ensuing attack was held for several hours until it was time for the Brigade to retire. Burma Division then passed through the Chinese outposts along the Pvu river to concentrate near Toungoo, before proceeding to the Irrawaddy front.

Digitized by GOOGIC

# PEACE TERMS\*

spot,

nising | back

cilling d the

talion

anese

igage.

n the

ent in

ıando

ce of

neral

the

ttang

osed

ient.

of

der-

was

ınes

two

oad,

ages

ient

e at

ing

aza.

fles

ied

the

40

ere

ver

:se

13

ĸŧ

'n

By Colonel H. F. Humphreys, o.B.E., M.C., T.D., K.H.P.

IT IS now generally agreed that Society, in dealing with crimes against itself, should do so without passion, being swayed neither by a desire for revenge nor by a sentimental pity for the criminal, himself perhaps the victim of a bad environment. Its end should be prevention, and the means are these: punishment heavy enough to act as a deterrent to the criminal and his possible imitators, safeguards or police precautions against a repetition of the offence, and reform of the social conditions which encourage the savage and lawless instincts of mankind.

Whereas a century ago society hardly looked further than punishment, to-day this is regarded as the least important of the three. Let us consider the treatment of our enemies, and particularly Germany, the most important, under these same three heads; punishment, safeguards, reform.

In 1919 the people of the Allied nations clamoured for revenge. "Hang the Kaiser," "Make Germany pay the whole cost of the war," "Squeeze her like an orange till the pips squeak": these phrases fell from the lips of politicians and people alike, but none were implemented by action.

We shall make a fatal error if we assume that the war is entirely the making of Hitler and his gang. In 75 years Germany has four times fallen in sudden and unprovoked assault upon her European neighbours. For 200 years, from the time of Frederick the Great onwards, German youth has been taught that might is right, that the German is a superman, that war is desirable for its own sake, and, what is more important, he has come to believe it. Gauleiter Wagner, after the Rhineland coup, summed up German morality in a phrase: "Anything which benefits the German people is right, anything which harms them is wrong."

Undoubtedly Germany will urge that the punishment of Hitler and his gang will square accounts with the Allies, but it will not. Hitler is far more the product than the cause of Germany's diseased and dangerous psychology. To put him on trial may compromise the law: to execute him is to present him with the martyr's crown. A far better course is to banish the leaders of the Nazi party from Germany for life, and to let them, like the English regicides in Switzerland, Napoleon at St. Helena, the Kaiser at Doorn, and Trotsky at Mexico, dine daily for the remainder of their lives on the bitter fruit of frustration, exile and defeat.

What of their subordinates? When crimes can swiftly be brought home to them they should pay the penalty. But in the vast majority of cases they will find no difficulty in proving that they were merely carrying out orders. Nobody wants the farce of long-drawn out trials, doubtful law, technical acquittals or political executions.

<sup>\*</sup>Reference to this article is made in "Matters of Moment."

We know that all the most fanatical Nazis, the most cruel and sadistic servants of the regime, have been drafted into the Gestapo and the S.S. I suggest that all the personnel of these corps, and possibly all members of the Nazi Party, be sent to Russia as a great Labour Corps to rebuild the devastated Russian towns. They should be treated strictly as prisoners of war, and should remain in Russia for five years at least.

This is to mete out the same treatment as that given by them to their French prisoners, and will have desirable secondary results. It will remove from Germany during the first few critical post war years its most truculent and subversive elements, and will aid the Allies in their important and (as they have found in Italy) their most difficult task of finding a German government which will both command the allegiance of the nation and fulfil the peace treaty.

Reparations, which superficially seem the most suitable way to punish a nation, are in reality the most difficult, and were badly hashed at Versailles, because neither the public nor the politicians paid any attention to economics. Wealth can only take one of two forms, goods and services. Money is not wealth: it is a ticket entitling the owner to a defined amount of services or goods: and if such tickets are printed in excess of the services or goods available their value is correspondingly diminished. This is inflation.

At Versailles, in the teeth of expert advice, the treaty-makers fixed German reparations at a figure far beyond anything she could pay in cash without inflation; they further stated that this figure would be subject to upward revision if Germany became prosperous enough to afford more, and this gave her a strong motive to postpone full reconstruction of her industries. To have accepted goods instead of cash would have produced a slump and unemployment in the corresponding industries of the countries accepting them. To have imported services might also produce unemployment, and does not seem to have been seriously considered.

The result of the muddled thinking at Versailles was the longdrawn out farce of reparations in the 1920's. Germany staged a fraudulent bankruptcy, she printed mark notes till the mark ceased to have value, and apart from the reconstruction of the devastated areas in France, the only reparations she paid were with money borrowed in America for the purpose, and then virtually appropriated as "frozen credits."

We must do better this time, but the scope of reparations is limited. I have just suggested one effective reparation in the form of the services of a large labour corps to rebuild the towns devastated by the war in Allied countries, particularly in Russia: doubtless a selected quantity of goods could also be exacted that would not compete with or produce unemployment in Allied countries.

As regards money payments, too, something can be done. Germany, by various financial devices, has acquired control of the capital of most important industries in the countries she has overrun, and has hidden much of this and much of her own money as

Digitized by GOOGIC

cruel

) the

these

t to

ssian

and

hem

ults.

-war

the

heir

will

eace

.dly

ans

0Ē

ket

nd

nil M.

he

2 i S

ne

)t•

well in the form of credit in America and elsewhere. All these shady transactions must be uncovered, restoration of the stolen property made, and most of Germany's liquid capital impounded by way of reparations.

But we must be careful to avert the danger of ruining Germany. At first sight this might seem a desirable thing to do, but it has two decisive drawbacks. First, Europe cannot be prosperous if the largest, the most central and the most highly industrialised nation therein is the reverse.

Secondly, our aim is to prevent war: Germany must remain disarmed: but our only permanent security is a German nation which has renounced its centuries-old creed that war is good, that war pays: she must learn by experience that peace pays better, and this she will only do if she finds in fact that peace brings prosperity. From 1920 to 1930 Germany seemed to be learning this lesson: it was the great slump of 1929 and the following years, her 5,000,000 unemployed, that made her turn to her old gods and accept the desperate expedient of Hitler.

So much for the punishment that can or should be meted out to Germany. What safeguards, what police measures, should we take? These were thoroughly explored at Versailles and the measures taken were ineffective, less because they were wrongly designed than because when challenges were thrown down by the Axis powers in Manchukuo (1931), Abyssinia (1935) and the Rhineland (1936) the League and the Democracies declined to take them up.

There will naturally be a military occupation of Germany by Allied troops to guarantee the execution of the peace terms. How long should it last? In my view as short a time as possible, though it is inevitable that it should last some years. But the Germans should be given every inducement to believe that fulfilment of the treaty will hasten the departure of Allied troops.

A Germany policed by Allied bayonets will remain sullen and unco-operative: incidents and disorders will occur, and bear bitter fruit in the form of hatred and international bad blood. No strong or responsible German government would emerge in such conditions. Now there will be, there has already been, a demand that Germany should be occupied for 50 years: it is certain that the troops and the peoples that sent them would weary of this demoralising duty long before.

Our main peace aim is to see a contented Germany that has renounced her evil dreams for a spirit of friendly co-operation. She should be treated not as a prisoner under close arrest, but as a ticket-of-leave man on probation. The military safeguards of Versailles should be repeated and made stricter. She should be allowed no Navy, no aeroplanes, no tanks, no heavy guns and an army of only 50,000 men. The Rhineland should be demilitarised.

It will be said that these things did not prevent this war, but this was due solely to the sloth and negligence of the Allies in not accepting Germany's challenge when she rearmed. It is now admitted by everyone, including the Germans, that had the French sent troops against them when they marched into the Rhineland in 1936 they would, being largely unarmed, have retired without fighting. The French failure to do so, condoned by the British Government, convinced Hitler that the democracies would not fight, and led to all his subsequent piracies.

Looking back we can perhaps understand why the Democracies, fuddled with talk of the Kellogg Pact and the League of Nations, and accustomed to decide major issues by expressions of public opinion, should have come to believe that war could be avoided by mobilising public opinion against it, should have found 11 million signatures to the Peace Pledge Union, should have embraced the policy of appeasement, and from 1936 to 1939 should have hesitated to take any action which might lead to bloodshed and immediate mobilisation for war.

But once is enough: a repetition of such muddled thinking is unlikely: technological advance and the advent of the long range bomber have put into our hands a weapon there will be less reluctance to use than the mobilisation and development of an army.

I suggest that a clause be inserted in the peace treaty stating that if breaches of its clauses by Germany occur, her cities will be systematically bombed one by one till the breach is repaired, a short notice, say 48 hours, having been given to enable the population to leave. Such destruction of material as opposed to men would not run counter to humanitarian sentiment, only a few thousand professional airmen would be employed on it, and the certainty of this retribution would effectively prevent the emergence of another Hitler.

One other safeguard is, I think, worth embodying in the peace treaty: the control of German radio. Having accepted the terms of the peace treaty, she should undertake not to conduct a radio campaign hostile to the Allies. The importance of radio in the formation of public opinion can hardly be over-estimated, and if our steady aim is the reformation of the German character we cannot afford to neglect this weapon.

There is no question that these safeguards are an impairment of German sovereignty, even though necessary and just. For how long should they be maintained? I suggest till a whole new generation of Germans has grown up, taught to prefer peace to war, to renounce their pagan notions of innate German superiority and the worship of force, to respect their neighbours, and, in a word, to accept the Christian ethic. This cannot take less than 40 years, and long before then the Allied nations will be asked to remove those badges of German inferiority.

The clamour about the injustice of the peace terms that followed Versailles will be repeated. We must not listen. The Versailles treaty was not only just but moderate, and morally Germany is dangerously inferior. When a man has been four times convicted of being drunk when driving a car, when on each occasion he has committed homicide on innocent people, the courts rightly decide that he shall never hold a driving licence again: he is too great a danger to the public.

Digitized by Google

Similarly, this generation of Germans must never while they live have arms in their hands. Four times in the span of a single life the German nation, drunk with the wine of nationalism (and the German brand is the most intoxicating of all that heady vintage) has committed wars of naked aggression against its neighbours. We shall betray our children, we shall betray Europe, we shall betray civilisation if we show any softness in this matter of keeping Germany disarmed for a generation.

These safeguards do not violate her internal freedom; they inflict on her no economic injury. On the contrary, the relief from the burden of armament will be an economic advantage similar to those enjoyed for many years by the Scandinavian countries. And we must hope that when Germany's long period of probation is over the international anarchy which threatens to destroy our civilisation will have given place to a more orderly system, that co-operation will have replaced competition, and that those moral and Christian principles of conduct which are almost universally acknowledged in private and personal relations will also regulate the business, the political and the international activities of mankind.

What changes should be made in national frontiers? There will be many a wrangle over these. De Gaulle is already demanding, as Foch did in 1919, that French rule should extend to the Rhine: the Poles protest at giving back to Russia those lands which they seized by force in 1920. Let us amid the clamour remember that Europe will owe her restored liberty solely to Russia, Britain and the U.S.A. who have a right jointly to dictate the peace terms. Frenchmen and Poles, like Italians, have fought against the Allied armies as well as by their side.

The peace-makers of Versailles tried hard to redraw the frontiers of Europe on lines corresponding to ethnic and cultural divisions, and in the main succeeded. It was impossible to draw them so that minorities would not remain under alien governments, and half the troubles of the last 20 years have arisen from this cause. While we may deplore the excessive nationalism of the people of Europe and agree that it ought to be diminished, we have to recognise that it has in fact increased and is still increasing. We cannot leave it out of account in any settlement we make: for man's actions politically are swayed more by illogical emotions than by reasoned considerations of self interest.

Let us this time effect a radical cure by forcible transfer of racial minorities to their own homeland. There will, of course, be protests that this will create a lasting heritage of ill-will, but all experience is against this. Scores of millions of Europeans have transferred themselves voluntarily from Europe to the New World, to lands of strange laws and alien tongues, and have settled down there: the only case when a population was moved after the last war—the mutual exchange of Turks and Greeks and the transfer of each to their homeland—has been a triumphant success: and Hitler himself has set a precedent by receiving back Germans from the Italian Trentino, and German Balts from Lithuania and Latvia.



Let, therefore, the Sudeten Germans be sent out of Bohemia to Germany, and the alien Jews who have flocked as refugees to England be returned to their homelands: let the frontier between Hungary and Rumania, and any other where pockets of nationals live among an alien race, be tidied up by similar transfers.

The only case where large numbers are involved is that of East Prussia and the Danzig corridor, which was the casus belli of the present war. The only satisfactory solution is the expulsion of all Germans from East Prussia and Danzig, and their replacement by Poles. This will compensate Poland for the surrender back to Russia of the country East of the Curzon line, which she took in 1920—a country where Poles are in a minority: it will give her at last an adequate sca-board on the Baltic: it will complete the "buffer" between Germany and Russia, and it will dispossess the German Junkers, who have always been the high priests of German aggression.

The numbers involved are less than the published German losses in this war, so that there will be plenty of Lebensiaum for them west of the Vistula: and compared with Hitler's annexation of all Poland and Czecho-Slovakia such a step is moderation itself

On the other side of Germany in the Rhineland, such a transfer of populations is not possible; the number of Germans involved is far too large, and there is no one to replace them. The decline in the French birth rate led before the war to the immigration into France of millions of Italians and Poles, and the rule by France over a large German population in the Rhineland is not to be thought of: nothing more likely to start another war could be devised. It may be possible to bring the heavy industries of the Rhine under the control of some international cartel which would insure against their conversion to war-like purposes, but in the main we must rely on other measures for our security in the West.

A few alterations of frontiers must be made on strategic grounds, to reward our friends and rob our enemies of the power to hurt. Russia will have a strong claim to her frontiers of 1914, though Stalin seems disposed to be generous to both Poland and Finland. Fiume must be restored to Yugo-Slavia, Albania recover her independence, and the Dodecanese be given to Greece. There is much to be said for the cession of Eritrea to Abyssinia: it will give her a seaboard, and we must hope to see her, under European tutelage, grow into a civilised and independent native African state as Fgypt has done.

Libya, which was denuded of its Arab population by the Italians, and emptied of their Italian successors by the war, might, I suggest, be settled by Jews. The Italians had already begun to make this once fertile country blossom again like the rose, and a Jewish settlement here would not only ease the population pressure on Palestine, but would form a useful flank guard to Egypt and the Suez Canal. Metropolitan Italy with Sicily and Sardinia may be left intact.

of Bohemia refugees to tier between of national asfers.

is that of
usus belli of
e expulsion
eir replace
surrender
which she
y: it will
t will comit will disnigh priests

d German sraum for nnexation tion itself , such a Germans iem. The immigra-

e rule by
nd is not
ar could
ies of the
ch would
in the
he West

strategic ne power of 1914 and and Albania Greece. yssinia: , under : native

by the might, on to and a relation and to and a

#### THINGS PEOPLE SAY

"The British people are champions at forgetting."—Lord Strabolgi.

"The informed man is armed against lie and rumour."—Mr. John Dollard.

"Personnel—that is jargon for officers and men."—Mr. Winston Churchill.

"The largest Japanese island is as big as France."—Sir Edward Campbell, M.P.

"The German language has no word for 'fair' or for 'gentleman'."—Emil Ludwig.

"Our National Debt has gone up from £8,000,000,000, to £20,000,000,000."—Mr. A. Tinker, M.P.

"At a cross-roads in Normandy no fewer than 19,000 vehicles went by in 24 hours."—Mr. Tom Driberg, M.P.

"The Belgians are unanimous in hoping for a rather Carthaginian peace for Germany."—Mr. Tom Driberg, M.P.

"Great Britain has lost over 3,000 merchant ships from all causes since the war began."—Official statement in London.

"To the Germans a nation is either conqueror or conquered, either hammer or anvil."—The Hon. Harold Nicolson, M.P.

"There are now 226,416 prisoners of war in the United States."

—Mr. Robert Patterson, U. S. Under Secretary of State for War.

"Hundreds of angling clubs in England are allowing wounded servicemen to use their waters without any charge."—The Daily Telegraph.

"The prestige of the Prime Minister on the Continent is probably greater than that of any Englishman since Chatham."—Mr. Ivor Thomas, M.P.

"America has recruited an average of 10,000 men a day since Pearl Harbour; nearly 10,000,000 men have been mobilised."—Major General Lewis B. Hershey.

"A soldier's first request, after being wounded, for a cigarette may, in cases of artery injury, cause irreparable damage."—
Journal of the American Medical Association.

"After the war air passengers will be able to leave London early on Monday morning and arrive in Karachi on Tuesday morning."—Lord Knollys, Chairman, B.O.A.C.

"Allied bombs with RDX, the new explosive which is supplanting TNT, can do about 50 per cent. more damage."—Colonel I. A. Inke, U. S. Army Ordnance Corps.

"Mr. Winston Churchill's personality not only embodies the characteristics of the British race, but stands as a living symbol of the cause of the United Nations."—Mr. Philip Paneth.

"After the last war we had to resort to martial law in India, but I am confident that after this war there will be no need for such action."—Sir Firoz Khan Noon, speaking in London.

"Far more columns in the Press have been devoted to the future of Germany than to the future of the British Empire."—Major Lewis Hastings, addressing the Royal Empire Society.

"We should not have heard so much about the poor deluded Germans, or the nice, kind Germans, or the simple, innocent dupes of Hitler and so forth it the enemy had set foot in Kent."—Mr. William Barkley.

"On June 15 we joined our brothers in arms and fellow citizens in dipping our colours to the finest infantty the world has produced, the United Nations Infantry of 1944."—General Dwight D. Eisenhower.

"A machine is a great moral educator. If a horse or a donkey won't go, men lose their tempers and beat it; but if a machine won't go you have to think and try until you find what is wrong. That is real education."—Professor Gilbert Murray.

"For some months one special section of Bomber Command, known as the Bomber Support Group, has devoted the whole of its energies to what its commanding officer describes as 'hoodwinking the Hun'."—"Times" Aeronautical Correspondent.

"I have set up a special committee to work out a practical scheme through which soldiers serving abroad will be able to vote direct in a postal ballot for the candidate they wish returned at the next General Election."—Mr. Herbert Morrison, M.P.

"When the Prime Minister speaks to the House of Commons he speaks as a soldier—but as a soldier deprived of one of the most modern weapons available to similar soldiers of other united nations in a like position. His speech could not be broadcast."— Captain Plugge, M.P.

"The background to the whole resettlement scheme for the British Army is that the officer or soldier should leave the Army with increased understanding of those problems of citizenship of which every member of a vital democracy should have knowledge."—Sir James Grigg, M.P.

"We have British, American, Canadian, New Zealand. South African, Polish. French, Greek, Italian, Brazilian and Indian troops fighting in Italy. I even asked the Soviet Minister if he could spare some Russians, but was told that they were too busy."—Field Marshal Sir H. Alexander.

"When the Americans landed on Guadalcanar in 1942 their casualties from malaria alone amounted to about 97 men in every hundred during the first few weeks. In February, 1944 that figure had been reduced to two in every thousand."—Major David Ascoli, broadcasting from London.

abodies the symbol of

in India,
need for
on.

ed to the impire." ciety.

r deluded ent dupes Kent."—

ellow citiworld has —General

a donkey machine s wrong.

mmand, vhole of odwink

oractical to vote rned at

mmons ne most united ast."—

or the Army hip of know

South roops could y."—

their very gure wid "When the Armistice comes, there will be between 20,000,000 and 30,000,000 men and women who will have to be sent back to their countries, and there will be in addition 300,000,000 people in Europe who will have to be fed, clothed, and restored to their civil occupations."—Mr. C. Cocks, M.P.

"The speed with which the mighty British and American Armies were built up in Normandy is almost incredible. In the first 24 hours a quarter of a million men were landed; by the 20th day a million men were ashore. We now have between 2,000,000 and 3,000,000 men ashore here."—The Prime Minister.

"Once we are able to bring the full force of the American Navy—as to the size of which I think the figures, when they are revealed, will stagger the world—and of our own naval forces there is some hope that we may fairly quickly isolate the main island of Japan and finish the war."—Commander King-Hall, M.P.

"When war broke out in 1939, a shrine with a picture of Hitler was found behind the altar of a German Mission Church in Dar es Salaam, Tanganyika Territory (formerly German East Africa). On it was inscribed: 'Germans, this is your opportunity to disrupt the British Empire'."—Mr. Geoffrey Hunter, speaking in London.

"The London Passenger Transport Board, with the help of four smaller transport firms in London, has been making heavy bombers since 1940. It has turned out hundreds of Halifaxes, all of them made in bus repair shops, tube-train depôts and coachbuilding works. Each Halifax has 40,000 different parts."—

Mr. George Darling, B.B.C.

"Men and women have faced equal danger on a dozen different battle fronts, and from that shared communion there emerges a brave, new, honest comradeship not only between Wrens and seamen, A.T.S. and troopers, Waafs and aircraftsmen, but between the thousand and one different worlds they represent."—Godfrey Winn, in "Homes and Gardens."

"Love of power and its exercise is a very common and very insidious form of selfishness. It nearly always disguises itself as a desire to do good, and so manages to claim moral credit for a profound immoral frame of mind. . . . Hitler showed uncanny skill in his exploitation of this fact during his rise to power."—
The late Archbishop of Canterbury.

"Germany and Japan have jumped straight from a feudal period to a period of industrial imperialism. Both countries left out that great civilising period of democratic middle-class government, during which ideas of civilisation, ideas which I should be inclined to call Christian, gained considerable power in the conduct of public affairs."—Mr. Kingsley Martin.

"Just before the war the Germans struck oil on a considerable scale in the Reich. Then they found impressive oil deposits in both Austria and Hungary. When we re-discover Central Europe after the war we shall find it has become a considerable new oil-producing area. That is a new fact in the economic geography of the world."—Squadron Leader John Strachey.

"F.A.M. in Greece is a Left Wing political organisation, its initial letters meaning a National Liberation Front. E.L.A.S. is a military organisation of E.A.M., the corresponding Greek words meaning National Popular Liberation Army. E.D.E.S. is the Right Wing, and stands for a National Democratic Liberation Army."—Princess Indira of Kapurthala, broadcasting from London.

"If Russia and America quarrel there can be no possible bar to the re-emergence of Japan in the Far East as a menace to them both. If Russia and Great Britain quarrel there can be no possible step which will prevent the re-emergence of Germans in Europe as a menace to both Poland and the rest of Europe. That is the rock on which we must build our foreign policy."—Mr. Quintin Hogg, M.P.

"Two years ago Mine Bay, in New Guinea, was a fishing village inhabited by 20 whites and 150 natives. In June, 1944 it dealt with shipping tonnage only equalled by New York and one other port in the U.S.A. When the centre of gravity shifted to Finchhaven there grew up almost by magic long lines of docks and quays and miles of storage sheds. When each base served its purpose it was scrapped. It reminded one of a former frontier campaign, when an ingenious quartermaster, in order to placate the audit officer, cut a new tent in half and entered it in his ledger as "Tents, 2 unserviceable."—Lieut.-Col. A. Wickham, M.P.

## Belgian Friendship

"In Liege there will always be a strong link of friendship between the citizens and ourselves. That one city sheltered no fewer than 700 Allied airmen during the German occupation—airmen who had baled out on being shot down....

"A friend of mine, an air gunner, who was shot down six months ago in Belgium flew back in the same plane as I did from Brussels. He had moved around all that time, had been passed on from hand to hand in Belgium and France, had always been fed and looked after decently and warmly received.

"The most moving thing of all that he told me occurred once when things were getting a bit 'sticky,' because he had encountered two or three German officers who, fortunately, did not know French much better than he did, and he was therefore able to persuade them that he was actually French or Belgian.

"After that, an elderly Frenchwoman gave him her son's identity card, and he was able to substitute on it his own photograph for that of her son. Her son had been about his age, and had been killed only a few weeks before in an R.A.F. raid."—Mr. Tom Driberg, M.P., speaking in the House of Commons.

## INVASION BUILD-UP

words .S. is

ration

from

le bar

them

) pos

ny in

That \_Mr.

shing

344 it

d one

ed to

docka

erved

ntiet

acate

edger

ıpa•

Six

did

een

nad

re

·ed

ad

ly,

25

.'s

ηĵ

is

ıf

## BY LIEUT.-COLONEL W. H. KINGSBERRY

AFTER service in the Middle East I was ordered in February, 1944 to assume command of a unit being mobilised for service overseas. I found it was a new unit, to form part of the 21st Army Group. We soon realised it was the Army for the Second Front and felt fortunate to be in the right place at the right time.

It took some time to collect and put together the assortment of personnel to form the Permanent Staff; some were good and some were misfits. The misfits had to be removed and replacements obtained. This process meant several repeats in some cases until the right man was found for a particular job; for instance a butcher has been a great difficulty; but the N.C.O. sent for Sanitary duties has proved an excellent Post Corporal, and a policeman an Officers' Mess waiter.

Early in April leave was stopped, and the issue of "Secret" and "Top Secret" instructions became more prolific: instructions about moves, documentation, supply of rations and stores, water-proofing of vehicles and a hundred and one other things that affect the well-being of the soldier—not least being how to get cigarettes before the NAAFI canteens could be opened overseas.

That the Second Front would open somewhere on the Continent was no secret, but to achieve surprise it was vital to conceal the time and place. This involved most detailed instructions as to methods of replacing vehicles, indenting for stores, etc. required in the U. K. prior to embarkation, so that what would normally be a routine matter in a unit did not disclose "something" to someone not taking part in the operation. Arrangements for pay in currency were kept very secret. Serial numbers instead of unit titles were used for many things.

Mid-April things began to take shape. Censorship was introduced, and one night at 2330 hours we entrained. Soon after reaching our destination our postal address became "A.P.O. England", and we learned that we had reached our Concentration Area. There we began to think seriously about preparations for embarkation. Wise men began to look at the moon periods and the tides were discussed.

But April passed to May, and May to June before things really happened. My unit was not part of the assault or follow-up, but about the end of May we got "suspicious" because of other movements known to us. We had become used to aircraft in large numbers overhead, but on the night of 5/6 June the noise was greater than ever. At 0630 hours on June 6 we listened to the B.B.C. news bulletin, but nothing was announced. A few hours later "D-Day" was known to the world.

We then knew the answer to our own problems, as for many weeks I had known that we were to land somewhere on D+12.

Our final preparations in the Concentration Area were nearing completion and on D+5, orders were received for the Reconnaissance Party to move on D+6. It was given a Starting Point and a route, and that was all I knew about it. On D+6 we received orders for the move of the main body, and the unit transport for D+7.

The Main Body moved to a Marshalling Area, which, in the early stages was secret, but was then revealed. There we stayed till D+10, when orders were received to go to Embarkation Area on D+11. That morning we collected two 24-hour Ration Boxes and a Tommy Cooker, a bag ration of chocolate and biscuits, an emergency ration, water purification tablets, a "Mae West" lifebelt and 3 "Bags, Vomit".

We embussed in T.C.Vs. (Troop Carrying Vehicles), and in lovely summer weather drove through the English countryside looking its best. It was Derby Day, too. The convov passed quickly through towns and villages and we arrived at the Embarkation Area in the afternoon.

Debussing about a mile from the harbour close to some cottages, an old man leaning over the gate asked me if I had heard the result of the Derby. I said "No" but would like to hear, as I had risked a small sum on Tehran. He had just listened to the broadcast of the race and said that Ocean Swell had beaten Tehran by a neck. As we were about to embark, Ocean Swell seemed to be the obvious tip!

After tea we marched the last mile to the harbour. The men were in good heart and sang "Put that Pistol Down" as their farewell marching song. We embarked on the pre-war Belgium State Railways steamer Princess Astrid. Every officer and man boarding the ship handed in on the quay half an Embarkation Tag to show that he had embarked. The other half, to be collected on disembarkation, would show that he had completed the sea passage. If the second half didn't turn up, it would probably mean that there had been some bad luck on the way!

With other ships, we moved out of the harbour in the evening, in readiness to form a convoy the next morning. The Captain gave us instructions in case of air attack or abandoning ship. but said that the traffic across the Channel was as thick as Piccadilly without being so dangerous. The Navy, as always, were kind and hospitable, though we were packed as tightly as the proverbial sardin.

Early on D+12 we moved off to rendezvous with ships from another port, and when I came up for breakfast the convoy was well on its way across the Channel. It was dull, but the sea was smooth and there was little prospect of needing the three brown bags issued the previous day. One Cumberland man of nearly 40 years of age told me he had never been on the sea before. He was making a historic journey for his first effort, and managed to survive sea-sickness, although he said he wasn't feeling "too grand".

The Captain had not exaggerated about the traffic. Ships were everywhere going in both directions; battleships, destroyers,

mine-sweepers, merchantmen of all shapes and sizes. As we neared the beaches we could see more and more ships. In the distance we heard heavy gunfire. A balloon harrage floated over the beach area and the shipping. We watched one balloon break away until it burst high up in the sky.

But there were no Germans in the air, and if any British pessimist still existed, the sight of this Normandy coast would have persuaded him that Hitler had already lost the war. To have thousands of ships lying at anchor off an enemy-occupied coast was more than impudence.

We landed in the ship's own landing craft, and as we neared the shore I wondered how far we should have to wade, fully dressed with packs and equipment. It turned out to be about knee deep, and the N. O. in charge of the boats asked us to hurry off, because of the ebb. An officer led the way, and in his hurry toget off the craft slipped, and fell flat on his face in the water. Nobody laughed—much!

Hundreds of men were wading steadily ashore; officers' valises were also being taken—each officer being allowed 60 lbs. of kit, including bedding. We were met by officers of the Beach Group Unit and instructed to dump our kits on the beach, march in single file to a sorting out area about 4 miles away from the beach, and leave a baggage party with the kits.

We marched off in single file and got well dusted by passing vehicles. Arriving at the sorting out area, an officer who had gone ahead for orders met us and told us our Assembly Area was about five miles west. There was no sign of our Reconnaissance Party and transport, which had left on D+6 and 7, but I imagined it would be waiting at the Assembly Area.

I was beginning to feel a little jaded, as the roads were hot and dusty, and we had been on the move for nearly 36 hours with no meal since lunch. But the big point was to make the Assembly Area before dark. After that things could sort themselves out. About 9 p.m. we met a Recce Officer of another unit, who told me that my party had not arrived. A blob! This was disappointing, especially as it had the C.O's. vehicle.

This officer led us to a field and pointed out our ditches for the night. We did not expect to see our kits till the next day, but my Q.M. had persuaded someone to disgorge two lorries and they arrived about 11 p.m., so we all had blankets for the night and a dry ditch. The men had time to make a meal from their 24 hour rations before blackout about 11 p.m. Sharp at 11 the LUFTWAFFE made a short air raid on the beach area.

I ruminated in my bit of ditch about the Recce Party and thought of all the things that a Recce Party can and should do before the Main Body arrived. It was bad luck; and the Officers' Mess whisky, specially allotted for overseas consumption until the NAAFI could open about D+30, was sent in advance with the Recce Officer. A sad thought, in a Normandy ditch. But even if my Recce Party (with whisky) had not arrived, plenty of A.A. units had, judging by the noise they made in the night. If only the bits of their shells would not fall in my particular field!

Rain came at 6-30 (D+13). Quietly we rolled up our bedding. After a Tommy Cooker breakfast of porridge and tea I had a look round the farms for shelter. The men moved into two barns and the officers into a farmhouse. The farmers and their wives were very friendly and quite ready to take us. One girl appeared to be unfriendly at first, but she thawed when we gave her chocolate and sweets from our rations. It was suggested that she had lost her German boy friend, but if so she soon got over it. Rumours of snipers firing from the woods were current, but I did not encounter any. What we did discover were some of our own troops firing at hares and rabbits with their service rifles; not a permissible form of sport.

On D+14 the weather improved, and I selected a bivouac site in some adjacent orchards. Next day we prepared to move, and our first lot of stores—including tents—began to arrive from the U. K. Tent pitching underneath the cider apple trees began, and we shared the orchard with cattle. The French girls came to the orchards milking, and the men could buy fresh milk at 2 francs a mug. Except for perishable foodstuffs, local purchase was forbidden, because of the necessity for conserving supplies for the civilian population.

Here in Normandy the people on the farms looked well and appeared to have plenty of food, but the question of the townsfolk at a later date had to be considered. Cider could be obtained, but was tasteless and uninteresting.

On D+16 we moved into our camp. I inspected the barns we had used to ensure that it was left cleaner than we had taken it over. The farmers were all well satisfied, and were paid billetting rates a few days later. I gave presents of money and chocolate to the children, as part of our thanks, for the use of their homes. Madame had lent me a bed and mattress until my camp bed arrived.

It was a perfect summer day, and we saw much air activity. A formation of our heavy bombers passed through an intense A.A. barrage, and it was extraordinary that only two appeared to be hit. A few parachutes were seen in the air shortly after. Although not many miles from the forward troops, we had little news of the battle. The unit had not then come on the distribution list for two Army News bulletins, and our wireless sets were on our transport.

D+17 was another good day, and work on camp-sanitation, cooking places, etc., made progress. But the big event was the arrival of the Recce Party about 7 p.m.—six days late! They had arrived off the beaches on D+11, and had been unable to land because of bad weather. An hour later part of our transport arrived and things were beginning to look up. A three-days storm had interrupted the whole of the disembarkation of vehicles and stores, but in spite of it our forward troops were still gaining ground.

Newspapers and mails were now arriving regularly, too, except for bad weather interruptions. For example, on June 25 we had

London papers of June 23 in camp. A free supply came through the Army Post Office with our letters.

On D+18 the remainder of our transport and motor cyclists arrived. The weather in the Channel had not been kind to us, but difficulties had been overcome in the end. Our wireless sets were now giving the B.B.C. news bulletins to the men. The 9 p.m. London news had all the cattle as listeners, too! When the news began, the cows were being milked, but they all forsook the milkmaids and collected in a semi-circle round the wireless set. I can't say if this was the reason the farmer removed them to another field shortly afterwards.

The Military Police had a heavy job directing and controlling traffic. But in a traffic block one could always talk to French children, who knew that we had chocolate and sweets in our rations. A rose for a sweet is a good exchange. Many of the children now had Crusader Shields (the badge of the 21 Army Group) sewn on their jackets and frocks.

On D+19, our first Sunday in France, a Free Church padreheld a non-denominational service in our orchard, under the apple trees. Although the Luftwaffe had not worried us by day, we did not take foolish risks; there had been many days with low cloud when a Messerschmidt could pounce on the unwary or careless unit. We dug our slit trenches and hid our tents as much as possible.

Although there was no "r" in the month, oysters came from Courseilles; small but good; price, 1 franc (about 1½d.) each. 1s. 6d. a dozen for oysters! But at the moment there was no brown bread, red pepper, stout or vinegar. Yorkshire Relish was the best substitute that could be produced.

Until the NAAFI opened, packs were provided containing cigarettes, soap, writing paper, boot laces and razor blades as a free issue until D+30, or whenever the NAAFI arrived. These were all a great boon, and were issued on a fixed scale per head per day.

As an old soldier of the last war, I have not been used to such organization. But in this war much more thought is being given to the morale and welfare of the individual. At times in the last war one merely existed.

Thus began our part in the campaign. Since then Francehas been overrun and the invasion of Germany has started. But it all began with those early days of preparation, when every detail was worked out. Thus our Invasion build-up marches on to Victory.

## SINKS-AND DOODLE-BUGS'

By Major-General Sir Danhwood Strettell, R.C.I.F., C.B.

MAY I accentuate certain points to which I referred in my article which appeared in the July, 1944 issue of the Journal? On re-reading it it occurs to me that the following additional comments may interest members.

As a result of the flying bomb attacks, the accommodation question is even worse than before. We have been trying for over seven months, without success, to get an unfurnished flat. The price of houses has gone up by leaps and bounds: I know of one house which the owners put up to auction with a reserve of £2,500. It fetched over £5,000, much to their surprise and delight!

The new regulations regarding auctioning of second hand furniture not more than 100 years old has prevented owners asking absurd prices for their goods. But there are anomalies in the method of fixing the price of articles which require adjusting. One of them is that if two or more persons bid the maximum price for an article at an auction they draw lots for it.

As to the hints I gave in my last article. I would again stress the necessity of having luggage properly wired—with a space completed addressed label inside the package. Before leaving India, have all your boots and shoes properly repaired, soled and heeled. Here at Home, if boot repairs can be done at all, it takes from three to five weeks. And remember to bring home kitchen jharans and dusters, Lux, and all essential cooking pots, frying-pans, etc.

For those who send home parcels of food (and if the rules in India permit) remember that fats for cooking, dried fruits and sugar are very short, so that such things as butter, raisins, sultanas and sugar are much appreciated. An occasional pound of tea is also welcome, but there is plenty of coffee available.

Since "D" Day travelling has been more uncomfortable than ever. If you get into a train at an intermediate station you will certainly have to stand. One gentleman who lives near us, and who makes the one and a half hour journey to town four times a week, told me that one day last week he travelled both ways in the guard's van. Owing principally to the presence of evacuees, buses in the country are filled to capacity—and more! Recently I travelled in a bus in which there were no fewer than 65 passengers—and that in a bus built to carry 34! One could, with difficulty, just breathe.

It is announced that an increase in train services will take place shortly. Yet it seems strange that, despite the large forces, both British and American, now lighting in Europe, the crowding of trains has not been eased. Yet it is so.

Digitized by Google

<sup>•</sup> Being further notes on life in the Old Country.

The coal situation, is gloomy. The Ministry of Fuel declares that stocks are lower than ever, and urges people to build up their private stocks to the limit permitted during the summer months. But the coal merchants are unable to obtain supplies more than to keep one going. However, just as one reaches the last scuttle, so far, we have received a scanty allowance in time.

Judging by letters I have received, my last article seems to have painted a depressing picture. But I have tried to present things as they are. And though with a cheery heart and a "setting-to" all is well, it is only fair to say that at present, and possibly for some time to come, conditions at Home are entirely different to what they were before the war.

of the

owing

lation

over

The

f one

ve of

ight!

hand

; ask·

the ting.

tress

com-

ıdia,

eled.

rom

hen

œ.

ාlස

ınd

nas

į

ill

1d

16

Those accustomed to plenty of servants and other amenities of the East will find life pretty hard, and must be prepared "to do" for themselves to an extent they can never have previously envisaged. To the older ones the difficulties come harder than to the younger. The housewife lives in the kitchen, and life is one long preparation of food, which is devoured in a few minutes, and which is followed by interminable washing up. The centre of her life is "the sink."

This statement can be confirmed by the remarks of a friend of ours who went away for a fortnight. On her return she was asked if she enjoyed her holiday. "Oh! yes," she replied. "I had a lovely change of sink."

Since my last article we have been afflicted by the new German weapon so tritely called the "doodle-bug!" You will have read the Sandys report on how this was tackled from its inception until the capture of the launching sites.

It was a wonderful example of combined effort, and it is true that the main battle has been won. Nevertheless, the report was a bit optimistic as to the results of the victory. True, it was stated that a few would probably still come over. Well, they have—to an acknowledged and unpleasant total—and judging from those that fly nightly and explode in our vicinity (which, incidentally, has only been once mentioned in the reports) we wonder if the official eye is Nelsonian!

Much criticism occurred about the optimism of the report, principally because, though they were warned against returning, many evacuees from London and Southern England decided to return home. They left the "safe" areas for their homes, and some went to their death. It was unfortunate, as on the whole the handling of this very critical problem by the Government has been good. It is a strange coincidence that often when official "gaffes" occur, the P. M. is out of the country.

Here are a few personal experiences of these flying bombs. We were near London the night the first ones came over, and it was quite obvious to the intelligent that they were not the normal type of bomb. I went up to my Club to make inquiries, and just as I arrived the "tape" informed us that they were self-propelled. It gave other information, too—but that was incorrect. At any rate, it gave us all an opportunity of airing our views.

Next day I went to my old School Speech Day, and while I was there decided, for no particular reason at all, to return by a train an hour carlier than I had intended. It was as well I did, as on arriving at Waterloo I found the tube to Piccadilly Circus closed on account of "alerts," and I was sent all round London by Tube and the District Railway, reaching my destination after two hours, instead of the normal 45 minutes.

The following night we spent in a southern suburb, and by then the attack was in full swing. They started coming over about 8 o'clock in two's and three's every ten minutes or so, and I calculated that in the next twelve hours some 150 came over. The house shook violently at every explosion, and sleep was out of the question. We must have been in one of the bomb "alleyways," as every bug travelled over the vicinity of the house. I was not sorry to leave the next day and return home, where, though not immune, the visitors are not quite so frequent.

It is a cad's weapon. It cannot help being quite indiscriminate in its effect, as it can only be roughly aimed on a certain line and at a large area like London. There is no possibility of "pin-pointing" it—but it is a weapon one might expect from that "gentleman" the Fuehrer. It had little military effect on the invasion. It did not stop the movement of a single lorry, ship or man towards the front. But it did divert a considerable portion of our Air Force from more aggressive duties.

It caused a large number of casualties which might have been expected to have lowered morale, but in fact it only made people angry. I hope and believe that as a result of this attack the Englishman and Englishwoman at last has learned to hate—a good thing, with appearement already raising its head.

On the other hand, the manufacture of these flying bombe must have diverted much of the German output of weapons from others which might have had a much greater effect on the war in its present stage. Very fortunately, the weapon was not ready for use earlier, owing to the fact that our Intelligence found out about it, and that we were able to initiate intensive air attacks on its bases. Had the attacks been in full swing from the estimated 600 to 700 launching sites all last winter, it would have been a much more difficult problem to deal with.

Certainly, it is a nasty customer to see and hear. By night, its red glow as it tears along is like a fully lighted train moving at great speed, fascinating, menacing. Its roar, like that of a train rushing through a tunnel, is such that it will always be recognised.

Since writing the above, the Va rocket bombs have arrived. From the psychological point of view they are not so terrifying as the V1—but if either score a direct hit and you are there—well, your number is up anyhow! The blast effect of the V1 is greater than that of the tocket bomb, which, coming from such a great height, has considerable penetration and much more concentrated effect than the V1. The great thing to remember is that neither of these weapons will win the war.

#### THE BURMA RIFLES

#### By Brigadier Bernard Fergusson

by a

rcus 1 by

ıfter

)ver

ıd I

The

of

not

not

ate ind

ile.

DD.

ur

WANT to sing the praises of the Burma Rifles. The operations of Special Force, and the Wingate Expedition of 1943, owe them an incalculable debt; yet in all the welter of publicity that these operations have had, the Burma Rifles have blushed unseen. Everybody in Special Force, and not only the old guard of the original Expedition, will endorse what I have to say.

In the recriminations which filled the air after the withdrawal from Burma in 1942, hard things were said about this Regiment. About that I know nothing, and care less. What I do know is that Wingate, in a report which was never published because of its outspoken criticisms, proclaimed that he had never had finer troops under his command. Praise from Wingate was rare, and he was the last man to bestow it amiss. I know also that in 1942; they marched no less than 1,400 miles in the withdrawal, without any M.T. whatever. By now the operational marching mileage of the average rifleman for the past three years must be close on four thousand.

I had barely heard of the Burma Rifles, when, in October of 1942, I took over command of one of Wingate's columns. A platoon of fifty Riflemen, with two British officers, formed my Reconnaissance element. They were my eyes, my ears and my mouth, and quickly become part of my heart and soul. In the months of training, I learned as much from them as I learned from Wingate. Their watermanship and their jungle-craft were as remarkable as their zeal. In the water they were like eels, in the jungle like snakes.

Those weeks of training were extraordinarily happy. The British soldiers and the Burma Riflemen became fast friends. I had my camp by a cool river, where twice a day we bathed and once a day we urged our mules to swim. I always remember Pa Haw, a Karen elephant-driver from Tenasserim, swimming mules across apparently by means of whispered directions in the animal's ear. Nelson was the platoon commander's groom, although he had never seen a horse before; the platoon commander shared with me a cordial dislike for horses, but Nelson made up for this shortcoming by teaching himself to ride, and finally coming second in a race held for the grooms.

They were mighty hunters. John Fraser and Pam Heald, their two officers, rarely ate bully beef or ration meat. To the British, the jungles were barren of game; to the Burifs, they teemed. The more conventional forms of meat, sambhir, cheetal and so on—often graced their table (the Burifs make an excellent table in half an hour); and if they wished they could have monkey or python as well. I tried both, out of curiosity; and found them as ordinary as frogs or snails.

Digitized by Google

And their singing was a delight. I recall coming back to camp one evening, walking through the jungle with a torch half an hour after sundown, and reaching the bank of the river which lay between me and the bivouac. I sat for twenty minutes listening to their voices coming over the water. They were singing, not the nasal chants of the East, but an odd medley of Western music: hymns of Moody and Sankey, theme-songs from films, English folk-tunes.

These were Karens. Several other columns had Karen platoons also; two had Kachins, and one Chins. Their characteristics vary: the Karens excel in watermanship, the Kachins in the dexterous handling of bamboo. But in essentials there is little to choose between them, and I rejoice equally in the command of all.

I became so fond of them that their colonel thought it well to offer a word of warning. "Don't ask too much of them," he said. "They had a hard time coming out of Burma; they have lost their homes and are worried about their families. I am pretty sure they will be all right; but we are only going in on a raid, and they may not be over-keen on coming out again."

That C.O., Lt.-Col. L. G. Wheeler, will be long remembered with affection and admiration; he would have played a great part in the operations of 1944 had he survived the first expedition. He was killed by a stray Japanese bullet in a remote village on the fringe of the Kodaung Hill Tracts on the 4th of April, 1943.

Wheeler was the only Regular officer in the battalion which furnished our reconnaissance, platoons. The others were all young and fit men from the big civilian firms of Burma, such as Steel Bros., the Bombay-Burmah Trading Corporation, the Burmah Oil Company and the Irrawaddy Flotilla. They were hand-picked, and a finer body of officers never took the field. They had the full confidence of their men, and without them we should have been a troop of blundering boobies. I made my Burif platoon commander second-in-command of my column; and he bosses me still.

The function of the Reconnaissance platoons was manifold. They procured us guides and acted as interpreters. They disseminated propaganda in the districts through which we passed, sitting and gossiping in front of the hpoongy kyaung or drinking tea with the headman. They supplemented our scanty ration by local purchase. Most important of all, they collected intelligence about the enemy, and generally nursed the columns along. I got the best value out of mine when they were thirty or forty miles ahead, sending back their nuggets of information on the wireless, or bringing it to me in person.

From the wealth of incidents in my memory, I find it hard to select those which will best exhibit their prowess, resourcefulness and courage. On the 6th of March, 1943, I had a small fight near a village, in the course of which an officer and four men were too hard hit to carry on. The action had been fought with only two platoons, away from the main body of the column, and I had no Burifs with me. It was three o'clock in the afternoon when I left the unfortunate men, with chatties of water and some

bananas beside them; and not until seven or eight that I made contact with my main body at an agreed rendezvous. Lance Naik Ba U with two men changed into plain clothes and journeyed to the scene of the fight, which was on a motorable road, down which the sole surviving Jap had escaped in a lorry.

ZUG:

. WK

i

There was a small Jap garrison only five, and a large one only twelve miles away, from which a punitive party had almost certainly started after us. Ba U and his men went back to the village and arranged with a friendly old man to seek out and succour our wounded. The riflemen risked far more than merely meeting the enemy; they ran the chance of being denounced by villagers, over whom, in that area, the Japs had established the dominion of fear. Ba U was later taken prisoner, but escaped and joined a column of Special Force a year later.

Once a Havildar and a rifleman in plain clothes were caught by the Japs in a village where I had sent them to reconnoitre. Other riflemen immediately volunteered to trace them, and two entered the same village in the same dress. This was in a Burmese area, where their tongues and their faces alike betrayed them as strangers. They brought back the sad news that the others had already been removed to Maymyo by their captors.

These last two, on their way back to my camp, found a party of fifty Japanese looking for us along the river whence we were drawing water. They followed them up as they cautiously approached a bivouac I had left that morning. While the Japs were examining the exits of the bivouac to determine which way the column had gone, these two Karens threw their six grenades among them, and then beat it. How many of us would stir up trouble when the odds were similar?

On the 28th of March, 1943, we were fighting by moonlight in a village at five o'clock in the morning. An officer got a bullet in the shoulder and a grenade fragment in the small of the back. He was carried for some distance on a pony, but his condition was causing such delay to the party leading it (it had become separated from the main body) that he eventually persuaded those with him to abandon him to his fate. One little Karen rifleman, himself unwounded, volunteered to remain with him. Nine months later we heard from an escaped prisoner that the Japs eventually traced the two of them to their hide-out in the jungle, took the officer prisoner and shot the devoted Karen.

All these are tales of 1943, and of my column only. Other columns can all tell similar stories. The strain of once again leaving their country bore hardest on the Kachins, some of whom passed within a few miles of their native villages. There was nothing except their loyalty to stop them slipping off their uniform, putting on the dress of the country which they carried in their packs, and reverting to their old civilian life. One man. within two miles of his own village, heard that his wife and daughter had died. He summoned his sons to meet him farther along the route his party was following, saw the two boys for a few minutes, bade them farewell, and carried on out to India. And in 1944 these men went in and came out again, for the third time in as many years.

Digitized by Google

In 1943, we came out of Burma in small parties. Some went to China, some to Fort Hertr, some recrossed the Chindwin. There was a long period in hospital for most of us, followed by generous leave. When that was over, the British battalion which had manned three of the columns, and the Burma Rifles, met once again in the same garrison town in Central India. The Burma Rifles had already been there some days when the British arrived.

From every tent streamed Riflemen, and on every face was a huge grin. As soon as the British were dismissed from parade, the path from the lines to the canteen, the road from the camp to the town, were crowded with mixed groups of British and Karens, streaming to the pubs and the pictures arm in arm, laughing and talking at the tops of their voices, regardless of whether they were understood or not. It was a sight which no one who saw it will ever forget.

In the campaign of 1944 once again the Burma Rifles are playing their part. In my own Brigade I have a Karen captain, who had won a well-earned Military Cross in 1943, commanding a Reconnaissance Platoon of mixed, British and Karens. He succeeded in marching his whole platoon into and out of the White City Block at Henu during the period of its investment by the Japs. The standard of patrolling has been again exceedingly high. One patrol, led by a British officer who was on the original expedition, found a body of 200 Japs fast asleep in the jungle without a sentry. They stormed through it, although outnumbered by more than ten to one, blitzing hell out of them.

What I have said is only a passing salute. Some day, I hopea full account of the adventures of the 2nd Battalion of the Burma Rifles in the present war will come to be written. (It served in the last war also, in the Middle East.) This task will not be easy, for their work has been done in small parties, scattered over many units. For us who have known them, who have marched and lived and fought and slept beside them, no such record is necessary; nor to remind us of their achievement do we need to look at the long and growing list of decorations that they have won, which now hangs in their Depot.

Let us hope that the liberation of Burma, for which they have striven so hard, will not be long delayed, that they will have the reward of their labours, and the joy of reunion with their families. The spirit and steadfastness that they have shewn in these hard years are the best possible augury for their country's future.

### C. I. D. IN KHAKI

ome west

Chindwia llowed br

ion which Rifles, met dia. The

he British

ace was a

rade, the

ap to the

Karens,

hing and

hey were

w it will

ifles are

captain,

nanding

is. He

of the

nent by

edingly

original

jungle

umber-

hoper

Burma in the

sy, for

many

l and

1eces ok at

/hicb

have

the

lies.

ard

BY LIEUT.-COLONEL JOHN G. ELLIS, M.B.E.

ARMIES, like every other organisation in the history of the world, have their black sheep, and it is only fair both to the millions of honest soldiers, and to their country, that those black sheep should be caught and punished. The reader of this article must, therefore, remember that the facts revealed here for the first time are not in any way intended as a reflection on the British Army, for in Total War armies comprise honest and dishonest citizens alike—the latter fortunately a small, but active minority. Neither, must I add, is this dishonesty among the few, peculiar to the British Army.

To curb the activities of this minority the Special Investigation Branch of the Corps of Military Police came into being as the result of a tour of the B.E.F. by a Senior Detective Officer from New Scotland Yard, who was charged with reporting on crime in all its phases as it applied to the Army. But before describing the conditions then prevailing let us think of the effect the declaration of war had upon the average civilian.

The upheaval consequent upon conscription in September, 1939, when the "butchers, bakers and candlestick-makers" were called to the colours can well be imagined. Black-coat workers rubbed shoulders with dock labourers; intellectuals found themselves next to fitters or farm labourers; whilst honest hard-working youngsters found themselves associating (unknowingly) with a professional thief. A current criminal record does not debar a man from military service.

The Corps of Millitary Police, numbering 400 men. 200 of whom were stationed in Malta, Gibraltar, Cairo, Jerusalem, Hong Kong and Shanghai, had its expansion problems. It increased from 200 to 1,200 by Christmas, 1939, and was so fully engaged learning the new technique of modern warfare that it could not be expected to cope with the crime angle. No thought was given to the criminal dressed in khaki, who, taking advantage of conditions in France, settled down to his nefarious criminal schemes.

Let me emphasise once more that I do not wish the reader to get the impression that the Army was composed of criminals—far from it. Having served in the Army since the early days, I am proud to belong to it, and shall always look back on the comradeship. loyal friendships and happy and sad times with something akin to affection. But there is no denying that occasionally environment brought about a lack of normal responsibility to the State which, early in the war, found its outlet by a wave of crime in the B.E.F.

To the professional thief the chaotic conditions in British and French ports provided heaven-sent opportunities. He had established his French civilian "contacts" and "receivers," whom

the French Gendarmerie, already overburdened by the increased pressure on their own affairs, were hard pressed to control. Here are a few illustrations of the crime situation as it then existed.

In Rennes, with a civilian population of 125,000, there were approximately 6,000 troops. Yet the crimes recorded from October 11 to 28, 1939, were: one case of "smash-and-grab" on a jeweller's shop (jewellery and watches valued at 80,000 francs stolen); four cases of driving away civilian cars (one the official French police car); one attempted breaking into a woman's house; two cases of robbery with violence; six cases of simple stealing; and 15 other cases of assaults, damage to property, "bilking" cafes, etc.

In Nantes, where there were 13,000 soldiers (mostly labour companies), these crimes were recorded in the sixteen days between November 30 and December 16, 1939: one suspicious death of a soldier, three cases of breaking and entering, 20 cases of stealing, five cases of car stealing, eight cases of assault and 72 arrests by the C.M.P. for ordinary offences against military discipline.

The first eight shipments of N.A.A.F.I. stores were pilfered on an enormous scale, and at one time it was estimated that 800,000 francs worth of the British soldiers' property had been stolen. These cases were handed to me for investigation by the present Provost Marshal in India (who was then Senior Military Police official of the Area), on his leaving to take up another appointment. With a little luck and much hard work under adverse conditions, we were able to break up the N.A.A.F.I. gang, resulting in the arrest of six of the ringleaders, who were all sentenced to substantial terms of imprisonment. The total defalcations of this gang ran into 1,628,000 francs. At another port, out of a shipment of 50,000 razor blades, only 26,600 were landed.

Frenchmen were perplexed. They could not be blamed for not being able to differentiate between the fighting soldier, whom they never saw (he being in position well forward) and the particular type of non-combatant soldier who was setting such a bad example.

The French civilian criminal element were not slow to take advantage of the conditions presenting themselves. "Receiving" was rife, particularly with cigarettes and other small articles being transported duty-free for troops in the B.E.F. The Gendarmerie, harassed by having to make billeting arrangements for British soldiers, and French and Belgian evacuees, turned to the Commanding Officer for assistance in tracing these thefts, etc.

There was, however, no one trained to deal with crime in the Army with whom the French police could collaborate; and the latter were discouraged to such an extent that they took little action to bring the French civilian thieves and "receivers" to book, when, on the face of things, the British authorities were taking little or no action to check the miscreants.

Newly-commissioned Army officers had so little knowledge of military law that, even when the culprit was caught, the case was so hopelessly prepared that the J.A.G. had no alternative but to throw it out.

Such were the conditions as they existed in the first three months of the war. It was clear that they would go from bad to worse unless prompt steps were taken to combat them. An urgent call was made by War Office upon the Home Office for trained detectives. The result was a tour of the bases by a senior C.I.D. officer as mentioned above, who reported the conditions I have briefly outlined.

An immediate request was made for C.I.D. officers for the Army. But we, in the London C.I.D., had our own new troubles. Round-up of aliens had begun; our own Force had been expanded to include the War Reserve Police, who had to be trained; black-out had brought with it a new type of crime. In short, we could ill afford to send a contingent of C.I.D. officers to France.

However, eighteen officers were released from the Yard to form the nucleus of a crime-fighting organisation. They served under Superintendent C.I.D., Campion, who was later killed in France. Five officers and myself, commissioned as Second Lieutenants, six Warrant Officers and six Sergeants formed the first team; we arrived in France in early February, 1940, following a short period of training in England. On arrival we split into teams of an officer, a W.O. and a Sergeant, and moved off to our various bases.

Military expressions, ranks, grades, codes, etc., gave me many a headache. But although I had not previously studied military law, I found it easy to assimilate, based as it is on British civillaw, and soon I was inundated with crime inquiries of all kinds. With one W.O. (my Sergeant had been posted) I could never hope to deal with the situation with which I was faced. Consequently I looked round for suitable personnel to help, and fortunately found in the existing C.M.P. companies civil C.I.D. and plain clothes police officers, former soldiers who had been recalled to the colours on the outbreak of war. They were transferred to our Branch, which was then called the Special Investigation Branch of the Corps of Military Police, and it was thus that the Army C.I.D. came into existence.

My team of seven C.I.D. officers then proceeded to carry on with our normal peace-time occupation, and we were engaged on investigating the murder of a British Sergeant by a French soldier when we were ordered to leave and get back to England as quickly as possible. We scrambled out via St. Nazaire with no casualties, my seven having grown to ninety-seven by the attachment of other military policemen on the road home. Eventually we arrived at the C.M.P. depot at Mytchett in the weirdest assortment of dress, but whistling a tune as we trudged up the hill.

On re-forming at Crookham, we found that each "team" was to be allocated to a command in England, Scotland and Northern Ireland, to carry on the work we had begun in France. Commands in England had already been filled, and I was posted as O.C., S.I.B., Northern Ireland. Thinking my Section would wish to serve in Home Commands (they were all from police forces in the South) I started to say goodbye. But the seven to a man said:

"What are we waiting for?" packed their equipment and, together as the original team, travelled to Northern Ireland, where we set up office again.

The 180 miles of Irish border between the Free State and the North presented us with a neat problem. Smuggling of military stores was rife, since such huge prices were realised in the South. With my seven investigators fully engaged in normal crime inquiries, the situation seemed hopeless. But it was tackled, first by making a "no-man's-land" five miles in depth on the northern side, signing all roads "out of bounds" to military personnel and traffic; secondly, by publishing an order making it a Court-Martial offence for any officer or soldier to be found within the "no-man's-land," whether he was found smuggling or not; and, thirdly, by training picked men from the C.M.P. to patrol the border twenty-four hours a day.

The "bag" of persons caught, and the ingenious methods used by the would-be smugglers would fill a book—but we reduced the traffic in military stores by persons subject to military law, to a minimum.

Another system of fraud which engaged our 'attention in Northern Ireland was the supply of quarry stone for the building of aerodromes, then so desperately needed. The Ministry was demanding increased output, calling for more granite, chippings and tar macadam, etc. But as in any sphere of activity, when demand exceeds the supply, fraud is inevitable. Here is a case which will illustrate my point.

In August, 1940, when a large number of airfields were under construction, one of our investigators "picked up" a soldier, employed as a checker on an airfield, with £185 in dirty pound notes concealed in a false-bottomed kitbag. Upon interrogation he elected to say that he received the money from contractors, and then became as "mum as an oyster." After a protracted inquiry we secured sufficient evidence to bring charges of conspiracy against three civilians and seven soldiers, all of whom were heavily punished. As the result of our labours, we recovered £35,000 in actual cash. The saving to the Government can be imagined when it is said that this firm was one of ten supplying one airfield, of which at that time there were nine under construction.

At this time with the influx into Northern Ireland for training of British and American troops, Army contracts for straw, swill, nightsoil, etc., were being tendered and accepted with little or no check on the bona fides of the persons tendering. A little whisper invited our attention, and after four months undercover inquiry, ranging over six counties and Scottish Command, we were able not only to recover a large sum of money, but, more important still, to prevent a contractor, who had been perpetrating similar frauds on the Army since 1928, from participating in Government work for all time. His three years' penal servitude was well deserved.

At this stage in the career of the Branch, it was found that no more C.I.D. officers were available, they having been absorbed into Sections called upon to supply drafts for the M.E.F. and other theatres. An establishment for training young "uniform" policemen was urgently required, and thus in April, 1942, the first course of the S.I.B. School, of which I was the original chief instructor, was begun in the C.M.P. Depôt.

The syllabus, based on the normal civil police detective constable's to sergeant's examination, was necessarily stiff, but we turned out many first-class recruits for this highly-trained work. The courses are still in progress, and recruits turned out have increased the original Branch from 18 to several hundreds.

Each fresh invasion of German-occupied territory sees its Special Investigation Section in the second or third wave. Africa, Sicily, Italy, France—in each S.I.B. Sections were included in the early operations, protecting W.D. property, arresting the civilian receivers, and generally investigating that type of crime associated with active operations. In fact, one of the First Army Sections were so far forward in the Medjez-el-Bab show that they took several prisoners in the rush for Tunis and Bizerta.

The size of a Section is small—an average of 20 officers and men, varying in different theatres according to the addition of interpreters, civil police acting as liaison officers, "native trackers," etc. Allocation of transport is fairly high, since the only "weapons of war" needed (apart from a .38 pistol per man) are a vehicle, typewriter, some paper—and a sound knowledge of the law. Every vehicle is, in fact, a miniature police station, and in active theatres was ready at a moment's notice to rush off into the desert or along the coast to the next town to open up a detachment of the Branch wherever an outbreak of crime was anticipated.

Normally, the work is divided into two main categories, i.e., investigation of non-productive offences against the State and decency, such as murder, manslaughter rape, arson, etc., and the recovery of W.D. property, stolen or unlawfully disposed of or obtained. Except for offences which cannot be committed by military personnel, such as "long firm frauds," "bucket shops," etc., the Branch has investigated every known type of crime, including those with which the British civil Police Officer is not normally familiar, such as gun-running, opium-smuggling, etc.

India, owing to commitments in other theatres, is the last country to receive its Special Investigation Branch, and here it is fairly new. It is, however, getting into its stride following the assistance and active co-operation of all Heads of Services.

Whilst, for security reasons, locations and strengths cannot be given, it is no breach of security to say that the Branch in India has already effected over 2,330 arrests for crime, and has recovered stolen or unlawfully disposed of W.D. property to the tune of over Rs. 7,000,000, or more than £500,000.

Thus we can look back on over four-and-a-half years of everchanging types of crime inquiries, far removed from our civil occupation yet so closely following the lines of our normal everyday employment as to be "detectives in khaki."

Digitized by Google

# MY LAST DAY AS A "FREE-ENGLISHMAN" IN ITALY

By E. X. Pow

At the time when the Armistice between the Allies and Italy was signed on September 8, 1043, the author of this article was in Camp 49 at Fontanellato, between Parma and Piacenza. All the occupants of the camp made good their escape. For over seven months the author lived in German-occupied Italy, finally crossing over into the British lines on March 24-25, 1044. During this time he kept a diary, and the following is his last entry.

ONCE AGAIN we got up very early, before it was light, and settled down in our minute little grass hut. We were not looking forward to spending an indefinite period in this fashion, for apart from the discomfort of the grass hut owing to its diminutive size—it measured only 51 feet by 4 feet and there were three of us—the neighbourhood was not a very healthy one for us or P.O.W's. The food situation was causing us a little anxiety; we had eaten most of the rations given us by our Castelvecchio hosts, and were by no means certain that it would be possible to replace them.

Thus we were sitting on Friday, March 24. It was a dull, raw morning, but this was welcome, as days which started bright and gay usually petered out in wind and rain. The reverse process held true, too, so the unpromising weather augured well for the evening. Our host had particularly asked us not to leave the hut and wander round; he did not wish neighbours to know of our presence. So we prepared for another day of just lying about, and although by now thoroughly accustomed to such an existence, yet days spent in this futile way were beginning to become increasingly irksome.

By midday the weather had improved; a slight wind was blowing, but it was steady and not gusty, so we had great hopes that Buster would come up to scratch tonight. (Buster had been appointed our leader, and we had agreed to entrust ourselves entirely to him and obey him in all respects). At 3-30 our host suddenly appeared, and said Buster wished to start as soon as possible. Hot soup would be brought to us within ten minutes, after which we would leave. As our soup was being drunk, Buster arrived.

How wonderful to feel that, providing all went well, our days in Italy were numbered! Do not imagine we were ungrateful for the many kindnesses shown us by Italian peasants, nor unappreciative of the beautiful country through

Digitized by GOOQI

which we had passed—parts of Italy never traversed by English visitors. But we had walked about 600 miles, spending our time hiding in caves, shepherds' huts, etc., and it was not easy fully to appreciate the beauties of a countryside as a fugitive. We must all have been fervently thankful that we really were on the final lap of the long journey to our lines, and that at last the trying period of waiting was over.

ITALY

llies

thor

jeen

ımþ

the

)นา-

his

is light,

ıt. We

period

e grass

urhood 1e food

n most

i were

eplace

a dull, tarted

The

ather

ılarly,

iund;

o we

ough

yet

:ome

vind

had

zht.

1 to

·es·

ter

be

ve.

11[

h

For this, our last march, we were all travelling light. Some carried nothing at all. Of us three, Carol had a haversack and Johnny an old sack in which were three small loaves, one omelette and a little bacon. I had a haversack and had slung a blank across my shoulder. Buster said the blanket would rouse suspicion if we met a Jerry, but I tountered by saying that a party of twenty-two would make even the most stupid of Germans suspicious, and that it might easily come in useful as a stretcher should anyone hurt himself on the mountain side. I refrained from adding that it would also help to keep me warm, for in our community selfishness did not go with a swing, and any suspicion of it was invariably frowned upon.

But I feel the cold acutely, and know my limitations. That huge snow-covered mountain mass, ten miles away, over which we had to cross, might well hold all sorts of surprises for us, and experience had taught me that mountains must be treated with respect. When deep snow conditions exist, they must be journeyed over with extreme caution. Sad to think that not a few ex P.O.W.s have tackled light-heartedly a mountain route and perished on the way.

All of us were clothed much the same way; none had a greatcoat, nor any gloves. Mine was about average, so I will describe it. I had a pink Homburg hat; a woollen scarf, cotton vest, khaki flannel shirt dyed green; cotton waistcoat; black coat made of ersatz cloth, and which was nearly as thin as alpaca; long woollen drawers (a recent gift); battle-dress trousers dyed black; a well-darned pair of khaki socks; British boots; and wrapped up in my blanket was an old battle-dress blouse.

My haversack contained diaries, spare pair of socks, a leahter flying helmet, one fork, one bandage, a little homemade toffee, some bread and some bacon. Our boots had always been a source of worry and, towards the end, we had only carried out worth-while walks in order to conserve them. Mine were about 18 months old and had never been repaired; although leaking badly for six months, they were still far from being "u/s" when handed in.

Shortly after four o'clock we set off. It was a thrilling moment, and one we had been waiting for many weary

months. We numbered 22, three being Americans, two Russians, two Yugo-slavs, and the remainder British.

Within a quarter of a mile a railway line frequently patrolled by Germans had to be crossed. Some months previously this would have been regarded as a serious obstacle, to be crossed during darkness. Now, though by no means blase, we were confident that we could fend for ourselves in emergency; and we had learnt to walk past Germans unconcernedly, knowing full well that the slightest suspicion of panic might well lead to capture; we knew when to adopt evading action and when to bluff it out.

Buster started off at a great pace, but within twenty minutes told us to wait in a couple of small grass huts. There we remained for half an hour. Moving off, the fast pace—a good 4½ m.p.h.—continued. We skirted round within a mile of Sulmona. It had been well bombed that morning, and all spare Jerries were on fatigue clearing up the damage—or so it was said.

Passing a small and rather isolated farmstead we saw a German soldier outside. He was unarmed and, apart from staring at us, made no attempt to interfere with us. Further on were two German military police armed with Tommy guns, and about thirty yards distant from the point where the main road was crossed. Later, an Italian who had been standing with the two soldiers caught us up; and said that although they were suspicious and curious as to our large number, yet it fortunately did not occur to them to stop us.

Occasionally we passed empty farmhouses. They looked lonely and forlorn, and I wondered where the wretched families had been made to go. One very large farm had a chapel attached; in the courtyard was a lovely old fig tree, bright with fresh green leaves. As we passed, so a big marmalade cat was sauntering round.

Just before dark one last road had to be crossed before getting on to the mountain. We waited for a solitary German tank to rattle past. Then over the road and up a path for a hundred yards; then steeply down to the bed of a stream. Again we found snow. What a lot we had had to do with it during the past months! We had bathed in it eaten it, drunk it; walked on it; fallen in it (so that at times we were buried); and shovelled it. We had learnt to loathe and detest it, and during the next few hours we were destined to have our last round with it.

We halted a few hundred yards up the path in a small village at the foot of the mountain, so that we could all close

up and organise ourselves. It was now just after 8-30 p.m. From the centre of the village the path turned right, climbed gently for half a mile, and then crossed a bridgeless stream; it was just too wide to leap, so most of us put in one foot only with the object of keeping the other one dry. After crossing the stream the path became steeper. We began to meet small drifts of snow, and twenty minutes later we were well into it.

At first the snow was mushy, but it became firmer. Just occasionally a leg would sink through, and then it seemed that leg was in a vice, held tight from foot to knee. But the snow became harder and harder.

Buster was pushing on at a good pace, and we were beginning to spread out badly. The route led round the face of a steep hill; I looked down, and for a hundred yards or so it fell away almost sheer, and ended in a deep rocky gorge. I did not look a second time, for one careless slip would be the first and last. At each step I plunged my heel hard into the snow, then drove in my stick; in this fashion I crossed that unpleasant stretch.

Throughout the night it was bright starlight; and although there was no moon (there was a new moon on March 24), yet with all the ground white with snow, it was easy to see great distances. At 11 p.m. we halted. Word came from the rear that one of the Americans had collapsed; he had been brought round, and one of his compatriots had unselfishly turned back with him. Even at this stage it was pleasant to sit down, but it was a chilly process, for the seat of my trousers had worn through and there were two little holes, one on the right and the other on the left, through which melted snow soon found a way!

Starting off again we went down a small hill and over a mountain stream, which I crossed by leaping from stone to stone and keeping my feet dry. The others were not so fortunate, for there were splashes and muttered oaths all around me. The water must have been damnably cold.

Then we started climbing, climbing. The snow was firm, but eventually we began to go diagonally across the side of the mountain. Then the trouble began. Stretches of sound snow there were, but much of it was in bad condition, so that every fourth step, in one went. It was not really deep—only up to the knees—but quite deep enough to check one's progress badly.

But walking in this way told on our strength. Our rate of advance was painfully slow. At 1 a.m. we halted. I was not too warm and began to feel tired. It was time to

reorganise myself. Off came the blanket and I put my battle-dress blouse over my thin mufti coat; then off with the haver-sack and out came the fling helmet, which I put on. The spare pair of socks I put on my hands as gloves. I should have eaten as well, but felt I would rather rest instead. So I sat on my blanket and kept my bottom dry, and felt pleasantly warm with the extra garments.

Then on once more, still diagonally. We were soon spread out, but what matter? Carol was going splendidly, but he didn't like the steep bits with the nasty drops, and I don't blame him. At one place poor Jack slipped; off he went, careering down the hill as though he were on a bobsleigh. Within sixty yards was a solitary bush. Would he make it? If he didn't he had a long way to go, Crash! the bush caught him and there lay Jack. Roy went down to help, but Jack was none the worse.

We were now going frightfully slowly, and kept on waiting for stragglers. At about 2-30 we started to climb again; it was steep, but not dangerous. I had been eating on and off, but was beginning to feel exhausted. At one time it seemed that with every footstep I went into the snow, and now it was over my waist, so that the effort required to keep on pulling oheself out was considerable.

Still, the incentive to go on and keep going was simply terrific. I was quite determined to get out of German-occupied Italy if it was humanly possible. My legs began to splay outwards, and I thought how absurd I must look—rather like an unwieldy colt. I cursed my right leg for being idle and inefficient: "You, who should be the better and stronger of the two limbs, are now letting down the whole party; just look what Left Leg is doing, dragging along everything. For Heaven's sake, pull yourself together and try to appreciate the fact that if Left Leg should follow your disgraceful example, we shall be stuck."

Then—plop! In I would be again. Always it was my right leg which sank in. There it was, firmly yet comfortably wedged; it was pleasant to rest thus. So often I felt that I could drop off to sleep in no time, and surely it would do me good. But gallant Johnny was always behind me and seemed to be for ever heaving and tugging at my legs. What a first-rate and true friend he was! I wonder how I should have got on without him.

But a time came when I felt that, unless I rested and used my remaining energy to eat, I should soon pass out. So Johnny and I sat and ate a good quantity of bread and bacon, and drank two mouthfuls of brandy. After half an hour we moved off at 4 a.m., feeling miles better.

I started off on hands and knees, as by this method the weight of one's body was well distributed, and there was none of that ghastly burial in the snow. We caught up with some others, and as they were walking easily without sinking, we got up and did so, too. We reached the summit at 5-30 a.m. on March 25. The top of the mountain was about 9,000 feet, and I estimated that the height we crossed was about 7,000 feet. I imagined the worst was over. But I had not reckoned on the blizzard soon to overtake us and scourge us pitilessly.

We waited on the top, whilst mist and cloud floated by. Until this was past, Buster said he could not be sure of the way. The wind was blowing fairly hard, and it was horribly cold. The time might well have been spent resting, but it was impossible to remain sitting for more than a few moments, and in fact, quite unconsciously we kept sheltering behind each other to get out of the wind, and so were slowly to see for more than a short distance. But the snow was hard, and that made all the difference.

We again set off. The wind increased in violence, until in an hour's time a howling blizzard was blowing. It was bitterly cold. Frozen sleet lashed one's face and it was hard to see for more than a distance. But the snow was hard, and that made all the difference.

Twice during the day I felt myself going groggy, and my legs beginning to wander about out of control. But the moment this started I stuffed myself with bread. It was not easy, for the force of the gale compelled one to use all one's strength for walking, added to which the dry bread was difficult to swallow, but the latter was easy to overcome by eating snow with bread. By this time all the snow was frozen hard, so that it was necessary to break off chunks by crashing one's heel violently into the ground. Bread and ice was not an ideal diet, but it kept me going.

However, the blizzard was a blessing in disguise, for no Jerry patrols would willingly wander about in such weather, and even if they were patrolling the area with ski-patrols the visibility was so bad that it would have been necessary for them to come right on to us to have done any good.

The flying helmet gave good protection to my ears and face. We all looked like snow-men. All our hair, eyebrows, eyelashes and moustaches were hung with icicles. This did not matter, except in the case of eyelashes. But an icicle would form half on one's upper lashes and half on the lower ones, and it would be quite impossible to get it off without sacrificing a quantity of eyelashes!

Towards the end, as I walked along, I kept on imagining that on my right stood an Italian farmhouse, and that round the farm stood a wire fence. Constantly I glanced up to look at this farmstead, but of course it was never there. Why this curious association of ideas? Was it that during my travels I had passed so many hundreds of such farmsteads, and was the wire fence, a mental relic of a P.O.W. camp? Or was it something to do with that awful shepherd's hut, which was buried in a wilderness of snow such as we were now passing through, and in which we had spent such a miserably cold ten days?

Soon after midday we began to descend. It was rather fun going straight down, and the farther we descended, so the wind grew less and less. Finally, we found ourselves about 1,500 feet above a shell-shattered village. Was it, as it seem-to be, empty, or did its ruined houses conceal soldiery? If so, were they British or German? Gingerly and quietly we crept down and into the village. All was quiet as the grave.

Suddenly, and quite out of the blue, jumped some men with Tommy guns. For a fraction of a second I think we must all have felt horror-struck at the prospect of falling into enemy hands again. I don't mean that the Germans treated their prisoners badly; my experience was the reverse. But for myself I momentarily had visions again of the appalling existence in a P.O.W. camp.

But, thank God, they weren't Germans. They were men of the 6th D.C.O. Lancers, and never in my life have I been treated more kindly. We were taken into the village church, given chai, biscuits and bully beef, and as many cigarettes as we could smoke. Looking back, it was the most delightful party I've ever attended.

At about 3 p.m. We walked another mile or so and got a truck. How lovely it was to get into a British truck again! It was the first lift of any sort we had had throughout our long journey. What a treat it was for our legs to feel an engine doing a spot of work for them!

Arriving at the H.Q. of the 6th Lancers we were again royally entertained. Then to a rest camp, where we were given a complete new outfit. Our old worn-out garments, verminous and lousy, were put on a funeral pyre. They had done their duty well and truly, but their period of usefulness was definitely over.

That was a happy week-end, spent in drinking innumerable cups of tea, munching chocolates and smoking eigarettes. On the Monday morning, just before our departure, there was a tap on the door, and in came the Camp Quarter Master Sergeant. Excuse me, Sir, there's just one little thing you haven't signed for."

I was back in the Army!

#### **RATIONING IN ENGLAND\***

LY

to look Vhy this travels

and was r was it

ich was passing

cold ten

; rather

ided, so

s about

t seem•

ry? If

tly we

grave.

ie men

nk we

ng into

treated

. But

palling

e men I been

hurch,

tes as

zhtful

d got

gain!

. OUI

1 an

gain

vere

nts,

had iess

er-

:es

125

ter ou By R. DE K. M.

THOSE going Home on leave or retirement will be interested in this account of the rationing system in force at Home.

On arrival at the port of disembarkation passengers undergo an examination by the officials of the Immigration Dept. Certain questions are asked, and passengers are required to state how much money in the shape of coins and notes they have with them. The maximum allowed in this form is  $\pounds_{10}$ ; larger amounts must be carried as Letters of Credit or Travellers Cheques, on which no limit is imposed.

After examination your passport is stamped, and you are told to produce it at the Food Office of the area in which you are going to reside, when an Identity Card and Ration Book will be issued. It is advisable to do this as early as possible, for until you have obtained your Ration Book you will be dependent upon your friends or relations, who will have to share their rations with you. Alternatively, if staying at a hotel, you will be required to produce your Ration Book after four days' stay; failure to do so will probably result in a request to leave.

On application to the Food Office you will be given an Identity Card and Ration Book. If your stay in England is only temporary, you will be given a Temporary Card available for three months, which will have to be renewed later if the need arises. Unlike Identity Cards in India, a photograph is not required.

Your Ration Book also contains your Clothing Book, bound separately, and you are advised to remove this. The current Clothing Book became current from 1st August, 1944, and twenty-four coupons have been allowed for the first six months of the year. If your stay is temporary, you will probably be given coupons pro rata to the currency of your Identity Card, i.e., 12 for three months, and you can apply for more when it is renewed. The procedure in regard to this, however, seems to vary at different Food Offices, but the greatest number you could possibly expect to be given in your Clothing Book would be twenty-four.

As will be seen, this number will be hopelessly insufficient for the ordinary person going home on leave or retirement, and to provide for cases of this kind you are entitled to apply for and to receive a certain number of Supplementary Coupons. Your Food Office will tell you to whom application for these must be made, and will supply the appropriate application form. Before filling

<sup>\*</sup>We are indebted to the "South India Review" for permission to reproduce this article.

Men

this form in, it will be necessary to make as complete a list as possible of what you require in the way of personal clothing and household linen, and you will be required to give this information in the form with a brief statement as to why Supplementary Coupons are necessary. It is well to remember that if you arrive in the colder months of the year and are returning to the East you will not only want thick clothing but also thin clothing later for your return, and your application should take this into account.

The number of Supplementary Coupons issued by different offices appears to vary a great deal, and the writer has heard of a case in which as many as 200 coupons were given, whilst in another case which seemed equally deserving, only 32 were issued. The following will give some idea of the number of coupons to be surrendered when different articles of clothing are purchased.

Women

					•••	***************************************		
Suit with	waistco	at 2	б coup	ohs.	Frock, woollen	11 0	eoupons.	
Rain coa	ıt	1	6,	, .	, cotton or silk	7	"	
Sports C	oat	<b> 1</b>	6,	,	Coat (lined)	18	,,	
Grey flannel trousers 8 ,,				" (unlined)	14	"		
Shoes	• •	••	9,		Mac	9-15	20	
Shirt	••	••	7,	,	Nightdress	7	,,	
Vest	••		6,	,	Skirt	7	**	
Socks	••	••	2,	,	Shoes	7	,,	
Collar	••	••	1,	,	Blouse '	4	,,	
	•				Gloves	2	"	
					Stockings	3	,,	
				į	Material 36" wide	2	**	
		,			•		per vd.	

It will be readily appreciated that unless a liberal supply of Supplementary Coupons has been obtained, any purchase of clothing or linen on a large scale will be impossible. Therefore, when going home, take with you any serviceable clothes or linen likely to be useful, and especially the latter if you are setting up house, for not only do articles such as sheets, towels and kitchen cloths need coupons, but certain items are practically unobtainable and, if available, are of poor quality and expensive.

So much for Clothing, and now for the Ration Book itself. This can be most conveniently described under the five sections into which it is divided, viz;

(1) The Weekly Ration; (2) Points; (3) Personal Points; (4) Tea; (5) Soap.

For the purpose of the Weekly Ration the book, which became current for one year from 23rd July, 1944, has been divided into 52 weekly periods, and the following table shows the different articles of food rationed and the quantity, or value in the case of meat, to which you are entitled per week. The scale is subject to

slight alteration from time to time, advertised by the Food Ministry in the newspapers.

1s. 2d. Meat As available. Seldom more and often less Eggs than 1 per week. Butter 2 OZS. Margarine 4 " ---2 Fat Cheese 3 " 4 Bacon ,, Sugar l pint per day. Milk

Children are allowed certain additions.

To obtain your weekly ration (daily in the case of milk) it is necessary to register with a butcher, grocer and milkman, and to fill in and hand to each the forms provided in the Ration Book. When supplies are made, a line will be drawn by the supplier against the week, to which they are due. When going away from home you can get from your Food Office a Temporary Ration Card to enable you to obtain supplies at the place where you are staying. You do not have to produce your book or Temporary Card when having meals at restaurants, nor when staying at hotels for periods of 4 days or less. It is, however, well to remember that casual meals in hotels are not always easy to obtain, as preference is rightly given to residents.

For the purpose of Points and Personal Points, the Ration Book is divided into 13 periods of 4 weeks each, and, unlike the weekly ration, purchases against Points and Personal Points can be made at any time during the period, but unused Points cannot be carried forward to the next ration period. Points in varying numbers have to be surrendered against the purchase of items such as "Spam" (chopped ham in tins), tinned fish, tinned fruit and jam, biscuits, rice and dried fruits. You are allowed 24 Points per period, and the number to give up varies from 31 for a tin of first-grade salmon to 1 for a small tin of herrings, so that purchases must be made with discretion if Points are to be used to the best advantage.

Personal Points, like Points, can be used at any time in the Monthly Ration Period and at any shop, and are for the purchase of sweets and chocolates of which you are allowed 12 ozs. per period.

The Tea ration is 2 ozs. per week, and it may either be obtained weekly or in quantities of 8 ozs. for the Ration Period of 4 weeks. For the single person or small family this allowance does not go far, and the occasional present of a parcel of tea from India is a most acceptable one. Coffee is not rationed, but usually requires more milk to prepare than tea.

The last item in the Ration Book is Soap, and you are allowed 4 small cakes of toilet soap, or 2 small cakes and a packet of soap flakes for the four-weekly period.

Two other commodities rationed are fuel and petrol, but as quantities vary in the case of individuals and also in different localities, the quantities allowed cannot be stated here.

Drinks are not rationed except by availability, or more correctly by their non-availability. Spirits, unless you or your family happen to have been a recent and regular customer of a wine merchant, are extremely difficult to obtain, and then only in very small quantities. Beer and stout can generally be obtained, though difficulty in getting supplies in some localities does seem to arise at times.

Although the scale of rations and points may appear to be small, every one at Home seems to agree that when supplemented by unrationed food, such as bread, pocatoes, vegerables, fish, pork pies, sausages and tinned soup, it is ample, and there is no reason why any one should go hungry, though many people have lost weight. Every one with whom the writer discussed "rationing" was full of praise for the system, which has been designed to ensure an equal division of the available essential supplies in the country amongst rich and poor alike.

# The Value of Infantry

"The role of the infantry is to close with and destroy the enemy. Artillery cannot shell a determined enemy our of a position, nor can they alone stop an enemy attack. Atmour cannot destroy in detail nor hold ground, and its action is limited by the ground and the antidotes to armour, such as the anti tank gun and mines.

"Infantry is the only arm which in the offensive can operate and get at the enemy anywhere, and in the defensive can definitely stop the enemy by means of its own fire power—that is, small, arms.

"The ultimate issue, therefore, on the battlefield must depend on the infantry, and, consequently, the outcome of any war. I say this with all due respect to the other arms, whose support is directed toward assisting the infantry to achieve their object, and without which the infantry would suffer unacceptable casualties." —Major-General T. N. F. Wilson. ecrol, but a in different

r more coyour family r of a wine only in very ned, though em to arise

pear to be plemented fish, port no reason have lost rationing" esigned to ies in the

stroy the f a posicannot ited by ink gun

operate finitely small

ar. I ori is , and tries."

# MILITARY READING (II)

By Siegfried P\*

ORD WOLSELEY declared at a lecture in Dublin that: "A certain amount of reading and a certain amount of study is absolutely necessary for any man who ever wishes to command troops in the field; and," he added, "so far as I know of the study of war, the great thing is to read a little and think a great deal and think it over and over again."

As Lin Yutang tells us in "The Importance of Living," Confucius, also, evidently felt that scholarship without thinking was more dangerous than thinking unbacked by scholarship. Confucius remarked: "Thinking without learning makes one flighty, and learning without thinking is a disaster."

Napoleon said: "If I always appear prepared, it is because before entering on an undertaking I have meditated for long and have foreseen what may occur. It is not genius which reveals to me suddenly and secretly what I have to do in circumstances unexpected by other people; it is reflection, it is meditation;" and to prepare he advised thus: "Read and reread the campaigns of the great captains. . . . the campaigns of Alexander, Hannibal, Cæsar, as well as those of Gustavus Adolphus and Turenne."

It was the art of Command, generalship, he had in mind; the strategems of Hannibal, the manœuvres of Alexander, Cæesar's utilisation of moral forces, and the strategic march of Turenne—the art of grand or major tactics; the devices by which the commander seeks to overthrow his enemy on the battlefield, his use of mobility coupled with surprise, not minor tactics or drill movements of the battlefield.

With strategy,—or bringing the enemy to battle where the Commander wishes and the operations which follow the battle,—ordinary military virtues are not directly, or rather are much less, concerned than intellectual capacity and a wide knowledge of war. Said Henderson: "No great commander has attained a wide knowledge of work from personal experience alone. All have studied from books the experience of past great commanders."

Not the least of such experience concerns their understanding of human nature and morale as affected by discipline, fear, hunger, over or under-confidence, distrust, patriotism, politics, etc. If the master of major or minor tactics ignores this, he risks disaster. As Henderson wrote: "Human nature, the paramount consideration of either tactics or strategy, remains unaltered. The art of

<sup>\*</sup>The author contributed an article entitled "Military Reading" to this Journal in April, 1940. The above contribution, largely extracts from Henderson's classic "The Science of War," has been compiled to focus again the attention of officers to the great value to be derived from reading. —Ed., U. S. I. Journal.]

generalship, the art of command, whether the force be large or small, is the art of dealing with human nature."

Sir Charles Napier, himself an example of the highest military genius, who not only did not disdain incessant study of his profession, but thought it indispensable to success, gave the following advice to a young officer: "By reading you will be distinguished; without it, abilities are of little use. A man cannot learn his profession without constant study to prepare especially for the higher ranks. When in a post of responsibility, he has not time to read; and, if he comes to such a post with an empty skull, it is then too late to fill it. Thus many people fail to distinguish themselves, and say they are unfortunate, which is untrue; their own previous idleness unfitted them to profit by fortune."

# Luck in War

"The aim of our campaign in Italy was to destroy as much of the enemy forces as possible, and to produce a first-class victory just before the Second Front was launched. Rome was that victory. The break-out from the Anzio beach head provided an outstanding example of the difficulties of correct timing.

"General Clark in planning this break-out had to have four days to move his men and guns and tanks into position secredy, otherwise the element of surprise would have been lost. Therefore, with that time lag. I had to calculate when the correct moment had arrived by anticipating several days ahead. I don't wish to blow my own trumpet—luck plays a great part in these matters—and up to date I have been lucky.

"Rome fell on June 4, twenty four to forty eight hours before the western invasion had been launched. We made a slight miscalculation there—it was running it a bit fine—but it worked out all right because the Second Front was postponed for 24 hours because of bad weather—luck again."—Field Marshal Alexander, addressing war correspondents in Italy.

# "A Mercenary Army"

"The strictures of an irresponsible American journalist, one of whose charges was that the Indian Army was a mercenary force—volunteers being apparently of a lower status than 'draft' menremind one of A. E. Housman's poem on 'A Mercenary Army'.

These, in the day when heaven was falling,
The hour when earth's foundations fled,
Followed their mercenary calling.
And took their wages and are dead.
Their shoulders held the sky suspended:
They stood, and earth's foundations stay;
What God abandoned these defended,
And saved the sum of things for pay.

"There is the stuff of immortality in this."—
"Janus," in "The Spectator."

Digitized by Google

be large or

highest milistudy of his is, gave the you will be A man can epare especibility, he has th an empty fail to distinh is untrue;

y fortune."

roy as much -class victory ne was that provided an ng.

to have four tion secretly, lost. There the correct ad. I don't art in these

ours before slight misworked out 24 hours Alexander,

nalist, one enary force aft' men-Army'.

01."

### POST-WAR CAREERS FOR YOUNG OFFICERS

### By Alan Rasp.

THERE is a current impression that the young Officer or Soldier who, at this juncture, considers his post-war prospects is a mere day-dreamer. This is very wide of the mark—there is much that he can do to-day. In fact he is now being given, as will be explained later, an unparalleled opportunity to fit himself into the right niche—if only he will take it.

Discussion with young men soon shows that they often know what they would *like* to do, but this is invariably stultified by the addendum that nothing can be done about it "till the war is over." The correct approach, surely, is:

First: to find out what he is best fitted for,

Second: to decide if he prefers work at home or abroad,

Third: if the preference is for abroad, to find which country will meet his particular bent; data is necessary.

Fourth: to consider possibles and frame a plan.

Fifth: To find what he can learn now about his choice—

and learn it.

This article will deal with the subject accordingly.

Of course, the Government has promised not only food and homes, but work for all, and if the demobilised ex-Serviceman is content to wait for the Ministry of Labour to hand him something on a platter, he will no doubt be served. It does not, however, seem likely that those content to accept this portion of nurturing from the cradle to the grave will ever satisfy their ambitions—if, indeed, they have any. The William Morrises of this world did not become Lord Nuffields without thinking for themselves and taking risks.

The unparalleled opportunity now afforded is twofold; first, men have been forced, willy-nilly, out of their peacetime avocations, often the wrong ones, and secondly, by their journeys abroad, they see countries and other men of varied nations and walks of life.

Before the war many men were in the wrong job, because they either neglected their parents' advice when good, accepted it when bad, or apathetically followed in father's footsteps! Once committed and bound by the chains of hire-purchase, they were afraid to change. One of the blessings of the war is that it has given such men, perforce, a second chance, much as a certain prewar dock clerk who lost his job through asking for a rise, emerged as one of the leading playwrights of to-day!

Let, therefore, the young man be introspective. If in his prewar avocation he felt that he was denied a sense of fulfilment, it is more than likely that he started in the wrong career. But to know what he would *like* to do is only a small part—he must consider if he is mentally, financially and temperamentally equipped for the change he yearns. The course suggested will, of course, apply equally to boys who left school with no fixed career in mind.

Unfortunately the majority shy from the very sound of Psychiatrist, or even Vocational Psychologist, whereas if they were invited to consult an expert in placing the right man in the right job, they would queue up! For those at home and in a position to do so, the soundness of consulting these specialists is backed by the fact that the Army has taken them over as advisors on the Personnel Selection Boards. Army Educational Officers can advise where and if a Psychiatrist can be consulted.

The Psychiatrist does not work by magic. He simply makes a study of the characteristics necessary for the various careers and then, by certain tests, verbal, non-verbal and reasoning, deduces which of several careers will suit the candidate.

The system has progressed far, especially in American civil life, since its inception in 1914. It is essentially a human science, for it sets out not merely to make a cold scientific investigation, but to ascertain individual idiosyncracies and to define the endowments of the individual, such as his nous, imagination, the essential soundness of his nature, as well as to check such obvious points as manual dexterity.

Having come to a conclusion on these matters, the psychologist next turns to the qualities desirable in the various occupations, a subject on which he is naturally fully informed. But before making suggestions for the individual in question, he takes into account the family traditions, financial prospects, special wishes, age, and previous training, etc.

That the Army has been wise in consulting the psychiatrist is already proved. Before cadets for O.C.T.Us. were scientifically selected, 25 per cent. of those who commenced the course were eventually found to be unsuitable. Now there are but 2 per cent., a high tribute to the new system.

Unfortunately, however, not only are those overseas precluded from this advice, but those at home may find a consultation difficult to arrange. But, even so, there is much the individual can do. He cannot carry out scientific tests on himself but he, at least, may have ambitions. He can certainly do what most youths, parents, and even many schoolmasters are too lazy to do—investigate the occupational field. This in itself is of great value, for while he may have personal leanings towards a certain career, he should view such wishes with caution.

When, however, he is in possession of detailed information about the requirements, particularly in temperament, of the occupation, its prospects, disadvantages and risks, and has secured something more concrete than a boy's impression, then indeed he is in a better position to choose.

Even the youth with no fixed desire will profit from such a study, for it may set a spark glowing and so save him from trying

after the war to adapt himself to whatever job is on offer, regardless of his suitability for it, rather than to follow the sane course of choosing the career to fit his desires and, so far as he can judge, his capabilities. The study of the requirements of various careers may, on the other hand, at least show him in certain cases that he would merely be striving in vain beyond his depth. In any event, it will help him to make an intelligent choice of the best profession. How much better this is than mere guesswork or acceptance of fate! To provide himself with an objective will in itself be salvation.

#### Home or Abroad?

Having narrowed down the choice of career to three or four he must now decide where to seek his fortune.

Before the war, a young man's horizon was usually the margin of a book, a map, or a cinema screen. His viewpoint was limited to that of his own kind, Scot to Scot, clerk to clerk, Sandhurst boy (sorry, man!) to Sandhurst man. Any new venture was a shot in the dark.

To-day this is not so. Many are seeing new lands and can, if they use their eyes and imagination, judge for themselves. Even if they do not visit all the countries which interest them, at least they are thrown into daily contact with men of all walks of life and of all Domínion and Allied countries. This golden opportunity must be seized by "pumping" as wide a variety of men as possible. Before doing so, it is well to be clear, in general, on the pros and cons of a life abroad.

Many an ex-Serviceman will look forward with horror to a return to the daily 8-45 and the black bag in the overcrowded market of Fngland. He may rightly realise that in the Dominions he will find greater scope for initiative—that responsibility will come earlier than at home—that he will achieve a broader outlook and have vastly better opportunities for sport. Modern science, he will tell you, has made ill-health abroad a thing of the past.

Let him study the other side of the picture as applied to the country he has his eye on, and the particular career he has in mind. Does he want to settle down with a wife, family and his little possessions around him? If so, he must go carefully, for in many lands the children must be sent home at six. There follows a life of half-time grass widower when the lady in the case is called home to fill the role of mother—next, a period when she is taking the stage as wife and is consumed with anxieties for her children in a more or less unknown holiday home in England.

Make no mistake—this is a very real problem—one which often ends in early retirement and the death of ambition.

There is another setback yet to be faced on retirement from abroad. The daily-breader in England has not only a home of his own but a village, or at least a street of his own—a place in which he, his wife and children have made lifelong friends. Relations are near and in regular contact. But the home-coming wanderer? Oh, no. For him and his family, life must start all over again, for childhood friends are scattered.

However youth, thank God, usually laughs at difficulties and many will elect the more adventurous life abroad. Very well then—let him collect facts. Libraries and Dominion Houses are useful sources of information, but to clothe the dry bones collected, he must turn to his newly-met friends and gain the human angle.

If he is wise he will not be content to judge on pre-war conditions. He must find whether there is scope for the career he elects in the country of his choice, viewed in relation to post-war tendencies. For this he will find *The Journal of Careers*, with its lucid "Career Summaries" and articles on overseas careers by men such as Mr. Donald Cowie, invaluable.

Canada, for example, is regarded by many as just the place for the farmer's lad. True enough in the past—but to-day, thanks to her development as a wartime producer of munitions, her future holds out a very different prospect. She may, in fact, turn from a primary agricultural country to one with infinite opportunities in the mineral and manufacturing industries. The youth with an urge for farming who, naturally, thinks of Canada should go very carefully. He may even not be admitted.

On the other hand, the man with an inventive genius, especially in devices to mechanize what is now done by the industrial labourer, might not realise that Canada holds ever-increasing opportunities. This is because she is already the third greatest industrial state in the world—and yet her unlimited natural resources are so far still untapped for lack of labour. Mining will certainly boom—gold, high-grade iron-ore, copper, bauxite (for aluminium) asbestos are only a few examples. Wood pulp for plastics will be in great demand. Electricity, chiefly for refining these metals, will offer many openings. It is a natural corollary that building will require many specialists in such branches as modern factories, earth hauling and excavation.

South Africa, on the other hand, holds out hope to the farmer. Many, hearing of ex-Servicemen who failed as farmers in Africa in the 'thirties, or who were refused admission, may scratch that Dominion off the slate. But the future is brighter than the past—the Government and the 1820 Settlers Association will do all they can to stimulate what is, after all, Africa's leading industry, firstly to feed and clothe Europe, and secondly to raise the standard of living of the negro population, in itself a vast market. Individual side-lines are worth special study—canning and seed-raising being examples.

The effect of the war on this deep, untapped market has been a demand for skilled workers in other fields—more cereals means that new plants to mill the flour or make breakfast cereals will spring up—mining engineers who have acquired experience in handling native labour will be needed.

These two random examples in turn produce new calls—farmers need fertilizers, and their produce must be converted into food, opening the field to brewers, confectioners, sugar and starch makers and so on. New factories require oil, glass, cement, iron

and steel furnaces. In fact South Africa, owing to the war, is turning from being an importer of steel and manufactured metal goods, to being an exporter. Obviously she is short of skilled workers and is still an expanding dominion.

New Zealand suffered, before the war, from a plethora of applicants for the few jobs advertised. This was a natural result of being too far from markets for the export of agricultural produce. In consequence, New Zealand's youth turned to engineering and allied trades. It seems natural, therefore, that the English emigrant will have to face heavy competition from local men who are not only highly skilled but understand local conditions.

This dominion accordingly seems to be one for the man who has got something the others have not—for example a very high qualification in the development of new industries, a specialised scientific training in forestry or the development of forestry byproducts. New Zealand, in short, appears to be a country in which, above all others, enquiry to discover the right niche will be well repaid.

The Colonies. In seeking information about the Colonies, political progress should loom largely. Any Colony which, for example, has such a high educational standard as to be nearing Dominion status, will have less to offer. Just as in India the majority of posts in the Civil Service, police, forestry, etc. are reserved for Indians, so in a Colony rapidly developing, preference must, rightly, be given to the inhabitants.

But in Colonies which are still primitive there will be a wide variety of uplifting, constructive work, especially in the civif services—police, customs, medical, education. The range is legion provided suitable training or a good university degree is obtained. To those seeking more independence, the life of a planter is still a possibility. Salesmanship in trades such as radio, motor cars, and aeroplanes by those who can combine commercial knowledge with technical experience is worthy of investigation, as is the growth of newspapers and radio stations.

# Possibles and a Framing Plan

The young officer or soldier has by now got a good deal beyond the "I'd like to be an engine driver" stage. He knows several careers for which he is best fitted, whether he can develop them at home or abroad, and which country will probably offer most scope. But there are a few points to categorise before he makes his final decision. Is he going for "job getting"—a paid post with security and a pension? Or "job making" with its adventure, risk of poverty or riches, and all the freedom of being his own master? Or remain in the Services as a regular? In each of the three he must judge boom possibilities.

It would be pointless to discuss here all openings, but the ponderer should list those safe posts suited to himself, e.g., schoolmaster, games-master, Civil Service, estate agents, indoor lighting, heating, sound proofing and the like. All safe, paid, and requiring no capital. Will they boom after the war? Consider each,

Many talk vaguely of "getting a job in industry." The writer thas worked in intimate touch with men of varying grades, from Managing Directors to foremen. As a soldier he is forced to admit that the industrialist would have few vacancies, with a good future, to offer to the untrained ex-Serviceman. The writer could certainly not hope to hold down, without training, an industrial job working in daily touch with men who have a specialised knowledge of each varied branch of each trade. I stress the words "without training."

Factors to balance are whether the work can be taken up where one lives (a great saving of expense), how much capital is required, and if it is likely to boom. Examples of careers which might be considered are, travel agencies, especially to and by the sea, civil aviation, building, hotel management, greyhounds—all obvious "boomers." Motoring is another, but there will be a glut in mechanics. The prospects of big rewards and of being one's own master are tempting, but very sound advice is essential before capital is spent. There are a thousand ideas to toy with—eggs, furs, honey, road houses (out-of-date?—consider aerodrome-side houses?), furniture making and selling—the list is legion.

The Services may possibly afford the choice of, firstly, a temporary career during post-war years and, secondly, of regular service. Temporary service may tempt many, especially those with no specific aim, but before accepting this easy solution, it will be well to bear in mind the loss of priceless years.

As regards regular service, even the successful war-time sailor, soldier or airman should think carefully. Is he temperamentally as well fitted for the dull routine of a service starved of modern equipment in peace-time as he was for the rough and tumble of battle? Will the service in future offer sufficient attraction? Rightly or wrongly it was, in the past, regarded as an unprofitable waste of brains. Will it boom and bring riches? Certainly not riches, but at least the Paymaster pays up on the dot, trade depressions or not.

It seems unlikely that it will boom, but the Country will, one hopes, be afraid to repeat the "axings" of the 'twenties and 'thirties. But if he has the right temperament, prefers knocking about the world to a daily Tube ride, and has the brains and personality to enter the Staff College and gain promotion by merit, there seems little point starting all over again in a new career.

The warrior is now ready to make his final choice. It only remains to use every spare second during the war in learning all about it.

### What can be Done Now

There is hardly a career about which a great deal can not be learnt, even in war-time. Every soldier experiences those periods when weather or other causes involve long spells of boredom. The super-pessimist may even like to be ready to commence study the moment he is a prisoner of war! What can be done during these periods?

Firstly, if the chosen career involves the expenditure of capital, a saving plan must be worked out and continued. Even if the subject is one of the few for which specific study is not possible, the improvement of one's English cannot but be a help; the ability to understand and be understood in the written and spoken word helps in every career.

The future mining engineer, industrial leader or worker in plastics, for example, cannot secure practical knowledge, but at least he can get a lot of theoretical study behind him in, respectively, mathematics and geology, physics, or cost accounting and industrial psychology. Even the would-be doctor can absorb a great deal of biology, physics and chemistry. Study need not, however, be confined to theory; the man with a useful hobby—carpentry, for example—can obtain practical instruction unless he is overseas.

It remains to suggest some specific sources of guidance for those seeking advice on what to study:

- (a) The Journal of Careers will give details of study for innumerable careers.
- (b) Many Correspondence Courses are advertised,
- (c) For officers, the Employment Bureau of ex-Army Officers, and for other ranks, the Education Officer, have a vast amount of data available.

Above all, the War Office Vocational Training Courses are not nearly widely enough known. Under this system, for a nominal fee of ten shillings the student can receive instruction in any of 139 courses, varying from accountancy (16 courses) to grocery, insurance, law, and so on. Students, for example, can take a course adapted to the requirements of the Intermediate Examination of Building Societies Institute or for the London Matriculation Examination. Text books and transport are provided free, the student is allocated to a Correspondence College, free of charge, is given the syllabus and the name and address of the tutor. Any useful hobby or handicraft can be developed in a practical manner and in many cases tools are supplied free of charge.

Above all the habit of academic study, so soon lost under service conditions, must be fed if it is not to die, and the ex-Serviceman must choose his career and not allow it to choose him. Thus, when given the opportunity of demobilization, he will be ready to state clearly his aims—an aim for which, in the meantime, he has put in many hours of hard work during the precious years of war and youth.



<sup>\* (</sup>A short article dealing with the special application of this subject to middle-aged officers about to retire with a pension, will appear in our next issue.)

# SOME FURTHER REFLECTIONS ON WAZIRISTAN

By "Mir Död"

COLONEL SIMPSON'S articles on the History of the N.-W. Frontier which have appeared in recent issues of the Journal are full of interest, and few will disagree with his final analysis. Like so many other writers on this important subject, however, he is driven to the conclusion that some form of the "Sandeman System"—call it what you will—is necessary if the tribesmen are ever to be pacified, but this is a problem which has hitherto baffled all attempts at a solution.

It would be idle to minimize the difficulties, but it may perhaps be worth while to recapitulate some of the major obstacles to a peaceful penetration of Waziristan, and to put forward a very tentative suggestion in the light of the hard facts.

We have to contend with: -

The nature of the country,

The attitude and characteristics of the tribesmen,

Expense,

and various policy problems, external and internal.

Let us face them.

(1) As Colonel Simpson points out, the whole of Waziristan is very barren. Few areas can be made productive, and all of these, incidentally, are in Wazir territory and none in Mahsud hands. The Daurs own all the cultivation which exists in the Tochi Valley, but drought, spates, intense cold, and heavy hailstorms have all in turn prevented the fullest use being made of the small areas elsewhere in Waziristan on which crops of any kind could be grown, and when we add to this the constant risk of raids, it is small wonder that nothing has come of the agricultural and other projects which from time to time have been initiated.

Irrigation has not been found possible for various reasons, amongst which expense and the nature of the soil (mostly shale) were no doubt the deciding factors, and, except in the main streams, there is very little water available.

(2) Wazirs and Mahsuds all originated from the same Darwesh Khel stock, and although the Mahsuds are prone to forget this, they are in fact very closely related to the Wazirs and have much the same characteristics. All are extremely fanatical, but possessed of a keen—if perverted—sense of humour. They are very lazy, and although avaricious to a degree will take no thought beyond the needs of the moment—unless indeed they can see a large and immediate profit.

The whole population is pastoral, and not agricultural, and they only grow crops just sufficient for their own requirements. They are migratory, and some of the Wazir Sections move with the seasons across the Durand Line to and from Birmal and other areas of Afghanistan. Many of them live in caves for part of the year, and for the rest in small grass shelters, but there are three large villages which deserve the name of "towns," and settlements or collections of villages in several areas.

In the case of the Mahsuds, a complete tribe does not necessarily keep to the area where it predominates, but splits up into small sections inextricably mixed over the whole countryside. In one small portion of the Khaisara, for instance, there are Miche Khels, Nekzan Khels, Urmur Khels, Shabi Khels, and several others, in the space of three or four miles, thus adding a further complication whenever any punitive action has to be taken against a particular sub-section.

There is no need here to recapitulate the excellent military qualities of these tribesmen, as they are well-known. Potentially they are perhaps the finest fighting men in Asia, with unsurpassed powers of endurance. Unfortunately, the Wazirs are particularly treacherous and untrustworthy, while the Mahsud does not take kindly to discipline, and, besides being extremely obstinate and self-willed, is often betrayed by his fiery nature into the most desperate civil or military crimes which are usually irreparable: he cannot be handled at all except by his own officers, who know him intimately.

Wazirs and Mahsuds dislike and despise all types of Indians, with the exception of a few classes whose military qualities they recognize. They will often refrain from attacking certain battalions which are well known to them, unless they consider the circumstances exceptionally favourable to themselves, but in general they possess an unbounded self-confidence which, in battle, stands them in good stead.

Their dislike of others is heartily reciprocated by all, and their immediate neighbours (such as the Orakzais, with whom they come in contact across the Upper Miranzai and Kurram Valleys) are in perpetual feud with them. They may be fanatical Mussalmans, but they are in many respects unorthodox, and no follower of the Prophet will forgive them for their murders of men at prayer, or in the mosque, of which many cases are on record.

Their way of life is primitive, and they look upon war as a game—in much the same way as we should enjoy a football match. The rise of each new generation usually means trouble in Waziristan, in cycles of about seven to ten years. They have no use for education, though there is a school for Bhitanni children at Jandola, and another for Wazir children at Wana, and possibly others. The Maliks have little hold upon them, for each man thinks himself just as good as, or better than, his neighbour, but fortunately for us there has always been antagonism between Wazirs and Mahsuds, and they are perhaps never likely to combine against us as a whole.



Many attempts at a rapprochement have been made by the Faqir of Ipi and others, but the Mahsuds all follow Fazl Din, son of the "Mullah Powindah," and although this man is by no meansfriendly to us, he is very jealous of his own prestige and power. The Faqir of Ipi is in his eyes an upstart, and a Tori Khel Wazir to boot, and Fazl Din will have none of him. Meantime, the annual disputes about grazing rights on the Razmak plateau continue as usual, and Mahsuds and Wazirs remain at enmity.

The tribesmen fiercely resent any encroachment upon their independence, of which they are intensely proud, and in passing it may be said that exactly the same feeling persists in Tirah, where any advance by us would immediately bring in the united strength of all the Orakzais and Afridis to defend their land.

Ethnologically and topographically all these tribesmen belong to Central Asia and not to India, and their outlook is to the West into Afghanistan. They have a marked trust and liking of British officers and generally get on very well with them, but apart from this they prefer to have as little as possible to do with India—with which, indeed, their connection is purely arbitrary.

(3) The original cost of building roads in Waziristan wasnotoriously very great, and the amount spent annually on their maintenance and upkeep must be enormous. These are all military roads, strategic and uneconomic.

It is incredible that any Government would face the even greater cost of the building and upkeep of a railway from (say). Bannu to Razmak, which could offer no possible economic return and would require in addition to be constantly and most vigilantly guarded throughout its entire length. Such a railway would be of no help towards civilizing a Mahsud or Wazir. On the contrary, it would present him with the highest form of temptation in the shape of a most amusing and gratifying moving target, on which he would no doubt be only too delighted to register.

(4) Fraternization between troops and tribesmen has been suggested. It is not yet possible. It may be that the mutual dislike and distrust which at present exist might in time be overcome, but security conditions neither permit the tribesmen to have access to the Camps nor the troops to wander about outside.

The tribesmen would never allow troops to enter their villages, nor would it be safe for them to go there. There is no medium of conversation, and even the enlisted classes of Pathans find great difficulty in understanding the Waziristan dialect—which is quite as different from Yusufzai Pushtu as Cornish is from Cockney.

There was, indeed, a time when, at the spring a mile or so outside Manzai on the Khirgi road, the Bhitanni ladies showed themselves by no means averse to dalliance with some young British signaller out for his evening stroll, but such contacts are both undesirable and dangerous, and probably the only tribesmen who are normally seen at close quarters are the Khassadars. Otherwise the locals keep very much to themselves, and expect the troops—who on their part have no inclination to do otherwise—to mind their own business.

There is in fact no common ground for an understanding.

(5) There are strong arguments against the unrestricted use of air power, which is after all a purely destructive force, when applied to Waziristan. Modern bombing is a terrible weapon which may destroy communications and wipe out whole cities. The tribesmen's Waziristan has neither communications nor cities (unless we count Makin and Kaniguram), and conditions of cloud, air and weather amongst these high mountains are such as to render low flying exceedingly dangerous and accurate bombing almost an impossibility. Targets will always be small and perhaps impossible to pick out, with the ever-present probability that the wrong one will be hit.

It will be remembered that, in 1931, a proposal that the R.A.F. should maintain the whole security of the Border was carefully considered, and then for very good reasons finally dropped. Great strides have been made in the intervening years, and in the next Waziristan campaign there is no doubt that much greater use of air support will be made. Yet the whole idea of this soulless bombing from the Air is the very antithesis of the eventual pacification which we wish to produce, and its intensification will only result in more savage reprisals and more murders of innocent. British officers on the Bannu road.

Increased air offensives will certainly exasperate the Mahsud: they will never intimidate him.

(6) The greatest complications in our dealings with the tribesmen of Waziristan are matters of International Policy, and are bound up with our attitude towards Afghanistan, where the present Government is friendly and co-operative.

As the years pass, and the chance of any return of Amanullah grows less and less, the Government of Zahir Shah becomes more stable and the likelihood of a major upheaval more remote. Nevertheless, the Afghan Government has its own tribal problems and has never yet found itself able to control the whole country up to the Durand Line.

There is thus a No-man's land on either side of the border which has become the happy landing ground of all the worst outlaws, where men like the Faqir of Ipi take refuge when the rest of the country becomes too hot to hold them, and which has for them the supreme merit of being practically inviolable unless both Afghans and British can take strong action simultaneously. Moreover, as we ourselves do not control any of that part of Waziristan lying west of a line drawn between Razmak and Wana—much of which is a second Kashmir, and an ideal site for pleasant and healthy cantonments—there can be no check whatever on the passage of armed parties to and fro across the border in the case of Wazirs, and very little in the case of Mahsuds.

It is not intended here to do more than suggest that a forward move to the Durand Line has many attractive possibilities, that it would most probably lead to the peace of this part of the border and be welcomed by a friendly Afghan Government, and that the initial outlay would be more than compensated for in a very few years by the reduction of current expenditure in small expeditions.

However, this may be, the first essential is clearly to get at the heart and core of Waziristan, the only thing when all's said and done that really matters—the Mahsud. How can this be done?

If it be agreed that the foregoing observations are more or less correct in substance—and on these points it may be strongly suspected that "Spingirai," whose letter appears in the October number of the Journal, has a very much more intimate knowledge than most—we can take it that while no economic return can be expected from Waznistan now or for a very long time to comer there are on the other hand certain characteristics inherent in the Mahsud which might be turned to good account.

There are two suggestions, neither of which has perhaps yet been fully pursued: —

- (a) The Mahsud is pastoral, and sheep appear to thrive in Waziristan, whereas cattle do not. Could we not give him more sheep, and improve the breed by assistance from Government stock? The expense of such a move would not be great, and whether the experiment succeeded or failed it would be a friendly gesture which the Mahsud would appreciate. If successful, it would be extended later to the whole of Waziristan.
- (b) The Mahsud is first and foremost a fighting man, and he would welcome further enlistment. This experiment has been tried in various Units, Regular and Irregular, and before the War of 1914—18 Mahsuds were enlisted in the Baluchi Battalions and did very well indeed in France. They can do well again.

It cannot be said that they have always proved good peacetime soldiers, but this has generally been caused by bad handling, and may have been due very largely to trouble over promotions or other jealousies. They are never going to be easy to deal with, but it is contended that they are well worth the extra trouble, and that, provided they are properly handled—particularly in the initial stages—they can be turned into the finest possible troops.

Mahsuds are divided into three main tribes: Bahlolzai, Manzai, and Shaman Khel. It may be difficult to persuade a Bahlolzai to take orders from a Shaman Khel, or vice versa, but with tact and perseverance it can be done. The alternative is to keep them in separate units, but this would appear to be a mistake, as it would merely serve to develop their clannishness.

In any case, the success or failure of the Unit would depend almost entirely on the British officers, who should be carefully selected from the Scouts and Frontier Militias. It is understood that the Mahsuds now in service are doing excellent work, and, if this is so, there seems to be very good reason for the opening of further enlistment to them.

The above suggestions may not be exhaustive, and to some extent they are not even new. Nevertheless, where all the more grandiose schemes have failed, they might with perseverance form the beginnings of a better understanding which is the first essential if the Waziristan tribes are ever to be brought into closer contact with civilisation.

### ll's said and be done? more or les

to get at the

more or les strongly suthe October se knowledge cturn can be me to come, herent in the

perhaps ye

o thrive in not give him istance from move would ucceeded or the Mahsul oe extended

g man, and
experiment
ad Irregular,
vere enlisted
indeed in

good peats
d handling,
omotions or
deal with
rouble, and
rly in the
ible troops
ai, Manza
iahlolzai th
tact and
p them in

Id depend carefully inderstood rk, and, if pening of

is it would

the more ince form irst essento closer

# "SOUTHERN ENGLAND" AND ITS FLYING BOMBS

By "Ex-Thakur"

THE FLYING Bombs made their first appearance over Southern England during the night of June 12/13th, 1944. Very few came over that night, but the next day rumours were in inverse ratio to those numbers. The most popular theory was that some fell disease had suddenly stricken the Royal Air Force, which had spent the night staggering home with severe engine trouble, and emitting bright flames from some uncertain part of its anatomy while flying very low. Another theory was that the Hun was putting up some enormous bluff by using brilliantly illuminated aircraft, which had a vestige of truth in it.

Civil Defence had been warned beforehand that something new was to be expected, and had been given, under the seal of secrecy, a very reasonably accurate description of what it was. Telephone conversations next day were therefore largely on the lines of "Did you see IT last night?"

For a long time varying theories were rife, at least among the general public, as to how it was propelled and controlled, rocket propulsion and wireless control having many backers. In fact, propulsion was by an extremely noisy jet mechanism, giving some 45 loud explosions to the second, and control by a system of gyroscopes and compressed air, as shown in the July number of this Journal. Wireless, did not enter into the control at all, but about 3 per cent. of the bombs were fitted with a small transmitting set, to allow the senders to assess where it fell by means of radio direction finders.

The noise had to be heard (and felt) to be believed. It has been compared to that of a motor cycle engine, and that is perhaps the nearest known noise, though hard luck on motor cycles. When one passed low over a house (as frequently happened in the case of my own) the explosions caused the whole house to quiver, and not even a spiral spring mattress could damp out the vibrations. The normal operating height was about 2,000 feet, but some certainly came much lower.

After the first night there was a lull of some 48 hours, but on the night of June 15/16th the attack commenced in earnest and continued, with a few lulls, until August 30th, when our forces in Normandy deprived the Hun of his launching sites. Those seventy-seven days put a very considerable strain on the inhabitants of "Southern England", and particularly on those of West Kent and East Sussex. The target, of course, was London, but it was obvious that, so far as possible, the bombs must be prevented from reaching the built-up area, and Southern England had to receive the results of the efforts to that end.

The main defences consisted of fighter aircraft and A.A. guns, light and heavy, and by the time the real attack opened many. Bofors and lighter guns were in position and a most amazing show

of fireworks was observed, completely eclipsing the Cristal Palace at its best. It was even rumoured that some of our Allies brought revolvers into action! Unfortunately the results were not on the same scale as the display, and they remained poor as long as the guns were distributed in penny packets along the lanes by which the bombs travelled.

The guns also badly cramped the style of the fighters, which had to haul off just when they were hoping for a kill, and they plastered the countryside with bits and pieces of varying sizes, to the distress of the farmers. Until the guns moved to the coast the fighters claimed by far the greater share of the victims shot down though with a highly organised barrage firing (mostly) out to sea the pendulum swung the other way.

There was a healthy rivalry between the guns and the lighters on the subject of kills, and I had one busy afternoon trying to get evidence as to how a bomb which had damaged my own house, among others, had been shot down. I was rung up in my A R P. office by a harassed Artillery Intelligence Officer on the coast, whom I assured that I had, with my own eyes, while feeding the chickens, seen it shot down by a bunch of fighters. Not even the circumstantial evidence of my occupation satisfied him, and he explained that an Extremely Big A A. Noise had been watching the shoot, and persisted in claiming it as his bird. I stuck to my guns, but so did the F B.A.A.N., and the Intelligence Officer was soon on the line again asking, among other things, what sort of fighter was involved, and any other particulars in support of my statement.

So I had to get into my car and proceed to the spot above which the firing had taken place, where I was lucky enough to find some agricultural workers who had taken cover in a ditch at the time. Even more fortunate was the fact that one of them was a member of the Air Training Corps. They not only confirmed the slaughter of "my" bomb by fighters, but said that a second bomb which fell close to them at the same time had been shot down by a Tempest. I was, however, able to offer the Gunners a third which had been heard, also at the same time, streaking up into the stratosphere, possibly as a result of a hit over the coast. I heard no more, so suppose that the Great One was content.

What were the sensations of those with a worm's-eye view of the efforts to destroy the "doodlebugs" before they could reach a really built up area? Very mixed, and depending almost entirely on the position of the worm relative to the line of flight. It he was to one flank he developed the mentality of the soccer fan at a Cup Final, cheering on the fighters and exulting loudly and shouting congratulatory remarks when the target was hit and started to plunge erratically to the earth (someone else's).

But a very different frame of mind became evident when the said target was seen and heard approaching in a bee line for the worm's own house, with from six to eight fighters (Spitfires, Tempests, Mustangs and the odd jet-propelled) close on its tail, and taking it in turns to have a crack at it. On such occasions, and I speak from personal experience on several occasions, the slogan was "For Heaven's sake miss!", while the worm took what

ne Crystal Palace or Allies brought were not on the or as long as the lanes by which

e fighters, which
a kill, and they
varying sizes, to
to the coast the
tims shot down
ostly) out to sea

and the fighters
on trying to get
my own house,
o in my A.R.P.
the coast, whom
g the chickens,
en the circuming the shoot,
ny guns, but so
so soon on the
of fighter was
my statement.

he spot above ky enough to in a ditch at e of them was ally confirmed hat a second d been shot the Gunnerne, streaking ait over the at One was

n's-eye view could reach ling almost ne of flight the soccer ting loudly et was hit e else's) when the ne for the (Spitfires,

n its tail,

occasions, sions, the

ook what

cover he might behind an apple tree or in a ditch. I am thankful to say that my own prayers to that effect were invariably answered, and the bump came further along the route in more open country.

For when they did come down they did a lot of damage. The war head contained some 2,000 lbs. of H.E., and damage to roofs, ceilings and windows, not to mention the frame of any door which was shut, might be expected up to at least half a mile from the crater. Large shop windows were susceptible at much longer ranges, but leaded casements stood the strain pretty well. Even in rural areas as many as 350 houses have suffered to some extent from one bomb, and some were unfortunate enough to suffer three times from successive bombs, sometimes the day after first-aid repairs had been effected.

A direct hit meant complete demolition, with little recognisable among the mass of débris. Near misses could be little less harmful, and I saw one farm house, in a tree close to which a "glider" had exploded after being hit by A.A. fire on the coast. The house had just sat down. Fortunately the occupants were in the habit of sleeping in the cellar and escaped untouched.

Many bombs, of course, landed in the fields. They could be relied on to destroy an acre of crops, or up to two in the case of hops, and even then the farmer's troubles were not over, for when he went to reap the remainder he was in continual difficulties from the smaller fragments, bits of wire and so on, which did much damage to his machine.

Casualties, fortunately, were on a very light scale in rural areas. It has been stated that in South Eastern England, excluding Greater London, it took 10 bombs to kill one person. In my own A.R.P. area it took 240 bombs to kill 11 people. Forty-four others had to be admitted to hospital. But the strain on the population must not be measured by the number of casualties. Every time the coastal barrage was heard, by day or by night, announcing the approach of another wave of bombs, everybody was subconsciously on the alert, except possibly when there was low cloud or mist and it was obvious that fighters could not operate.

Then the noise of the bombs which had got past the guns increased the tension, and few could resist the urge to go out and see on which lane they were approaching. I have already described one's feeling when on the direct line of advance. Over my own parish, of 14 square miles, 1,000 flying bombs passed, any one of which might have been shot down on us. Actually we only received 20.

Two hundred and forty fell in the 139 square miles for which I am responsible. This gives an average density of 1\frac{3}{4} to the square mile, but one parish worked out at 3.17 and two others at 2.69 and 2.34 respectively. It will be realised, in view of the widespread blast effect, that life in these parishes was not enviable, but one heard very few complaints, and most of those were made in the heat of the moment, while surveying a horrible mess. Most people realised that had the bombs been allowed to go on they would have caused far greater loss of life and damage to property in London, and accepted the risk with resignation.

# THOUGHTS ON THE FUNCTIONS OF AIR LANDING TROOPS

By F. J. C. P.

THE late Major General O. C. Wingate, talking of his Brigades of Deep Penetration, often said: "We are the Airborne Troops of the future." His argument was that the function of his troops, now universally known as the Chindits, was to penetrate to the vitals of the enemy and there week havoe. Whether they reached their scene of activity by marching (as he did in 1943) or by air (as in 1944) did not affect in any way their true function.

Before letting loose one's thoughts on this subject, it is necessary to repeat the meaning of the term "Air Landing Troops." They are not Parachute Troops or glider borne troops, whose function is to drop in the rear of the enemy positions and carry out certain special tasks to facilitate the advance of the main attack. These troops may reasonably expect relief within a few days, and therefore have no heavy weapons or administrative organization on a big scale in their composition.

Air landing troops, on the other hand, present a very different picture. The term merely means troops carried to their scene of action in aircraft. Their composition is therefore only limited by the carrying capacity of the aircraft available, and no doubt in the future we shall see armoured formations lifted as readily as Infantry units are now. Within this limit, the composition of the Force must be dictated by the task they have to perform, and this leads one to consider the nature of these tasks.

Now it seems to me that the time has not vet come when a whole campaign can be fought and won by airlanded troops alone. It will come, but the time is not vet. They must therefore still be considered as a diversion to help on the main Armies, and consequently must operate in such a manner that they contain or destroy enemy troops greater in number or in importance than themselves. Their scene of action, therefore, lies in the enemy area where lines of communication can readily be cut, and where they can threaten or operate against centres vital to the enemy's campaign. (These centres may be of political, economic or military importance).

They should not be employed in the immediate rear of the enemy forward troops, for, as we shall see later, they take time to arrive, and the enemy would be able to divert portions of his nearby reserves to crush the diversion in its infancy without seriously affecting the main issue. This is the task of parachute troops, with their rapid rate of arrival, light equipment and

elusiveness.

Let us consider some of the characteristics of an airlanded formation, so that its use can be defined more closely. To start with, what is its composition? It is, or can be, a force of literally all arms. An Infantry Division, especially one equipped on an

LANDING

of his Brigades
the Airborne
ne function of
was to peneyoc. Whether
as he did in
yay their true

ct, it is neceting Troops." troops, whose ons and carry of the main within a few dministrative

a very differ ied to their nerefore only able, and no ons lifted as it, the comhey have to these tasks. me when a ded troops must there. ain Armies, t they conimportance lies in the ly be cut,

ear of the take time ons of his hout senparachute nent and

es vital to

: political,

airlanded To start literally d on an Animal-and-M.T. basis can be lifted en bloc, complete with its-field, A.A. and A. Tk. artillery. Light tanks are also a feasibility. Stores present few problems, and it is only when we come to Corps and Army troops of large sizes and weights (medium artillery, heavy vehicles and tanks) that we are, at present, compelled to call a halt.

Next, what are the "mechanics" of landing? First, a landing area or, more probably, landing areas, must be selected which can be swiftly made into a landing strip for heavily loaded transport aircraft. This involves flatness, unobstructed approaches, alignment in accordance with the prevailing wind, and freedom from obstacles difficult to remove. In addition, gliders must be able to land in the vicinity without any preliminary work at all. The selection, therefore, is a vital task, which must be carried out without giving a hint of its object. Air photos, air reconnaissance, agents reports and possibly landings of specialists by parachute or light aircraft may be employed.

The selection made, the landing now is planned in detail. Who goes first? and how? The virtual certainty is that only gliders or light aircraft will be able to land on the site in its unprepared state, and that dictates the composition of the first flight-engineers, with graders and bulldozers, in gliders, plus infantry to protect and assist the working party. Also the R.A.F. must be represented on the ground, and signals, in order to decide when aircraft can use the strip being prepared, and to carry out the vital and complicated control of take-offs and landings.

As soon as the strip is ready, the transport aircraft can fly in, but a one-way strip, probably without adequate turning space and a return track, is limited in its capacity. Particularly is this so in the case where the dust on the strip will be stirred up in dense clouds by the airscrew and temporarily reduce visibility to nil. However, it is only a matter of time before infantry, field, anti-aircraft and anti-tank guns can all arrive. Fighter aircraft can arrive too, and a force of all arms is in being and ready for action in the heart of enemy territory.

Two assumptions have been made so far. One is absolute local air superiority for the duration of the landing. This is a sine qua non, particularly if any part of the fly-in is to take place in daylight. Secondly, freedom from enemy ground interference before adequate protective forces have arrived. This is not so difficult to achieve as might be thought, provided the landing site is well selected. It should be in an area either where no large mobile enemy forces are readily accessible, or in one where the natural obstacles between it and the enemy force will prevent or delay the enemy's early arrival. The element of surprise inherent in such an operation works in its favour, and a study of the time and space problem from the enemy point of view will indicate clearly the suitability or otherwise of the site.

One final characteristic of the air landed force. It can operate, by means of its air L. of C., for a considerable period and over a considerable area. The time can be measured in months.

and will vary according to the climate, terrain and intensity of operations. But they cannot go on for ever. Relief is essential, either by exchange with fresh air landed troops, or better still, by the arrival of the main ground forces.

What, therefore, can we deduce about their tactical or strategical use? The ideal, perhaps, is for a strong force to be placed in an area whence it could strike against two or more centres vital to the enemy for one reason or another. This should cause the enemy commander either to tie up considerable forces to guard against several contingencies, or to deflect a force to destroy the intruders. A combination of the two is probable, and the commander of the air landed troops is then faced with a problem which has several attractive features.

If the enemy counter-attack force is weak, he can ambush it en route, and offer battle on ground of his own choosing in order to destroy it. If it is too powerful for him, once his force is landed, he can if he wishes evacuate his landing ground and operate in smaller detachments, concentrating against any target he selects—what time the counter-attack force must keep concentrated (and slow moving) or risk destruction piecemeal. It may be that he can elect to make a "fortress" of his landing ground, and sally out from it to destroy small enemy forces or commit mayhem upon enemy H.Q's. and vital points.

At the same time that this is going on, the main land armies must assume the offensive. The whole operation must be an example of team work. If one fails to make its presence urgently felt by the enemy, powerful reserves become available for action against the other. The object should be to place the enemy commander in a position where he is in doubt not only when to throw in his reserves, but against which of two serious threats. The one in his rear areas may prey upon his mind, but his problem is complicated out of all proportion if he has to watch a really powerful offensive (not merely an attack) against his forward positions. To counter-attack both weakly courts disaster; to counter-attack one transforms the other "threat" into an actuality which may well cause the total collapse of his forces.

Finally, one principle of war should not be forgotten: economy of force. The air landed troops will, or should, be operating in an area where the opposition will be largely composed of L. of C. troops. Their fighting value will be below that of the air landed infantry, and their supplies of weapons inferior to those which can be deployed against them. Therefore, a careful estimate should be made of the tasks facing the air landed force, and its size and composition should not exceed by a man the numbers, with reserves, necessary for the task. In this connection, the estimated time of relief of the force by the oncoming main armies will have a very important bearing.

If the foregoing ideas are broadly accepted, it would seem that the vast limits of South East Asia Command must include several areas suitable for such operations. Of all Commands, it is the most strikingly "Combined Operational", and as regards the land fighting, team work between the R.A.F. and an air landed force on one side, and the main land armies on the other, should offer promising hopes of rapid and decisive action.

### WATER SUPPLIES IN THE FIELD

BY LIEUT.-COLONEL F. L. ROBERTS, M.B.E.

"If you want to get sick in a hurry, start drinking innocent-looking, crystal-clear, untreated jungle water."
—From A. I. T. M., No. 23, December, 1943.

ONE ITEM in the equipment used in our army is open to criticism. That is the equipment used for the provision, issue and holding of water in the Field.

In North Africa and Eritrea one of the principal administrative problems was the provision of adequate supplies of water. Now that we have finished with the deserts of Africa there is a natural tendency to forget the severe water rationing which so frequently had to be imposed on troops.

Here our eyes naturally turn to the operational areas of the South-East Asia Command—Burma, onwards through Malaya, Siam and China and on to Japan. Wherever we fight, our men, hospitals, animals and machines need water—good, clear and pure water. Rainfall in the South-East Asia theatre may be heavy, but consideration of the factors involved shows that the subject merits serious thought.

Consider drinking water. In oriental countries there is ever present the danger of water being infected by and infested with germs, bacilli and animalculi, every one of which forms a serious threat to health. There is far less danger from water-borne diseases in desert lands than in countries where water sources abound.

In Africa the aim was to provide each man with two gallons per diem, this being considered sufficient for cooking, drinking, and, if any remained, ablutions. In practice, usually not more than one gallon per man per day was available.

Climatically, South-East Asia is far more humid than North Africa, and there is in East Asia an additional strain on the human body by reason of the fact that there is no cold weather. Thus to keep our troops fit, we should aim at a minimum issue of three gallons per head. Taking a Division at about 20,000 men, this would call for a total requirement of 60,000 gallons per day for drinking and cooking only. If three gallons be thought excessive, we should ensure a ration of at least two gallons.

Take hospitals. Our Field Ambulances, C.C.S. and Field hospitals need large quantities of water for medical purposes, for staffs, and for patients. A C.C.S., for instance, needs between 800 and 1,200 gallons daily; moreover, medical units and installations are organised so as to be able to subdivide into Advanced Dressing Stations and Light Sections. Each offshoot requires a greater proportion of water than it does while with its parent unit.

Transport is another heavy consumer. It may be thought that any kind of water will do for mules and motors, but that is not so, though extensive purification is not always as necessary as with water for human consumption. Mules are fussy animals; they will not always drink where one hopes they will; and they are apt to become debilitated if the water does not suit them—and an epidemic amongst mules is bound to have repercussions on operations when troops have to depend on them for transport.

Motors, too, must have clean water for radiators. Chalky or muddy water in radiators leads to serious engine trouble, which react adversely on fighting efficiency.

Purification of water.—Water in oriental countries usually carries the bacilli of the enteric group of diseases, of cholera, dysentery, etc. These bacilli are neutralised or destroyed by chlorination, best carried out at selected water points. For troops on patrol or detached roles sterilising tablets are issued.

Another danger in oriental water sources 'are animalculi, which exist in the shape of cysts, the ovae of worms and the amoeba of dysentery. Chlorine does not destroy these animalculi; filtration is the only means of removing them. This involves forcing the water through chalk and then passing it through a cloth or metal filter. Each army water truck and water trailer is fitted with a filter, the water usually being chlorinated after it has been pumped up, through the filter, into the water tank.

Sedimentation is another means of purification. Even though mud may not be poisonous, it is not good for the human body. Thus it is necessary to arrange for sedimentation of water, best done at recognised water points. For this purpose Engineer units are issued with collapsible canvas tanks holding up to 250 or 500 gallons.

Those, then, are the dangers and the means whereby they are overcome. In addition, strict water discipline is essential, to ensure that drinking water shall be drawn only from those sources at which it has been filtered and chlorinated.

Orders which are impracticable of obedience are useless. Men must therefore be provided with an adequate number of water points reasonably easy of access; they must be so sited that water vehicles do not have to spend an inordinate amount of time in transit to or from them, or wait for long times at overcrowded water points.

The modern 15 cwt. truck carries 220 gallons; battalions have one such truck on their strength. If each man in a battalion is allowed 3 gallons a day, the unit's vehicle has to deliver a full load not less than 12 times daily.

Experience in Arakan, has proved beyond doubt that the L. of C. in rear of leading Divisions are liable to serious disruption by hostile patrols; road movement is usually restricted to daylight hours. Assuming 12 hours of daylight, a battalion's water-truck cannot afford to spend more than one hour on each round trip if it is to deliver water 12 times daily—and this one hour includes

time spent in drawing as well as in delivering. If the ration be two gallons per man per day, each truck will have to make eight trips.

Bearing other factors in mind, one hour per round trip is not a very generous allowance of time; it affords little opportunity for the driver's rest, or daily maintenance of the vehicle.

Thus, so long as large units have only one water-truck each, it is essential that each Divisional area must have several water points. Practical considerations must dictate the number of such points which can be developed and protected, but there should be not less than three in a Divisional area.

Water equipment includes (a) canvas tanks, (b) water trucks, (c) pakhals, and (d) filters.

(a) Engineer Field Companies have large folding canvas tanks, sufficient to erect reservoirs for sedimentation and storage at water points. Units, other than Sappers have a small pattern canvas tank known as "Diggies", holding about 50 gallons. Though useful for storage, they have the disadvantage that a unit has no transport allotted to carry its "diggies" when full of water. Thus, when a unit is ordered to move, the "diggies" have to be emptied, thus wasting the water collected. Not only is the water wasted, however, there is also the running time of the water-truck which brought up the water, and the time spent in sedimenting, filtering and chlorinating it.

Units therefore need some form of equipment to hold their water supplies while on the move, to do which I suggest that a unit's water reserve should be carried in pakhals capable of carrying one-third of the unit's daily consumption. This need not call for additional M.T., because pakhals can be clamped on to the running board of trucks and lorries—a method which was adapted in Africa and was efficacious. Moreover, now that we have the Jeep with us, a suitable type of bracket could be fixed either to the back or to one side of the vehicle, capable of taking one pakhal.

(b) Water-trucks.—Many officers feel that the present day water-truck is obsolete and should be allowed to fade out. Its disadvantages include: (i) if the chassis or engine requires workshop attention, the unit has no means of obtaining water until it is repaired; (ii) should the truck become a casualty, it is unlikely to be replaced for some time; a Division is supposed to have a reserve of two water-trucks. Two vehicles, i.e., 440 gallons in reserve behind 20,000 men! (iii) Each truck has the filter—so that wherever the truck goes the filter goes too,—along the road, into the car park, or into the workshop; all those hours doing no filterwork when it might so profitably be preparing pure water at a water-point. (iv) Not every track will take a 15-cwt. truck, so that whenever a unit has to operate along narrow tracks, their water vehicle must be left behind.

May I suggest the following in place of the water-truck?

(a) Within units instal a type of light trailer, capable of being towed by a loaded Jeep or larger vehicle, or of being hauled



by a mule. Sufficient trailers should be supplied to carry onethird of the unit's daily water supply. Thus, with the trailers and the *pakhals* already mentioned, units would be able to hold and carry two-thirds of its daily ration.

- (b) In addition to unit trailers, there should be a Divisional pool of vehicles for delivering water to large consumer units. This pool should consist of twenty-five 15-cwt. trucks, each with a 200-gallon galvanised-iron tank, fitted with one or two taps. If the truck becomes a casualty, the tank can be transferred to another truck—it is a simple matter to shift the wooden chocks which hold the G. I. tank in place. Alternatively, why not form Water-Tank Companies, each being allotted to a Corps and being capable of subdivision into sections, for sub-allotment to Divisions when occasion demands?
- (c) Pakhals.—Is the pakhal, as at present manufactured, suited to modern conditions? Originally designed for carriage by mules, it does not follow that the same design makes it suitable for motors, especially the lighter type of vehicle such as the Jeep. The writer suggests that a smaller (6-gallon) type would be preferable. Two such pakhals would hold one-third of a day's water rations for one infantry rifle section or equivalent unit.

Moreover, the present pattern has its mouth placed in such a position that the maximum wastage of water is inevitable. This mouth is of such enormous dimensions that it can pour satisfactorily only into a receptacle the size of a basin. The Sepoy's water bottle has an orifice of about an inch in diameter. There should be some connection between the mouth of the pakhal and the waterbottle, but in twenty-four years I have never seen it. The aperture in the pakhal should be sited at one end of its uppermost edge; it should be designed after the fashion of the lip of an ewer, so that water can be poured out instead of being spilt as it is to-day.

(d) Filters.—Our water-pumping machinery is in the centralised control of Divisional Engineers. But I suggest that where the pumps are, there also should be the Division's filters. Units sent off on a detached role (they invariably have with them a detachment of Engineers) should be accompanied by a suitable proportion of pumps and filters. This centralised control over expensive filtration plant will enable regular overhaul and would also result in economic use of plant.

Finally, let me summarise the points put forward in this paper:

- (i) We must be equipped to ensure that fighting troops and medical services receive an adequate daily supply of pure water.
- (ii) We should aim at not less than three gallons of water per man per day.
- (iii) The strictest water discipline must be enforced, so that the men may obey the orders; they must be provided with an adequate number of water points and water equipment.

- (iv) Units must be capable of holding and carrying not less than one-third of their daily water ration. While on the move they should have pakhals fitted to 15-cwt. trucks and to Jeeps. The 50-gallon canvas "diggie" is of use only when a unit is static.
- (v) The modern 15-cwt. water truck should be scrapped and replaced by light trailers, towable by Jeeps or hauled by mules.
- (vi) Trailers in a unit should be able to carry one-third of the unit's daily water ration. Thus these trailers, plus the pakhals, will give a unit two-thirds of its daily ration.
- (vii) Each Division should have a pool of 25 water-trucks, each carrying one 200-gallon G. I. tank fitted with a tap. If it is considered unnecessary to make this pool a permanent allotment to a Division, then Companies of G. I. tank trucks should be allotted to Corps for sub-allotment of Sections to Divisions when required.
- (viii) The pakhal could with advantage be modernised by making it slightly smaller; and by providing it with a better-shaped pourer more suitably situated.

# RECENT ADDITIONS TO THE LIBRARY

A VALUABLE addition to the library of the Institution is a copy of Sale's translation of the Holy Quran, which has been most generously presented by Miss A. E. French. Members wishing to borrow the volume are asked to take particular care of it, and to return it as soon as possible.

Captain R. W. Munro, of the Scaforth Highlanders, has been good enough to present a copy of "Lachlan MacQuarrie XVI of Ulva," which contains notes on some clansmen in India. Clan history is Captain Munro's hobby, and he has devoted much time in scarching for traces of members of the clan in India.

"The Tide Turns" (Faber & Faber), by "Strategicus." A well-documented and interesting book giving the strategic background of the battles of Stalingrad, Alamein and Tunisia.

"In Him Was Light" (Oxford University Press). Brigadier F. L. Brayne, whose untiring campaign for rural uplift is known all over India, loves the Punjab villager—and the villager loves him. In this book he sets out to prove that true Christianity is the essence of rural uplift. To all who believe with him that our mission to India's millions of villagers lies in us helping to make their homes better and their lives happier this little volume will make a strong appeal.

"How to Win the Peace" (Hodder & Stoughton). Mr. C. J. Hambro, one of Norway's principal journalists and a former member of the League of Nations Council, writes: "Any highway to a better future must be paved with open speech and honest dealing." In this book he advances many, practical suggestions as to how we are to proceed to attain an international order which, he feels, will assure future peace.

"Personal Leadership for Combat Officers" (Whittlesey House, McGraw-Hill Building, New York). Mr. Prentiss B. Reed, Junn., says that leadership lies in character and personality. Character is determined by one's fundamental motives in life, and personality is the impression one gives to others. The two combined are the substance of leadership.

The principles of leadership are universal, but some readers may feel that much of America's liberalism is stamp

Digitized by GOOSIO

ed on this quotation:

Boss? Leader? or .. Coaches them. Drives his men Depends on authority .. Depends on goodwill. .. Inspires enthusiasm. Inspires fear Says "I" .. Says "WE". Fixes blame for breakdown .. Fixes Breakdowns. Knows how it is done .. Shows How. Makes work a drudgery .. Makes it a game.

A more succinct borrowing (incorporated, incidentally, in a U. S. Training Manual) is Kipling's recipe of six essential elements, expressed or implied, in a leader's order:

I keep six honest serving men
(They taught me all I knew);
Their names are What and Why and When
And How and Where and Who.

The interest of the book lies in its collection of cardinal ingredients of successful leadership expressed in a fresh way.

"'D' Day." (Thacker & Co.). John Gunther, an American newspaper man, has set down his personal experiences during an eleven-week tour of North Africa and the Near East at the time of the invasion of Italy. The book gives a detailed account of his reactions to the stupendous sights he witnessed during those crucial weeks, written in a restrained and extremely modest style. He is so modest that he tells the story of how he addressed an American naval officer on the Sicilian beaches as "General." "Hell," said the officer. "Tm an Admiral."

He extols Eisenhower's generalship, and describes the dramatic moments at his headquarters in Malta on the eve of the landings. Writing of the way the General spent the night before the invasion, he relates how Eisenhower went out to a point on the beach and waited in the moonlight. He fingered some lucky coins he always carried—one silver dollar, one five-guinea piece and one French franc—and murmured "God-Speed" as the 'planes whipped over. Next day, when it became known that the landings had taken the enemy unawares, he was heard to mutter: "By golly, I don't understand it—to think we've done it again."

"The Position of Women" (Oxford Pamphlet). Mrs. L. N. Menon has condensed into this 32-page pamphlet everything that could be said about the position of women in India, their contribution to art and literature, their part in politics and public life and health and education. Students of Indian social problems will find it most useful.

.....

Digitized by Google

Y

stitution is aran, which E. French ced to take ssible.

Inders, has
IacQuarrie
ansmen in
nd he has
embers of

egicus." A strategic ad Tunisia.

y Press),
for rural
ager—and
to prove
t. To all
nillions of
etter and
a strong

on). Mr.
:s and a
writes:
ith open
:es many,
:o attain

uttlesey etiss B. persons notives others.

some stamp "The Civil Defence of Malaya" (Hutchinson), by Sir George Maxwell. The British public was so embittered by the unexpected fall of Singapore that it sought every possible object on which to expend and relieve its feelings. In complete ignorance of the facts it abused indiscriminately the Civil servants, planters, European women, Malayas, and the entire civilian community, for what was, from beginning to end, a military disaster due to lack of military preparedness and adequate military forces. So declares this book, written by a committee over which Sir George Maxwell presided, from information received from people on the spot at the time, and published under the auspices of the Association of British Malaya.

"The British public," it is added, "has every reason to be ashamed of what it thought and said, but the Malayan public has every right to be proud of what it did." In something over 100 pages is set down just why the public may take such pride, and it constitutes an answer to many of the unfounded charges and ill-informed statements made during and immediately after the Malayan campaign. The justification which the committee sees in this work is, in its own words, that "unless the facts are recognised before the British return to Malaya, our reception may not be the one that is necessary for co-operation in laying the foundations of the Malaya of the future."

"Poland" (Macdonald & Co., London), by Edward E. Ligocki. Lack of understanding of the needs, aspirations and viewpoints of other countries nearly wrecked the last world peace conference, and we know that on the presence or absence of such understanding will largely depend whether or not the peoples at present united will draw together in cooperation or fall apart in suspicion and resentment—the ultimate result of which would be warfare once more.

Edward Ligocki has contributed towards fostering understanding by his book on the story and character of his own people, who were the first to feel the blow of blitzkrieg. It is not by any means a full picture, and in part the poet is in evidence. But he is a friendly guide, and if, as Shelley claimed, poets are the unacknowledged legislators of the world, we need their counsel in the rebuilding that is soon to begin.

"The Lampi" (Thacker Spink & Co., Calcutta), by Lieut.-Colonel G. P. Chapman. At the side of a road in Manipur stands a stone on which is engraved: "This road from Bishenpur to Lakhipur, a distance of 109 miles, was built between the dates 19th July and 21st September, 1942, by

Chapforce, because everybody who knew said that it was impossible." The road was built not by the engineers, but by gunners. It began as a mixture of dream and challenge to Colonel Chapman. The Naga labourers who worked under the control of British officers and men of the 82 A/T Regiment, R.A., led by Colonel Chapman, caught the white men's "fever"—the strange enthusiasm to drive a road in a challenging time-limit through the jungle and over the mountains. They didn't understand why the white man had this fever, but it was infectious and they called the road the "Lampi."

This war has produced many achievements which are on a small scale when set against the gigantic backcloth of the world conflict, but which are current testimony of the virility of the British race and are in the true pattern of the work of great prisoners. This is one of them.

"Infantry Attacks." (The Infantry Journal, Washington.) By Erwin Rommel. In the effort to find out why they lost the first World War the Germans produced hundreds of books analysing their 1914—18 experiences. Among them were notes by a young company commander in a Wurttemburg mountain infantry battalion, Erwin Rommel, and published by him in 1937 when he had become a lieutenant-colonel and instructor in infantry tactics at Dresden Military Academy. He was still an unknown officer and this and another small handbook for platoon leaders brought very little attention. But five years later Rommel was directing the Afrika Corps so successfully that the publicity spotlight from Berlin was turned upon him to the exclusion of almost all other Axis commanders, and his name became known throughout the world.

His books now ran through many editions in Germany. There were few to be found in Allied countries, but the Americans missed no opportunity to learn from an enemy who was at war again two years before they were. Colonel Gustave E. Kidde made a translation for the U. S. Command and General Staff School. This is it—a series of combat narratives of the unit Rommel led against the French, Rumanians, Russians, and Italians, followed in each case by observations under which Rommel sums up his reactions. They show him to have been an aggressive and versatile leader of a small unit (he began as a company commander at the age of 23), and many of his general tactical lessons are valid to-day.

The main theme emphasises the importance of the basic principles of training, security, prior planning, and initiative and hard work by all junior commanders. Rommel had a highly developed capacity for using terrain. He trained his

ment to take cover whenever possible in movement and to dig in whenever they stopped. To this he gives repeated emphasis. "With the increased power of modern weapons increased dispersion and digging of foxholes is vital to the safety of any unit. Begin digging in before the first enemy bombardment. Too much spadework is better than too little. Sweat saves blood." (P. 20.) And again: "The solidly frozen ground made our light tools almost useless. Even in attack the spade is as important as the rifle." (P. 61.)

Rommel was tireless in reconnaissance and attributed many of his successes to the fact that he possessed better information about the enemy than they did about him. Information was shared with junior officers, N.C.O.s, and even privates. Into every battle plan Rommel tried to introduce deception and surprise. He sought the weakest element in the enemy position and his plans were shaped to exploit that weakness and confuse his adversaries. He used his machineguns and hand grenades in 1916-1918 with the same skill as his 88s in 1941-42. It was late in 1917, before a two-minute dislocation in a synchronised movement of assault troops forced him angrily to record, "It was the first attack since the beginning of the war in which I had failed."

His last great failure came a quarter of a century later: at Alamein, after he was outgeneraled and outfought. Now he is dead. But in this translation readers will find many interesting parallels with the methods which brought him so near to a success that would have made the World-war picture very different from the Reality of 1945.

ment and to de expeated emphaeapons increato the safety of the my bombard bolittle. Sweat frozen ground tack the spade

and attributed seessed better ut him. InforO.s., and even a to introduce set element in o exploit that his machinesame skill as a two-minute seault troops ack since the

entury later ought. Now I find many ught him so war picture

# LETTERS TO THE EDITOR

# THE WEST AFRICAN'S ENGLISH

# General Sir George Giffard's Comment

To The Editor of the U.S.I. "Journal"

DEAR SIR,

I have been much interested in the excellent article by Major F. C. Carnell, entitled: "The West African's English." Major Carnell's statement that the "momentous step of introducing English as a lingua franca among West African troops was only taken during the present war" is, however, not accurate.

The history of the introduction of English as the lingua franca of West African troops goes back to the end of the last war, when I was appointed G.S.O. II to the Inspector-General, Royal West African Frontier Force in 1920.

Service during the last war with the King's African Rifles in German East Africa had convinced me that the introduction of English as the *lingua franca* of African Colonial Forces was essential if misunderstanding and consequent loss of life was to be avoided in the event of another Great War. During the operations against the Germans, I had seen many avoidable casualties caused by the lack of understanding between the African soldier and his leaders, and I determined that, if I ever had the opportunity, I would press for the introduction of English as the *lingua franca*.

I proposed this step to my Inspector-General, and it was duly discussed at meetings in West Africa during the winter of 1920/1921, but feeling was then extremely strong among many senior officers against the teaching of English on the grounds that it would spoil the fighting efficiency of the soldier to educate him. My attempt to introduce English was, therefore, defeated.

I determined that if ever I was in a position of authority in which I could make English the *lingua franca* of the African Forces, I would introduce its teaching at once. My real opportunity came when I was appointed Inspector-General of the African Colonial Forces in 1936, and I at once examined the problem of teaching English to African soldiers.

The first question to tackle was the system upon which we should work and, after much consultation with Education Authorities in the Colonial Service, I decided to adopt the system set out in the excellent book which was produced for the African Colonial Forces in 1939. For financial and other reasons, it took some time to get teaching of English started and, in fact, very little was done until I was appointed to the new West African Command in 1940, when I was able really to make a proper drive to get English taught.

Even then there was a good deal of passive resistance to the idea by some of the officers who had served some years with the African Colonial Forces, and had learnt the African's language. The resistance to the idea has been much more pronounced in East Africa than in West Africa, and progress there has consequently been much slower. The European leader must always learn the language of his troops.

My original ambition in peace had been to do away with "pidgin" English and to have proper, or as the West African calls it, "London" English taught. Unfortunately, the stress of war compelled me to make shift with such schoolmasters and teachers as I could obtain, and the teaching was far from what it should have been. We did, however, succeed in teaching large numbers of men a smattering of English, and there is no doubt whatever that very great strides have been made during the past four years.

As an example, I may say that in 1939 I could not speak to a single Non-Commissioned Officer in the Nigeria Regiment in English, whereas, only two days ago I was able to talk to all Nigerian Non-Commissioned Officers in one of the Brigades that I inspected. There is no doubt that the more work that is done in teaching English in the Army, the better will it be for the African soldier when he returns to civil life.

I owed a great deal to the generous help given me by the Colonial Governors in starting teaching of English to the troops.

Yours sincerely, C. J. GIFFARD, General.

New Delhi.

November 6, 1944.

C.-in-Chief 11th Army Group.

### THE BURMA—YUNNAN RAILWAY

To The Editor of the U.S.I. "Journal"

DEAR SIR,

I always read the U.S.I. Journal with keen interest, the April 1944 number even more keenly than usual, as it contained Colonel Christian's article, "Burma Roads Past and Present." Your readers may be interested to know that the General Davies mentioned therein is still going strong, and, being a close friend, I sent him the issue to read. He replied:

"I have read Christian's article with great interest. He has certainly taken great trouble, and has written an account of the communications of Burma from the historical point of view, and also from the present-day angle, which I don't think one would find anywhere else.

"He has, however, made one slight mistake in saying that the final survey of the Yunnan Railway was lost when Watts Jones was murdered, for Watts Jones and I both brought our work back to England after the first year's travel."

Yours faithfully, JOHN F. S. D. COLERIDGE, General.

Haslem ...

Lieut.-Colonel Christian writes:

"It was with particular pleasure that I learn that the Major Davies (now Major-General H. R. Davies), who made several remarkable journeys and surveys of Yunnan Province during the years 1894—1900 is still going strong.

"I have always considered that his work in the Yunnan Province of China was deserving of the highest praise and considerable more recognition than it has received. It was carried out when the Province was virtually unprovided with roads, and while still hazardous for the European traveller.

"General Davies' two-volume Yunnan, the Link Between India and the Yangtze is a classic of exploration and survey, involving nearly 6,000 miles of travel by mule and afoot over a period of six years. This period covered a region of exceedingly difficult terrain which, if not exactly the 'roof of the world' is at least up in the attic.

"Inasmuch as I do not have my notes with me in Ceylon, I am now unable to cite my source for the statement that the final surveys of the Yunnan Railway were lost when Watts Jones was murdered. I am pleased to learn from General Davies that they were not lost, but were taken to England, and I suggest that they may with profit be consulted by the engineers who are studying the problems of Burma-China transport now that the Japs are on the way out."

### FOR THOSE GOING HOME

To The Editor of the U.S.I. "Journal"

DEAR SIR.

Sir Dashwood Strettell sent some excellent tips for those about to go Home. Here are a few more hints. For the ship, washing soap and safety pins for the *dhobi* business, and pyrethrum or some other strong insecticide for the cabin, and plenty of books to read.

Luggage must be strong enough to be dropped from an aeroplane without a parachute. Also steel straps of wiring, plus cord. Name and address must be clearly painted on several sides. Next time I feel inclined to bring straps or webbing to help carry luggage.

A large convoy proceeding on its lawful occasions is a noble and inspiring sight—the "might and majesty" of Britain's sea power—but the dispersion of the thousands of people spued out of the great ships is a big job, and a railway map is extremely useful. None are obtainable locally. The possession of one enables the passenger to make a quick get-away from a strange port on whatever train goes in the right direction.

Yours faithfully, F. L. BRAYNE,

Brigadier.

Norfolk.

### SALUTING.

To The Editor of the U.S. I. "Journal"

Dear Sir,

May I draw attention to a confusion of thought which is prevalent in the minds of many officers about saluting and which results in defective training.

A unit's standard of saluting is frequently regarded as the criterion of its worth, both in peacetime and in battle. This habit of thought is exemplified in peace stations by numerous notices and orders urging an improvement in saluting and affirming that units will be judged by their saluting. Moreover, in operational areas there is an insistence during even the shortest break that the men should be practised in saluting.

Originating in the belief that saluting is the criterion of a unit's worth is the view held by some officers that by improving a unit's saluting they are improving its worth. Consequently, saluting is given an exaggerated importance in the curriculum, and time that might well be spent on more practical and warlike training is devoted to saluting and the accompanying drill.

There are two fallacies in this sequence of thought. First, a unit's standard of saluting is one of the criteria of its worth, not the criterion. Secondly, improvement in saluting does not necessarily mean improvement in allround worth. The correct sequence of thought should be: Good saluting is one of the "symptoms" of a well-disciplined unit—but the presence of good saluting does not automatically mean the presence of good discipline.

Cultivate good discipline, and good saluting, which implies willingness as well as smartness, should, given elementary mechanical instruction, necessarily follow. It is only fair to add that practice in saluting may form part of the inculcation of good discipline, but let it be the means and not the end.

Yours faithfully,

"WALDEN."

Clement Town.

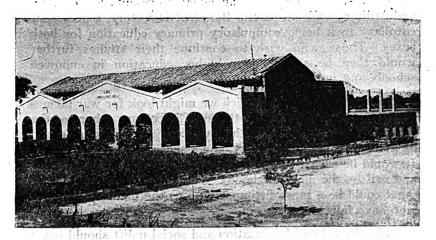
[Our correspondent raises an interesting point, but whether good saluting follows good discipline or vice versa, the fact is that good saluting breeds smartness and, as our American friends would say, "pride in one's outfit." Slackness in saluting reveals slackness in training—and in this connection many officers will agree that bad saluting is not confined to Other Ranks.—Ed., U. S. I. "Journal."]

### A REGIMENTAL GUEST HOUSE

To The Editor of the U.S.I. "Journal"

Dear Sir,

You mentioned a regimental guest house in a previous issue. Here are some details of one we established in our Centre two years ago. It has recently been enlarged, and there are now three rooms for male relatives of I.O.Rs, one for ladies (purdah) and another for V.C.O.s and their visitors.



All the rooms are supplied with charpoys, and food is provided free from unit cookhouses. The usual period of stay is twentyfour hours; but in special cases, i.e., where problems affecting pay and pensions have to be settled, this time limit is extended.

Visitors are seen twice daily by the Subedar-Major and the Welfare Officer, who attend to their requirements. Those who can read are allowed to use the library, whilst ex-soldiers are permitted to use the Regimental canteens and Institutes.

An old soldier is Guest Room Orderly, and he is responsible for the general cleanliness, etc., of the building.

The average number of guests using the house every; month is 130, and they all express their appreciation and thanks for the amenity. The total cost of the building and furnishing was Rs. 5,560.

Yours sincerely,

A. N. M. WATKINS, Colonel, R.I.A.S.C.

Ferozepore.

#### WAR MEMORIALS

To The Editor of the U.S.I. "Journal"

Dear Sir,

Your editorial notes on War Memorials in the last issue of the Journal are to the point, and in regard to education reinforce the suggestions made by Major J. R. H. Orr in an earlier issue. The scheme propounded by the latter contributor, however, can only work if it is directed from the centre on an All-India basis, with an equal representation of Civil and Military Officers on the Board of Directors, a necessary corollary to it being compulsory primary education for both sexes. Those who wish to continue their studies further would then be selected for higher education in endowed schools and universities.

Another direction in which we might look for war memorials concerns social uplift—the most important sphere of the regeneration of India. With it will come a higher standard of living, communal harmony, and a sense to live and let live. It would be a vast undertaking, and would be opposed tooth and nail by the more orthodox sections of the people, but what could be a more fitting tribute to the memory of those, who have fallen?

Side by side with education and social uplift should come rural uplift, for the peasant is the backbone of this country, and is at the same time the most backward of its people. Consolidation of holdings, farming co-operatively, well-laid-out villages are among the things crying for attention. Each of these subjects is closely inter-related, and without a combined effort it will not be possible to raise the general standard of living.

Lack of funds may be said to be the main drawback, and the vast sums of money which will be needed may have to be found to a great extent by voluntary contributions. Many men in this country have become rich through this war; there is a large amount of money lying idle in the vaults of banks. buried in private houses, tied up in dirty bits of cloth around the waists of obese banias. It is only right that those who, in addition to having been spared the horrors of war, have enriched themselves out of it, should be persuaded to give generously towards a cause which aims at creating a better and united India.

Yours faithfully. H. I. AHMAD,

Quetta.

Major.

Digitized by Google

#### BASIC TRAINING AND MORALE

To The Editor of the U.S.I. "Journal"

DEAR SIR.

I was standing in a Rest Camp near the Brahmaputra in December. With me was an officer of an allied nation. Down in the road in front of us was a heterogenous collection of Indian soldiers, nearly all non-combatants or men of technical units who were trying to get on an already over-loaded lorry. The scene was not one to evoke admiration.

Our ally turned to me and said, "Say, is the morale of these Indian troops good?"

I have had several times to explain away cases of this sort, but it does strike me that it is wrong to have to do so. Cannot we eliminate the necessity by a general raising of the standard of turnout and discipline all round?

Four other reasons have impelled me to write this letter. They are:

- (a) The shocking exhibitions I have seen at railway stations and in bazaars all over India.
- (b) The indifferent attitude towards this state of affairs displayed by Indian Army Officers, who accept it as a matter of course.
- (t) The appalling advertisement for the Indian Army it will be when shortly our forces of occupation enter enemy-occupied or enemy territory with a host of unsoldierly personnel in their train.
- (d) The great trouble taken by at least one British Brigade whom I have had the pleasure of visiting, to explain the difference between the appearance of Indian non-combatants and technicians and that of the fighting soldiers.

Non-combatants and technicians are essential to our well-being. Fitters, cooks, watercarriers, butchers, barbers, sweepers, all have their job to do and do it well. The fact is that 95 per cent. of these men are respectable, decent, hardworking men who, if taught and encounaged, would make their turnout and bearing a credit to the King's uniform.

The main faults to be dealt with are:

- 1. Complete lack of correct original Basic training, i.e., training in the simple drill movement and saluting.
- 2. The wide variation of style and colour of the uniform being worn. Lack of fitting, and in most cases a complete inability on the part of the wearer to put it on properly.
- 3. The lack, after five years of war, of provision (except in the cases of the I.A.C.) of a suitable headdress for Indian soldiers.
- 4. Unshavenness, the wearing of long unshaved and unkempt hair, untrimmed or "Charlie Chaplin" moustaches and untidy beards.

Digitized by Google

ne last issue
o education
I. Orr in an
atter contrin the centre
ion of Civil
a necessary

on for both

lies further

n endowed

war memohere of the er standard and let live coosed tooth beople, but ry of those

nould come
is country,
its people
well-laidtion. Each
out a comeral stand-

back, and have to be ns. Many var; there of banks. In around e who, in have engive gen.

ly,

jor.

etter and

5. Dirty teeth.

How are we to raise the standard all round? At first sight it appears to be a formidable task, but on examination it looks to be a six-month job.

Basic Training.—Instruction in all Depots and Centres to be smartened up, local courses to be started all over India to teach basic training in drill and soldierliness. B.Os., V.C.Os., N.C.Os. to attend. A high standard to be attained. All men to do half to one hour drill a day.

Clothing.—Elimination in a given period of all variegated forms of dress, and the immediate increase in the establishment of tailors. Small units to be given special favourable treatment.

Headdress.—This deserves a special article. All that is available to Indian soldiers in addition to the steel helmet are: the F.S. side cap K.D.—A badly-made and sloppy article which does not suit the Indian soldier; the Pagri.—Fit only for ceremonial, most unsuitable for modern soldiering; the Hat, Pith (available to certain classes only) is an æsthetic atrocity; where is the green K.D. beret about which we have heard so much?

Hair.—An immediate increase in the scale of barbers is required. Strict prohibition of long, untidy hair, "soupstainers or "Charlie Chaplin" moustaches. To those men who wish to wear hair in the Western style the issue of a brush is essential.

Teeth.—It is not understood why this important hygienic subject is so neglected. We should insist on compulsory inspection and treatment. We have mobile cinemas, canteens, workshops; why not a mobile dental section?

Is the writer asking for "Utopia"? Examine the suggestions and see what is required. Only that every man in the army be taught during a six-month period to perform the simple foot drill movements and saluting correctly, to put his clothes and hat on properly, to keep his hair short, moustache in order, and his teeth clean.

We are entering Burma in the near future. There are other countries to follow. Let us start these improvements now.

(a) A superior of the super

Fig. 1. Sept. (a) Sept. (b) Sept. (b) Sept. (b) Sept. (c) Sept.

· Yours faithfully,

"ISTUFEEN:"

and the first of a section

S.E.A.C.

#### NOTES BY THE SECRETARY

#### **Honours to Members**

The following honours have recently been conferred on members of the Institution:

G.C.B.—H. E. General Sir Claude Auchinleck, G.C.I.E., C.B., C.S.I., D.S.O., O.B.E., A.D.C., Commander-in-Chief, India.

K.C.B.—General H. Finnis, C.B., M.C., I.A.

C.B.—Major-General D. R. Duguid, M.B.E., A.M.I.E.E., M.I.Mech.E., R.E.M.E.; Major-General C. M. P. Durnford, C.I.E., I.A.; Major-General E. Wood, C.I.E., M.C., I.A.

C.S.I.—W. Christie, Esq., C.I.E., M.C., J.P., I.C.S., Chief Secretary, Government of the United Provinces.

K.C.I.E.—Lieut.-General H. B. D. Willcox, C.B., D.S.O., M.C.

C.I.E.—Brigadier D. Mc.D. Fraser, I.M.S.; Major-General E. N. Goddard, C.B.E., M.V.O., M.C.; Major-General A. W. S. Mallaby, O.B.E., I.A.; Major-General F. H. Skinner, O.B.E., I.A.; Brigadier C. J. Weld, M.C., .I.A.

C.B.E.—Brigadier S. F. Irwin, I.A.

O.B.E. Lieut. Colonel H. B. Davies, M.C., 13 Frontier Force Rifles; Brigadier Rao Bahadur Ghansar Singh, Kashmir State Forces; Colonel T. Hudson, R.I.A.S.C.; Lieut Colonel G. H. Nash, 16 Punjab Regiment; Lieut Colonel Sirdar Bakshish Singh Chimni, R.I.A.S.C.

M.B.E.—Captain S. R. Pocock, M.C., Welch Regiment.

D.S.O.—Major-General A. W. W. Holworthy, M.C.; Major W. M. Mackay, 5 Mahratta Light Infantry; Lieut. Colonel H. E., Cubitt Smith, O.B.E., 12 Frontier Force Regiment.

Bar to, M.C., Major M. L. -Cruickshank, M.C., 2 Gurkha Rifles; Captain B. G. Hickey, M.C., 5 Royal Gurkha Rifles.

M.C.—Major K, S. Katoch, 13 Frontier Force Regiment; Captain W. G. H. Smith, 10 Gurkha Rifles.

#### New Members

The following new members have been elected to membership of the Institution during the past three months. In addition, five Officers' Messes have become subscribing members during the same period;

Appedaile. E. G. S.,

Ashford, Lieut. R. L. M.,

Barker, Major A.,

Aird, Major W. T.,

Appedaile,

Lieut.-Colonel Boparai, Major M. S. M.B.E., Brookes, Captain F. E., Brij Narayan, Esq., O.B.E., L.M.A. Samuel Stranger

Baljit Singh, Captain, \*Bulbeck, Captain S. A., Chandra Shekhar, Captain, Chanan Singh, Lieut., Cowell. Major R. E.,

\*d'Apice, Captain R. H. J., Duncan, Major J. R.,

Findlay, Captain R., Fleming, Lieut.-Colonel W. E., O.B.E., M.C., \*Fowler, Major E. C. W.,

Garland, Lieut-Colonel H. E., Gibson, Major R. V., Green, Lieut-Colonel A., Gurbachan Singh, Major, Gurdial Singh, Captain,

Halliley, Major A. A., . Healy, 2'Lieut. T. P., Heenan, John L., Esq., I. P., Hughes, T. L., Esq., C.B.E., \*Iftikhar 'Khan, Major M., ·Jadhav, Major C. K., Khalid, Major G. M. A., \*Latham, Captain W. D., Lifton, Captain W. J.,

McLintock, Lieut. J. D., Maneckji, Lieut. M. J. B., Mohd. Akbar, Lieut. Moorthy, Lieut. M. S. K., Morris, Major J. A.,

Obroi, Captain M. L.

Major-Pakenham-Walsh. Genl. R. P., M.C. Plunkett, Lieut. N. W., Portman, Brigadier G. M. B., T.D., T.A., A.D.C., Purna, Captain K. R.,

Reeve, Lieut-Colonel L H.,

Sanzgiri, Major Vasant R., Spanton, Major E. J. C., Smith, Lieut.-Colonel F. O. •Stanage, Major R., Sury, Lieut. T. A.,

Weston, Lieut. G. N., White, Lieut.-Colonel S. J., Wicks, Major G. F., T.D., Wilkinson, Captain C. F., Willis, Major M. T. Wright, Lieut.-Colonel H. O., Wylie, Lieut. A. L.,

Young, Brigadier Desmond, M. C.,

## Gold Medal Essay Competition

The winning essay for the 1943/44 Competition which appears in this issue of the Journal, was contributed by Colonel J. F. R. Forman, 19th Hyderabad Regiment.

Entries for the 1944-45 Competition must reach the Secretary by June 30, 1945. The subject selected is:

"During the present war there have been certain limiting factors to the expansion of the Armed forces of India as regards personnel, equipment and armaments. Consider in relation to any one, or all three Services, in what manner they could in future best meet their peace-time commitments within the probable limitations of post-war finance, and at the same time form a sounder basis for expansion if the need should occur."

Full details of the rules governing the competition will be found elsewhere in this issue.

## MacGregor Memorial Medal

Recommendation for the award of the MacGregor Memorial Medal should be submitted by May 1 of each year.

The MacGregor Memorial Medal was founded in 1888 as a memorial tit the late Major-General Sir Charles MacGregor, who founded the United Service Institution of India. It is awarded for the best military reconnaissance or journey of exploration of the year, which, during the war, may have been achieved during an escape from a Far Eastern enemy country into, for instance, India.

The awards are made in June; and are: (a) For officers, British or Indian, silver medal, and (b) for soldiers, British or Indian, a silver medal with Rs. 100 as grantity. For especially valuable work, a gold medal may be awarded in place of one of the silver medals, whenever the administrators of the Fund deem it desirable. The Council may also award a special additional silver medal, without gratuity, to a soldier, for specially good work.

The award of the medals is made by His Excellency the Commander in Chief, India, as Vice-Patron, and the Council of the United Service Institution of India, who were applointed administrators of the Fund by the MacGregor Memorial Committee.

Eligibility for the award is open to: (a) Officers and other ranks of all forces of the British Commonwealth of Nations while serving with the India Establishment, or with South East Asia Command during the present War. (b) Officers and other ranks of the Royal Indian Navy, Indian Army, Indian Air Force and of the Indian States Forces, wherever serving. (The term "Indian Army" includes the Indian Auxiliary and Territorial Forces, Frontier Milita, Levies, Military Police and Military Corps under local governments.)

Personal risk to life during the reconnaissance or exploration is not a necessary qualification for the award of the medal: but, in the event of two journeys being of equal value, the man who has incurred the greater risk will be considered to have the greater claim to the award.

When the work of the year has either not been of sufficient value or notice of it has been received too late for consideration before the Council Meeting, the medal may be awarded for any reconnaissance during previous years considered by His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief in India to deserve it.

teremonial parades, suspended round the neck by the ribbon issued with the medal. Replacements of the ribbon may be obtained on payment from the Secretary, United Service Institution of India, Simla.

#### Contributions to the Journal

Articles on matters of military, naval and air force interest are welcomed. They should not exceed 5,000 words in length, and preferably should run to 3,000 words. Contributions should be typewritten, double spacing, and in view of the paper shortage, may be typed on both sides, providing a moderately thick paper is used.

Digitized by Google

Contributors unable to submit articles already typed may send them in manuscript form, and arrangements will be made for them to be typed in Simla, the small charge being deducted from the contributor's fee. Payment is made on publication, at rates up to Rs. 150 according to the value of the contribution.

All articles dealing with military subjects are submitted to the authorities before publication, for security reasons. Contributions may, if the author desires, appear under a pseudonym: in such cases, the name of the author remains strictly confidential. The right to omit or amend any part of an article is reserved by the Executive Committee.

#### Library

An extensive library is available for members of the Institution at the headquarters in Simla. Books may be loaned to members resident in India, and those borrowing works in person must enter particulars in the book provided. Members stationed outside Simla may receive books on application; they will be sent post-free by registered parcel post, and must be returned within two months, or immediately on recall. No more than three volumes may be issued at any one time. Reference books and works marked "Confidential" may not be removed from the library.

Members wishing to retain a work for more than two months should notify the Secretary to that effect. If, after the expiration of three weeks from the date of issue a book is wanted by another member, it will be recalled. Should a book not be returned within fourteen days of the date of recall, it must be paid for, the cost of lost or defaced books being refunded by the member to whom they were issued. Such volumes which have become out of print will be valued by the Executive Committee, the member being required to pay the cost so fixed.

The issue of a book to any member under the above rules implies the latter's agreement with the regulations.

A catalogue of books in the library may be obtained on payment of Rs. 2/8 per copy, plus 13 annas postage.

#### Letters to the Editor

Correspondence is invited for inclusion in the Journal on subjects referred to in articles, or which are of interest to members of the Services in India. Letters should be as brief as possible, and should be sent to the Editor, United Service Institution of India Journal, Simla.

# FIRST-AID and SANITATION

for

#### TROOPS

Mechanisation has altered the nature of modern battles.

Fighting takes place in small, isolated and dispersed groups.

Though Medical Officers are still detailed to units they cannot be where casualties occur.

To make an efficient fighting unit every man should be 100% efficient in First-Aid and Sanitation.

#### "FIRST-AID AND SANITATION FOR TROOPS"

affords this instruction for the non-medical officer and man in language which can be understood by the lay-reader.

"So much confidence-inspiring knowledge has seldom been supplied at so low a price'.—"E.C.P." Journal of the United Service Institution of India.

Obtainable from

No. 1 Training & Depot Centre,

Indian Army Medical Corps, was a second

RAWALPINDI.

Price: Annas Eight.

#### A SERVICE PATTERN Officers' Popular

## "RAINCOAT"

That will keep out Wind, Cold and Water.

Have you one in your Kit?

Military Regulation Service Pattern Officers' Khaki Waterproof "Trench-Coat" (roomy and comfy and extremely serviceable and lighter in weight than Greatcoat).

Made from thoroughly Dustproof, Windproof and Waterproof, double texture fine Bubberised Cloth of Regulation Khaki Colour.



Price Rs. 45 each

PRONT: Double breasted style, cut with a curve to Military shape with broad lapels. Open and Broad Military Storm Collar to stand and fall with Tab to button to throat. Armpits with ventilation eyelets.

Note.—With order please state size round CHEST and WAIST taken over jacket and your full beight or length of coat required.

# BADGES OF RANK

(For wear on shoulder straps of above Trench-Cout)

STARS Bronze (Waterproof) ... . @ Rs. 2-0 per pair.

CROWNS Bronze (Waterproof) .. .. @ Rs. 2-4 per pair.

(Raincoats for Lady Officers also supplied)

Please address your orders to:

# YOUSAF & CO.

(Late of Holdings, Oxford Circus, London, 1914-18)

MILITARY & POLICE TAILORS, LUDBIANA (PUNJAB)

Note.—Where V.-P. P. system is not available, please send remittance with order plus postage.

Branch at: Juliundur Cantonment, B. I. Bazar
Telegraphic Address: "MAYFAIR," Ludhians.



By Appointment

To The Late King George V

# RANKEN & Co., Ltd.

CALCUTTA, SIMLA, DELHI, LAHORE, RAWALPINDI & MURREE

**ESTABLISHED IN CALCUTTA 1770** 

# CIVIL & MILITARY TAILORS GENTLEMEN'S OUTFITTERS AND BREECHES MAKERS

ESTIMATES SUPPLIED FOR FULL-DRESS AND MESS DRESS UNIFORMS OF ALL REGIMENTS

By Appointment to

His Excellency General Sir Robert A. Cassels, G.C.B., C.S.I., D.S.O., Former Commander-in-Chief in India.

# ROYAL SOCIETY FOR THE ENCOURAGEMENT OF ARTS MANUFACTURES AND COMMERCE

PATRON-HIS MAJESTY THE KING

#### COUNCIL

#### PRESIDENT

E. F. ARMSTRONG, PH.D., D.SC., LL.D., F.R.S.

VICE-PRESIDENTS

LORD ABERCONWAY, C.B.E.

W. H. ANSELL, M.C., P.R.I.B.A.

A. C. BOSSOM, F.R.I.B.A., M.P.

SIR ATUL CHATTERJEE, G.C.I.E., K.C.S.I.

LIEUT.-COL. P. J. COWAN, M.B.E., M.INST.C.E., M.I.MECH.E.

SIR JOSTAH CROSBY, K.C.M.G., K.B.E., C.I.E., O.R.E.

SIE EDWARD CROWE, K.O.M.G., Chairman, Examinations Committee.

SIR WILLIAM DAVISON, R.B.E., M.P.

T. C. DUGDALE, R.A., R.P.

SIR EDWARD A. GAIT, K.C.S.I., C.I.E.

E. W. GOODALE, M.C.

LORD HORDER, G.C.V.O., M.D., B SC., D.C.L.,

LORD HUNTINGFIELD, K.C.M.G.

SIR HARRY A. F. LINDRAY, K.C.I.E., C.B.B., Chairman, Dominions and Colonies Section Committee

SIR HENRY MCMAHON, G.C.M.G., G.C.V.O., K.C.I.E., C.S.I.

G. K. MENZIES, C.B.E.

JOHN A. MILNE, C.B.B., Chairman, R.D.I. Committee.

C. C. PATERSON, O.B.E., D.SC., M.J.B.E., F.B.S.

E. M. RICH. C.B.E., F.C.G.I., B.SC.

E. MUNRO RUNTE.

SIR JOHN RUSSELL, O.B.R., D.SC., F.R.S.

CAPTAIN A. H. RYLEY, Chairman, Thomas Gray Committee.

SIR NORMAN VERNON, B.T., M.A.

W. W. WARRFIELD, M.A., M.P.

#### ORDINARY MEMBERS OF COUNCIL

SIR FRANK BROWN, C.I.E.

MAJOR W. H. CADMAN, B.SC., F.I.C.

G. D. H. COLE.

PROFESSOR E. C. DODDS, M.V.O., D.SC., M.D., P.R.C.P., F.R.S.

SIR THOMAS DUNLOP, K.C.M.G., C.M.G.

REV. ETHELBERT GOODCRILD.

MISS CAROLINE HASLETT, C.B.E., COMP.I.B.S.

F. B. HIORNS, F.S.A., F.R.I.B.A., M.T.P.I. ROBERT W. HOLLAND, O.B.E., M.A., M.SC.,

LL.D.

C. GEOFFREY HOLME, M.B.E.

ALLAN WALTON, R.D.I.

JOHN G. WILSON.

Bz-officio MEMBER OF THE COUNCIL

PERCY SMITH, B.D.I., Master of the Faculty of Royal Designers for Industry.

TREASURERS

WILLIAM WILL

OSWALD P. MILNE, F.R.I.B.A., and Chairman, Industrial Art Bursaries Board.

SECRETARY

K. W. LUCKHURST, M.A. (absent on Active Service).

Acting Secretary-MISS J. SCOTT ROGERS.

Assistant Secretary, and Secretary, India and Burma and Dominions & Colonies Sections

D. C. MARTIN, B.SC., PH.D. (absent on War Service).

Acting Assistant Secretary-Miss S. HESLOP-DAVIES.

Honorary Solicitors-Messas, Bristows, Cooke & Carpaael.

Auditors-Messrs. Deloitte, Plender, Griffiths & Co.

Full particulars relating to the work of the Society and conditions of membership may be obtained from the Acting Secretary. The Annual Subscription is Three Guineas; the Life Subscription Thirty Guineas. There is no Entrance Fee.

The Society's Journal which contains full reports of the Society's Meetings, together with general articles, book reviews, etc., normally issued weekly, is published fortnightly during the War. It is posted free to Fellows.

All communications for the Society should be addressed to:

THE ACTING SECRETARY, ROYAL SOCIETY OF ARTS, 6-8 JOHN ADAM STREET, ADELPHI, LONDON, W.C.2.







The Wool-Wear for India



The Footwear for India

# BARR & STROUD BINOCULARS



Type C.F. 5. (6×24 mm)

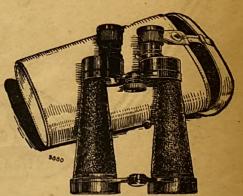


Type C.F. 10. (6×30.5 mm.)

BARR & STROUD LTD. REGRET THAT THEY ARE RR & STROUD LTD. REGRET THAT THEY ARE
UNABLE MEANWHILE TO ACCEPT PRIVATE ORDERS



Type C.F. 24. (8×30:5 mm.)



Type C.F. 30. (7×50 mm.)

BARR & STROUD, LTD.,

ANNIESLAND, GLASGOW, W.3-and 15 VICTORIA STREET, LONDON, S.W. L.

Telegrams :-"Telemeter" Glasgow

Codes :-

5th and 6th Editions, A.B.C.

Telegrams :-

"Retemelet Sowest" London

# THE JOURNAL

OF THE

# UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION

OF

# INDIA

#### PRINCIPAL CONTENTS

Financial Control and Paper	 "Millstone."
Russia	 LtCol. G. H. Nash.
The Sepoy at Home and Overseas	 "Charles".
The P. O. Ws. Fly Home	 MacDonald Hastings.
Eight Months with the W.A.C.(I)	 Chief Cmdr. A. Collins.
Officers of the Post-War I.A	 Major B. D. Kapur.
Indian Mass Escape from Epinal	 Capt. A. Dewan-
Gunners at Kohima	
Army Welfare and the W.V.S	 Major-General J. G. Elliott.
Organising a Tattoo	 Wing-Commander L. Shaffi.
Badges of Rank of V.C.Os	 Major N. P. Dawnay.
Japanese Mines and Booby Traps	 Capt. W. D. Bristow.
Sisters in Need	Enid Scott
India's War Effort	 The Editor.

(A complete list of Contents appears on Page xiii.)

# Banking by Post



If you are unable to call personally at any of the Branches of Lloyds Bank, Managers will be pleased to explain the Bank's facilities or answer any enquiries by post, if you will write to them.

Every kind of Banking Business transacted. CURRENT ACCOUNTS opened, INTEREST ALLOWED on terms which may be ascertained on application.
FIXED DEPOSITS received at INTEREST.
SAVINGS BANK ACCOUNTS allow WI WITHDRAWALS by CHEQUE. STERLING and FOREIGN CURRENCY DRAFTS sold and direct REMITTANCES made. TELEGRAPHIC TRANSFERS effected through Banks in ALL COUNTRIES supplied FREE OF WORLD LETTERS OF CREDIT COMMISSION TRAVELLERS CHEQUES REGISTERED BANK OF ENGLAND NOTES by SALARIES, PAY & PENSIONS collected.
PERIODICAL PAYMENTS & SUBSCRIPTIONS effected. STOCKS & SHARES purchased and sold, and held in SAFE CUSTODY. EXPERT OPINION on INVESTMENTS obtained from Brokers. DIVIDENDS & INTEREST collected. ADVANCES allowed against Approved SECURITY.

# Lloyds Bank Limited

(Incorporated in England.)

#### Branches in India:

BOMBAY (2 Offices), CALCUTTA (2 Offices), DARJEELING, KARACHI, DELHI, NEW DELHI, SIMLA, LAHORE, RANGOON EVACUATION BRANCH (Lahore), AMRITSAR, PESHAWAR, (Cantt. & City), RAWALPINDI, MURREE, SRINAGAR, GULMARG.

#### UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION OF INDIA The Secretary, United Service Institution of India, SIMLA. Date..... Please enrol me as a member (or Life Member) of the United Service Institution of India. Yours faithfully. (In block caps.) Rank and Unit ..... Permanent Address ..... Present Address ..... BANKERS' ORDER FORM To Messrs. ..... (Bankers), at ...... On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla, for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 10 (ten). being my annual subscription for 19 and the sum of Rs. 10 on every succeeding January 1 until further notice. Date. ..... Signature. ..... To Messrs ...... (Bankers), at ..... On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla, for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 150 (one hundred and fifty), being Life Membership subscription of the Institution. Signature..... The Secretary, United Service Institution of India, SIMLA. Date..... Dear Sir. Please enrol me as member (or Life Member) of the United Service Institution of India. Yours faithfully. • (In block caps.) Rank and Unit..... Permanent Address..... Present Address..... BANKERS' ORDER FORM To Messrs. ..... (Bankers), at ..... On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla, for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 10 (ten), being my annual subscription for 19 and the sum of Rs. 10 on every succeeding January 1 until further notice. Date. ..... Signature. ..... To Messrs. ..... (Bankers), at ..... On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla, for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 150 (one hundred and fifty), being Life Membership subscription of the

Date. ..... Signature.

Institution.

#### UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION OF INDIA

The headquarters building of the United Service Institution of India in Simla is open daily, including Sundays, from 9 a.m. to sunset. It contains a reading room, in which is available a wide range of illustrated periodicals, newspapers, magazines, etc., as well as a number of Service journals. A well-stocked library is also open to members, who may horrow volumes without charge, while members stationed elsewhere may obtain books on loan post free.

Members also receive, post-free, each of the quarterly issues

of the Journal of the Institution.

Rules of Membership

1. All officers of the Defence Services, whether they belong to the Imperial Forces, to forces raised by the Government of India, by an Indian State, by a British Dominion or Colony, and all gazetted officials of the Government of India or of a Provincial Government shall be entitled to become members, without ballot, on payment of the entrance fee and subscription.

Other gentlemen may become members if proposed and seconded by a member of the Institution and approved by the Council. They will be entitled to all the privileges of membership, excepting voting

2. Life members of the Institution shall be admitted on payment

of a lump sum of Rs. 160, which sum includes entrance fee.

3. Ordinary members of the Institution shall be admitted on payment of an entrance feet (see para. 4) of Rs. 10 on joining, and an annual subscription of Rs. 10 (or 15s.) to be paid in advance.

The pariod of subscription commences on January 1.

An ex-member on rejoining the Institution will be charged second entrance fee of Rs. 10 if since the date on which he ceased to be a member he has served or resided in India. In other cases no charge will be made.

4. British Service, Dominion and Colonial officers serving to

India shall pay an entrance feet of Rs. 7 only.

5. Members receive the Journal of the Institution post free to any part of the world. Members in India may obtain books from the library; they are issued postage free, the borrower paying the return postage.

6. Government institutions and offices, military libraries, messes and clubs wishing to subscribe for the Journal shall pay Rs. 10 per Non-members shall pay Rs. 10 per annum plus postage. Single copies of the Journal will be supplied to non-members at

Rs. 2-8-0 per copy, plus postage.

7. If a member fails to pay his subscription for any year (commencing 1st January) by 1st June of that year, a registered notice shall be sent to him by the Secretary inviting his attention to If the subscription is not paid by 1st January following. his name shall be struck off the roll of members and, if the Executive Committee so decide, posted in the hall of the Institution for six months, or until the subscription is paid-

8. An ordinary member wishing to resign at any time during a year in which one or more Journals have been sent to him must pay his subscription in full for that year and notify his wish to resign

before his name can be struck off the list of members.

9. Members who join the Institution on or after the 1st October and pay the entrance ice and annual subscription on joining will not be charged a further subscription on the following 1st January, unless the Journals for the current year have been supplied.

16. Members are responsible that they keep the Secretary carefully posted in regard to changes of rank and address. Duplicate copies of the Journal will not be supplied free to members when the original has been posted to a member's last known address and has not been returned through the post.

11. All communications should be addressed to the Secretary. United Service Institution of India, Simia.

• For the duration of the war, the entrance fee has been waived.

# V SERVICE FOR SERVICES

We are giving below our brief list of Officers' equipments with latest prices for the convenience of our patrons.

Kh. Barathea Peaked Cap soft or stiff
(All officers' Caps supplied)
Kh. Barathea Side Cap Rs. 15
Khaki or Black "BERET" Cap
Rs. 15
Shoulder Titles, Gilt or Bronzed
Rs. 2 p.p.
Shoulder Titles, Cloth "SLIP-ON"
Rs. 18|- p.p.

DIA

Instituto rom q 21

availahk ı

rell-stocke

umes with

tain boob

erly isso

belong #

India, h

1 gazelld

overmed

yment d

seconde

il **I**bs

ig voting

payment

itted @

g, and **s** 

nargej i

eased to

cases 16

ving. b

free b

ks from

ing ik

III (SIS)

10 pe

20stage

ers s

year.

isterei

tion to

oviu

culipt

ır sir

t pal

esigo

tobe

] not

DES.

1939—43 Star or N. Africa or Any other Medal Ribbons Rs. 1|8|p.ft. Cap Badge Gilded and Bronzed

Rs. 4.
Oakleaf Gold Embd. Gorget
patches ... Rs. 15 p. p.
Scarlet or Green Silk Lace
Gorget patches ... Rs. 10 p. p.
Collar Badges Bronzed or Gilded ... Rs. 6 p. p.
Leather Thong Buttons E/made
Rs. 5 p. set.

BUTTONS Gilded or Bronzed of All Descriptions Rs. 7-8 p. set. CROWN Gilded or Bronzed Rs. 2-4 p. p.

Do. Kh. Worsted Rs. 1-4 p. p. STAR Gilt-enamelled or Bronzed Rs. 2-4 p. p.

Do. Kh. Worsted Rs. 1-4 p. p. PITH Helmet Khaki ... Rs. 7-8 HELMET Flash Ribbon in your Colour ... Rs. 1-8 p. ft. WHISTLE & Lanyard Rs. 2-8. Revolver LANYARD ... Rs. 2-8. Sam Browne Belt complete Rs. 25.

Ribbon Bars with Safety-pin mounted with one Ribbon -[8]-.

p. Bar.

Kh. Woollen STOCKINGS.

Rs. 7 p. p.

Kh. Woollen Socks Rs. 4-4 p. p.

Kh. Woollen HOSETOPS Rs. 3-8.
Kh. Mercerised Stockings Rs. 5
p. p.
FOX'S Ankle Puttle . Rs. 8-8.

Kh. Silk-knitted TIE Rs. 2.

Silk wide-end TIE in every regtl. and deptl. colour Rs. 4.

Silk Square 36"×36" Rs. 15

Servants' WAIST & PUGREE BANDS complete with n|p

buckles and runner in every deptl. & regtl. colour 4", 5" and 6" wide ... Rs. 4, 5 and 6 respectively.

(Special Clubs, Messes and Regtl. made to order.) Servants' Silver-plated Badge for Pugree ... Rs. 2-8.

A to Z initial Rs. 1-8.
MILY. BRUSH CASES, Elmade
(Garstin & Co., Ltd.)

Fitted with Two Natural Ebony Hair Brushes, Real Bristle and Comb, hide case to resemble Ebony.

Size 5½"×2½"×2" Rs. 48 Size 5"×2½"×2" Rs. 40 COLLAR BOXES, E|made.

Real Hide. Long strap over lid, lined imitation pigskin,
Size 7½ diameter Rs. 15.

Size. Rs. 12.
TROUSER-PRESSES, E made.
Made in polished Oak grained wood, nickeled fittings and detachable stretcher, size 26"×12½"

GOLF BAGS

Rs. 35.

Nut-brown cowhide, lined drill, outside pocket, strong leather sling, blocked bottom. Rs. 25. White Washable GLOVES E/made Rs. 30 p. doz.

made ... Rs. 30 p. doz.
Gold and Silver Kullahs and
Loongies in any design (made
to order.)

80 Best Quality Letter Papers and Envelopes, embossed with your Crest in blue ... Rs. 6. Xmas Cards, crested, bound with your colour with envelopes, per dozen ... Rs. 4-8. Silk ribbon in your colour for Invitation Christmas Cards, per

yard ... Re. 0-8-0.
AIR FORCE
Peaked Cap Blue complete Rs. 26.
Side Cap complete . , Rs. 15
Silk Rank Braids, Blue or Khaki.
2", 3" and 23" wide Rs. 1|-, 1|4,
and 6|- per yard.

ALL OTHER ARTICLES STOCKED BY

# K. MAHMOOD SHAH'S

MILITARY, R. A. F. & POLICE Contractors and Outfitters LUDHIANA (Pb.)

#### Outstanding Books Published by Thackers, Bombay

#### THE SONG OF BERNADETTE Franz Werfel

More than a hundred thousand copies sold! How novels pose a problem of more fascinating human complexity than this story of an enlightened civilisation suddenly faced by the inexplicable. Rs. 3-12

#### FOR WHOM THE BELL TOLLS

FOR WHUM THE BLAZE ...

Ernest Hemingway

One million people bought it. Five million people read it. The greatest love story of all Re. 9-12 time.

#### INDIAN INTERLUDE Erio Beecroft

The author has created a number of delightful personalities, he succeeds in conveying to the strong strong particles. Rs. 6-14

#### MOTIVE FOR MURDER Florence Klipatrick

Clyde Moncrieff has to make a dash for England to escape from being involved in a murder ha witnessed in an onlum-den in Rio. His further he witnessed in an opium-den in Rio. adventures make an absorbing detective story.

D DAY
John Cunther

Mr. Gunther is well known for his "Inside Europe" and other books of a similar type. "D Day" is recommended as one of the best books of the week by the "London Times Literary Supplement."

WITH THE 14TH ARMY
D. F. Karaka
This latest book by Mr. Karaka is an outstanding feat of close observation and accurate recording. Recent developments on this front make "With the 14th Army" a book of particular interest just now.

Re. 7-14

Re. 7-14

## WINGATE'S PHANTOM ARMY W. G. Burchett

"More thrilling than any fictitious thriller."

#### PACIFIC TREASURE ISLAND

The book tells of New Caledonia, the Pacific Treasure Island—the Maita of the South Seas. Of the author it is said "Burchett has become a force to be reckoned with. His writings have rightly become popular among the peoples of South East Asia."

#### THE WORLD THAT WORKS George West

This is a book about the end of a world that did not work and news of a world we're all looking for—a world that works.

Rs. 5

#### THE LIVING AND THE DEAD

THE LIVING AND ...

Beverley Niehols

book that has caused much bitterness and

respective criticism. Rs. 2-12 much more constructive criticism.

#### INDIA IN FABLE, YERSE AND STORY L. H. Nibiett

Here is a feast of good reading: stories ancient and modern—weird, bizarre, elevating, humourous, and serious—illustrating diverse aspects of Indian life. Rs. 4-8

JOURNALISM
C. L. R. Sastri
A rare find and a real acquisition to Indian

TRY ANYTHING ONCE Frank Clune

"A record of true vagabondage, amazing in the variety of its icidents, and told with a naive candour, which leaves the reader rather breath-Rs. H

#### ONIONS AND OPINIONS N. G. Jog

These little essays are a sheer delight.

#### PEOPLE OF ROMBAY Percival & Olivia Strip

This book describes the origin, history, religion, commercial activities inherent traits, etc., of the Parsees, the Khojas, the Banyas, the Boires and other communities of Bombay.

#### SUNLIT WATERS Capt. C. W. W. S. Conway

This book gives an extremely practical exposi-tion of the methods and advantages of flating with light tackle—and brings fishing history is India up-to-date.

#### MY STORY Sheelagh O'Flynn

A Baby's Record Book and Photograph Album

#### KNITTED ZOO Anna Politzer & Thora Stowell

What is more fascinating than making your own toys at home? Here is a book of complete instructions for knitting toys, with details about materials and making up, and expert guidence throughout. Re. 64

#### THE GALLANT WAY Frank Taylor

A collection of twenty-three spirited poems extolling the best in the British martial trad-

#### THE TRIAL OF MUSSOLINI "CASSUS"

Did you read "Guilty Men"?if so (or if not) read "The Trial of Mussolini" by "Cassius," The first four editions total 100,000 copies.

#### MADE MY OWN DOLLS

The patterns given in this book have all been made over and over again and have stood the test of being sold in competition with professional models and all have sold very well.

#### LENINGRAD

Alexander Werth
Out of the beleaguered city—the starved, bombed and shelled city—he brought a story that no reader will very easily forget. Rs. 648

#### WHAT TO DO WITH GERMANY Louis Nizer

His book is a triumph of brief, lucid statement, sane argument and imaginative planning, factar all the major issues and omitting no essentials.

STRANGE ISLAND
Molley Kaye
This is a thriller in the classical tradition of
Edgar Wallace and Agatha Christle, brilliantly
constructed and told with many fishes of humour.

Through Japanese Barbed Wire (in the press). G. Priestwood

#### THACKERS PUBLISHERS, **BOMBAY**



# VIRGINIA CIGARETTES

5 ANNAS FOR 10 plus tax where local or provincial taxation is in force





Save for Victory BRITISH •WAR• SAVINGS MOVEMENT ASK YOUR SANK

JOHN PLAYER & SONS, ENGLAND

PL/813



					Re.	a.
Khaki Barathea Service Peak Cap	and Ra	dge			20	0
Khaki Barathea Field Cap and Ba	dge	(Bide	Canl		15	0
Blue Barathea Field Cap and Bad	76	(Side	Cap)		20	ŏ
Green, Black or Khaki "Reret"	Can	,5.00	Omp,	••	15	ŏ
Pure Silver Badges for "Beret"	Cans	••	each	•	8	ŏ
Silver-plated Badges for " Beret '	'Cans			•••	5	ŏ
R.A.F Blue Barathea Peak Cap a		e	"		25	ŏ
R.A.F. Blue Barathea Field Cap a			ide Cap		18	Ö
Collar Badges, Bronze for Khaki J		,	a pair		6	ŏ
Cap Badges, Bronze for Khaki Car			each		4	Ŏ
Buttons, Gilt or Bronze for Khaki			a set		7	8
Buttons, Gilt for Patrol Jacket	••				7	8
Buttons, Gilt for Greatcoat	••	••	,,		9	0
Shoulder Titles, Glit or Bronze	••		a pair		2	0
Shoulder Titles, Cloth slip-on	••		,,		1	8
Stars (Pips), Glit-enamelled			,,		2	4
Crowns, Gilt with Red Velvet	••		,,		2	8
Stars or Crowns, Bronze or Black			• • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • •		2	0
Stars or Crowns, worsted on Khak	Cloth	••	11		1	8
Khaki Celinlar Bush Shirts		• •			12	8
Service pattern Shirts of fast Kha	ıki Cellu	lar wit	h flap			-
nockets, shoulder straps and at	tached c	OHAT	each		6	
Drab Flannel Service pattern Shir	rts, to m	atch "	Barath	ea''		
iacket			each		28	0
Khaki Drill Shorts Rs. 6-8 a pair, ]	Khaki D	riii Sia	cks,,		15	0
Khaki Woollen Stockings	••	••	"		6	0
Khakhi Woollen Socks	• •	••	a pair		3	12
Khaki Ankle Putties, Fox's Paten	t	••	**		9	0
Khaki Woollen Hosetops	• •	••	**		3	8
Field Haversacks, leather bottom	· L		each		10	0
Field Waterbottles Rs. 10 each. 8	. B. Bel	t	_ ,,		25	0
Whistle and Khaki Lanyard Rs. 2	-8. Re	volver	Lanyar	1	2	8
1939-43 Star or N. Africa Staror a	ny othei	. Weda	Ribbo	13	1.3	
			3001 B		1	8
Bars mounted with any ribbon	••	• •	each		. 0	6
Officer's Greatcoat	••	••	**		275	0
Khaki Raincoat	••	••	**	••	45	0
T Duerres Bonds	Rodo	٠	2:11. T		1.05	•

Servants' Waist & Pugree Bands, Badges, Silk Ties and Sports Squares

(Stocked in your Regulation approved colours and designs.)

Servants' Waist & Pugree Bands & Pugree Badges
(Your Servants will look neat and smart when wearing Bands and Badges.)
Waist & Pugree Bands in your Corps, Regiment or Departmental

colours fitted with electro nickel-plated buckle and runner adjustable to any size waist ... at Rs. 4/- per set Servants' Pugree Badges, electro silver-plated of your Corps, Regiment or Departmental design ... at Rs. 4/- each

WIDE-END TIES

Wide End superior Cord Silk Ties, well made with reinforced neck bands, with diagonal stripes in your Regulation colours at Rs. 5/- each

**MUFFLERS** 

Mufflers 36 inches square made of superior cord silk striped in your Regulation colours . . . . at Rs. 18/- each

**BLAZER POCKET BADGES** 

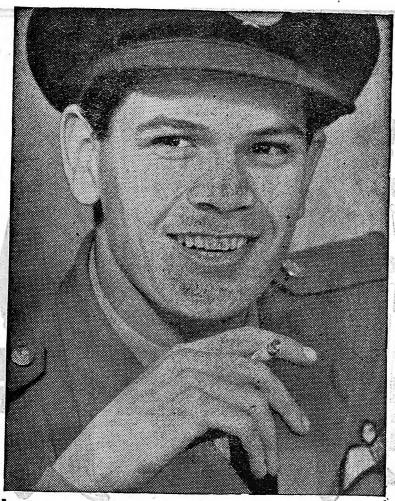
Pocket Badges with your crest worked in Gold or Silver embroidery on blue or your own material ... at Rs. 8/- each Pocket Badges, with your crest embroidered in white or any coloured silk, on blue or your own material ... at Rs. 4/- each

CRESTED STATIONERY

80 best quality Letter Papers & Envelopes to match, embossed with your Depttl. Crest in any colour ... at Rs. 6
Silk Ribbon in your colours for Invitation & Wedding Cards As. 8 per yard.

# YOUSUF & CO. MILITARY & POLICE TAILORS, LUDHIANA (Punjab)

(Branch at: Juliundur Cantonment, B. I. Bazar)
Where V.-P.P. system is not available please send with order
cost of goods plus postage.





JAMES CARLTON LTD., LONDON, ENGLAND. EASTERN LICENCEES, P. O. BOX 470 CALCUTTA

# OFFICERS' UNIFORM



# BATTLE DRESS

Made from best quality English Khaki Serge. All details correct according to Regulations. Blouse and Trousers Rs. 100.



#### KHAKI BARATHEA

Service Dress Jacket and Trousers Rs. 200. Buttons and Badges extra.

# KHAKI OFFICERS GREAT COAS

Made from best English Treble milled and waterproofed Melton. Correct in all details Rs. 175. Buttons and Badges extra.

Patterns and self measurement form on request.

# ARMY & NAVY STORES LTD

Telegrams : "Armistice"

BOMBAY

Tolophone 12

# OCCOMPANY OF THE STATE OF THE S

SELOortho

\* SELOchrome

A great number of discriminating photographers all over India find that, although SELO films are less plentiful than in peacetime, they are well worth searching for—because of their quality. We would only add this:

States

# Marching on Still!

Distributors for India:

Advisovin-Obiel, Indian Gerce Perces

New Delbi.

fishe Tar 3 cade

## THE

# INDIAN STATES FORCES



# ANNUAL

## 1945

The Indian States are taking a great part in helping towards Victory. This Annual contains news of the States Forces in operational areas and in their States.

Please write for your copy to the Editor, The Indian States Forces Annual, Headquarters of the Military Adviser-in-Chief, Indian States Forces, New Delhi.

Price Rs. 3 each

by Google

## United Service Institution of India

#### PATRON:

His Excellency the Viceroy and Governor-General in India. VICE-PATRONS:

H. E. The Governor of Madras.

H. E. The Governor of Bombay.

H. E. The Governor of Bengal.

H. E. The C.-in-C. in India.

H. E. The Governor, United Prov.

H. E. The Governor of the Punjab.

H. E. The Governor of Bihar.

H. E. The Governor, Central Prov.

H. E. The Governor of Assam.

H. E. The Governor, N.W.F.P.

H. E. The Governor of Sind.

H. E. The Governor of Orissa.

The G.O. C.-in-C., N.W. Army.

The G.O. C.-in-C., Southern Army. The G.O. C.-in-C., Eastern Command.

The G.O. C.-in-C., Central Command.

#### MEMBERS OF THE COUNCIL, 1945-46

#### Ex-officio Members:

The Chief of the General Staff (President). The A.O.C., Air Forces in India (Vice-President). The Flag Officer Commanding Royal Indian Navy The Secretary, War Department.
The Secretary, Defence Department. The Secretary, External Affairs Department.

#### **Elected Members:**

Lieut.-Gen. Sir Clarence K.C.I.E., C.B., D.S.O.

Major-General J. B. Dalison, O.B.E. Lieut.-Gen. Sir Thomas Hutton, K.C.I.E., C.B., M.C. P. Mason, Esq., O.B.E., I.C.S. Captain H. E. Felser Paine, R.I.N.

Major-General R. A. Savory, C.B., D.S.O., M.C.

Major-General D. A. L. O.B.E., M.C.

Lieut.-General Sir H. B. D. Willcox, K.C.I.E., C.B., D.S.O., M.C.

#### Honorary Members:

Lieut.-Gen. H. H. the Maharaja of Jammu & Ka G.C.I.E., K.C.V.O. Kashmir, G.C.S.I.,

Air-Comm. H. H. the Nawab of Bhopal, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., C.V.O. Air Comm. H. H. Maharaja Bahadur of Jodhpur, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., K.C.V.O.

Colonel H. H. the Maharaja Jam Saheb of Nawanagar, G.C.I.E., K.C.S.I.

Major Maharaja Н. Н. the Patiala, G.B.E.

Major H. H. the Raja of Faridkot, K.C.S.I.

Lieut.-Gen. R. A. Wheeler, U. S. Army.

Major-Gen. George E. Stratemeyer, U. S. Army.

Major-Gen. Dan I Sultan, U.S. Army.

Major-Gen. W. E. R. Covell, U. S.

Lieut.-General Sir Oliver W. H.

Leese, G.B.E., D.S.O. Air Marshal Sir Keith Park, K.C.B.,

K.B.E., M.C., D.F.C. Admiral Sir Arthur J.

K.C.B., C.V.O. Lieut.-General F. A. M. Browning,

C.B., D.S.O. Air Marshal L. N. Hollinghurst, C.B., C.B.E., D.F.C., R.A.F.

#### MEMBERS OF THE EXECUTIVE COMMITTEE, 1945-46.

Chairman: Major-General J. B. Dalison, O.B.E.

Members: Lieut.-General Sir Thomas Hutton, K.C.I.E., C.B., M.C.

Captain H. E. Felser Paine, R.I.N.

P. Mason, Esq., O.B.E., I.C.S.

Major-General R. A. Savory, C.B., D.S.O., M.C.

Secretary and Editor: Lieut.-Colonel H. C. Druett. Bankers: Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla,



Copies of this excellent book will be sent free to doctors or officials dealing with Malaria or mosquito control.

Apply to : Burmah-Shell, Honghong House, Calcutta



A BURMAH-SHELL ANNOUNCEMENT

24414

# The Journal

of the

# Anited Service Institution of India

Pa	ge
" And Victory," by A. H. Mortimer	281
	282
	285
The Red Army—Foundations of Strength, by LieutColonel G. H. Nash 2	291
	2 <b>9</b> 8
	304
Further Notes from Britain, by Major-General Sir Dashwood Strettell 3	307
Eight Months with the W.A.C.(I), by Chief Commander A. Collins 3	
Officers of the Post-War Indian Army, by Major B. D. Kapur 3	
The Famous Indian Mass Escape from Epinal, by Captain A. Dewan 8	118
Things People Say 3	
The Gunners at Kohima 3	127
The Prevention of War, by Colonel H. F. Humphreys	332
Army Welfare and the W.V.S., by Major-General J. G. Elliott 3	338
Organising a Tattoo and Pageant, by Wing-Commander L. Shaffi 3	344
Badges of Rank of V.C.Os., by Major N. P. Dawnay 3	347
A Letter to Mars—in 1960, by LieutColonel J. N. Chaudhuri 3	
A "Personal" Post-War Plan, by "Nimis" 3	
Masters of Deception 3	64
Japanese Mines and Booby Traps, by Captain W. D. Bristow 3	88
Amateur Poultry Keeping in the Army by "Enthusiast" 3	71
The Frontier Myth, by Major W. F. G. Spaight	74
Sisters in Need, by Enid Scott 3	77
Permanent Peace—Through the Children, by Bernard Tucker 3	82
The Birth of a Weapon, by Brigadier L. W. Rogers 3	84
India's Phenomenal War Effort, by The Editor 3	87
Letters to the Editor 3	
Notes by the Secretary 3	96

#### GOLD MEDAL PRIZE ESSAY COMPETITION

The Council has selected the following subject for the Gold Medal Prize Essay Competition for 1946:

"Co-ordination and control in peace and war of the forces of all three services, British and Dominion, in the Indian Ocean and neighbouring territories."

The interdependence of the three Fighting Services, one upon the other, has been demonstrated time and again during the present war. The success achieved when the three have planned and operated with one object and under a unified direction has been remarkable. This has, how ever, tended to create a complicated system of command with large stalls.

Bearing in mind the necessity for the three Services to continue to train to operate as one whole, and the danger in peacetime of each relating into its own watertight compartment, examine the possible ways of evolving from our own war experience a simplified system of command which will ensure the closest interservice co-ordination for the Common wealth forces in peace and in war.

A definition of the geographical scope has been left to the essayist 10 develop.

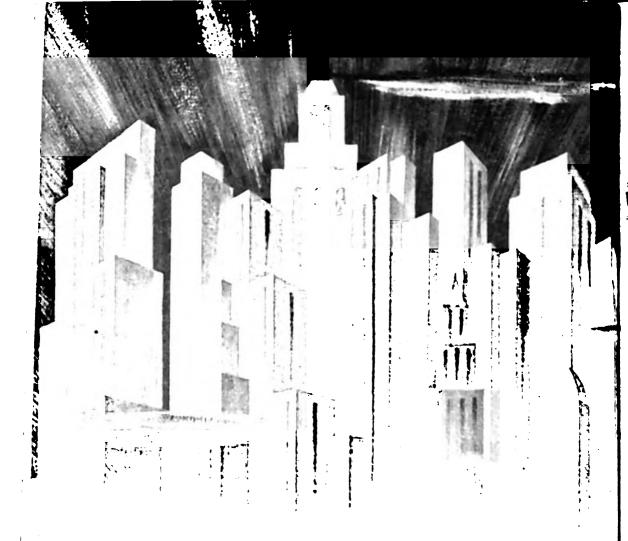
Entries are invited from all commissioned officers of His Majesty's Forces, from gazetted officers of the Civil Administration in India, and from officers of the Indian States Forces.

Essays, which should be typewritten (double spacing) and submitted in triplicate, must be received by the Secretary, United Service Institution of India, Simla, on or before June 30, 1946. In order that the anonymity of each candidate should be preserved, a motto should be written at the top of each entry. A sealed envelope, bearing the outside the motto, and containing inside the name and address of the author of the essay, must accompany each entry.

Entries should not exceed fifteen pages (approx. 8,000 words) of the size and style of the Journal. Should any authority be quoted in the essay, the title of the work referred to should be given.

Three judges chosen by the Council will adjudicate. They may recommend a money award not exceeding Rs. 500, either in addition to, or in substitution of, the Gold Medal, and will submit their decision to the Council. The name of the successful candidate will be published in the October, 1946 issue of the Journal.

Copyright of all essays submitted will be reserved by the Council of the United Service Institution of India.





The Dawn of a New Age

# The Journal

of the

# Anited Service Enstitution of Endia

Vol. LXXV

JULY, 1945

No. 32

## AND VICTORY

In the grim, dark day, when all seemed lost Save faith in God and Right;

We were offered sweat and toil and tears, The privilege to fight

For the simple joys of the simple man, Freedom of creed and speech;

And, when the walls of the world were down Great Britain held the breach.

From Ind. and the Empire's far-flung lands The sons of freedom came

To share the arduous, long-drawn fray;

To win undying fame.

And the blood they shed and a Nation's grief And the toll of toil and sweat,

No tongue nor pen can fully tell, but The world will not forget.

The breach was held while the world, amazed, Girded itself for strife;

And the Eagle and the Northern Bear Brought help and hope and life.

But bitter indeed was the price they paid Ere the "Herrenvolk" cried, "Done!"

Having learnt the truth we always knew, "Man owns no Lord save One."

There is still a toll of blood and tears And labour to be paid,

Ere the Eastern Tyrant bows his head And th' last "Last Post" is played.

Though the path we've trod has been long and hard And maugre the foeman's might;

We have not suffered nor toiled in vain, The end is now in sight.

#### MATTERS OF MOMENT

THE WAR in the West has been won, and Germany, the inventor of total war, is now justly suffering total defeat. The Nazi bubble has burst. In every sphere their forces have been decisively beaten by Allied superiority; on the sea Allied Navies have won by their silent and inexorable application of sea power; the Air Forces

The Nazi Bubble Bursts and inexorable application of sea power; the Air Forces have thrashed the enemy out of existence; and the Armies, mechanised but still led by the stolid Infantryman, have rolled back the once proud Wehrmacht by

superb generalship and deployment of land power. Never in all history have advancing armies uncovered such terrors; even the slave empires of old did not reveal a depravity so inhuman as Germany has practised in the last decade, and history will show that her rulers were the instigators of a systematic cruelty more pitiless than that of the lowest animals. The first part of their punishment has been meted out to them, and the realistic action of General Eisenhower in ordering inhabitants to bury those so cruelly murdered in the concentration camps contrast strangely with the Press interviews and pictures of Goering strutting serenely in his uniform. A reader of this Journal, now residing in England, not long ago took us to task for referring to the Huns as a "nation of carnivorous sheep," adding that most Germans had fought decently. Few soldiers will agree with that assertion—which admittedly was written before the Germans instituted a systematic starvation policy in Holland, before the public outside Germany had obtained evidence of the savageries and tortures of the concentration camp, and before their cruel treatment of prisoners of war was broadcast to the world. "Fighting" connotes the actions of nations at war outside as well as inside operational areas, and judged by that criterion, Germany could not sink lower.

No alibi can this time disprove that German generals were outmanœuvred and their men outfought. Since July 1, 1942 when, as a result of the vision of our Commander-in-Chief, General

Landmarks
to Victory

Auchinleck, the Germans were held in their drive to
Cairo and onwards, the Allies in the West have slowly
and systematically destroyed the enemy's power. El

Alamein, indeed, can rightly be said to be coupled with Stalingrad as the turning point of the war. Since then, shining as beacons along the road to freedom, have been the landings in North Africa on November 8, 1942, the end of German resistance in Stalingrad on February 2, 1943, the squeezing of the Germans into Tunisia, the invasion of Sicily on

July 9, 1943, the historic landing in Normandy on June 6, 1944, the lightning liberation of France and Belgium, the entry into Germany from the West on September 5, 1944, while from the East the Russians, in great strategical drives, were recovering cities and towns long taken by the Germans. With the advancing American, British, Canadian and French forces from the West came the fury of the Air Forces in an increasing crescendo of power. Destruction of oil dumps, railways, concentrations, all helped to put the enemy to confusion. Parachutists behind the lines, arms and ammunition dropped to the gallant Maquis, Allied supporters dropped by air, even pigeons with messages showing the exact location of German headquarters, are only a few of the unusual features of Allied superiority. The Germans may have astounded the world in the early stages by strange and unexpected methods of attack, but the end showed Allied inventors, scientists and leaders to be far ahead of the Nazis. Gradually the grand strategical plan fashioned in Teheran, in Moscow and in Yalta became clear and Hitler's vaunted Army was crushed.

One of the outstanding lessons of this war which civilians as well as soldiers have learned is that countries coveted by aggressors will henceforth no longer be able to rely on defensive strategy to give them time to build up armaments and A Lesson train armies. This is a circumstance peculiarly appli-Learned cable to the British Commonwealth. In all spheres arsenals, research, training—countries will have to be alert, for a treacherous enemy can to-day release his weapons of destruction in the minimum of time. Unpreparedness in the future will spell doom. Preparedness spells sacrifice, and countries will find that keeping armaments up-to-date, employing teams of scientists and maintaining armies up to strength cannot be done "on the cheap." It has been tried, and very nearly meant the extinction of freedom. Such military preparations need not carry with them a national military spirit; to be ready for defence is not to be guilty of aggression, but it is a duty to ourselves and to the cause for which thousands of brave men have died that we should maintain adequate armed forces. Thus we enter on this era of peace—for, with the might of the United Nations crashing on Japan, we can be certain of her collapse—fortified by the knowledge that nations can co-operate if the spirit is there. Americans, Russians and the peoples of the British Commonwealth have all shown that they possess in marked degree the tools of courage, unity, singleness of purpose and faith. They are the tools of peace as of war. They are the spiritual implements which have carried us to victory. Human society, culture and civilisation all demand faith among men and among nations, and from the foundations being laid at San Francisco may there rise an era of peace and prosperity, of dignity and loyalty, the like of which we of this generation have never seen.

Digitized by Google

NDIA'S vast contribution to this world-wide war is outlined in an article in this issue. It is timely to ponder over those facts. many of which are revealed for the first time, for the aftermath of this war will not only be that India's financial position will have been completely transformed, but her economic power will have placed her among Safeguarding the higher industrial countries of the world. Problems India's of production are outside the scope of this Journal, but Future their implications have a very definite bearing on India's future defence requirements. It is crystal clear that India has within her borders the machinery for equipping a vast army with the thousand and one items needed for modern military defence. She is self-sufficient. She has the men, but as the years pass by the young, virile members of the population will be followed by others who have not been trained in the hard school of war. It is they to whom we must look to complete the circle, and it is on their training and education that the future safety of this great country will depend. That is why we have frequently published articles stressing the importance of education in regard to India's future Armed forces. For years much has been done in this direction. The K.G.R.I.M. Colleges have trained thousands; the Boys Companies attached to Training Centres are doing fine work with the youth of the country; plans have been drawn up for compulsory education which will ensure the education of crores of boys and girls. When, ten or fifteen years hence, India's youths and daughters become educated, she will have all the requisites for fully defending her borders. Her natural resources can and will be harnessed; her industries will be able to supply equipment and munitions; her population will be intellectually trained. All this is no dream; it all forms part of the pattern on which India can and must fashion its future.

ELFARE for the troops has recently been so much in the limelight that the readiness of military authority to arrange for editors of the public Press of India and others to visit units overseas cannot but have been welcomed. One such visitor writes frankly of his impressions

in this issue.

He says that Indian troops are held in

high esteem by their comrades-in-arms; that in the Women in sphere of amenities, etc., they are well looked after: Welfare that they are well fed, and nursed carefully in hospital. He sounds a critical note, however, in regard to the absence in welfare and recreational centres of the counterpart of the British women workers who voluntarily introduce into such places the feminine touch, and who, by arranging pictures, flowers, books, etc., and providing a local seamstress and sewing machine help to make the life of the British soldier more pleasant. Of these women, writes our contributor, the Indian soldier has none yet. Why? The question touched on one of the fundamentals of welfare work for the Indian Forces. India has many good public speakers but lamentably few public-spirited citizens in relation to its population. And public-spirited women are even fewer still. Some there are, and they do grand work, but education for women has not yet inculcated on a big enough scale that desire for voluntary public service which, for instance, prompts a visit to a hospital patient, a wish to serve cups of tea to their fellow-countrymen, or a keenness to help their compatriots overseas. The lack of this fundamental is the main reason for the absence of voluntary women workers among Indians serving in the Forces. That they would receive a warm welcome is certain—not only from those whose job it is to look after the welfare of Indian troops, but—and this is of more importance—from the soldiers themselves. Public service freely given is the foundation of any country's progress—and this war has shown that it applies to women as well as men.

#### FINANCIAL CONTROL AND PAPER

By "MILLSTONE"

IN his recent article "Post-war Planning of Defence Services" the author touched on an aspect of defence administration that has received notice many times in India during the interval between the two World Wars.

More senior officers will recollect the many campaigns launched from time to time, at levels varying from District Commands to G. H. Q., aimed at reducing time spent in offices to the benefit of time spent in training; to speed up the issue of decisions in all headquarters by eliminating unnecessary paper work. Except for slight and fugitive gains, little was ever accomplished. Conferences, debates, instructions, etc., ultimately came to little lasting result.

The article in question invites us again to give serious attention to this problem in our post-war planning, and rightfully so. It is profound disagreement with the suggested solution that prompts this article. Recognising that the existing state of affairs has driven defence administration to "Too much centralisation" and that "Decentralisation, with suitable checks, should be the keystone of any future planning," there is propounded a solution in these words "Financial Advisers with wide powers should be attached to all Armies and Commands . . . . Finance, Audit and Accounts Officers should be attached to defence units and formations . . . . They should have refresher courses at staff colleges . . . . "

In short, the shackles that now weigh on the hands of the defence administrative body should be strengthened and be extended to the feet. For who can deny that only few administrative problems have no financial implication, and that it is the arguments concerning these that lead to paper and yet more paper; delay that piles on delay. Concurrence without paper argument is, unfortunately, all too rare.

It is readily conceded that senior officials, whether civil or defence, who are directly in charge of the expenditure of annual budgetary grants should have available to them high level financial advice. But what is not conceded is that throughout the whole chain of defence administration there should be set up a parallel host of financial watch-dogs of different grades, keepers of the purse, who must say yea or nay before most decisions on administration can be reached.

Here lies the main foundation and root of paper in India. It besets the civil administration as well as the defence. It weighs heavier on defence perhaps because defence, absorbing so large a share of the total budget, is provided with a more elaborate and extensive machinery for such control.

It is interesting to speculate why such tight financial control is more necessary in India than in any other Empire country. But that it contributes powerfully to the dreary pace of administration in India, to the sense of frustration that sooner or later overtakes all newcomers to the scene, is not a matter for speculation. Merely the degree of the contribution is open to difference of opinion.

The justification and need for the existing system of financial control over defence expenditure, which the author referred to would have us extend, can be examined:

- (a) In its constitutional aspects.
- (b) On practical grounds.



To take the constitutional aspects first. Constitutionally India is to-day, and presumably will in future remain, a democratic country. The heart and core of democratic government is that Parliament alone can vote supplies (izmoney). The processes are simply stated as follows. The various portions of the Executive (i.e. the Departments or Ministries of a Government) once each year lay their claims to money; their claims to their respective shares of the revenues of the country.

Defence, like any other department, each year sets down in terms of money what it hopes or desires to achieve in the succeeding year. In doing this, it may be and probably is compelled to work within a financial limit that the Ministers or Members as a whole decide as that which the country can affect for defence; the insurance that the country can afford. In working within that limit, and in building up the manifold parts of the budget, the administrative heads of defence must carry the Finance Department with them.

There are hundreds of things to be justified—new schemes, new buildings modern ships, aeroplanes, tanks, weapons, etc., new expansions, new training etc. Much is compromise and much that is old has frequently to be surrendered for the new requirements. And so defence and finance ultimately agree on the contents of the defence budget that is to go to Parliament.

Finally, the Finance Department amalgamate all departmental of Ministerial budgets into the one document that is laid before Parliament. It is at this stage that the chosen representatives of the country say what will and what will not be spent and vote the monies (i.e., supplies) for such purposes.

But democratic government requires something further, something that touches very closely on the main point of financial control under discussion. Following the practice of the Mother of Parliaments, every democratic government requires to be satisfied in arrears that the monies they have voted year by year for specified purposes have in fact been spent on those purposes and on no others.

At the same time Parliament, as is at once obvious and natural, desire to know whether those monies have been spent frugally and economically; that bribery and corruption have not entered into their spending. It is therefore that every free and democratic Parliament (including the Indian Legislature) follow the practice of Westminster in appointing a considerable number of its members from both Houses to sit as a joint committee to examine and interrogate the Executive (i.e. the Government Departments or Ministries) as to what they have done with the monies voted by Parliament. This Committee in all Empire countries is known as the Public Accounts Committee.

Now it is clear that the members of that Committee, however qualified conscientious and industrious, cannot collectively or individually examine the ten thousand and one spending accounts of the different Departments. Some body or machinery must bring the essential facts of spending to the light of day and place them before the Public Accounts Committee. And is this the Finance Department? No, it is the Auditor General: the chief detector of illicit spending, of financial wangles, of financial profligacy, of bribery and of corruption.

This official, beholden to no part of the Executive, not even Finance (in India he is not answerable even to the Viceroy under the existing constitution!) exists to serve Parliament through the Public Accounts Committee and is answerable only to Parliament. Once he has completed his term of office is debarred by law, by the Constitution Act itself, from holding any further office under the Crown.

overnment) 🚾 spective share

sets down in la eding year. hi a financial is he country can . In working t, the admin them.

emes, new biể nsions, new in ly to be sum imately agrees II department

y say what ri such purpos her, somethic ol under dies democratic

Parliament.

ey have rold those purpos and natural and econom ng. Itiste

ndian lens rable numbe ine and into es) as to the ittee in all

however p lually ence ling to the e. Andist chief dent

of briber existing of

ts Commit s term of d

It is the Auditor General who, through his annual Audit Report to the nty. This Public Accounts Committee, virtually frames a series of charge sheets that the can vote ampelled to answer to that Committee; always in writing and he various pain frequently in further oral defence.

Those are the constitutional foundations for obtaining, spending and accounting for money. The constitutional lawyer can split hairs here and there, but it remains the elemental constitutional position. Thus, if each Department or Ministry is directly and itself answerable to Parliament for its spending (the Finance Department or Treasury equally so with any other part of the Executive) why then does finance in India duplicate the authority that Parliament would appear to have arrogated to itself?

The answer may in part be that the Constitution Act also lays on the Crown or His representative the duty of specifying the procedures to be followed by the Executive in carrying out the business of the State, (usually embodied in a book called the Rules of Business). But it can reasonably be assumed that responsibilities would not be vested in one part of the Executive which gave powers over the remaining Executive to the prejudice of the primary rights vesting in Parliament alone. They could only be of a complementary and of Is it correct to suggest that once Parliament has voted an enabling nature. monies for specified purposes then an authority subordinate to Parliament should require further justification?

It is by following these lines of thought that the conclusion is reached that any suggestion for extending the system of watch-dogs and purse-string holders in defence administration is questionably sound constitutional democratic practice. Assistance in spending-yes. Financial advice, with emphasis on the word "advice," and from a sufficient level backed by the requisite experienceagain yes. Advice is the keynote and not veto. Veto should only occur when a proposal is held to infringe the intentions of Parliament, or in respect of contemplated further spending when funds are either exhausted or wholly hypothecated.

Despite the belief that the constitutional position has not been read seriously amiss, that there is no mandate for interference to the extent now felt between a Department or a Ministry and Parliament, the constitutional jurist may argue grounds why such interference is permissible. We will turn then to survey the practical arguments for and against so tight, and ramified a financial control to see if on these grounds it can be justified; whether it is beneficial to the State.

In the first place there seems something fundamentally wrong in the conception that a reasonably well educated cadre of men such as constitute the Defence Services, whose traditional probity is high, should not be vested with direct responsibility for spending. Surely the resources of the Indian Government in reasonably efficient administrators are not so large that a cadre of some 4,000 officers in peace can remain, in matters of financial judgment and responsibility, so largely unexploited, and that in parallel with them an additional civilian cadre must be placed to keep their conscience for them even to the extent of day-to-day trivialities?

Lest it is pointed out that "financial powers" are delegated to numerous classes of officers let it also be said that they can rarely be exercised alone. Almost always the concurrence of some finance officer is a necessary prelude to their exercise. And even then the permissible sums are very low. Digitized by GOOGLE

To whatever extent these arguments are valid there is the fact that few will care to deny—the existing system of tight financial control forces a belief on the vast majority of defence officers that in financial matters they are not to be trusted; that the system does not require that they be trusted. Fulminate against so atrocious a belief as you will; argue mightily that the system is designed to foster just that joint sense of financial responsibility. But the opposite is the case. It is worthy of reflection that the vesting of responsibility begets a sense of responsibility.

A second point of practical importance to an impoverished country such as India, shortly to become through independence more defence conscious and more anxious to be self-contained in defence matters than ever in the past, is whether the defence budget can continue to afford to pay the heavy bill that the existing system of tight financial control involves. How few are aware that in the pre-war days the salary bill for the system equalled the cost of 21 Battalions of Indian Infantry against a total strength of 120 such Battalions! The sum involved was nearly Rs. 1½ crores. A heavy price to pay to ensure financial correctitude.

Compare this with the pre-war system followed by a certain continental power with defence forces greater than those of pre-war India. That system, costing the equivalent of less than a Battalion of Infantry, can baldly be stated as follows. Any claim for money signed by an officer and within his powers, (counter-signed by his commanding officer in specified cases), was valid for money and could be cashed at any Treasury, Bank, etc. All these pieces of paper found their way to a small central office, whose task was to bring them to account; to enter up the books.

Attached to that office was a small number of expert highly paid accountants whose sole responsibility it was to examine suspicious cases. When such came to light, all papers signed by the officer in question over a considerable period would be examined and further action determined. In suspicious cases where mala fides were obvious but difficult to prove, the decision was invariably "removal of commission for administrative inefficiency." The officer just had to know his financial rules and regulations. He had no choice.

Let it be stated at once that this system is not advocated for India. It is quoted to illustrate that there are less costly (and swifter) methods of spending and accounting for public monies than that followed for the Defence Services in India. The desirable solution for India, having in mind the need to strike at the paper storm at its principal source, may well lie somewhere between the two systems.

A final point and one that should appeal to the Finance Department, is that if financial responsibility is properly placed in peace, it will return considerable dividends in war. For when war comes the very nature of the emergency forces a decentralisation of responsibility for spending on a wholesale scale, both at home and in the war theatres, with very little real control by financial advisers. Even if available in the numbers required they are naturally hesitant to interfere unduly lest they be accused of "holding up the war." Were defence officers concerned trained and experienced in peace to conduct and to control their own official financial affairs then manifestly they will prove better stewards of the country's money, its first munition of war, when the emergency overtakes them.

Let us now turn to what may perhaps be the primary arguments for no change, even for an extension of the existing system, and face the issues squarely.

It may be claimed, indeed it will almost inevitably be claimed, that the existing system is essential to secure proper spending, to prevent wasteful spending, and to prevent bribery and corruption. Perhaps sufficient has been said to support the contention that no serious fears need be apprehended in respect of the two functions of spending if responsibility for spending is placed fairly and squarely on defence officers.

At higher levels senior defence officers, each having already justified to the Finance Department what went into his portion of the Defence budget—(even under existing practice all "Directors" of G. H. Q. have their separate portions of the defence budget and are each severally responsible for them, responsible that they are not overspent etc.)—is thoroughly alive not merely to the limit of the money he can spend but on what he has to spend it in order to fulfil the policy of the Commander-in-Chief. Those facts were tentatively asserted in the draft budget that went to Parliament with the concurrence of the Finance Department and later were confirmed or amended by Parliament. His course is clear. It is for him to see to it that both he and all his subordinates down the chain of his command get the best out of the money that has been made available.

A new sense of responsibility would vest in defence administration and the Finance Department would cease to be regarded as a miserly caretaker of inexhaustible hoards. Financial advice would always be desirable, and sometimes necessary, on both border-line cases or in respect of new circumstances or conditions that have arisen. In respect of the latter a typical case might be the need to re-equip certain squadrons with new and perhaps revolutionary aircraft which should not await the next budget and whether, and if so to what extent, savings could be made or be anticipated to meet the new requirements or, in cases not susceptible of such solution, whether Parliament should be approached for a supplementary grant.

All this would involve and require a radically different outlook on budget control by the senior administrative officers concerned. The machinery that watches and checks such expenditure to-day would need to come under their control. It is they who would exercise financial control over their subordinates throughout the defence machinery. For the rest, the machinery of the Auditor-General would be at work. But it would be necessary to place the emphasis on "concurrent" audit as distinct from normal "post" audit.

Touching on the question of bribery and corruption there is temptation to wonder whether, had the existing system been otherwise in the pre-war days, there could have been embezzled each year anything approaching the Rs. 1½ crores that the system cost at that time. On somewhat safer ground one may speculate, idly perhaps, on the extent to which it is the duty of a Parliament to provide machinery designed to keep its Executive honest. Parliament does what it can in this matter by safeguarding the methods of selection for entry to the State service. After that, surely its officers are innocent until they are individually proven guilty?

But Parliament must of course satisfy itself, as through its Public Accounts Committee it does, that the corrupt are traced and are brought to justice. To weed out corruption would appear, on constitutional grounds, to be the concern of the Auditor-General operating through concurrent audit methods, and by equipping himself with machinery of a C. I. D. nature to follow up suspicious cases.

Thus the conclusion is reached that the chief and substantial methods freeing defence administration from the enervating and deadening effects of a existing delays, and its excess of paper, lies not in maintaining or extending the existing and already costly financial control over defence expenditure, but of introducing drastic changes calculated to harness the experience and ability of defence officers themselves to a responsibility that is constitutionally them; for which they, as the Executive concerned, are individually and collectively answerable to Parliament for its proper discharge.

The financial veto should give way to financial advice. To the increase to the efficiency of the defence officer that must inevitably grow must be added two self-evident advantages: more of the slender funds for defence could ge directly into the measure of defence insurance that India decides she can affect to pay, and a revolutionary change would overtake all defence administration—more speedy decisions accompanied by a summary curtailment of the spate of paper that to-day deluges every defence office from the highest to the lowest.

But whilst arraigning the present system of financial control as the chief culprit, there are others. Collectively they are of minor account compared with that named. One worthy of mention, as a tangible means of saving office time and paper, is a simplification of systems and methods; forms and returns. Right up to the outbreak of war everyone dealing with animals had to send returns to A. G., M. S., D. S. T., Remounts, Veterinary and perhaps others; each in a different form and at different periodical dates.

We should take counsel of the late Lord Stamp, perhaps the greatest authority that existed on office organisation in large offices of great complexity. Paraphrasing his observations from memory he said that where papers dive out of and into a multitude of offices only an outsider can see what should be dose, and that outsider must be one who can see old-established and customary things with a new eye as if they were strange. The defence services need a roving office efficiency expert. Just one—but he must be good.

It is these reforms that are wanted, but above all the reformation of the financial control system. Within the annual supplies (i.c., monies) made available, financial adviser (but not veto) should be available at the top. Below that level, financial control and financial safeguards should be assumed, as in any business organization, by the defence administration itself, and should not be imposed by an alien body. This is the pre-requisite of decentralisation; the decentralisation that "with suitable checks should be the keystone of any future planning." When that comes Whitehall may perhaps cease to believe that the climate is responsible for the inertia that pervades all Indian administration, including defence.

The views expressed in this Journal are in no sense official, and the opinions of contributors in their published articles are not necessarily those of the Council of the Institution.

#### THE RED ARMY—FOUNDATIONS OF STRENGTH

By LIEUT.-COLONEL G. H. NASH, O.B.E.

LESS than fifteen years ago the Soviet Union was not strong enough to protect its interests. In 1931-32, weakened by the crisis of collectivization, it had to accept the loss of the Chinese Eastern Railway and the military problem of a new land frontier with Japan 1,500 miles long. In 1935, cutting its losses, it sold its rights in the C.E.R. for a paltry sum to Japan. Not until 1938 (the second five-year plan had been completed and the third begun) was there any outward sign of growing military strength; in that year and the next the Red Army fought a series of engagements in Outer Mongolia and Manchuria. Retreat was at an end.

The Red Army of to-day needs no introduction, but to what does this mighty war machine of perhaps some four hundred divisions owe its strength?

Heritage.—Richard Chancellor, an English merchant-adventurer, discovered Russia for the English in 1553 and this is what he wrote of the Russian soldier:

"I beleeve that they bee such men for hard living as are not under the sun: for no cold will hurt them. Yea and though they lie in the field two moneths, at such time as it shall freeze more than a yard thicke, the common soldier hath neither tent nor anything else over his head.... I pray you amongst all our boasting warriors how many should we find to endure the field with them one moneth."

Down through the centuries the Russian soldier has proved himself to be a magnificent fighter. Ill-provided for and poorly equipped, still he has been more than a match for the armies of yesterday, and both Frederick the Great and Napoleon had good reason to respect him. Napoleon's Armies met him not only in Russia, but also as far afield as Italy and Switzerland, and time and again it was the stubbornness of the Russian soldier which made up for the frequent defects of provision and of command. What he can do when these defects are removed, we have seen in this war.

### MEN, MONEY AND MACHINES

In 1939, in what must have been a last desperate effort to hold the invaders, massed Polish cavalry charged formations of German tanks and were mowed down in thousands. We all agree that valour alone cannot win modern wars and that, amongst many other things, an army today requires machines and man-power.

On October 1, 1928, Russia went to war—not a war of bombs and guns certainly, yet a war which made high demands upon the people, which called for heavy sacrifice and devotion to duty and which was accompanied by considerable loss of life. Men and women suffered the privations of war—they subsisted on a bare minimum of food, they lived in overcrowded rooms and hovels, and often they were wretchedly clothed. This was a great planned offensive, boldly conceived, ruthlessly executed, and having as its object the achievement of industrial independence for a country which had hitherto been almost entirely dependent upon the outside world for machinery and armaments.

On October 1, 1928, the first five-year plan was inaugurated, and in five years steel furnaces, hydro-electric schemes, tractor plants, motor-car factories and every other conceivable form of heavy industrial undertaking, sprung up like mushrooms. The first five-year plan was followed by a second, and it was in 1938 that no less an authority than the late Corporal Shickelgruber claimed for Russia the strongest army, the strongest tank force and the strongest air force in the world.

In 1938 yet a third five-year plan was begun and in it defence was writlarge. Already in 1937 over one-fifth of the national revenue had been allocated to defence, and if we try to answer the vexed question of the real value of the rouble by working on the lowest estimate available, then in terms of pounds sterling the Soviet Union spent in that year of uneasy peace, not less than £100 million on its fighting forces. If one accepts the official rate of exchange in London, then it was well over £200 million.

But God is on the side of the big battalions—where was to-day's and to-morrow's man-power to come from? One might say at once that Russian man-power is inexhaustable; in comparison with many other countries it is, yet-fighting a major war on one front only, meant denuding industry and the public services of every single man whose place could be taken by a woman. In addition, a large number of women served and fought as pilots in the Red Air Force, whilst others serving with the ground forces distinguished themselves as snipers and ambulance personnel.

Until well into the nineteen-thirties what one attractive young Slav very aptly described as "living in wild marriage" was the rule rather than the exception, and although a law passed in 1927 laid some emphasis on the maintenance of children in the event of divorce, there were no restrictions on abortion. In 1935, however, the Soviet Government brought the fall in the birth rate to an abrupt end. The family was extolled—in fact the propaganda campaign which preceded legislation began by Stalin visiting his mother. And the Government having passed laws which prohibited abortion (except to save the mother), controlled divorce and taxed childless citizens, the State Planning Commission announced that the U.S.S.R. was to have a population of 300 million by 1975!

In August 1944, a generous scale of monthly allowances and lump-sum awards for both married and unmarried mothers was announced in the Soviet Press, and the title and orders of "The Heroic Mother" and "Maternal Glory" were instituted for mothers of large families, together with medals for the less prolific. No one is going to suffer financially for having a large family—in fact the U.S.S.R. may have the best part of the Planning Commissions' 300 million by 1975. What are they going to do with them?

"Moral is to physical as three is to one."—Nothing of moral value has ever been neglected by the Red Army. We have our welfare, a cheery newspaper with a glamour girl or two, the personality of our commanders, the visits of our generals to their forward troops, the knowledge of massive fire support in the attack, the explanation of the plan to our troops, special orders of the day, unit tradition, smartness, personal leadership, rum and last but not always least, a hot meal and a large mug of tea. All well suited to the British temperament.

Moral planning in the Red Army is set at a much higher pitch—intense hatred of the enemy; dying heroically for the Fatherland; mass patriotic fervour such as we have not known since the Victorian age; the fame of heroes; published letters from mothers urging their sons to avenge the death of fallen

Digitized by GOOGIC

brothers; colours carried into battle. In one word, Glory. And how is this attitude of mind cultivated and sustained?

#### THE DRIVING FORCE—CO-ORDINATED EFFORT

One can produce dozens of informative pamphlets and army newspapers—in fact, looking into a Unit Information Room in India one is convinced that we have done—but their influence can only be felt if they are read (or read out), explained and discussed, and secondly, they can only have full effect if they are part of a co-ordinated propaganda offensive designed with a particular object.

For three years the aim of propaganda in the Red Army has been clear and consistent. It had one object: the raising of the fighting spirit of the Red Army to the highest possible level of collective and individual self-sacrifice and one might almost say "to a fanatical pitch." The war in Europe having ended, the propaganda theme will change a little, in fact new emphasis to an old theme is already discernable—although one cannot claim that it is the whole theme, or even half of it: it is "The honour and dignity of the Soviet warrior." To this we must undoubtedly add "The unity of the Army, the People and the Party."

And how is the co-ordinated propaganda offensive put across?

In each formation, unit and sub-unit of the Red Army there is an officer or N.C.O. responsible for propaganda and welfare. In the regiment (three battalions) he is a senior lieutenant (there are three grades of subaltern rank in the Red Army); in the battalion a Lieutenant and in the company probably a sergeant. But none of these men are working alone; directly or indirectly they are each directing the efforts of all Party Members—i.e., the Party Organization—in their unit or sub-unit, and in their work they are assisted by the company, Battalion, etc., 2nd-in-Command.

Red Star describes the Regimental Propagandist as the "basic central figure of our propaganda amongst the men, the N.C.Os. and the Officers," and adds that he must have a calling for his work. His activities are well worth recording, although within the limits of this article they can only be dealt with in barest outline:

If the unit is training, he goes round parades and siezes any suitable opportunity to chat with the men. Off parade he organizes the reading aloud of newspapers and ensures that the latest press communiques reach the men. Choosing the best material from the Party men of his unit he appoints "working" members in companies and platoons and directs their activities. He lectures to the men. Here are some lecture themes: "Let us add to the glory and tradition of our regiment," "Our cause is just", "The might of Soviet Arms."

In battle he is expected to be in the thick of the fight and after battle, amongst a hundred and one other things he writes letters of congratulation, in the name of his C.O., to each man who has distinguished himself. During the war in Europe the most energetic measures were taken to ensure that all ranks were kept constantly informed of the progress of operations; communiques were taken down from broadcasts, cyclostyled and issued down to platoons.

As every individual is far more interested in himself and his own unit than in someone fighting a battle a thousand miles away, the propagandist kept a note book in which was recorded any stirring incident involving either an individual or group of individuals in the unit, and later this formed the basis either of a lecture or of material for the regimental newspaper. But apartfrom newspapers the regimental propagandist issued "lightning leaflets" giving immediate publicity to acts of courage and daring.

As long as the war in Europe lasted, even the fact that a was on the march was no excuse for relaxation in propaganda; the propagandist halted in a truck, jotted down the latest important broken news and often not even waiting for routine halts, he stood by the side of the mand greeted the approaching columns with a "Congratulations! The Rolling has captured ....." But the propaganda did not end with passing a wireless communiques: halting in the ruins of a recaptured village one of a liberated inhabitants—generally a woman—would be invited to tell the trope what frightfulness she suffered at the hands of the hated invader, a large and of abandoned enemy equipment on the road would be seized as an initial example of Soviet might, whilst a body bearing signs of torture or ill-treatment would be displayed before the men and they would be asked to avenge the inhumanity.

Finally Stalin, the State and the Party are never omitted, and the proach to any form of propaganda is a Party approach—for example, a muthan body may be used as an example to stress the wisdom of Marshal Stalin's are to "finish off the Fascist beast in its own den."

Such is a very sketchy account of some of the propagandist's activity the also deals with a wide range of welfare problems—including, sometimes, it patching up of broken romances!

"The Press is the sharpest and greatest weapon of the Party"—Sats To give the Soviet Press in general and the Red Army Press in particular, is full significance, one cannot do better than quote from a recent leading and in Red Star:

strongest weapon of our party. During the war for the Fatherland this weap played a great role in the heroic struggle with the German invaders and the achievement of our sacred aim—Victory. The Press, with skill and energy gave the widest publicity to Comrade Stalin's instructions, brought to east soldier the appeals of the Bolshevik Party, and again and again explains the high and noble aims of the war for the Fatherland. The front line Press was a most important factor in the invincible stubbornness of our defence as the crushing weight of our offensive. In the fire of battle many of our Research party, and through them the voice of the Porty, and through them the voice of the Porty and the party and through them the voice of the Porty and the party and through them the voice of the Porty and the party and through them the voice of the Porty and the party and the party and the party and through them the voice of the Porty and the party and t

# Forebodings-A digression.

One might naturally conclude that Red Army personnel are the most wis informed of any army in the world, and with regard to the great achievement of their Government this must be so; but there is another side to the picture, side which bodes ill for the friendship foreshadowed in the Anglo-Russian alliance except for occasional articles (for example when we crossed the Rhine) the Red Army is told little about the achievements of our own forces; in fact most copie of Red Star (which is described as "the central organ of the Peoples Commissant of Defence") convey the impression that the Red Army fought the war virtually unaided.

Picking out six copies of *Red Star* at random (April) one finds that news of the British and American forces averages a bare fifty lines a day in a small back page column. In fact, about us the Russian soldier is most ill-informed and the suspicion born of ignorance is now likely to be further aggravated by the publicity recently given in the Soviet Press to criticisms of our treatment of Russians who were previously prisoners of war in German hands. The Russian people, though naturally very friendly, are not in fact allowed to get to know us—nor we them.

#### GLORY.

Somewhere near the beginning of this article it was claimed that nothing of moral value was ever neglected by the Red Army. The Press and the unit propagandists have been touched upon, and the time has now come to note certain customs of the service which have definite moral value. Some of these customs are universal, others may become so through the publicity which they have received.

For hundreds of years Russian Troops and their Commanders have greeted each other on parade. Before the Revolution if the troops had earned praise, the commander said "Bravo my children!" the response to which was "Rad stasatsa vashe 'stvo!" (We are glad to try your noble-ness, or your excellency.) Today the response to praise is "We serve the Soviet People" and an inspecting general who, on approaching a unit greets the men, receives the response "We wish you health, Comrade General!"

Strange though they seem when translated, these responses undoubtedly create a sense of unity and strength such as we feel when on rare occasions we cheer our King, our Commander-in-Chief or our Divisional Commander.

"We serve the Soviet People!"—the Army is constantly identified with the People, and the recruit does not merely march to the Armoury, queue up and draw his rifle or Tommy Gun. The issue of arms is made the occasion for a small ceremony. The recipient is reminded of the heroic efforts of parents, brothers and sisters who toil unceasingly in the factories in order to arm him, equip him and supply him with ammunition. This weapon, he is told, symbolizes their patriotic efforts and he must cherish it and care for it and with it dedicate himself to the defence of the Fatherland. During the European War it was a common custom to keep a running total of the number of enemy killed by a particular rifle or Tommy Gun, this figure being passed on to the new owner if a man was killed or wounded.

The Red Army—particularly since 1941—has been quick to realize the value of tradition, and so we find the history of various regiments diligently traced back a hundred years or more. And what could better symbolize the honour and traditions of a regiment than the Regimental colour? Obviously the Regimental colour is a moral factor, a means of raising morale, a source of inspiration, a call to Glory; and so in the Red Army the Regimental colour accompanies a unit when they go on service. Its position in battle is of particular interest, for it is chosen purely from the point of view of influence upon morale. At the beginning of a battle the colour remains, cased or uncased, at unit battle-headquarters, and only when the battle reaches its critical stage—perhaps when the result of the operation hangs in the balance—is it carried forward into the thick of the fight. To take a recent example—

A regiment held a position in low marshy ground which was overlooked by a hill upon which the enemy were well dug in. On the low ground below, any trenches dug filled immediately with water. The autumn rains had begun; everyone was cold and drenched to the skin. The marsh was not everywhere passable and the Germans, who had ample time to study the position, had covered all approaches with fire. But the hill had to be taken.

For a whole day the battle swayed backwards and forwards, and not until the morning of the second day the regiment, under cover of the thick early morning mist, succeeded in seizing the lower slopes of the hill and digging in on them. The mist was lifting, the volume of fire directed against their precarious hold on the lower slopes steadily increased in intensity. To stay where they were meant eventual annihilation; to go back meant surrendering the costly gains of two days fierce fighting. This was the critical moment in the battle, the moment when some bold stroke, some valiant appeal, might bless the wavering fortunes of the sorely tried attackers with victory.

Dramatically through the last faint wisps of morning mist came the Regimental Colour—down it went for a moment but eager hands caught it and carried it on. Above the din of the battle could be heard the cheering of the men, cries of "Advance!", more cheering, and then the irresistible surge forward of hundreds of newly inspired warriors. In that mad carnage the Regimental Colour suddenly appeared at the top of the battle-scarred hill—firmly implanted, a splash of valiant colour against the angry sky. The hill was won.

Occasionally special honour is accorded to the wounded,—and cases have been reported where C.Os. have marched their units "to attention" and paid compliments to the wounded lying around a dressing station. "We will avenge you!" is the keynote of these impromptu march-pasts and of the publicity which they receive in the Red Army Press. The wounded are honoured by them and they can well be regarded as a moral factor in strengthening the fighting spirit of the fit.

No Army has been quicker than our own to realize the moral value of letters, but the Red Army, backed by the full force of a totalitarian administration goes a step further—no soldier at the front may be without letters. If he has no one to write to him, well, some one must be found—and someone is found! Usually as a result of an appeal made over the wireless.

The other interesting point about letters is the frequency with which they are either broadcast or published in newspapers. Such letters are chosen for the patriotic sentiments they contain, but as they are personal they make far greater appeal than an impersonal article on one's duty as a soldier.

This picture of the path of Glory is undoubtedly incomplete—medals and orders alone would make a Chapter in themselves, whilst at least one chapter should be devoted to tradition—but if it contains sufficient examples to show that nothing of potential moral value is neglected, then it will have erved its purposes. But there is still something to be added—

#### DISCIPLINE.

Except for a short lapse during the revolutionary period discipline in the Russian Army has since time immemorial been very strict, and no less a traditional hero of the Red Army than Field Marshal Suvorov (1730-1800) demanded the sternest discipline, insisting that "Negligence must never be allowed to pass without punishment," the punishment, even in the case of this intelligent and much-beloved leader, often being "a few little lashes." The lash has gone, but a stern discipline remains—in fact a combination of iron Party discipline and military discipline pure and simple, is the corner stone in the Red Army edifice.

In a public conveyance, be it bus or tram, the soldier may not sit in the presence of an officer. The soldier may not carry anything in his right hand, which must always be free for saluting. And as for appearance—well, a soldier on leave is not allowed off his terminus station at Moscow until his turn-out is perfect, and if necessary he must wait there until his uniform has been pressed! These are the outward signs of a well-disciplined army, but there is another sterner side: the loss of a weapon may mean a sentence of death for its owner, whilst conduct which might cast a slur upon the Army is dealt with with equal severity.

But if the Red Army have never forgotten Suvorov's views on discipline, they have also never forgotten something else which he handed down to them:

"The morale of the troops plays a pre-eminent part in war. The main weapon is man. Commanders shall devote great care to the soldier and his needs ....subordination, exercise, discipline, cleanliness, health, neatness, alertness, daring, courage, victory, glory, glory, glory !"

#### AN UNUSUSAL AIR ROUTE

"One of the most romantic air routes of the war was operated by B.O.A.C. between Leuchars (Fife) and Stockholm. From 1941 the 800-mile crossing was made on 1,200 occasions, 490 of them during 1944. The flight lay over more than 250 miles of heavy enemy defences, and in this area many of our aircraft disappeared without a trace. In a tribute to the pilots the Air Council referred to these 'unarmed aircraft which ran the gauntlet—not without grievous loss—of a very determined foe.'

"The principal freight carried consisted of special steel for instruments. Ball bearings for aero engines were also among its valuable cargoes. After the air raids on the principal German ballbearing factories at Weinfurt, the Allies had reason to suspect that the enemy would immediately go to Sweden to try and safeguard these vital supplies. To forestall him, Britain sent over two experts by two fast, but unarmed, Mosquito bombers. The passengers were carried in the bomb bays, and the mission proved most profitable."—Daily Telegraph.

## THE SEPOY OVERSEAS—AND AT HOME

By "CHARLES."

HOW is the Indian soldier regarded by his comrades-in-arms in the C. M.F. and M. E. F. theatres of war? Let me say at once that he has earl and built up a great reputation, and is held in high esteem by British, Colonia and U. S. A. troops with whom he has served and fought. All were full of is praise, and were out to do their best for his welfare. With few exceptions is Indian soldier's conduct has been exemplary, with the minimum of crime he incidence of preventable diseases, such as malaria and V. D., always a measur of unit discipline, he has shown the lowest admission rate of all nationalities serving.

In the sphere of amenities, buildings, furnishings and equipment in place like Italy. Greece and Egypt the Indian soldier is well looked after. The absent of suitable buildings in Iraq and Persian camps has been a distinct handles, but though in these theatres they are a little behindhand with their construction programme, they expect to complete their hutted accommodation within the next few months. Meantime, tents and "Wana" hut improvisations are meeting the deficiencies, and zeal for the welfare of the Indian rank and file has nowless been lacking.

The British Service has its own complete Welfare Organisation, with British Officer, W.O., N.C.O. and self-contained N. A. A. F. I. establishment capable of meeting all the requirements and amusements of the British solding and independent of other Services in the Army. The Indian Service suffers in not possessing a Welfare establishment and N. A. A. F. I. organisation, and it dependence on personnel from units, 2nd Echelon and Indian Y. M. C. I representatives for the management of Indian soldiers' clubs, canteens, rescentres, etc., is a distinct disadvantage.

On occupation of a town or area the British Welfare and N. A. A. F. I. representatives parade before the Town Major or similar recognised official, and are allotted the building or site where they immediately establish their British soldiers' club or canteen. The Indian Y. M. C. A. manager usually arrives well in the wake of the advancing army, and is allotted what is left. He does at open an Indian soldiers' club until a building has been completed in all its alterations and repairs by an already overworked R. E. establishment.

Laudable as the efforts of the Indian Y. M. C. A. manager may be, he can, with few exceptions, only cater for the wants of the havildar-clerk, stork keeper or M. E. S. overseer. He has not cultivated the natural sympathy and camaraderic for the sowar, the sipahi, or jawan of the Indian Army as we know it. Moreover, the Indian Y. M. C. A. manager, usually an Indian Christian, he limited powers of command to exercise any discipline of ordinary cleanlines and sanitation among the Indian establishment detailed for him from local units or 2nd Echelon.

Another point worthy of mention is that the British Serviceman, is addition to having his welfare organisation Club, also has Toc H., Y. M. C. I and other recreational centres provided as supplementary to the Army Central In each of these one or two British women were working, several as volunteers adding the characteristic feminine touch and homely thought with decontions

HOME

pictures or flowers, arrangements of books and other reading matter, the provision of a local seamstress and sewing machine to repair clothing, etc., thus making these places more inviting and pleasant. The Indian soldier has none of these vet. The three Indian Lady Welfare workers appointed by the Army at Cairo, Beirut and Jerusalem are only functioning in their official capacity, and cannot be said to have made real contacts with the jawans.

1-arms in 🕸 Holiday camps have been established for the Indian soldier, as for his use that be British comrades. But the tastes of the former are difficult to cater for. He emby 🕍 does not wish to sea-or sun-bathe, or idle under the shade in pleasant surroundings, th. All mail or try to catch a fish or play improvised games on a beach. He has never With from been to a seaside or country for a holiday; he has always lived in the country, minimust and in his unit has played games to order. The Indian wants to be near, or D, alumin, a town or city where he can wander in its streets and look at its shops. He rate of 🏻 would rather be in Cairo or Baghdad, walking through its streets in summer temperature (even if some of its localities are "out of bounds") than enjoy a restful holiday in the cool and among the amenities provided at Karind. The Indian and the Indian E. C. O. of so-called higher education has to learn to enjoy a quiet restful holiday in the country and appreciate the benefits and amenities provided by Nature.

nmodation t For an officer who knew the pre-1914 jawan, it was interesting to see the visitions 1944-45 edition using the Indian Soldiers' Club amenities provided. A fair and field proportion had learnt to make full use of them and appeared quite sophisticated; others appeared a bit shy of the chairs, tables and table-cloths, etc., but were rapidly adapting themselves with surprising efficiency. At a Soldiers' Club in Italy two Gurkha riflemen, seated on a stool before an upright piano, were successfully making music, playing a duet with one index finger each. Here was a strange musical instrument midst strange surroundings, but the two were really enjoying their success at evolving one of their tunes by ear from memory. How many B. O. Rs. could play "God Save the King" or "Tipperary" under similar conditions?

Literature is provided fairly liberally by the Army, and the Indian gets and N. !! the latest news from the wireless. Cairo publishes a local edition of the Fauii Akhbar, which is delivered to remote parts fairly expeditiously, but many feel that, if literacy is to be further encouraged, a Roman-Urdu daily paper on the lines of Union Jack or Seac for Indian troops would be much appreciated. left & Similarly, if interest in local sightseeing places is to be stimulated among Indian ranks, some simple guide booklets, printed in Roman-Urdu, would be useful for places like Cairo, Rome, Florence, Athens or Jerusalem, where the Indian soldier has had the good fortune to sojourn.

vildar chr In furnishing and decorating Indian Soldiers' Clubs or Recreation Rooms nd make a guiding and restraining influence is essential. The common practice of plastering the walls with pictures and information posters, many of them repeated several times on the same wall provided. several times on the same wall, prevailed. In one club in Italy, the ante-room dinary chi and reading-room walls were completely covered with posters and pictures; the dining-room had some panels of Indian characters rather well painted by a local artist, but one picture of a bird, left over spare from the front rooms, was plastered over the left-hand bottom corner of one of the panels!

c H, Y, ! The Indian soldier has done well in rations, as far as operational conditions permitted, but sufficient interest in his feeding did not seem to me to be exercised with dear

by his officers; nor were many attempts made to overcome prejudices by instruction and personality to which, if properly imparted, the Indian has always been amenable. One commanding officer, who complained that his men was not getting meat, when informed that a neighbouring unit were getting mutton, remarked: "Oh! yes, but our men only eat goats; they never eat sheep"—as if that were a proud regimental tradition which must be encouraged! Another unit refused to accept a fresh fish ration because they had never seen fish of that peculiar shape before; neither had the writer, but when the identical fish was served up fried for lunch in the Officers' Mess it was excellent eating, although of unrecognisable anatomy.

In one leave centre rest-camp, excellent cooking ranges with boiler and chimney had been provided by the sappers for both Mohammadan and Hinda kitchens, but they had been left severely alone. Both Mohammadan and Hinda cooks had been allowed to make and cook on chooles in the rooms; kitchens and dining-rooms were full of smoke, and a sapper-corporal was busy directing a local workman to cut a hole through the roof to let the smoke out. The officer in charge of the rest Camp had not considered sending the cooks to a neighbouring Indian unit, where similar cooking ranges were being correctly used, for instruction.

Several units had heard of the system of serving three meals per day adopted in the North-Western Army and recommended by the Commander-in-Chief in India, but few had adopted the system. The I. A. C. Training and Reinforcement Centre were notable exceptions. They had adopted the system wholeheartedly and their men had derived considerable benefit from it and had appreciated it. One Indian Cavalry Regiment had also done so, and had found similar results, but the commanding officer of the neighbouring unit had been over-persuaded by his R. M. and had found the practice unworkable. Most unit C. O.s were sure their men were able to consume their full rations daily in two meals but the number of volunteer Italian, Arab and Egyptian assistants one saw at Indian kitchens led one to accept these statements with a certain amount of suspicion.

I found general criticism of the Indian F. D. S. entertainment parties. True, the Army expends adequate funds but they would appear to swell the profits of the middleman or contractor, as so often happens with all other Indian commodities for troops if sufficient supervision and control is not exercised. Amateur talent among the large numbers now recruited in the ancillary services was quite good and some excellent local travelling concert parties had been organised in Paiforce and were giving excellent performances.

The Indian Serviceman—be he soldier, sailor or airman—is not looked upon as his fellow-countryman by the Indian civilian or by the commercial world. The moment a man enlists in one of the Services, he ceases to be regarded as a citizen of the country, and is fair game. War, after all, is an opportunity which only occurs on a large enough scale once in twenty years for the contractor and the get-rich-quick fraternity. The latter can always ease their conscience, perhaps even earn a local honour, by subscribing a share of the profits to the Viceroy's War Purposes or other Funds.

In hospitals the sick or wounded Indian soldier receives the best treatment available, whether he is admitted to an Indian, British or Colonial Medical unit. He is efficiently and carefully nursed by Q. A., V. A. D. or South-African

Digitized by CTOOS

sisters in C. C. Ss. or General Hospitals, with all other races of the Empire, and there have been no difficulties about feeding, etc. It was, moreover, pleasing to note that the Indian E. C. O., R. M. O. and M. O. Field Ambulances, with few exceptions, had made good and earned the respect of the units among whom they worked. Whether Madrassis, Bengalis or Punjabis, they had developed a sympathy and fellow-feeling for their countrymen comrades-in-arms and were anxious for their welfare. Several had deservedly earned decorations in the field for gallantry.

In hospitals, however, the specialists appeared disappointed because the soldiery were not providing seriously sick or wounded in sufficient numbers to exercise their skill and add to their experiences in their profession! In most hospitals I visited, the majority of the Nursing Sisters were British, because sufficient I. M. N. S. or A. N. S. were not forthcoming. Where I. M. S. A. or A. N. S. were working, they were doing excellent work, following the examples and standards of their British confireres.

What are the lessons we can learn from these gleanings? What can we do to improve conditions for the Indian Serviceman who has stood the test and proved himself worthy in every field? The Indian soldier has always been a mercenary (as is every profession). Soldiering is an honoured profession. By his deeds and services the soldier has proved himself worthy of his wage—indequate as it has been at times. What is the Indian Legislature going to do in appreciation of these services, ungrudgingly rendered?

First, we must have a properly organised Indian Army Welfare Service, with its own establishment of officers, N.C.O.s and men, including trained cooks, etc.

108

Secondly, we must have an Indian N. A. A. F. I. service as part of our Fighting Services. The Indian contractor may be said to supply requirements, according to certain high touring officers who have visited this country recently, but it must be admitted that they are not too familiar with the customs of the country and its fraternity. The contractor is not there solely for the benefit of the troops as an Army-Navy and Air Force-run organisation is. The N. A. A. F. I. at Home has already returned more than £2,000,000 to the funds of British units and their profits will be available for the benefit of the British armed forces after the war. The Indian contractor may send a monthly rebate to the unit but it is doubtful if even the Income-tax authorities have an accurate estimate of the extent of profit he is making from troops in India.

Thirdly, we must improve education among the troops in its widest sense and not merely confine it to book learning and to the passing of examination tests. After the last war the Army started schools at Dehra Dun, Jhelum, Jullundur and Ajmer for sons of soldiers. We must want the existing schools enlarged and more such institutions built in other areas from which the fighting Services are now recruited—and these schools should include the sons of Indian sailors and airmen. The Fighting Services must be a brotherhood.

Fourthly, we want garrison schools for the children of Indian fighting in all garrison towns where families are allowed. The standard of instruction imparted at these must be accepted and recognised by the civil deducational authorities of the Presidencies and Provinces, so that the education

of these children is not interfered with when they return to their village or home town with their parents, as is necessitated by the limited family accommodation available in unit lines.

Fifthly, we must have schools on the lines of Dehra Dun, Jhelan, Jullundur and Ajmer for the daughters of India's fighting men, where India parents can entrust their daughters to live away from their homes, develop self-reliance, imbibe the traditions of their fathers, brothers or uncles, and, we hope, provide the future candidates for the Women's Services. Those Services have proved essential in the Forces, but they are hard to recruit from among the products of local mission schools and the domiciled community.

We cannot hope to have schools throughout the length and breadth of India, but do let us start with at least one well-endowed Institution on the lines of similar schools at Bath and Hampstead as a memorial for this War. It must not be a "cheap" Institution to suit the limited financial means of Indian parents. The highest standard must be aimed at from the start. The complete staff, of the highest class, will have to be imported from teaching institutions and universities in the United Kingdom for the present, as such are not yet available in this country.

One or more Studentships should be endowed by Corps, Regiments, Battalions and units of the present Indian Army, so as to perpetuate the memories of all. The Corps or Unit endowing Studentships may be allowed the privilege of selecting and nominating the candidates from among the daughters of their unit, so long as such students conform to conditions required by the Institution, and providing the financial circumstances of the parents have been thoroughly investigated, and that the latter are made to pay a share towards the education of their daughter.

The Punjab and Rajputana States, who provide so many recruits for the Fighting Forces, might be induced to co-operate financially, and be entitled to nominate their candidates under the same conditions as those from the rest of India.

The education provided must not be confined to academic requirements of local school certificates and universities, but must include domestic sciences and such knowledge as will make a girl a worthy citizen of this country, and the future mother or sister of its warriors, or members of its Women's Services. The minimum cost of each studentship should be at least Rs. 250 per month to include board and instruction. A school for about 200 girls should be started near Dehra Dun or in the Simla Hills as a beginning.

Sixthly, by propaganda and talks we must educate the parents in the Forces to appreciate the value of the educational institutions suggested, and persuade them to take full advantage of the facilities provided for their sons and daughters.

Lastly, we must look to the members of the Legislature, who will soon rule this country, to appreciate fully the fact that the Indian who volunteers to serve in the Forces still retains his right to citizenship of the country. And I venture to suggest that those leaders of the country have a duty and responsibility to look after the welfare of their men in the Forces, and of their families, before, during and after their period of service.

Our Chief, who has the welfare of the Indian soldier so much at heart, has just returned from the C. M. F. and M. E. F. He will, I hope, endorse all I have written, and, with the force of his personality and influence, lead the thoughts of others along these lines, so that the future India Fighting Services will rest on sound and well-laid foundations, and be worthy of the greatness of this country.

Leadership.—''Phlegm, a supreme imperturbability in the face of death —which half amuses men and half dominates them—is the ultimate gift in war ... General Smuts collects his facts like a man of science, listening, sifting, rejecting what has not been proved; I know no other soldier who has this approach to evidence.

The durability of a general depends more on character than capacity. We may doubt the pre-eminence of Foch, Haig, Jellicoe and Trenchard in their art, but as men they came from the old mould of their race; they wore well, were built for great occasions. Foch's will to victory was perhaps his most valuable contribution to our cause.

"During the second battle in the air in August, 1940, a Minister asked where the reserves were. There were none, he was told; the last war 'plane was in the sky. To send aeroplanes and pilots round the Cape to Egypt at such a juncture was a revelation of will power as impressive as anything in the last War. No other English Government since the last War would have taken such a risk. No statesman save Churchill, with the possible exception of Balfour, would have asked it to do so; the decision bore the stamp of a great war minister.

The art of selection is the art of leadership. Without this power of devolution staleness seizes upon the harassed leader. In general men given great responsibility work too hard. Gandhi's weekly day of silence for thought and prayer is an example to all Englishmen who hold power. Gandhi found he was 'losing mental freshness, spiritual power, and was in danger of becoming formal, mechanical and devitalized. The prescription might have been written for any senior civil servant. Men of good will saddled with the fate of others need great caution to be idle when only rest can restore their fuddled wits.'—Lord Moran, President of the Royal Society of Physicians, in "League and the War."

## THE P.O.W. FLY HOME\*

## By MacDonald Hastings.

MEN who have been pining, waiting, stagnating behind rusted barbed wire of the German prison cages are coming home. What is happening on the air route between the forward area of Germany and Souther England is something which I can only compare with Dunkirk. It isn't a Dunkirk, because this is a story of victory, not of retreat. But the emotional impact is the same. There is the same picture of thousands of ragged and exhausted men struggling home. There is the same lump in the throat welcome; the same and improvisation of transport.

But this time it is not a fleet of little ships bringing the men home. It's a fleet of aircraft. Getting our liberated prisoners home is a No. 1 priority. Every skipper of aircraft of Transport Command taking supplies for the forward troops had orders that he must return loaded with liberated prisoners. The tired air crews, flying as much as 11 hours a day, are dumping their supplies on to the fields where the liberated prisoners are waiting, and in a matter of minutes the plane is on its way back to England.

I was on an airfield yesterday just behind the forward area in Germany. Fifty-seven 'planes touched down and took off after a few hours on the runway—on which you would have thought it was sheer suicide to land on at all. From the one airfield in one day 2,000 prisoners of war were flows to England. Standing there and watching it I will admit frankly that I wept—whether for joy or sadness I don't know. It was the most moving human experience I have ever had.

The liberated men were brought by trucks to the airfield from reception areas where they had been concentrated by our advancing troops. Many had been free for several days before making contact with our men; many had escaped after the German guards had fled and had been living on the countryside. As soon as possible the forward divisions had sent them back to a reception area.

The area I was in was one of the few German towns which hadn't bees flattened out. For the liberated prisoners we had taken over all the public buildings, and medical and administrative staffs were working hard checking the men's health, documenting them, making nominal rolls and passing them on the aim was that no man was to be held up in the camp for more than 24 hours. But with men coming in in thousands it was a tough job.

Scarcely any of them had proper clothes; some had no trousers, but just had a blanket thrown round them. They were all under-weight and suffering from malnutrition. Some had been living on raw potatoes; 50% had dysentery and about 60% were verminous; every single one of them was neurotic and flat out tired. Hospital cases were picked out; the rest were bathed, disinfected and issued with clean clothing. Nearly all of them had hair as long as a girl. Within a few hours of their arrival hundreds of them were loaded on trucks, taken to the airfield and on to Home.

<sup>\*</sup>This story of the homecoming of prisoners of war from Germany was recently broadcast from the BBC London by Mr. MacDonald Hastings, war correspondent of Pichire Post,

They are not all being cleared as quickly as that. The order is to get them to England as quickly as possible, and in many cases the prisoners have been travelling in the clothes they arrive in. Yesterday on the airfield there must have been a thousand excited men watching the sky for a homing 'plane. They' represented twenty nationalities, and yet, apart from the Indians in their turbans, it was hard to tell from their dress which was which.

Many were wearing bits of German uniforms—greatcoats, trousers, even jackets and jackboots. Quite a lot sported German officers' high peaked caps. The only men who had clung to their headgear and wouldn't exchange it for any other were the British airborne troops captured at Arnhem. The airfield was dotted with the rescuers and the rescued, grinning from ear to ear in spite of the fact that most of them had lost 20 to 30 lbs. in weight.

impi

Walking round the airport you could follow the whole war. There was an R. A. F. Sergeant who had been shot down over Wilhelmshaven on September 4, 1939 in the first air raid of the war. There was a Cameron Highlander still proudly wearing the tattered kilt he had worn when captured during the "death or glory" charge of the Highlanders in St. Valerie in 1940.

There were Australians, Gurkhas and Sikhs taken at Tobruk. Many of the Indians were broken-hearted because they had lost their turbans—but an Allied officer of the Military Government turned them loose in a German cotton mill and they had all decked themselves out in the most wonderful coloured materials.

I spoke to one little Cockney I had met in the first battle on German soil fought by the British Army at Gielenkirshen. He was taken prisoner the day after I left. And mixed up with Americans and British Empire war prisoners were Poles taken in the fight for their own country in 1939. French men, Belgians, a few Russians were there—and also one Yugoslav General—resplendent in gold epaulettes, a sky blue uniform and a red band down his trousers. He had been captured during those few days of fighting when King Peter took over the Yugoslav Government in 1940 and the Germans drove into Belgrade.

All the prisoners had the most amazing collection of souvenirs I have ever seen. Their baggage was nothing except souvenirs, most of it the most pathetic rubbish which they treasured like gold. One group had piano accordions; others had ceremonial German swords, daggers, tin hats and bagfuls of cheap razor blades, cameras and fountain pens which in the joy of liberation they were doling out for their rescuers.

One man had an empty picture frame on his back. When I asked him what it was he opened a wooden box and out of it produced an oil painting of himself which he said had been done by a Russian prisoner for a hundred cigarettes. I don't know how many questions I answered about the war and home—home especially—and how soon it would be before we got there. The men milled round me and then I finally tumbled into a plane with a crowd of them, and I think I felt as dead tired as I knew they were.

During the journey the men flopped about exhausted on the floor. Most were too tired for demonstrations, and their stomachs were in no condition to stand the bumps. Suddenly, after a couple of hours' flying one of them who was looking out of the window pointed to a strip of land and said: "What's that?" I looked out and replied smilingly: "You ought to know." The man said in a broken voice: "No, you tell me". I told him they were the white cliffs of Dover. The man repeated it like a prayer—"the white cliffs

of Dover". And among these exhausted bodies littering the bottom of the transport plane there was a stir, and one to another they said: "It's England."

They didn't cheer. They hugged their knees and laughed and laughed till one or two of them cried. I must say I was anxious about the reception they were going to get when they arrived. I realised how much it was going to mean to them. I had a sneaking suspicion that the welcome might be disappointing. I need not have worried.

The welcome was the most touching thing I have ever seen. When the aircraft touched down and ran up to the hangars there was waiting the one thing these men wanted to see more than anything else in the world—a crowd of Englishwomen. And as each one got off the aircraft he fell into the arms of a girl who dragged his bag and walked hand-in-hand with him into the hangar.

The men just looked and gaped and laughed as if they were walking on air. The hangar was decorated with flags. A band played a welcome. There were rows of big armchairs—and how the men appreciated them—papers and magazines and hundreds of girls in R. A. F. blue handing round cups of tea and cake. Later representatives of all the Allied armies took over their own people. The British were taken to transit camps and I went with them to one.

They got the same terrific welcome. They got money, were kitted up, issued with double ration cards, warrants, etc., and after a night's rest taken to the railway station for home. I didn't go with them, for their meeting with their homefolk was something too sacred for anybody else to be looked on. But I stood there with the crowd in the little market town the men passed through and cheered and cheered and cheered.

## Some "Churchillian" Phrases

1940. May 13.—"I have nothing to offer but blood, toil, tears and sweat."

June 4.—"We shall go on to the end; we shall fight on the seas and the oceans; we shall fight on the beaches; on the landing grounds, in the fields and on the streets; we shall fight in the hills; we shall never surrender."

June 18.—"Hitler knows he will have to break us in this island or lose the war. If we stand up to him, all Europe may be free and the life of the world may move forward into broad, sunlit uplands. Let us so bear ourselves that if the British Empire and its Commonwealth last for a thousand years, men will still say: 'This was their finest hour'".

August 20.—"British airmen, undaunted by odds, unwearied in their a constant challenge of mortal danger, are turning the tide of world war by their prowess and their devotion. Never in the field of human conflict was so much is owed by so many to so few."

1941. February 9.—"All through those dark winter months the enemy that had the power to drop three or four tons of bombs upon us for every ton a we could send Germany in return. We are arranging that presently this will be rather the other way round. We shall not fail or falter, we shall not weaken to tire. Give us the tools and we will finish the job."

December 11.—"In launching the Nazi campaign upon Russia Hitler

made one of the outstanding blunders of history."

December 26.--"When we consider the resources of the United States and the British Empire it becomes still more difficult to reconcile the Japanese actions with prudence or even with sanity What kind of people do they think we are?"

#### **FURTHER NOTES FROM BRITAIN**

By Major-General Sir Dashwood Strettell, K.C.I.E., C.B.

WHAT a year has passed since I sent you my first impressions of wartime England! The invasion of Normandy, the liberation of France and Belgium, the rush to, and crossing of, the Rhine, the surrender in Italy, the reoccupation of Rangoon and the Philippines—and now the unconditional

surrender of once-proud Germany.

How has all this news been received in England? Let me say first that it has reflected once more some of the finer qualities of the British people. After these five years and more of the strain of war one would not have been surprised if there had been an outburst of "mafficking." But one would have been wrong. Although London was so packed that at times it was hard to move, there was no disorder of any sort. Crowds were out to enjoy themselves; everybody was smiling and happy; but the riotous happiness of 1918 was not repeated.

One of the finest demonstrations was the rush of the people to Buckingham Palace as an expression of loyalty to their Majesties. It was spontaneous and sincere. Both the King and Queen showed their appreciation by coming out on to the balcony to wave to the crowds below. Later the people had another opportunity of showing their affection, for the Royal procession to the Thanksgiving Service at St. Pauls passed between crowds of cheering Londoners. The thanks of the inhabitants of this Island to them for their untiring efforts were well voiced in the Royal addresses from both Houses of Parliament. Rumour has it that for the Armistice celebrations the police had orders "not to interfere unless there was murder probable!" But there was no reason for interference anywhere. There was very little drunkenness—drinks ran out in most pubs at a fairly early hour. But London nevertheless thoroughly enjoyed herself, and showed once more that "she could take it." From all over the country came similar reports. Truly we can say with pride: "We are a great people."

The public holidays over, everybody is back at their job, all the better for their brief and enjoyable respite. In the political field, many regret the decision to break up Britain's war-winning Coalition Government and to embark on a General Election. In the event of the Conservatives not coming back into power the composition of our delegation to the Peace conference will be hard to choose, for it is unthinkable that Mr. Churchill and Mr. Eden will not be

among our representatives.

Housing will be one of our most important post-war problems—to say nothing of the necessary labour to carry out the plans. My own experience will show how difficult things are. After searching for 15 months, we have taken a flat in Earls Court. It was one that had been badly blitzed. Until we signed the lease, the war damage repair authorities would not even put in the windows, or doors, mend essential sanitary fittings or renew the electrical wiring. Until we actually occupied the flat, we could not get a permit for the walls and ceilings to be patched up and distempered. No paint was allowed to be removed.

So we are camping in the flat with our luggage and furniture piled in each room, moving from room to room as the workmen finish each. As we were not ourselves blitzed, or newly-married, we can get no permit for extra curtain material, linoleum or floor covering, for which articles our normal coupons are practically useless. Bumbledom is in its glory! On the one hand they tell you in India (quite rightly), to keep your luggage to a minimum, while on arrival

Home no allowance is made for the fact that one has spent years away from Britain and, in our case, have never had a home in England.

The Americans are already on the move—I don't know where to—but a street in which I am working was entirely vacated by them in the last few days.

Our basic petrol allowance has been reintroduced, and taxis and bases are now allowed increased supplies. It will relieve congestion enormously. The former allowance permitted a taxi to run between 45 and 50 miles, so that by the late afternoon many had to go home as their "gas" was exhausted. In the evening taxis have been almost unprocurable, while, even in the daytime,

Americans were the most popular fares owing to their generous tipping. I was a much amused at the Marble Arch a few days ago to see a Bishop, in full rig, failing to catch the eye of several taxi drivers, who ignored his violent gesticulations!

One feature of this war has been the warm friendly relations which have grown up between members of the United Nations in Britain. It is a feature which must be fostered and continued throughout the years of peace, and with that in view a Club, called "The Allied Circle," has been established at 46 Green Street, London, W. 1, under the Presidency of Lieut.-Colonel Lord Dudley Gordon, D.S.O., and the Chairmanship of Colonel G.R. Crossfield, C.B.E., D.S.O., and as its Secretary for Public Relations I am very keen to make its existence widely known. We hope to establish affiliated circles in European capitals as their nationals return.

Our members comprise men and women of every European Allied nationality, except the Russians, whose Government does not permit its nationals to join such associations. We have lectures by distinguished individuals of all nations, hold discussions on international problems, and, as everything is "under the punkah" one really gets the views one wants to hear—and which are often quite different to those one reads in the papers.

By the way, Brigadier J. Smyth, V.C., M.C. who spent so many years in India, is our Vice-Chairman. Since his arrival Home he has built for himself a fine reputation as military correspondent of the Kemsley group of newspapers, lectures for the Information Bureau, and has become a playwright. His play "On the Burma Road" was tried out in Halifax recently, and he hopes to produce it in London very soon. He has written an excellent book entitled "Defence is our Business," which every adult in the Empire should read. And finally he has thrown down the gauntlet to Mr. Bevin, whose seat at Wandsworth he is contesting in the forthcoming General Election.

The arrival in England of Field Marshal Lord Wavell, and later that of H. E. General Sir Claude Auchinleck created much interest in the minds of the general public, and everyone is hoping that some solution of the problem of India will emerge as the result of the Governor-General's visit.

One subject which is constantly to the fore is that of "export," for Britain lives by its exports of manufactured goods. Part—and a most important part—of our contribution towards the winning of the war has been the disposal of our overseas investments, to make up for which we shall all have to work harder and probably go on shorter commons at home to a greater extent than is generally realised by the general public.

The future is indeed grim, and Mr. Churchill has rightly emphasised the

enormous difficulties, economic and political, with which we and the world in general are faced in the post-war world. But the war has proved that the heart of the British people is sound, and if they are told the reasons which govern decisions I am convinced that the country will face the future with the same courage, inflexible determination and cheerfulness with which it has faced and overcome the difficulties of the past six years.

## EIGHT MONTHS WITH THE W.A.C. (I)

By CHIEF COMMANDER ANNE COLLINS.

d be

200

1804

816

Ī'n

ng, t

abae

der fear

d w

at !

Dd'

DSI

uit

抽

1818

1881

WE arrived in India in July, 1944, three A. T. S. officers; a Senior-Controller (Brigadier), who had been secondedfrom the A.T.S. to become head of the W.A.F. (I), with myself and one Junior Commander as her staff. Few people can ever have embarked on a job with less idea of what they were undertaking. Enquiries made in London had revealed very little; we were handed an A. I. I. and told to read it, which we did, most assiduously, on the boat; but it was like trying to reconstruct an unknown beast from a fossil, and we soon decided that we would do better to study the living beast on its own home pastures.

After arriving at Delhi we were duly taken to our offices in G.H.Q. and were surprised to see on each desk several red objects like the halves of large hard-boiled eggs made of terra-cotta. The function of these was not at once obvious, but became only too plain as soon as the fans were turned on. As the papers on our tables usually outnumbered the eggs by at least 50 per cent. we soon found that every conversation was interrupted by one or other party feverishly chasing fugitive papers round the table, flapping and banging at them after the manner of swatting flies; and no one seemed to think it at all odd for the most serious discussion suddenly to turn into a butterfly-hunt. We found this ratiher a strain at first, particularly when telephoning, as, with one hand out of acton and the other trying to write on a sheet of paper about to take wing, there seemed nothing but one's foot or one's chin with which to keep the relevant file open at approximately the right place. Eventually, however, we adapted ourselves, and learnt to dispose our hard-boiled eggs, hands and elbows as strategically as possible.

The second difficulty, also connected with the fans, was that of hearing what was said, as the continual fluttering hum was enough to prevent one hearing at least three words in every sentence, usually the operative words. There seemed a limit to the number of times one could say "What?" to the same person, so we formed the rather unfortunate habit of guessing, and hoping that between us we should be able to fill up the gaps later. This hope was usually—and very deservedly—barren. At first I thought I was the only one afflicted thus with deafness, but after a day or two discovered that the other two were in the same state. The impression that we produced on the W.A.C. (I) staff must at best have been that of mental defectives, and at worst that of total amnesia.

Another of our troubles was the filing which, India being what it is, not only reversed the name of the addressor and addressee, but began the files at the front and worked backwards. (Since our arrival a bold and revolutionary spirit has forced G.H.Q. to make an attempt to adopt the Whitehall filing system.) The system then in force was painstakingly explained to us; no doubt because we could not hear what was said, or were too busy shooting down flying papers with our hard-boiled eggs, we did not fully understand. During the first few days I read through several files with much care and growing bewilderment at the retrograde movement of the matter in hand, which I put down to oriental conditions; only to realise later that I had inadvertently begun at the most recent letter and worked backwards, not having thought of looking at the dates.

The first days were very full and very confusing, but our task gradually took shape before us. The W.A.C. (I) was then  $2\frac{1}{2}$  years old, and its composition

entirely unprecedented and revolutionary, as it recruits British, Indian and Anglo-Indian women. These are in no way segregated, but all live the communal life so completely foreign to the way of living of them all. Not surprisingly many problems and difficulties have arisen from this, with which the regimental officers had been struggling from the outset—without having always had as much help and support from the Army as the A.T.S. was lucky enough to have received in our early days. To a newcomer it seemed that the Army in India had at the outset been slow to realise the future usefulness and importance of the W.A.C. (I), and had tended to treat its problems as a joke. It also seemed—though destructive criticism is always easy—that the Army had been curiously optimistic in imagining that a Corps could be created and run with no training whatever.

The organisation of the Corps was parallel to no normal military one, being a strange medley of ranks and appointments. Soon after we arrived it was brought into line with that of other Services, with its Director, Deputy and Assistant Directors. It had still to remain slightly unorthodox, however, as the Army is one side of the picture only, though very much the largest; for the W.A.C. (I) work for the Royal Indian Navy and the Royal Air Force, as well. Personnel working for the Navy wear naval dress—blue-bordered white saris in the case of the Indians; there is a Deputy Director for the Naval Wing as there is at each Army or Command; and the charter of the Naval Wing shows a stranger blending of naval and military responsibilities. Certain Companies work for the R. A. F. also, though there is at present no R.A.F. Wing. To correlate and deal with the demands of three Services—all of whom very understandably think their own needs paramount—is not always easy.

One of the great handicaps of the Corps is the fact that a large proportion, both of officers and auxiliaries, are Local Service, and therefore immobile. This makes the posting of officers an appalling task; for not only is there a severe shortage, but the officer obviously best suited for a particular post will probably be immovably rooted several hundreds of miles away from it. Local Service conditions also make the discipline of the auxiliaries very difficult, as C. B. cannot be awarded to them, thus removing at a blow one of the rather limited powers of punishment of the Company or Platoon Commander. A third problem raised is that of training, as no member of the Corps who is on Local Service terms, be she officer or auxiliary, can be ordered to go on a course unless she is willing to do so. To none of these problems is there any answer.

The lack of training from which the officers of the Corps were suffering was very obvious—as it was indeed to most of the officers themselves. An O.C.T.U. had been opened six months before our arrival, and a Selection Board about the same time. Plans were afoot for Other Rank training, for an Officers' School and a Staff College wing; but these had not yet come into being. The W.A.C. (I) were not at the time able to produce officers to open these Training establishments; so we sent an appeal to the Director, A.T.S., who responded magnificently by sending on loan to the W.A.C. (I) twelve extremely good officers. Their tasks were not easy, as the limelight beat very fiercely on the early representatives of our Service, hitherto known in India by reputation only.

The high standard expected, and the fact that we were conspicuous owing to our fewness held the makings of a difficult situation for these A.T.S. officers; and it is high praise to them that from the start they won golden opinions from all sides.

The first, and easiest, step was to take over the O.C.T.U. from the male instructors who had started it so well. Here we were building on a sure foundation, as the male instructors had already begun, with some success, to strike at the

pernicious and very widespread idea that a staff job was the only possible one, and that only the dumbest of dumb clucks should be a Platoon Commander. We felt that something had been achieved when the cadets began to leave the 0.C.T.U. willing and even anxious to be Platoon Commanders.

Our A.T.S. Commandant and instructors had it early demonstrated to them that this was no tame and orthodox Corps that they had come to work with. Their first course of cadets assembled, and in their midst appeared an old lady in civilian clothes. This turned out on enquiry to be the mother-in-law of one of the cadets, who assured the Commandant that this was quite normal, and that her mother-in-law had accompanied her throughout her service. Orthodoxy on this occasion prevailed, however, and mother-in-law was somehow disposed of for the duration of the course.

ecenz

at th

.C.A

estat:

ater

礷

bek

myi C. (

**12** (

The second venture was to open an Officers' School for officers commissioned before the O.C.T.U. was in being. This syllabus was based on that of the A.T.S. Officers School, and it was run entirely by A.T.S. officers, with a W.A.C. (I) Adjutant. Here there were many potential difficulties—the inevitable reaction of some of the officers, that they had got on as Company Commanders for two years and saw no need for a course now; the question "Why should I go and be taught by A.T.S. officers new to the country?"; the Local Service problem, of officers who stood in sore need of training, but felt unable to leave for even a month their husband, bungalow or even, in one case, their cat. The Officers' School could in fact very easily have been a failure; and the fact that it was from the outset a resounding success does great credit to its staff.

The next effort was the opening of four Recruit Training Centres, with an A.T.S. Junior Commander as Second-in-command-cum-Chief Instructor at each. The conception of basic training was new to the W.A.C. (I) and not always readily acceptable, as the inclination of the auxiliary is usually to waste as little time as possible before being taught a useful and profitable trade. The value of this basic training, and that of the personnel selection that is carried out at the Centres, had perhaps not yet had time to become clear. Here again the syllabus was based on A.T.S. basic training, though a good many adaptations had to be made. The standard of English of many recruits is low, and infinite patience is needed from the instructors, who may be British, Indian or Anglo-Indian girls.

Lastly, the W.A.C. (I) Wing of the Staff College opened at Quetta to cater for a course of 50 students. This was well overdue, as up till then completely raw and untrained officers had been placed in full-blown G-III and Staff Captain appointments.

The planning of these various ventures kept us at G.H.Q. a good deal; but we also managed to tour a certain amount. We visited the North-west Frontier, and also Assam, where we saw at work the first of Tibetan and Nepalese auxiliaries. They were doing signals work at a small place in the middle of nowhere, and were proving a great success. We arrived to find them all drawn up, pressed and starched, with their little flat faces unnaturally solemn. They do not speak very good English, but their Platoon Commander assured us that they had been carefully drilled to say "Yes, Ma'am" and "No, Ma'am." They were living in wattle huts, seemed to have very little in the way of amusements, but were apparently always contented and happy and very amenable to discipline. We were told that they were fond of singing part-songs, so, after we had been photographed in a group with them, we asked if they would sing to us. This produced paroxysms of laughter, but after a good deal of pushing and squirming they struck up "Shenandoah," in funny little voices, husky but true. An

Digitized by GOOG

American negro song, sung in English by Tibetan W.A.C. (I)s in Assam struck us as being one of our better bits of incongruity.

Throughout our visits, and at G.H.Q. also, we were struck by how much the problems of the W.A.C. (I) resemble those of the A.T.S. in 1940 and 1941. On top of these were, of course, the vast and complex difficulties peculiar to India. Feeding problems: rations have to be drawn for both British and Indian auxiliaries, though both are probably fed in the same mess; and, human nature being what it is, both British and Indians expect to receive not only their own ration, but the more appetising items from the alternative ration. Caste, with all its deep and spreading roots. Different uses of leisure, varying from the Anglo-Indian girl who would think it odd to spend more than a very occasional evening in her quarters, to the retiring and often studious Indian girls who would think it improper to go out at all in the evening. Different social conventions and ideas of morality.

It need hardly be said that anti-Government propaganda loses no chance of exploiting all or any of these problems, with particular and salacious emphasis on morality. This propaganda has of course had a very adverse effect on recruiting, which has at the time of writing not come up to our expectations and hopes. Unfortunately the schools and colleges, who should be a potential source of good material, are in many cases prejudiced and extremely ill-informed about the Corps, its aims and conditions of service; and the task of visiting them, removing misapprehensions and trying to win them over, is one of the most delicate and arduous that the W.A.C. (I) Recruiting Officers have to undertake. In December, 1944 a progressive and enlightened Brahmin lady, till then Principal of a women's college, was appointed as one of the two Deputy Directors of the Corps at G.H.Q.; and it may be hoped that her example may assuage the fears and stimulate the courage of other Indian women who have their country's progress at heart.

For the great and overruling problem of the W.A.C. (I) remains that of bridging the gulf between the age-old Indian conception of woman's capacities, and the ideal of service and shared responsibility. For this reason, we believe that the immediate wartime purpose of the W.A.C.(I) is of secondary importance; its greater service may be to the future of India. This second ideal will not be easy of achievement, as to speak to the average Indiau woman of responsibility and of service to India is to appeal to conception at present unknown to her. Progress is therefore bound to be slow and at times discouraging; but we hope that the W.A.C. (I) may perhaps have laid foundations upon which a worthy building may later be erected by the women of India.

Benefits of Information.—"The fighting men of America and Britian have been reared on the ideals of a free Press and free speech. These are the two great principles we are fighting to preserve. They are among the basic right of mankind. Public opinion wins wars, especially in democracies, and public opinion must be honestly and fearlessly informed. The soldier likes to read about his unit and his local commander. Correspondents should be encouraged to mention the identity of units actually in the line when those have obviously been identified by the enemy. The freest possible flow of news is the best way to keep the public working in support of the war effort."—General Eisenhover.

### OFFICERS OF THE POST-WAR INDIAN ARMY

By Major B. D. Kapur.

AJOR-GENERAL F. M. Moore's article on the "Post-war Indian Army", published in your October 1944 issue must have been read with keen interest by all professional soldiers. It was definitely an eye-opener for many, and was certainly a good basis for constructive thinking. It served as a good reminder that the vital factors, "Indianization" and "Indian Officer" must not only be well remembered when formulating plans for the future, but should be made the basis of all reorganization schemes.

The Reorganization Committee set up under the orders of the Commander-in-Chief, India, has been assigned a very general task of outlining the nature and size of the future Army in India. It is hoped that in due course a body may be formed to consider the new Indian Army in detail. This article discusses only one aspect of the future Army; that is, its future officers.

To quote General Moore: "The Indian Army of the past was made by its officers; the Indian Army of the future should be made by those serving now." Very necessary, too, that we should mould the Army to come. And the foundation of that "we," presuming the policy of Indianization is implemented fully, will be the Indian Officers. About five hundred of them have made the Army their permanent career, and quite a few hundred will join them at the end of this war. And these few will form the base on which the Army of the distant future will have to build itself.

Mechanization and the highly scientific state of warfare demand very high qualities from officers nowadays. Officers have not only to be physically strong and mentally alert, with a forceful commanding personality, but also well-seasoned in the scientific technicalities of their particular Arms of Service. Specialization applies as much to the Army now as to any other avocation in life, and this indicates that we should be more particular in making our choice of officers. To get them we must fathom every source whence full facilities to develop the necessary qualities in officers are provided.

Unquestionably the first and the principal source would be the officers themselves. Environment builds character. The son of an officer brought up in the atmosphere of barracks and military activity 12 psychologically inclined in that direction. Even as a tiny child he likes to wear uniform and his father's sword. He wants to ride; he wants to do what he sees. If that mind is guided and given suitable education, no better talent could be desired.

To obtain it for the Army, drastic changes are necessary. For example, what encouragement does the Army provide for the Indian Officer to get married? How many Indian parent officers can afford to give their sonsthe necessary education, which, obviously, is best provided in institutions like the Prince of Wales Royal Indian Military College and the Doon School, Dehra Dun? The reader may think the same old sore and much vexed question of the Indian Commissioned Officers' pay is being probed again. That is by no means the case. Our object must be to find means to guide and help the parent officer to direct his progeny into his own profession. We want to build up among Indian Commissioned Officers the Army tradition of generations of fathers and sons forming family links in regiments and units. In that way the two dominating qualities of an officer, personal pride and a deep sense of responsibility will

become more of an inheritance than an infusion in the short period of cadet training.

Here are some suggested methods which might achieve this:

First.—A concession in fees for the I. C. Os' children for education in the R. I. M. C. and the Doon School. Within the present range of his income, unless backed by private money, no I. C. O. up to the rank of Captain can afford to give suitable education to his children. Above that rank, none can afford to educate more than one child.

Second.—Military schools and colleges subsidized by the Government might be organised on the same basis as K. G. R. I. M. colleges are run for sons of V. C. O, and soldiers. Or reorganization of the Prince of Wales Royal Indian Military College, Dehra Dun on a less expensive basis for I. C. O's children would be a great help.

Third.—Grant of child allowances to I. C. Os, as are granted to officers of the British Army.

The second obvious source to draw upon the potential officers is the Prince of Wales R. I. M. C. It is difficult to understand why boys, after a thorough schooling in a military training college, should be asked to compete with civilian boys who have had none of the facilities provided to the R. I. M. C. cadets. Why should not the "weeding out" be carried out during their course at the college, and a competition held among the cadets themselves? Surely with our present system of education in India few institutions can excel the R. I. M. C.? The aim should be to accept the maximum number of candidates into the Indian Military Academy from the R. I. M. C.

The third source for the new officers would be the "open" cadet. In pre-war days 50% of the vacancies were filled through an open competition; the other 50% came from the Army. One significant complaint of the Interview Boards and the Board of Examiners was that the right material for the Army was in grave shortage. These reports were published time after time, and vain cries raised to invite the right youth. How one wishes that instead practical steps had been taken to overhaul our age-old system of education! Not only the Army, but every Government service would have benefited.

To improve military knowledge, the facilities of the University Training Corps might be extended to all universities. Also membership of the U. T. C. for two years could be made compulsory in all Government subsidized colleges. To catch the boys young, physical training should be made compulsory in all schools, and the training organized under the supervision of military staffs attached from local formations. This step alone would provide a tremendous gain in military knowledge.

Raising the entrance age might assist in attracting the right type of youth into the Army of the future. The age limit of "open" entrants has been restricted to between 18 and 20 years. Many a youth who had an empty boyish allurement for commissioned rank got drawn in. And 18 years being a tender age to decide one's avocation in life, quite a number proved a failure as soldiers, whereas some of them could have fitted in first-class civil appointments and been an asset in the government of the country.

The normal age for graduating from a college is 20 years. If the age of entrance were raised to between 20 and 22 years an average entrant would have reached a more decisive age than heretoforce. Consequently the more suitable, keen and adaptable-to-the-Army type of youth, who would find himself faced with other professions as well, would have the chance to choose Army as a career.

Presuming the University Training is established on a firmer and wider footing, he would also have had better opportunities of forming an idea of the Army before entering it.

The fourth and the last source of officers is the Army itself. In view of the high educational and intelligent background now required of an Army officer, no direct recruitment should be made from units. Suitable soldiers or "boys" should go through a two or more years' course in military and general education, on the conclusion of which they should compete to fill the quota of vacancies. Reorganization of the inter-service pre-cadet course at the Kitchener College, Nowgong, which fulfils our purpose for the time being, is suggested.

The ratio of vacancies to be allotted to Army cadets is a debatable point. Before the War, Army shared 50% of the total. In actual fact, there were two classes of Army cadets: "Y" cadets, and the other class who were normally recruited into the Army as sepoys until "found" by their Commanding Officers as being suitable for commissioned rank.

The "Y" cadets ranged from the inexperienced, extravagant student from an expensive college, to the well-seasoned, experienced adventurous youth who had already seen a lot of life. They mostly comprised those who could not find their way into the Army through open competition. They normally came of the high intelligence strata of India, and most of them worked their way into the Army through the influence of their parents. After roughing it for one to three years in the ranks they were eventually selected for training at the Indian Military Academy. Apparently quite a large majority of them have fared very well, and proved their worth in this war. What percentage of this system of entrance should be encouraged it is difficult to decide. But it is suggested that this avenue of entrance should be left open for those keen young men, who, owing to their bad luck or over-age cannot enter through the normal channels.

For the second class, the pure Army Cadet, who entered the Army with no intention of being commissioned, a lot has to be said. He was normally of humble parentage, a V. C. O. or a soldier, but he had sufficient intelligence to be outstanding compared to other sepoys. With no intention of being snobbish, or to cast any aspersions on the quality of the soldier-officer of India, the writer is inclined to agree with the psychologists, who maintain that children of parents enjoying superior social status are on the average more intelligent than those of parents forming the lower strata of society. Handicapped as these cadets had always been, they always seemed to find it difficult to get on. The writer knows a few well-decorated and brave junior leaders who, having had bitter experiences as officers, prefer to go back to the ranks, being confident that in due course they would rise to Subedar-Major, a rank which some of them prized more than that of a Major. In the writer's opinion, the intake of Army cadets, including the "Y" cadets, should be restricted to about a third of the total.

General Moore seems to have forgotten one factor when suggesting the abolition of V.C.O.s. At present the V.C.O. forms the backbone of the Indian Army; he is linked with its traditional foundation; he has become such a vital part of the Indian Army that it seems difficult to think of the Indian Army without him. Moreover, the normal sepoy feels the V.C.O. to be a part of his family. It will take a long long time to separate the two, and certainly is not advisable in the process of Indianization.

When the Indian Warrant Officer was created to replace the V. C. O., the ardour of other ranks dampened. A sepoy dreams of the respect and the "halo" of influence the V. C. O. has built round himself in the Army. He aspires to reach it one day. Higher commissioned rank is something out

of his mind's reach, and until the Army is fully Indianized, the writer feels that the V. C. O. should be maintained.

The V. C. O. in the new Army should be made to play a more important role. So far, pure and simple soldiering has been his masterpiece. In technical arms higher technical knowledge has found him beaten for lack of sufficient education and intelligent background. If the final replacement of the British Warrant Officers and senior British Non-Commissioned Officers in the very highly technical trades is to be aimed at, a proportion of the V. C. Os. must be recruited direct by an open competition from the educated class of youth to fill in these appointments. In the Technical Corps it would be a fair ratio to recruit 50% of the establishment of Jemadars by this method. These recruits should be given their basic training at the Kitchener College, Nowgong, along with the Army cadets preparing for entrance to the I. M. A.

To implement this, the scope of the course at the Kitchener College must be extended. Besides the extension of the course to, say, two years to cover additional subjects, instruction in Higher Mathematics and Higher Science must be made compulsory for the potential technical V. C. Os. The final selection might be made in order of merit as a result of an examination and an interview Board. They should then be drafted to the technical units—i.e., Rugineers, Signals, I. E. M. E. and other services: Navy and Air Force—in the order of their selection for services and arms, dependent on the vacancies available. Better terms than those offered in the equivalent civil services would, however, have to be promised to attract suitable candidates.

The retention of the V. C. Os. in the Indian Army does not imply that a young officer should start higher than a platoon command. He must get his basic training and learn man-management in a platoon. But at the same time he should not remain condemned to that limited sphere of responsibility for a number of years. His period of platoon command should end with his promotion to a full Lieutenant, and after passing the prescribed examinations for his confirmation in the service.

The writer belongs to a Corps. Before the present war he was given an independent command of a sub-unit at a very young age. He found that his position was envied by many senior officers in the station who had grown grey in the Army. They all seemed to remark the same way: "You fellows are very lucky in a Corps. We in the Infantry never smell any responsibility until we have put in more than 17 years' service. By that time we become so blunt that most of us get condemned for further promotion."

There is a lot in that. The peacetime army helped one to drink and live an expensive way, but afforded very little opportunity, particularly with the Infantry officer, to exercise initiative and practical ability in a responsible capacity. Some managed to keep their ends up, survived the "dead" period, and sourced high. An officer's "initiative" and "power of command" for writing his annual report were judged either on the "square" or on a sham exercise.

These methods may be all right for practices and early stages of training but certainly have no lasting value in the gradual development of the mind. Yet the same young man in the civil service either governs or is the chief of Police of a district, appointments far more responsible in peace time, and demanding first-class initiative and executive ability. Why has the Indian Army attached high rank to age, rather than to the energetic portion of one's life when one is 100% more alert and active?

feh

impo i teck

ie Bo

the e

. eus eta t

加

300

惧

ЖE

The present war has proved the value of younger age in high ranks, more so in foreign armies than in the British or the Indian Army. Admittedly ten to fifteen years' service is sufficient experience to command a battalion or an equivalent unit in war. During operations, of course, the dormant faculties of an officer have better opportunities of developing and showing up than in peace, which adds weight to the argument that an officer should be led earlier up the ladder of rank in order to develop gradually his sense of responsibility, to give him something more to think about before his brain has reached a stage of stagnation.

To give the younger element a better chance to exercise authority and a wider outlook on life, compulsory retirement should be fixed at 55 years of age if not earlier.

Promotion on a time-scale and compulsory retirement at a fixed age is suggested hereunder:

Rank		Service (in years)	Age	Remarks
2/Lieutenant	••	•	23	Enter I. M. A. at age $20\frac{1}{2}$ years.
Lieutenant		${f 2}$	25	2 0
Captain		5	28	
Major		10	33	
LieutColonel LieutColonel in	••	15—18	38-41	By selection.
command	••	••	41—45	Tenure of command 3 to 4 years.
Colonel and Brigadier	••,	••	50	Compulsory retirement.
Higher ranks	••	••	55	Compulsory retirement.

All Majors considered unsuitable for further promotion after 18 years' service should be posted to a "Specially Employed List." These Majors should fill all administrative appointments, such as S. S. Os., Camp Commandants, Registrars, etc. On reaching the age of fifty they would be automatically pensioned. When no further vacancies can be found for them an "Unemployed Roster" would have to be made, or special terms for pension devised.

It is also to be expected that a certain number of Lieutenant-Colonels will become surplus on completion of commands. Their services could be best utilized in command of U. T. C. battalions and other appointments of a national character, such as Inspectors of Physical Training of provinces.

In conclusion the writer is tempted to quote Major-General Moore again: "Indian officers must be given opportunities to prove themselves both as commanders and as staff officers, and every endeavour must be made to teach them, bearing in mind the important roles they will have to play in the future Indian Army." Many senior officers are conscious of the above facts, but it is of no use ignoring the fact that lip service to this ideal is not sufficient. Many feel that more could be done in practice.

After all, wars are not fought every day. This is an ideal opportunity for the young Indian to learn. A young Indian looks for encouragement, impartial treatment and a guiding hand. A critical attitude, if changed to helpful guidance could achieve a lot for the Indian youth in this war. Distant hopes held out to him are of no use if his present ability is not put to the test.

# THE FAMOUS INDIAN MASS ESCAPE FROM EPINAL

As RELATED TO CAPTAIN A. DEWAN."

THE MOST exciting day in our lives was on May 11, 1944, for on the afternoon of that day some Allied bombers came over our camp at Epinal and demolished a part of the barbed wire fence surrounding the prison

Most of us had been captured in the Western Desert in June, 1942. We had spent our time in several prison camps in North Africa, Italy, Austria and Germany, and finally we were taken to a newly-constructed prison in Epimh in France. It was creeted specially for Indian prisoners, of whom there were about 4,000.

Apart from the German guards, it was run under the joint management of a British Captain and an Indian Lieutenant, both of the LMS. We were separated by castes and lived in the stone-built barracks; prisoners of each unit had a room or rooms to themselves. Many were Mahratta, and on Sivaji Day in April, 1944 we celebrated the festival and invited all the other prisoners to come along. At the end of the day we organised a fund, raised 7,000 francs, called it the Sivaji Fund, and used it to help the sick and needy prisoners.

Our sentries were Frenchmen, who were posted under German X.C.Os at every twenty yards round the perimeter. They were all round the barbed wire fence. There were no slit trenches, and in the event of an air raid warming being sounded the orders were that we were to be locked in the barracks.

Then on May 11, 1944 came the great day. At about 3 p.m. some Allied planes came over unexpectedly. There were from fifty to seventy-five of them and in less than half an hour they dropped nearly fifty bombs. Many of the prisoners were loitering in the open at the time of the attack, and we owe it to that there were not more casualties.

The first lot of bombs that came down did what we hoped they would do—part of the barbed wire fence was destroyed. Unfortunately, half a dozen bombs hit one of the barracks. There was complete chaos. The air raid alarm was sounding, but all the prisoners ran through the gap in the wire to the neighbouring ravines and forest. After about an hour the Germans came and rounded us up. We found some of our friends had been killed when the bombs hit the barracks, but it was lucky more were not in it at the time.

The German Commandant strangely enough ordered us to carry as much food, clothing and necessaries as we could, and go out into the country outside the camp not more than five or six miles away, as he understood more air raids were likely. But no raids did come—excepting that an hour afterwards another 'plane appeared. The alarm was sounded and we bolted, but no bombs were dropped. It had evidently come over to see the result of the bombing.

The men whose experiences are here related all belong to the 5th Mahratta Light Infantry. They include: Hav. Clerk Ganpatrao Tawada, Hav. Tatasaheb Sawant, Hav. Ragunath Patil, Naik Barburao Ghorpaela, Naik Mahadeo Kadam. Hav. Subedar Sawant, Naik Tukaram Shelke, L'Naik Shiddu Shinde, Sepoy Deorao

Dhamane, and C.H.M. Shirpat Gaikwad.

<sup>\*</sup>One of the most dramatic mass escapes of prisoners of war out of Germany occurred at Epinal in France, when hundreds of Indian prisoners succeeded in getting away and reaching Swiss territory. They arrived back in India a little while ago, and this account of their experiences was related to and translated by Captain Dewan, of the 5th Mahratta Light Infantry.

On the night of May 11-12 about 500 of us spent the night in a ravine, surrounded by about half a dozen German sentries. As dawn broke we were ordered to disperse more—and to many of us it was too good to be true for we saw the chance of escape. Within less than an hour the number who were getting off as fast as they could in the direction of Switzerland increased.

Without map or compass, and with only a rough idea of the direction of the frontier, we made off. German motor cycle patrols came along the roads, but few were recaptured. French farmers gave us food, help, and a chance of rest. Bread and eggs we were very glad to have for we had no food with us. One old French lady stopped us, and without any explanation from us, said we were escaped prisoners and she was very pleased; she gave us some excellent bread and cheese and advised us not to follow the main road as it was patrolled by the Germans, but to take the power line as a guide.

This was good advice, because a little later we heard the noise of some motor vehicles, and like lightning we took cover on either side of the road, lay flat on our stomachs and saw two German armoured cars go by. We decided to avoid roads and went deep into the forest. The going was very slow, and at about 4 o'clock in the afternoon we were stopped by an old French farmer, who was an ex-soldier of the last War. He told us to wait, went back to his home, and two hours later returned with his son and daughter, bringing eggs, bread, butter, cheese, two bottles of wine, three bottles of beer, a French-English dictionary, a cheap compass and a map. Later the same night another young son of a farmer provided us with a good map, and even marked on it the route and the areas infested with the Germans.

TE.

One party met a French farmer, who told them to get well into the forest, and led them for a couple of miles to show them long strips of khaki coloured paper about 1 foot long and two inches wide. These strips had been dropped by Allied aircraft and had been placed in the forest at about 200 yard intervals to show the safest and shortest route to Switzerland.

We went on and arrived at a place called Lure, where there was a large airfield, and soon after starting onwards the next morning we met an old woman and a young girl, who told us to follow them as Germans were ahead. They took us on a narrow track leading to a thickly wooded mountain, and left us. At 6 o'clock that night we came to a road and rail crossing, where a gatekeeper was on duty. This gatekeeper detailed another man to guide us; he did so, and left us at the foot of a hill, telling us to climb it and look for the house of a schoolmaster, who would direct us further.

By the time we got to the top we were dead tired and sat down to rest; it was nearly midnight, but just then a horse cart appeared, and we asked the driver for help. He made us put all our kit in the cart, made the most tired of us climb inside, and took us to the schoolmaster's house, where we found about thirty other Indian prisoners.

The next morning, on May 18, the schoolmaster and five other Frenchmen led all 34 of us past Belfort to a very thick forest, where extensive defence works of the last War were still to be seen. There we found 80 more escaped Indian prisoners. Next day the schoolmaster and his five friends led the 114 of us to another place, and we spent the day and the next night hiding in trees and bushes. These brave men took us to within seven miles of the Swiss border.

One Mahratta soldier was not so fortunate. After the air raid and the demolition of the wire fence round the camp at Epinal he and some friends got away, but after about twenty miles the party was recaptured and taken to a fort

Digitized by GOOGLO

to join about a thousand other Indians who had got away. They were kept in German hands and brought back to Epinal, where they heard of the news of Allied landings in France and also rumours that the Germans were to take them back to Germany. Those two pieces of news made this Mahratta soldier more determined to escape.

He found a large, disused water drain which led out of the camp, but there were thin iron bars at the entrance. Taking a few more into his confidence they acquired a few tools and in thirteen days cut the bars. Then it was decided to let the others know the way of escape—and over 700 of them wanted to make the attempt. All wanted to be the first, and, of course, the plans broke down.

This young Mahratta, however, decided that he would escape alone, and on July 15 he slipped out unobserved and walked as fast as he could. He came to a farm, was directed to follow the Power line, and for four days lived on berries and food given him by farmers. Only on one occasion was money demanded. He had been walking for eight days, and had climbed a thickly wooded mountain when he came across a house and an old woman standing outside. He begged for food, which was refused, but on showing her ten france she gave him a loaf of bread and some cheese. This acceptance of money made him suspicious, but she seemed to be friendly and showed him the route.

A little way further on he saw two Gurkhas with some civilians, and getting nearer he identified them and was soon embracing them. They told him there were fifty other prisoners hiding in the mountain, including two Mahrattas. They also explained why the woman had accepted money for food. She was feeding all fifty of them, and they had insisted on paying her in cash. Next day the lone Mahratta escapee found his two Mahratta friends, but they and the whole party had decided to wait there until the Allied forces reached them. This lone Mahratta then decided to continue the journey alone and eventually reached the Swiss frontier safely.

The generosity of the French people was remarkable. They hid the Indians in cellars and all sorts of places to keep them from being recaptured. One man related how on May 30 he met a French Sergeant major named Maurice, who made himself responsible for a party of five Indians. He said he was a member of the Maquis, and had already helped S00 Allied prisoners to cross the Swiss border.

He took the Indians to his dug-out in the hills and showed them his cave, in which were a large collection of Mk II Sten guns and other automatic weapons which had been dropped in France by Allied aircraft. He made the Indians discard their battle dress and provided them with civilian garments, and after giving them a good meal, armed himself and led them on to another member of his force.

The next day the party was given three guides—two Frenchmen and one Pole, all armed with Sten guns and pistols. The whole party marched that day and the night of May 30/June 1, and at 0530 hours on the latter morning they reached the Doubs river, the boundary between France and Switzerland. There the three guides left the Indians, showed them the crossing, saw them across safely—and disappeared back into France to continue their good work.

Another party had an exciting time when only a few miles from the border. They had been badly split up; one group ran into a German post and

was fired at; the dogs were let loose, and the men hid in the crops. They had four horrible hours lying on the ground and fearing recapture at any moment. Luckily, all went well and they continued to walk on. After an hour or so they stopped to brew some tea. A farmer came up and advised them to go another 1,000 yards, as, he said, that was Swiss soil. The party ran on and crossed the border safely—but two minutes later a German motor cycle patrol appeared, just too late to do any harm!

# Mar. An American on Mr. Churchill

ider it s

100

hic

尬

Mr. Wellesley Atkinson of 2142½, State Street, San Diego 1, California has written to "The Times.":

"Recently I listened to an American criticizing Mr. Churchill on the radio. He disagreed with certain of Mr. Churchill's policies in regard to some of the liberated countries and took occasion to give the Prime Minister a verbal shellacking.

"Now, this sort of tongue-lashing is an old American custom. I understand the same freedom prevails in Britain, and Mr. Churchill catches it every now and then in the House of Commons. Yet he gets his vote of confidence just as regularly. So did our Mr. Roosevelt.

"Unfortunately, however, you people in Britain, having only our radio broadcasts and our magazines and newspapers by which to judge American opinion, do not get the true picture. Particularly, I am sure you are not aware of just what we think of Mr. Churchill.

"In the late summer of 1940 I was mining gold in a remote section of northern California. Each noon we left off work in the river bottom and walked up to our cabin on the hillside above for lunch and to listen to the news. It got so we took a long time to get up to the cabin. We did not want to hear the news. It was always the same, the same inexorable voice pounding out the same story. It was like the tramp of the feet that were marching over Europe and the world. The sun was shining down through the silence of the forest around us and the air was warm and clear, but we knew our freedom was no longer secure. It hung by a slender thread—20 miles of ocean, a handful of Spitfires, a few ships and guns.

"Then we heard that voice throwing back defiance into the teeth of the enemy, rallying a nation and the world. There was anger in that voice, and measured fury, but no despair. It was the calm voice of a courageous leader pleading for unity. He would get it. We opened our cabin door and let that voice ring out into the stillness. Let the neighbours hear it; let the world hear it. We did not care much about going back to work. It seemed like Sunday, and that we had been to church.

"That, Mr. Editor, is what we really think of Winston Churchill."

## THINGS PEOPLE SAY

- "Freedom is liberty to do what we ought."—Rev. Harold Hazell, D. S. O.
- "It is not easy to argue with pessimists."-Mr. Brendan Bracken, M.P.
- "Great moral courage is one of the rarest qualities among men."-Lod Moran.
- "British oilfields have produced 78,000,000 gallons of oil during the war."—Mr. E. R. Yarham.
- "The finest war memorial in England is All Saints College, Oxford."-The Bishop of Chichester.
- "The R. A. F. have dropped nearly 1,200,000 tons of bombs during the war."—R. A. F. statement.
- "If war tried our courage and endurance, peace will test our wisdom and faith,"--" Manchester Guardian,"
- "Personal savings in Britain during the past five years have totalled £5,524 millions." -Mr. W. Manning Duccy.
- "A British Commonwealth Air Training Plan should become a permanent part of Empire defence."—" Daily Mail."
- "The last siren of the war was sounded at Aberdeen and Montrose on the afternoon of April 30, 1945."—Official statement.
- "Admiral Chester Nimitz was promoted over 28 senior admirals to take command after Pearl Harbour."—" Daily Mail."
- "Of the victorious nations, the British Commonwealth alone has fought continuously since the war began."—"The Observer."
- "During the war 11,000 Atlantic flights have started or ended on Prestwick (Scotland) airfield."—Sir Thomas Moore, M.P.
- "Seven years of common danger, strain, work, restrictions, have created a hard core of realism in Britain."—Mr. C. A. LeJeune.
- "If the besetting vice of dictatorship is tyranny, the besetting vice of democracy can be slackness."—Mr. Herbert Morrison, M. P.
- "Between 5,000,000 and 6,000,000 European Jews were exterminated by the Germans in and out of Poland."—Dr. Emanuel Scherer.
- "Twice as many heavy A.A. guns as were used to defend Berlin are in action around Greater Tokyo."—Colin Bednall, "Daily Mail."
- "Every port in southern England before D-Day was a bomb aimer's paradise. Yet not a bomb fell."—Sir Archibald Sinclair, M. P.
- "Admiral Lord Louis Mountbatten has flown 100,000 miles since his appointment as Supreme Allied Commander."—S.E.A.C. statement.
- "It was estimated at the time of the Libyan campaign that seven 10,000 ton ships were needed to carry one division."—The Prime Minister.
- "On the day we invaded Normandy we had 5,000,000 men and women in Britain working on munitions of war."—Mr. Oliver Lyttelton, M. P.
- "Next to the four Big Powers, India has supplied mest manpower to the United Nations' cause."—Sir Ramaswami Middiliar, speaking in San Francisco.

- "There is a marked desire in the Chinese Press and among politicians for warmer relations with Great Britain."—Mr. O. M. Green, in the "Observer."
- "About 7,000 new-type flying bombs a day would have hit London if the Allied armies had not liberated the Calais area so quickly."—Figaro, Paris.
- "On one single night before D-Day the French resistance movement cut , li railways in France in over 1,000 places and blew up hundreds of bridges."—Paris Radio.
  - "General Slim is a soldier's General; he always thinks of the men's welfare."—Lieutenant-Colonel Knightsdale, broadcasting from London on the Arakan.
  - "Sixty years ago the world's annual output of aluminium was less than 40 tons; to-day it is between 3,000,000 and 4,000,000 tons."—Mr. W. J. Passingham.

, TE

100

- "Before the war the value of Great Britain's agricultural output was about £290,000,000 per annum. Now it is about £600,000,000."—Mr. Tom Williams, M. P.
- "The German bullion found in the caves of a 2,000 ft. salt mine near Gotha is more than £50,000,000. Thirty 10-ton lorries were needed to carry it."

  —"Daily Herald."
- "One-third of the supplies and equipment used by American invading troops on D-Day was manufactured by Great Britain".—Brigadier-General Wayne Allen, U.S. Army.
- "The Presidents of the United States who were elected or re-elected in 1840, 1860, 1880, 1900, 1920 and 1940 all died in office."—"Peterborough," in the "Daily Telegraph".
- "Ninety-six volunteer medical students from big London hospitals brought the death rate at the Belsen concentration camp down by 50% within ten days."—

  London official statement.
- "At least £25,000,000 has been added to the cost of the war by the difference in British and American standards of screw threads."—Mr. William L. Batt, American Production Board.
- "During the year ended March 31, 1944 nearly £307,500,000 was paid over Post Office counters in Britain in war pensions, Service and billeting allowances."—G. P. O. announcement.
- "It is an astounding fact that during this War there has been an almost universal rise in the birth rate in Western countries, whereas in World War No. 1 there was a fall."—Mr. E. F. Schumacher.
- "The German has always thought tenderly of his stomach. He should now be entering on a prolonged period of enforced slimming as his contribution to the world's food supplies."—Mr. M. L. Prescott.
- "Never in the history of war has the entire fighting strength of a great military State been more decisively ground into fragments and overwhelmed in the uttermost catastrophe of defeat."—" The Times."
- "I have never called upon an Indian formation to carry out a job which has not been achieved willingly and efficiently in the shortest possible time." Lieutenant-General Sir Oliver Leese, Commanding A.L.F.S.E.A.
- "So far as is known, the Germans started this war without mine detectors. We certainly had none. Of mines they had a large stock, and had developed the land mine further than we had."—Brigadier E. K. Young.

- "The Royal Canadian Navy is one of the great wonders of the war. It has grown in the space of  $5\frac{1}{2}$  years from one of the smallest navies in the world to one of the largest."—Bryan Tunstall, broadcasting from London.
- "The reason we do not often catch the point of American humour is that it is designed to render the fantastic real, whereas our own humour is designed to render the real fantastic."—Mr. Harold Nicolson, M.P.
- "There was no wood for more coffins in Amsterdam. Coffins in Zuider Kirk had trap door mechanisms, so that the dead could be dropped out of them into the graves and the coffins used again."—B. B. C. Correspondent.
- "It is a national concern that the war-time goodwill which in so many suffering countries has placed the letters 'B. B. C.' on a level even with those of the 'R.A.F.' should be preserved and enhanced."—"The Times."
- "During their joint times in war, the QUEEN MARY and the QUEEN ELIZABETH have steamed a total of 960,000 sea miles, and have carried together 1,250,000 passengers, or equivalent to a hundred divisions."—B. B. C.
- "Orders for the manufacture of 'Piat' guns were given in April, 1942; in the following November the First Army took its 'Piats' to North Africa; a year later 100,000 of them had been supplied to the Forces."—"The Times."
- "Anti-aircraft gunnery, like the rocket, is in its infancy. Quick-firing heavy artillery is a definite possibility in the near future. I believe that gunlaying during actual firing is possible by electrical control."—Professor A. M. Low.
- "A Canadian airman flew from Canada to England with 25 lb. of high explosive inside his flying suit for fear that low temperatures might detonate it if it were left in the bomb-bay."—Dr. Cyril James, Principal of McGill University.
- "What Mr. Churchill has offered India is a good deal more than our President offers Puerto Rico in the Bill he recently commended to Congress. We Americans must not be self-righteous about Empire."—Miss Pearl Buck, the American novelist.
- "G.Is and officers liberated from prison camps in Germany are to be posted to operate prison camps in New York, New Jersey and Delaware. They are considered to be eminently qualified for these duties."—Major-General Thomas A. Terry, U. S. Second Service Command.
- "Some 4,500 Germans at the Carl Zeiss optical instrument works and another 2,000 at the Schott glass works in Germany are working under American Army ordnance officers in the manufacture of bombing sights, rangefinders, binoculars, etc.."—Bureau of Public Information.
- "Because it is my 'pigeon', I would like to appeal for solo turn stars to go to India and Burma to do ward shows in hospitals. It takes four or five days to cover a big base hospital with two or three shows daily."—Miss Joyce Grenfell, Ensa artist, who recently visited India and Burma.
- "The new 58-ton Shetland flying boat, Britain's largest 'plane, has a wing span of 150 feet and is 110 feet long; it has a top speed of 267 m.p.h. and cruises at 184 m. p. h. with a payload of 3.4 tons for 4,650 miles, the distance between London and Bombay."—"Daily Telegraph" air correspondent.
- "The Kaiser, Hindenburg, Ludendorff, and von Tirpitz all died peacefully in their beds. If the present German murderers and torturers escape the penalties they so richly deserve, a lasting bitterness will remain with the millions of people who have suffered at their hands."—"Daily Mail."

"On a wall in the furnace room in Dachau concentration camp was a notice in German: 'Cleanliness is a duty here. Don't forget to wipe your hands'. Beside the furnaces was an extraordinary mural painting of two headless S. S. officers astride bloated pigs."—Mr. Young Wilson, B. B. C. Correspondent.

"Seven hundred times since the beginning of this year lone R.A.F. Liberators of the Eastern Air Command's Strategic Air Force have taken off for enemy territory carrying secret agents and their equipment for delivery at pin-point targets far behind the Japanese lines."—Wing Commander L.V. Fraser.

"The effrontery of the average German is unbelievable. Just after Gotha fell a German aircraft manufacturer there inquired how soon the Americans wanted him to start making accessories for their aircraft, and offered to convert his plan within three days."—Cornelius Ryan, "Daily Telegraph" war correspondent.

"In ten years Australia should be a matter of three days' travel, New York an overnight trip of five or six hours, and most capitals in Europe less than a two-hour journey from London. World operators will need aeroplanes carrying 50 to 100 people at about 500 m. p. h."—Mr. R. H. Dobson, Messrs. A. V. Roe & Co., Ltd.

"Early in 1943 the Japanese guards in Burma told Australian prisoners that the Japanese had occupied Sydney, had taken Adelaide with a bayonet charge, and were mopping up other parts of Australia. They said preparations were being made for the invasion of the United States."—Mr. W. Forde, former acting Prime Minister of Australia.

"Of 739 loaded cargo ships in supply convoys to Russia by the Arctic route, 677 arrived, losses being 8%. The Royal Navy lost 95 officers, 1,561 men, two cruisers, five destroyers, eight escort ships and an oil tanker. Many hundreds of British and Allied Merchant Navy men died. Seven British destroyers and an escort carrier were damaged."—First Lord of the Admiralty.

"Whereas in 1914—18 surgeons were able to save a proportion of men who had suffered moderate blood loss by means of a single pint, or at most, two pints of blood which they could collect on the spot, we in this war can give a good chance of life to men who have suffered huge losses of blood, even as much as six, seven, eight or more pints."—Brigadier Sir Lionel Whitby.

"People of three world religions meet in Arakan—Christian, Hindu, and Muslim. There is a fourth, a purely local religion in which for a hundred years the inhabitants have worshipped the memory of an Englishman—Captain Cox, of the Madras Army. He afterwards founded Cox's Bazaar, where even to-day there is a shrine in his honour."—Lieutenant-Colonel Knightsdale, broadcasting from London.

"The punishment must fit the German crime. The crime was insolent and arrogant nationalism. The punishment must be poetically just: internationalism, statelessness, a pacific setting in the heart of Europe to the jewel of collective security. The Germans must expiate their crimes in service to an international order which it has been their 30-year objective to frustrate."—Viscount Hinchingbrooke, M.P., in "The Observer."

"Japanese explosive balloons are sent across the Pacific in a continual west-to-east air current from five to seven miles over the earth. The balloons lift a five-layer bag, 35 feet across, and travel at 130 m.p.h. As they begin to lose hydrogen and drop below the five-mile level the ballast and the bombs are automatically released, and the balloons rise again. Ballast and bombs can be dribbled out several times."—Donald Catling, "Daily Express".

"While honours in the Burma campaign are so richly deserved by all, by the incomparable Air Force that solved every difficulty of transport and supply, by the ground troops driving on even in the monsoon, special praise must surely be given to the strategy of General Slim, disposing and moving his troops so as continually to round up and destroy the enemy with a precision which ranks him among the first Generals of the war."—The London "Observer," in an editorial.

"Japan is the one belligerent among the Big Powers whose manpower has not yet been absorbed into a mass army. Though the population of Japan proper, with Korea, Manchuria and Formosa, exceeds 150,000,000, Japan has hitherto mobilised less than half the number of divisions that Germany put into the field with her smaller manpower supply. At the moment, Japan probably has not more than 4,000,000 men in her armed forces."—Military correspondent, "The Observer."

"Twice only in recorded history has a tyrant in possession of the bulk of Western, Central and Northern Europe regarded himself as secure and defied all attack from West or East. The position of Napoleon in 1812 and of his miserable imitator of 1942 have great similarity. Each failed, not only from the arrogance of his ambition and the unexpected toughness of the enemies whom he despised, but from an obvious fault in his strategical conception of war at large."—Sir C. Oman, in the "Army Quarterly."

"There is a mistaken notion about the relation of religion to morale. A man's adherence to religious principles should encourage him to avoid infractions of law and to soldier well for a just cause. But it cannot force him to do this—nor does it intend to. Religion encourages the development of virtue and character—it does not force it. No officer can convince his men that there is need for God and virtue who does not cry out that need by his own example."—Chaplain H. P. O'Hara, in the "Infantry Journal" of America.

Will members kindly note that articles and other communications for the Editor of the Journal of the U.S.I. of India should be addressed to Lieutenant-Colonel H. C. Druett, Editor, "U.S.I. Journal", clo Edn. 3, G.H.Q., A.P.O., Delhi. Communications concerning subscriptions and requests for books from the Library should be sent as in the past to the headquarters of the Institution in Simla.

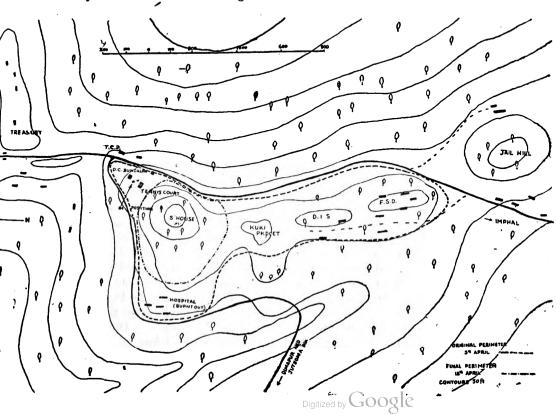
## THE GUNNERS AT KOHIMA

By X. Y. Z.

LITTLE public recognition of the part played by the Gunners in the defence of Kohima has been made and though this story does not attempt to give a full account of the action, it is an endeavour to put the Gunners "on the map." The period described is the first part of the action—the period up to the time the original defenders were relieved, by which time the operation had swollen from a brigade to a divisional affair.

The action took place at a part which is about 5,000 feet above sea level. The hills and valleys around Kohima are built on a grand scale; steep slopes are everywhere. Hillsides were mostly thickly wooded, though occasionally there are open spaces and terraces of paddy fields. The climate was pleasantly cool; the monsoon had not broken, but the few showers had been very welcome as the garrison was at all times very short of water.

Kohima is astride the main Imphal—Dimapur road and about 45 miles from Dimapur and 120 miles from Imphal. A jeep track runs east to Jessami, whence a hill track led on to the Chindwin. A second and indifferent road ran back towards the Assam plain some way north of the main road to Dimapur. Kohima was therefore a road junction of importance which, combined with the commanding hills across and on both sides of the road, made it of vital importance to both sides. Most of the hospitals, depots and base installations had been evacuated, but there were still large quantities of food and ammunition in the F. S. D., including some champagne and burgundy and rum and beer, though unfortunately the F. S. D. was set alight before these were issued.



Early in March it became obvious that the Jap was advancing in sees strength towards Kohima in the north and Imphal in the south. Accordingly, the Division was withdrawn from Arakan, and two of its Brigades, with the supporting artillery, were flown into Imphal, while one Brigade and the Division! Mountain Regiment were flown into Dimapur and lorried up to Kohima. Its battalions were the Royal West Kents, 1 Punjabs and 7 Rajputs. The Mountain Regiment was the 24 Indian Mountain. Lieutenant-Colonel R. H. M. Hars batteries were the 2, 11, 12 and 20 Mountain batteries.

By the end of March the enemy was within 20 miles of Kohima, both of the Jessami and Imphal roads, the latter place being cut off by road from Dimays and Kohima. Fears for the safety of Dimapur, entirely denuded of fighing troops led to the withdrawal of . . . Brigade troop to that place, leaving Kohima to be defended by various units. Some were L. of C. formations, other had incurred casualties while withdrawing from Jessami. There was 12 artillery in the garrison, which was commanded by Colonel Richards.

Two or three days after the withdrawal of . . . Brigade Green the Japanese reached Kohima and began to press the garrison there. They were stronger than expected, and it was obvious that if the position was to be held it must be reinforced. A Brigade Group was ordered to do this. On April 5 the Royal West Kents, with the firing battery of 20 Mountain, all in MI. left Dimapur for Kohima with orders to put themselves under the command of Colonel Richards. Later in the day the Brigadier, with the Rajputs and R.H. and 2 Mountain Battery also left Dimapur.

On the arrival of the advance guard and its battery in the evening the found Kohima being shelled. Their arrival, however, put great heart into the garrison, which was feeling somewhat isolated. The same evening the Rajputs and 2 Mountain battery arrived at a point about 4,000 yards behind the Kohima garrison, where they were later joined by 11 Mountain Battery and the Punjabis. There were thus two positions covering the main road to Dimapur, the forward one at Kohima and the rear one, eventually known as the Jotsoma Box position. On April 6 a company of the Rajputs reached Kohima with an F.O.O. part from 2 Battery. After that there was no communication, except by wireless with the Kohima position, as the Jaßs swept round it and cut the road. Two or three days later they also cut the road behind the Jotsoma position.

There were thus these two barriers barring the Jap advance on Dimapur, and by the time these barriers had been bypassed the strength of the Japanes advance was very considerably diminished. The brunt of the action was borne by the most advanced position, and it is the fortunes of this isolated garrisen that we propose to follow.

An aerial view of the ridge would look like the outline of a hunting saddle when it is on its saddle rack. The pommel is to the left, and the cantle to the right. From pommel to cantle is 1,000 yards, and the depth through the flap 500 yards. On all sides, except at the ends, the ground falls steeply away, but from these two ends ridges run off to the right and left, which ridges later rise in to high hills 2,000 yards off, which overlook the position from both sides. On the pommel is the D. C.'s bungalow; in the cantle area are the D. I. S. and F. S. D. The road from Imphal ran along the seat of the saddle from right to left, carved round the pommel and away to the rear to Jotsoma and Dimapur. It formed a natural defence line for over half the perimeter; being on the side of a steep hill, it had a cutting on the garrison side, varying 10 to 50 feet high. There were, however, two obvious lines of approach along the two ridges at either end and it was from these two ends that the pressure—came.

To return to Kohima. While the Royal West Kents took up their positions, the battery came into action in the D. C.'s kitchen garden. Guns were carried there from the lorries as transport could not get off the road. These activities, however, drew the fire of some Jap guns, which could clearly be seen on some hills to the right. They were engaged and temporarily silenced. The battery position was, however, not a good one, and subsequent events proved that it would have been better to leave the guns right behind in, say, the Jotsoma position area.

On April 6 Japanese shelling increased; they also started mortaring the battery position, and several casualties occurred. A welcome reinforcement, however, was 2 Battery O.P., which was able to help with fire from the Jotsoma position. By next day 20 Battery was hopelessly outgunned and it was decided to stop it firing altogether, for firstly 2 Battery was available, and secondly the return fire which 20 Battery drew was doing a great 'deal more damage in the crowded area than the battery was capable of inflicting on the enemy. After this the Kohima gunners were used as infantry. O. P.s continued to observe for the guns outside, however.

Let us continue with the story of the guns. On the night of 7/8 the Right section was withdrawn to the top of Summerhouse Hill, while the Left remained in the D. C's. bungalow area. On the night of 8/9 the Japanese put down a heavy concentration on the D. C's bungalow area and, under cover of darkness, having driven off our troops in that sector, they got right into the position and captured the bungalow, only 10 yards from the nearest gun-pit. The guns, however, were then in pieces and scattered about in slit trenches. During the day the detachments defended themselves fiercely, but they were pinned to the ground and movement was difficult. Being on a forward slope did not help matters. Two counter-attacks by our infantry were repulsed, the bungalow proving a hard nut to crack. An attempt to set it alight by Molotov cocktails which some sappers manufactured also failed.

Accordingly, when it was clear that the position was not likely to be restored, detachments were withdrawn to the top of the hill. Essential parts of the guns were also got away, but under heavy fire, and a further withdrawal had to be made that night. The D. C.'s bungalow area was not again in our hands until the end of May, but it is interesting to note that the Japs made no effort to remove any of the captured guns, though they did use parts of them for strengthening their bunkers. We recovered nearly all the parts, and sent them off for third-line repairs. The battery also lost many stores, treasure chest and officers' mess equipment while most of the officers also lost all their possessions.

From now on the battery detachments were organised as infantry; they did not hold any important part of the perimeter again until April 15, when withdrawal from the D. I. S. area left them again in the front line. Next day a gun from the Right section was brought into action on Summerhouse Hill, and opened up with H. E. at about 100 yards range on to Jap bunkers. This was in support of an infantry attack on Kuki Picquet, which was between Summerhouse Hill and D. I. S. The attack was, however, unsuccessful, though the bunker was blown in.

O. P.s were busy throughout the siege. Four were found to be necessary for an adequate all-round watch, though these were eventually reduced at night to two.

Early in the action Japs and mules were often seen along the Jessami or Imphal roads, but they never presented a really good target, as they were always widely spaced. As soon as they heard a shell coming they would take cover.

The only thing was to shell their probable forming-up areas on the reverse slopes. To begin with, Jap guns appeared right in the open in single positions; the gun itself was always concealed, but smoke and flash could be seen. Several were successfully engaged and silenced.

About 2,000 yards to the left or N. of the position was the Naga village, covering the top of a hill which overlooked our left flank and provided excellent cover in its houses and narrow lanes. It was fired by 3.7 smoke, the resulting blaze being quite impressive, though one felt sorry for the unfortunate inhabitants. There was also a spectacular fire within the perimeter, when early on in the action the Japs set alight the bashas in which the F. S. D. and D. S. I. were. In addition to the valuable hospital comforts mentioned, there were large quantities of 25-pdr., 3.7 and S.A.A. there. The gunners had rescued most of the 3.7 before the fire started, but the 25-pdr. and S.A.A. enlivened the whole of one afternoon by their explosions. It appeared to the Jotsoma Box that their Kohima partners were being subjected to a prolonged bombardment, but a W. T. message soon reassured them.

O. P.'s most vital function was to call for D. F. fire to help repel the nightly attacks, which sometimes numbered three or four. These attacks came along the two ridges which led into the position from right and left. They were thus at right angles to the line of fire from the Jotsoma Box—a very fortunate circumstance. The closer the D. F. could be put down the better for us, and it was generally 100 yards out, sometimes as close as 50 yards. Not once in the whole action did a shell land inside our perimeter, despite frequent switches and alterations of range at night. O. P.s were kept with the companies at each end to begin with, but company commanders themselves were soon able to order any D. F. they wanted and adjust it. They spoke either by line or W. T. to the Royal West Kent H. Q., next to which was the main O. P. with W. T. to the Jotsoma position.

Jap attacks were generally, but not always, preceded by a mortar concentration, backed by a few shells from their Mountain 75 and infantry guns. They were usually very noisy when forming up to attack, shouting and talking, which gave our men an easy signal to ask for D. F. from both guns and infantry mortars. Attacks would be put in any time after dark, though up to an hour or so after dark and an hour or so before dawn were perhaps the favourite times. The nights were also enlivened by "Jiff" propaganda, one powerful-voiced gentleman being capable of keeping it up for hours at a stretch. His prime effort was directed at the I. O. Rs., who were told: "Come over here to us and we will make you all Jemadars." He was ignored, though if he appeared to be too close he was saluted with a grenade or two.

On a typical night in the main O. P. next to Battalion H. Q. there would be frequent requests from the Battalion Commander for "Gunner D. F. No. 8" or whatever D. F. was required. After a bit one got quite good at anticipating requirements, and it was satisfactory to be able to say: "It's on the way, Sir," or "It's coming down now, Sir."

Not all Jap attacks were repulsed. On the 7th a very dangerous infiltration took place in the F. S. D. area and much hard fighting was necessary before the Japs were thrown out. The O. P. officer at one time found himself in command of the company in that area. During this action Private Harmon of the Royal West Kents earned a posthumous V. C.

On April 9, as I have mentioned, the D. C.'s bungalow area was lost, and subsequent withdrawals reduced the garrison to Summerhouse Hill—200 yards across in front, broadening to 400 yards at the rear. In this narrow space all

the sound and wounded men had to be concentrated. Several hundreds of the latter could neither be evacuated nor got under really decent cover. Twice the dressing station received a direct hit, two M.O.s being killed on the second occasion.

Communications were, of course, vital and the wireless was kept going all the time by careful nursing of batteries. Charging was done by an American engine previously used to keep a meteorological set going. Shortage of acid was a problem, but it never became acute. Interference from American sets ground to air and vice versa was always very bad early in the evening. The 22 set was not so badly affected as the 21 set in this respect. The Battalion-Brigade set, being on a different frequency, was good, and sometimes used as an alternative. Telephone lines were continually cut and it was necessary to bury them—a difficult task as the ground was very rocky under a light subsoil.

All supplies, including water, were air-dropped, but the area was so small that at the end only 50 per cent. of the drop was recovered. It was annoying to see parachutes thought to contain three-inch mortar ammunition landing in the Jap lines, as they were obviously using three-inch mortars against us. A large number of parachutes failed to open, and stores often slipped out of their lashings. Two men in the battery were killed when a container of water hit them. Many parachutes got hung up in the trees, and climbing for them made too easy a mark for snipers who, by the end of the action, were able to see into nearly the whole position. For some days the Jotsoma Box was isolated, and had to be supplied by air. Gun ammunition was at one time in rather short supply, but no calls for fire were ever refused on that account.

Towards the end of the action, 25-pounders and a Medium Section with 2 Division, who were advancing to gain contact with the Jotsoma Box, were available for harrassing fire, but all D. F. was done by the Mountain Batteries.

On April 18 the 1 Punjabs entered the position. They were the first relieving troops, having handed over their Jotsoma position to a battalion of 2 Division. Wounded were got out, and on the 20th the gunner detachments were withdrawn, as were the R. W. Ks, who handed over to the Berkshire Regiment from 2 Division. On the 21st the O. P. parties of 20 and 2 Mountain Batteries handed over to other O. P.s of their Regiment, and some O. P. parties from 2 Division also arrived. The first part of the action was over. It had cost 20 Mountain Battery twelve men killed or missing, and 29 men wounded, out of a total of 80 men engaged.

As a tailpiece, it might be added that 2 Mountain Battery alone amongst the Brigade Group remained continuously in action in front of Kohima until the Japs were finally defeated there. 20 Battery were re-equipped and continued in action also.

### THE PREVENTION OF WAR

BY COLONEL H. F. HUMPHREYS, O.B.E., M.C., T.D., K.H.P.

IN 1919 it was perceived that one of the causes of war was the anarchy of international relations—the absence of any code of laws or even agreed code of morals to bind the separate and sovereign Powers amongst whom the world was parcelled out. The League of Nations was an attempt to lay the foundations of a new international order, and the reasons for its failure are fresh in our memory.

The end of the last war saw seven great Powers in the world, the British Empire, the U.S.A., France, Russia, Germany, Italy and Japan. If these had desired to work in harmony to keep the peace, no squabbles of minor powers would have seriously disturbed it: but they did not. For the first decade three of the seven (the U.S.A., Germany and Russia) were not members of the League at all, and soon afterwards two of the remainder, Japan and Italy, appeared openly in the role of aggressors and attacked the very principles they had sworn to defend.

When the challenges came (Manchukuo, 1931, Abyssinia, 1935 and the Rhineland, 1936), only France and England were left to apply sanctions or defend the structure of international peace. Both had allowed their armaments to sink to a dangerously low level: the peoples of both countries had given unmistakeable evidence of their reluctance to face the ordeal of war, and possessed the timid governments they had deserved. And the minor powers (the fifty nations whom Mussolini boasted that he defied in 1935, were not prepared to move a ship or a gun when it came to the point.

This war has demonstrated once more the complete helplessness of small nations when confronted with the mechanised armies of the major Powers, and the moral of the business is clear. World Wars will not be abolished by passing resolutions in praise of peace either in the League Assembly or elsewhere. They can only be prevented if the great Powers of the world wish to prevent them and are prepared to go to war with an aggressor. The most perfect machinery will fail to work unless there is a will to put it in motion. If nations are unwilling to accept the thesis that peace is indivisible and to fight in any quarrel not immediately and indisputably their own, wars will certainly recur.

The end of the war will leave three great Powers in control of the destinies of mankind, the British Empire, the United States of America and Russia. Of the others Germany and Japan will be disarmed for a generation, while Italy and France seem likely to sink to the second rank. If complete harmony of purpose between these three is attained and persists, peace will be preserved. Is this possible? Only if certain conditions are fulfilled, (i) agreement on peace aims and a real will to peace, (ii) the creation of effective machinery for regulating international affairs, and (iii) the mitigation of the causes of war which are and always have been either economic rivalry or lust for power.

Agreement on Peace Terms will not be easy to reach, and Britain has the difficult and important role of bridging the gap between the other two. For with Russia she has vital interests in Europe, and with the U. S. A. she is concerned with the safety of commerce in the Seven Seas and the skies above them. We have looked at some of the difficult problems concerned with the settlement of Eastern Europe, but behind the settlement of frontiers looms the

vast enigma of Russia. She will emerge as the greatest military power in the world: what will she do?

All the utterances of Stalin give evidence of a wise and statesmanlike attitude. She has vast territories to develop, and vast populations with which to do it. But the war has enormously stimulated Russian nationalism (the orders of Suvurov and Kutusoff bestowed on Russian Generals recall commanders who in the 18th Century led Russian armies into Italy, Germany and the Balkans): her government, the absolute dictatorship of one man, Stalin, can hardly expect more than ten years of power, and his successor may revive the traditional Russian policy of a drive towards warm water through Turkey to the Mediterranean, through Persia to the Arabian Sea, and through Manchukuo to the Pacific.

It is the danger of dictatorships that great power corrupts, that the people have no voice, and history holds only too many examples of dictators who have sought a diversion from troubles at home in a war of aggression abroad. With the U.S.A. an opposite tendency is to be feared. Isolationism in America is traditional: it is a direct legacy from Washington, the first President, who warned the infant republic against entangling alliances, and its advocates were in full cry right up to Pearl Harbour.

They then went underground, but they may emerge with the declaration of peace, and even now the widely read Hearst and McCormack press contains virulent attacks on Great Britain and Russia. If the history of 1919 is repeated and the American Senate refuses to commit the U.S. A. to any obligations in the maintenance of peace the prospect is bleak. The paradox posed by the Roman is still true: "If you desire peace, you must be prepared to fight in its defence."

The international machinery for preserving peace set up by the League of Nations failed mainly because there was no effective will behind it: but apart from that, the machine was badly designed and neglected some elementary principles of dynamics: it gave the tiniest South American Republic the same power and privilege as the great nations, despite the fact that all real responsibility lay with the latter.

It paralysed action by insisting on a unanimous vote: it forgot that all law rests ultimately on a basis of force and left armaments in the hands of independent and sovereign states: it tried to crystallise the status quo and set up no machinery for effecting peaceful political change: it attempted too much at once and essayed a complete and rigid system fresh from the professor's study, instead of proceeding step by step and building upon the firm foundations of established facts.

It may be that in time, in a century, possibly in less, a watertight and warproof organisation of the nations will arise, perhaps with an international police force enforcing international law: it clearly cannot come till nations are prepared to surrender a considerable measure of the sovereignty which all now claim as a right, until the flame of nationalism that at present burns brightly everywhere has died down, until the economic rivalries of the nations have been replaced by the economic co-operation foreshadowed in the Atlantic Charter.

Meantime, let us lay foundations, starting from the salient facts which stare us all in the face: that for a long time effective power will lie with the three victor nations, who after the experience of two world wars in a generation will be cautious in surrendering it: and that no second-class Power can hope to stand alone, or evan as a member of a local league, unless it can count on

effective support from one or more of the Big Three. The smaller nations will therefore tend to fall naturally into groups clustering round these three, and conditioned primarily by considerations of geography and national defence: though economic interests and ideological urges will play a part working in some cases for and in others against the compelling conditions of geography.

There will be a tendency for these groups to develop into Leagues: averyone can now see that one of the main causes of the currency chaos, the stranging of international trade, the economic blizzard and the unemployment in Central Europe which put Hitler into power was the setting up by all the little succession states of the old Austrian Empire of economic and political frontiers, complete with separate coinage, tariffs and customs regulations.

If a post-war group of Powers enters first into a League for mutual defence; then fixes standard exchanges and forms a Zollervein or Customs Union to encourage a free flow of trade between the members; then evolves as assembly for regular consultation with powers to recommend, and finally, perhaps, to take decisions binding on all its members, they will have become true Federal Unions, with a far better chance of survival than the League at Geneva. All will learn to abate something of their national sovereignty for the common good. The British Commonwealth since the Statute of Westminster provides the working model for such a league.

We can perhaps see something of the shape the three leagues may take. Around the U.S. A. will cluster all the countries of the two Americas and after her experience in this War, she will certainly retain sufficient naval and air bases in the Pacific to give her the complete mastery of that Ocean and the islands therein. The security of Australia and New Zealand is hardly less bound up with that of the U.S.A. than is the security of Canada.

Along the Atlantic coast, opposite Britain lie a group of nations. Norway. Denmark, Holland, Belgium, France, Spain and Portugal, which have much in common: all depend on sea communication: all are democracies, except the last two, who have been and may be again; and amongst them are all the chief Powers in the world which have oversess colonies. Here is a natural grouping, and already in many of these countries influential voices have been raised urging that they should join the British Commonwealth of Nations.

Through the other nations of that Commonwealth, Canada, Australia and New Zealand, through their democratic institutions, through their common interest in sea communications, so many strands will bind the group to the American league that a rupture between the two is hardly conceivable.

The U.S.S.R. will stretch from the Pacific to the Carpathians, and on her Western flank a group of smaller powers, Finland, Poland, Czechoslovakia, Hungary and Roumania will be drawn into her orbit. Stalin has renounced all desire to interfere with their internal politics, but it is inevitable that their foreign policies should revolve round the Kremlin. Such a group will form a great continental bloc, which will have at its disposal such a vast wealth of natural resources awaiting development that for it the necessity for overseas trade or sea power will hardly exist.

There should thus be little or no rivalry between it and the two maritime groups. Their common share in victory will start them on the path of friendship, the years will tend to smooth out their ideological differences and breed confidence in each other, and some day the time may be ripe for their union in a single Federation.

Indeed the framework of such may well be laid down at once: It is essential that the three blocs should be regarded as co-equal, should bind themselves to keep the peace by a treaty in which the greatest common measure of agreement attainable at once should be embodied, and should regard themselves economically and strategically as complementary to each other, not as rivals.

All possible causes of friction should therefore be removed, such as might lead to a competition in armaments. Prominent amongst these is the problem of keeping open and safeguarding those places where the main streams of the world's sea-borne traffic contract to run through a narrow waterway, the Skagger Rack, the Straits of Gibraltar, the Sicilian narrows, the Bosphorus, the Suez Canal and the Malacca Straits.

Russia must be assured of an outlet for her trade through these, and she will certainly desire to develop the new outlet through Iran and Irak to the Persian Gulf, which has proved of such importance to her in this war. This must be arranged in such a way as not to start a naval armaments race with the U.S.A. and Britain.

The main responsibility for policing the world is clearly going to lie with Naval and Airforce units, and a network of naval and air bases will girdle the globe: in planning these the strategic interests of the main Powers may sometimes clash with local sovereignty, present or future. The British agreement to give long leases to the U.S.A. of sites in our West Indian Colonies showed how the problem could be solved.

It is in some such way as this that an international society might come into being, step by step, slowly perhaps, but surely. It is much easier to keep the peace between three Powers than between fifty, and the manifest direction in which mankind is marching is towards integration into ever larger units. Hitler's New Order recognised that, but his aim was the permanent enslavement of Europe and a denial of the four freedoms for which the Allies are fighting.

Let us take some examples. The great coal field which runs from Arras to the Ruhr crosses French, Belgian, Dutch and German territory: clearly it could be far more productive and efficient if under a unified direction, and the same is true of the Silesian coalfield which lies in Poland, German Silesia, and Czechoslovakia. This job of integration and others like it have been done by the Nazis, and the grouping of nations I have suggested offers a means of preserving it.

There are many nations I have not referred to. All should be free to join one or other of the Groups or to remain outside: it may well be that some will belong to two, as Canada in a sense already does, and thus help to draw the three of them together. The countries round the Mediterranean would at first look to the maritime group headed by Great Britain, as they have in fact done for a century.

As the peoples in Asia and Africa obtain their freedom and reach adult political stature, which they must inevitably do, East Asian, Arab and African Groups may emerge. China and India may in time become great Powers. But this is to look far beyond the present and practical beginnings which it is our business to make. Bismark defined politics as the "art of the possible" and the immediately possible is our present concern.

The Causes of War are and always have been either psychological or economic, and the most obvious psychological factor making for war in the past century has been the complex of feelings we call nationalism. It is woven of many strands, good ones, like patriotism and love of country as well as bad

ones like pugnacity, desire for power and dislike for strangers, a fault to which the British have been particularly prone.

Modern capitalism with its hunger for new markets, and the rapid growth of populations that everywhere mark the 19th Century increased international rivalry and greatly augmented its force. In the old dynastic Europe of the 18th Century it counted for much less, and in the catholic society of the Middle Ages with its consciousness of a common Christendom it hardly existed. We must recognise that the powerful mass emotions generated by nationalism are likely to prove stronger than the cool demonstrations of the political philosopher that we must become internationally minded or perish.

But the growth of a feeling of working class solidarity between the different nations of Europe tends to undermine nationalism, though it must be admitted that the records to date of the successive "Internationales" or labour federation have not been impressive. And we must hope that the growth of federal unions will teach us that interdependence is more important than independence and that we shall learn to apply to international relations the same principles of Christian conduct that we normally observe in our personal relations to one another.

The economic causes of war should be more easy to mitigate than the emotional ones: for while the tempest of war has blown upon the fires of nationalism and caused them to glow more brightly, there have been a sense of changes, all tending to curb the old imperialistic scramble for profitable markets. There is first the simple fact that the world has now been fully explored and parcelled out amongst the Powers. Ethiopia and China were the last examples of undeveloped and unprotected lands inviting exploitation by economic imperialism.

In the last two centuries the dominant note in history has been the extension of power by the peoples of Europe over the rest of the globe: but that race is now over, and it seems probable that the next century will witness a rapid growth both in political stature and economic progress of the backward peoples to something nearer the European level. This and the shrinking population of Europe must inevitably reduce the rivalries of the European nations.

Even on the level of trade there is a new perception that co-operation brings more prosperity than competition, which expresses itself in the formation of international cartels or groups to control the production and distribution of important goods such as steel, oil, rubber, tea, etc. Doubtless the motive here has been a desire to maintain prices and profits, based on the old classical economic of scarcity. But we are now witnessing the triumphant vindication of a new economic of plenty: Stalin in Russia, T. V. A. and Lease Lend in America and the Ministries of Production in England have all demonstrated the almost unlimited capacity for creating wealth which modern industry possesses if directed towards production for use rather than for profit.

It is highly probable that the cartels, the production boards and the international committees which have come into being will continue their work of climinating wasteful competition and will direct the flow of goods where they are most needed; in so far as they succeed they will reduce international friction.

With the change in economic theory and practice has gone a change in moral outlook: the sufferings and the insecurity of the working classes under modern capitalism have profoundly disturbed the public conscience. There has been a sharp decline in the prostige, of the profit motive, and the

smart guy who makes a fortune is now more likely to figure as the villain than the hero of a novel.

The feeling has grown that the basic industries and the means of production and exchange are in some degree a public service, and should come under public control, and that the prosperity of the people should be paramount above the privileges of property. The steady growth and widespread diffusion of such ideas show themselves in the Atlantic Charter, which lays down that the raw materials of industry should be freely available to all nations, and that none should seek to enrich themselves at the expense of another.

When we win our four freedoms let us remember that they are not all. The French Revolution inscribed on its banners Liberty, Equality, Fraternity. Of these, liberty seems to have been most cherished by the British, equality by the Russians and Fraternity by the Americans: indeed the three are not easy to combine as we see in Russia, where a very high degree of equality has been achieved at the cost of almost all personal liberty. If you are employed by the State, there is no appeal against your employer: and though the elimination of waste, the attainment of security, and the drift towards large scale integration of man's social activities make it inevitable that the State should come to control more of our lives, we must be on our guard against the danger of all State enterprises, that of a bureaucracy strangling initiative and drive with red tape and regulations.

The building of a better world requires vision and courage on the part of all of us. In the troubled Europe of the thirties the Nazis had more of these than their opponents: we must set against their evil vision of German hegemony a nobler one of the four freedoms, freedom for all black, brown, yellow and white: and the price of that freedom is eternal vigilance. If we settle down again to a life of getting and spending, and leave the business of conducting national affairs to professional politicians or black-coated bureaucrats the liberty for which we have fought so hard will elude us.

As several times before in her long story, Britain has a unique responsibility in the coming years. She lies mid-way between Russia and the U.S.A. not only in space but in her ideology, and she must bridge the gap between them: she is the greatest colonial Power in the world, and must set a course for her colonies that all can approve and follow: she has a political experience and a record in the evolution of liberty that are unique in history. Let us see to it that she continues to move in the vanguard of the army of mankind where she has marched so long.

# ARMY WELFARE AND THE W.V.S.

BY MAJOR-GENERAL J. G. BLLIOTT.

A N essential preliminary to a talk on Welfare is to be quite clear as to in place against the general military background. The ideal of every commander must be that every man under him is not only more efficient, physically and technically, than his opposite number among the enemy, but that he is first with an enthusiasm and determination to fight. In other words, morale must be good.

Now morale is dependent primarily on essentially military factors; physical fitness, confidence in personal prowess as a man-at-arms and superiority over the enemy, and faith in and admiration for one's leaders. Welfare is the tonic in the military diet, and as such should be taken in controlled does.

We hear a great deal of the standard of amenities provided by the United States forces for their men, so it is of interest to read something written by the Hon. J. McCloy, Assistant Secretary of War in Washington. He spoke of monk in this way:

"A good soldier's morale is something like a lady's virtue—you don't talk about it; but there has been so much said about it recently that I want to add my bit. Above all, we must rid ourselves of the notion that morale is achieved by giving somebody something. Real morale is more readily achieved by depriving soldiers of something, rather than by giving them something.

"Hostesses, movies, soda fountains, and what have you, have their place, but endurance of hardship, sacrifice, competition, ability to outdo another unit, the feeling of inner strength—in short, the knowledge that he is tough, hardbitten, and able to take and inflict hard blows, gives the soldier morale, and the more he has to put up with things and overcome obstacles, the more it develops."

You may find that I deal, when I descend into detail, more with the British than with the Indian soldier. This is due to two reasons: not because the Indian soldier is in any way less worthy of attention or consideration, but because the British soldier is a stranger in a strange land, and therefore far less able to fend for himself, and because the British soldier has developed more claborate tastes and therefore needs more looking after. The main headings under which I discuss welfare are identically those under which consideration must be given to the interests of the Indian troops, or the African troops for the matter of that, and you can elaborate them from your own experience. Almost everything I say applies equally to the Royal Navy and Royal Air Force.

I am going to discuss Welfare under six headings. First, I should tell you what the Army is doing to help itself, then after some general remarks on help from outside I shall venture on some suggestions as to what the W.V.S. in particular can do for us.

Of all form of Welfare I give pride of place to care of the soldier's family. Anxiety as to the well-being of his wife, his children, his father and mother, or

This informative talk by the Director of Welfare, G.H.Q., delivered to the W.V.S. Provincial Conference recently held at Dagshai, contains much that is of interest and value to every officer serving in India and to the large number of W.V.S. workers in this country.

of anything that for him comes under the heading of "home" is a care that will occupy his mind to the exclusion of all other things, and the further he gets from home, the more difficult it becomes for him to get news, the more acute will his trouble be until not only will he cease to have his heart in his work, but he may even end by becoming a casualty from mental causes. We have various remedies. First of all, of course, we try to ensure a rate of pay and allowances that will enable the family to live in a reasonable standard of comfort. Then, since we cannot prevent people having accidents or falling ill, we have the S.S.A.F.A. and S.S.A.H.S., who give help on the spot and are also the channel whereby we get information for the soldier, and verify his application for compassionate repatriation. We have a widespread organization, which we are still enlarging, that does the same for the Indian soldier.

We get a quota of air passages, averaging about 60 a month, to fly Home British officers and men who have extreme compassionate grounds for an early return. We have also a Legal Aid Section, to which the British soldier can apply if his domestic affairs have unfortunately reached the stage where he feels that the Divorce Court is the only possible answer. Records show that the majority of these cases occur towards the end of a man's tour of service abroad, which is undoubtedly one of the reasons why we hear so much criticism directed at the length of the qualifying period for ordinary repatriation. This period, now fixed at 3 years 4 months, is being very strictly enforced. Any question of its revision is one of high policy, in considering which a large number of factors have to be weighed up.

Next in order of importance I put the welfare of the man in hospital. We ask the fighting man to risk his very life from enemy action, and we expect most soldiers to go into all sorts of unhealthy and insanitary places where they may pick up any one of a dozen or more unpleasant and dangerous diseases, so it is only reasonable to both sides that the soldier should get the very best medical attention if he does become a casualty. That side of it, of course, is a strictly military responsibility in the hands of the Army Medical Services, and a number of distinguished visitors to this country have said, I think quite genuinely, that our hospitals here compare well with any in the world.

Another category we have to deal with is the soldier in transit, chiefly by train. The Indian railways are not only now carrying many more passengers than in 1939, but in the early years of the war rolling stock was even sent out of India to the Middle East, so the railways are doing more work with less resources. The answer, of course, is more and better railway carriages, but for some reason I have never been able to discover they are apparently one of the few things you cannot build in wartime. In consequence there is little doubt that the welfare of troops when travelling is still one of the weakest points in our administrative arrangements. We are of course doing what we can about it. A number of carriages are being overhauled and electrified, and proper arrangements for meals are being made at the big stations all over India.

It is time now to turn to the care of troops in their own barracks and camps where, compared with those I have been talking of, they are comparatively well off. The first thing they need is rooms where they can go to read or write letters if they want to be quiet, or where they can play games or listen to the wireless or a gramophone. The whole standard of such rooms and of the scales of provision of games and wireless sets has improved very considerably in the last 12 months.

Next there is the question of the canteen. A lot of pople light-heartedly say that we ought to have the NAAFI in this country, and I entirely agree with

them in saying that we ought; but the difficulties of collecting the skilled staff in wartime, and in the face of the opposition we should undoubtedly have to encounter, are so great that it really is not a feasible proposition. A very great deal has been done in improving matters in directions where standardization is possible, that is to say in the provision of a wider and more plentiful range of canteen stores, but things are far less satisfactory in tea and supper bars where the standards of the local contractors vary enormously.

It is in the next aspect—how to enjoy himself when he is away from his camp or barracks on pass or leave—that the British soldier is more than anywhere else at a disadvantage with the sepoy; and he must compare things very unfavourably with what is available at Home. After all, if we consider for a moment, the soldier wants to do very much what you or I would; a little casual shopping, tea, a cinema or theatre and a meal and a drink to top up with. Alternatively we go out to the house of a friend. In Great Britain, the soldier virtually becomes a civilian for the time being and enjoys all the facilities provided by private enterprise for the ordinary civilian population. The range and quality of what is available in India just does not compare with Home and, perhaps, more than anything else, the soldier lacks the girl friend he never seems to have any trouble over finding for himself in England—or Scotland.

We are making some progress with the provision of mobile cinemas for the camps in out-of-the-way places, but the E.N.S.A. situation has always fallen short of what we hoped for, and with the end of the war at Home there is not much prospect of any great improvement. The Army must depend on help from outside when it comes to providing substitutes for the cases, restaurants and inns which are so plentiful at Home—for the very good reason that if we provide anything ourselves it is bound to have more or less of a military atmosphere, which is, of course, just what the man has left his camp or barracks to get away from.

Finally, there is provision to be made for those on leave away from their units. At Home, of course, the majority of men have a home or relations to go to, and there is virtually no problem, any more than there is for the sepoy in India, who also makes a bee-line for his own village. We can accommodate at any one time in India well over 40,000 British troops in the various forms of leave accommodation, and that does not include the purely private hospitality, which is considerable but over which we have no control and keep no check. With such numbers to deal with it is quite clear that we are bound to depend on big military leave homes for the bulk of the accommodation.

Hard words are said about these places—I have heard them called concentration camps among other things—and there is no doubt that a little more imagination would have made some of them more attractive to look at than they are, but they have been very considerably improved during the last 12 or 18 months in decorations, standard of food and also in the amount of liberty allowed and freedom from routine or restraint. There are at the moment two representatives from Butlins Holiday Camps touring our camps, and they are already full of suggestions.

When we consider that a man lives in these camps free, except for a small charge of less than -/8/- a day for petty extras, there is something to be said for them, and I think a number of men do very much enjoy their leave. Apart from leave camps we get a lot of help from the Y.M.C.A, Salvation Army and Toc H. and from hostels run by local hospitality committees, and there are also a number of boarding houses which are to some extent under our control and which receive subsidies to keep their charges down to a reasonable level.

That concludes a very rapid survey of what the Army is doing to help itself. Before dealing with the help which the W.V.S. can give us I would like to say a word or two in general terms about help from sources outside the army. You may perhaps wonder why the army should expect those outside to do what might be described as the army's own work. The answer, of course, has been touched on already. We are asking you to do something which we cannot do ourselves; to introduce in fact into the soldier's leisure hours that element of change, variety and novelty, which should be the keynote of the efforts of all outside workers.

The next point, on which I would like to be particularly clear, is that the final responsibility for the welfare of his men rests with the commander, however large the force or small the unit. I don't say that all commanders are always as good at it as they might be, but, from whatever sources he draws his help, he finally is responsible.

Then there is the need for the Army to put out better information as to what they need, and when and where they need it. The W.V.S. or any other body of helpers cannot give of their best unless they are kept properly informed; and when they are kept informed, perhaps they may help us to convince others that the Army is not really quite so unmethodical and muddle-headed as a lot of people think we are.

Equally there is the importance of everyone who is concerned in helping us knowing as much as possible about us and our ways. You will need assistance from us, for example, in transport and in supplies. There is a proper way to set about getting them and you will help everyone, including yourselves, if you follow it. Also if you know the right person to ask you can approach him direct and give the welfare officer's telephone a well-earned rest.

The next problem is the need for better co-ordination. We will try to secure it on our side, and we ask you, on yours, to co-ordinate local activities as far as you can, so that commanders and welfare officers have one representative to deal with, and not half a dozen. I know, of course, that conditions vary all over India, and that it is not always easy to co-ordinate, but I was very much struck the other day by a statement addressed by Lord Louis Mountbatten to a Conference held to co-ordinate action by certain philanthropic bodies. He was appealing for unity of effort and this is what he wrote:---

- "I am assuming, of course, that your Societies are out to give me all the help they can, and will not allow any personal prejudices to stand in the way of giving my forces the best service possible.
- "I have had to face up to the same problem of integration in many other fields ....... In each case the more we have been able to establish the common-supply, common-user system, the better have been the results."

Possibly the trouble lies in the fact that those who have worked hard in the early days to put some activity on its feet dislike the idea of seeing it swallowed up as part of a larger organization, and so losing its identity. Lord Louis' argument is, however, unanswerable and I might mention that he was careful to add that he would make certain that individual acknowledgment was given to all who helped him.

To turn at last to some suggestions as to what the W.V.S. can do to help. I must apologize for including much that I know from personal experience is being done already, but I feel it is more satisfactory to present a complete picture.

In regard to the welfare of the soldier's family, as far as the British soldier is concerned, we have now very much increased the number of S.S.A.F.A. and S.S.A.H.S. bureaux, and we have a wholetime representative of each at G.H.Q. I have addressed them and also the W.V.S. to suggest that in order to enlarge their activities, they should let the W.V.S. have for circulation to all branches a note on the work of the two Societies, so that any of your workers coming in touch with cases needing assistance can at any rate advise and direct the man, or woman, to the appropriate bureau. For Indian troops we need the help of any women who are willing to assist with families, as for obvious reasons men workers are not acceptable.

Work in hospitals is of very great importance. The activity of those who are not whole-time workers of the Indian Red Cross has been defined by your Society's agreement with them, and it is unnecessary for me to elaborate it except to say that I hope that your workers will take advantage of the terms of that agreement, and take up work wherever the Red Cross are shorthanded.

Anything you can do to help troops on railway stations or docks is a very practical contribution to welfare. It is arduous work, and in many places you need an all-round-the-clock service which makes very heavy demands on your available workers, but there is no doubt that to the soldier traveller with perhaps another 24 or 48 hours of discomfort ahead of him, a really good cup of tea and a few cheerful words have a value out of all proportion to the trouble it takes to provide them. The Army is now making proper provision for hot meals at various stations and I suggest the W.V.S. can give very considerable assistance in seeing that the meal rooms are made bright and attractive, and also by having one or two workers on duty at the rush hours.

Welfare within the unit lines or barracks is very much the C.O.'s care, and for various reasons there are obvious limits to the amount of work you can do. The most valuable contribution is, I think, this business of liaison between the troops and the contractor in the canteen, to suggest improvements and new ideas, and to cast a practical eye over the kitchens to see that what is provided is of good quality, well-cooked and attractively served. Most contractors are working with very greatly expanded staffs, and the majority of their so-called managers are ignorant and lacking in experience. I would suggest that one very important point to get straight, if you are to see any practical results from your labours, is the machinery for getting effective action taken on your suggestions and complaints. In other words, the servants must all realise that what you say has a kick behind it—literally perhaps, as well as metaphorically. And if you want backing, say from the Medical Officer over enforcing a high standard of cleanliness, make sure that your inspections and his are done together, and not at separate times.

Men out on pass for the evening and men on long leave, I think really come under one heading as far as the W.V.S. are concerned with helping to entertain them. Here your outstanding value lies in your ability to provide that element of feminine society which otherwise is almost completely lacking in the soldier's daily round. It matters not really whether he meets you as a worker in a canteen, at a dance, or when he comes as a guest to one of your houses; the mere fact that he can meet and talk to you is everything, and it may very well happen that he will be more likely to unburden himself of his personal troubles to you than to an unsympathetic Sergeant-Major, so it is important that the W.V.S. should have a good working knowledge of how to set about putting matters right.

The W.V.S. are also, I know, giving us invaluable assistance by acting as our booking agents for leave in all types of accommodation other than purely military leave camps, and also, of course, in taking men on leave into your own houses. I do not think I need enlarge on those activities.

There is perhaps one direction in which more might be done, and that is in placing your local knowledge at our disposal in suggesting excursions for the amusement and even the education of troops. I would include under this head visits to places of historical interest, beauty spots, factories or any other activity which will give the men some interest and insight into the life of the country they are serving in. And I most definitely include the Indian soldier as being interested in such expeditions.

By way of conclusion, then, I would say that there are four main points that perhaps we should on both sides concentrate on if we are to work together to better the lot of the soldier serving in wartime India.

First, W.V.S. workers should learn as much as they can about what the Army does to help itself, and who in the Army is the right person to apply to for help in all the various things they may need.

Secondly, the Army must take more care to keep the W.V.S. informed of current needs and forecasted changes and, when asked, to run short courses to explain to W.V.S. workers the mysteries of the local administrative machine.

Thirdly, we ask the assistance of the W.V.S. in co-ordinating the activities of all the voluntary workers in their area, so that resources are pooled and what does exist is used to the best advantage.

Finally, I would emphasize again that the essential role of the W.V.S. is to fill those three very important needs that the Army can never satisfactorily meet from its own resources: variety and change from the military atmosphere, local knowledge, and the blessing of a little feminine society.

# ORGANISING A TATTOO AND PAGEANT

By Wing Commander L. Shaffi, o.B.E.

WITH the defeat of Germany and the fast approaching end to the Eastern War, our minds inevitably turn to thoughts of Tattoo Pageants glorifying the magnificent deeds of our Fighting Services. Indeed is no better method to celebrate a momentons event than by a military specific of this kind.

When the final "Cease Fire" is sounded, there will doubtless be not officers in this country who will be detailed to arrange such displays with the is sources in personnel and equipment available locally. It is hoped that this hat article on the subject may prove of some assistance to such officers when the time comes.

It is, of course, quite out of the question to lay down any hard and fulles. There are, however, a number of points which should certainly applicable, no matter how the Tattoo programme is made up.

One of the most important items is the site. How many people appreciate that the setting of a recently held Tattoo at the Irwin Stadium, New Delhi, presented one of the most picturesque environments in the whole world? The view of the Battlements of the Purana Qila in the background, with the glowingly colourful uniforms of the Indian Army of yester-year, presented a picture not easily forgotten.

We must be sure, therefore, in selecting a site that it is in every way suitable. Not only should the background be picturesque; the site itself must contain ample seating accommodation for spectators, if possible so hanked that all may view the proceedings in the area with ease. The area of the ground available should not be less than 400 yds, square, while green grass lends much to the effectiveness of the scene. The perimeter of the ground, if possible, should be dotted with colourful flags of all Allied Nations. Bunting helps a great deal.

The performers' entrance, facing the spectators, must be screened off. For this purpose it is usually possible to hire kanats locally from the bazar. A row of screens about 8 feet high should mark the extremity of the ground, behind which should be a space not less than 100 feet in depth for the marshaling of events. There should be a gap of about 25 yards in the centre of this backcloth. Set forward and centrally, there should be another row of screens completely covering up this gap. This arrangement forms an effective entrance and exit. The distance between the back cloth and the forward screens should be about 50 feet. Green is probably best, but white or other coloured screens may be used with good effect, depending on the predominant colours of the uniforms, etc., being worn.

### THE PROGRAMME.

The choosing of items for a Tattoo sometimes presents some difficulty. It requires careful consideration before the programme is finally decided upon. In no circumstance should the programme in its entirety last longer than an hour and a half. No item, however good, should take longer than twelve minutes. The average length of an item should be between seven and ten minutes in order



Above: Rhythmic Torch Swinging by the Boys Company of the 1st Punjab Regimental Training Centre

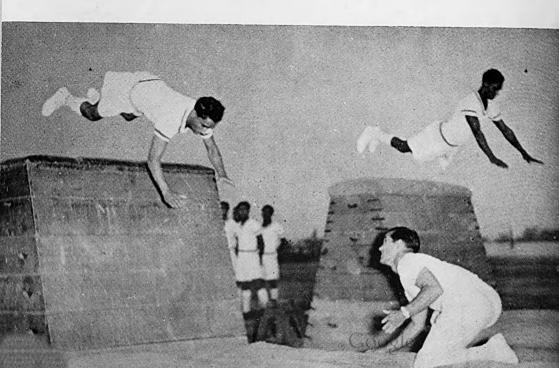
Below: PARADE BY MASSED MILITARY BANDS





Above: Motor Cyclists of the Indian Signal Corps

Below: P. T. EXERCISES BY THE ROYAL INDIAN NAVY



that the spectators may feel at the end of each item that they would have liked to see more of it. The cumulative effect of the whole programme should be that it was excellent, but far too short.

Each item must follow in quick succession, entering the arena by one side of the back-screens while the preceding item makes its exit by the other. There is indeed no need to wait until the last man is out of sight before commencing with the next item.

No Tattoo would be complete without a band and, if possible, a Military Brass Band. This should usually be the first as well as the last item on the programme. If more than one band is available, so much the better. It is impossible to have too many. In some stations bands may not be available and, while this would detract considerably from the performance, loud-speaker recording can be used if there is no alternative.

Ten minutes at the commencement of the Tattoo devoted to marching and counter-marching by the band, puts the audience in a receptive frame of mind and starts off the show with a swing. If sufficiently good buglers are available, it is effective to commence with a Fanfare of Bugles lasting not longer than three minutes, including the time taken to get into the arena and out. For this item up to 50 buglers can be used to great advantage. Immediately the buglers are out of sight, the Military Band should open up from behind the screens and march out from both sides of the Kanat´s, joining up down the centre of the arena. Incidentally a 30-foot flag-pole flying the Union Jack in the centre of the forward screen is most effective. The larger the flag, the better.

A very useful point to remember about a Tattoo is that every unit taking part in the show can rehearse its own item at its own unit, coming together only three or four times when fully rehearsed for co-ordination and dress rehearsals. Because of this fact, very little time is wasted in arranging a Tattoo, each unit practising its own item or items at a time convenient to itself. The organiser should visit each unit once or twice at the very beginning to see that it is proceeding on the right lines, after which visits work can be carried on by a unit officer, detailed for the purpose.

Each item included in the programme must have movement. Static items are always less interesting and slow down the action of the performance. A purely hypothetical programme might be as follows:

1.	Fanfare of trumpets.	• •	2 minutes.	
2.	Marching and Counter-Marching by Mili-			
	tary Brass Bands		10 ,,	•
3.	Drill Display (with music, if possible)	• •	7,	
	Display by Engineers		10 ,,	
5.	P.T. and Horse Work		10 ,,	
6.	A Humorous Item	· • •	7 ,,	
7.	Flaming Torch Swinging	• •	. 7 ,,	
8	A Pageant		16 ,,	
9.	Retreat	• •	IO ,,	
10.	Finale.			
11.	The King.			

The suggested pageant may be any suitable item, but it should be strikingly colourful. It might perhaps represent the evolution of the army from early times, showing the changes which have taken place in the uniforms and equipment in vogue in the services from time to time. It is surprising what a unit

tailor can do, given adequate references. It would naturally not be possible to procure the best possible cloth, but white drill dyed to the appropriate shades is most effective.

Again, if facilities exist the storming of an old fort would be most interesting. Such an item would require "props" to represent an old fort. Small charges electrically operated by a local Sapper unit lends much to the realism of the scene. It is possible to think of dozens of suitable subjects for this item, but the subject chosen should, if possible, have some local appeal.

#### LIGHTING

In such a brief article it is hardly possible to deal exhaustively with the subject of organising a Tattoo and Pageant, but it is hoped that the above suggestions will be of assistance to the would-be showman. The subject has only been touched very briefly, but the question of lighting, etc., must also be given attention if it is intended to hold the performance at night. If searchlights or flood-lights are available, it is very impressive to start the show off from retreat, having all the other items by artificial light, but in this case the lighting must be good. About half a dozen 10-inch lion lights are adequate or, if an Air Force Station is nearby which can supply a landing-field search-light, so much the better.

A military spectacle such as is envisaged is particularly suitable to this country, but it must be well done as the standard of performance of this type is already very high, due to such long established ceremonies in India as Dasara, which incidentally is well worth witnessing by anybody who has not seen it so far.

There can be no doubt that the annual performance at Aldershot has done much for the popularisation of the British Army, while the Hendon Display and Trafalgar Day celebrations keep the Royal Air Force and the Royal Navy in the public eye. Such annual institutions, it is felt, should also be organised in India after the war, so that the glorious deeds of the Indian Fighting Services during the present war should be recalled at least once a year, while it would do much to stimulate interest among the right type of young men in our Army, Navy and Air Force.

### MINEFIELDS ON FRENCH COAST

"The French shore is still covered with German minefields. There are about 100,000,000 such mines. It is calculated that the cost of the removal without charts would be in the neighbourhood of 20,000 lives. Even with the plans the cost would be great, for it was reported that 12 disarmed Germans were killed while engaged in demining with charts an area outside Dunkirk.

"French demining volunteers have already suffered heavy casualties, but civilians and children are being killed daily. In Finisterre 250 children have been killed by mines hidden in rocks.

"It is expected that the demining of French soil will not be completed for several years. The majority of mines will be fairly easy to find with electromagnetic detectors as soon as a sufficient supply of them is available, but mines made of wood, glass, bakelite and cardboard cannot be found in this way:"—"Manchester Guardian."



Above: A Skilful Motor-Cyclist

Below: March-Past of Boys from Regimental Training Centres, Wearing Uniforms from 1900 onwards



## BADGES OF RANK OF VICEROY'S COMMISSIONED OFFICERS

By Major N. P. Dawnay.

THE HONOURABLE the United Company of Merchants of England trading to the East Indies was formed in the year 1702. The Armed Forces of the Company sprang originally from guards intended as much to enhance the dignity of the chief officials as to protect the factories and trading posts. By about 1748, however, the Armies of the Presidency of Fort William (Bengal), or Fort Saint George (Madras), and of Bombay had become separate organised forces.

Until the Regulating Act of 1773, each Presidency was independent of the others, but that Act placed Madras and Bombay under the check of the Supreme Council, in Calcutta, which was responsible to the Honourable the Court of Directors for Affairs, in London. The Provincial Commanders-in-Chief were not, however, abolished, and the presidency system was continued, even after the assumption of control by the Crown, until 1895, in which year the Indian Army became a single entity.

The titles Risaldar, Subadar and Jemadar and others now forgotten were in use in the earliest days, though the generic term applied to these Officers has varied. They have been styled Warrant Officers, Native Commissioned Officers Native Officers, and Indian Officers. Throughout this paper, the contemporary title will be used.

The evolution of the distinctions of rank of the Viceroy's Commissioned Officers is divided into two periods: the Golden Age, which ended in about 1860 with the abolition of the coatee and the epaulette; and the Utility Age, which follows the gradual-development of the modern fighting dress.

The Golden Age.—One of the marks of the Good Soldier has always been smartness in turn-out, so that it is but natural that, in an age when the normal masculine attire was colourful, the soldier, too, should be gaily clad. Though the term Golden Age is no exaggeration, we must not be too hasty in condemning the military dress of those days. Rather, let us remember that what to-day would be discarded as too uncomfortable for a fancy dress dance, was the battle dress of the men who fought at Seringapatam and Waterloo. Nor, indeed, were all the colourful details wholly useless. The wing, which for Officers was covered with chain, served as a protection to the shoulders against sword-cuts.

Minutes of Council, dated at Fort William, 7th May, 1781, record various measures which were taken to improve the lot of the Sepoy. The Board was "pleased to resolve...

"That the Annual Cloathing given to the Native Troops shall be delivered to them every Year in the Month of December; and made up of Cloath, for the different Ranks, of the following Qualities, viz.,—The Subadars coats of super fine Cloath laced with gold or silver, the Jemantdaars of 2nd ditto laced with silk lace, the Non-Warrant Officers of Aurora and the Sepoys of Lacca, the same as now used.

F

"That . . . the Warrant Officers are to provide themselves with "Regimental Turbans, &c."

This distinction in the quality of the cloth and the nature of the last lasted throughout the Golden Age.

Captain Innes Monro, 73rd Highlanders, in his "Narrative of the Military Operations against Hyder Ali Cawn, 1780—1784" (1789), tells us that the Warrant Officers of the Madras Army wore Light Infantry jackets "made of scarlet cloth, with tinsel epaulettes, light drawers all the way down to their ankles, and a large, crooked scimitar by their sides." The Other Ranks were shorts with blue borders to the legs.

Further contemporary light is thrown on the dress of the Native Commissioned Officers of the Madras Army by Captain Charles Gold's "Oriental Drawings," which contains two coloured prints of special interest. Unfortunately, the copy in the Imperial Secretariat Library, New Delhi, has been rebound and, in the process, guillotined, so that neither of these plates shows any date. Such of the other prints as still bear a date were published in London between 1799 and 1803 and, by a process of exclusion, it is possible to fix the date of publication of the first as 1799, and of the second as 1802 or 1803. The originals were painted in India between 1792 and 1798,

The first print shows a Native Commissioned Officer of Infantry, while the letter-press informs us that he is a Subadar (Fig. 1). His coatee is scarlet with yellow facings, and the pantaloons white. The half-boots are black; the turban, blue. From the Minute of Council of 1781, we may deduce that the decoration on the turban, the buttons and button-holes and the epaulette are silver, for in the print they are uncoloured.

The second print depicts two Native Commissioned Officers and a Sepoy of the Gun Lascare Corps (an ancillary to the Artillery). From a comparison of these figures, it can be established that the uniform of the Corps was blue with scarlet facings, and that the lace and button-holes were yellow or gold according to rank. The two Native Commissioned Officers are wearing coates, long white pantaloons and footgear of brown leather. Both are wearing crimson sashes. One has a crimson head-dress (Fig. 2); the other (Fig. 3), one of blue-

It should be noted that the white mark on the forehead of the latter is a caste-mark and not part of the turban. Captain Gold writes, "The distinguishing part of the Serang's dress is a red turban and crimson silk sash, which the other Commissioned Officers also wore in conformity with the British service. All the non-commissioned officers and Lascars wear blue waistband and turban." These figures represent, therefore, a Serang and a First Tindal. A Serang was the equivalent of a Subadar (though he ranked as a Temadar; a First Tindal, that of a Temadar (but inferior in rank). In the original print, the epaulettes of both these Officers appear identical, the fringes apparently of bullion rather than silk. The decoration on the turbans is white or silver.

In the Bengal Army, pantaloons and half-boots were not introduced until 1801, while sashes do not appear to have become part of the Native Commissioned Officer's dress until the end of 1816, for, in the "Bengal Military Regulations, 1817" (which incorporate current orders up to the end of 1816), there is a footnote, "N.B.—Sashes are now worn by Native Commissioned Officers and Havildars." This enables us to fix the date of a uniform shewn in a coloured print, dated 1817, which forms the frontispiece to An Historical Account of the

Bengal Native Infantry, 1757—1796," by Captain John Williams (John Murray, London, 1817). This print (Fig. 4) represents a Subadar, 1st Battalion, 21st Bengal Native Infantry. The round jacket is scarlet with yellow facings and silver ornamentation. The wings are scarlet, laced with silver.

In the Proceedings of the Army Clothing Board, Fort William, on 22nd November, 1817, a Loss Statement, relating to an accident which took place at the end of 1816, was considered. This contains four items worthy of mention:—

- "4 Jackets for Grenr. Soubahdars and Jemahdars,
- 15 Jackets for Battalion Subadars and Jamadars.

e Mis

n be

11/21

ml

- 4 Pairs Silver Epaulettes for Grenr. Native Officers,
- 15 Silver Epaulettes for Battalion Native Officers."

It is apparent, therefore, that though the jacket varied with the rank of the wearer, the epaulettes were the same both for Subadars and Jemadars.

The differentiation of rank by means of the lace was not peculiar to any one Corps, for, in February, 1817, the Clothing Board rejected a proposal that both the Subadars and Jemadars of the Dromedary Corps (then being raised) should have silver lace. The grounds were that "Jamadars of all other Branches of the Service have only silk lace."

A little later in the same year, the Secretary to the Clothing Board wrote to the Adjutant-General, Fort William, that "the Commanding Officer of the Champarun Light Infantry requests that his Subadars may have silver lace . . . The Uniform of this Corps was lately changed . . . from Red to Green, and to be the same shape &c. as the Mountaineer Companies by which the Subadars have Silver Wings, and Black Silk Lace, a mark . . . sufficiently distinguishing."

A General Order to the Bengal Army by the Vice-President in Council, dated 28th October, 1817, instituted the rank of Subadar-Major. This new rank did not confer any increase in responsibility or power, but was purely honorific and was granted as a reward for long and distinguished service. It carried with it an increase in pay of twenty-five rupees a month. To add dignity to the position of these Officers, on 26th September, 1818, the Governor-General in Council "resolved that Subadar and Serang Majors of the Army should, in addition to their present uniform, be distinguished by wearing a pair of rich Epaulets." This expense was to be charged to the State, and a copy of the resolution was to be despatched to the Governments of Madras and Bombay.

Enclosed with a Letter from Court in October, 1819, was a Shipment List which mentions "Epaulets for Subadar Majors—Gold Straps with rich Gold Bullions for . . . Golundauze (Native Foot Artillery), Gun Lascars, and Pioneers." Native Infantry and Native Cavalry are shewn as wearing silver epaulettes. These apparently were of different designs, for they are listed sparately.

The Madras Army adopted similar epaulettes, in 1820, for the Subadar-Majors of Infantry and Foot Artillery, while, in 1822, those of Horse Artillery and Light Cavalry were ordered to wear gold-and-crimson sash. Other Native Commissioned Officers of the two latter Corps were directed to wear plain crimson girdles.

Another sidelight is thrown on the dress of the Madras Army in a Letter to Court from the Governor-General, written in 1821, in explanation of an unsatisfactory state of affairs which had arisen in the Clothing Accounts. It reads, "The cost of Epauletts, which are furnished at Madras to all Native Officers of the Army, viz. Subadars, Jemadars, Serangs and Tindals, amounts to almost Rs. 4,000." In Bengal, however, the letter says, only Subadar Majors were furnished with epaulettes. As the other Native Officers clearly were then, they must have been required to pay for them themselves.

Another indication of the nature of the distinctions worn by the Native Commissioned Officers is contained in a Bengal General Order of 1827 drawing attention to the practice of Officers wearing unauthorised decorations in their caps. For Native Officers, this order prescribes "short Feathers, 6 inches long, red and white (for Infantry), white (for Grenadiers), or green (for Light Infantry)."

A letter from the Adjutant-General in 1830 permits the Native Officer of the Golundauze Battalions to wear the undress jacket, sword and sword-best of the European Officers, "providing them at their own expense."

Prior to 1829, Captains and Subalterns of Battalion Companies were only one epaulette, but in that year they adopted two. It appears that then, or shortly afterwards, the Native Officers followed suit, for, in the Proceedings of the Clothing Board in 1832, there is a reference to a return for the year 1830 from which a pair of Subadar's epaulettes had been omitted.

A series of coloured prints, under the title "Costumes of the Indian Army," was published in London by Rudolph Ackermann in 1845 and in the succeeding years. These give a very good idea of the uniforms of the Honourable East India Company's Armies at the height of their splendour. One of these prints, dated 17th October, 1845, was made from a sketch drawn in India by an Officer of 21st Fusiliers. It depicts two Native Officers of the Nizam's Army, one in 3rd Infantry, the other in the Foot Artillery.

The uniform of 3rd Infantry (Fig. 5) is scarlet with green facings, and the lace is either yellow or gold. The wings have green straps and scarlet crescents, and are laced. The fringe appears to be of bullion. The sash is crimson. The turban is dark blue with the decoration in yellow or gold. It is not possible to determine, however, whether the Officer is a Subadar or a Jemadar.

The uniform of the Foot Artillery (Fig. 6) is blue with scarlet facings, and the lace, by comparison with the figure of a Sepoy which is also shewn, appears to be gold. The trousers are blue with a broad scarlet stripe. The sash and turban are similar to those of the Infantry Officer. The epaulettes have gold lace straps, embroidered edges, and gilt or embroidered crescents. The fringes are of heavy gold bullion. It is probable that this picture represents a Subadar-Major.

Two other prints in this collection show Native Commissioned Officers of the Bengal and the Bombay Armies, and it is noticeable that the straps and crescents of their wings are covered with chain like those of the European Officers.

The Subadar of 21st Bengal Native Infantry (Fig. 4) is wearing a necklace which, in the print, is shown as yellow or gold. Whether this ornament hore any relation to his rank cannot be said; but, in an anonymous "History of 1st Sikh Infantry, 1846—1886" (1887), it is recorded that, in 1847, the full dress of the Regiment was a "red cloth jacket with yellow facings. The Native

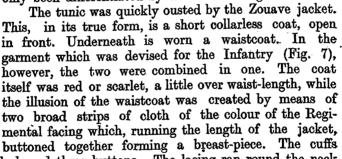
Officers were gold bead necklaces as badges of rank: Subadars, two rows; Indiadars, one row."

The Utility Age.—The Golden Age ended in England in 1855, as a result of the lessons learned in the Crimean War. In India, however, the Mutiny delayed any parallel changes, and it was not until some five years later that the old dress was completely abolished. Although it is true to say that the evolution of the present fighting dress dates from these times, not every garment which has been introduced has been remarkable for its usefulness. The worst seems to have been the Zouave jacket, which was copied from the French.

Before considering the actual distinction of rank, it would be as well to describe the principal types of coat with which we shall be concerned. Tunic is the technical name for the modern full-dress Infantry coat. This garment has not altered materially since its introduction, except in details such as the shape of the collar and cuffs, and the adornments to the shoulders.

In general appearance, it resembles the patrol jacket, but has no pockets and more buttons. Normally, the Infantry tunic was (and is) red or scarlet, with the collar and cuffs of the colour of the Regimental facings. Until the beginning of this century, the quantity of gold or silver lace increased with rank

but, since then, the Regimental Officers' uniforms have only been differentiated by the actual badges of rank.





were round, with a slash and three buttons. The lacing ran round the neck and down the fronts to the waist. On the shoulders were crimson shoulder cords. The Zouave jacket was extremely tight, and it was a common complaint that the breast-piece formed a very useful aiming-mark for the enemy.

The Norfolk jacket, which was the forerunner of the modern service dress

lacket, was also suitably coloured, and had an upright, or a stand-and-fall, collar. It was worn by the Mountain Artillery.

In the Cavalry, either an alkhalik or " a frock without a collar" was worn. An alkhalik (Fig. 8) is a collarless surcoat open at the breast, the gap being roughly oval and extending from the shoulders to a little above the waist. The gap is filled by a plastron, called the purdah, which fits inside the body of the garment. The skirt, which reached within three inches of the knees, was slit before and behind. It is still worn in the full dress of some Corps to-day.

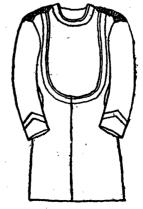


Fig. 8.

Digitized by Google

From the nature of the decoration prescribed for it, the "frock without a collar" (Fig. 9) appears to have been a form of kurta, resembling the modern bush-shirt, but closed in front

below the waist. This garment, too, is still worn.



Fig. 9

On 14th October, 1863, a General Order was published describing the dress of the Bengal Cavalry. The Native Officers were ordered to wear, according to their Regiment, either an alkhalik or a "frock without a collar." These garments were edged with gold or silver lace "round the neck, breast, and cuffs." For Risaldars and Ressaidars, the lace was one inch wide; for Jemadars, three quarters of an inch. The arrangement of this lace, reconstructed from photographs, is shewn in the somewhat conventional illustrations. On the shoulders were "metal shoulder cords of curb-chain or chain mail."

Proceedings of the Government of India in the Military Department, on 27th February, 1874, dealt with various proposals to alter the Infantry uniform, substituting the tunic for the Zouave jacket. It was also suggested that certain distinctions of rank, similar to those worn by the European Officers, should be adopted for the Native Officers. For a Subadar-Major, the device was to consist of two chevrons of gold lace (point upwards), half an inch wide, with a line of round eyes of gold Russia braid tracing, surmounted by an Austrian knot above them

(Fig. 10); for a Subadar, a similar device, but with straight tracing; and for a Jemadar, a device similar to that of the Subadar, but with only one chevron. The collar of the tunic was to be one inch high, laced round the outside with gold lace, half an inch wide, and along the collar seam with gold Russia braid. A Subadar-Major was to wear two stars (similar to those of the Officers) on the collar; a Subadar, one; and a Jemadar, no badge.



Fig. 10

None of these proposals was adopted, and the Zouave jacket remained.

At this time, a Committee was sitting in Simla, engaged in revising Standing Orders. Its contribution to the Proceedings tells us that it had devised a "uniform for the ranks of Subadar Major, Subadar and Jemadar with the respective badges." Unfortunately, however, it is not recorded what these were, but, as no mention is made of any badges being already in existence, it would appear that, in 1874, no system of badges (in the sense of self-contained devices attached to the dress) had been evolved.

In 1877, however, an amendment to the "Indian Clothing Code, 1855" was published in Standing General Orders. This informs us that a Subadar wore "gold double swords," and that a Jemadar had a "gold single sword." Where these badges were worn is not stated; nor has it been possible to trace a copy of the Code. Possibly, these were the products of the labours of the Standing Orders Revision Committee.

Proceedings in the Military Department, in 1880, mention that in the Mountain Batteries of the Punjab Frontier Force, similar badges were worn on the collar of the Norfolk jacket. Those of a Subadar are described as "double or crossed swords."

A photograph of the Officers and Native Officers of 7th Duke of Connaught's Own BengalNat ive Infantry [now 3rd Battalion, 7th Rajput Regiment (Duke of Connaught's Own), taken in 1883, shews the design of the sword badges and the

position in which they were worn. The badge of a Subadar (Fig. 11) consisted of two native swords crossed, points and edges uppermost; that of a Jemadar, a single sword set horizontally, edge upwards, and pointing outwards. Both badges were worn in pairs, parallel to the lace round the neck, and

in the position corresponding with the collar-bone. The illustration of the Zouave jacket (Fig. 7) was made from this photograph, and shows the exact positions.

In May, 1885, a khaki Active Service Uniform for Officers was introduced in India, and, in September of the same year, the Native Officers of the Bengal Infantry were ordered to wear the same uniform with the sword badges in brass on the shoulder straps.

Detailed orders regarding the dress of Native Officers are contained in "Army Regulations, India, Vol. VII-Dress, 1886," and in them badges of rank (as distinct from variations of lace) are described for the infantry of all three Presidencies. In the full dress of the Cavalry, however, only variations of lace (different in each Presidency) were prescribed.

The Bengal Cavalry wore a loose frock of Regimental colour with a cuff of the Regimental facings. This garment was a kurta, trimmed in the same manner as in 1863.

The Madras Cavalry wore a grey serge alkhalik, garnished with silver lace three quarters of an inch wide. For a Subadar-Major, on each side of the lace (except round the neck, where it was on the lower side only) ran a line of eyelets of silver Russia tracing braid. The lace on the cuff formed a chevron (point upwards) with a flowered knot of tracing braid above and below. For a Subadar, the tracing on the inner (or lower) side of the lace was straight. For a Jemadar, the tracing on both sides of the lace was straight, and the flowered knot in the lower angle of the chevron on the cuff was replaced by a crow's-foot knot (Fig. 12).



Fig. 12

In these regulations, only the Madras Cavalry are mentioned as wearing "distinctive badges of rank" on the khaki blouse. Though it is not specified what form they took, it is probable that they were the same as those of the Infantry. The lace designs of the full dress would have been difficult to adapt to a shoulder strap.

The Bombay Cavalry had a dark green serge blouse. Rank was distinguished by a "sleeve ornament of gold tracing braid round the cuff, pointed up in front, five inches in height." For Risaldars, the ornament was formed of three lines of tracing; for Ressaidars, of two; and for Jemadars, of one. There was a light, half an inch wide, between the rows, the lowest of which was two inches from the end of the sleeve.

The Cavalry of the Punjab Frontier Force retained the lace distinctions of 1863.

The badges of rank of the Infantry also differed slightly in detail in each Presidency. In Bengal, a Zouave jacket with a collar was worn. For Native

Officers, gold lace, three quarters of an inch wide, ran round the neck (under the collar) and down the fronts. Subadar-Majors are not mentioned, but Subadars and Jemadars wore the sword badges on the collar, except in 1st Gurkha Light Infantry and in Regiments dressed in green, where the swords were replaced by Kukries.

In Madras, the Infantry wore collarless Zouave jackets, laced with gold in the same way as in Bengal. The badges of rank, in gold embroidery, were placed a quarter of an inch below the lace round the neck on each side of the breast-piece. A Subadar-Major wore a crown; the other Native Officers, the sword badges. On the khaki jacket, these badges were worn on the shoulder.

The Bombay Infantry had a scarlet tunic with the badges of rank on the collar. These, too, were the same as in Bengal, except that a Subadar-Major wore a crown and crossed swords, side by side. According to "Army Regulations, India," the badges were in gold, but "Clothing Regulations, Native Army, Bombay, 1886," describe the crown as gold and the swords as silver. Probably only the blades were silver.

The Baluch Regiments of the Bombay Army had riflegreen coats with scarlet facings and the badges of rank on the collar. A Subadar wore two silk embroidered stars; a Jemadar, one. It seems likely that the stars were embroidered in black, of the same design as those formerly worn on the collar by the European Officers of Rifle Regiments.

Proceedings in the Military Department, in 1887, record a suggestion from the Bombay Army that the crimson shoulder cords of the Native Officers of Infantry should be replaced by cloth shoulder-straps bearing the badges of rank. To lend weight to this argument, a specimen of the collar worn by the Subadar-Major, 2nd Grenadiers, was produced. Rightly described as preposterous, this had on it, in addition to the crown and the crossed swords, a Grenade, the Prince of Wales's Plume, and the Sphinx and "Egypt." The Bombay Army was informed that, in any case, a new system of badges of rank for Native Officers was under consideration. This was to be on the shoulders, which would enable the Grenadiers to wear the other badges more conveniently.

The proposals were sanctioned and, on 15th November, 1887, a General Order to the Bengal Army directed that a Subadar-Major of Infantry should wear a silver metal crown on each shoulder strap; a Subadar, two silver metal stars; and a Jemadar, one. The crown was of the pre-1901 pattern, with the arches countersunk: the star, of the type still worn in service dress to-day.

In the same year, the Bengal Cavalry and the Bengal Lancers adopted three silver stars for a Risaldar-Major; two, for a Risaldar and a Ressaidar; and one, for a Jemadar. Within two years, almost every Regiment had adopted the new badges. "Army Regulations, India, Vol. VII, 1891," show only the Cavalry of the Punjab Frontier Force as wearing the lace distinctions. In a photograph of that Corps, taken in 1897, however, the Risaldar-Major is wearing three silver stars on the shoulder chains; the Risaldars and Ressaidars, two; and the Jemadars, one.

The 1900 Edition of these Regulations incorporates the developments of the preceding 14 years in one paragraph, prescribing three stars for a Risaldar-Major (except in the Hyderabad Contingent—a crown); a crown for a Subadar-Major (except in the Madras Lancers—three stars); two stars for a Risaldar, a Ressaidar, and a Subadar; and one for a Jemadar. The pattern of crown was changed in 1901 to that now used.

In 1903, an India Army Circular made the crown the badge for all Risaldar-Majors and Subadar-Majors.

The title "Indian Officer" was introduced in 1911 and remained in use until the creation of the Indian Commissioned Officer, in 1935, when the style Viceroy's Commissioned Officer was evolved.

The only modification which has been made to the badges settled in 1903 was occasioned by the present war and the difficulty, in orders of dress such as battle-dress and bush-shirts, of distinguishing the Viceroy's Commissioned Officers from other Indian Officers. In 1941, therefore, it was ordered that, on shirts, bands of braid, "red-yellow-red," would be worn across the shoulder straps: Risaldar-Majors and Subadar-Majors, three bands with a miniature silver crown on each; Risaldars and Subadars, two bands each with a miniature silver star; and Jemadars, one, with a miniature star. On garments with upright collars, the badges of 1903 were to be retained. In 1942, the use of the new badges was extended to greatcoats and battle-dress, so that, in effect, they are now worn in all authorised orders of dress. At the beginning of 1944, the silver crowns and stars were replaced by similar ones of khaki worsted.

# More Churchillian Phrases

1942. January 1.—"Here is to a year of toil, a year of struggle and peril and a long step forward towards victory."

May 10.—"I hait it as an example of sublime and poetic justice that those who have loosed these horrors on mankind will now feel the shattering strokes of just retribution."

November 10.—"We have a remarkable and definite victory (at Alamein). A bright gleam has caught the helmets of our soldiers and warmed and cheered all our hearts. Now this is not the end. It is not even the beginning of the end. But it is perhaps the end of the beginning."

- 1943. May 19.—"In North Africa the unexpected came to the aid of design and multiplied the results; for this we have to thank the military intuition of Corporal Hitler."
- 1944. February 22.—"There is no doubt that the Germans are preparing new methods of attack, either by pilotless aircraft, possibly rockets, or both."
- June 6.—"The first of a series of landings in force upon the European continent has taken place."
- 1945. January 1.—"Before many months have passed the evil gang that has too long dominated that unhappy Continent will be wiped out."
- May.—"The evil-doers are now prostrate before us. . . We seek nothing for ourselves, but we must make sure that those causes for which we fought find recognition at the peace table in fact as well as in word; and, above all, we must labour that the world organisation being created at San Franciscodoes not become a shield to the strong and a mockery to the weak. It is the victors who must search their hearts in their glowing hours and be worthy by their nobility of the immense forces that they wield."



#### A LETTER TO MARS—IN 1960\*

By LIEUT.-COLONEL J. N. CHAUDHURI, O.B.E.

SIR,—I have the honour to give below a brief report on India's Army as required by you. A detailed report will follow soon.

The Indian Army consists of a Regular Army 1,500,000 strong and a Territorial Army 4,000,000 strong. As in our Army, the former provides the nucleus of the Armed Forces plus the training cadre, while the latter is available in the event of any national or planetary struggle.

Enlistment in the Army is open to all citizens of India who can fulfil the educational and physical standards required. There is no class, tribe or religious distinction of any sort. No unit or sub-unit is entirely composed of any particular class or tribe. Any man can enlist in any unit, provided the vacancies exist, on a voluntary All-India basis. This system has many advantages. The Army is national in character and so of great value in the preservation of internal law and order. Its educative force, particularly as an example to the rest of India for a way of living, is very powerful.

As in the past, the man-power question does not arise, as there is the whole of India to recruit from. A tremendous reserve of man-power all over India has been formed, all speaking the same language and available for expansion or to train Territorials. Apparently in the 1939-45 war, some units had to remain static or be disbanded owing to the old system of class composition. Certain classes were over-recruited and no replacements were available.

Although the Indian soldier has a real regard for his religion, no religious difficulties arise. Every man is allowed to worship as he pleases and every facility is given him in this matter. Religious teachers for all the main religions are attached to formations on a Brigade basis. Their selection and appointment is a matter of considerable care. As a result they are broadminded, educated and well-paid men, who do much towards the morale of the soldiers.

The feeding problem, which was an integral part of the religious problem, has been solved. On enlistment a man states he is prepared to eat from a non-communal cookhouse, though he is not required to eat food which his religion forbids him to do. In each sub-unit there are two cookhouses. One serves meat, while the other is vegetarian. The soldier has to state in advance from which he is going to eat. In both cookhouses, atta and rice are cooked in the proportions required; both are simple to cook.

At first, I am told, there were a certain number of digestive upsets. Some liked their food spiced, others not so spiced; some liked their food rich, others wanted it simple. A basic formula has been evolved, however, as a result of experience, while the system of recruiting through Army Boys' Schools means that digestions are conditioned early to the Army diet. Excellent canteens exist which provide the occasional change of flavour to those who require it.

<sup>\*</sup>Considerable changes have occurred in the Indian Army even in the last half century, and it is certain that more will occur in the next fifty years. In this letter, written in 1960 by an imaginary Liaison officer of the Martian Forces to his C.G.S., the author is reporting on India's Army of that year. Many may declare that the advances reported by the author are idealistic, but none can deny that the benefits they would confer on Country and Army alike would have far-reaching effects on the population as a whole and would continue to build on the fine traditions of the past.—Ed. U. S. "Journal".

The language problem, about which you asked me particularly to enquire, has been dealt with in an interesting manner. When the new-style Indian Army was formed, owing to the number of English technical terms in use, Basic English was made the language of the Indian Army. In view of co-operation with other Commonwealth Armies, the introduction of Basic English also found favour in Commonwealth circles. In use, however, it was found too difficult to teach and too cumbersome to use. Hence Urdu in its proper form i.e., as a language of the camp, was brought back. The technical terms still remain English, while all writing is done in the roman script, which is in almost universal use on Earth. In actual fact, due to the excellent educational system, sixty per cent. of the men are bi-lingual. This bi-linguality is encouraged, as a man who speaks English well is sent on short attachments to other Commonwealth Armies, a much prized course.

The system of recruitment is the best I have seen. It is the result of carefully thought out planning from the first day when it was decided to put the Indian Army on its new basis. At first, to obviate language, religious and feeding difficulties, each unit with sub-units of different class composition mixed up their sub-units. Then a system of zone recruiting was instituted. That is to say, recruits for a particular group of units were all found from a certain area of India. As the zone system progressed, a few units were earmarked for All-India recruitment till finally it became rather a disgrace to belong to a unit, still on the zone system. Now all units are based on the All-India system. Naturally in certain units certain classes predominate and in the beginning there was a certain amount of nepotism. Good officers and a system of promotion by merit alone soon put a stop to this.

While this system of general recruitment was evolving, the Armed Forces opened a large number of Boy's Schools all over India and on an All-India basis. These schools are not military schools in that they teach solely military subjects. Education is comprehensive and general. There is no compulsion to join the Armed Forces after graduating, though most of the boys do. Realising this, the Civil Authorities are now taking a great interest in these schools and paying towards their upkeep. The advantage of recruiting through such schools is immense. Recruits are educated and physically well built. As they have been caught young, they are broadminded with few prejudices. Their espritde-corps has to be seen to be believed.

In planning the recruitment of personnel, all the three Services planned and acted together. As a result the distribution of man-power is economically sound. There is no undercutting each other, quotas are filled on a percentage basis and each service offers equal opportunities.

The system of officers' recruitment is interesting. All applicants for a commission must go through the ranks, while the Field-Marshal's baton is definitely in every private's knapsack. Candidates accepted are put through a two-years course at the Military Academy where, after the first year, they specialise for a particular arm of the service. The nationalisation of the Army has produced a good effect on officer intake, as those who in the past fought shy of the "Imperialistic" outlook now do not have the same objection. Besides this, the All-India system has made the army known to far more of India.

Naturally the majority of the officers are Indian. It is interesting, however, to note that there are still a number of Britishers, together with a sprinkling of Commonwealth officers. The reason for this is twofold. When the new scheme was introduced, there were a large number of British Officers in the Indian Army, and many of these stayed on. Those who did not wish to do so

Digitized by GOOGIC

were given a gratuity, or else fitted into the British or other Commonwealth Armies. A scheme was also evolved by which an officer of the British or Commonwealth Armies could apply to be seconded to the Indian Army. This secondment, if approved, was, in the first instance, for five years, extendable by mutual agreement. Many officers have taken advantage of this. In addition to this, short term attachments from the Commonwealth Armies to the India Army and vice versa are very popular.

The Viceroy's Commissioned Officer, a rank in which you were interested, was done away with some time ago. Their original role was to provide the close contact between the British officer and the Indian soldier. With increased Indianisation this became superfluous, while with increased education in the country, the type that made the V.C.O. now makes the Indian officer to a certain extent. This change did not cause as much resentment as it was thought it might do, as the soldier realised that, if he was capable, he could make the officer grade a step beyond the V.C.O.

When this scheme was introduced naturally there were some difficulties. However, a careful preparation of the ground and a slow introduction overcame many of these. The greatest help was the fact that the Royal Indian Navy and the Royal Indian Air Force had worked this method since their inception. The Army saw its success and did not want to be left behind. The political leaders of the time were hostile at the start. They felt that with such a strong, united, non-communal force their power would wane. It did. However, other leaders arose who were co-operative and saw the educational value of such an army. One of the main arguments put forward against the scheme was that an army not composed of the so-called "martial classes" would have no fighting value. Events of the 1939-45 war, particularly among the officer cadre, disproved this. Strangely enough, some of the old type of British officer, who, I believe, used to be given an honorary rank of Quoi Hai, were much against the scheme. On the reorganisation, however, they were retired.

The breaking up of Regimental tradition was also used as an argument against its success. This did not turn out to be so, as the Regimental tradition, much shaken by the system of recruiting in the 1939-45 war, very rapidly developed into an All-Army tradition, which grows stronger every day. What really turned the scales was the Indian soldier himself. In the 1939-45 war he traveled extensively. In his job he met all sorts and types from India and abroad.

War made him shed many of his more irksome prejudices, in the first place through necessity, later through choice. He did not want to revert to them, and being backed by the Army, made the elders of his village come round to his way of thinking. The economic factor also helped as the army offered good pay, chance of promotion and attractive terms of service. These were not to be refused.

The Indian Army is at present a closely-knit, well-trained, national product, drawing on the best of the country's resources. As such it is a useful and formidable force.

I have the honour to be,
SIR,
Your most obedient servant,
XYZ., Col.

# A "PERSONAL" POST-WAR PLAN

By "Nimis"

he l

the

hd

go.

fire

m

THREE things shalt thou not see aboard a yacht for its comfort:—a cow, an umbrella and a Naval Officer." Where did this libel on the Senior Service originate? I have at different times held two theories; the first that it all started with one of our own earliest and not least distinguished yachtsmen—that Samuel Pepys was taken for a cruise by His Majesty in the "curious piece" Mary down to the buoy at the Nore, and that he had had a wordy passage on board with an irate Port Captain to whose accounts he had objected.

The other theory, which I prefer, makes the originator of the thing the skipper of Cleopatra's barge. You will remember Mark Antony came to Egypt as a N.O.; the allusion to the cow was the seafaring man's breezy but regrettably rude way of referring to his glamorous employer; while it is notorious that the vessel was very handsomely found in umbrellas, and what more likely than that trouble was experienced with one in the Khamseen wind?

To return to the point, I cannot say I have not had the thing impressed on me; the very subject was constantly harped upon by a transport captain of the last war, smarting perhaps from an over-zealous Mediterranean S. N. O. He combined his nautical functions with the responsibility of being my father, so his words carried the more weight with me; and it is presumably from him, too, that I derive a life-long hankering for the sea, which, however, first he and then India have all too cruelly suppressed; it will be all the stronger when our present troubles are over and soldiers are ten-a-penny again.

A desperate longing to go to sea was foiled by passing bad eyesight at Osborne age, and, later, by the aforesaid stern parent when I would have followed his footsteps into the Merchant Navy. Various weighty references to not sending dogs to sea were made on his infrequent stays at home, and diverted me from the sea as a profession to an odd mixed Army and R. A. F. career; as a preliminary to going finally to sea as an amateur it has been eminently satisfactory, and it has from time to time allowed me odd snatches of the sea, just enough to preserve balance and keep my goal before me.

But what was that opening quotation all about? You have probably guessed that I propose to set it at defiance, and in what respect? The first object named is unlikely to be my chosen companion, and the second would not wreck matters irreparably; but the naval officer evidently presents a clue; and so it is. Postwar plans are subtly entwined with Dolly, my wife, and Gordon, her brother, who is the N.O. in question, and the good ship "———". At present the latter is still unchristened; it may be her name will be arrived at before I have finished these ramblings.

And let me make it clear before leaving our old maxim, that I consider it quite unjustified, and undoubtedly one of those mistaken cases of reasoning from the particular to the general which so many proverbs are. Beyond a certain unholy delight in making passengers seasick, I have had no cause for anything but the most cordial agreement with all my naval shipmates in yachts; while the behaviour of a yacht is sufficiently different from that of a battlewagon to turn the tables in this respect occasionally, which is always a reason for quiet satisfaction.

The Plan, then, rests on the theme of our spending our declining years afloat, and I will ask you to be patient with me at the working of it out. In one respect, I would like the reader to realise that he is in a very privileged position, as he is hearing much of it before the other two most concerned; on the other hand, he is perhaps being unfairly treated, in that he may have started to read in the hope of having a cut and dried plan put before him for his own adoption, or for verbal destruction; whereas he is being asked to assist at its birth, and criticism will, I hope, lose the worst of its sting.

Now for a word about Dolly and Gordon. I hope I may be forgiven for bringing in their names in this manner; I have wearied so of yarns about "X——" and "Y——", and it has always seemed a senseless convention which has put me out of sympathy with the wretched people concerned. Will the reader therefore please know me as John, and Dolly and Gordon by their own names, which most admirably suit a couple of people I am remarkably fond of?

Dolly, I fear, is in a way the prospective victim of a conspiracy here; she has been imposed upon before in the matter of sailing, when she has endured anchoring in a swell in the lee of an oil refinery, four feet of headroom, impossible food cooked in quite unsuitable circumstances, and nights on the mud in a 5-tonner in the Solent. But we hope to offer her very much better things, and feel sure that an almost maternal solicitude for Gordon and me will persuade her even against her better judgement; Gordon, I feel, is very much of my own mind in the matter.

As to the shape the vessel is to take, a conflict naturally arises between the crew's desire for handiness and easy working, and the passengers' demands for houseroom and comfort; this is in no way diminished by both parties being the same. But the answer comes ready to hand in the shape of a Thames Barge.

For the benefit of those who do not know her well, the barge sports a large sprit mainsail with a flying topmast and tops'le, and a mizer carried on the rudder head, making her as handy as a 14-foot dinghy in coming about; while, as she carries leeboards, her draught is only between four and five feet aft, her deepest part. And, of course, every foot off the draught opens up thousands of miles of possible cruising waters.

Before the war, the barge could be bought fit for sea (as a trading barge) in all respects, and thoroughly cleaned inside, for £350 or so; it is reasonable to assume that after the war there will still be barges available; very likely new ones are being built, only to be forced off the seas again by coasting steamers and to be available for sale. There are steel barges; here the cost is an incalculable factor, which might or might not be worth incurring, especially as wartime wooden construction would be doubtful; a pre-war wooden barge is probably what we shall look for.

As a trading vessel, the barge disdains an engine, but for our greater convenience it would be a most desirable addition, and we shall aim at 65—70 h. p. in either one or two Diesel or paraffin units. Deck additions that will be needed for the ageing crew will be a hydraulic windlass-cum-capstan and a winch, either specially geared or power-driven, for leeboards, halliards and other purposes.

Below, we intend to be extremely comfortable; and, as the craft will replace two houses and at least one yacht, there will be an adequate sum of money available for the purpose. It may not be realised what the size of the barge is; 16 feet beam, with 6½ feet headroom (except in the way of the mast)

for the whole of a 70—80 feet length. There is thus room for a living-room 16 feet by any reasonable length, separate dining room, galley, bedrooms and usual offices on the most ample scale; the question of crew space will hang on what is finally settled upon as the size of the crew, of which more later.

A most desirable feature of the plans (which are on paper, in a very fluid state) is a combined chartroom, lounge and main entrance, which will have a sliding roof, and be half sunk in the deck over the engine room; its floor will lift for work below.

A major cause of headaches in drawing the plans may here be mentioned. The barge is built on a keelson, which stretches the length of the ship, and is a beam 18" wide and a foot or so above the level of the floor. Where possible, this can be got over by dividing the space longitudinally, and building the bulkheads over it; but it remains a nasty obstacle in the main living room, which wants the whole of the beam. Some barge converters have cut down the keelson to floor level, but one would hate to weaken one's vessel in this manner. In the steel barge, it is, I believe, an insignificant member, resembling a railway line—probably it actually is in some cases.

As regards the plumbing and other amenities of life, the enormous space below gives room for really adequate water storage, with water heating arrangements coupled up to an Esse cooker or similar installation. There will be a connection for a shore pipe, when at headquarters or alongside a civilized quay; this will give full shore facilities so far as quantities used are concerned; a sumptank is allowed for all drainage, with a pump overside. At the moment there is some hesitation as to whether calor gas or anthracite is to be the cooking and heating medium; probably anthracite, for which coke can be substituted.

The electrical installation we propose to make of fairly good capacity, to deal with all services bar heating and cooking; and here there is a choice between a high voltage constant running A. C. supply, which would be extravagant, or a battery installation, of, say, 32 volts. Both have arguments for and against, which will have to be gone into. In either case, there will be a connection to shore mains for use when feasible.

Such being the vessel, I should like to outline what we propose to do with her.

In the first place, a preliminary stay in England is definitely on. Whether it will be our final home, or not, is another matter, which will be decided later, but for the first year or two of retirement the family H. Q. will be a fixed one, and a wharf used with permanent moorings, a road approach and suitable garage and storage space; also living room while conversion is in progress, and, perhaps, guest room. It will be in a reasonable spot for winter residence, but not too far from sea water; Wareham, Beccles and the Helford River, in Cornwall, are all in the running, while the River Thames is also a possibility; there is excellent accommodation within ten minutes of Piccadilly Circus if it is looked for, and of course many pleasant and suitable places higher up.

The programme for this period, then, would be a winter hibernation, with an occasional day's sail on the very pleasant days one so often hates to miss as a summer yachtsman, a three months' summer cruise, and small pottering trips for the remainder of the summer.

But it is certain that sooner or later the wanderlust will come over us, and that is the real point of the Barge (it is coming to be spelt with a capital B). These craft have safely crossed the Atlantic, and there is no reason why we should not see all the parts of the world we have always wanted to. A possible

Digitized by GOOGLE

sequence—no programme will in any circumstances be adhered to—after we have seen all our home cruising grounds, would be a Baltic summer, to get a our foreign-going arrangements well tested out; then the next spring down the Mediterranean by the easiest of stages—a month in Breton ports, a stay of Vigo, another in Oporto, and so on. The Mediterranean might keep us a year or two; then, at the season of the year, off down the Red Sea in hops to Ada, a long passage across to Karachi, old haunts in India, Colombo, and then—or longest passage yet—to Fremantle. A very long stay in Australia, I think, mainly in Sydney, where a dozen anchorages call—Rose Bay, Rushcutters' Bay, Many; and then—who shall say? I don't think we should face the Pacific without going deep into it, and probably across it in the course of a year or two. And then, if we went through Panama and across the Atlantic home, we shall probably be of an age to call it a good lifetime, and settle in some quiet yet to round it off.

And now, are we justified in leaving England? Gordon, I think, is fully entitled to please himself: he was axed from the Navy in the middle of a very promising career, as a measure of economy, then recalled to a dugout position when apprehension took the place of economy as the ruling passion; he, I think, has every moral right to make his own choice. So far as Dolly and I are concerned, we shall have taken our allotted parts in the War, and it is reasonable to assume that the elderly and those becoming so will be of even less material value to the country than before; in new economic schemes they will be taking out rather than putting in. Besides, much of our joint income will be coming from India and Australia, so I think, if Britain balances the income we actually take out of the country against some other incoming Indian pension, no one will be the worse off. And, again, it is hard to believe that the great mas of work done voluntarily in the past by the elderly will not in the future be done at least equally efficiently for pay by the young.

We shall, then, leave England for our ten to fifteen years' trip (and, were we tempted on the way, for good) with quite an easy conscience. I should have mentioned before our lack of family ties; England loses a great deal of its attraction when they are gone. Excess of sunshine, again, is a state as much derided (by those who cannot get it) as an excess of money; but our view I think is that we don't get enough of it in England; and, when one can move

one's home at will in search of more, why not?

There is certain to be a full and free discussion as to the Barge's name, and it may please the reader to think what he (and particularly she) would call her. I have always rather deprecated calling my vessel by a name even remotely having masculine associations, which rules out many possibilities. Surely, in the States, they sometimes find difficulties with such a remark as:—"The Ulysses S. Grant's a cuto little craft, isn't she?" Then again, there are many ladies' names which I feel I am slightly snobbish in not caring for, but there is one—a former "Maggie" I owned slightly grated on my sensibilities, at which I hope nobody will be mortally offended.

One wants a name which will be reasonably short; painting letters on diffebuoys goes at so much a letter, or wastes twenty minutes a letter if you do it yourself. And, most important of all, one wants a name which will give no openings for mis-pronunciation by one's friends—and enemies—be they never so rough diamonds, or speakers of never so odd languages. Most flowers come under one or the other of these bans, and, personally, I am all for dipping into the "Nautical Almanac" and finding a friendly and female sounding star. Vega is my cockshy, a drawback being that it appears several times already in Lloyd's List.

A word now on the subject of finance. In my view the idea is on, with modifications, for anyone above the poverty line, with or without a family; the but cruising far and wide wants a lot of thinking about unless the ship's income long is fairly adequate. If you want to badly enough, you will go, and Weston the Martyr's "Two Hundred Pound Millionaire" will be your exemplar; you will be conditions below, would make the scheme feasible; but to get comfort comparable with shore living I suggest a combined ship's income in four figures will certainly be needed. To my figuring, the number partaking seems to make little difference went; but one would have to know all one's partners "awfu' well." And, too, while it would probably be the very finest of real education for any offspring, we'll would not butter many academical parsnips.

Then, the question arises, as promised, of what, if any, paid help the Vega—let us assume the name sticks—will carry. Here I think the nature of the venture helps us enormously, in that there are so many in England of a but not able to run to it so far as worldly goods are concerned.

We don't want much in the way of brawn on deck, and we may flatter guard to go urselves, but we do think we have the necessary brains in the after guard to take us where we would go; but some profound and first-hand knowledge of the way of a barge would be well worth having, and we would certainly like a capable hand in the cook's and steward's department. With which in view, we think was of an ex-barge skipper or mate and his wife. It seems like an ideal arrangement on both sides.

Amplifying slightly the remark above as to brawn not being really wanted, if I would like the reader to realize that most barges spend their working life—under far worse conditions than ours, which goes out in yacht weather—manned by two men, or even a man and a boy; while we propose labour-saving with our by hydraulic windlass and engine. And for a long passage there should never be any difficulty in finding an extra watchkeeper to come for his passage and keep.

One last point is, the need for barge experience on the part of the unpaid crew. Handling a barge looks, and is, as easy a job as most afloat, when you know how. But it is, like so many "easy" jobs, an acquired art, and, during the conversion stage, Gordon and I will probably both ship in trading barges for two or three months, preferably when there is a little weather about. The Portland Cement Co., run a very fine fleet up channel from Portland, and would probably be our aim; it should not be difficult to arrange in return for paying one's messing and keeping the ship's decanter awash.

Such, then, is one little postwar plan; and any criticism readers may feel inclined to add to Dolly's and Gordon's when they read my version of it all—any such criticism will be more than welcome. And so will the critics in person if they will seek out the *Vega* in 194..?

# MASTERS OF DECEPTION

STUDENTS of German psychology well know how the Nazi leaders failfully adhered to the Feuhrer's comment on page 252 of the Germa edition of Mein Kampf that "the broad masses of a nation fall victims now easily to a big lie than to a small one."

Below we recall some of the amazing—and sometimes amusing—statement of Germans in this war:

"We are proud to master the world as Germans. . . To-day Add Hitler is called upon to be the leader of the world unhampered by anyone. Add Hitler stands before the world as the greatest war lord in history."—Dr. Frank, Governor of Poland, 21-12-40.

NAVAL Power.—"The day of Britain's might at sea is past. Aircraft and U-boat have turned surface fleets into obsolete playthings of the wealthy democracies. They are no longer a serious weapon in decisive warfare."—"Hills Speaks."

"It has become crystal-clear to the whole world that the armoured gians on which alone rest England's claims to dominate the seas have diminished is stature, and that the new forces of a new age actually possess the destructive weapons necessary to break England's supremacy at sea."—" Deutsche Allgemein Zeitung," 5-5-40.

"The modern aerial bomb with its absolutely devastating charge of high explosive has to all intents and purposes altered the value of modern by battleships."—Radio Bremen, 9-5-40.

"In an action between naval power and air it is air power which is variably gets the upper hand."—German broadcast to England, 30-5-41.

"The British Fleet cannot help Great Britain. Warships are absolutely helpless against attacking aircraft. Many English warships have fallen victims to the German dive-bombers, against which they have no defence."—German home broadcast, 30-6-40.

"The days are past when a war can be won by navies. The naval war has gone against England from the very beginning."—German broadcast is English to North America, 3-4-41.

"The blows dealt have again proved that in actual combat, the Lufturffe is superior to British Naval Forces, and is thoroughly adequate to destroy English sea power."—"Nachtausgabe," 23-5-41.

BLOCKADE.—"Germany is now mistress of the seas; her blockade has completely encircled Britain."—Dr. Ley, 26-8-40.

"The British Navy is not equal to the task of securing the communications of the British Isles."—German home broadcast, 3-12-41.

"The key to Britain's military position lies in the fact that the British Navy and the merchant fleet cannot even think any more of offensive enterprises, they can only consider defence. The Merchant Navy is inadequate to supply even the requirements of the war industry; for the transport of large troop contingents; in the establishment of a second front its numbers are altogether insufficient."—Admiral Lucizow in German home broadcast, 21-10-42

"The entire Atlantic is a zone of death and the large shipping lines have been made desolate."—Berliner Lokal-Anzeiger, 5-11-42.

"The British Navy is simply impotent against the heroic German U-boats." -German home broadcast, 2-11-42.

Nazi leader "The day will come on which the lack of shipping in the enemy's camp 52 of the will be so marked that they will no longer be free to execute their strategical tion fall with decisions."—German home broadcast, 8-2-43.

"The effective striking power of the German submarine arm will increase amusing as the weather improves. Britain's position is very largely determined by the battle of the seas. This is a struggle in which she must not hope for any relief."— . . In William Joyce, 5-5-43.

ed by anyon

fence."-60

The name

an brooks

t, the 🎉

r blocked

the come

at the Bi

edaine &

padegui

port dk

1000 best 1 et, 21-11<sup>1</sup>

"After destroying the regiments of the French armies we have overstory."-li taken the English Expeditionary Force. . . Leaving behind gigantic quantities of war materials and with units disbanded, this elite English Army, under the speak im most dramatic circumstances, tried to save naked life. This attempt has, the mally however, been frustrated by the incessant attacks of the German armed forces wardar." from land and air. What is left of the B. E. F. is doomed to complete annihilation."-" Berliner Zeitungam Mittage," 30-5-40.

INVASION OF BRITAIN.—"German battalions will soon appear on the we dimise banks of the Thames and four million insufficiently trained British soldiers will ess the to never succeed in offering any effective resistance."—German broadcast to )eutsche 🕪 England, 26-6-40.

"In six weeks the French colossus was overthrown; England, too, is part in the next six weeks the British will realise this, whether they of mind like it or not."—" Voolkischer Beobachter," 23-6-40.

"The final phase of the war will be so short that we would advise Churchill, Eden and their colleagues to book their passage to Canada at once."— 30-5-41. German broadcast to Flanders, 10-7-40.

18 are about "England, the hour of judgement draws inexorably near. The Fuehrer will decide when the hour has struck."—Goebbels, 1-9-40.

"And if the people in England to-day are very curious and ask: 'Why doesn't he come?'—don't worry. He's coming."—Hitler in Sportpalast, 4-9-40.

"There remains no choice for the British Government but to evacuate London."—German home broadcast, 19-9-40.

BATTLE OF BRITAIN.—"Dover is already practically German territory." lestroy B German broadcast to England, 2-9-40.

"Germany has paralysed the R.A.F."-German broadcast to France, 2-9-40.

"There is no prospect of Britain finding an escape from her present situation of air inferiority, either in the coming months of 1940 or in the years of 1941 or 1942, or even later."—Quade, broadcasting from Luxembourg in German, 4-9-40.

"English planes of the third line are now being used. They are completely obsolete and show no fighting power at all."--Zeesen to North and South America, 16-9-40. (On the previous day the R. A. F. shot down 185 German planes for the loss of 26 British planes.)

BOMBING OF LONDON.—"If London or any other big English city attempts to defend itself its destruction will be the matter of a few hours minutes, and it will be as thorough as the destruction of Warsaw or Rotterdum."

—German broadcast to Brazil, 8-7-40.

- "Britain is condemned to death and German planes will ring her death knell. The ring is closing from which there is no escape."—Deutschlandender in German, 13-8-40.
- "The heart of the British Empire has been left in smoking ruins"—German broadcast in German to U. S., 28-8-40.
- "England lies on a salver, awaiting the German Air Force's attack. Secannot escape. John Bull is sitting in a mousetrap. John Bull will be smoked out. Either he will surrender or England will be annihilated."—Dr. Ley is "Der Angriff;" 3-9-40.
- "England, the heart of the British Empire, has become the last remaining battlefield in Europe. It is a question of time—a few weeks, then this configration will have reached its natural end."—German broadcast to England, 10-9-40.

NAZI PROSPECTS IN 1940.—"The war in the West is finished."—Hillo in proclamation to the German people, 24-6-40.

- "The war and the British Empire are lost."—German broadcast to England. 13-9-40.
- "The fate of the British Empire is no longer a question of years, but merely of days."—German home broadcast, 8-9-40.
- "The Axis has as good as pocketed the victory."—Goebbels in "Du Reich," 23-12-40.
- "We are convinced that the war is already won."—General Brauchited to the German Army, 24-12-40.
- "The year 1941 will bring us the greatest victory of our Germany."—Hiller's Order of the Day, 31-12-40,
- "With the 1st of January, the grand year of fate is beginning, during which Adolf Hitler will give to the European Continent prosperity and peace." Dr. Frank's New Year Message to all Germans, 31-12-40.
- "It is not too early to begin investigating some of the causes of Britain's defeat, for that defeat is now inevitable and merely a question of time."—German broadcast to England, 3-11-40,

Bombing of Germany.—"In any case I will see to it that they won't be able to drop one bomb. Ridiculous propaganda pamphlets have been dropped by British planes, but Heaven help them should they exchange the propaganda for a bomb. Then our revenge will not hesitate for a moment and will act in the same way as our air force in Poland."—Goering at Gorring Armament Works, 9-9-39.

- "No enemy, however strong, will be able to carry the war into Germany whether on the ground or in the air."—"Frankfurter Zeitung," 22-8-39.
- "The R. A. F. is technically incapable of causing serious lasting damage."

  —Gen. Quade, in broadcast to Germany, 6-12-40,
- "And what will the R. A. F. do? It will make an attempt now and then to reach the German coast with bombs, but it will not fly in any great strength, because it has become convinced that it is no match for the German Luftwaffe. The German Luftwaffe is incomparably superior to the British."—Major Herman Kohl, in "Wir Fliegen accen England."

"Germany has organised her air defence system very excellently. . The system works so marvellously that it is impossible for the R. A. F. to drop bombs with any chance of success."—German broadcast to England, 30-4-40.

"We must regain superiority in the air and that is asking a great deal in view of the considerable size of the enemy potential. The German people must realise that the leadership is doing its utmost to obtain this goal as quickly as possible."—A Mannheim paper, 10-11-43.

VICTORY PROSPECTS.—"The fight will be renewed until what has been begun will be completed. The year 1942 will bring the decision."—Hitler, in New Year Proclamation to the German people, 1942.

厚陋

ltari.

28

Dr. le

1.

"The new war can and will only have one end: a catastrophe for the British Empire."—Hitler, 26-4-42.

"Triumph after triumph will be added to the proud sequence of successes. Whether we are momentarily at rest or whether we gather for great offensives, the power and the will never forsakes us. That is why we hold the initiative—to-day, yesterday and tomorrow."—Goebbels in Das Reich, 26-6-42.

No Two-Front War.—"The Fuehrer's strategy has always successfully pursued so far the aim of waging the war on one front. Soon the two-front war will be nothing but a painful memory to Germany's enemies."—"Voelkischer Beobachter," 21-7-41.

ALLIED INVASION OF EUROPE.—"The second front must be assigned to the realm of fancy."—Goebbels in "Das Reich", 26-6-42.

"If I had an adversary of significance, then I could approximately calculate where he would attack. But when one deals with military idiots, you can, of course, never know where they will attack. . . And this is the only disagreeable thing about it, that you can never know with these lunatics or confirmed drunkards what they will do next."—Hitler, 20-9-42.

"Wherever Churchill may choose his next spot, he may consider himself lucky if he succeeds in remaining ashore nine hours."—Hitler, 30-9-42.

"Every expert knows that the European continent is barred to any attempted invasion by the British."—Goebbels, 18-11-42.

"The protective wall along the Atlantic-coast of Europe is 200 kilometres longer than the Great Wall of China. The Atlantic Wall is the greatest fortification in the world, and will be able to withstand every attack."—Transocean, 4-4-43.

GOEBBELSIANA.—"The whole German nation thanks the Fuehrer for having brought us such times."—Goebbels, 4-9-40.

"It is indescribable luck for us Germans to be led by Adolf Hitler."—Gauleiter Behle in German home broadcast, 26-12-41.

"It is clear that Rommel is playing fast and loose with Montgomery."—German broadcast to England, 21-1-43.

"Germany is too well aware of the value of bombs to drop them uselessly on non-military objectives."—German broadcast to Belgium, 25-8-40.

"The German Government has never made miscalculations."—Dr. Funk, 1-9-40.

"Throughout this war we have been sticking to facts and we intend continuing to do so in the future. True, our news policy is sometimes a little taciturn, but it considers it dishonourable to claim or spread anything false."—Goebbels, 22-5-42.

# JAPANESE MINES AND BOOBY TRAPS

BY CAPTAIN W. D. BRISTOW, R.E.

Though I intended to write only about Japanese booby traps, I have increased the scope of this article to include Japanese mines, and it may be best to begin with a few words of explanation on the difference between these two types of explosive weapons.

Mines, both anti-tank and anti-personnel, are laid to assist in the defence of an area by closing likely lines of approach in such a way as to hold up and destroy an assaulting or patrolling enemy, or at least to give timely warning of his approach.

Booby traps, on the other hand, are carefully set in an area which its not intended to defend, with the object of "jittering" an occupying enemy. If they succeed in killing a few people, so much the better, but the main object is to prey on his nerves and so lower his morale. Even the trained soldier has his human weaknesses—he will seek out such conveniences as an occupied town or village can offer, and will collect bits of enemy equipment as souvening. It is upon these weaknesses that the booby trap plays. Obviously, the less civilised the area of operations, the less is the scope for the use of booby traps and that is probably the main reason why we have met so few true booby traps in the jungle.

In the British Army we have a large variety of mechanisms for setting off our own booby traps. The Jap engineer, on the other hand, right from his earliest training is taught to improvise from what he can scrounge in the field, which, of course, relieves both his Ordnance and his L. of C. of a big headache, but often presents him with some difficult problems. Up to the present we have found only one general-purpose equipment mechanism for booby traps and demolitions—and that is a simple pull igniter, consisting of a brass tube containing some "match composition" with a piece of string running through it, and an explosive cap.

On being pulled, the string ignites the match composition by friction, and this explodes the cap. The end of the tube is open for the insertion of the end of the fuse. This igniter is of much lower quality than most Jap equipment, and would almost certainly be rendered non-effective by even short exposure to damp, and that is possibly the reason why it has seldom been found in connection with booby traps or improvised mines.

Left to his own resources, the Jap has, as usual, risen to the occasion by producing some quite clever improvisations from his own, and from captured standard equipment. The backbone of his efforts has been the grenade, but before I write about some of the uses to which he has put them, we must consider the salient differences between his grenade and ours. Ours—the No. 36—is fired by the release of a spring-loaded lever, which in the safe position lies down the side of the body and is secured with a safety pin. On removal of the pin, the grenade immediately becomes alive, and requires careful handling.

The Jap grenade has its igniter projecting from one end, and is fitted with a safety fork. On removing this fork, the grenade is still comparatively safe to handle, as the igniter is not spring-loaded but requires a blow on its end to fire the cap. In normal use, this blow is given by the grenadier before

throwing the missile. Both grenades, of course, incorporate a fuse giving a few seconds' delay.

Of the booby traps we have encountered in Burma, many have been attached to items of a Jap's personal equipment or clothing. Not infrequently the No. 36 grenade has been used with its safety pin nearly out and joined by string or wire to some part of the piece of equipment or clothing. Any strain on the wire would pull the pin right out, and allow the striker to go down. In one case during the Manipur offensive in 1944, we found a pannier of medical equipment which the Jap left behind. At the bottom was a No. 36 grenade with the pin right out, and on top were tightly packed the normal contents of the basket, pressing down on the grenade and holding the lever in place—no wires, nothing suspicious about it at all, but just waiting for some inquisitive to body to go souvenir hunting.

One exception to the above was of a quite different type. A dead Jap had had one of his arms lifted high off the ground, and kept in place until rigor mortis set in. A Jap grenade was then tied to the man's wrist, with the striker mechanism down, and so arranged that, when the rigor passed off, the arm would fall and the striker would be actuated when it hit the ground. It was rather a hit-and-miss business, because our troops might have been nowhere near when the explosion occurred, but it shows a great deal of cunning, and it is an interesting reflection that—even in this war—there can have been very few with explosions caused by bodies long since dead!

For anti-personnel mines, the Jap has used devices similar to his booby traps. The British grenade with the pin nearly out, and fitted to a trip wire, has been much in evidence. A variation with the same grenade has been to slide it into an empty tin (such as a condensed milk tin), and then remove the safety pin altogether. The tin holds the lever in position, and all that is required is the usual trip wire tied to the grenade. Merely cutting the trip wire is insufficient to neutralise this device, as at a later date the tin may be kicked, and the grenade fall out.

The Jap has been equally cunning in his use of his own grenade as an anti-personnel mine. As an instance, one of his favourite tricks has been to cut a large-diameter bamboo, just above two consecutive nodes, forming a tube 12''-18'' long, open at one end and closed at the other. A few inches short of the open end he drills two diametrically opposed holes, through which he slips a sliver of bamboo, tied to the usual trip wire. The bamboo is then fixed vertically, open-end up, and a grenade rested on the sliver of bamboo with its mechanism downward. On pulling the trip wire the sliver of bamboo comes away, allowing the grenade to fall to the bottom of the tube with sufficient force to detonate itself. The advantages in concealing this type of device in bamboo jungle are obvious.

For anti-tank purposes, the Jap has, until recently, relied upon his standard anti-tank mine. Although well-conceived and well-made, this mine is so small as to be relatively inefficient, and even the Jap himself appears to have lost faith in it. As a result, he now almost invariably uses two of them together, frequently boosting them with a bulk charge of picric acid. He has made great use of captured British anti-tank mines, and has most ingeniously got over the apparent difficulty of a shortage of fuses. His own fuse is similar to ours but smaller, so he stuffs the fuse pocket of our mine with plastic explosive and then gently inserts his own fuse in the correct position.

Another improvisation is the use of his own morter bombs in an entipersonnel/anti-tank role, by burying them with just their noses above ground. As with his mine, he usually lays several together, and again boosts them with a bulk charge.

Most of the devices in use by the Jap suffer from one great disadvantage—they are not sufficiently powerful. Even a grenade is a poor anti-personal device when it is remembered that it is going to be set off by a trip-wire, prohably from some distance, and that before it actually explodes there is a delay of sense seconds, during which a man can get out of lethal range. The Jap has now realised this and has recently introduced a remedy—the use of the aerial bomb. Various types of initiation are being used, including a specially improvised igniter which screws into the nose.

Suicide methods of initiation are worthy of comment. In a small box in the ground squats a Jap, with a bomb, nose uppermost, between his knees. In his hand he holds a stone, and there he sits until a tank passes overhead. Then he bangs down the stone, and in theory Jap, tank, bomb and stone disintegrate in a cloud of dust. Fortunately, although he has found it a convenient way of committing hara-kiri, so far he has not succeeded in destroying any of our tanks by this device, and if he intends to employ it on a large scale, it will present a major reinforcement problem for him.

As a tailpiece, I should like to leave mines and booby traps to mention another use to which the Japs have put aerial bombs. During the recent fighting in North Burma the Jap decided to deny the use of a certain airfield by cratering it. They apparently had no bulk explosive, so they used bombs. These they buried nose uppermost along the runway, and over each they exceed their "safety fuse" consisting of a wooden tripod with a number of bricks suspended from the apex by a rope. It merely remained for a Jap to climb each tripod with a box of matches, light the rope and then jump down and run for his life before it burnt through and let the bricks fall with sufficient force to detonate the bomb. It shows something of the knotted string genius of Heath Robinson.

# AMATEUR POULTRY KEEPING IN THE ARMY

By "Enthusiast,"

FOOD is a very important factor in a British soldier's life in India, and experience has shown that nothing appeals to him so much as poultry reared under proper conditions. Fresh eggs, the chance of geese or turkey at Christmas, as well as tender fowls and an occasional duck all help to make a varied and attractive diet.

It is with the thought of helping those who have not yet undertaken this method of augmenting the official rations to do so that the following notes have been compiled. They describe the methods of poultry keeping by an Indian unit and by some individuals in a Plains station in the Punjab.

Initial costs spring to mind when contemplating such a step, so let me say at once that it need not be large. In one case I know a unit which began by expending less than Rs. 250, and after a very short time they were able to pay off their initial debit.

One of the first things to do is to construct the houses and runs. They can be made out of mud bricks and salvage—and here let me say that the Salvage people/have always been most helpful. We made our bricks by troop labour during fatigue hours. They are made very easily, as most soldiers who have served in the Plains know.

Build your houses according to the number of birds you propose to keep. Avoid overcrowding, and make sure that your houses are kept scrupulously clean and well ventilated. Doors and windows can be made out of salvage wood and strips of metal, the latter being made like trellis-work. Perches must be round and tick-proof, and made so that metal cups are placed on the uprights and filled with used motor engine oil to prevent ticks from crawling up and getting on to the birds while they are roosting. Clean sand should be kept on the floor of the house, and the lower part of the walls kept whitewashed or well oiled.

Laying boxes should either be built in mud brick in the houses, or ordinary wooden laying boxes may be placed inside. Laying nests should be kept spotlessly clean, and soft litter or *bhoosa* placed inside. The boundary wall for the run should then be built, again with mud bricks, as wire netting is not only prohibitive in price but unobtainable in the market.

Walls of the run should be about 7 ft. high, and the whole of the run should then be covered over with camouflage netting (obtainable from salvage). The net should be fastened to the wall all round the run, and then propped up inside by old condemned bullies. This keeps out crows and hawks, both of them deadly enemies, as they carry disease to one's poultry yard as well as removing a young chicken or two. The run must be as large as possible, so that the birds can have ample room to wander about. A second house and run should then be prepared and kept in reserve as a change-over after four or five months.

Having got the house, laying boxes and run ready, the next thing is to purchase the stock. There are two ways of doing this—either by purchasing full-grown birds, or by buying eggs and broody hens and hatching out the chickens under local arrangements. The first method gives a quicker return for your money, and in the case of country birds it is more sensible. The second

method is a slow business but more interesting, and in the case of English birds it is the cheapest way of providing stock if time is available. If full-grown birds are purchased they must be isolated for ten days, for diseases anong country birds coming from local farms are very prevalent. One of our mint lost from disease the whole of its newly-purchased stock of about 50 birds in between four and five days.

A liberal supply of fresh water is essential. A little salt and "pinkie" or sulphur should be put into the drinking water, and the receptacles kept thoroughly clean. In the hot weather fowls often stand in water to cool there legs.

Feeding is carried out three times a day. Wheat is the best all-round grain, but during wartime it is far too expensive. Atta, which can be purchased very cheaply from Supplies if it has been condemned for human consumption, is an excellent food, and when mixed with bran makes a very good wet mask. Crushed maize and grain are also good. Scraps from the house are always enjoyed by the birds. In the case of chickens, only water and sand should be given for the first 36—48 hours, after which chopped egg and breadcrumbs should be given every two hours for the next five days. Bread and milk also helps quick growth. Hatching, by the way, takes 21 days.

A good supply of green food is essential. It should be tied up above the ground, so that birds have to jump to reach it—and it gives them useful exercise too. Another important item in their diet is grit.

So much for fowls. Next to them the most lucrative form of poultry keeping is undoubtedly ducks. In the area in which I serve the Production Branch have been most helpful, and through them we have been able to purchase some good Kashmir birds. They are larger ducks than are obtainable on the Plains, are good layers and produce a very good sized egg. Preliminary arrangements for preparing for the arrival of the stock are much the same as for fowls except that they must have a duck pond sufficiently large for them to swim in This, however, presents no great difficulty in a place where space abounds and canal water is available.

One drake to six ducks is a very fair proportion. The duck usually lays at night so it should not be let out too early in the morning, for otherwise she may lay the egg in the pond (which isn't quite fair!) or anywhere on the ground where it suits her convenience. The duck is not normally a good sitter, and seldom appears to go broody. My experience so far is that all hatchings have been done by hens who suffer a rude shock and considerable dismay when the birds hatch out!

A duck's egg takes 28 days to hatch out. It must be sprinkled with water once a day during the whole 28 days to help to keep the shell moist. If this is not done, very great difficulty is experienced during the time the young bird is coming out of the shell; they often fail to break through and die from suffocation.

Ducks are exceedingly good scavengers, and should be let out as much as possible to forage in ditches, canal channels and other moist places. A wet mash of atta and bran in equal quantities should be given twice a day. As a rule ducks are good layers, and lay on and off throughout the year.

The keeping of geese is also a most interesting hobby. They are easy to keep, provided, like ducks, that they can get water and have plenty of room to move about. They mix with ducks, and I keep and feed them all together.

as they all live on the same food. They are excellent grazers, and need a great deal of grass or other green food.

The goose, although laying few eggs, and then only during one period of the year, is a very good sitter, and in my experience 100 per cent. success is often achieved. The period of incubation is 30 days. Goose eggs, like duck eggs, require damping once a day, even though the goose goes into water and comes back with wet feathers on to her nest.

Father gander is a very faithful husband, and when once the hen bird goes to sit, he never leaves her, standing guard over her day and night. When the goslings arrive, they remain as a family and keep with the father and mother indefinitely. Geese are wonderful chowkidars, and call at the slightest noise or sign of strangers. They are inclined to be ferocious, and often attack those with whom they are not familiar.

Turkeys, on the other hand, are delicate birds, and difficult to rear.

Mortality is often very high, and from a commercial point of view it is perhaps wiser for units not to include them in their poultry yard. I keep a number of white turkeys, and so far have been fortunate. From one pair of birds we got is 16 birds out of 18 eggs, and they are all doing well.

Turkeys are ornamental and very friendly; the parent birds always follow me round the garden, and the youngsters are beginning to do the same. Incidentally, if one is prepared to take the risk and is successful, turkeys realise high prices these days at Christmas time.

For those who have the time and facilities, the use of an incubator is well worth considering. In this matter, too, the Production Branch has again been most helpful; they put up a 50—egg incubator for me which had been made locally at a very reasonable price. A unit here recently purchased one of these incubators and got very good results, and it is hoped next year to have it working regularly during the whole of the winter. These incubators do, however, require very careful watching and constant supervision.

In the short space at my disposal I cannot deal adequately with diseases

and remedies. Suffice it to say that prevention is better than cure.

One final note. Strict and constant supervision is essential in poultry keeping. It needs an officer's keen eye. Birds can often be off colour, and not be noticed by the individual in charge, but by spotting a sick bird in the early stages it can be isolated and an epidemic avoided, for epidemics spread like a plague through the entire stock. Or, again, by giving a small dose of medicine at the right time you may save losing a bird, for it may get back to normal very quickly, whereas had it been left for 24 hours it may not have survived.

Poultry keeping demands enthusiasm, and if the poultry keeper himself is enthusiastic, his helpers will be also. It is a big subject, and I have only been able to touch the fringe of it, but the fact remains that it is very easy for units to have their own poultry show running. From every point of view they will

find it pays handsomely.

Getting "poultry-minded" spreads throughout a station. Such remarks as "I got 9 chicks this morning from 10 eggs" and "You should see the eggs I had from my fowls yesterday" reflect the keenness of our poultry keepers. Even my Chief Clerk (a Conductor of many years' service) greeted me this morning with the remark: "Good morning, Sir; I had 14 chickens out this morning!"

At the sam etime, our Padre (himself now a keen poultry keeper) was liable to be misunderstood the other day when he said to a friend that "the Colonel (meaning the writer of this article) is making everyone in the Station fowl-minded"!

#### THE FRONTIER MYTH

# By Major W. F. G. Spaight

THE British are a tenacious and conservative race who do not like change, and their loyal regard for catch phrases, even after the phrases have outlived their original meaning, is one of their characteristics. It is still believed by many, whose numbers are not confined to civilians, that the North West Frontier of India is the "best training ground for war in the world," and that the trans-border Pathan is the "Best umpire in the world," even though the coiners of these phrases are as out of date as the conditions that evoked them.

Forty or fifty years ago the Frontier was, no doubt, an excellent training ground. In those days Frontier warfare had not hardened into a set drill, and there was scope for initiative and boldness. Political control was less complete, and armed "Friendly's" did not wander at will round operating troops. In the Tirah expedition of 1897 the troops acted offensively both by day and night against any armed Pathan who approached. Since then the opening up of the frontier, the increase in political control, and the great increase in the numbers of firearms in circulation among the tribes have altered conditions.

Modern conditions have made the role of frontier troops that of armed police, and a Policeman's lot is not always a happy one. The order is that no offensive action can be taken except in retaliation after hostile action. The emphasis is on the security of arms and ammunition, owing to the fact that the Pathans' main source of supply is by loot. The insistence on the necessity to collect the bodies of all casualties has bred a tradition to avoid casualties at all costs. These collectively breed a complete lack of aggressive spirit—if not actual timidity—in frontier troops that is certainly not good training for war.

The following points apply in particular to Waziristan during wartime, but not to actual punitive columns.

Operations of War.—If the various operations of war are considered it becomes clear that frontier procedure is not a good prelude to modern war. The guarding of the inevitable mule train, both on the move and at the halt, breeds caution. In this connection it should be noted that while some mechanization has crept into frontier camps, complete motorisation of all transport and supporting arms would mean complete confinement to roads.

The Advance Guard makes no advance without security. Every feature from which the train can be sniped is captured and held until the column has passed. This is essential as nobody has yet taught a mule to lie down and take cover. Train mules are led in strings of three and offer a large, vulnerable target. This makes the advance a slow and unimaginative business. Any armoured vehicles present are tied down to the speed of advance of the force, and are merely used as mobile pillboxes to support the advance of the forward troops or pickets. There is no scope for bold or original action by any of the arms concerned.

The Attack in frontier warfare is almost non-existent. The tribesman will not wait for anything like a prepared attack to be put in. The exceptions to this rule are few and none are recent. The attacks on the Dargai heights in 1897 and on the Ahnai Tangai in 1920 are the best known examples. The only attacks normally put in on the frontier are immediate section or platoon counter-attacks against an ambush or follow-up on an isolated hill picket.

Defence on the frontier is planned to prevent rifle thieves creeping into our positions and to provide cover against long-range rifle fire. Thus positions are extremely concentrated and are unsuitable for war. There has been no serious Pathan attack upon a perimeter camp since Wana in 1894, and so positions, obstacles and defensive fire as used in war are neither required nor practised.

Rear Guard.—On the frontier it is a tradition that all withdrawals must be carried out at the greatest possible speed. It is essential to reach the camp site with sufficient hours of daylight in hand to build the rifle thief-proof camp, pickets and perimeter. There is no dogged holding on to positions; all ranks are looking over their shoulders all the time. All are on their toes for the signal to retire and then they just "run like hell."

Patrolling is a most important feature of war. The distant reconnaissance patrol and the fighting patrol are two of the most essential tasks the Infantry are called upon to do. On the frontier the need to preserve arms and the fear of casualties rule out all distant patrolling. The danger that a reverse to a small detachment might raise the local tribes, who will hear exaggerated rumours of the loot obtained, normally causes strict "bounds" to be laid down for small parties. The number of armed Khassadars and friendly Pathans who inhabit the vicinity of all camps also rules out fighting patrols. Short range night patrols and small ambushes on routes leading to sniping sites near camp are practised, but the need to prevent affrays between troops and armed friendly Pathans causes so many restrictions that the patrol leader has small scope for anything except the rigid obedience of orders.

Night Work.—In a country where the enemy and the friendly wear the same clothes and both are armed, the danger of unfortunate incidents is such that it becomes necessary to curtail the movement of troops for training purposes. For night parades it is normal to forbid troops to approach within several hundred yards of any house, village or khassadar picket. Frequently troops are ordered to take a Pushtu-speaking guide whose duty is to challenge any individual met. The result is that night work on the frontier is of less value in training for war than night parades in Indian plains stations.

Physical Fitness.—Conditions on the frontier are such that long route marches or long range work of any sort cannot be practised. The fear of incidents that might cause a flare up, cause orders that prevent all but large parties—normally a battalion with artillery support—moving outside the ring of the camp pickets. All men must be inside the perimeter camp by dusk. On the occasional practice column some Infantrymen have to climb to high pickets and retire at speed.

In certain parts of the frontier, such as the Razmak road, troops go out and open the road on the average twice a week, but the numbers of troops available for this duty and the few energetic tasks that have to be done are such that this work is not sufficient to keep men fit. A large percentage of the frontier garrisons are tied up in static roles such as camp pickets, perimeter posts and reserves. The average sepoy does not have enough hard work to keep him in hard condition.

The climate of Razmak, Wana, Gardai and possibly, Damdil is better than the plains, but restrictions on movement are such it is doubtful if the frontier troop is as fit as the troop in a plains station. This is particularly the case in regard to ancillary troops. Troops in training formations in India are certainly far tougher than troops stationed on the fontier.

Alertness.—In recruit training it is impressed upon the individual that when he goes to war he must be alert; for it will be a case of "kill or be killed." Thus when a man goes from a peace station into a war area he is mentally alert. A man proceeding to the frontier, for the first time, is told a similar story. He, too, is all keyed up and on the alert. On arrival he finds that his reports of tribal movement near his post or picket are either treated with scorn or neglected. He is forbidden to shoot, or be rude to, tribesmen who do not actually shoot at him or attack him with a knife.

Thus, while he knows he is in hostile country, he is forbidden to go out looking for trouble. Under no circumstances can he initiate an offensive action; he can merely resort to the age-old right of the citizen of self-defence. If a soldier spends any appreciable time on the frontier these conditions cause him to become slack. The occasional incident may renew his keenness, but months of inaction sitting on the defensive can have but one result. The frontier soldier is not alert.

Use of Weapons.—On the frontier troops are liable to be shot at—in a vicious way. This is of very real value indeed. Though enemy bullets are scarce, those that come are worth all the rest of frontier training for war. All troops also have a chance of using their weapons against a live enemy—in more exciting conditions than can be obtained on a field firing range. The value of this is, however, lessened by the fact that our troops can only fire in retaliation, and that it is unusual for the Pathan to open fire except in close ambushes on distant picket garrisons or in long-range sniping fire. In either case the Pathan has prepared his position and this normally provides cover from view and fire in the direction of our main force.

Thus our arms are used at an unseen enemy, normally at long range. In the close-ambush, fire cannot be opened because our troops and the enemy are intermingled; this is because the enemy's object is to loot arms and ammunition, until the enemy retires, generally to dead ground. In long-range sniping our fire can only be directed against a particular hill or hillside from which fire is coming. It is unusual for our troops to be able to discern either strike or effect of their fire. This leads to browning an area of hillside.

Political Control.—In all types of warfare—except perhaps in totalitarian states—there is political control of the war objects of the military. On the frontier, however, political control is more embracing and effectively prevents military initiative in any form. In the event of serious military operations the political become advisers rather than controllers. While this is designed to keep the frontier quiet—and normally achieves its object—it is not helpful in training military leaders in warlike conditions.

Conclusion.—The frontier is not a good training ground for modern war. Troops and officers steeped in frontier training are liable to be excessively cautious, timid in patrolling, ignorant of modern tactics, unfit physically and horrified of high casualties. Before frontier-trained troops go to war they need special training to make them more offensively minded, with particular attention to patrolling and night work.

#### SISTERS IN NEED

BY ENID SCOTT.

"My object in going to villages and seeing women personally, is to establish direct contact with them—to give them courage and confidence and to settle their grievances as quickly as possible."—From the Report of an Indian W. V. S. (I) Member of the Fauji Senadarni Scheme.

WHEN Japan is beaten men of India's superb fighting forces will return to their families. They will return full of just swagger and panache, having played the part of hero in the war theatres of the world, or they will return maimed in body or in mind after long years at the hands of a bestial enemy. In any case, they will need homes fit for heroes to live in. They will not find them everywhere, because the standard of the home is the standard of the women living there; and the Indian soldier's woman does not yet know how to make a home fit for her soldier man's return.

During the past hundred years, the Indian Army has brought ever rising standards to the men serving the King-Emperor, but this well-being and enlightenment has not reached their wide-flung village homes, because the women have not been included in the welfare measures extended to their men. Such pre-war efforts as were made on behalf of Families quartered in regimental lines were limited by meagre funds, by lack of co-operation from civil and military Hospitals, and by the reluctance of many British officers' wives. Success was always due to the vision and leadership of the senior British lady concerned. Where there was such leadership, success was more than hundredfold, triumphant witness to the mighty achievement awaiting a nation-wide effort in this cause.

Such welfare work has continued in varying degrees to provide for both physical and cultural needs of Forces' Families quartered in regimental lines, but it remains intensely individualistic according to the regiment concerned. There is one flat curriculum, no dead level of administration. In some units the accent is on bodily welfare, in others a women's institute stresses handicraft or the elements of literacy. In most of these organisations there is a shortage of British and Indian officers, wives willing to give service in the cause.

In few centres is sufficient use made of the opportunity to prepare this constant turnover of women quartered in unit lines, for the problems awaiting them, when they, in due course, become war separated wives. This should be by means of simple talks on the war as it affects the Families; the principles of self-help, together with an elementary explanation of the civil and military administration existing for relief. Such instruction would necessitate augmented service, and as things are now could only be given by local voluntary ladies qualified and willing to do so. Their reward would be the formation of a cadre of well-informed confidence, percolating amid the welter of fear and ignorance in scattered villages whence soldier men go forth to fight the war.

It has not been easy for war separated families throughout the long years of this world war. Bad enough at first, when the men went off to Eritrea and the Middle East; infinitely worse in the black days of Singapore and after—days when fear and rumour stalked the villages; and those sinister terms

Digitized by GOOGIC

"missing" and "prisoner of war" took on a menace and horror such as the world had never known before.

The public did not worry much about those Families, hidden away in remote rural areas. We were all too busy with our own war problems to think much about those women, too ignorant to read or write, or even understand letters or news, or any official instructions to help them in their need. Men of the Indian Forces are not bound to make family allotments, albeit encouraged so to do. Many prefer to make it to a male relative rather than to a wife, leaving her welfare to this man's goodwill. Thereby can come much abuse and insecurity. All too often, such women become the victims of unscrupulous men who misappropriate their money and their land. Some of them have become ever more and more helpless in the stranglehold of litigation and dispute.

As the war dragged on, the position of some women became ever more invidious. In a country where women are scarce, things may not be easy for a young and comely wife, whose husband has been swallowed up by years of war. At times, lust has reared its ugly head, together with assault and bigamy. Indian weddings are not registered. Sometimes these women have been unable to prove their married state. The writer has watched the investigation of the case of a girl whose husband came on leave from overseas only to strip her of every scrap of property or other evidence that could prove her to be his legal wife. Her dumb pitiful ignorance was such that she knew neither his unit nor his whereabouts—nothing but his bare name. She had a bedridden mother and was destitute.

In a number of cases the family breadwinner has become disabled or died during the long years that now lie between. Where this has happened, distress is urgent and real. Among city families, unjust extortions by evil landlords have become prevalent. Not much may be done to bring comfort to the pretty girl with tear-filled eyes who could not understand why her husband, missing since Singapore, had not been given home leave by the Japanese. She had not been long enough wedded for her to bear her man his first-born child. There are many unjustifiable (though understandable) requests for husbands or sons to be sent on leave but they pale before the just claims of grim distress.

The Soldiers', Sailors' and Airmen's Boards have done their willing best to cope with all this grievous woe. The Civil Liaison Organisation has greatly alleviated poverty and dire need. W. V. S. (I) have contributed service in the cause, but there has been a great gulf fixed between well intentioned, masculine administration and illiterate, feminine distress. British male official ignorance has confronted Mother India's immemorial custom, caste and reticence.

The war dragged on; and from this impasse the Army at length evolved a scheme most typically British in its makeshift inadequacy, combined with vision and efficiency. They called it the *Fauji Sevadarni* Scheme, which is clumsy and has not made things any easier. ("What is a *Fauji Sevadarni*, anyway?" queried the very senior Welfare Directorate officer, less than a year ago).

A Fauji Sevadarni is a voluntary woman welfare worker who undertakes to contact the Forces' families in her neighbourhood to discover and report distress. She is expected to take the sick to hospital and tend them if necessary; to help with correspondence to settle disputes, promote recruitment and bring deserters to justice. She works under a Head Sevadarni at tehsil level, who is directed by the District Inspectress Sevadarni, who is responsible to the District S. S. A. B., to whom she must report cases for action and redress.

The Scheme is an adjunct of the Civil Liaison Organisation. For their arduous and complex services, involving knowledge of human nature, courage and tact, the *Fauji Sevadarnis* are paid "out of pocket" expenses, ranging in scale from Rs. 5-10 to Rs. 200 p.m. The payments are inadequate for service rendered and travelling expense involved. Efforts are made to provide motor conveyance, but it is not possible to do more than touch the fringe of the necessity. Tongas and feet are substitutes.

The Scheme's strength is in its weakness, its weakness is in its strength:— Lack of funds means lack of high grade personnel; but voluntary service is ever service of heart and will.

Poor pay equals poor social status; but no position means no "face", to lose or gain.

Inadequate transport presents great obstacles; it deters all but the tough and spirited from venturing in this task.

Humble illiteracy means ignorance; but provides common background between those serving and those served.

Male prejudice is offset by bonds of suffering and sex.

Success or failure of the Scheme depends much upon the District Inspectress Sevadarni, who must be a woman of educated discernment, sufficient to discriminate between the manifold problems brought by her humbler colleagues, and to press upon the S. A. A. B. those in most urgent need. Standards of Sevadarnis vary everywhere. In some areas all are literate, in others, many can neither read nor write at all.

It is the opinion of many Civil Liaison Officers that illiterate Sevadarnis are useless in this cause. Such is not the opinion of the writer, after seeing them at work. The Indian village woman has a fund of common sense, despite history's long attempts to stifle and to stultify. The humblest Sevadarni wears purpose in her face; and can display an astonishing degree of ability to sift out "nonsenses" and "bunkery" among all the piteous calls for aid. For City work, literacy together with some degree of sophistication are essential qualifications; but it is even more necessary that the village Sevadarni should understand her background and be at grips with the problems involved.

Many of them hold magnificent family war records, and have given their men in this and earlier wars. The fact that such come forward to serve under the conditions involved, gives proof of Quality. There is that in the faces of some of them that is worth more than literacy. Much valuable preparation and instruction can be and is being achieved by means of periodic conferences, organised by far-seeing Civil Liaison officers and by a few magnificent pioneer British ladies working in this cause. Such gatherings achieve more than a rudimentary knowledge of war aims, welfare administration, homecraft and hygiene, or postal regulations. The women who attend learn also something of the Body Corporate—its spirit and ideals.

What is needed is the best everywhere; but the best won't be forth-coming in any quantity, until Authority is prepared to pay for it. Meanwhile, underpaid and illiterate Sevadarnis are better than no Sevadarnis at all. That this makeshift and threadbare Scheme has justified itself is proved by its high popularity with the Families; by the conquest of local male prejudice; by the demand of Civil Liaison officers for its extension by means of better pay; and by Authority's astonished admission of the good behaviour of its own starving, Cinderella child,

Unfortunately, local prejudice is not yet overcome in the predominantly Muslim northern areas, which have poured forth their manpower in this and earlier wars: and where the need of the Families is commensurate with the service of their menfolk in the Allied cause. It is hoped that Muslim good sense and high ideals will soon defeat old-fashioned prejudice. astonishing tales of a recent Punjab Fauji Sevadarni Conference have by now reached the conservative corners of the North. This most felicitous gathering of three hundred Sevadarnis of all castes and creeds was held in a British Civil Liaison Officer's own garden, where the hostess was his wife. Amongst many delightful happenings was a local regiment's "At Home" to all the Sevadarni delegates. Upon this auspicious occasion the lady guests were given the opportunity to see how men of the Indian Forces live when on military service away from their own homes. In this connection also, it is encouraging to note that a Punjabi Begum, member of a most distinguished northern Muslim family, now holds commissioned rank in the W. A. C. (I). And at a recent Faui Sevadarni meeting, the writer met a young Purda-nashin Muslim girl who requested an educational grant, to enable her to train as a professional nurse. She was one of a family of five, all dependent on a brother serving at the Front.

Lacking adequate funds, much may yet be done to further the success of the Fauji Sevadarni Scheme everywhere, by the wider appointment of qualified Indian and British ladies to District S. S. A. Bs. In many parts of India, W. V. S. (I) members are undertaking such responsibilities with encouraging results. More are needed to give guidance and advice to Fauji Sevadarnis; and also by means of their sophistication and prestige to promote the welfare of the humble Forces' Families in the Districts where they live. Ladies undertaking such responsibilities should understand something of the problems under review, together with the civil and military organisations existing for relief. For this they should consult the G. H. Q. Handbook entitled "Family Welfare I. T.". English women need a serviceable knowledge of Urdu, but local vernacular is unnecessary, as they will not work singlehanded and Fauji Sevadarni personnel is for direct contact with the Families.

Generally speaking, it is neither possible nor desirable for W. V. S. (I) members to become active *Sevadarnis* in rural areas. Such women must be sturdy workers fully conversant with local conditions and needs. W. V. S. (I) may achieve greater service at more indirect approach. But this statement is strictly qualified because, far-flung across the face of India, British and Indian members of W. V. S. (I) are giving magnificent working service in this Scheme. No praise is high enough for the qualities of heart and mind and leadership inspiring them in this cause—a cause where the going is tough, the problems complex and raw.

There need be no discouragement for less specially qualified women to render service on behalf of Forces Families. There is wide scope for British and Indian ladies willing to attend organisations and gatherings. They will, by their sympathetic presence, encourage workers in this cause. It is insufficiently realised how greatly the presence of some gracious member of W. V. S. (I) can enhance both rural and urban gatherings convened for the welfare of Service Families. W. V. S. (I), of which Her Excellency The Viscountess Wavell is President, holds high pride of place in ranks of social service. It should use its distinction and prestige to bring a glimpse of glamour and of charm to drab lives that are in need of all the gracious gifts of womanhood.

India has awakened slowly to her long-neglected women's needs. Voluntary service is ever the pioneer service where need is greatest, and this

is true of welfare for the uneducated women of India, including the Forces' Families. Apart from those directly concerned, the general public has had but little knowledge of the low-grade conditions prevalent in homes of men of the Armed Forces to whom it has looked for protection in time of war. The apathy of both Indian and British women towards their sisters' dire distress has been partly responsible. Now the war is bringing realisation to all; and with it a greater sense of responsibility to educated women of whatever race. The old excuse of the non-existence of suitable women in this cause no longer holds good to-day. Given the leadership and given a living wage, the women can be found. The Women's War Services give proof of the ability of Indian women to earn their worth in service of their sisterhood.

With the development of technical Armed Services, more and more Forces' Families are to be found in urban areas, presenting a new aspect of a problem hitherto confined to village life. Certain Provinces are tackling these matters on a broad scale, by means of local funds. Their schemes are individualistic, but in each one of them there is the need for qualified Indian and British Women to advise and instruct less sophisticated personnel. Where the authorities are prepared to pay for such service, it is forthcoming; but it is more and more evident that in these inflated and uncertain times, voluntary service can no longer be more than a pioneer service blazing the trail for nation-wide government services that must come on behalf of all backward Indian womanhood. Such services inevitably must come, because—inevitably—the women will have them so; and will be beyond the scope of voluntary or "out-of-pocket" allowance scale.

Full government services must include welfare of body and of mind for every woman and child everywhere. Our immediate concern is the welfare of Indian Forces' Families, who are but a fraction of the backward whole. Discussion of the scope of such services is beyond the scope of an article dealing only with matters known and seen. Whatever form these services may take, this must be by women for women, voicing their own need. Medical services must infiltrate to remotest areas. Domestic education must be compulsory for a minority sex whose primary concern will always be the family and home.

For Forces' Families, whether in peace or whether in war, there must be an end to so much preventable drabbery and woe. They must be taught the self-help that can prevent exploitation and haplessness. They must learn, as their men have learned, that life despite its hardships, can and should be "fun". The Indian serviceman has played the hero everywhere; not only on the world's most awesome battlefields, but in the world's colourful capitals also. Give his girl the chance to play the heroine. Give her but the chance and she can beat him at his game. She is by nature gay, forlorn, drab and woebegone only by long centuries of burden and neglect. Give her the chance to prove her glamour and her worth.

If this be not done, then there will still lack homes fit for heroes to dwell therein; brides fit for heroes to mate withal; and babies meet for heroes' sons. And all the glory, all the sacrifice, will be so much flood water lost upon the ebbing of the tide of war—lost to India and her children for another age.

# PERMANENT PEACE—THROUGH THE CHILDREN

By BERNARD TUCKER.

A MIDST the welter of words about post-war reconstruction, I am distressed to see that so little weight is given to the question of the education of our enemies' children.

This is a vital, urgent matter and there is a terrible danger of its being relegated during the peace planning, into a low priority, and eventually being dealt with in a half-hearted and tepid fashion. You may be sure that this will be just what our enemies want, and will aim to secure.

The body which controls the way and tenor of thought of the growing child is going to control the morals and way of thinking of the nation twenty years hence, and nobody realises this better than the German—it was all part and parcel of their ruthless creed, this systematic conversion of their growing youth into pestilential and arrogant little Nazi thugs.

The United Nations must insist upon complete control over the education of German and Japanese youth for a period of twenty-five years at least. By that time the children's character will have been formed beyond the possibility of any swingback to gangsterism.

Now, in our fight for peace, this question has to be brought to the fore-front, the line of policy irrevocably decided and the policy itself implemented with rigour. Defeated in physical fighting, our enemies are going to resist, with every weapon left in their armouries, our claim to this right of educating their children. They will find a good number of soft-hearted supporters, too, amongst those people who cannot fully appreciate the bully's braggadocio in Victory, his cunning after defeat. By guiding the child's thoughts into right channels, we can ensure permanent peace for our children and our children's children.

Our enemies, by skilful transmission to their offspring of their sense of grievance, their tainted Paganism, can ensure a greater World cataclysm than the present one within fifty years. Let us clamp down with a ruthlessness equal to that of our enemies, on all attempts on their part to play on our feelings, to wheedle any concessions out of us on this point. Here are a few of the difficulties which may with reason be envisaged, in the application of this policy. Since, in my opinion, the Germans present rather a different problem to the Japanese, I will deal with each separately.

First, with regard to the Germans; we must accept the separation of the children from the parents at the age, say, of five years. Inhuman? Callous? Contrary to all Christian tenets? My answer is "Yes, and so is War."

The physical brutality of War may have come to an end, but we are fighting on, with unabated fury and enthusiasm, for the reclamation of souls. We must, to use the hackneyed *cliche*, "Win the Peace" at all costs. By so doing we are going to save the lives of millions yet unborn. Surely this is little enough punishment for a nation that has, like Germany, involved the whole world in the miseries of War?

This separation must be accepted; there is no way otherwise to prevent the German parents, nursing their usual grievances, from infecting the children with the Teutonic madness. Let the aggrieved German adult continue in his

state of passionate resentment against a world hostile to his ideas of personal aggrandisment, but take the growing mind out of this influence.

At the age of eighteen or so, after some years of careful schooling outside Germany, under the care of foreign tutors—Russian, French, American, English—there should be no lack of public-spirited people willing to assist in this great work—they return to their native land, old enough to resist any insidious attempts at perversion by their parents, and with a broadened, cosmopolitan, and international outlook, good and useful citizens of this brave new world that is to come

History taught to these youngsters must be of an entirely unbiased type—no racial controversies—no patriotic distortion of facts. Above all, it should include propaganda intended to show and extol the futility of war as a means of settling disputes. These History Books, which by rights could only be written to perfection by the inhabitant of another planet, must be drawn up by an international committee, representing every nation.

As regards religious teaching, rudiments of every creed could be explained to the growing child, and on the reaching of a suitable age, the child could be given a free choice. This system should give offence to nobody.

The scientific part of the education should present no difficulty, as all Science is international by its very nature.

The teaching of games and recreations should be controlled particularly with a view to inculcating a sense of fairplay and control of temper, a fostering of the spirit of good sportsmanship. Children should be trained to be good winners or losers.

What of the education of Japanese youth? This is a complex psychological problem of Eastern mentality. It would appear, from the ease with which Japan has in the last decade become subject to German influence, infiltration, and propaganda, that the Japanese are an easily led and disciplined people, a number of them with definite leanings towards Western standards of living. This very lack of independent thought in the nation may go far towards making the task of the propagandist an easy one.

The Japanese War Lords, by the skilful fostering of the "Shinto" propaganda, have led the nation into war. If examined in detail, "Shintoism" has many features of similarity with the German paganism: the worship of ancestors (good or bad), complete lack of moral teachings, degradation of its womenfolk and utter disregard of the sanctity of human life or suffering. In point of fact, Shinto is not a "religion" in the accepted sense and its entire suppression, root and branch, temples, books, legends, histories and practices, could not be termed "religious persecution."

After the Japanese War Lords have been duly brought to trial and exterminated, therefore, the extermination of the "Shinto" teachings should at once take place in the schools and universities. This could be done by means of the appointment of "inspectors" and, since it is probable that Russia has a better understanding of the situation in this respect and is conveniently situated from a geographical viewpoint, they would be the best people to be entrusted with this task. It is quite possible that after twenty-five years or less of this antiseptic treatment, by which time a new Japanese youth will have reached untainted maturity, the Japanese nation may well be reborn and ready to take its place in the International brotherhood of the Nations of the World.

#### THE BIRTH OF A WEAPON.\*

By Brigadier L. W. Rogers.

NEW weapons don't just happen. Research and experiment go on all the time, both in peace and war, so that we can produce something newer, better, and more deadly in action than anything our enemies are likely to have. As a nation, we are a little disinclined to prepare for war in times of peace, but before this war some quite good things had been worked out and were put into production about 1935 or 1936. Examples are the 25-pounder, the 3.7 inch Anti-Aircraft, the 2-pounder, and the Bren gun.

But those who fought in 1940 and 1941 in France and in the Desert, and in 1942 in Burma, will remember how many of those guns you had, and how well served we still were by the weapons of the last war, such as the 18-pounder and the 4.5" Howitzer. And you will have seen the arrival of newer weapons devised during this war—such as the 6-pounder anti-tank, the Sten Gun, and new grenades.

You will also have noticed the persistence of other grand weapons handed down from the last war: the No. 36 Mills Grenade, the Vickers machine gun, the 3.7" pack howitzer and the good old No. 1 Rifle. The point is that we very rarely give birth to an entirely new weapon; it is a continuous development from what we had before, in order to meet new tactical demands and to counter progress made by the enemy, who is doubtless advancing along the same lines as we are.

The Army has a permanent technical staff who specialise in gunnery, infantry weapons, flame warfare and everything else required in a modern war. This staff welcomes ideas from any source, and calls on the best brains in the country to help them produce the goods; they co-opt men from the Universities, from private firms, in fact, from any place where men with ideas are to be found. In India this staff works under the Master-General of Ordnance.

There is a tremendous amount of work in producing a new weapen. First, the General Staff tell the designers what the Army requires: shall we say they want a new anti-tank gun to knock out a really super-tank which we know the enemy are producing. Something has got to be done about it—quickly. The General Staff give the detailed requirements to the Master-General of the Ordnance; the Master-General tells his staff to get on with it, and the designers then get to work. They bring out their drawing boards and eventually produce a sheaf of blue prints of what they think will do the job. Think is the right word, because each gun means masses of components, each one thought out and drawn separately, and dimensioned in thousandths of an inch. For the 6-pounder, for instance, approximately one thousand blueprints were required.

In practice, you can't go straight into production from these first blue prints; there are bound to be small functional defects in any new weapon, and only the designers can put these right. So the designers produce a Pilot Model; this the Technical Staff inspect thoroughly and make whatever alterations they think necessary. That means more blue prints and a second Pilot Model. When they are quite satisfied, and not until then, the factory is told to produce a small number for trials in the Service. The General Staff choose the unit; they and

<sup>\*</sup> This broadcast talk from Delhi by the Director of Armaments was given chiefly for the benefit of troops, in order to give them some elementary knowledge of the subject.

the designers together produce a trial programme, and the unit is told what to expect: that is, the reason for the new weapon, the performance required of it, the rate of fire, the range, and everything else.

As a result of these trials, which include rough handling and every form of mechanical and chemical torture that can be thought of as possibly affecting the functioning of the weapon, improved models are produced until we get a model that performs satisfactorily and is suitable for quantity production. Both performance and procurability of materials must be considered and achieved. This is a long, tedious and expensive process but, as was well understood by David when about to meet Goliath over two thousand years ago, untested equipment must not be sent into battle.

In peace there is plenty of time, but even so the work of development goes on at high pressure and there is probably no finer example of this than the R. A. F. Browning Gun. This took many years to develop from the original model; it was a case of endless trial, modification, re-trial and so forth, but the final result was a marvel of reliability and it may well have been that its reliability was an important factor in the Battle of Britain.

But the Army has done some good things, too. Our anti-tank weapon at the beginning of this war was the 2-pounder, a very good little equipment but the Hun put more armour on his tanks and so we wanted something heavier. The technical staff at Home had foreseen this, and the result was the 6-pounder, which arrived just in time to lay out the first German Tiger tanks which appeared in North Africa in 1943.

However, having got a satisfactory design, we now have to get it made. The processes involved so far may seem to take a very long time, but it is all absolutely necessary; we cannot afford to give the Army an untried weapon. The design staff work all through in close touch with the manufacturer and, in this country, the manufacturer is in the main the Indian Ordnance Factories. I wish I had time to tell you in detail what an extraordinarily good job of work those factories have done.

In all production, whether it is weapons, or motor cars, or sewing machines, you have got to have independent inspection. By independent inspection I mean a staff responsible to the inventor and quite independent of the manufacturer, and their task in life is to ensure that the standard of the product is fully maintained and exact to design. Without such a staff, inferior weapons or other articles would soon reach the Service. This independent staff is therefore a vital link in the chain, and on them rests the entire responsibility for the standard of the weapons passed into the Service. The Ordnance Factories and any civil trade capacity employed are run by the Supply Department, and inspection is done for the Army by the Master-General of the Ordnance, who has a special staff for the purpose included in the technical staff I mentioned earlier.

There has been frequent testimony in this war that British weapons are the best. This is largely due to the skill of the workers in the munition factories at Home and the inspection which is carried out at various stages of manufacture by Army inspectors. And what goes for Home goes for India, too.

As soon as we have got our weapon on to the manufacturing lines, a very important factor is the rate at which it can be produced. The General Staff indicate a production "target," which is passed to the manufacturer by the Master-General of the Ordnance. The manufacturer reports how many he can manufacture by monthly quotas until the target is reached. Occasionally a

target takes a considerable time to reach: most of you will appreciate how difficult it is sometimes to hit a target; and the same thing applies to a production target.

When production is established, the stores are passed over to the Ordnane Depots and so into the hands of troops. Once the new weapon is in the hands of troops, you may be sure that the man who uses it will find some means of improving it. This is as it should be, because it is the soldier who first the gun, and it is this soldier whose life depends on the performance of the gun.

The viewpoint of the soldier familiar with actual battle conditions is therefore essential, and it is the task of the designers to embody these skilled observations in new and superior weapons. Sometimes, of course, the suggested "improvement" isn't an improvement at all, and we couldn't possibly adopt it, but we welcome every suggestion that may lead to an improvement in the performance of any weapon in the Service.

Every suggestion is most carefully studied by experts and, if it is worth adopting, we adopt it; if it's something really valuable, a reward may be paid, or perhaps your name may be tacked on to it. So, if you think you know of a way of improving the shooting of any of our weapons, send it in. It may prove extremely useful.

When all is said and done, the quality of an Army is the quality of its weapons. The finest trained Army in the world will never win battles unless its weapons are better than those of the enemy. Indeed, as was said comparatively recently, an Army with inferior weapons can give an enemy nothing but a dirty look. Weapons can only be produced by expert designers, meticulous inspection and conscientious manufacturers, and all these we have here in India-all of them doing a very fine job. No effort is ever spared in evolving the best weapon possible, and that is where you come in. You are the user, and only you can tell us how the weapon stands up to all the use and abuse it gets en Service. You'd be surprised at the number of improvements we've adopted because some bright lad said: "But I think it ought to go that way." So, never hesitate to let us know.

# INDIA'S PHENOMENAL WAR EFFORT

By THE EDITOR.

ne es Mt.

)Ddte

NOW that the war in Europe is over, a more complete picture of India's contribution to the triumph may be told. It is a worthwhile story, for long months before the full power of Britain and America's aid to the forces in the Middle East became effective India was almost wholly responsible for the supply of bulk stores to the Mediterranean theatre.

Let us start with steel. At one time, when certain shipments were lost en route from the United Kingdom, an urgent inquiry was made to India. whence 7,000 tons of steel sheets rolled in this country were shipped without delay for the manufacture of anti-tank mines. At that time they could not have reached Egypt without dangerous delay, but their early arrival enabled vast minefields to be constructed in the Middle East.

Steel pipes carried water across the arid desert; Indian engineers inconstructed the railway linking Mersa Matruh with Tobruk and at one time ke India was solely responsible for the supply of rolling stock, locomotives, etc. to the Middle East. India, too, supplied timber for railway sleepers, jetties, lorries, ammunition boxes, telegraph poles and for a hundred and one other uses. From India's naval yards came many assault and self-propelling landing ne craft.

恤 New industries have been developed in this drive to supply armies. are a few examples: electrical cables of many kinds, electric fans, water valves f and pumps, porcelain cleats, insulators and fuse-holders. A new industry of plastics was started, too, to make bakelite lamp-holders and ceiling roses.

An outstanding contribution in this field was the supply of dry batteries and cells. Communication between aircraft from air to ground and vice versa depends largely on the efficiency of the batteries the planes carry. Shipments to the Middle East from the United Kingdom by the long Cape route impaired the batteries' effective life, and arrangements for the production of a particular type of battery required for the R. A. F. were therefore begun in India during the latter part of 1941. Since then India has supplied millions of cells for the R. A. F. alone. If other services are taken into consideration, the number of batteries supplied would reach astronomical figures.

Nearly 90 per cent. of the tents in Egypt and Libya came from India. where 63 new tent factories were established in 1940. An indication of the phenomenal growth of this industry can be gathered from the fact that tentage contracts placed in 1939-40 were valued at approximately Rs. 1 crore; in 1940-41 they totalled Rs. 8.3 crores; in 1941-42 they increased to Rs. 13 crores; and purchases for 1942-43 amounted to Rs. 16 crores. A great increase in the manufacture of parachutes and of Supply Dropping parachutes took place in 1944.

The peak year for the supply of tailored items of clothing was 1943, when in one month no fewer than 12,000,000 were made. In the fifth year of the war Indian Ordnance clothing factories supplied just under 7,000,000 items a Eight ordnance factories employed 90,000 people directly, while indirectly were the thousands employed by tailoring contractors throughout India.

#### BODIES FOR VEHICLES.

Many thousands of composite wood and steel bodies have been completely produced in India. The first Indian-built armoured vehicle was produced early in 1941, and in the fifth year of war actual deliveries to the Army and Air Force approximated to the total of four years' previous deliveries. In 1944-45 vehicles assembled from parts sent from Canada and the U. S. A. exceeded ten times the pre-war figure, and assembly arrangements were also undertaken for a large number of vehicles for the United States Army. Before the war there were only 5,000 armoured vehicles in service; by the end of 1943 there were over 100,000. Thousands of special chassis have been obtained from Canada and U. S. A. under lend-lease and assembled by Indian workmen. The bodies for these chassis have been completely manufactured in India.

India now possesses her own factories for compressing hydrogen gas for the maintenance of barrage balloon stations. In 1944-45 considerable expansion in plant for the production of Breathing Oxygen was in hand. Steps have also been taken to expand distillation capacity to meet the increasing Defence Service needs in methylated and rectified spirits and solidified fuel.

With an over 100 per cent. increase in production since the beginning of the war, India's chemical industry has now come into its own. Soda ash, caustic soda, bleaching powder, chlorine, sodium and potassium bichromates, chromic acid, sodium thiosulphate and calcium chloride are some of the more important chemicals now being produced in large quantities in India for the first time.

In regard to medical stores, the reader will forgive a few figures. Over 50,000 stretchers, more than a million blankets, 250,000 mosquito nets, 1,500,000 water-testing tablets, and 160 tons of anti-mosquito cream, as well as 336,000 ounces of castor oil were supplied. Indeed, India's contribution of medical stores covered 1,500 items.

Heavy demands have been made for many indigenous drugs, and Government has greatly assisted industrialists to expand their production. Drugmaking equipment, comprising 18 items, has been secured from the U.S.A. under lease-lend and allocated to various firms. India has, in fact, been producing the entire requirements of the Allies as regards strychnine, caffeine, santonin, etc. Recently the production figure for strychnine reached a record high level of 15,000 lb. per annum. Penicillin is also now being produced in India.

Output of medical stores has gone up to nearly 60 per cent. of India's total requirements, from only 25 per cent. at the beginning of the war. Nearly 300 drugs and medicines previously imported are being produced locally, and most types of hospital and theatre equipment and standard and orthopaedic instruments are being manufactured. Several new firms have been developed to a satisfactory pitch for the production of high grade surgical instruments.

#### RUBBER AND LEATHER

India has greatly helped to solve the problem of rubber shortage by strictly conserving rubber and tyres, by stimulating production of rubber plantations, and by starting factories for reclaiming rubber. New plants for the manufacture of tyres, respirators, special types of hose, etc. have been established, and several factories previously making footwear have been converted for the manufacture of war requirements.

The production of all tanneries capable of making leather to Government standards has been organised and controlled. In 1941 over seven and a half million pairs of footwear were produced; in 1942 this figure rose to nearly

sixteen and a quarter millions. The Government Harness and Saddlery factory, producing web equipment, paulins and other canvas goods, has expanded its staff from 2,000 to 18,000 men, and the combined total output of the head-quarters, branch factories and contractors is still valued at about Rs. 15—20 crores per annum; practically the whole of this is derived from indigenous sources.

Remarkable increases occur under the heading of "Miscellaneous Stores," for whereas in terms of value the value of such stores supplied in 1940-41 amounted to Rs. 71 lakhs, the figure for the following year was Rs. 488 lakhs. Among the items under this head were bicycles, sewing machines, spring balances, fire-fighting equipment, spirit lamps, tommy cookers, electric bulbs, boot polishes, mustard and cashew nut oil, crash helmets, jultac containers for dubbin, safety razor holders, blades, etc.

#### ARMAMENT PRODUCTION

In the field of purely armament production, India has performed remarkable feats. Before the war there were only a few ordnance factories constituting the specialised munitions industry in India. But with the change in the technique of warfare it was necessary to change the character of their production. The ammunition industry of India did not really begin its tremendous expansion until France fell. It was clear that India could no longer depend on Britain, who herself, with her factories subjected to continuous bombing, was forced to look to other countries for vitally needed supplies.

The implementation of the Chatfield Plan started just before war broke out. It was evolved to expand all existing Ordnance Factories and to instal new types of machine tools; it provided for the erection of a new factory for the manufacture of high explosives, including a plant for the production of toluene and the expansion of the cordite factory. Post-Chatfield measures comprised a number of projects introduced subsequently, the most important being a project for the expansion of India's production of S. A. A. by 12 million rounds per month. Expansions at the cordite factory, metal and steel factory and ammunition factories were also planned under these measures.

Soon after the outbreak of war it was realised that India had to play a larger part in the production of armaments than had been anticipated under the Chatfield Plan. In 1940 the Ministry of Supply Mission, led by Sir Alexander Roger, came from Britain to examine the possibility of further expansion of armament production in India. To meet H.M.G's. requirements the Mission accepted plans prepared by the authorities in India for 21 new projects, including alloy steels for guns and small arms, gun forgings, bayonets, light machine guns, gun carriages, shells, fuzes and primers, high explosives, cordite, toluene and motor benzol.

With the entry of Japan into the war came the Transplantation Plan, which involved the building of five new Ordnance factories and the expansion of two of the factories under the Eastern Group plan. Further expansion of the production of armaments, new projects, including the maintenance of imported artillery equipment, aircraft instruments, etc. were undertaken. To-day the number of Ordnance factories operating in India is three times the number at the beginning of the war.

On the engineering side a new steel works for the production of alloy steels was brought into production, and new rolling mills were installed. A 2,000 ton forging press for guns, including anti-aircraft guns, has been in operation. New types of shells, including various armour-piercing anti-tank types, have been produced, and a plant established for making light machine guns. Steel

factories have provided steel suitable for the latest type of field guns and barrels, ammunition and bombs.

To operate these newly constructed factories major schemes of water supply, electric supply, sewage disposal, etc. had to be undertaken. New roads and railway communications were laid down, and arrangements for housing the personnel made. At one of the larger projects the housing estate provides accommodation for 13,000 staff and 12,000 workmen and their families. The labour force employed in Indian Ordnance factories in 1939 was 15,000; in 1944 it had risen to 100,000. Factory training schemes to train workers for skilled jobs turned out about 50,000 workers.

The Ordnance factories were reinforced by railway and trade workshops for the manufacture of components. The production of the 4.5 inch howizer and 25-pounder shell forgings was established in railway workshops, and orders for no less than 437 items normally manufactured in Ordnance factories were placed outside. At the outbreak of war there were about 600 such workshops known to be available. Some 1,500 engineering workshops are now being used—840 for general engineering items, over 300 for small items, and 345 (plus 20 railway workshops) for munition components.

Even the jute industry was harnessed, thus providing a feeder service for munitions parts. The mills concentrated on the manufacture of base plates and transit plugs for shells, cast iron for defence uses, and component parts for armoured vehicles. Their average production rose to 200,000 units per month.

This survey of India's war effort is obviously not the full story, but it reveals a story of unprecedented expansion, which, when applied to peace time production, proves beyond doubt that India's place in the post-war industrial world is assured.

. Nerr

ate pre

umilies F 2000 ; in l

ns for £

le rome

nch bare

, and @

ictoria F

DON 12

18, and !

eder#

beet

nt part:

per 🖭

tory, is peace i

r inde

#### mesds LETTERS TO THE EDITOR

#### DEFENCE POLICY AND MUNITION PRODUCTION

To The Editor of the U.S. I. "Journal."

DEAR SIR,

In his thoughtful article on "Post-war Planning for the Defence Services" published in your April issue, the author makes the following suggestions in regard to the material side of war preparedness:

- "(a) Defence policy should cover the organised indigenous production of war materials to the greatest possible extent: armaments, ships, tanks and vehicles, aircraft, basic chemicals, etc.
- "(b) But all this should be left to a Civil Department or Departments, and Defence Departments should merely be the indentor and stockholder, etc."

Few will quarrel with the desirability of the first. But the extent to which it can be achieved depends not on policy decisions, but on hard material facts that are rarely appreciated. It is the missing "bits and pieces" of components that have in this war prevented, and for a long time to come will prevent, the ideal being attained.

Even in the highly industrialised countries of the West any famous motorcar industry is dependent on perhaps as many as 250 subsidiary independent companies that make a thousand and one specialised components: the divers parts of the electrical system, magneto, carburetter, plastics, tyres, guages and dials, ball bearings, high grade alloy castings (ferrous and non-ferrous) etc.

Up to 25 years ago motor-car manufacturers the world over bought their engines from specialist concerns in just the same way as aeroplane manufacturers do to-day. It is too easy to build a dockyard or a tank factory. But these are largely assembly plants, and must be backed by scores of parallel and subsidiary industries before the objective is gained.

As regards the second point, perhaps the greatest lesson India has learnt in munition production during the war concerns a matter that received careful attention and planning in the U. K. and in the U.S.A.—but not in India. In brief, Government control and direction of munition production in war, in its broadest sense and over the whole field, must be adequately and competently represented on the floor of all the workshops of the country.

By no other method can either the maximum production potential be exploited or the goods be obtained in time. This is not so much because loyalty to a war effort not infrequently resides deep in the trouser-pockets of certain industrialists, as it is that by no other system can day-by-day and hour-by-hour production priorities be decided, production difficulties be solved and missing materials be immediately secured.

None but Government can fulfil these functions. India started the war without these essential men and, once the war had started, it was manifestly impossible to secure them. Her short-lived experience of munitions production in 1914—18, lasting a few months only, had been all-too-short for the lesson to be learned,

Digitized by Google

But the case in the U.S.A. and in the U.K. was far different. The former had raised and trained in peace a cadre of reserve officers running in six figures that, on war being declared, were at once drafted into the workshop and offices of industry; into mines, docks, transportation, etc.

The whole war potential was geared to a joint planning and directive cum-difficulty-solver machinery. Every reserve officer had been trained in peace in the industry he was carmarked to join in war. Whilst not so elaborate, the arrangements in the U. K. were not dissimilar. The majority were in positive when war finally broke out.

In this lies the answer to the question many may have pondered overhow was it possible in those countries to take over inefficient or recalcitant industries overnight and by a stroke of the pen? The directing brain of goverment was already there. All that was needed were the hands, and these would come from the defence Forces if necessary.

To my mind this constitutes in itself a sufficient reason for placing the responsibility for munition production in war in India (and in peacetime preparation for it) under the Defence Department, at least until such time as the stage of industrialisation which I have described earlier in this letter has been reached.

Then, and only then, can industry, as in the U. S. A. and the U. K. contribute the bulk of the reserve of technical officers for the purpose. Until then, which will last considerably over a decade, there is no alternative but for the Defence Department to train its own reserve. And if it is to be the policy to depend more and more on India supporting her own defence forces, the need for such a special reserve cannot be overlooked in the post-war reorganisation.

There are many other arguments against placing the responsibility for war production under a Civil Department at the existing stage of India's development, but it is not the purpose of this letter to enumerate them all.

Simla:

Yours faithfully, "MILLSTONE."

#### ONE-CLASS BRIGADES

To the Editor of the U.S. I. "Journal."

DEAR SIR,

The assumptions made in your April issue by "Istuscen" in his letter advocating one-class brigades are so remarkable that many readers may wonder if they can be the considered opinion of an officer with recent experience of a mixed brigade.

My view, formed during a period of fifteen months as Brigade-Major of an Indian Infantry Brigade in S.E.A.C. are entirely opposed to those of Istufeen.

Let me take Istuseen's assumptions in the order in which he makes them:

(a) "All classes would greatly prefer it." Has "Istuseen" never heard of the many occasions when British battalions, under orders to leave a mixed brigade, have begged to be allowed to remain, and have loudly praised the virtues of their Indian comrades! Has he never seen the genuine joy with which Indian troops have welcomed the arrival in their formation of a British

battalion which they had known in another area?

(b) "Brigade spirit would be terrific." Brigade spirit in many mixed brigades is in every way equal to the spirit of the most famous British formations. This I know from personal experience of both.

(c) "It would raise the standard". Would it? Surely, in a mixed brigade, each battalion is continuously striving to prove itself better than the two others of different nationalities. And the final result is not always the same!

(d) "It would be good for morale." Why? This bold statement requires some amplification. If "Istufeen" wishes to see formations with really high morale and "formation-spirit" second to none, let him visit the Indian Infantry Brigades of Fourteenth

Army and 15 Indian Corps.

(e) "More amenities could be provided." This may be to a certain extent true. But amenities in the forward areas are now quite good and the stumbling block to further improvement is more a matter of transportation than of organisation of formations.

(f) "The rationing problem would be greatly simplified." Again partly true. But would "Istufeen" completely "British-ise" or "Gurkha-ise" his British and Gurkha Brigades? What about Signals personnel, Sappers, Field Ambulances, Composite platoons and the other essential personnel who are nowadays almost always an integral part of the Brigade?

So much for my views on "Istufeen's" assumptions. I consider, however, that he has missed the most important point of all. Has he considered the camaraderie which grows up between British, Indian and Gurkha troops serving in the same formation? Has he considered the long-term effect of their mixing, but both at work and play?—and they do mix, as most of us have seen for ourselves.

Is not the fact that the best type of ordinary decent working man of both countries are, day by day, seeing more and more of each other and, perhaps, realizing something of the "other chaps" point of view, certain to prove of some importance in establishing friendly relations between the races in days to come?

Istufeen stresses the points he made as war-winners. I would like to stress

those which I have tried to argue as winners of the peace.

Yours faithfully,
"BRITISH SERVICE."

Staff College, Quetta:

#### THE DERIVATION OF "NEPAL"

To the Editor of the U.S. I. "Journal."

DEAR SIR,

ereni.

nd de ned i

10 10

100

192

ď¢

he

etre

-

Far be it from me to cross swords with such a language expert as Colonel Gifford, but in the third instalment of "What's in an Indian Name?" in the

April Journal he has attempted to include Nepali history.

He refers to the village of Gorkha in the Nepal Valley. The town of Gorkha is some considerable distance from the Valley, being beyond the Tehsil of No. 1 West in the Jilla bearing the same name of Gorkha. It was from here that King Prithi Narain led his army to capture the Valley, and later the whole country now known as Nepal, as well as further areas.

Whilst on this subject why does Colonel Gifford produce this Niyam-pala derivation of Nepal? The old belief was that the word came from Ne-pala—

the Cherished of Ne, who is the patron saint.

Yours faithfully,

R. G. LEONARD, Colonel.

Kunraghat, U.P.

Digitized by Google

#### "DOWN ON THE FARM"—IN NEW ZEALAND

To The Editor of the U.S. I. "Journal"

DEAR SIR,

In your October issue of last year "RASP" takes Colonel Bunbury to task for painting too rosy a picture on the topic of farm life which the latter had written in a previous issue of the *Journal*. So far as I remember, Colonel Bunbury's article suggested that England had no use for the *Bouche inutile*, but required every one, even the retired officer, to be an active producing member of the community.

Apparently "RASP," having come into close contact with rural conditions in one part of England, has found many disadvantages, and therefore to him Qu'hailand has its appeal. His experience makes one realise the rather primitive conditions still existing in some places—but surely those conditions could be improved by the initiative, energy and commonsense of those for whom Colonel Bunbury's article was primarily written?

What does the alternative Qu'hailand offer? Certainly some advantages as to the material mechanics of living—town services, amenities and amusements. But what an aimless, purposeless existence! Surrounded by other Qu'hais to pass the time with some golf, discussion on the newspaper topic of the day and reminiscences of what they did in 1917 or 1941 with their brigades and battalions—all past and not to be changed. What are they doing for the present and future welfare of their country? At 50 one should still be capable of many years of useful work.

Some members may therefore be interested to know what life "down on the farm" in New Zealand is like—and especially with possible demobilisation in the offing.

First, I agree that capital is necessary, as well as the right kind of wife and a natural liking for the life and work.

My farm covers about twelve acres and is situated about six miles from Tauranga, a growing coastal town which may well be termed the Bournemouth of New Zealand. Sea, river and bush are all within reach; whilst Auckland, the Dominion's largest city, and Rotorua, the thermal wonderland, are within easy motoring distance. The climate is one of the best in New Zealand, many of our autumn and winter days reminding one of October in the Simla hills.

On taking possession of the farm nine years ago it was necessary to carry out the following work:

(a) Enlarge and modernise the then existing cottage to bring it into line with present-day ideas on workers' accommodation.

(b) Sink a bore and instal an electric pump to ensure a satisfactory water supply.

(c) Build a house and surround it with a garden.

(d) Prepare land and shelter for a citrus orchard.

The first three were completed in six months, when permanent occupation became possible. To-day, some of the garden trees are 20 feet high, the citrus trees average 10 feet and the shelter hedges were topped at 12 feet last year.

Electricity removes the drudgery of housework so feelingly described by "RASP." Here the writer prepares the early morning cup of tea within five minutes with the aid of the electric jug. In winter the bathroom and dining room can be easily warmed by specially designed electric heaters. Electric hot

Digitized by Google

water, stove, Frigidaire and Electrolux ease the work of the lady of the house, and necessarily too, because domestic help is not available.

My normal day is to assist in the milking shed before breakfast, seasonal work on the farm or in the orchard during the morning, and work in the garden in the afternoon. On farm, orchard or garden there is always something required to be done. For the writer one of the joys of the life is the planning ahead necessary for running the farm.

The daily work in the open air with so much sunshine ensures health and fitness. Shirt and shorts—frequently no shirt—is the normal dress throughout the year. At the end of the year one not only has the satisfaction of being fit, but also of having supplied the people of Britain with one ton of butter and half ton of bacon, and the people of the Dominion with many cases of health-giving grapefruit.

Financially, for the first six years, during the build-up of the farm and orchard, losses were incurred. Experience, too, had to be bought. During the last three years, as the citrus trees came into production, profits have been made. Although not large, these returns, given reasonable prices, can and should remain satisfactory.

On climate alone, New Zealand should become the dairy farm of the World. The country lacks the raw material and population for industry. If she is to follow a safe economic path, New Zealand should maintain her primary industries. Unfortunately, at present the trend is the other way. Uneconomic town industries are being fostered and the farmlands neglected. A price will have to be paid for this policy sometime in the future.

Economically the prosperity of the Dominion is closely linked with that of Britain. Of New Zealand exports, 98 per cent. are the product of the farms, for which the principal market is Britain. If Britain is prosperous, New Zealand will be prosperous. New Zealand cannot stand alone.

Finally, should any reader think of settling in New Zealand, and shortly many will have to consider the question of settlement somewhere, the writer would advise caution. Come and see first before reaching a decision. Time spent in reconnaissance is seldom wasted.

Yours faithfully, T. R. DAWE, 8th Punjab Regt. (Retired).

Tauranga, New Zealand.

#### NOTES BY THE SECRETARY

#### Address of Secretary

Will members please note that letters for the Secretary should henceford be addressed to Lieutenant-Colonel H. C. Druett, Secretary, United Service Institution of India, Edn. 3, G.H.Q. A.P.O., Delhi. Requests for book and communications regarding subscriptions, etc. should be sent as in the past to the headquarters of the Institution in Simla.

#### Annual Meeting of Council

Lieut.-General Sir Clarence Bird, K.C.I.E., C.B., D.S.O., presided at the anneal meeting of the Council, in the unavoidable absence of the President, Lieut-General Sir John Swayne, K.C.B., C.B.E.

In his annual report for 1944 the President was glad to report a continual rise in membership, which had again reached a record figure. Financially the position was satisfactory, despite the increased costs which had to be faced in war time.

The President expressed his thanks to Major-General H. V. Lewis, C.R. C.R.E., D.S.O., M.C., and to Group Captain E. L. Tomkinson, D.S.O., R.A.F., for their services as members of the Council. He also welcomed Lieut.-General Sir H. B. D. Willcox, K.C.I.R., C.B., D.S.O., Lieut.-General R. M. M. Lockhart, C.B., C.R., M.C., and Major-General J. B. Dalison, O.B.R., to the Council.

Honorary Members of Council.—It was decided to extend cordial invitations to the following officers to become Honorary Members of the Council:

Lieut.-General Sir Oliver W. H. Leese, Bart, R.C.B., C.B.E., D.S.O., C.-in-C. A. L. F., South East Asia.

Air Marshal Sir Keith R. Park, K.C.B., K.B.E., M.C., D.F.C., Allied Air Commander-in-Chief, Air Command, S. E. A.

Admiral Sir Arthur J. Power, K.C.B., C.V.O., Commander-in-Chief, East Indies Station.

Lieut.-General F. A. M. Browning, C.B., D.S.O., Chief of Staff, A.L.F., S.E.A.

Air Marshal L. N. Hollinghurst, C.B., C.B.R., D.P.C., R.A.F., Air Marshal Commanding Base Air Forces, S.E.A.

Executive Committee.—It was decided that the Executive Committee for 1945-46 should be composed of the following:

Major-General J. B. Dalison, O.B.E., (Chairman); Lieut.-General Sir Thomas Hutton, K.C.I.R., C.B., M.C.; P. Mason, Esq., O.B.E., I.C.S.; Captain H. E. Felser Paine, R.I.N.; and Major-General R. A. Savory, C.B., D.S.O., M.C.

Council Election.—As a result of the recent election the following new members were elected:

Lieut.-General Sir H. B. D. Willcox, K.C.I.E., C.B., D.S.O., Chairman, Army Re-organisation Committee; Lieut.-General R. M. M. Lockhart, C.B., C.I.E., M.C.; Major-General J. B. Dalison, O.B.

Lieut.-General R. M. M. Lockhart having since been appointed G. O. C. in C., Southern Army, has accepted an invitation to become a Vice-Patron of the Institution.

Council members who were re-elected were:

Lieut.-General Sir Clarence Bird, K.C.I.E., C.B., D.S.O.; Lieut.-General Sir Thomas Hutton, K.C.I.E., C.B., M.C.; P. Mason, Esq., O.B.E., I.C.S.; Captain H. E. Felser Paine, R.I.N.; Major-General R. A. Savory, C.B., D.S.O., M.C.; and Major-General D. A. L. Wade, O.B.E., M.C.

### New Members

The following new members have been elected to membership of the Institution during the past three months. In addition, six officers' messes have become subscribing members during the same period:

Afzal Hussain, K.B. Mian M., I.A.S., Atkinson, Major J.S.,

bi Blood, Lieut.-Colonel J.A., o.b.e., вlood, Brigadier W.H., м.v.о., Boyce, Brigadier T.W., M.C., M.M.

Chambers, Lieut. T.A.M.,

Cope, Major S.A., Douglas, Major G.,

Fairhead, E.C., Esq., Gradidge, Brigadier J.H., o.B.E.,

Graham, Captain R. McD., Grigor, Lieut.-Colonel W.C.,

Gurbaksh Singh, Captain.

Hexley, Lieut.-Colonel T.W.P., M.B.E., Hickie, Brigadier G.W.C., C.B.E.,

Himayet Beg, Major M.,

Ingall, Lieut.-Colonel R.M.,

Jones, I.E., Esq., I.C.S.,

Kak, Lieut. S.N.,

 $\mathbb{R}^*$ Leptaigne, Major-General W.D.A., C.B.E., D.S.O.,

Llewellin-Evans, Captain T.G., MacFeat, Colonel, P.D., M.C.

Magill, Lieut.-Colonel R.N., Marshall, Captain M.L.J.,

Miller, William, Esq.,

Morgan, 2/Lieut. J.A.,

Nicolson, Captain J.I., Noble, Captain A.G.,

Oliffe, Colonel F., O.B.E.,

Packwood, Colonel R.H., O.B.E., Panikkar, Dr. K.M., Bar-at-Law.,

Parelwala, Captain H.B.,

Park, Air Marshal Sir Keith R., K.C.B.,

K.B.E., M.C., D.F.C.,

Partridge, 2/Lieut. G.W.,

Peters, Lieut. K.G.

Ram Chandra, Esq., c.i.e., M.B.E., i.c.s.

Roberts, Major C.M.A.R, M.C.,

Robertson, Colonel W.D.,

Saner, R.M., Esq., M.B.E., 1.C.S.,

Smith, F.L., Esq., i.c.s.,

Smith, Lieut.-Colonel F.M. M.C.,

Sutcliffe, Lieut, F.,

\* Trestrail, Major S.E.A.,

Trivedi, Sir C.M., C.S.I., C.I.E., O.B.E., I.C.S.,

Warren, Major J.F.,

White, S./Lieut. J.J., R.I.N.V.R.,

Wright, W. McK., Esq., I.P.,

\*Young, Colonel P., D.S.O., M.C.

#### Birthday Honours List

Among those on whom His Majesty conferred honours in the Birthday Honours List were the following members of the United Service Institution of India:

K.C.B.—Lieut-General R.B. Deedes, c.B., c.B.E., M.C., Adjutant-General in India.

C.B.—Major-General A.B. Blaxland, O.B.E., Colonel A.D.P., Campbell, Major-General W.H.B. Mirrlees, D.S.O., M.C.

C.S.I.—M.R. Coburn, Esq., C.I.E., O.B.E., Additional Financial Adviser,

Military Finance, Government of India.

G.C.I.E.—Sir Jeremy Raisman, K.C.S.I., C.I.E., lately member of the Governor-General's Executive Council.

C.I.E.—Brigadier N.R.C. Cosby, M.C., Inspector-General, Frontier Corps, N.W.F.P.; J.C.W. Eustace, Esq., I.C.S., Provincial Organiser, National War Front, Punjab; Brigadier R.C. Howman, O.B.E., Director of Security, G.S. Branch, G.H.Q.; Captain W. J. Lifton, R.I.N.; Brigadier H.D.H. Nepean, D.S.O., Deputy Military Adviser in Chief, I.S.F.; Major-General C.A. Osborne, Commander, Kohat District; Colonel E. S. MacL. Prinsep, O.B.E., Asstt. Q.M.G., Lucknow District.

Knighthood.—J. G. Acheson, Esq., c.i.e., i.c.s., Resident in Kashmir; C. M. Trivedi, Esq., c.s.i., c.i.e., o.b.e., i.c.s., Secretary, War Department.

O.B.E.—Lieutenant-Colonel L.B. Burrows; Brigadier N.G. Gane, 6 Rajput Rifles; Lieutenant-Colonel P.B. Janson, Commandant, Tochi Scouts, N.W.F.P.; J.L. Leydon, Esq., Burma Frontier Service; Lieutenant-Colonel R.P. Ridgeway, T.D.; Colonel J.P. Shelley, Grenadier Guards (retd.); Colonel A.E. Stevens, R.E.

#### For Gallantry

The following awards to members of the Institution have been approved for gallant and distinguished conduct in the field:

Second Bar to D.S.O.—Brigadier R.C.O. Hedley, p.s.o., late 5 Royal Gurkha Rifles.

Bar to D.S.O.—Brigadier C.H.B. Rodham, O.B.E., D.S.O., M.C., late Royal Garhwal Rifles.

D.S.O.—Major J. S. Bolton, M.B.E., 9 Gurkha Rifles; Brigadier G.A.P. Coldstream, late 13 Frontier Force Rifles; Lieutenant-Colonel D. G. T. Horsford, 8 Gurkha Rifles, Lieutenant-Colonel J.A. Hubert, 16 Punjab Regiment; Major J. D. Maling, M.C., Sikh Light Infantry; Brigadier C.H.B. Rodham, O.B.E. M.C., Commanding Indian Infantry Brigade; Lieutenant-Colonel G.P.V. Sanders, 5 Royal Gurkha Rifles; Brigadier J. C. Saunders-Jacobs, Commander, Indian Infantry Brigade; Lieutenant-Colonel E. V. Whitehead, 8 Gurkha Rifles; Brigadier M. V. Wright, 10 Baluch Regiment.

Bar to M.C.—Captain W.G.H. Smith, M.C., 10 Gurkha Rifles.

M.C.—Major J.E. Benskin, 5 Royal Gurkha Rifles; Captain R.E. Blair, 7 Gurkha Rifles; Captain E. Hadfield, Indian Artillery; Major W.M. Mackay, 5 Mahratta Light Infantry; Major R. D. Maclagan, Seaforth Hinglanders; Captain D.R.A. McCorkell, Burma Regiment; Major Mian Hayand Din, M.B.E., 12 Frontier Force Regiment.

M.B.E.—Major G.L. Auret, 14 Punjab Regiment; Major F.F.D. Ward, R.I.A.S.C.; Major B.A.W. Hooper, 10 Baluch Regiment.

#### Gold Medal Essay Competition

Entries for the 1945-46 Competition must reach the Secretary by June 30, 1946. The subject selected for the next competition is:

"Co-ordination and control in peace and war of the forces of all three services, British and Dominion, in the Indian Ocean and neighbouring territories."

The interdependence of the three Fighting Services, one upon another, has been demonstrated time and again during the present war. The success achieved when the three have planned and operated with one object and under a unified direction has been remarkable. This has, however, tended to create a complicated system of command with large staffs.

Digitized by GOOGIC

Bearing in mind the necessity for the three Services to continue to train to operate as one whole, and the danger in peacetime of each retiring into its own watertight compartment, examine the possible ways of evolving from our own war experience a simplified system of command which will ensure the closest inter-service co-ordination for the Commonwealth forces in peace and in war.

A definition of the geographical scope has been left to the essayist to develop.

Full details of the rules governing the Competition will be found elsewhere in this issue.

#### MacGregor Memorial Medal

Recommendations for the award of the MacGregor Memorial Medal should be submitted by May 1 of each year.

The MacGregor Memorial Medal was founded in 1888 as a memorial to the late Major-General Sir Charles MacGregor, who founded the United Service Institution of India. It is awarded for the best military reconnaissance or journey of exploration of the year which, during the war, may have been achieved during an escape from a Far Eastern enemy country into, for instance, India.

The awards are made in June, and are: (a) For officers, British or Indian, silver medal, and (b) for soldiers, British or Indian, a silver medal with Rs. 100 as gratuity. For especially valuable work, a gold medal may be awarded in place of one of the silver medals, whenever the administrators of the Fund deem it desirable. The Council may also award a special additional silver medal, without gratuity, to a soldier, for specially good work.

The award of the medals is made by His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief, India, as Vice-Patron, and the Council of the United Service Institution of India, who were appointed administrators of the Fund by the MacGregor Memorial Committee.

Eligibility for the award is open to: (a) Officers and other ranks of all forces of the British Commonwealth of Nations while serving with the India Establishment, or with South East Asia Command during the present War. (b) Officers and other ranks of the Royal Indian Navy, Indian Army, Indian Royal Air Force and of the Indian States Forces, wherever serving. (The term "Indian Army" includes the Indian Auxiliary and Territorial Forces, Frontier Militia, Levies, Military Police and Military Corps under local governments.)

Personal risk to life during the reconnaissance or exploration is not a necessary qualification for the award of the medal: but, in the event of two journeys being of equal value, the man who has incurred the greater risk will be considered to have the greater claim to the award.

When the work of the year has either not been of sufficient value or notice of it has been received too late for consideration before the Council Meeting, the medal may be awarded for any reconnaissance during previous years considered by His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief in India to deserve it.

The medal may be worn in uniform by Indian soldiers on ceremonial parades, suspended round the neck by the ribbon issued with the medal. Replacements of the ribbon may be obtained on payment from the Secretary, United Service Institution of India, Simla.

#### Library

An extensive library is available for members of the Institution at the headquarters in Simla. Books may be loaned to members resident in India, and those borrowing works in person must enter particulars in the book provided. Members stationed outside Simla may receive books on application; they will be sent post-free by registered parcel post, and must be returned within two months, or immediately on recall. No more than three volumes may be issued at any one time. Reference books and works marked "Confidential" may not be removed from the library.

Members wishing to retain a work for more than two months should notify the Secretary to that effect. If, after the expiration of three weeks from the date of issue a book is wanted by another member, it will be recalled. Should a book not be returned within fourteen days of the date of recall, it must be paid for, the cost of lost or defaced books being refunded by the member to whom they were issued. Such volumes which have become out of print will be valued by the Executive Committee, the members being required to pay the cost so fixed.

The issue of a book to any member under the above rules implies the latter's agreement with the regulations.

#### Contributions to the Journal

Articles on matters of military, naval and air force interest are welcomed. They should not exceed 5,000 words in length, and preferably should run to 3,000 words. Contributions should be typewritten, double spacing, and in view of the paper shortage, may be typed on both sides, providing a moderately thick paper is used.

Contributors unable to submit articles already typed may send them in manuscript form, and arrangements will be made for them to be typed in Simla, the small charge being deducted from the contributor's fee. Payment is made on publication, at rates up to Rs. 150 according to the value of the contribution.

All articles dealing with military subjects are submitted to the authorities before publication, for security reasons. Contributions may, if the author desires, appear under a pseudonym; in such cases, the name of the author remains strictly confidential. The right to omit or amend any part of an article is reserved by the Executive Committee.





NOW BETTER THAN EVER



# ROYAL SOCIETY FOR THE ENCOURAGEMENT OF ARTS MANUFACTURES AND COMMERCE

PATRON-HIS MAJESTY THE KING

#### COUNCIL

#### PRESIDENT

E. F. ARMSTRONG, PH.D., D.SC., LL.D., F.B.S.

#### VICE-PRESIDENTS

LORD ABERCONWAY, C.B.E. W. H. ANSELL, M.C., P.B.I.B.A

A. C. Bossom, F.R.I.B.A., M.P.

SIR ATUL CHATTERJBE, G.C.I.E., K.C.S.I.

LIEUT.-COL. P. J. COWAN, M.B.E., M.INST.C.E., M.I.MECH.E.

SIR JOSIAH CROSBY, K.O.M.G., K.B.E., C.I.E., O.B.E.

SIE EDWARD CROWE, K.C.M.G., Chairman, Ezaminations Committee.

SIR WILLIAM DAVISON, K.B.E., M.P.

T. C. DUGDALE, R.A., R.P.

SIR FRANK BROWN, C.I.B. MAJOR W. H. CADMAN, B.SC., F.I.C.

G. D. H. COLE.

F.R.C.P., F.R.S.

SIR EDWARD A. GAIT, K.C.S.I., C.I.R.

E. W. GOODALE, M.C.

LORD HORDER, G.C.V.O., M.D., B SC., D.C.L., F.R.C.P.

PROFESSOR E. C. DODDS, M.V.O., D.SC., M.D.,

SIR THOMAS DUNLOP, R.O.M.G., C.M.G. REV. ETHELBERT GOODCHILD.

LORD HUNTINGFIELD, K.C.M.G.

SIR HARRY A. F. LINDSAY, K.C.I.E., C.B.E., Chairman, Dominions and Colonies Section Committee.

SIR HENRY MOMAHON, G.C.M.G., G.C.V.O., R.C.I.E., C.S.I.

G. K. MENZIES, C.B.E.

JOHN A. MILNE, C.B.E., Chairman, R.D.I. Committee.

C. C. PATERSON, O.B.E., D.SC., M.I.E.E., P.B.S.

E. M. RICH, C.B.E., F.C.G.I., B.SC.

E. MUNRO RUNTZ.

SIR JOHN RUSSELL, O.B.E., D.SC., F.R.S.

CAPTAIN A. H. RYLEY, Chairman, Thomas Gray Committee.

SIR NORMAN VRRNON, B.T., M.A. W. W. WAKEFIELD, M.A., M.P.

#### ORDINARY MEMBERS OF COUNCIL

MISS CAROLINE HASLETT, C.B.E., COMP.I.E.B.

F. R. HIORNS, F.S.A., F.R.I.B.A., M.T.P.I.

ROBERT W. HOLLAND, O.B.E., M.A., M.SO., LL.D.

C. GEOFFREY HOLME, M.B.R.

ALLAN WALTON, R.D.I.

JOHN G. WILSON.

E2-officio MEMBER OF THE COUNCIL

PERCY SMITH, B.D.I., Master of the Faculty of Royal Designers for Industry.

TREASURERS

William Will

OSWALD P. MILNE, F.R.I.B.A., and Chairman, Industrial Art Bursaries Board.

SECRETARY

K. W. LUCKHURST, M.A. (absent on Active Service).

Acting Secretary-Miss J. Scott Rogers.

Assistant Secretary, and Secretary, India and Burma and Dominions & Colonies Sections

D. C. MARTIN, B.SC., PH.D. (absent on War Service).

Acting Assistant Secretary-MISS S. HESLOP-DAVIES.

Honorary Solicitors-Messrs. Bristows, Cooke & Carpaael.

Auditors-Messes. Deloitte, Plender, Griffiths & Co.

Full particulars relating to the work of the Society and conditions of membership may be obtained from the Acting Secretary. The Annual Subscription is Three Guineas; the Life Subscription Thirty Guineas. There is no Entrance Fee.

The Society's Journal which contains full reports of the Society's Meetings, together with general articles, book reviews, etc., normally issued weekly, is published fortnightly during the War. It is posted free to Fellows.

All communications for the Society should be addressed to:

THE ACTING SECRETARY, ROYAL SOCIETY OF ARTS, 6-8 JOHN ADAM STREET, ADELPHI, LONDON, W.C.2.

#### A SERVICE PATTERN Officers' Popular

### "RAINCOAT"

That will keep out Wind, Cold and Water.

Have you one in your Kit?

Military Regulation Service Pattern Officers' Khaki Waterproof "Trench-Coat" (roomy and comfy and extremely serviceable and lighter in weight than Greatcoat).

Made from thoroughly Dustproof, Windproof and Waterproof, double texture fine Rubberised Cloth of Regulation Khaki Colour.



Price Rs. 45 each

FRONT: Double breasted style, cut with a curve to Military shape with broad lapels. Open and Broad Military Storm Collar to stand and fall with Tab to button to throat. Armpits with ventilation eyelets.

Note.—With order please state size round CHEST and WAIST taken over jacket and your full height or length of coat required.

## BADGES OF RANK

(For wear on shoulder straps of above Trench-Coat)

STARS Bronze (Waterproof) .....

.. @ Rs. 2-0 per pair.

CROWNS Bronze (Waterproof) .. .. @ Rs. 2-4 per pair.

(Raincoats for Lady Officers also supplied)

Please address your orders to:

# YOUSAF & CO.

(Late of Holdings, Oxford Circus, London, 1914-18)

MILITARY & POLICE TAILORS, LUDHIANA (PUNJAB)

Note.—Where V.-P. P. system is not available, please send remittance with order plus postage.

Branch at: Juliundur Cantonment, B. I. Bazar Telegraphic Address: "MAYFAIR," Ludhiana.



Sp Appointment

To The Late King George V

# RANKEN & Co., Ltd.

CALCUTTA, SIMLA, DELHI, LAHORE, RAWALPINDI & MURREE

ESTABLISHED IN CALCUTTA 1770

# CIVIL & MILITARY TAILORS GENTLEMEN'S OUTFITTERS AND BREECHES MAKERS

ESTIMATES SUPPLIED FOR
FULL-DRESS AND MESS DRESS
UNIFORMS OF ALL REGIMENTS

-Sy Appointment to

His Excellency General Sir Robert A. Cassels, G.C.B., C.S.I., D.S.O., Former Commander-in-Chief in India.

### FIRST-AID and SANITATION

#### for

#### **TROOPS**

Mechanisation has altered the nature of modern battles.

Fighting takes place in small, isolated and dispersed groups.

Though Medical Officers are still detailed to units they cannot be where casualties occur.

To make an efficient fighting unit every man should be 100% efficient in First-Aid and Sanitation.

"FIRST-AID AND SANITATION FOR TROOPS" affords this instruction for the non-medical officer and man in language which can be understood by the lay reader.

"So much confidence-inspiring knowledge has seldom been supplied at so low a price'.—"E.C.P." Journal of the United Service Institution of India.

Obtainable from
No. 1 Training & Depot Centre,
Indian Army Medical Corps,
RAWALPINDI.

Price: Annas Eight.

### UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION OF INDIA

Patron: H. E. The Viceroy

Council.—The Chief of the General Staff (President); The AO.C., Air Forces in India (Vice-President); The Flag Officer Commanding Royal Indian Navy; The Secretary, War Department; The Secretary, Defence Department; The Secretary, External Affairs Department; Lieutenant-General Sir Clarence Bird, K.C.I.E., C.B., D.S.O.; Major-General J. B. Dalison, O.B.E.; Lieutenant-General Sir Thomas Hutton, K.C.I.E., C.B., M.C.; P. Mason, Esq., O.B.E., I.C.S.; Captain H. E. Felser Paine, R.I.N.; Major-General R. A. Savory, C.B., D.S.O., M.C.; Major-General D. A. L. Wade, O.B.E., M.C.; Lieutenant-General Sir H. B. D. Willeox, K.C.I.E., C.B., D.S.O., M.C.

Membership of the United Service Institution of India is open to all officers of the Services, and to gazetted officers of the Government of India or of a Provincial Government.

Members receive the quarterly Journal of the Institution post-free to any part of the world. Other facilities include the use of the reading-room of the Institution in Simla, and of the extensive library maintained in its headquarters; books borrowed by officers serving in India are sent to them post-free, members paying the return postage.

During the War the entrance fee has been waived, new members being required to pay only the annual subscription of Rs. 10.

Government institutions, military libraries, officers' training schools, messes and clubs wishing to subscribe to the Journal may do so on payment of Rs. 10 per copy per annum.

Contributions on subjects of military interest are invited, payment being made for articles published in the Journal







The Wool-Wear for India



The Footwear for India

# BARR & STROUD BINOCULARS



Type C.F. 5. (6×24 mm.)

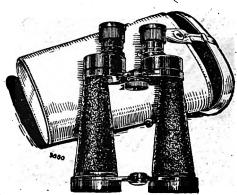


Type C.F. 10. ( $6 \times 30.5$  mm.)

BARR & STROUD LITD. REGRET THAT THEY ARE
UNABLE MEANWHILE TO ACCEPT PRIVATE ORDERS



Type C.F. 24. (8×30.5 mm.)



Type C.F. 30. (7×50 mm.)

BARR & STROUD, LTD.,

ANNIESLAND, GLASGOW, W.3-and 15 VICTORIA STREET, LONDON, S.W. 1

Telegrams :—
"Telemeter" Glasgow

Codes :—

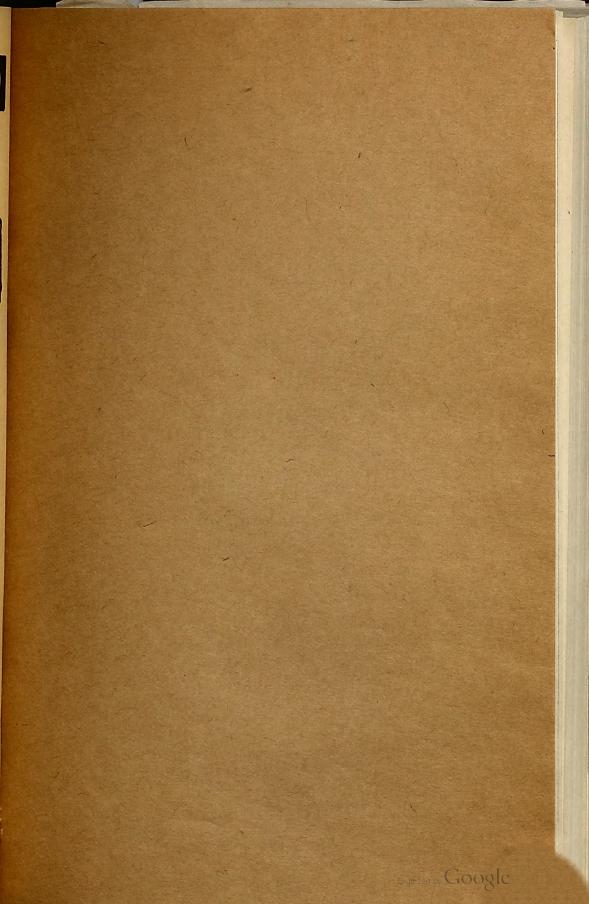
5th and 6th Editions, A.B.C.

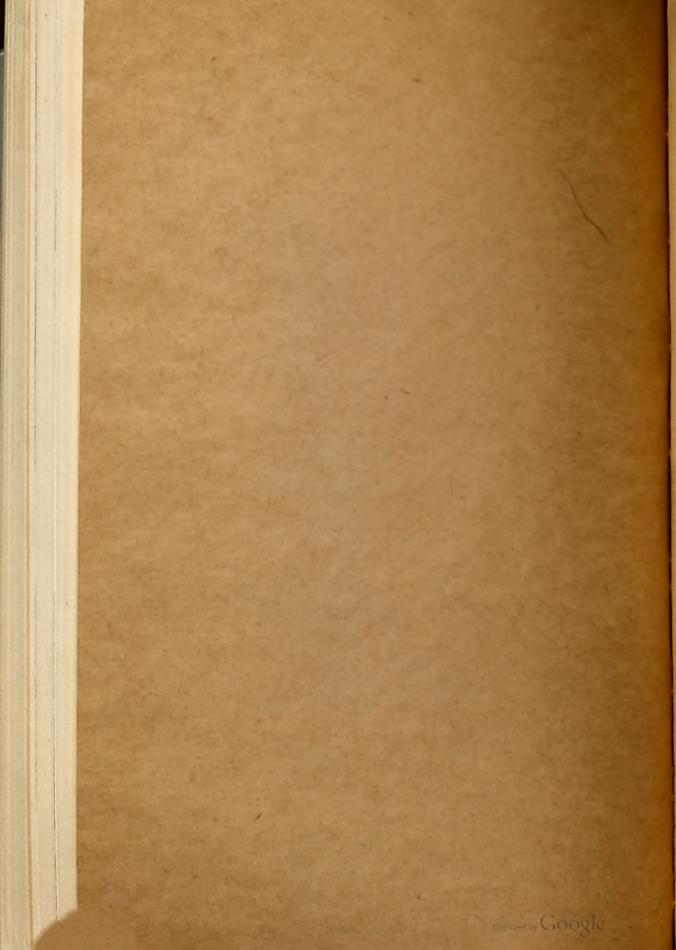
Telegrams:—
"Reternelet Sowest" London

Printed by E. G. Tilt (Manager) at The Civil & Military Gazette, Ltd., 42
The Mall, Lahore, and edited and oublished by Lieut, Col. H. C. Druett for
the United Service Institution of India, Simle.

ALI. RIGHTS RESERVED.

Digitized by Google





# THE JOURNAL

OF THE

# UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION

OF

# INDIA



## PRINCIPAL , CONTENTS.

Selection or Personal Prejudice
Malaya Campaign: First and Last Weeks
Assisting the Malayan Maquis
India's Watchword: Readiness
Sinews of War and All That
Further Thoughts on Frontier Myths
Wanted: An Indian Nursing Crusade
India's Policy Towards States of Indian
Ocean Area
The Last Year in Italy
"Safe in British Hands in Singapore"
Field Marshals of the Indian Army
Rolling Down The River
A Technical Intelligence Officer in Burma
When Expansion Again Becomes Necessary

Major-General F. M. Moore Major J. Wilson Stephens. Major J. E. Heeles. Major-General S. F. Irwin Lt.-General K. M. Loch. "The Admiral". Matron R. M. Hinchey.

K. M. Pannikar.
Colonel G. T. Wheeler
Charlotte Budd.
Brig. H. Bullock.
Lt.-Col. F. J. C. Piggott.
Capt. R. H. Hearn.
Lt.-Col. G. A. Mitchley.

(A COMPLETE LIST OF CONTENTS APPEARS ON PAGE ix)

# Banking by Post



If you are unable to call personally at any of the Branches of Lloyds Bank, Managers will be pleased to explain the Bank's facilities or answer any enquiries by post, if you will write to them.

Every kind of Banking Business transacted. CURRENT ACCOUNTS opened on terms which may be ascertained on application. FIXED DEPOSITS received at INTEREST.
SAWINGS BANK ACCOUNTS allow WITHDRAWALS by CHEQUE. STERLING and FOREIGN CURRENCY DRAFTS sold and direct REMITTANCES made. TELEGRAPHIC TRANSFERS effected through Banks in ALL COUNTRIES. WORLD LETTERS OF CREDIT TRAVELLERS CHEQUES supplied FREE OF COMMISSION BANK OF ENGLAND NOTES bу REGISTERED POST. SALARIES, PAY & PENSIONS collected. PERIODICAL PAYMENTS & SUBSCRIPTIONS effected. STOCKS & SHARES purchased and sold, and held in SAFE CUSTODY. EXPERT OPINION on INVESTMENTS obtained from Brokers. DIVIDENDS & INTEREST collected. ADVANCES allowed against Approved SECURITY.

# Lloyds Bank Limited

(Incorporated in England.)

Branches in the East:

BOMBAY (2 Offices), CALCUTTA (2 Offices), DARJEELING, KARACHI, DELHI, NEW DELHI, SIMLA, LAHORE, RANGOON, AMRITSAR, PESHAWAR, (Cantt. & City), RAWALPINDI, MURREE, SRINAGAR, GULMARG.

# United Service Institution of India

#### PATRON:

His Excellency the Viceroy and Governor-General in India.

#### VICE-PATRONS:

H. E. The Governor of Madras.

H. E. The Governor of Bombay.

H. E. The Governor of Bengal.

H. E. The C.-in-C. in India.

H. E. The Governor, United Prov.

H. E. The Governor of the Punjab.

H. E. The Governor of Bihar.

H. E. The Governor, Central Prov.

H. E. The Governor of Assam.

H. E. The Governor, N.W.F.P.

H. E. The Governor of Sind.

H. E. The Governor of Orissa.

The G.O. C.-in-C., Northern Cmd.

The G.O. C.-in-C., Southern Cmd.

The G.O. C.-in-C. Eastern Cmd.

The G.O. C.-in-C., Central Cmd.

#### MEMBERS OF THE COUNCIL, 1945-46

#### Ex-officio Members:

The Chief of the General Staff (President).
The A.O.C., Air Forces in India (Vice-President).
The Flag Officer Commanding Royal Indian Navy.
The Secretary, War Department.
The Secretary, External Affairs Department.

#### **Elected Members:**

Lieut.-Gen. Sir Clarence Bird, K.C.I.E., C.B., D.S.O. Major-General J. B. Dalison, O.B.E. Lieut.-Gen. Sir Thomas Hutton, K.C.I.E., C.B., M.C. P. Mason. Esq., C.I.E., O.B.E., I.C.S. Captain H. E. Felser Paine, R.I.N.

Lieut.-General R. A. Savory, C.B., D.S.O., M.C.

Major-General D. A. L. Wade, O.B.E., M.C.

Lieut.-General Sir H. B. D. Willcox, K.C.I.E., C.B., D.S.O., M.C.

#### Honorary Members:

Lieut.-Gen. H. H. the Maharaja of Jammu & Kashmir, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., G.C.V.O.

Air Vice Marshal H. H. the Nawab of Bhopal, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., C.V.O. Air Vice Marshal H. H. Maharaja Bahadur of Jodhpur, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., K.C.V.O.

Colonel H. H. the Maharaja Jam Saheb of Nawanagar, G.C.I.E., K.C.S.I.

Major-General H. H. the Maharajadhiraj of Patiala, G.C.I.E., G.B.E. Lieut.-Colonel H. H. the Raja of Faridkot, K.C.S.I.

Lieut.-General Sir Oliver W. H. Leese, G.B.E., D.S.O.

Air Chief Marshal Sir Keith Park K.C.B., K.B.E., M.C., D.F.C.

Admiral Sir Arthur J. Power,

K.C.B., C.V.O. Lieut.-General F. A. M. Browning, C.B., D.S.O.

Air Marshal L. N. Hollinghurst, C.B., C.B.E., D.F.C., R.A.F.

#### MEMBERS OF THE EXECUTIVE COMMITTEE, 1945-46.

Chairman: Major-General J. B. Dalison, O.B.E.
Members: Lieut.-General Sir Thomas Hutton, K.C.I.E., C.B., M.C.
Captain H. E. Felser Paine, R.I.N.
P. Mason, Esq., C.I.E., O.B.E., I.C.S.
Lieut.-General R. A. Savory, C.B., D.S.O., M.C.

Secretary and Editor: Lieut.-Colonel H. C. Druett. Bankers: Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla.

Digitized by Google

#### UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION OF INDIA

The headquarters building of the United Service Institution of India in Simla is open daily, including Sundays, from 9 a.m. to sunset. It contains a reading room, in which is available a wide range of illustrated periodicals, newspapers, magazines, etc., as well as a number of Service journals. A well-stocked library is also open to members, who may borrow volumes without charge, while members stationed elsewhere may obtain books on loan post-free.

Members also receive, post-free, each of the quarterly issues of the Journal of the Institution.

#### RULES OF MEMBERSHIP

1. All officers of the Defence Services, whether they belong to the Imperial Forces, to forces raised by the Government of India, by an Indian State, by a British Dominion or Colony, and all gazetted officials of the Government of India or of a Provincial Government shall be entitled to become members, without ballot, on payment of the entrance fee and subscription.

Other gentlemen may become members if proposed and seconded by a member of the Institution and approved by the Council. They will be entitled to all the privileges of membership, excepting voting.

- 2. Life members of the Institution shall be admitted on payment of a lump sum of Rs. 160, which sum includes entrance fee.
- 3. Ordinary members of the Institution shall be admitted on payment of an entrance fee\* (see para. 4) of Rs. 10 on joining, and an annual subscription of Rs. 10 (or 15s.) to be paid in advance.

The period of subscription commences on January 1.

An ex-member on rejoining the Institution will be charged a second entrance fee of Rs. 10 if since the date on which he ceased to be a member he has served or resided in India. In other cases no charge will be made.

- 4. British Service, Dominion and Colonial officers serving in India shall pay at entrance fee of Rs. 7 only.
- 5. Members receive the Journal of the Institution post free to any part of the world. Members in India may obtain books from the library; they are issued postage free, borrower paying the return postage.
- 6. Government institutions and offices, military libraries, messes and clubs wishing to subscribe for the Journal shall pay Rs. 10 per annum. Non-members shall pay Rs. 10 per annum plus postage. Single copies of the Journal will be supplied to non-members at Rs. 2-8-0 per copy plus postage.
- 7. If a member fails to pay his subscription for any year (commencing January 1) by June 1 of that year, a registered notice shall be sent to him by the Secretary inviting his attention to the fact. If the subscription is not paid by January 1 following, his name shall be struck off the roll of members and, if the Executive Committee so decide, posted in the hall of the Institution for six months, or until the subscription is paid.
- 8. An ordinary member wishing to resign at any time during a year in which one or more Journals have been sent to him must pay his subscription in full for that year and notify his wish to resign before his name can be struck off the list of members.
- 9. Members who join the Institution on or after October 1 and pay the entrance fee and annual subscription on joining will not be charged a further subscription on the following 1st January, unless the Journals for the current year have been supplied.
- 10. Members are responsible that they keep the Secretary carefully posted in regard to changes of rank and address. Duplicate copies of the Journal will not be supplied free to members when the original has been posted to a member's last known address and has not been returned through the post.
- 11. All communications should be addressed to the Secretary, United Service Institution of India, Simla.

<sup>\*</sup>For the duration of the war, the entrance fee has been waived.

# Outstanding Books Published by Thackers, Bombay

### THE SONG OF BERNADETTE Franz Werfel

of le

cont

Derio:

s. A: es 🖭

1 pos:

JES G.

ndf.

)oe:

d0

ne 🖅

쨀

虚

ett č

de:

rt e

g Ti

ŋŀ

ø

m CE N

س

More than a hundred thousand copies sold! Few novels pose a problem of more fascinating human complexity than this story of an en-lightened civilisation suddenly faced by the inexplicable.

inexplicable.

FOR WHOM THE BELL TOLLS

Freest Hemingway

One million people bought it. Five million people read it. The greatest love story of all Rs. 9-12

# INDIAN INTERLUDE Eric Beecroft

The author has created a number of delightful personalities, he succeeds in conveying to the reader a true atmosphere.

Rs. 6-14

#### MOTIVE FOR MURDER Florence Kilpatrick

Clyde Moncrieff has to make a dash for England to escape from being involved in a murder he witnessed in an opium-den in Rio. His further adventures make an absorbing detective story.

JOHN John Gunther

Mr. Gunther is well known for his "Inside Europe" and other books of a similar type. "Day" is recommended as one of the best books of the week by the "London Times Literary Supplement."

WITH THE 14TH ARMY
D. F. Karaka
This latest book by Mr. Karaka is an outstanding feat of close observation and accurate recording. Recent developments on this front make "With the close of the control make "With the 14th Army" a book of particular interest just now. Rs. 4-12

### WINGATE'S PHANTOM ARMY W. G. Burchett

"More thrilling than any fictitious thriller." Rs. 9-12

#### PACIFIC TREASURE ISLAND

The book tells of New Caledonia, the Pacific Treasure Island—the Malta of the South Seas. Of the author it is said "Burchett has become a force to be reckoned with. His writings have rightly become popular among the pooples of South East Asia."

Rs. 9-12

#### THE WORLD THAT WORKS George West

This is a book about the end of a world that did not work and news of a world we're all looking for—a world that works.

Rs. 5

#### THE LIVING AND THE DEAD

A book that has caused much bitterness and caused much services and Res. 2-12 much more constructive criticism.

# INDIA IN FABLE, VERSE AND STORY L. H. Nibiett

Here is a feast of good reading: stories ancient and modern—weird, bizarre, elevating, humourous, and serious—illustrating diverse aspects of Indian Here. Indian life.

#### JOURNALISM

C. L. R. Sastri A rare find and a real acquisition to Indian journalism.

#### TRY ANYTHING ONCE Frank Clune

"A record of true vagabondage, amazing in the variety of its icidents, and told with a naive candour, which leaves the reader rather breathless."

Rs. 6-6 Rs. 6-6

### ONIONS AND OPINIONS N. G. Jog

These little essays are a sheer delight.

#### PEOPLE OF BOMBAY Percival & Olivia Strip

Rs. 6-12

This book describes the origin, history, religion, commercial activities inherent traits, etc.. of the Parsees, the Khoias, the Banyas, the Bohrus and other communities of Bombay. Rs. 9-12

# SUNLIT WATERS Capt. C. W. W. S. Conway

This book gives an extremely practical exposi-tion of the methods and advantages of fishing with light tackle—and brings fishing history in India up-to-date.

#### MY STORY Sheelagh O'Flynn

A Baby's Record Book and Photograph combined. Rs. 9-8

# I. KNITTED ZOO Anna Politzer & Thora Stowell

What is more fascinating than making your own toys at home? Here is a book of complete instructions for knitting toys, with details about materials and making up, and expert guidance throughout. Re. 6-8

#### THE GALLANT WAY Frank Taylor

A collection of twenty-three spirited poems extolling the best in the British martial tradi-

## THE TRIAL OF MUSSOLINI "CASSUS"

Did you read "Guilty Men"?if so (or if not) read "The Trial of Mussolini" by "Cassius." The first four editions total 100,000 copies. Rs. 2-14

#### I MADE MY OWN DOLLS

Thora Stowell

The patterns given in this book have all been made over and over again and have stood the test of being sold in competition with professional models and all have sold very weil.

#### LENINGRAD

Out of the beleaguered city—the starved, hombod and shelled city—he brought a story that no
reader will very easily forget. Rs. 8-14
WHAT TO DO WITH GERMANY
Louis Nizer

His book is a triumph of brief, lucid statement, sane argument and imaginative planning, facing all the major issues and omitting no essentials.

#### STRANGE ISLAND Moliey Kaye

This is a thriller in the classical tradition of Edgar Wallace and Agatha Christie, brilliantly constructed and told with many flasnes of humour.

Re. 8-12

Through Japanese Barbed Wire (in the press).

G. Priestwood

## THACKERS PUBLISHERS BOMBAY



It is the exquisite scheme, the skilful blending of colours, that makes a masterpiece. Superb blending alone can achieve perfection.



And so it is with cigarettes. It is the skill of the blender which produces such excellence as you find in "Capstan."

For years they have been renowned as the cigarettes which are blended better.

Better buy
CAPSTAN
They're blended better

W. D. & H. O. WILLS, BRISTOL & LONDON

CAPAS

#### A SERVICE PATTERN Officers' Popular

# "RAINCOAT"

That will keep out Wind, Cold and Water.

Have you one in your Kit?

Military Regulation Service Pattern Officers' Khaki Waterproof. "Trench-Coat" (roomy and comfy and extremely serviceable and lighter in weight than Greatcoat).

Made from thoroughly Dustproof, Windproof and Waterproof, double texture fine Rubberised Cloth of Regulation Khaki Colour.



Price Rs. 45 each

FRONT: Double breasted style, cut with a curve to Military shape with broad lapels. Open and Broad Military Storm Collar to stand and fall with Tab to button to throat. Armpits with ventilation eyelets.

Note.—With order please state size round CHEST and WAIST taken over jacket and your full height or length of coat required.

## NEW WAR MEDAL RIBBONS

N. Africa Star, 1939|45 Star, Burma Star, Italy Star, Pacific Star, Defence Medal, France|Belgium|Holland Star, and other medal Ribbons at Rs. 1|8 per foot. Oakleaf Emblems for "Mentions" and silver Rossets Annas 8 each. Silver Arabic Numerals "1" or "8" Rs. 1 each. RIBBON BARS with safety pin mounted with 1, 2, 3, 4 or 5 Ribbons at Annas 6, 12, Rs. 1|2, 1|8 or 1|14 respectively.

GHQ Signs, Gold embd. for officers Rs. 2 a pair. GHQ Signs, Silk embd. for O. Rks., Re. 1 a pair.

Please address your orders to:

# YOUSUF & CO.

(Late of Holdings, Oxford Circus, London, 1914-18)

MILITARY & POLICE TAILORS,

LUDHIANA, (PUNJAB)

Note.—Where V.-P. P. system is not available, please send remittance with order plus postage.

Telegraphic Address: "MAYFAIR," Ludhiana.

# "TILLEY" STORM LANTERN

Height overall 19 inches.

TO
OPERATE



Weight 31 lbs.

RELIABLE—
IN ALL
WEATHERS

# For Indoor & Outdoor Use

Similar to illustration (War quality) but without Wire Guard

Rs. 49-12 each

Special rates for quantities on request:

Army & Navy Stores Ltd.
P. O. Box 5 FORT, BOMBAY.

LONDON'S LEADING SYDRE IN THE EAST

# FOR

# EVERY

# ASPECT

OF

Science, Medicine, Industry and pleasure too --- there is an Ilford Selo Product.

For nearly seventy years sensitised photographic materials manufact-

# PHOTOGRAPHY

ured by liford Ltd.

have been renowned the world over for their consistent high quality.

ILFORD PHOTO-GRAPHIC PLATES PAPERS--SHEET FILMS -- X - RAY FILMS AND SELO ROLL FILMS

Distributed Throughout India by



ILFORD (INDIA) LTD.

BOMBAY MADRAS AHORE CALCUTTA

DJK 4851

### THE

# INDIAN STATES FORCES



# ANNUAL

## 1946

The Forces of the Indian States played a worthy part with the Indian Army in the road to Victory.

The 1946 Edition of the Indian States Forces Annual contains many articles and illustrations concerning the work of these Forces both in operational areas and in the States.

To ensure receiving a copy, write as soon as possible to the Editor, The Indian States Forces Annual, Headquarters of the Military Adviser-in-Chief, Indian States Forces, New Delhi.

Price Rs. 3 each

# The Journal

of the

# Anited Service Anstitution of Andia

#### **CONTENTS**

	- 450
Matters of Moment	. 151
Selection or Personal Prejudice, by Major-General F. M. Moore	157
Malaya Campaign: First and Last Weeks, by Major J. Wilson Stephens	
Assisting the Release Research 1 ages at Table	. 181
	100
Judging by Appearances, by "Hyderabad"	
India's Watchword: Readiness, by Major-General S. F. Irwin	
Short Leave in England, by LieutColonel E. H. P. Mallinson	
Diary of a "Stiff", by LieutColonel G. L. W. Armstrong	
Sinews of War And All That, by LieutGeneral K. M. Loch .	
The Fourth Indian Division	
Further Thoughts on Frontier Myths, by "The Admiral"	. 225
Things People Say and Write	. 230
Wanted: An Indian Nursing Crusade, by Matron R. M. Hinchey .	. 232
India's Policy Towards States of Indian Ocean Area, by K. M. Pannikar	ეეს
The Last Year in Italy, by Colonel G. T. Wheeler	. 244
"Safe in British Hands at Singapore", by Charlotte Budd .	. 250
Field Marshals of the Indian Army, by Brigadier H. Bullock .	. 255
Our Infantry, by G. B. S	950
Rolling Down The River, by LieutColonel F. J. C. Piggott .	069
A Technical Intelligence Officer in Burma, by Captain R. H. Hearn	
"Poco Poco Italiano", by LieutColonel H. B. Hudson	OF A
A "United Services College", by Major T. A. Shurlock	970
When Expansion Again Becomes Necessary, by LieutColonel	
G. A. Mitchley	909
Burma Ballad, by M. V. W	. 287
Guerilla Warfare, by Major H. Simonds-Gooding	. 288
Organised Compost Making, by Major J. H. Auret	. 290
Additions to the Library	205
Letters to the Editor	. 299
Notes by the Secretary	205
to the terminal termi	

#### GOLD MEDAL PRIZE ESSAY COMPETITION

The Council has selected the following subject for the Gold Medal Prize Essay Competition for 1946:

"Co-ordination and control in peace and war of the forces of all three services, British and Dominion, in the Indian Ocean and neighbouring territories."

The interdependence of the three Fighting Services, one upon an other, was demonstrated time and again during the late war. The success achieved when the three have planned and operated with one object and under a unified direction has been remarkable. This has, however, tended to create a complicated system of command with large staffs.

Bearing in mind the necessity for the three Services to continue to train to operate as one whole, and the danger in peacetime of each retiring into its own watertight compartment, examine the possible ways of evolving from our own war experience a simplified system of command which will ensure the closest interservice co-ordination for the Common wealth forces in peace and in war.

A definition of the geographical scope has been left to the essayist to develop

Entries are invited from all commissioned officers of His Majesty's Forces, from gazetted officers of the Civil Administration in India, and from officers of the Indian States Forces.

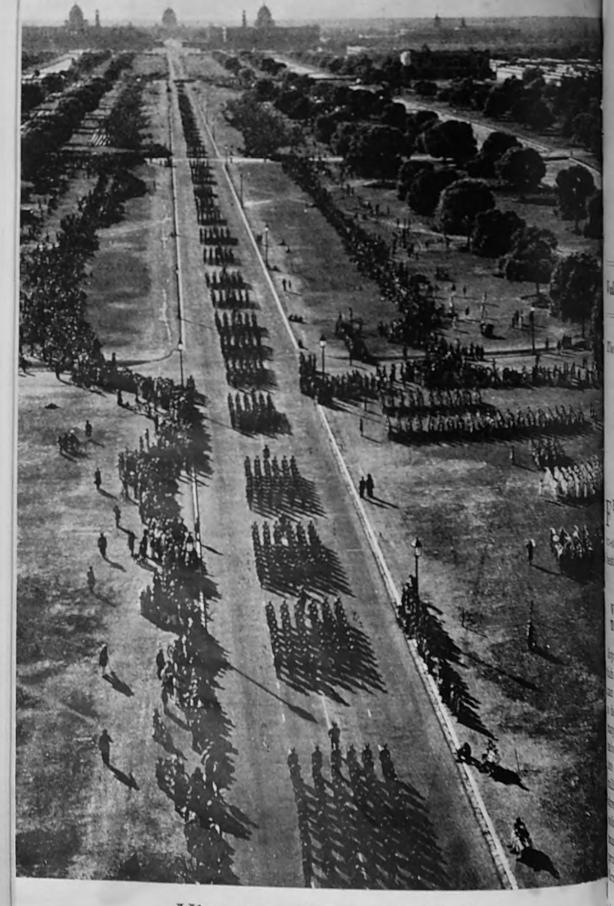
Essays, which should be typewritten (double spacing) and submitted in triplicate, must be received by the Secretary, United Service Institution of India, Simla, on or before June 30, 1946. In order that the anonymity of each candidate should be preserved, a motto should be written at the top of each entry. A scaled envelope, bearing on the outside the motto, and containing inside the name and address of the author of the essay, must accompany each entry.

Entries should not exceed fifteen pages (approx. 8,000 words) of the size and style of the Journal. Should any authority be quoted in the essay, the title of the work referred to should be given.

Three judges chosen by the Council will adjudicate. They may recommend a money award not exceeding Rs. 500, either in addition to, or ir substitution of, the Gold Medal, and will submit their decision to the Council. The name of the successful candidate will be published in the October, 1946 issue of the Journal.

Copyright of all essays submitted will be reserved by the Council of the United Service Institution of India.

Digitized by Google



Victory Parade in Delhioogle

# The Journal

of the

# Anited Scrvice Institution of India

Vol. LXXVI

**APRIL**, 1946

No. 323

The views expressed in this Journal are in no sense official, and the opinions of contributors in their published articles are not necessarily those of the Council of the Institution

#### MATTERS OF MOMENT

**F**EW, if any, associations of men of two nations have yielded such unanimity of spirit as has the two-hundred year old British and Indian co-operation in the Indian Army. The man-bap tradition brought out the best in both officer and man; it was a link forged in war and peace, in far-

A Valuable Tradition off battlefields as well as in Indian cantonments. It thrived on fair play, fidelity and singleness of heart and purpose. It was unique in the annals of military history for officers of one nation to guide, lead and retain the

loyalty of men of another nation for so long, and generations of British officers who have given their lives to make the Indian Army what it is can with honesty look on their handiwork not only with affection but with a deep sense of pride. In modern days the preaching of such sentiments may not be applauded. British people are not good advertisers of themselves, and the pre-war Regular Officer is no exception. But as these lines are written by one who between the Wars was an onlooker of matters military, they can be read without embarrassment by those who built and strengthened the foundations of an Army which emerged as the biggest volunteer Army of modern times. "Man-bap" tradition is a tradition which must and will live, for its essential meaning is that the officer brings to his profession that vital interest in the welfare of his men without which an Army becomes weak and inefficient.

With sudden transfers and departures in the stress and strain of war the tradition has perhaps dropped a little into the background. E.C.Os,

lacking the years of experience with Indian troops, were Its handicapped at first by ignorance of language and customs, Great but their pride in the Indian soldier quickly led them to Value see the value of such a tradition. Now the war is over and the beginnings of permanency are becoming evident, the basic loyalty between officer and man which has always been such a feature of the Indian Army is again coming to the fore. It had, and will for ever have, a tremendous value, for loyalty to one's friends is a characteristic on which Indian soldier and British officer may pride themselves. It is a loyalty far above political strife. In future, Indians will have the privilege of fostering it, and that it will lead to the same confidence and trust cannot be doubted. "Anand," in his article in our last issue, after referring with refreshing frankness to some of his fellow Indian officers, declared that among them were many who, if carefully picked, trained and guided, would be the torch-bearers of Indian aspirations. Such officers have come to the fore through their courage on the battlefield, and, stimulated by action in fighting the enemy, have shown high qualities of leadership.

Thousands of such leaders will be required in the coming years if an Army on whose record is inscribed such imperishable gallantry as that of

Finding
The Future
Leaders

the Indian Army is to maintain its high standard among the Armies of the world. How are we finding those leaders? Critics who declare that present methods are wrong may find much food for thought in the article in this issue

by Major-General Moore, who writes with authority and experience. His words will, we hope, convince the doubters that this comparatively new science of selection has and is yielding the best results. Once selected, the newcomers will receive an education and training such as no commissioned officer of any other Army receives. Leaders will also emerge from the K.G.R.I.M. Colleges, from the Boys' Companies, and from Battalions. Officers who are real leaders must be mon with the spirit of endurance, clogged determination and initiative; men who have the courage to be themselves, with souls of their own, and with complete faith in their men. In the future, as in the past, such are the men who will be the Army's leaders. They may not appear as leaders at first—no "self-made" man has ever been recognised as such in his early days; he succeeds by perseverance, not by a "gift." Such men exist in India as elsewhere. They need finding, and the Defence Services are seizing every opportunity to secure them.

R EGRETTABLE as it may be, some officers who have returned to Britain on demobilisation from India write of difficulties in securing suitable employment. The main complaint is that employers are not inclined to look upon service in the Outer Empire as of much account to them in their

For Officers Going Home

(IX

te

ſĠ.

: 107

le lic

business. Why should this be so? The future of Britain hangs upon her success in recovering and expanding her export markets, and one would suppose that personal knowledge of those markets and their requirements would

be of inestimable value. Apparently it is not so. British manufacturers. we are told, want value for money. If that is true, and we imagine it is, officers about to leave for Home should seize every chance of increasing their "value." One subject on which most people fail, and fail lamentably. is salesmanship—not the salesmanship of the vacuum-cleaner or insurance policy type—but salesmanship of their own knowledge and ability. They are the "goods" the ex-officer from India has to sell; they are his most important assets. If he has both, his chances of selling them to a prospective employer are greatly enhanced.

ldڌ Let us be frank. Shrewd business men select their executive staff with 🏿 care. If a man has shown initiative in battle, can handle men with tact and tolerance, and possesses a knowledge of modern business practice, then he is worth employing. What, then, Some should an officer about to be demobilised do to ensure that Hints hints are contained in a letter in our "Letters to the Editor" feature else-

he makes the best of his opportunities? Many valuable where in this issue. Here are some more. One is to practise writing letters plainly. The habit of using groups of initial letters—a time-saver in wartime—must go; "in view of the fact" must give way to "as"; "on the  $^{\#}$  assumption that" will become simply "if"; "notwithstanding the fact that" will be replaced by "though." And our old friend "it is for consideration whether" can deservedly disappear. Those interested in this particular subject might take as an example of clear and simple writing the Indian Penal Code. It is a model of clarity. It was written by Macaulay. A useful opening presents itself in the increasing concern large manufacturing houses are showing in the welfare of their workers, for officers haveor should have—ample experience in the handling of men, and a study of newspapers and periodicals will soon reveal to an inquiring mind the names of firms who may be interested. . . . Many British manufacturers, owing to their pre-occupation with war work, have not been able to keep in sufficiently close touch with the Indian market, which may now require types of goods it did not want before the war. An enterprising officer before going home will watch for possible expansion of trade in one line, and approach a manufacturer at Home with the latest news of the possibility . of increasing its sale in India. Business men would welcome the knowledge, and would be impressed with the enterprise of the individual who gave it.

These lines are written with the desire to help officers, especially young officers, going Home. They will find schemes arranged, Government officials to advise, and training courses organised. Much Qualifications more has been "laid on" for the demobilised officer than For was done in 1919, and the danger is that people may Success gather the impression that they will get jobs to their liking without much effort. They should not be too sanguine. Undoubtedly the best course to pursue is to improve one's knowledge during the interim period before going Home; to improve one's assets; and, thus mentally armed, to go ahead with conviction in one's ability. Success in peace, as in war, springs from initiative and hard work and the success of an officer's-or any man's-search for a post-war job depends largely on himself, his ability, his knowledge, and his salesmanship. Given those qualifications he should be able to face the future with confidence.

AR is a sickness that affects all nations, whether victorious or vanquished, and the world food shortage is one of its consequences.

The scorched-earth policy, so effective in war, has rebounded, and countries throughout the world are afflicted. Europe produced 42 million tons of wheat before the war—last year 23 million tons; serious droughts in the five continents during 1944-45 reduced harvests; and shortage of fertilisers owing to the war has also contributed to the present position. The world exportable surplus of wheat in June, 1943 was 46,000,000 tons; by July, 1945 it had fallen to 22,00,000 tons; in February, 1946 it was estimated at 12,000,000 tons; and the deficiency is now more than 5,000,000 tons. World

12,000,000 tons; and the deficiency is now more than 5,000,000 tons. World consumption of rice for 1946 was estimated at 6,136,000 tons; yet the available supplies now are estimated at only 3,070,000 tons. In India cyclones, storms and droughts have all combined since the turn of the year to wreck the hopes the authorities had entertained that the country might be self-sufficient in its food resources. Failure of the early spring rains have, however, nullified those hopes, and the whole of India faces a food shortage of a most serious character.

Turn back to the war years. More than three years ago food rationing was introduced in India; in 1942-43 over a million-and-a-half people died in India was the Bengal famine. Yet while India was far from over—
The stocked, she cut her rations and sent to Russia and other—
Good places foodstuffs she could justifiably have kept. More—
Neighbour over, not an enemy prisoner of war nor one of the thousands of Polish refugees in the country went short. Now India, the country which did in fact play the part of the good neighbour, is in the

worst plight of all. That India's position is being recognised was evident from the encouraging remarks of Sir Ramaswami Mudiliar who, in appealing to the United Nations Organisation for help, said that representatives of the important wheat producing lands of New Zealand, Canada and Australia had all promised to do what they could to help India. It is good news, too, that some of the huge stocks of rice held in Siam are being shipped to India, and that nearly 150,000 tons have arrived.

Such is the help India is receiving in her hour of need. What is being done in India to ease the position? His Excellency The Viceroy lost no time in ordering that lawns and flower gardens surround-How To ing The Viceroy's House in Delhi should be planted Help with vegetables, and his practical lead should be followed. Now by all who have even small gardens. H. E. The Commander-in-Chief has urged that rigid domestic economies should be introduced in all Service households, Messes and hostels. The number of courses to be served at any one meal should be limited to not more than two, and wherever possible families should make themselves self-supporting as far as vegetables are concerned. Troops are to be employed on an intensive "Grow More Food" campaign up to three days per week. Large formations of the Defence Services have set an example by growing their own vegetables, and by rearing poultry. Knowing how vitally help is needed. they can be relied upon to play their part in easing the lot of the general population. Public gardens could be ploughed and planted with foodstuffs; ornamental fountains stopped and the water conserved; and rice omitted from the menu of all to whom it is not essential. The Cumulative effect of all this end of other measures could be substantial. Famine, if it comes, will affect all—but most tragically it will affect the poor.

Too seldom is public tribute paid to the self-sacrifice of those who turn to nursing for their career, and singularly little attention is given to the subject in India. Yet with the early nationalisation of India's armed forces it is a matter of first importance, for if unfortunately the country is

The Nursing Problem again drawn into war, nursing of its wounded and maimed sailors, soldiers and airmen will demand thousands of efficient and trained nurses. Where are they to come from? Nursing is not learned in a day, and unless the country has trained nurses to which to turn in times of emergency many men who might otherwise have been restored to health will die. That, however, may be a narrow viewpoint. What is of greater importance is the civilian aspect, and with that thought in mind we commend attention to an article in this issue written by one who has devoted much thought to the subject. She has rightly treated the problem from the broad, all-India, angle, for every modern nation must have first-class health services if it is to advance. As our contributor points out, while Western nations

have three nurses for every doctor, India has ten doctors to every nurse, and until a steady stream of India's young women come forward to learn, train and practise it is unlikely that the health of the masses of the people will attain the high standard the India of the future will demand. Public speakers have declared that each village must have its resident nurse. That may be impossible, but it is clear that public interest and public understanding of the problem are matters which demand the serious consideration of all who have the best interests of the country and its peoples at heart.

Members are earnestly requested to notify any change of address to the Secretary without delay. Such co-operation will not only help to ease postal traffic at a time when mail services are over-burdened, but will also ensure prompt receipt of the Journal each quarter.

## SELECTION OR PERSONAL PREJUDICE

By Major-General F. M. Moore.

"The quality of an Army is the quality of its officers".—
General Sir Claude Auchinleck.

WHEN India rules herself, her leaders must confirm the method by which officers for her Services are to be selected. The present scientific method is meeting with so much criticism that a study of Selection and an analysis of common grievances seems desirable, so that a decision will be made in the light of the best and fairest advice available.

This article presents the case for our present system, and affords our critics an opportunity of presenting theirs.

Enemies of Selection.

Selection is unpopular and always will be. Its chief critics are :-

- (a) Candidates who have been given low gradings, and their relations.
- (b) C.Os who have had their pet officers turned down.
- (c) Those who seek privilege through nepotism or hereditary right.
- (d) And last, but far the greatest, that large band of senior officers, who do not understand what scientific selection means and are "too busy" to study it; but are suspicious of anything new and are prepared to accept, as true, any derogatory rumour they hear or any excuse a failed candidate cares to produce.

We attempt to persuade candidates and their relations that it is wiser and kinder to let candidates know, when we consider them unsuited for the Army. But candidates, being human, seldom believe they are not fit for commissions and parents —will always be parents!

There are only two known forms of Selection:—(i) Examination and Personal Interview; (ii) Our present system of scientific selection.

The weaknesses of the first system are:-

- (a) Candidates learn sufficient to pass an exam, by intensive study or by learning books off by heart.
  - (b) Successful candidates often have no ability to put theory into practice.
- (c) Wealthy candidates go to expert crammers, who prepare them to answer questions, with the least possible knowledge.
  - (d) Gradings awarded by personal interview are based on personal bias.
  - (a), (b) and (c) are self-explanatory, and only para (d) requires elaboration.

With the best will in the world, all human beings are biassed, because every one of us has a type we like and another type we dislike. For instance, some senior officers like the athletic type, regardless of brains; others prefer the more intellectual type, and insist that too much attention is paid to games ability. Senior officers with strong characters seldom have any use for reserved

or temperamental officers; whereas senior officers with weak characters often get the best out of shy or diffident officers, but dislike juniors with strong characters.

Quick-tempered senior officers dislike officers who express opinions; whereas placid and sympathetic senior officers like to be given ideas and often cannot see obvious weaknesses in their officers. Active and energetic senior officers dislike lethargic juniors; whereas lazy senior officers welcome brainless stooges. And so on ad finitum.

The fact is that all senior officers, especially those with personality, know what they want and are not happy unless the candidate fits in with their own particular type. Their opinions and reports are therefore always biassed, and there lies the main weakness of Selection by personal interview, unless it is backed up by scientific methods, administered by trained Selectors.

The man who stands self-condemned is he who states: "I don't care a damn about Selection. I know the type that will make a good officer and I am prepared to back my judgment against any....system". How little does he realise that he is really saying: "I know the type that suits me and no other will do"! To be fair to all types, selectors are taught to sink their own personality and are trained to judge on performance and ability, regardless of looks and personal prejudice. After all, many of our best Military leaders are no beauties!

A Personal Interview, before a board of senior officers, has the following failings:—

- (a) During the interview, one of the board must do the questioning of the candidate and his questions are based on his line of approach, which seldom, if ever, coincides with the line of approach the other members would adopt. It is too late for the other members to produce questions after the President, as the candidate has been led up one path and cannot be expected to switch to another, without a considerable interval to re-orientate himself.
- (b) Members of the board are filling other responsible jobs, and therefore have not the time to go and learn the art of investigating and assessing the respective value of merits and debits discovered in a candidate.
- (c) The President lacks experience of Selection and has no opportunity of comparing the standard of the group he is testing with previous groups or groups being tested by another President.
- (d) Some senior officers may be able to judge a candidate's present ability but, before you read further in this article, just consider how you would examine a candidate to ascertain his potentiality for the future. What would you look for and how would you assess the relative good and bad points you find? You will find the answer on page 162\*.

There is no difference in principle between selection for Emergency commissions and selection for Regular commissions; but there are small differences in the method of testing. As future Selection will only be concerned with candidates for Regular commissions, the details given in this article describe the working used, when Selection boards are dealing with this type of candidate.

### HISTORY OF SCIENTIFIC SELECTION.

Scientific selection was originally thought of about fifty years ago, when the Biner-Simon test of intelligence was produced, with a view to classifying

Digitized by GOOSIG

Parisian school children, for grading into classes and the award of scholarships. Since then, an immense amount of work has been done, in Austria, Canada, Germany, France, Switzerland, the U.S.A. and Great Britain, to develop methods of psychological assessment in civil life.

The Germans can justly claim to have started methodical selection for the Services. With the advent of Hitler, they developed a scientific system of assessment, which was used while their youths passed through the Hitler Youth Movement, labour camps and their period of military service. As, however, their theories included fantastic ideas on consanguinity and rights of inheritance and their methods savoured of the Gestapo, something very different was required by England.

In England, first experiments in Army selection started in 1941. By then, all the traditional sources of officer material had dried up, about 20,000 more officers were required in the next twelve months, and there was great and growing dissatisfaction at the method of selection then in force, which consisted of a 15 minute interview before a board comprised of one senior and two coopted officers.

An experimental board was set up, in Edinburgh, in January 1942. It started training personnel for other boards in April 1942, and by November 1942 seventeen War Officer Selection Boards were in operation.

By 1943 India had learnt how ill-advised Interview boards had been in their selection of officers, by the high rate of failure among Emergency Commissioned Officers. It was decided, therefore, to introduce scientific selection, based on the English system, but adapted for Indians. Experimental work started in March 1943, and the first Indian board opened up in Dehra Dun in June that year.

So any suggestion that a "new fangled" system is being forced on India is quite incorrect.

#### SCIENTIFIC SELECTION.

Object and fundamental principles.—Our task is to collect evidence about a candidate's past and present performance, and to review its relevance towards predicting his future potentiality as an officer.

The fundamental principles behind our system of carrying out this task are:—

- 1. That technical tests, based on years of Psychological research and supplemented by the latest developments in psychological technique, are used to assess intelligence and personality.
- 2. That part of the assessment is made by a junior officer of proved quality, who has been trained to assess powers of leadership.
- 3. That experienced representatives of technical arms assess technical qualifications.
- 4. That a board is under command of a senior and very experienced officer, who is responsible for the final grading, having heard the verdicts of the members of his board.
- 5. That testing is carried out over a period of three days, during which everything possible is done to put candidates at their ease.

The Technical side of Selection is represented by the Intelligence tests, Personality tests and Psychiatrist's clinical interview; the Practical side by Group tests and the President's and Deputy President's interviews.

The various items of testing used in our system are:-

The C.O's Report. This report is studied in conjunction with two exhaustive questionnaires, one designed to tell all the candidate has done in the past, and the other to assist the Psychiatrist in correlating what the candidate thinks about himself with the findings or "pointers" collected from the Psychologist's report.

The report is studied by the President, Deputy President and Psychiatrist, and due credit is given to the candidate, when they are balancing the report with the questionnaire and the results of their interviews.

Intelligence Tests. (a) The MATRIX test is used to assess the candidate's Basic intelligence. It is probably the most proven—test we have got, results having been assessed on over 2,000,000 British and Indian soldiers. The common criticism that "it merely consists of fitting a mi-sing piece into a pattern" is quite correct, but the critic should then go on to enquire why such action is a test of intelligence. The answer is that the candidate is faced with a choice of six pieces, only one of which is correct and, to select the right piece, he has to reason out why it is the right piece. Therefore it tests the power—to reason, which is basic intelligence.

(b) The V.I.T. or Verbal Intelligence Test is designed to assess verbal facility, or the talent for dealing with the verbal and literary aspects of intellectual life. In addition, it goes to show the use the candidate has made of his basic intelligence by education and study. This test has also been "proved" over a very large number of British and Indian soldiers.

The MATRIX, being a test of basic intelligence, is so devised that language does not enter into it. The V.I.T. does require the use of language and therefore is open to criticism. It could be produced in every language, but that would be such a vast task for India, and would necessitate such a large staff on every board to translate the answers, that the more practical solution of retaining the test in English and reducing the Norm or average mark, has been adopted and its use justified. Any criticism that the test is unfair, because it is administered in English, is incorrect. The Norm has been worked out by testing several thousand Indians and then assessing what the mark should be for each grade of intelligence, in accordance with the results obtained.

These are the two tests of intelligence, and unquestionable proof of their validity to predict what a man will be able to do in the future is available for any visitor to the Selection of Personnel Directorate, MERRUT.

Personality Tests.—Two well-known Personality tests are administered. The Word Association technique of the Swiss, Jung, and the Picture Story method (Thematic apperception) of the American, Murray. The former consists of writing immediate reactions to words, the second invites the candidate to write a few paragraphs on pictures which are displayed to him.

The answers are examined by the Psychological members of the board and are used to provide "personality pointers" for the Psychiatrist, to enable him to construct beforehand and thereby reduce the length of clinical interviews. They also aid him in proving opinions be formed the length of clinical interviews.

Marks are not awarded for these tests, and the criticism that candidates fail in them can only be due to a misunderstanding of their object. Two other common criticisms, that longer time should be given for the Word Association test and that candidates are unable to write their views in a foreign language, are not sustainable in the light of experience. When more time was allowed for the Word Association test, it was found that answers did not represent immediate reactions and Technical staffs find that candidates' answers in English do reveal the information required.

Visiting boards from the War Office are without Psychiatrists or Psychologists, because men of the required calibre and experience are not available. Personality tests therefore cannot be administered by these boards.

Psychiatric Interview.—The medical science of Psychiatry has so developed that a trained Psychiatrist is able to detect those weaknesses of human character which are not noticeable when things are running smoothly, but which cause breakdowns in times of sudden stress.

The Psychiatrist's interview and the Psychological tests are designed to investigate a candidate's stability and morale in many and varied circumstances. They also give a comprehensive view of a candidate's personality and often disclose latent ability, which the President or the G.T.O. has failed to discover. This is particularly noticeable in the case of a reserved or shy candidate, who seldom gives a true picture of his ability on outdoor work, and is often misjudged by his C.O.

The Psychiatrist's job is to give the board his professional opinion on certain characteristics, and to assess the chances of their being modified by subsequent training or normal development.

He is actually the most maligned member of a board, and both C.Os and candidates are apt to blame him for the low gradings awarded. As the final grading is awarded by the President, and as results go to show that he is more lenient than the G.T.O., this opinion is quite erroneous.

Practical Tests.—These tests are carried out under the trained observation of a Group Testing Officer, whose task is to assess powers of leadership and to forecast how each candidate will adapt himself to Army life, after training and experience. It is therefore essential to understand what Leadership is, before studying this side of Selection.

This was the subject of the first job "analysis" carried out for Selection in the Services. The conclusion was that leadership is not strictly speaking a quality possessed by anyone, but rather a relationship between the leader and the led. A leader is a member of a group on whom the group itself confers certain duties and "leadership" describes the effectiveness of the way in which he fulfils those duties.

This conclusion is based on two elementary and proved facts:-

(a) That, in any social group, each member tends to find his own appropriate level and special position in the group.

(b) That every coherent group does, inevitably, throw up a leader or leaders.

Based on these facts, groups of 8—10 candidates, of approximately the same age and seniority, are formed and the G.T.O. observes each member finding his position in the group, while carrying out six practical tasks.

Amongst other things, he looks for the following:-

- Participation—How does the candidate work and co-operate with other members of the group? Does he take on the tough jobs or does he shirk work? Does he think and plan how the task should be accomplished?
- DOMINANCE—Is he accepted as a leader or does he issue orders which the other members of the group ignore? Does he gain the confidence of the other or does he put their backs up, by being arrogant, ignorant or unpleasant?
- Acceptability—Has he a manner which gains ready acceptance from the others; do they ignore him or do they dislike but respect him? Does he help the others, or does he merely try to display his own prowess?
- COMPETENCE—Has he ability to make good suggestions and think quickly and rationally, or does his incompetence mislead and detract from the other work? Can he use his brains, so as to apply his commensus, in a practical manner?

It is these four assets, together with personality and intelligence, which go to make for potentiality in the future and leadership. (See \* on page 158.)

Interviews.—Candidates are interviewed by the President and Deputy President as well as the Psychiatrist.

The President, a Regular officer with thirty or more years experience of the Army, having consulted the C.O's report and the Questionnaire, concentrates on investigating a candidate's education, Service history, sense of responsibility, sense of duty as an Indian citizen and his officer qualities.

The Deputy President, an Indian Regular officer, concentrates on finding out a candidate's sense of duty as an Indian, his powers of social contact with his brother officers and men, his loyalty to India and the likelihood of his proving a suitable type for a commission.

The Final Conference.—This is the climax of Selection and is held when testing has been completed and all members have written their reports.

Each member reads out the grading he suggests, and then his report, on the candidate. This is followed by a frank discussion, to clear up any doubtful points.

When he is satisfied that he is in possession of all the details he requires the President awards the final grading and also decides into which branch of the Army the candidate should be commissioned.

Opinions often vary considerably and are difficult to balance and assess. It is therefore imperative that the President should have great experience, a detailed knowledge of young officers, and the ability to convince the members of his board that his final decision is correct, fair and in accordance with the balance of opinions expressed.

Similarly, the members of the board must remain unbiassed and open minded. They must not be obsessed by the points they have observed; but must balance them with other points brought to light by other members.

The officiency of a board rests largely on the harmony that exists therein and boards are selected with a view to collecting a team that can work and argue together, without a clash of personalities.

### COMMON CRITICISMS

- 1. Boards are unable to assess an officer's ability in three days as well as a C.O., who knows his officers.
- (a) The one asset which a C.O. can claim over a board is that he has known the officer intimately for a long period. But this is a very doubtful benefit, because the C.O. will be unduly influenced by many small incidents, to the officer's benefit, if he is the type the C.O. likes, and quite the reverse if he is the type the C.O. dislikes.

The board, on the other hand, by not knowing the officer intimately, is quite unbiassed; its final verdict is based on five different reports and therefore the officer neither gains nor suffers by personal likes or dislikes; the testing is carried out on scientific and methodical lines; it tests Intelligence and Personality, which a C.O. cannot do.

It may seem absurd to many now, but those who really understand our present methods are convinced that, some time in the future, Service heads will go to Selection for advice about senior appointments, in the same way as one goes to a doctor to cure serious illnesses now. The C.O. may be a very good untrained reporter, but members of Selection are highly trained assessors.

(b) The board does not attempt to assess a candidate's past or present military performance. It accepts the C.O's report as correct and merely reviews that performance, in so far as it is relevant towards predicting the candidate's potentiality for the future. Three days is sufficient for this.

In Canada, candidates spend two weeks before a Selection board and carry out several military tests, such as route marches and tactical exercises. This system could be adopted in India, but its advantages are doubtful. It is almost impossible to devise tactical schemes which are impartial to all types of candidates, and it is difficult to keep candidates in close enough touch, during exercises, to enable a fair comparison of their reactions and relative assets.

The question of extending the testing time to four or five days is, however, under consideration.

2. Boards vary in their standard of gradings and some are stiffer than others.

This is quite a natural supposition, unless one knows how standardisation of technique and grading is ensured.

There is a Statistical branch in the Selection of Personnel Directorate, where every form of comparison is maintained—passes and failures by classes, provinces, boards and types of test. Whenever a considerable variation is noticed, the matter is carefully investigated and action taken, if necessary.

To ensure standardisation of grading by G.T.Os, a staff officer visits boards continually, advising G.T.Os and reporting on them. Similarly, the D.S.P. visits boards, to ensure standard grading by Presidents and Deputy Presidents.

To ensure standardisation of technique, a basic series of tests is used by all boards. These tests have been proved over several thousand candidates.

A school is being opened at MEERUT, at which all new members of boards will be given their initial training and at which refresher courses and demonstrations will be held.

The only other possible insurance of standardisation would be to have all boards working in close proximity to each other. In India, however, distances are so great that the cost of bringing candidates to one place would be prohibitive.

\*3. The grading awarded in India is final; whereas candidates have the right to appeal against a War Office board grading.

In India, a candidate's grading is subject to revision every six months for an indefinite period, in the light of a report submitted by his C.O. No candidate is failed, as he may be by a War Office board. This gives a candidate a chance to make good and is considered fairer than the War Office system. It certainly is more lenient than ending a candidate's chances, if he has failed before two boards.

4. Candidates are not informed whether they have passed or failed and therefore may lose good civil jobs, if they remain in the Army in hopes of getting a Regular commission.

This is a fair criticism, but it is unavoidable at present. Until the strength of the future Indian Army has been decided, it is not possible to estimate how many Regular officers will be required. Presumably this matter will have to remain undecided until the political situation in India has been settled and an Indian Government is in power, as it is only then that Indians can decide how much they are prepared to spend annually on the Services.

Candidates can, however, apply for civil jobs, even though they have appeared before Selection boards, and they can assess their chances of obtaining a Regular commission from the grading they have been awarded.

It is difficult to suggest any way of making this fairer, and educated young Indians are in the lucky position of being in demand for the Services, Govern-

ment Civil departments and Industry, etc.

5. Candidates should be tested in their own language and not in English.

This seemed such a fair criticism that a project was carried out to ascertain the unbiassed opinion of an unselected group of candidates.

Candidates were drawn from all parts of India, final board gradings were awarded before candidates were asked to give their opinions, the answers were anonymous, there was no means of identifying individual answers, candidates were not permitted to communicate with each other while filling in the forms, and they were assured that our one object was to ascertain their wishes.

The questions asked were:—

QUESTION 1. If you had a free choice, which language would you choose to be tested in?

To help candidates, 16 Indian languages and English were suggested.

QUESTION 2. If you were offered the choice of being tested in English or in Hindustani, which would you choose?

(a) For written tests; (b) for interview and group tests.

Examined on an all-India basis the answers to question 1 were as follows:—

$\mathbf{For}$	English	• •	••	• •	76%.
,,	Hindustani	• •	• •	. ••	8%.
,,	Urdu	• •	• •	• •	5%.
,,	Hindi		• •	• •	3%.
,,	Other languages	collectively		• •	8%.
The answer	s to question 2 v	vere :—			• -
To (a) For					86%.
.,,	Hindustani	• •			14%.
To (b) For	English	••			84%.
,,	Hindustani	• •		• •	16%.

<sup>\*</sup>Note.—This paragraph only applies to candidates for regular commissions.

For readers who wish to study the answers in detail, three tables, giving detailed results, will be found at the end of this article.

Table 1 shows choice of language by Provinces, from which candidates happened to come.

Table 2 shows choice by candidates' religion.

Table 3 shows choice by candidates' own native languages.

The questionnaire was given to 500 candidates. From this number, the forms of all those not of pure Indian descent and those who failed to fill in the form correctly were excluded, leaving 443 papers for the experiment.

There proved to be such confusion of opinion among candidates as to what was meant by Hindustani, that it was decided to group all those who gave Hindustani, Urdu or Hindi as an answer to question 2 (b), together. This obviously gives the greatest possible advantage to the non-English speaking group and inflates the Hindustani percentage.

It seems quite clear that the criticism is not correct, and that Indian candidates are overwhelmingly in favour of being tested in English.

6. Form S. P. 42, the form on which C.O's report, is bad and omits many important points.

This form was designed to standardise reports and to aid C.Os, by suggesting points on which they should report.

Perhaps it is not clear to some C.Os that it is not necessary to answer questions which are obviously not applicable to the candidate on whom they are reporting. For example, there have been cases of a C.O. reporting on a candidate that "his tactical performance has been excellent", when the candidate had never served as anything other than a junior officer in a Supply Depot, and that "he is exceptionally well equipped for the technical side of his arm", when the candidate had only acted as 2nd in command of an Infantry company!

There is plenty of space, at the end of the form, for C.Os to report on a ny other points they consider necessary.

### CONCLUSION

I have attempted to deal with Selection as fairly as possible, because I am sure that its object—Selection without personal bias—is vital.

Senior officers should attend a board, if possible. But only wrong impressions can be gained unless visitors are present throughout a complete period of testing, which takes three days. For instance, a well-known back bench Parliamentary figure attended a War Office board in England for one day and, in his speech of thanks, stated that he was so much impressed with all he had seen that he suggested the Army should adopt this method for selecting its officers. What he thought he had been watching all day remains a Government secret!

If our working can be improved, constructive criticism will be welcomed. I would remind unconstructive critics, however, that unless a better system can be produced the choice is Scientific Selection or Personal Prejudice.

TABLE I Candidates' Choice shown by their Province of Origin in Percentages.

	.893.				, I	Intirely	Antirely free choice of language percentages.	wice of L	anguage	percen		ć			Writte 2	Written Tests $2 (a)$ .	Test Inter 2()	Tests & Interviews $2(b)$ .
Province of Origin.	No. of candida	Рег оепъ.	English.	.inetaubniH	Urdu.	.ibaiH	Pushto.	.idsinuT	Bengali.	ittsidsM.	.limaT	Telugu.	Сапатезе.	.mslsyslam.	English.	Hindustani.	English.	Hindustani.
N.W.F.P.	-	15 3	99	:	20	:	9	9	٠:	:	:	:	•	:	80	20	73	27
Punjab	1 :	S3   S3   S3	102	12	14	4	:	67	:	:	:	:	:	:	16	24	71	88
Bihar	<del>-</del>	14 3	57	41	-	141	:	:	-	:	:	:	:	:	64	36	64	8
Bengal	+	46 10	74	67	:	6	:	:	12	:	:	:	:	:	96	4	91	6
Авзат	-	13 3	85	:	:	:	:	:	œ	:	:	:	:	:	100	:	100	:
D.P.	+	42 10	74	22	20	:	:	<del> </del>	:	:	:	:	:	:	42	21	76	24
d.D.	1:	12	F	9	8	12	:	:	:	:	:	:	:	:	77	23	77	23
Madras	87	7 20	83	67	:	:	:	:	:	-	8	8	-	:	96	10	83	7
Bombay	:	1-	94	60	:	8	:	:	:	:	:	:	:	:	94	9	75	8
Tavancore	67	29 6	69	:	:	:	:	:	:	:	:	:	:	31	100	:	100	:
Miscellaneous	:	46 10	83	=	4	:	:	:	:	:	:	:	:	67	87	13	88	15
TOTAL NUMBER	443	:	337	34	83	77	-	69	6	-	1	က	-	2	383	09	*370	*81
TOTAL PER CENT.	100	:	76	00	20	8	:	-	67	:	64	-	:	63	98	14	84	16
Sind Rajputana	10 10		Baroda	15	"Miscellaneous"  5  8	neous".	includes the following numbers:  S. of Central India 5  Hyderabad 6  Co	the for	llowing dia	numbei 6	Mysore Coorg	[     e		84	Cochi	Cochin Andamans		41
*Excludes: Tamil			Teluga															

TABLE II.

Candidates' Choice shown by their Religions in Percentages.

		·geg·				Butire	ly free	choice o	Intirely free choice of language percentages.	rge perc	entages.			•	Written Tests 2 (a).	Tests	Group Tests & Interviews 2(b).	lests & lews lews ).
Religion.	Total number.	Total percents	English.	.instenbniH	Urdu.	.ibniH	Pushto.	Punjabi.	Bengali.	Mahratti.	,limeT	Telugu.	Свлатезе.	мајауајам.	English.	.instanbniH	.hsilgaÐ	.instanbaiH
Hinduism	292	28	76	10		10	:	:	က	:	67			61	88	12	\$	18
Islam	08	18	69	ю	25	:	1	:	:	:	:	:	:	:	72	58	11	68
Christianity	88	13	84	:	·:	. :	:	:	:	:	73	61	61	10	100	:	100	•
Sikhism	88	9	79	10	က	:	:	7	:	:	:	:	:	:	- 68	11	83	18
Parseeism	16	ಣ	100	:	:	:	:	:	:	<b>.</b> :	:	:	:	:	100	:	100	:
Total number	443	:	337	28	83	14	7	ಣ	6	1	7	က	-	10	383	90	*370	*71
Total percentages	100	:	76	60	10	က	ti.	1	67	Ħ	87	1	tr	61	98	14	48 /	16
									•									

Exoluding Tamil.. 1; Telugu.. 1

ized by Google

TABLE III.
Candidates' Choice shown by their Native Languages in Percentages

F	Total	Total Total				Ents	rely fre	s choice	of lang	nage per	Entirely free choice of language percentages				Written Tests 2(a).		Group Tests & Interviews 2 (b).	ests & lews lews ).
Native Language.	Number	Регоептеве	AsitanA	instanbniH	ubiU	ibniH	Pushto	idajauT	Bengali	ittandaM	lim <sub>8</sub> T	Тејеви	Овпатеве	malayalaM	dsilgnI	insteubniH	Heilgn A	inateubniH
Gindustani	<del> </del>	<u> </u>	28	37	4	:	:	:	:	:	:	:	:	:	65	35	62	38
Irdu	38	6	12	8	122	8	:	:	:	:	:	:	:	:	74	26	74	26
	35	00	69	23	:	000	:	:	:	:	:	:	:	:	79	21	73	27
ushto	10	67	67	:	22	:	F	:	:	:	   :	:	:	:	78	22	78	22
unjabi	84	13	12	12	12	67	:	8	:	:	:	:	:	:	78	22	74	92
3 engali	56	13	;*	67	:	6	:	:	18	:	:	:	:	:	36	مر	6	<b>∞</b>
fahratti	88	8	8	:	:	Ξ	:	:	:	4	:	:	:	:	88	=	88	=
:	9	6	8	:	67	:	:	:	:	:	18	:	:	:	86	61	95	ود
Pelugu	22	20	77	14	:	:	:	:	:	:	:	6	:	:	98	14	98	14
1 2	55	12	8	:	:	:	:	:	:	:	:	:	:	20	100	:	901	:
us	:	=	18	67	:	:			:	:	:	2	67	:	88	67	86	67
ber		:	337	34	23	14	-	က	6	1	7	က	-	2	383	99	*370	71*
Total percentage	8 .	:	76	00	10	က	ţ	-	61	Ħ	61	-	tr	67	98	14	<b>8</b>	16
Canarese	10	- -	Sindhi Konkani		Vote.—Miss 3 1 Exoludes	Grellener Gr As	neous include Gujerati Assamese Tamil 1	se the	following: 11 7 Telugu	ing:— Nepali Bihari gu 1	ali iri		8 8	Orriya Konnada	ada.	L 63	·	

## MALAYA CAMPAIGN: THE FIRST AND LAST WEEKS

BY MAJOR J. WILSON STEPHENS.

THE FIRST WEEK

Wagon, Rifleman Pudbir Pun at the wheel, moved off on the hundred and ninety mile drive to Brigade Headquarters at Ipoh.

I had arrived at Sungei Patani the previous day as Staff Captain to a Gurkha Brigade not long out from India. War with Japan seemed imminent. Already we had received the various code words denoting the first three stages of readiness, and I had been sent to Divisional Headquarters at Sungei Patani to co-ordinate certain rail moves and discuss other "Q" matters.

Talk at H. Q. had been of our planned advance into Thailand (should we be called to their aid), and of the scheme which would launch the Division across the border to assist the Thais in preventing any hostile landing in their country. We were all optimistic, certain that, with our superior aircraft, and the naval support of the PRINCE OF WALES and the REPULSE, we should be a match for the Nips. Eagerly we waited.

Work over, I had been asked to lunch with a planter acquaintance, a soldier of the last war, now once again in uniform. He and his wife had given me beer in their little 'bar' followed by lunch. Now I was on my way back to Brigade and intended to call in at Taiping where one of our battalions, the 109th, was stationed. I would give them final instructions as to moves should the balloon go up.

At Taiping I found the C. O. in conference with his officers, and gave him the latest orders and amendments from Division. My arrival was opportune as, during my drive down, the code word for the fourth stage of readiness had been received from Ipoh. The battalion was now at its war posts. War diaries had been opened; full precautions taken. All that remained was to wait for the starting word.

As we talked the telephone on the C. O's table rang. "Hullo? Oh! it's you, Bob, is it? Yes, we've just got the final details from Jack. He's here on his way back to you. Want to speak to him?" He handed the receiver over to me. It was the Brigade Major speaking from Ipoh, and he told me to hurry back to Headquarters.

I wondered as I sped along how much longer we would be driving with full headlights. Where, were it to come off, would this campaign lead us? Of course we should beat the Nips; that was a foregone conclusion. I hoped that what I had heard of our air strength was correct. We should need it all. It was with feelings of considerable excitement that, on arrival at Ipoh, I garaged the Station Wagon and walked over to the Mess.

Except for the B. M. this was empty; the rest of the staff were at work in the lighted offices. There was an unmistakable air of tension. "Hullo, Jack" he greeted me. "Glad you thought to look in at the 109th. Saves a lot of trouble" and we got down to shop which kept me at my office table until well into the night.

Next morning the Brigadier, himself the ex-C.O. of a famous Guille battalion, called a conference. This included the C. Os of the three bettalion; the C.O. of an Australian Transport Unit; and an officer from the local Volunters. Everything for the projected operation of the final scheme was discussed. Al said that every precaution had been taken, every detail arranged. All that remained was to wait.

Just before mid-day a message arrived calling me back to Sungei Patric I was ordered to report to the D. A. A. G. with my kit at Field Service scale. This must be the beginning I thought to myself. A quick lunch, and battle howler on my head, kukri and pistol by my side, I took my seat once more n the wagon. The Quartermasters from the two battalions in Ipoh who were to accompany me were waiting in their trucks; the third we were to pick up at Taiping on the way through.

Sungei Patani again. We, were given orders to be prepared to move at a moments' notice. I was told off to form part of the Divisional Recce part which was to move to our destination across the border on receipt of the find word.

Dinner in an atmosphere of hushed expectancy. Sleep. Hardly had my head touched the pillow when I was awoken by one of the G.3s. and toll to get packed. Outside it was raining. What's in the air? I wondered at seated once more in my Station wagon, I waited. Was the final word through! An officer passed. "Hi! What's the news!" I shouted impatiently. "An we off ? " No, not yet " came the answer. "Something seems to have got wrong. The Japs have landed at Kota Bahru and we're waiting for orders

Plans have to be changed. But be ready to move at a moments' notice just the same " and he went off into the rain and the gloom of the rubber trees. So the little devils had landed. What had we at Kota Bahru I wondered Enough to deal with them no doubt. Would this mean that we should not cross the border? Must do, I supposed, now that the enemy were on our flank. What

a party! With these and a thousand other speculations I whiled away the time until dawn. At 0880 hrs. I was back in my wagon. Overhead I heard the dross of aircraft followed by the crump crump of stick after stick of bombs. The whistles blew for the first time in carnest. The war was on! waiting for orders.

Lunch in the Mess, now packed up and ready to move. A Major of the U.S. Army on a visit to Headquarters walked up and down the long room rubbin his hands. "This is the day I've been waiting for, for years" he said. The rel of us argued as to what our action would be or listened to the hourly broaded on the radio. As I stood in the slit trench watching the twenty-seven lar bombers unloading their eggs on the Sungei Patani aerodrome someone had sid impatiently that he wanted to see a dog fight. I had told him not to worn; "You'll see plenty in the course of the next few days" I said. We were convinced that that indeed would be the case. Little did we realise that the

aerodromes at both Sungei Patani and Alor Star would be evacuated by the next day. Orders at last. The Divisional Recoe party was to move to Aler Star under orders of the D. A. A. G. He and I went off to our waiting vehicles and

headed the column up north. We arrived at 1600 hrs. and the D. A. A. G. st once got down to quartering. Everything there was much as usual. House told them that we should have to use their homes as billets and offices. A nurse with two children in her pram took the evening air, unconcerned.

I was told that my Brigade would arrive at Alor Star early the next morning and that it would move to a place by the name of Tanjong Pau, seven miles forward of Alor Star and close to Jitra. Accordingly I said good-bye to the D. A. A. G. and drove on up the road past the wreck-scattered, pock-marked Alor Star aerodrome and on to the little village of Tanjong Pau. There I made a rapid reconnaissance for Brigade Headquarters and the 'B' echelons of my units. The harbour areas for transport had to be located under cover of the rubber trees, and in the failing light and the pouring rain it was no easy task. Finished, I returned to Alor Star railway station, at 2200 hours there to meet my three quartermasters.

Inside the station I showed them their areas on the map. A cup of tea, and I returned to Tanjong Pau so that I might be on the spot to make a further recce at first light on the following morning. I looked around for somewhere to spend the night and eventually found a Chinese who said that he would willingly give me a room in his house. These Chinese, both throughout the campaign and later when we were prisoners, were to give us all the assistance in their power. At the risk of torture and death they gave succour to our jungle-lost men, helping them in every conceivable way, and it is impossible to say enough in their praise.

Next morning I met the battalions as they came up. One battalion had been left behind at Sungei Patani to undertake anti-paratroop duties. The Brigadier and Brigade Major were in great form, as were we all now that we were to see some action.

As yet I had no clear picture of what was going on. I knew that there were two Brigades in front of us and that the advanced troops were already on the Malay-Thailand frontier. I figured that the Japs who had landed at Kota Bahru would be dealt with independently, while our force would take on those now said to be landing at Singgora in Thailand. We would go forward, I thought, on a modified edition of the old scheme and push them out. We were not to hear for some time to come of the sinking of the PRINCE OF WALES and the REPULSE.

Meanwhile, Brigade H.Q. had begun to function. The Brigade Signal Section had a line out to Division at Alor Star and others to the two battalions now forward of us in the vicinity of Jitra. As duty officer I was up most of the night taking calls. All was quiet.

Early the following morning the Brigadier and Brigade Major went up to contact the forward troops. Distant gunfire could be heard from in front of Jitra. Jap recce planes came over and a formation of heavy bombers went unmolested on their way inland. So far we had seen nothing of our own air. Little news came from the front. I spent the day answering calls for the absent Brigade Major and visiting the battalions to see to their requirements. None of us were yet certain of what we were in for. All of us talked of seeing something of our planes; wondered where they were; forward we surmised, bombing the Nips now landing at Singgora. The day was uneventful.

By evening the succeeding day the situation had altered considerably. The attack came suddenly and without warning. Headed by Medium and Light Tanks and followed by Motorised Infantry the Japs burst upon our forward troops catching them, so I learnt later, as they were moving back to take up their positions in the Jitra Line. Firing indiscriminately and with all they had

they came down the road and there was nothing to stop them. It is probable that they would have broken through to Alor Star and further had not a Havildar Major of the 101st Gurkha Rifles kept his head. Hearing the tanks approaching, this N.C.O. armed with an anti-tank rifle, took up an exposed position by the side of the road. He scored a bulls-eye on the leading tank and caused it to swerve, effectively blocking the road. The two following, trying to nose their way around their stricken leader, met the same fate. The situation in front of Jitra was, for the time being, saved. This N.C.O. was wounded and captured but managed to make his escape. He was subsequently awarded the Indian Order of Merit.

This determined action on the part of the enemy succeeded in cutting off a considerable portion of our forward troops from the remainder of their Brigade. Included in these was the Brigadier who, at the time, was forward making a reconnaissance. It was not until the next day that this officer, who meanwhile had been wounded, made his way back to his Headquarters.

My Brigadier was therefore called up to take over command of the whole formation now combined into one Brigade. The Brigade Major and I were left behind with the rest of the Brigade Staff but no units, the 109th having come under Divisional control, while the 100th and the 102nd were forward and in action. "This", I said to Bob, "is a funny state of affairs. A complete Brigade Staff and nothing to command except the Employment Platoon." However, it was not to last for long.

All that night the guns were in action, closer now, and it was obvious that the Japs were pushing us back. We at Brigade Headquarters were undisturbed. Most of us had a full night's rest; the last we were to get for many weeks to come.

At first light the Brigade Major went forward, and, on his return, I went up to see what was afoot and to try and get in touch with our battalions. I drove to where I knew the Headquarters of the 102nd to be, in the rubber trees by the side of the road. There I heard that the battle was raging to our front and that the 101st had been repeatedly surrounded and overrun. As my informant spoke, an officer of the 101st came towards us. He was dazed and a little incoherent. He said that he and his company had been outnumbered and surrounded time and again and that he thought that most of his battalion had been lost. We gave him strong tea laced with whisky, for he was near exhaustion, and, having ordered him to rest before attempting to rejoin his battalion, I went forward through the rubber trees to try and find my Brigadier.

Him I found almost as exhausted, and with reason. He had been hard at it ever since he had left us, fighting incessantly and with no time for food or drink. He said that the Brigade Major and Staff Captain of the formation he had so suddenly been told to take over were at the end of their tether, and that they must be given a rest; Bob and I were to come up with our Brigade Staff and take over from them.

I left at once, trying to remember how the other Brigade was composed. Two British units; two Indian, and two of my own Gurkhas, and Lord knows how many Gunners and Signals, all of whom I should have to ration and keep supplied with ammunition.

As I came to the 102nd's mess truck I stopped. Five, planes passed overhead, going in the direction of the enemy, and a young officer recently out from England shouted "Spitfires." "Are you sure?" I asked him. "Certain", he replied, "I've seen enough at home to know a Spitfire when I see one."

Turning to the men "Those were our 'planes" I said. "Our very best. Now you'll see the sparks fly. We'll clear these Japs out of the air in no time." The men gave a cheer. It was obvious that, like us, they had been wondering what had become of the R.A.F. they had heard so much about. That those 'planes were in fact Japanese fighters and not Spitfires and that we were never once to see our own 'planes over us we were not as yet to know. Later, when the end came, that was to be amongst my most bitter memories. That, in all faith I had promised the men that they would see our 'planes clear the skies of the Jap, and that I had let them down. None of us knew the real situation. We did not know that the powers-that-be had decided that they were unable to spare for Malaya aircraft so badly needed elsewhere and without which we were to fight blind.

I returned quickly to Tanjong Pau to pass on my Brigadier's orders to the Brigade Major. We moved forward just before dusk to the Jitra position. Headquarters was where I had left it in the rubber trees, dark and gloomy. On all sides gunfire was continuous, and the spit of rifle and light-machine gun fire sounded, getting nearer. As we arrived the heavy artillery from up in front came back into new positions in our rear, the noise of their wheels adding to the din.

Dark came on. In the Brigade Office the Brigadier and Brigade Major poured over maps while I talked with the Staff Captain of the other Brigade before he went back to rest, trying to find out how his regiments stood for food and ammunition. Communication forward was by now almost non-existant; the lines were continually cut by shell fire.

The noise of battle came closer. Now everything seemed to be firing at once; rifles, light-automatics, mortars and guns firing without ceasing. What was that! I pulled out my pistol and turned on my heel. Crack—crack crack—crack. Behind me, then in front, then to one side. What the devil! Were the Nips in amongst us already? I was to get to know these in time and to ignore them. Chinese crackers we called them, part of the Jap's idea of a war of nerves, and indeed to begin with they were most effective and confusing.

Returning to the Headquarter hut, I found that the Signal officer had been sent forward to lay a line to one of the British units and that he had not returned. He was never to return, nor was the line ever laid. Now the noise was lessening and a lull set in. We took the opportunity to try and get a little rest. The Brigade Major of the other Brigade talked the talk of the utterly exhausted. He said that he could not sleep and saying it fell into a heavy doze. I had just settled myself, pistol handy by my side, to get what sleep I might when a Motor Contact Officer came through the door with orders from Division.

Out came the map, marked up to date by the Brigade Intelligence Officer. "—th Brigade will withdraw to a position at—by—hrs." We should have to get a move on! The Brigadier, Brigade Major and myself went into conference. Unit commanders were sent for; there would be no time to get out written orders. "The first thing is to get all 'B' echelons out and away to their new positions, Jack." Followed by orders and where I was to go.

Outside it was raining again and the noise was deafening; the enemy were very close. "Pudbir" I yelled "Start up." The battle of Jitra was in full swing. Every firearm in the universe seemed to have a permanent finger on its trigger. I dragged my wagon out of the mud and darkness of the rubber trees

on to the tarmac. A mortar shell exploded close by; a splinter dented the bonnet. The whine of shells was in the air and the flash of our field guns blinded me.

So began the weary retreat down the Malay Peninsular. From the fourth state of preparedness until the night of December 12/13; the first of ten weeks of prolonged rearguard fighting destined to end so tragically on February 15, 1942 on Singapore Island.

I drove off through the darkness and din to find the transport and take it into harbour south of Alor Star.

## THE LAST WEEK

My Brigade, now sadly depleted and exhausted, was back on Singapore Island. For eight weeks they had fought almost without ceasing; certainly they had had no more than three or four days respite out of contact with the enemy. For days on end they had been short of rations, soaked, and with no change of clothes. Not once had they been relieved by fresh troops; not once had they seen our own aircraft. The Japs had done what they liked in the skies; dive bombing and machine gunning to their heart's content. At one period the Brigade had numbered only eight hundred rifles; many had been unaveidably left behind in the jungle, and the battles of Gunun and Slim River had takes their toll. The two Indian Divisions together with the rest of the army had crossed the Causeway on to the Island on February 1 and the Brigade was now in position in and around the famous Naval Base facing the Straits of Johore.

For myself, I had joined a Reinforcement Camp. Bob had been killed at Gurun on December 15, and I had taken his place as Brigade Major. Later, my Brigadier had gone to another appointment and, just before we left the mainland. I had been relieved and was now waiting for a ship to take me back to my regment.

It had been hard to leave the men. I had seen all the fighting with them and had realised the honour it had been to serve with those three Gurkla Regiments. Now, however, I was impatient to get back to my own, and I hoped that I should soon be lucky enough to go into battle with them in some other theatre. As yet I had received no posting orders, and it was beginning to look now as if I never would.

The Japs had landed successfully on the Island two days ago and even now, as I stood in front of the temporary Mess of the Indian Reinforcement Camp at Pasir Ris, I could hear their mortar shells landing on the coast. From close behind me our artillery was firing at their positions on the mainland.

I was waiting for Howard, 2nd in command of the camp. We had been ordered from Pasir Ris to another, more central, site near Alexandra road, and he had gone over to make a preliminary reconnaissance. The men of the camp had already left for the twenty-three mile march, and I was alone except for servants and baggage.

Sitting on a bedding roll, not mine, for I had lost three kits in the last eight weeks and now possessed only what I stood up in, I was thinking of the retreat and trying to single out one day from another. An impossible task, I decided, for latterly we had all been so fatigued that we had fallen asleep at conferences, while we ate, and even at the wheels of our trucks. Since our arrival on the mainland I had been able to make up some leeway, though at first sleep

had not come easily by reason of the incessant round of thoughts and conjectures that circled in my head.

What was to be the end? The enemy had gained a firm foothold on the Island and, although we had a new division lately arrived from England, it seemed that we could not hold them. If reports were true we were retiring on Singapore from the north-west of the Island; a repetition of what had happened on the mainland. Not a bright future, I felt, but for all that I felt sure that we should eventually push them back again. Surely both men and 'planes must be on their way out to us?

継:

de

ne:

erii.

arie 12d te

8**73**1

General Wavell was in Singapore to-day, and his presence alone was worth a lot-to us; at least he would know how things were and would do all he could to help. No, it was not so bad, I decided, as I lit a cigarette. We'd been in stickier places than this and got away with it. The trouble was that I was feeling out of it. I wanted to be somewhere where I could do something. In the distance I heard the sound of a car engine and, getting up, I went to meet Howard.

"Well, what's it like," I asked. "Pretty frightful", he answered. "A lot of evacuee huts and nothing much else. Still, any port in a storm. You ready? Right. Let's be going." And having bundled the remains of his kit into the car we set off for Alexandra road.

Dawn had broken. We ran down the coastal road through Changi village and barracks. The sky was clear and the sea sparkled in the early morning sun, the palm trees waved and nodded in the off-shore breeze. It seemed absurd that, within a few miles of us, a life and death struggle was in desperate progress. Past the Civil Airport, where there was evidence of bombing; past Raffles Hotel, and on through Singapore. Troops were everywhere. M. T. of every description moved towards the front.

At our destination we found the rest of the camp staff. Howard left me and went off to give a hand in the allotting of accommodation. It seemed to me that, for a reinforcement camp, we were very much in the centre of things. I could hear the guns forward of us and, to my battle-wise eyes, everything indicated that we were close to the main scene of operations. Well, it was none of my business. All I wanted was, if possible, to get back to my Brigade in the Naval Base or wherever they now were.

The rest of the day passed in getting the men settled in and drawing rations. Mostly I was left to my own devices. In the evening we forgathered. Howard and his two dogs; the C. O. and his Adjutant, and another Lieut.-Colonel, at present without a command and, like myself, awaiting posting orders. We discussed the problematical future. Howard worried about his dogs and wondered if he should put them down. I felt exasperated that, with the experience I had gained up-country, I was sitting here kicking my heels.

Next morning I was up early and went out on to the main road. Here was great activity. Staff cars and lorries drove towards the front and from the driver of an ambulance coming from the opposite direction I learnt that we were holding with difficulty.

On arrival back in the camp I was told that orders had been received that all fighting troops on the strength were to be sent to the neighbourhood of the Tanglin golf course and that the unemployed Lieut.-Colonel, Lake, was to command them. I was to go as his second-in-command and Adjutant.

In our area I got down to organising the men into companies and appointed company commanders, a quartermaster and a signal officer. We had with us a hundred and thirty reinforcements of the 102nd Gurkha Rifes, a first-class bunch of men and commanded by an officer who knew both his job and the men. Here anyway was a stout little fighting force. Of the rest, there was a mixture of all the Indian units in Malay, all good, but with new and inexperienced officers who, for the most part, could not speak the language. However, all were eager to do their very best and to make a show of it.

We looked around for a house that we might use as a battalion headquarters and settled upon a large private hotel, the owner still in residence though about to move in to Singapore. I promised him that, so far as I could see to it, his property would be respected and that there would be no looting.

That evening we moved in, the company commanders choosing billets in their own areas. The battalion was spread out in a large semi-circle around the golf links. As yet we did not know under whose command we came nor had we any information as regards the units on our flanks, and it was not until the following day that an Intelligence Officer arrived and told us that we were to form part of the...st Brigade. He said that we were to be prepared to move up north along the railway line to fill a gap between two of the forward battalions of the Brigade. To a normal battalion this little operation would have presented no difficulties, but to us it presented something of a problem as we had nothing in the way of signal equipment nor had we any vehicles or even motor cycles. Lake and I were relieved, therefore, when later the order was called offi

On the morning of February 13, things began to happen. Gunfire could be seen to our front and the Australian artillery were in position close to our most forward companies. Hostile bombing increased in volume; bombers of all descriptions were constantly in the air, and the noise of ack ack and Bofors was incessant. Snipers from the nearby houses began to put in an unwelcome appearance, the 'tock-dong' of individual bullets punctuating the steady rear of the bigger stuff.

At mid-day we received a General Order of the Day issued jointly by General Wavell and the Commander-in-Chief in Malaya. The former told us that we were to fight to the last man and the last round, that the loss of the Island would be a major disaster. The latter added his remarks in the same strain. It was clear that we were up against it, though at no time did the thought that we should have to surrender enter our heads. Something we were sure would happen. Rumours were persistent. One said that the Americans had landed at Penang, another that General Wavell had promised that we should be back on the mainland in four days time.

That afternoon the Hospital in our area received a direct hit from a stick of heavy bombs and was set alight. The patients, wrapped in blankets, made their way across the links to the main road, hoping for lifts to Singapore. There was nothing we could do for them.

Later an Australian Colonel and his Adjutant visited us. He told us that we were now to come under command of the A.I.F., and that the Brigadier commanding the sector ordered us to take up a position forward of where we now were by first light next morning. We would be flanked on either side by units of the A.I.F. The C.O. and I made our reconnaissance and issued our orders.

At dark that night the artillery all over the Island woke into noisy life. Lake and I were trying to get a little rest. Fully dressed we lay and listened to the incessant roar of the guns. "No sleep for us to-night, sir" I shouted. He said later that, almost at once, I added my snores to the orchestra of sound.

We were up well before dawn. Neither of us had had much sleep, and the whole earth still shook with the weight of the bombardment. Soon we were in our new positions. This was open country, a change from the rubber trees and jungle in which, up until now, I had fought. We moved headquarters to another house close to a heavy battery of ack ack; an unfortunate choice, but at the time we had no chance to look elsewhere. By now we had discovered that we were part of a salient and that the Japs were pressing forward to Singapore on both sides of us. Hostile aircraft and guns paid us constant attention, and we were forced into slit trenches. That night the oil installations to our front were set alight, brightening the sky for miles around.

The morning of the 15th came in with the roar of artillery. From the first it was evident that the Japs intended to make a big effort to get into Singapore. Parties of the enemy had been reported on our front. Shelling came from both flanks; dive bombers machined us individually and collectively; casualties began to occur.

"This looks like the big thing", I said to Lake. "Yes", he replied as, with one accord, we jumped into a trench to avoid the unwelcome attention of a diving 'plane whose pilot we could see with the greatest ease. "I think I'll join the Gurkha Company if you don't mind, sir", I said. "I'd like to be with them if it's going to come to a hand to hand show." Even now I felt we should see the Japs off. It seemed to be mainly a matter of hanging on.

What was this? An Australian runner doubled across to where we stood, dropped into cover, and handed a note to the C.O. Lake glanced at it, frowned and then went white. "What on earth!" he exclaimed and then read it again and passed it to me. It was from the Australian unit on our right.

".... the Japs are massing for a final attack. Should this come off we are to fight to the last man ...." That's O.K. I said to myself. Hullo! What's this? ".... the white flag has gone forward to offer unconditional surrender. The answer is expected at 16.30 hrs. If it is accepted, troops will stand by to lay down their arms. If not, then we shall continue to fight." The message ended with a personal note to Lake asking him to keep the news to himself until official news was received as to the Japanese reactions.

My head swam. Surrender! It was out of the question, surely? Lake and I stared at one another in silence, the full implication of the word slowly dawning in our minds. Unconditional Surrender! That would mean that the war, so far as we were concerned, would be over; all that fighting up-country to no avail. Be prepared to lay down your arms! There was something shameful in the very thought. We should be Prisoners of War! "This can't be true", I said. "There must be a mistake somewhere. Damn it, we've still got plenty of troops and masses of artillery." "I know", answered Lake, and relapsed into thoughtful silence.

It was beyond me. True, I had realised that we were indeed up against it; that General Wavell's Order of the Day had been in real earnest and not just a timely 'fillip' to the troops. I was, like everyone else, quite prepared to carry out the order to the full. In my mind I had seen the possibility of something on the lines of another Dunkirk; fighting to the sea perhaps, and then trying to

make a get-away. There had always been the conviction that the tide would turn. I felt cheated somehow, on unfamiliar ground.

It was not until the morning of February 16 that we received confirmation that the surrender had been accepted. The night had been uneventful and without noise. The men and officers were puzzled, for Lake had not passed on the news. It came in the form of an order from A. I. F. Headquarters. We were to lay down our arms, ammunition and equipment forthwith, and the C.O. and I were to report to General Gordon-Bennett at his position near the Tanglin golf course.

I called up Company Commanders and the C.O. spoke to them. "Gentlemen. We have surrendered to the Japanese unconditionally and we are now Prisoners of War. I do not know the reason for this action, but it will, of course, be adequate. Fall in your companies and disarm yourselves and your men. I and the Adjutant are going to A.I.F. Headquarters for a conference. There is nothing more that I can say, gentlemen, but try and make the men understand that we have not just packed up and that this is an honourable surrender. Thank you." With strained faces the young officers turned on their heels. "Come on, Jack. Let's get along" and we started off for the conference.

En route we called in for the Australian battalion commander on our right who, saying little, gave us a bite of food before taking us off in his car. At A.I.F. Headquarters there was a feeling of anti-climax; to talk in an ordinary voice seemed, somehow, out of place. I felt as if I was entering a Church.

For myself, I had by now accepted the position and I was trying to work out what would be the best thing for us to do. Here we were, some five hundred Gurkha and Indian troops, likely to be made prisoners with the Aussies. From the point of view of rations it would be much more suitable were we able to rejoin our own Corps and go wherever we were destined for with them. I got on to the 'phone and was promised that orders would be got out to us.

Returned to the battalion, we found rifles and equipment laid out on the ground. The men were silent. The Subedar of the Gurkha company asked me what it all meant. He was obviously deeply upset and had to make an effort to control himself I did my best to explain the circumstances of the surrender to him. I told him what we had just been told at the conference. The Japs had the water supply and the hospitals in Singapore were full to overflowing. We were surrendering because of the civil population. "There are many of us Gurkhas here yet untried, Sahib", he said. "Could we not have gone on? We are not afraid of death." I felt as he did and told him so, but added that orders had to be obeyed and that we must carry on accordingly. He shook his head sadly and went off to explain, exactly as I had done to him, for I listened, the situation to the men.

A message arrived from Indian Corps Headquarters. We were to march forthwith to join the rest of the reinforcement camp at Raffles Square, where we would receive further orders. We were to take our rifles, ammunition and equipment with us.

Armed and equipped once more, we formed up on the road in column of threes. Lake said a word to the men. "... but let us go through the town like the undefeated men we are, marching as you would on your own parade grounds." It was essential to try to soften the blow to their pride. Indeed we all needed something of the sort.

"No. 1 Company . . . By the right . . . QUICK—MARCH!" We moved off with a swing, the men's heads held high. It was all somehow like a story in a book. It was one of those occasions when one feels this can happen to other people but surely not to me? Even now I had the sensation of being an onlooker.

Down Orchard Road. We had three miles to march to our destination. Everywhere there was evidence of shelling and bombing. We passed men and officers of other units standing about with a lost look on their faces. Civilian cars went by with little Japanese flags in front or hanging out of the window. As we entered the city I saw a party of Jap troops by the side of the road; this was a nightmare—no less. A car with a news camera mounted in the back came towards us, stopped, and began to make a film for the Tokio cinemas. They began with Lake and myself and I thought I had plumbed the depths. However, we were no bedraggled crowd. The cinema audience would see no signs of a conquered foe when this was released.

Arriving at Raffles Square, Lake handed over the men to the C.O. of the camp, and together we walked over to Robinson's—a big general store—where we had been told to assemble. The men had been put into a building on the other side of the Square.

That evening the Japs arrived and we were disarmed; the weapons were loaded into trucks and taken away. Later I walked around outside. Civilians were still in evidence. I met the owner of the Private Hotel we had taken over on the 11th for our battalion headquarters, and he gave me a welcome cup of tea in a room above the Bank of Indo-China. It was not until I walked out of this building that I noticed that it was flying the tri-colour of Petain's France. I walked across to a bookshop not yet closed and bought myself two volumes which I knew would keep me company in captivity; Grahame's 'The Wind in the Willows' and Kipling's 'Stalky and Co.' I wondered what the latter would have made of our circumstances.

Japanese orders arrived later. The British troops and officers were to be separated from the Indian, and we were to be sent to different camps. We should start the next morning on the seventeen mile march to Changi. I spent a restless night on a sofa in the damaged upper storey of the store. Outside the occasional sound of rifle fire told us that the Japs were killing Chinese looters.

Dawn, and a sketchy shave and wash in the hairdressing department. The shop staff were still there and they gave us breakfast; a meal that I was to remember for three and a half years to come. They told us that they had been told to report to Raffles Hotel for orders and expected to be sent to the Civil gaol.

I went downstairs in time to see the Indian troops and say a word to them before they marched off. This was heart-breaking. To the Gurkha rifleman and the Indian sepoy his officer has ever been his "Mán Báp." To us he comes with his worries and troubles. Those of us who had some years of service and who knew the men well realised just what this parting meant to them. From our point of view it was terrible to be sending them off into alien hands where we could do nothing for them. A handshake was about as far as most of us could get. It was altogether too emotional. To improve the occasion a Japanese soldier on the nearby pavement called two Chinese coolies to him and, without any apparent reason, shot them on the spot. The Subedar whose hand I had just shaken spat on the road and mumbled a few descriptive and comprehensive adjectives under his breath.

"Good-bye, Subedar sahib. Good-bye. We shall meet again soon let us hope and in more fortunate circumstances. Don't let them get you down. Salám, Salám!" It was difficult to keep one's eyes dry. There were many who unashamedly let the tears fall.

"Officer's, Fall-In." We formed up outside Robinsons'. Most of us, like myself, had few possessions; a pack and haversack and a few oddments. I had been given a toothbrush by a departing shopkeeper; his last action before he closed up and went off into captivity.

I took a last look around before we started. Thoughts raced through my head. How long would we be here, I wondered. How would they treat the Gurkhas and the Indian troops? How would they deal with us? What an end to those ten weeks! Had I been asked at any time during that period what I expected to happen, had I tried to picture the ending to myself, the last thing I would have seen would have been this. A Prisoner of War in Singapore! Never mind, it could not last for ever. We would even it up in due course.

Changi. The village I had motored through on the 10th with Howard. Now I was going back there to prison!

"Officers! By the right-Quick March."

## 25. Div. Memorial Unveiled In Taiping.

Maj.-Gen. G. N. Wood has just unveiled a monument to the 25th Indian—
"Ace of Spades"—Division, which he commands, in Taiping, North Malaya.

As the General Salute was sounded by buglers of the Royal Garhwal Rifles, the Union Jack fell away to reveal a six-foot high figure of Christ mounted on a tall plinth. The plaque, which was made in the Div. I.E.M.E. workshops, bore the following inscription:

"To the Glory of God and in memory of the 25th Division which restored freedom of worship to the church".

Addressing the gathering, General Wood said: "On this sacred and joyful occasion I speak for more than 20,000 men of the 25th Indian Division—men of diverse races, tongues and creeds. Many tasks have fallen to our lot since we came among you in September—to establish law and order, to restore employment, to repair the damages of war, to feed the hungry and to heal the sick—but one task came first of all, to restore liberty of worship and re-open the churches.

"It was with the desire to commemorate these blessings that your soldier friends have erected this memorial."

Referring to the inscription he said: "We hope it will recall to you all, and perhaps especially to the children in years to come, your soldier friends who found peace and happiness among you, long after they have departed to their homes in Britain and India."

## ASSISTING THE MALAYAN MAQUIS

By Major J. E. HEELIS.

GATHERED together in the jungle near Dehra Dun in September, 1944, was a small band of Gurkhas under the command of a Lieutenant-Colonel who had escaped from Singapore. They were divided into three parties, each commanded by a Major, and all the Gurkhas—officers and N.C.Os—were from those three Gurkha Regiments who had lost battalions in the Malayan campaign of 1941-42. There, in one of the finest training areas one could wish for, we started to train for a secret entry into Japanese-occupied Malaya, either by submarine or parachute.

We knew that after the disastrous battle of the Slim River, where so many lost their lives, small parties of Gurkhas had been cut off in the jungle. We also knew that some had evaded capture and were still alive, being assisted and fed by friendly Chinese. Our object at that stage was to try and contact them, arrange with India by wireless to drop arms and food to them by parachute, and form them into guerilla bands to harry the Japanese lines of communication, and possibly carry out raids on P.O.W. camps to release their occupants and take them under our wing until the arrival of the full-scale invasion.

Inside information came from Malaya that there were some Gurkhas still in the jungle. But they were difficult to contact, and were nowhere in enough strength to justify our going in with a Gurkha officer and N.C.O. nucleus only. We therefore took in a further 50 riflemen from the Training Division per unit, giving each party four groups of eighteen men. Each group was commanded by a British officer, and each had a small HQ including a wireless operator and three small sections each commanded by a Naik. Every man was armed with an American carbine, while in each group were two Bren guns and one Sten as well.

Later we heard there was in being an active anti-Japanese resistance movement in Malaya, and that British Liaison teams were being dropped in to them to facilitate the arming and training of the guerillas and co-ordinate their efforts with the plans of the Army of invasion when it came.

The Gurkha groups were therefore given the role of Support groups to the Malay People's Anti-Japanese Army (M.P.A.J.A.) or as locally styled, The Malayan Maquis. A three-inch mortar and an anti-tank weapon were added to each group's store of weapons to increase its striking power. All ranks did a short parachute course, including one night jump, and between the end of June and the end of July 1945, five of the groups left Ceylon by air and dropped successfully into Japanese-occupied Malaya.

My own group left Ceylon on July 21 in three R.A.F. Liberators, each carrying six men and a mass of stores, including a wireless set with batteries, a hand generator, all support weapons and ammunition, demolition stores and one month's rations. The journey—over the sea all the way except for a short glimpse of the Nicobars and North Cape, Sumatra—took nine and a half hours, and the men looked pretty green.

These Liberators had to fly over 1500 miles of water, make two or three runs over the dropping area to ensure accurate dropping, and return to Ceylon

without refuelling. To do this extra petrol tanks were fitted, and to compensate for the extra weight the forward gun turret and flanking machine guns were removed. No praise would be too high for the pilots and crews of these aircraft, as they were working at maximum range. If bad weather was encountered—as it often was—they would arrive back in Ceylon with little more than enough petrol to fly the machine for a further thirty minutes. We prayed that our pilot would receive the correct signals from the ground and that we would make a successful jump. A return trip to Ceylon fully-loaded would be little short of a night-mare, and all our carefully prepared stores would certainly have had to be jettisoned into the sea.

As we passed over the Malayan coast our despatcher received a message on the "intercom" for the slide to be let down and the men to be got ready. We all put on our equipment—small haversacks each containing a primed grenade, and jumping smocks, and then strapped on our parachutes. It was stiflingly hot, as once the slide is ready in position, there is no room left in which to move about. As we each sat on the slide in turn our static lines were hooked up, and our American carbines tied with quick release knots to our sides.

As No. 1 in the stick I sat very comfortably on the slide right over the exit hole, with the other five somehow jammed on to the slide behind me. As I looked down through the hole I could clearly see below rivers and fields, and many small houses with lights showing.

Suddenly, to my intense relief, I saw appear below me the "V" of lights on the ground. The navigator had done his job well, and there they were, ready to receive us. I took a deep breath and waited for the big moment. Three times we circled over the area, and then that unmistakable roar of the engines, which we all knew was the final run in.

"Action Stations Number One—Go!" The whish of the slip stream, and then that wonderful feeling as one looks up and sees the 'chute fully opened above one. I went straight for the quick release strings on my carbine, only to find that it had smashed into two pieces as I had come out of the hole. Luckily, there was no occasion to use it that time, as the Japs made no effort to attack the area.

It was a beautiful clear moonlit night, and from ten o'clock onwards the 'planes came in at quarter-hourly intervals. There was little wind, and all made successful descents. We were luckier than one other Gurkha group, which had dropped about a fortnight before, for half of them had landed in trees, and could not be got down to the ground until daylight.

Our landing area was a large tin talking, about 23 miles north of Kuala Lumpur, in Selangor, and within five hundred yards of the main west coast road and railway. Immediately we reached the ground we were surround-de by Chinese wearing all sorts of old clothes and battered felt hats—they had been able to get no new clothing in three and a half years—and with Sten guns slung over their shoulders. They helped us off with our parachutes, and guided us to the R.V., where I contacted the officer, who was chief British Liaison Officer with the guerillas of Selangor.

It all seemed so unrealistic. What had seemed to us to be a highly dangerous mission at the briefing now turned out to be almost child's play, as the Japs made no effort to interfere. Stores were collected from an area about a mile away, where they had been dropped separately, and were taken as quickly

Digitized by GOOGLE

as possible to the jungle edge. We then proceeded with heavy loads up a tortuous and steep path through the jungle, which to us in our excited and now rather weary state seemed never-ending. Just as dawn broke we reached the camp of bamboo and attap—a leaf like the leaf of the coconut palm, which when interlaced forms a waterproof roofing material—which the Chinese had prepared for us.

During the next few weeks we saw a lot of the M.P.A.J.A., their camps, their training, and their ration supply system from Chinese villages outside the jungle belt. Each camp had its small parade ground under the trees, where regular drill parades were carried out. Saluting (clenched-fist style, as the Chinese guerillas were all Communists) was fairly good, and discipline very strict indeed. Anyone who gave information to the Japanese of the guerillas' whereabouts or their organisation was immediately classed as a "running dog" and was invariably run to earth and shot.

My men had nothing but admiration for them and for the way they had stood up to so many years of jungle life with few clothes, short and poor quality food, and complete lack of medical supplies, resulting in nearly all of them having ulcers on their legs which had to be seen to be believed. A few days—and Chinese and Gurkha were firm friends, and in an incredibly short space of time I found my men had picked up a number of Chinese words and expressions. Several times we shared camps with the Chinese, and combined Chinese and Gurkha sentries throughout the night proved a great success.

Although on several occasions the Japs sent parties of a hundred men and more to reconnoitre our dropping zones after supply drops, we were on the whole little bothered by them, as they knew what to expect if they poked their noses too far into the jungle. We had, however, to be careful when Jap aircraft passed over to take in washing laid out to dry. Nevertheless, my group did have one brush with a party of mixed Japs and Malay puppet-troops, who tried to make a reconnaissance in force of our main jungle camp and stores-dropping area. We laid an ambush for them, and one of my Gurkha naiks with a Bren gun accounted for the first four men in the column, the remainder running back the way they had come so fast that we hardly had a chance to have another shot at them.

News of Japan's surrender was sudden and most unexpected. V. J. day in the jungle was a complete flop, owing to the shortage of rations and the complete non-existence of alcohol. We were, however, lucky to have with us a small but effective dry battery wireless receiver. It was very easily set up, as some 30 feet of aerial slung over the roof of a basha was sufficient to get good reception of S.E.A.C. Radio, Ceylon, All-India Radio, Delhi, and the Japanese Saigon and Singapore Radio stations.

It was weird to be in the heart of the Malayan jungle listening to the description by a B.B.C. commentator of the celebrations of the crowds in Piccadilly Circus. And the moving description of the scene in St. Pauls at the Thanksgiving Service, when the King and Queen, the Princesses and other members of of the Royal Family were present, was most impressive.

Base informed us that we were not to move out into the open without their permission, although we, of course, were itching to do so. On August 28 we moved down and took up quarters near the main road. We got a lot of amusement out of watching the somewhat startled and bewildered expressions on the faces of the Japanese in passing convoys, which were usually headed by armoured cars.

Next day three other British Officers and myself were sitting in the Village Police Station, when we heard a train draw into the station just behind the village. We decided to inspect it. As we appreached the station we could see it was a goods train. Each of us had carbines on our shoulders, when suddenly, when we were fifty yards from the train, a Japanese sentry with rifle and bayons appeared out of the last coach and stood looking at us with an amazed expression on his face, not at all sure what to do. He shouted to the man in charge, who came doubling round the corner with a light machine gun, accompanied by two other Japs with rifle and bayonets.

It was an awkward moment, but we just moved steadily forward, leaving our carbines slung, and waving our arms across our bodies to signify that we did not intend to do anything about them. By the time they had positioned their L.M.G. we were within fifteen yards of them, and there was nothing they could do. To crown everything the train then started pulling out of the station. Two of the Japs jumped on it while it was on the move, but the private in charge couldn't quite make up his mind, and by the time he had decided that he also would leap on to the moving train it was going too fast for him to fling himself and his rather bulky L.M.G. in at the same time. The situation was saved, however, by the guard, who put out his red flag and stopped the train. And so four very bewildered Japs, suffering greatly from loss of face, proceeded on their way!

At 04-30 hours on August 31, by which time we felt confident the Japs were used to our being there, a Japanese company which had moved up in the night opened fire with all they had got on to the Police Station, which housed two British Liaison officers and a patrol of a hundred Chinese guerillas. It look some time to stop the firing on both sides, but luckily only one Chinese sentry was killed. We were none too pleased about the incident, considering that the surrender had come into effect on the 15th of the month, but it served a useful purpose in the long run, as we were able to contact Jap H.Q., take over transport and cars, and move into a comfortable bungalow in the Federal capital, Kuala Lumpur.

There I had the good fortune to be the first British officer from the outside world to visit 143 Gurkhas of my old battalion in the P.O.W. Camp, and my reception was beyond description. They were in rags, and still suffering from under-nourishment, but their morale, bearing and discipline was astounding. They had stood up to torture and beatings, but had remained firm in their loyalty to their adopted King and Empire. It was a grand sight, and one which neither I nor any of my group of parachutists who were present will ever forget.

I had a long talk with them, and told them all the news I could give them of their families and friends in the Depot at Dharamsala, what had been happening during the three and a half years of their captivity, and why we had been so slow in liberating them. They in their turn gave me first-hand accounts of the actions fought, of many gallant deeds done by the Battalion during the Japanese attack on Malaya, and of the incredible hardships they had undergone as P. O. Ws. There were in the camp a large number of Indian P. O. Ws., a complete cross-section of the Indian Army who, in spite of Japanese cruelties and efforts to subverse them, had remained loyal.

The invasion Army, which had by then been changed into an Army of Occupation, arrived about a week later, by which time we had made ourselves

fairly comfortable, although at the time we were outnumbered by something like 1,000 to 1. With the arrival of the Army of Occupation we were used to disarm and arrest Japanese war criminals in Pahang, while the M.P.A.J.A. were used as an additional police force. We were also the first regular troops to enter Trengganu State, where we had a four-day chase after some Jap escapees. The group remained in the Trengganu area for a month before the Army arrived to take over that part of the north-east coast.

Wherever we went the hospitality and welcome was most gratifying. It was good to see with our own eyes that people of Malaya were genuinely glad to see the return of a British administration after their experiences with the Japanese. I have a vivid recollection of one instance. A local Chinese businessman invited a Gurkha Jemadar and two Havildars from the P.O.W. Camp and myself to a meal in a Chinese restaurant about two days after we arrived in Kuala Lumpur. After an excellent meal we came out, only to find a cheering crowd of more than 500 people outside. It was a spontaneous greeting, which was all the more impressive because armed Japanese soldiers were at that time still patrolling the streets and standing sentry at cross-roads. Only with difficulty did we manage to make our way back to the P.O.W. Camp. Wherever we went throughout the country Malays and Chinese were lavish in their hospitality; all told of their sufferings under the Japanese, and of the rigid censorship.

Looked at in retrospect, the operation was most successful and a very interesting experience. The Gurkha once again proved himself the versatile soldier he is. Our only regret was that the Japanese surrendered so soon after our entry, and that we only had one brief chance to have a crack at him.

## A Faked Film.

inthe

st behind

re coulde

ien sade

and bay

ed expræ

charge, r

nied by

ard, lat

that w

boned b

they or

he state

eindr

iat her

ng bin

rved, E

р. Ли

dont

laps IF.

be op

sed tr

ry i he s

"The Japanese made a propaganda film at an Allied p.o.w. camp in Siam in 1943. The men were made to file past the camera, receiving fruit, eggs, Red Cross parcels, and mail. Japanese guards took these from them at the end of the performance. There was a background of Red Cross boxes; all were empty. Canteen scenes showed the men sitting at tables piled up with fruits, eggs, meat and vegetables. At the word "go" the men were ordered to start eating. The camera recorded for two or three minutes. Some of the boys did well in that time."—S. E. A. C. Communique.

# The Japanese Fleet.

"Japan's army and her air force were far larger at the end of the war than in 1941. In Japan proper at the time of the surrender there were more than 2,000,000 trained military personnel; outside Japan there were more than 3,000,000 trained men. Her professional army of more than 5,000,000 men on VJ day compared with 3,000,000 on December 7, 1941. Her aircraft fleet had increased approximately 100 per cent. Why then did she sue for peace before the introduction of the atom bomb and before the entry of Russia into the war? Because by early August Japan's fighting fleet had ceased to exist; she was stripped of her sea power."—Admiral Nimitz.

## JUDGING BY APPEARANCES

By "HYDERABAD."

The following stories of apparitions are taken from Phantasms of the Living, compiled about 1886 by three editors, of whom F. W. H. Myers is to-day the best remembered, and published on behalf of the Society for Psychical Research. The two volumes of this book contain some six hundred to a thousand narratives, mostly volunteered by persons of repute and often verified by stringent cross-examination of the teller by one of the Editors or an agent of the Editors. There is much analysis of these stories, and of other evidence, from a logical, philosophical or scientific angle. It is and always has been a locus classicus.

In what follows I have tried to summarise each story and to add a little by way of new investigation of the factual detail, which I have sometimes been able to do from sources which were not available sixty years ago when Phantasms of the Living was published. About forty of the narratives in that book have some connection, direct or indirect, with India. Of these I have read all and noted most. The five which we will now consider have seemed the most striking of all, both to myself and to a competent independent critic whom I have consulted.

## CHRISTMAS 1876

OF the many Christian graveyards in and about Delhi, one of the most interesting is that which belonged to the old Cantonment which was established near the village of Rajpur, or Rajpura, in 1828. The old barracks, bungalows and lines covered a large area north-west of the Ridge. The station was not abandoned till 1864; but few burials took place in the old cemetery after the storming of Delhi in September 1857. Indeed, only three interments are directly referable to later times, and one of these was that of Captain William Clayton of the 9th Lancers, who died from an accident at polo on December 26, 1876, aged 37 years and 8 mouths. To his death there attaches a remarkable story.

He was an extra aide-de-camp to the Viceroy. His death "during the night" from an accident at polo was announced in a telegram carrying the date-line December 26, published in the Calcutta Englishman on December 28. In reply to an inquiry made some years later, Lord William Beresford, V.C., the celebrated Military Secretary to successive Viceroys, stated that the accident occurred about 6-15 p.m. (which seems to be an extraordinarily late hour to be playing polo at Delhi in midwinter—it must have been dark or nearly dark), and that Captain Clayton died in his arms exactly as the clock struck midnight.

Despite the laudable efforts of the editors of *Phantasms* of the Living to make every fact clear, it is not explicitly stated whether the accident took place on the evening of the 25th or of the 26th December, and whether Clayton died at midnight 25th/26th or 26th/27th. (It may be added that the editors aforesaid give no clue to the *place* of death, which it took me some time to locate at Delhi). But the clear inference, as will be seen, is that the fatal game of polo was held on the afternoon of Christmas Day, 1876.

On this same Christmas evening, three gentlemen were at Sialkot, some hundreds of miles from Delhi. They were the Rev. Christopher C. G. Fagan the Chaplain at that station; his cousin George—Lieutenant George Forbes Fagan, of the 10th Bengal Lancers; and Major F. W. Collis—afterwards Major-General and C. B. (1839—1905). The Chaplain was dressing for dinner, in his own house, in which Major Collis was his only guest; George Fagan was living elsewhere, and was expected to come to dinner with his cousin.

Each of the three gave his separate account, in writing, a few years later, of what happened that evening; but there were some discrepancies—as is not surprising—and two of the three then displayed some reluctance to discuss the event in detail. The following is an attempt to tell all three versions in a fair manner, making no effort to reconcile them.

nie

Æ

**7** 10

1. The Chaplain's Story.—Collis was my guest in the house: my cousin George was not—he was coming in to dinner. I heard the name "Fagan" called, and thought it strange that George should call me by our surname, instead of "Charlie" (sic). I went to George, and asked him what it was all about, and I said that it was like the voice of a cavalry officer "who had been under my pastoral charge but was then at a distant station." George replied that he too had heard the voice, and that it was probably that of Major Collis whom they were expecting to dinner.

We went into the drawing-room, and found that Collis had arrived. While we were talking to him, and telling him what had happened, the same voice repeated the same name, and they all heard it, and Collis said, "It is like Clayton's voice."

This version was communicated to the Editors, in the 'eighties, not by the padre himself, but by his mother. On his being addressed by the Editors, he displayed some aversion to the subject, but wrote (from Sitapur, on August 25, 1883) that Collis's account (see 3 below) was correct to the best of his recollection. Collis was a guest in the house, said the Chaplain; Cousin George was not. He did not remember who first suggested that the voice heard was that of Clayton. Later, the Chaplain said that he had the impression that George did not hear the voice.

- 2. Cousin George's Story.—This is short and factual. It was written at Simla, on July 31, 1885. "I remember that in the afternoon of the day on which Captain Clayton met his death, I was in the Rev. C. Fagan's house at Sialkot, and he said that he had heard his mother's voice calling to him, and that something was certain to happen. I heard no voice myself. [My italics]. When news arrived of Captain Clayton's death, the Chaplain said that the voice must have some connexion with it.
- 3. Major Collis's Story.—The Chaplain and his cousin were standing in the doorway of the drawing-room, talking, when they heard the call "Fagan!" I was dressing in my room, and they called out to know what I wanted. I had not spoken, nor had I heard the call. While they were talking together, the call came a second time, and I heard it—we all three heard it.

To all three versions, one point must be added—the news of Clayton's death did not come till "the next day" (which was probably the 27th).

Little comment is needed. The date, and even the hour, seem to accord with the evidence of—not the death that ensued, which was then unknown to the witnesses, but—the accident which caused it. The witnesses are such as

are commonly called unimpeachable, and their discrepancies are such as mark the truth in the view of those who are experienced in the judgment of diverging tales. Their reluctance to unfold, to reconcile, to elaborate, to explain, and to commit themselves to new written details five or ten years later—all these seem to me to stamp their stories as genuine. They are sure that they heard something that Christmas night, and those of them who heard the voice all connected it with their acquaintance Clayton, then distant and in the process of dying, though none of them knew it.

## WHAT WAS THE DATE?

In September 1857 Captain G. Wheatcroft of the 6th Inniskilling Dragoons went to India to join his regiment. On the night of 14th/15th November 1857, his wife who was living at Cambridge, dreamt in the early hours of the morning that she saw her husband, looking anxious and ill. She immediately awoke, much agitated. It was bright moonlight, and she saw his figure standing by the bedside. He was in uniform, hands pressed across his breast, hair dishevelled, the face very pale. "His large dark eyes were fixed full on her; their expression was that of great excitement; and there was a peculiar contraction of the mouth, habitual to him when agitated." She saw him as distinctly as she had ever done in her life, and she noticed between his hands the white of his shirt-bosom. He seemed to bend forward, as if in pain, and to make an effort to speak, but there was no sound. After about a minute, his figure disappeared.

She then made certain that she was actually awake. She rubbed her eyes with the sheet, and felt its touch. Her little nephew was in bed with her: she listened to his breathing. She was sure that what she had seen was no dream, and she did not go to sleep again that night.

Next morning she told her mother what she had seen, and said that she was sure that her husband had been killed or grievously wounded, although she had seen no marks of blood on his dress. Thereafter, she behaved as a possible widow, refusing to go to any place of amusement until she should receive a letter from her husband (if alive) dated later than 14th November.

In December 1857 news was received in England that Captain Wheatcroft had been killed in action before Lucknow on the *fifteenth* of November. The solicitor in charge of his affairs duly procured a certificate from the War Office to this effect, but the widow informed him that she felt sure that there must be a mistake about the date, as it was on the night of 14th/15th November that her husband had appeared to her.

The solicitor made further inquiries from the Army Agents, but without result, and meanwhile Captain Wheatcroft's death was mentioned in two dispatches of Sir Colin Campbell as having occurred on 15th November. But in March 1858 the family received from a Captain G. C——— of the Military Train a letter dated from near Lucknow, 19th December 1857. In it he stated that Wheatcroft had been killed before Lucknow, gallantly leading his squadron, on the afternoon of the fourteenth. C——was riding close by his side, and saw him fall. He was struck by a fragment of shell in the breast, never spoke after he was hit, and was buried at the Dilkhusha.

On a wooden cross erected over his grave by his friend Lieut. R———of the 9th Lancers were cut the initials "G.W." and the date 14th November 1857. (It should be noted that Wheatcroft was, when he was killed, serving

not with his own regiment but with the Military Train, the precursors of the present Royal Army Service Corps, and that many men of the Train were attached to the cavalry, and fought as such with them).

Later, the War Office accepted the date—14th—as being correct, and when in about April 1859 the solicitor had occasion to obtain another copy of the certificate from them, he found that it gave the date of death as 14th November 1857.

The editors of *Phantasms of the Living* observe that the difference of longitude between London and Lucknow is about five hours, and that therefore 3 or 4 a.m. in London would be 8 or 9 a.m. in Lucknow. But Wheatcroft was killed in the afternoon.

We may add that, from standard histories of the Mutiny campaigns, it is abundantly clear that Wheatcroft was killed on the 14th of November, and apparently this was late in the afternoon, after 5 p.m. The best known history, Kaye and Malleson's, curiously miscalls him "Wheatley," but there is no doubt as to his correct name or identity. His grave is not now marked by any memorial, but the only other officer (A. O. Mayne) who was killed in the same attack is buried in La Martimiere Park.

## THE WARREN CASE

In 1857 the narrator, a girl of thirteen, had a brother, Lieut. W——, serving in the 8th Bengal Native Infantry. The family usually heard from him regularly, but in June and July no letters came, and those that arrived in August proved to have been written quite early in the spring, and were full of the disturbance around his station. The girl, who had been unwell, was much worried at the absence of news, and sometimes dreamt of her brother.

Once, when the personal appearance of her brother was being discussed, she remarked, "Oh, he is not like that now, he has no beard or whiskers"; and when asked why she said such a thing, replied "I know it, for I have seen him in my dreams"—and was severely reprimanded by her governess for talking nonsense.

On the morning of the 25th September 1857 she awoke from a dream to find her sister holding her, much alarmed. She had screamed and struggled, crying out, "Is he really dead?" Then, ceasing to struggle, after about a minute she cried out, "Harry is dead, they have shot him!" When she had recovered somewhat, she told her dream to her sister. She had seen Harry riding with another officer, and mounted soldiers behind them. On this her sister interrupted, "My dear, that shows you it is only a dream, for you know that Harry is in an infantry, not a cavalry, regiment." But her feeling that she had seen something real was not to be shaken, and the sister was sufficiently impressed to make a detailed written note of the dream, with dates.

Shortly afterwards news came through that on the morning of 25th September the brother had been shot down, on his way to Lucknow; and a few days later came one of his missing letters, telling how his own regiment had mutinied, and he had been transferred to the 12th Irregular Cavalry, which was to join Havelock's force in the relief of Lucknow.

About eight years later, the officer who was riding with Harry when he fell, a Captain or Major Grant visited the family and, his version of Harry's death tallied minutely—"even to the description of the buildings on their left"

—with the notes taken on the morning of the dream. The family also heard that Harry had made an alteration in his beard and whiskers just about the time that Miss L. A. W——had spoken of his wearing them differently.

The editors of *Phantasms of the Living* comment that the date of death is given as 25th September in *Allen's Indian Mail*, but as 26th in the *East India Register*, but that there was hard fighting on both days and in some accounts the name of officers who fell on the two days are grouped together without discrimination.

We may add that "Harry W——" is easily identifiable as Lieutenant Charles Henry Lycett Warren, of the 8th Bengal Native Infantry, who according to the Bengal Army List, 1858, was killed in action at Lucknow on 25th September 1857.

## FOUR APPARITIONS BEFORE BREAKFAST

About the year 1859 Captain Robert Fagan, of the Bengal Artillery, who was in charge of the bridge of boats across the river Ravi at Lahore, was out in the district collecting boats. One morning during his absence his eldest boy, then aged about six, on seeing his mother had dressed for breakfast in a coloured muslim gown, asked her to take it off and wear a black one—"because Papa is dead." His mother, after diverting his thoughts for a short time, said, "Shall I put on a black dress now, Charlie?" "Oh, no," he replied, "Papa is not dead now," and he ran off.

On leaving her room Mrs. Fagan was met by her head nurse, the Scottish wife of a soldier of the Bengal Artillery, who asked if she had heard from the master that morning. Mrs. Fagan replied that his usual letter had not come, on which the nurse remarked: "Something very uncanny has happened to him, for, looking out of the window just now, I saw Annie (the under-nurse, another artilleryman's Irish wife) and the gardener go up to master's favourite rose-tree and pick a flower, and before she could have got in from the garden, I found her in the night nursery, which she had never left, finishing the children."

Not thinking much of this, Mrs. Fagan passed on to the breakfast room, where she expected to find her visitors, Captain William Reveley of the Bengal Army and his wife; but they were not there. So she went to Mrs. Reveley's room, and found her still at her toilet. For this unpunctuality Mrs. Reveley apologised, "saying she had had a dreadful fright, having seen Mrs. Fagan standing in front of the chest of drawers, who, when asked how she had come unobserved into the room, turned round and then deliberately vanished through the chest of drawers and the door behind it."

This third strange circumstance within such a short space of time led Mrs. Fagan to relate all three at the breakfast table to Captain Reveley, but to her surprise he cut the conversation short as soon as she had finished her story.

Five days passed without any news whatever of Captain Fagan, and then he arrived home, looking very ill, and said that on the morning when the strange things had been seen at his home, he had been in a boat which had capsized, was nearly drowned, and was resuscitated with difficulty.

Then Reveley said to Mrs. Fagan, "I must apologise for my brusqueness of manner that morning, but I feared to alarm you by seeming to attach any importance to what had happened, and lest I should be induced to tell you of the greater fright I had myself. For, Fagan" (addressing his host) " as I passed from your office, where I had been reading with the munshi, and going through the drawing-room, I distinctly saw you sitting in your usual chair."

Mrs. Fagan was living at Newton Abbot in 1883, when she narrated this story. Her husband, Captain Robert Charles Henry Baines Fagan, was killed during the siege of Delhi on 12th September 1857. From an account of his services which I have consulted, it appears that in Jauuary 1852 he was temporarily appointed to the Department of the Civil Engineer in the Punjab, as Superintendent of Civil Buildings at Lahore, and he continued to hold this post till October 1854, when he was transferred to Dalhousie. The date of the accident and apparitions was probably 1852–54, and not about 1850 as his widow thought, although he was serving at Lahore with the artillery from 1847 till 1852. He came of an Irish family of which many members became John Company's officers; his father was a general in the Bengal Army; and his wife was the daughter of a Bengal medical officer. They were married in July 1846, which would also indicate a date later than 1850 for the apparations, for they occurred when their eldest son was about six years old.

Officers and others wishing to join the United Service Institution of India may do so by completing and posting the Membership Form to be found on the back page of this issue.

## INDIA'S WATCHWORD—READINESS \*

By Major-General S. F. IRWIN, C.B.E.

"The question whether or not a nation be desirable as an ally is not so much determined by the inert mass of arms which it has at hand but by the obvious presence of a sturdy will to national self-preservation and a heroic courage which will fight through to the last breath.

"The British nation will therefore be considered as the most valuable ally in the world as long as it can be counted spon to show that brutality and tenacity in its government, as well as in the spirit of the broad masses, which enables it to carry through to victory any struggle that it once enters upon, no matter how long such a struggle may last or however great the sacrifice that may be necessary, or whatever the means that have to be employed: and all this even though the actual military equipment at hand may be utterly inadequate when compared with that of other nations."—'Mein Kampf. (page 279).

ROM our experience of World War I it appeared that a western nation making a maximum effort could put into its fighting services about one-tenth of its population. This is after the women, the young, and the old, the sick, and the halt, have been allocated to other tasks, and although this is only an approximation it is one which World War II showed to be somewhere near the mark. The world has therefore wondered why India, with a population of some 380 millions, managed to produce a fighting force, including its services of supply, of only two and a half millions, or less than 1% of its population. We offered some explanations. We said that this was the largest voluntary army in the world, that India feeds itself, that some 90% of the population is occupied in agriculture, and that their diversion to other work would cause famine. But although these were factors in limiting the expansion of our forces, they were not all the factors.

True, we could have mobilized more men, yet we in India could still not have produced with the material available a larger or more efficient Indian Army. For a fighting force, mere quantity is not enough. In 1942 an Indian political leader said to me: "India's great strength lies in her numbers. You have only to arm the millions of India, and she can drive any invader from her soil. Come the four corners of the world in arms, etc. . . . " It is this speciousness in matters of the greatest moment which appals the professional soldier, but which, fortunately, does not blind him to the truth. In a long history of conflict

This paper, submitted for our last Gold Medal Essay Competition, was considered to be of such a high standard that the Judges recommended that it should be published in the Journal of the Institution. It was, of course, written before the end of the war in Europe. The subject set for the competition was:

<sup>&</sup>quot;During the present war there have been certain limiting factors to the expansion of the Armed forces of India as regards personnel, equipment and armaments. Consider in relation to any one, or all three Services, in what manner they could in future best meet their peace-time commitments within the probable limitations of post-war finance, and at the same time form a sounder basis for expansion if the need should occur."

ne millions of India have always been defeated by any small organized army nat burst into India, and in 1942, as in 326 B.C., the numbers of India would ave no more impeded the Japanese than they did Alexander the Great.

The problem before the Commander-in-Chief in India was the defeat of the apanese, and none would have known better than he that this meant attacking and destroying them. Therefore every Indian Division which was raised had to e capable of defeating an enemy division in the field. In no way could this be complished with armed men who were little more than guerillas. Guerillas ppeal to the public as something attractive and romantic, but all that guerillas ave is a nuisance value after the main fighting forces have defeated and thrown ack the enemy. This is the lesson which the Americans tried to teach the shinese.

This policy of producing only Indian formations capable of defeating the lighly-trained and organized enemy formations, was essentially right and has been force than justified by victory. The alternative of producing hordes of armed fuerillas who clutter up the communications, eat down the countrysides like tocusts, and have no offensive power against any effective fighting force, would have been entirely wrong, and would never have kept the Germans out of Cairo for the Japanese out of India.

Our problem, then, is to consider what have been the limiting factors in producing organized and trained fighting forces, and not merely in arming a population or raising a home guard.

## THE LACK OF LEADERS.

Victory in war, over and above any skill and resources, demands above all greater courage and better leadership. However vigorously we wave our flag and blow our bugles, no man dies gladly, and it requires the greatest courage, and the sternest sublimation of our natural instincts for self-preservation, to advance over any piece of ground in the face of the enemy's fire. No large body of ordinary men of any nation could ever be got to do it unless they had among them a sufficient number of men of such implacable spirit that they will lead their sections or their battalions to a point where an equally determined enemy can be reached with a bayonet.

These men are leaders, and without them no fighting forces can win a battle. They are required in all ranks, but particularly are they required in command of platoons and companies and battalions where skilled, as well as courageous, leadership is demanded. These are the commissioned officers, and it was here that we came up against one of the biggest obstacles in the expansion of our forces in India.

It is as well that we face the truth in this matter, however unpalatable it may be, because unless an independent India understands this thoroughly for the future she may well, like Mussolini, waste her money on a worthless army. The V.C.O. has throughout played his customary gallant part. He has been trained and picked for leadership which is limited only by his lack of education. There have, too, been many educated Indians who have led their men bravely and skilfully, and many who have been decorated for their courage. Many others have died in keeping the enemy out of India.

Yet the distinguished services of these men must not blind us to the facts. Without any further expansion we require for the Indian Army some 40,000 officers. Of these less than one quarter are Indians. The remainder have had

to be borrowed from the British Isles, because all our efforts could not product sufficient educated Indians capable of leading their own men into action. There was no lack of young Indians who were full of learning, for a large number of universities had been turning them out for a hundred years, but what these graduates had not acquired was that initiative, character, and power of leadership which would have justified their being trusted with the lives of their own illiterate countrymen.

These are hard words, but they cannot be laughed off with the escapist comment that it would have been different with an independent India. It would have been incomparably worse, as India, lacking leaders of her own, would not have had a call on all those thousands of British officers who have led her armiet knowing little Hindustani but the two words "follow me."

It is, however, not a insuperable problem if the years of peace are wisely used. Very few babies are born leaders. They are made into leaders by their environment and education, and by their practice in leadership from an early age.

## AN ILLITERATE POPULATION.

Unquestionably a peasant population shows sterling qualities, and in the history of war, where courage has counted for so much, the peasantry have long held pride of place as soldiers. But with the coming of this century and the general industrialization of life, war became a sternly scientific business, only to be won by the full employment of a nation's material resources. In the West we have long since arrived at the stage when the most effective means of making war, which include wireless sets as well as lethal weapons, can only be taughto, and properly employed by, a man with a basic education.

Between the last two wars, and in the face of much opposition from among the military themselves, the Indian Army concentrated on the education of its own peasant personnel, and those of us who are able to look back on the Army of 1918 know that what has been done in this adult education has paid big dividends. But that has helped us little towards expansion, because to multiply the peacetime army by twenty, which we have done, meant drawing heavily or a civil population still largely illiterate.

We arrived quickly at a stage when our men could not get the very best out of the best equipment. These willing men, keen and full of courage, tried all they knew, and the standard of mechanical ability they reached astonished their own officers, but both in quality and quantity it fell short of our requirements. While we could raise and train companies of disciplined riflemen, we could not support them with all those essential specialists, such as signals, without which a modern army cannot defeat a well equipped enemy.

When it comes to backing a lorry to the door of an aircraft, or to tuning in a wireless set, the primitive peasant appears to be wearing a pair of boxing gloves, and he finds his fingers untrained to the fine adjustments which these things require, and while the peasant has something initially which either the western townsman has not got, or has forgotten, it turns out to be quicker to teach that townsman to return to earth, than to turn the child of nature into a fighting artizan.

Given a basic education shared widely by the population of India, which means nothing more than the ability to read a book and understand it, we could have produced these specialists in the numbers required. They were not to be had.

# THE LACK OF TRADESMEN AND ARTIFICERS.

The preceding paragraph has dealt with a standard of general education that determines how far and how quickly a man can be trained to any task involving intelligence and judgment, but not high technical skill. This paragraph deals more particularly with a narrower form of education of paramount importance for war.

Modern war is fought with complicated tools and weapons, and the bull-dozer is no less important than the gun. Even more than the army, it is the Navy and the Air Force which require large numbers of men who are highly skilled at working with tools and weapons and machines of precision. No modern naval power recruits its sailors from the fishermen who live along its shores. Whether a man can swim, or distinguish a herring from a mackerel, is a matter of indifference to the Lords of the Admiralty. They want men who can read instruments, mind and mend machinery, and handle some small part of the most complicated contrivance in the world—a warship. In the air forces, to maintain every pilot in the air, we require some twelve men or more on the ground. Most of these must be highly qualified technically if the aircraft is not to fail the pilot when its full power is required. And behind all these services many more tradesmen and technicians are needed to forge and fashion the weapons, vehicles, and instruments before they can be put into the hands of the fighting forces.

It is this technical skill, and these tradesmen and artificers which India has lacked. Without them, no fighting forces can expand. The size of any army, navy, or air force is limited by the tradesmen and technicians it can call upon. It takes two years to make a tradesman, and five years to make a skilled artificer, and a country which is largely illiterate, mainly agricultural, and employing unmechanized methods of farming, can never hope to wage war on the same scale, and with the same power, as the highly educated and industrialized nations of the West.

#### THE LACK OF MATERIAL AND SHIPPING.

India was not alone in the Commonwealth or among the Allies in being unprepared for a World War. Preparation for war is expensive, and any nation which will not face this expense has only one alternative: that is, to become allied to a wiser nation which will keep the enemy at bay while the unprepared nation mobilizes its resources. As this mobilization takes from two to three years a policy of unpreparedness is extremely risky, and because it prolongs the war is ultimately more expensive. Of all the Commonwealth armies in 1939, India's small professional army was in many ways the most ready, but not for a modern World War. It was well led and well trained, but not trained for fighting any particular first-class power on any particular terrain. Its organization into Regimental groups, each with a training and a territorial battalion, formed a good basis for expansion.

This Indian Army was, however, only just beginning its mechanization, and this could not be completed from resources within India. Still less could she expand her army without these resources. There were some things she could make for herself, such as rifles and light machine guns, ammunition and armoured plate, and indeed she was early called upon to supply other Commonwealth troops with these light arms. The heavy equipment, the tanks and the aircraft, she could not immediately make and the problem then was either to increase her own industrial effort to provide them or to rely on the factories of England and America.

The decision was taken that while India's factories would be stepped up in war production to their maximum extent, India must still largely rely on England and the U.S.A. However inevitable this decision was, it forced India to compete for arms and equipment with the other allied nations, and made her progress dependent on the availability of shipping. This vastly slowed up the expansion of the Indian Army, and we passed through a perilous period when we had the men but could not adequately equip or arm them. In expanding for war, men and material must come forward on parallel lines, since the arms and equipment are required not only for the actual fighting, but for training the men in their use.

#### DEFENCE

If you stand on the top of the Mark Hopkins Hotel in San Francisco and gaze out over the Golden Gate the world may appear as peaceful as it did when Magellan named that ocean the Pacific. But appearances are deceptive, and while the hopes of the world are centred on finding some international system which will save us from war, the intrinsic part of this system must lie in the readiness of the United Nations to stamp out any aggressor before he can profit from his aggression.

A war once started in a period when peace-minded nations are unprepared, grows in geometrical progression, and soon involves the world. It is like a fire with a high wind and no fire brigade. But like a fire which is fought immediately before it can gain ground, it can most easily be stamped out in its early stages. Defensive action against any aggressor is not good enough. Aggression demands counter-aggression, immediate and powerful, and it is this which every nation, if it cares for peace, must be prepared to perform, not just for itself or on its own decision, but as part of a plan of the nations with whom it is united.

Wars differ so much in the variety of weapons employed, and in the means of waging them that the difficulty of planning for a war which may be forced upon us at a time and place we cannot calculate is immense. The aggressor, knowing the time and place of his planned aggression, will always possess great initial advantages, and the new long-range weapons which the war has brought forth, and others which the future may produce, may well make a sudden assault difficult to combat.

But however devastating such an initial attack may be, the aggressor nation still cannot succeed in war unless she is able to press home the initial advantage and prevent her enemy from developing her war potential. This the Germans were able to do in their attacks on Poland and France, and it was this that the Japanese failed to do in their attack on the U.S.A.

#### BASIC PROBLEMS OF THE DEFENCE

The first problem of the defence is to ensure that the nation's war potential is not permanently destroyed. So far in the history of war, the only certain way of encompassing this destruction is the complete occupation of the country with land forces. The defence must therefore be fully prepared to protect its soil against occupation by the enemy, and the size of the regular fighting forces and their immediate reserves will mainly be determined by the numbers of men, ships, and aircraft required to counter the first blows. If Britain has come out on the winning side in two World Wars, we must appreciate that in both of those wars she was allied to nations which had conscription in peace, and were therefore able to bear the strain of attack until Britain was ready.

The power of heavy bombardment, either from the air or from land over immense distances, can certainly go a long way towards destroying industries, but with the protective measures against bombing which are obviously possible in the future it is still unlikely that the actual capture of the country by land forces can ever be dispensed with.

The second problem in the defence is to ensure that, while holding out against attack, the country has all the resources necessary to mobilise and equip her fighting services. For this, two things are required: the intelligent distribution of the factories and their protection, and the preparation in peace of all the plans and blue prints required for a rapid change over to war. The frontiers of India are no longer only land and sea frontiers. For every country in the world, the air is now an open flank, and this will postulate the protection of large inland areas containing essential war industries so that they cannot be destroyed by long range air bombardment, or airborne troops. While an aggressor nation, choosing its own time for assault, can go into mass production of the latest weapons, no non-aggressor nation can afford to keep all its fighting forces continuously up-to-date in equipment. All that the regular forces of the peaceminded nations can do is to test designs and approve or disapprove them, and study the technique of, and the training with, new weapons.

The third problem of the defence, to which the first two problems have been only preparatory, is the organization of the nation for attack, and this requires an expansion plan which can be put into force on the first day of war. There are many good reasons why nations are usually unprepared for war, and the first of these is that they have not considered it desirable to reduce their standard of living in peace to provide the money required, but there is no good reason for not having plans ready for expansion once the war has started. This planning involves the whole nation and not only its fighting services. Industry, labour, agriculture, medicine, education, all are concerned, and any planning team in peace must contain or co-opt all those who will be so much concerned in war.

From these considerations it will be obvious that the aggressor nation begins with advantages so great that only a Commonwealth of Nations could hope to arrest her progress. Meanwhile each nation in that Commonwealth must concentrate on the protection of its war resources, and have its plans for expansion immediately ready.

## PROBLEMS PECULIAR TO INDIA'S DEFENCE

India has a particular problem on her North-West Frontier which for long has been a constant drain on her military resources and treasure. Soldiers of many generations have seen but one solution to this—the disarming of the tribesmen in co-operation with Afghanistan. If these million tribesmen are able successfully to maintain that in the world of 1945 every man must carry a lethal weapon, then all the United Nations are talking nonsense. This is unlikely. The truth is that while arms are permitted in tribal territory, all men must have one. If no man has a rifle, then no man needs a rifle.

As a training ground the North-West Frontier is out of date. It commits the troops to obsolete forms of warfare which are useless against a first-class power. Before, therefore, India settles down to organize her army, she should completely disarm the frontier tribesmen. It should be done by the Indian Army, with the agreement of the United Nations as part of the plan for world peace. The subsequent control of the frontier is then the role of an Indian Police Force, which may well include constables from the erstwhile warring tribes.

No country which still requires an army to preserve internal peace has yet arrived at nationhood. The employment of an army on police work may be economical, and in emergencies essential, but it is nonetheless highly undesirable. It also has the unfortunate affect of making the army unpopular with the civil population upon whom the army will depend for expansion. A new Indian Government should, if the internal situation requires it, do everything necessary to strengthen its police force, but should never regard its army as being merely a police force of greater power.

#### PRINCIPLES AND METHODS OF EXPANSION

There can be no growth except from a seed or a cutting, and the first principle for expansion in war is to ensure that we possess in peace, and in however small a degree, all the essential parts of a fighting force. Nothing illustrates this principle more vividly than India's vicissitudes with her Armoured Corps. Lacking an Armoured tracked element at the beginning of the war, she lacked everything which would have gone with it. There were no experienced officers and men, no workshops with their artificers, no settled doctrine for the tactical employment of tanks, and therefore nothing to build upon.

As a result of this initial lack it took between five and six years to get Indian medium tank regiments into action against the Japanese. It cannot be too strongly stressed that the weapons or the vehicles by themselves mean very little. Several shiploads of tanks from somewhere overseas is not an armoured fighting formation. Unless you have had these tanks in peace, and build up all the skilled services needed to keep them in action, then those tanks will not get into action for a very long time. The existence of one medium tank regiment in India before the war would have been little enough, but it would have meant that we should have had the technical knowledge, the workshops and recovery sections, from which we could have expanded. We should also have known what we wanted.

In the organization, then, of an Army, Navy, or Air Force, even though we cannot foresee just what course a war will take, or what new weapons a new war will produce, we must make up our minds on the essential elements for any fighting force, and see that our services have them.

A second principle of expansion is that all designs and plans must be kept concurrently up-to-date. The annual question which the Defence Minister must ask his staff the moment he has recovered from the New Year's Eve celebrations, is: "Just how do we stand if we have to fight a first-class war this year?" This question must call for the annual revision of all designs, blue prints, jigs, and sealed patterns. It will call for firm decision and selection from a surfeit of expert opinion, but it is better to be wrong and ready than to take the risks of being unready and probably just as wrong.

Our best example of pre-vision in planning for World War II has been shown to us by the Royal Air Force. Their budget was not large before the war, and their strength in squadrons bore little relation to the air strength of Germany, but when they were put to their first severe test in the Battle of Britain, it was clear that their aircraft lacked nothing in design and power. This is a matter in which the best will always be the enemy of the good, but the moment a war becomes inevitable a country must go immediately into the production of the good. The best will come later.

# METHODS OF EXPANSION.

The various methods for expanding the manpower of a fighting force can be stated shortly. Combat troops should be between the ages 18 and 33 and this gives us fifteen years as the useful life of a combatant in the lower ranks for purposes of planning.

We can have a long service army in which the men can remain for 15 years. This provides no trained reserve, and our army on mobilization is no larger than it was in peace.

Alternatively we can divide this 15 years into two periods, one in which the man trains continuously with the colours, and the other in which he is held in reserve in his village and trains occasionally. Under this arrangement the size of the army on mobilization, once the scheme has been in operation for some years, will clearly depend on the number of years allotted to each of these periods. If men serve five years continuously, and ten years in reserve, then on mobilization the strength of the peacetime army can be trebled. The shortest period of colour service and the longest period of reserve service, gives the greatest expansion for war. Just how these two periods are allotted usually depends on the time taken to train a man in his particular arm of the service, and because specialists such as signals and sappers take longer to train, there will always be a shortage of reserves for these arms unless they are kept overstrength in peace.

The next stage may be called the territorial army method, and under this plan no period of continuous service is carried out. Civilians are trained intermittently and, for a small retaining fee, practise with their weapons for a fixed number of hours a year. They form a reserve over and above anything which the regular army can produce, but they are not fully trained men. They are men who have sufficient knowledge of their arms and of military matters to make them efficient soldiers in a much shorter time than the recruit straight from civil life.

This method is the customary compromise in countries which do not favour conscription. Its main disadvantage is that the training is part-time, piecemeal and discontinuous. It cannot give a man that corporate spirit he acquires by living with an army, and it requires a permanent overhead organization which is not most economically employed. The most effective method of expansion is the conscription of all or certain selected men in the nation for a period of full-time military service varying from one to two years. This is the long-standing system of all European armies.

We should note here that irrespective of whether a nation has or has not conscription in peace, it cannot avoid conscription in war if it is required to make the maximum effort of which that nation is capable, and if it does not make this maximum effort it will be beaten in the field by a nation which does.

The disadvantage of conscription is its expense, and in democratic countries where the freedom of the individual is exalted, there is a strong dislike for any form of regimentation. Its advantages are the great power it provides both in war and politics, and the superior physique and health which military training can impress upon a race. Wisely used, this period of compulsory military service, can become a potent factor in the education of the nation.

Among these alternative methods of expansion the nations normally pay their money and they take their choice, but there has grown up in many countries in recent years a system of semi-military training which might suit India very well. This is the training of boys and youths. In India men develop at a younger age than in the West, and if India cared to organize her youth for

military training she would get them at a most impressionable age and when they are highly trainable. By concentrating on the training of her boys of 13 or 14 years of age she would be laying the foundations of a great power.

The main feature of all training, skilled or unskilled, which a nation must impart to its fighting forces is discipline.

## ESSENTIAL COMPONENTS OF A FIGHTING FORCE.

We have said that a fighting force must contain within it the seeds for its own growth. To illustrate this by one example we will say that an army must possess an armoured tracked component. Just what this will amount to in World War III, and whether it will turn up as a tank or an armoured rocket thrower or an amphibious carrier, no one can now say. But the acceptance of such a component postulates that in our peace planning we shall consider all the war potentialities of tracks and armour, and how far the factories making agricultural machines for the new India could be rapidly turned over to make the war machines we eventually select for mass production.

The essentials for any of the fighting services are first considered, and then the essentials for an Army, Navy, and Air Force separately, but we must not assume that our three Services, or the various arms of those Services, are immutable. At present our three Services, in *khaki* and two shades of blue, seem to have evolved because we have carried over from our kindergarten chemistry a division of the world into solids, liquids, and gases, which logically, but not too logically, leads to an Army, a Navy, and an Air Force. But now the infantry hurtle through the sky and drop out of it, and ships stand away from ships and send their aircraft to each other's destruction.

Similarly it has never been clear whether arms were differentiated by their weapons or the means of carrying them, as, for example, artillery (a gun soldier) and cavalry (a horse soldier), the latter having now baulked at both and being called armoured soldiers. But any confusion lies more in their names than in their roles. Such systems of division only become obstacles to progress when our minds are so bound to them that a gunner cannot observe his own shells because a man must not fly unless he is in the air force. Air transport can no more be a monopoly of an air fighting service than all ships are a monopoly of the navy or all railways a monopoly of the army.

#### COMPONENTS FOR ALL SERVICES.

The essentials for all services are leaders, men, morale, and communications.

The leaders of a nation's fighting forces must first be free from the capriciousness of its internal politics, and they must have traditions and ideals of service which far transcend political passions, and are unaffected by the passing of power from one party to another. Leaders can be trained to this freedom if they have any real love for their country, but no thinking soldier in India to-day can believe that the Indian higher schools and universities can find sufficient officers for the fighting services without radical change.

Undoubtedly the ideal conditions are provided by civil seats of learning upon which a nation can call in her extremity for leaders, knowing that the men those schools and colleges produce have some powers of leadership, and this is the system which runs in the west. But it does not yet run in the east, and although India must eventually arrive at this system, the process of doing so is

Digitized by GOOGLE

certain to take so long that, if the Indianized fighting services of the near future are to have any real efficiency and a good start, they cannot and dare not wait for the reorganization of the civil education services. It fittingly behaves the fighting services of India, who have so greatly increased the world's esteem of their country, to give the lead to India in the education of her officers.

We shall require three types of schools, one based on the boys' companies system and taking boys from the age of nine, one based on the Dartmouth system and taking boys from 13, and a third which combines the best of West Point and Woolwich for youths between 17 and 22. These schools should be designed to take twice the numbers which are required for the peace establishment of the fighting services. The other fifty per cent. go to the Civil Services, to industry, and the professions, thus forging that first necessary link between the Army, Navy, Air Force, and civil population.

The first role of these schools is training in character, and in those qualities which men require, not only in the Services, but in any walk of life, or national activity. At the age of 22 years the leaders will have been basically trained. Those who remain in the Services will then begin their specialized service education, and this must be far wider in scope than hitherto has been thought sufficient for an officer. The officer of the past has been very much out of touch with science, industry, and big business. On the other hand he does not need to spend ten or twelve years commanding a company. Periods of command must alternate with travel, with attachments to factories and other potential war activities as well as attachments to other services, and to other arms of his own service.

All officers must be provided with adequate courses for the study of war, both in command and staff work, and generally there should be a course of approximately one year's study in the rank of lieutenant (weapons and tactics), captain (staff work), and major (high command).

#### THE MEN.

Every war discloses that men can be trained far quicker in war than they are in fact trained in peace. The reasons are first that the money is available for the training, and second that we know the enemy we are to fight and the country we must fight on. These are conditions we can never completely overcome in peace, but they can certainly be partially overcome if we keep in mind the principle that the fighting services must constantly train for total war. If any generation of men believe that it is either peace in their time or at the worst war against a second-class enemy, then that generation will live to be astonished and suffer the severest reverses. The greater task will include any less task, and India should organize and train her fighting men on the assumption that she will have to fight a first-class Power anywhere from the Mediterranean eastwards to the Pacific.

If India has come well out of the war, the men who have done it are the Indian sepoys and sailors and airmen who have carried their colours to so many countries overseas. We are sanguine that India's fighting services can make as great a contribution in the years of peace which may follow the defeat of Japan, but only if the Services are regarded as being one of the best means of educating the youth of India in the higher qualities of character.

The Services should get their men as young as possible for pre-Service training, and this means the retention of the boys' companies, which have been so successful. With two years boys' training, and five years with the colours, the Services should aim not only at turning out a fighting man, but a man trained to citizenship and to a trade. It could be done in the time, but it means a breakaway from the endless repetition of the parts of a machine gun, the long afternoon hours lying on a charpoy, and the long annual periods of prewar leave.

## MORALE.

War is a matter of human nature, and is fought with human beings each of whom places as much value on his life as every member of the Assembly. Before a man will fight well he must have some loyalty to a country, corps, or cause which he believes worth fighting for. There is at present, among the many races and religions of this diverse continent, no strong overriding loyalty called India. There will be, later, and a united and independent India will foster it, but it may still be too large a loyalty to help a fighting man confronted by a savage enemy.

In Britain we have a Royal Navy, a Royal Air Force, but no Royal Army. The first two work well, and are often on occasions reduced to the narrower loyalty of a ship or a squadron. British Army loyalty runs by regiments, and it is expected of any battalion of the regiment that the men will carry the same high courage in 1945 as their ancestors did in 1745. The sacred traditions of their military successes are carefully preserved and handed down by each regiment through the centuries.

This is the same system which the British have introduced into the Indian Army. For flexibility of reinforcements in war the regimental system in any army is not a good one, since it means that reserves of one regiment cannot be sent to reinforce another regiment, whose immediate needs may be greater, without setting aside the carefully conditioned regimental spirit.

For military purposes the wider the loyalty is spread the easier is the organization of the Armed Forces. A good example of a very wide loyalty is found in the Australian forces, where every soldier wears the word Australia on his shoulder. But let no man think that this is a matter of mathematics. It is a matter of human nature and the deepest emotions, and any politician who started monkeying with a regiment's traditions would quickly find he had laid hands on the cub of a very angry tigress.

What matters is what the officers and men will fight for, and whatever that is, that we must have and keep. In the two World Wars we have seen traditions built up round divisions and armies, but between the wars we disbanded these formations and let the traditions die. Yet the divisional spirit might well be preserved and built up in peace, provided we insist on keeping our troops together for training, and refuse to use them as police dispersed all over India. If the peace army of India is organized, located, and trained as divisions, on a territorial basis, then a divisional tradition and loyalty could be built up.

There are many thoughtful men, who, having seen the interdependence of each of the three services on the others, advocate one combined fighting force all wearing the same uniform. This is a very logical conclusion, but if logic determined human behaviour there would be no war. War comes about from men's emotions, and is won or lost by their sentiments, their courage or their

cowardice. A commander's first consideration is the morale of his men, and if it improves the men's morale to wear a different coloured coat or a different badge then they must have them, and organization must accept all this sentiment as a condition of its problem.

#### COMMUNICATIONS.

All services have to communicate among themselves and with each other. We have passed through some painful periods in World War II in trying to learn each other's signal language, procedure, and system. If our Indian Signals undertook to supply the personnel for all three Services we would go a long way towards co-operation. Whether the signalmen wear different hats in the different Services does not matter, but if they are first centrally trained before specializing we should soon arrive at some conformity of practice.

#### COMPONENTS FOR AN ARMY.

It is not the intention to consider under these paragraphs all the various arms and ancillary troops of the three Services. If any are omitted, such as medical supply and transport units, it may be taken that the necessity for them requires no discussion. It is the intention to state the basic roles for which our forces should train and organize. The methods of carrying out their roles may change considerably with new inventions, but yet without altering the basic factor for which they have here been selected.

The first component for an army is infantry. Infantry fight on their feet and deal with all weapons which can be man-handled in battle. The manner in which they arrive on the battlefield, and it may be in a parachute, does not affect their role. At present a parachutist is properly an infantryman. Should it come about that a crew of them can be dropped from the air in a tank, then they will pass into the next sub-paragraph, but we must not confuse their fighting role with their means of transport.

The next component is armoured fighting units. Whatever the future may bring forth in armoured mobile weapons which can close with the enemy on land, it is the job of this component to train and fight with them. If it ever comes about that an armoured vehicle acquires the same mobility and ubiquity as a man on his feet then infantry may be replaced by the armoured corps, but at present there are no signs of it.

An artillery component is required dealing with all long range missile firing weapons which cannot be manhandled in close contact with the enemy.

An engineer component will undertake all the skilled engineer work required which the other arms have not the technical training to do for themselves.

Finally, and this is a departure from past practice, an army must have its own air transport component. There is no intention that the army should fight air battles, but the war has shown that transport aircraft, whether they are used for carrying supplies or casualties, for inter-communication, or for dropping or landing infantry, are required even more by the army than by the Air Force, and the army should therefore have them and fly them. When necessary the Air Force will protect them in the air as the army protects the Air Force on the ground. All army officers must learn to fly as part of their basic training,

With the above components, and with the ancillary services which ad or all require, there should be no land fighting role beyond the capacity of a army. If it turns out that the army of the future must be airborne, we have all the components necessary to make it so.

# COMPONENTS FOR A NAVY.

There are four basic components required for the Royal Indian Navy. They are:

- (a) Aircrast carriers, with aircrast piloted by naval officers for the destruction of enemy ships:
- (b) Surface craft for escort work:
- (c) Submarines;
- (d) Assault and landing craft for amphibious operations.

India should aim at building these ships and craft in her own shipparks. Only by doing so will she acquire the means of repairing or replacing them quickly in war.

# COMPONENTS FOR AN AIR FORCE.

The world has witnessed a vast experiment in war which may re-mode the shape of wars to come. The means by which Japan was forced inte surrender before many of her large armies were defeated indicates that India should put her main effort into her air forces, and her main factories under ground. But whatever the relative proportion of her three Services may be, and whatever aircraft jet propulsion or rockets may produce, the basic components for an air force would still seem to be day and night fighters, and day and night bombers, with air transport as an ancillary. If therefore India is limited to ten squadrons in peace, then, with a view to expansion in war, she should include these five components within her air force.

But if India is ever to become an air power she will require to make her own aircraft.

# Integration of the Services

So far the Services have been considered separately, but they do not fight separately, and even when the bombers fly off on a distant mission it must still be part of one plan.

Under the proposed system for training leaders, the officers of the Indian Navy, Army and Air Force will have been brought up together in the same schools and colleges. They will then separate for the specialized training of their own Service. They will come together at the combined staff college, and again later at the combined higher war school.

In the control of the fighting forces of India a Supreme Commander should work under the Defence Minister, if only because the combined Services require a continuity in their planning and training which is not provided by Ministers who change with political parties. The Supreme Commander then has his own fully integrated Headquarters through whom he deals with his Navy, Army and Air Commanders. There is in South East Asia and India Commands to day ample experience of this to provide us with a very good guide to the combined fighting services Headquarters which India requires 2

An important section of this Headquarters will be concerned only with research. Their role is to keep in close touch with science and industry, and to see that anything useful to the Services is not passed by without experiment and testing.

# THE COST OF FIGHTING SERVICES

The ingredients which the Services require for expansion have been considered only in quality, not in quantity, but even to include all these elements must mean a formidable bill for defence.

Let us turn to the opening paragraph of this paper. It is a quotation which the downfall of its author and the utter destruction of his country has proved to be very nearly right. The main theme of this paper has been to show that in organizing the fighting services of a country for expansion in war there are principles to be followed which the details of organization and demands for quantity may well obscure. The most important of these principles is that a nation must have a fighting spirit and a large number of leaders, otherwise its fighting forces are not worth expanding.

If the Services can give the whole nation the lead in this, then the money spent on them must be regarded as of educational benefit to the whole race, and not just as a part of the Defence budget. India's next fight for freedom will not be in the political arena. To keep that freedom through a total war she will have to fight in the field, in the air and on the sea, and in the deserts and jungles. Although she cannot provide herself in peace with all that she will require for war, she can see to it that all essential components for expansion have in peace some embryo from which they can grow.

A Defence Minister would always like to have from his expert advisers a plain statement of the forces required for the defence of the country, with a clear estimate of their cost. If the Defence Minister can tell his experts that the country expects to be attacked by a specified country in one year's time, the problem is a simple one, for the forces which would be adequate to deal effectively with a known threat can be calculated. But it is just this information which neither the experts, nor indeed the politicians, ever have.

With the elimination of Japan, and with a successful outcome of the United Nations Conferences, the defence problem before India would appear to fall into three parts:

(a) The disarming of the North West Frontier tribesmen, and the organization of India's police forces for frontier and internal security roles.

(b) The provision of a regional contingent available for offensive action under the United Nations.

(c) Basic provision for World War III should the United Nations fail to preserve world peace.

If the principles put forward in this paper are correct, then India should susure that the organization of her regional contingent is consistent with her total expansion for a third World War.

But the quality of a fighting force must come before its quantity. It is the morale of the men and the spirit of their leaders which are above all else of most importance.

Whatever size the egg may be, it must develop into a fighting cock with harp spurs.

R

#### SHORT LEAVE IN ENGLAND \*

By LIEUT.-Colonel E. H. P. Mallinson.

I hope this article will be useful to those fortunate officers about to take "Stiff" leave in England. I say this in spite of the excellent article on "Air Trooping" in the October number of the Journal, as my experiences of Air Transport Command differed considerably from those of the writer of that article, while I shall deal more fully with the actual leave in England.

I will pass quickly over the journey Home, which we did by B. O. A. C. in complete luxury and under most efficient arrangements. Suffice it to say that fifteen of us left Karachi early on a Monday morning and were deposited at Hern Airport on the following Wednesday afternoon about 2-30 p.m. We travelled in a Dakota fitted with most comfortable chairs, in which one could lie back and sleep, and which could be converted into "Mae Wests" without difficulty in an emergency.

We touched down for refreshments or meals at Shahjan (Persian Gulf) and Istres (near Marseilles) and spent nights at Cairo and Malta. All our kit was at our disposal during the whole journey, and the crew went out of their way to be courteous and helpful throughout the trip. I might say that at Hern everything possible was done for us, even to the extent of booking accommodation in London, which was no easy matter as we arrived on V. J. Day. There was no trouble with the Customs and we travelled up to London in a special Pullman train feeling "God's in his heaven and all's right with the world."

Arriving on V. J. Day on first sight looked a good thing. But in fact it was far from it. Those of us who were spending the night in London, as I was, had a far from joyful reception. B. O. A. C. had with great difficulty found beds for us, all in different hotels, and on arrival at Victoria we had the greatest difficulty in getting transport to take us to our hotels. The few taxis that appeared were snapped up before they reached the station, and we looked like being stranded for the night. However, we eventually persuaded the R. T. O. to produce a truck, which deposited three of us and our kit at our respective hotels. I seized the opportunity to get the R. A. S. C. driver—who, incidentally, had been on the job since 6 a.m.—to take me to Waterloo next morning.

Having at last reached my hotel, I had a bath and changed, and then walked into the dining-room, anticipating the delight of my first dinner in a London hotel after 12 years. Nothing doing. It was just 9 p.m., the closing time for dinner, the waiter was busy cleaning up—and no doubt anxious to celebrate victory—and I couldn't get a bite. So dinnerless and clad in battle dress and a bush hat (having come straight from Burma I had nothing else)—I decided to have a look at Piccadilly.

<sup>\*</sup> Having recounted our own experience of "Air Trooping" in the October, 1945, issue of this Journal it is only fair to give space to the experiences of others, and we are accordingly publishing this and the following article, in order that members may read for themselves how experiences vary. Both these contributions are extremely interesting, and, like our own, mainly factual.—Ed., U. S. I. "Journal."

My hotel was near Sloane Square and I jumped a bus, which took me as far as Hyde Park Corner. I had to get out and walk here, as no traffic could move in Piccadilly. A madly excited mob, mostly arm-in-arm, was all that could be seen of Piccadilly, and the odd stray car that tried to get up or down had a rough time of it. Unfortunately I couldn't produce the necessary hilarious mood everybody else seemed to be in. No doubt the fact that I had left Malta at 5 a.m. that day, and had an empty tummy—empty of food and drink—had something to do with it. Moreover, being 6'-4½" I felt uncomfortably conspicious in my battle dress and bush hat.

However, I determined to see it through and joined the throng making for Piccadilly Circus. Before I got there I was biffed on the head by a large flag and embraced violently by a huge Amazon. This was more like it I thought, but I was now-almost at the Circus and unable to make any headway towards my new-found admirer, who was quickly swallowed up in the crowd. In Piccadilly Circus it was almost impossible to move, and after several near misses from the British equivalent to marriage bombs I fought my way out, and eventually reached the comparative peace of the Green Park.

Here quieter and more intimate forms of celebration were in progress, and after catching a glimpse of the glow from flood-lit Buckingham Palace I decided to make off in that direction along Constitution Hill. But there was such a tidal wave of humanity streaming the opposite way—the King and Queen having just made their final appearance on the balcony—that I gave up the unequal contest and made for home. By this time all buses had long since disappeared so I walked all the way back to my hotel.

Next morning I got a shock to find my bill for bed and breakfast was 25s. However, my readers will be relieved to know that this was the exception rather than the rule. The normal charge is about 10/6. Hotel accommodation is by no means easy to come by in London. If you wire or phone to several hotels you invariably get a "full-up" reply couched, of course, in most polite language. But I heard of many cases of officers getting accommodation by going to the hotel and hanging about until one could get the private ear of the Reception clerk or see the Manager himself.

I went up to London myself later with my boy without having made any definite arrangements about accommodation. At Waterloo an efficient lady at the Information Bureau got me a double room at the Lonsdale Hotel, Montague St., Russel Sq. I can recommend this hotel. It is bang in the middle of London and yet in a quiet neighbourhood. Buses are handy, in St. Russell Sq. Underground Station is five minutes walk away, and taxis are usually obtainable. Only bed and breakfast is provided—as in the case of most small hotels—at a charge of 10/6, but there are two good eating places, where I never had to queue, a few minutes walk from the hotel. Owing to linen and laundry difficulties this and most hotels prefer clients who stay for three or four nights rather than only one, but the Lonsdale Hotel will usually stretch a point here, while it caters chiefly for military officers.

Good eating places are not difficult to find in London, where you can get a decent meal at a reasonable price, without having to queue; provided, of course, you avoid the popular Lyons or other such establishments. Buses are frequent, and their "Clippies" usually efficient and helpful; but you can't often ask a policeman which bus to take or anything else, as there are very few of these excellent gentlemen about. The Underground is profusely posted with clear

Digitized by GOOGLE

directions, which are practically fool-proof, though a pocket map of the Underground railway system is a very useful thing to have with you.

So much for London and a dashed good place it still is.

As regards living in England, the country has great advantages over the town. A family of three or more living in the country has no difficulty at all with rations. In Devonshire, where I was living with my family, we always had plenty to eat and ample variety, too. Milk, as much as we wanted, was brought daily to the house, the local baker also called daily with bread and buns, while the grocer brought our requirements for a week every Saturday. Fish was sent by bus once a week from Ilfracombe 3 miles away, and meat could be obtained in the village once a week. When we went into Ilfracombe to do other shopping we never had to stand in a queue. I cannot vouch for this in all provincial towns; in fact, I know that in Winchester queueing was the order of the day, especially at fish shops.

The housewife's lot, however, even in the country, is not a happy one. We were luckier than most in having an efficient woman to come in daily, cook two meals and keep the house clean, but her wage was £2-10 a week and she lived out. All the same, there was tea and supper for five and plenty of washing-up to be done apart from various daily chores which the daily woman hadn't time to do in her 3—4 hours. But most housewives, in country or town, spend a great deal of their time in the kitchen and with their noses in the sink; and after life in India this is far from pleasant. I know what my wife thought about it anyway, when the daily woman took a week off (these people invariably "take" holidays without bothering to ask).

On one occasion when my boy and I came back from a jaunt in London a day before we were expected, our reception was far from cordial. My wife was in the kitchen, where she had been most of the day and the greeting we got was—"Why on earth have you come back to-day? That means two more suppers to cook, not to mention two more breakfasts to-morrow, even if I can find the food." I might mention that it is important with the rationing system, to know exactly how many mouths are to be fed each day. Needless to say, we had an excellent supper and a good breakfast next morning. Such are our women. All the same we were not a bit popular.

Clothing is still difficult to get at Home and rationing severe. However, all officers on "Stiff" leave from India get 130 coupons, which should be ample for all requirements. There are only about 15 "Special" coupons, amongst the 130, which are earmarked for specific mufti clothing such as grey flannel trousers, mufti shirts, collars, ties, sports coats, etc. But you can present the other 115 coupons for all sorts of clothing besides uniform, such as raincoats, cardigans, pyjamas, underclothing, etc.

You can't get clothes made in a hurry; four or five weeks being required for a sports coat or rain coat, and about three months for a suit. However, if you are of normal size most things can be obtained "off the peg," and Moses Moss can supply almost anything and anybody with all kinds of uniform. On reporting your arrival in the U. K. to the India Office all ration-books and clothing coupons will be forwarded to you. It is not essential to report to the India Office in person, though a good thing to do on your first visit to London.

It is interesting to notice how well-fed and well-clothed the people in England look, in spite of the rationing system. But actually the rationing is the reason for this high standard. The food ration provides a well-balanced

and nourishing diet, far more beneficial than the housewife would normally provide for herself and her family, while military clothing is of good material and well-cut. It is only human to use up all the coupons issued, otherwise you feel you aren't getting your money's worth. Hence a well-fed and well-clothed people in spite of all they've been through.

Travelling now in England is by no means luxurious, but it is not at all bad. All officers can travel 1st or 3rd class on half fare; and, if they get the necessary form, their families can do the same. It is advisable to be at the station at least 40 minutes before any main line train is due to start in order to get a decent seat; but if week-ends are avoided there is little discomfort travelling by train.

Cars are not easy to get and petrol is still strictly rationed. Officers I did hear of who had obtained cars (usually second-hand) had friends in the trade or were lucky enough to find somebody living near them who wanted to dispose of a car.

The house problem is the very devil. Having booked rooms in Devonshire for April, my wife was unavoidably delayed in India and didn't arrive in England till May. She sent a cable to the landlady informing her of this delay. When she arrived with two children at her destination in Devon, the landlady said she hadn't had the cable, and had let the rooms. My family was thus stranded, but very luckily managed to find a large bungalow not far off which was adequate for the summer. An Indian Army Colonel's wife with five children was also stranded with nowhere to live, and my wife managed to squeeze them into the bungalow too.

Houses with five or six rooms stand at prohibitive prices; even in remote N. Devon they were being sold for £4,000 and £5,000. Rents are equally high, owners of similar houses asking £6 a week, and getting it, so great is the demand. This house difficulty is undoubtedly the biggest problem confronting the family man going on "Stiff" leave, and he will be well advised to get in touch with a friend or relative at home as soon as possible to do what he or she can on his behalf.

There are houses to be bought at reasonable prices, as I can testify, having personally been lucky enough to buy one at the very end of my leave, but they are few and far between. Incidentally, if one does happen to come your way it is worth knowing that, if you find a Bank to lend you the money you don't pay Income-Tax on the money the Bank advances you. So instead of paying a fat and confortable landlady an exorbitant rent you pay the Bank instead and own the house at the end of it. But you have got to find the house first.

Now for the journey back to India.

Towards the end of my leave I visited the India Office and was told that I could bank on getting 10 days or so over my 61 days. This, of course, was most useful and pleasing information, and enabled me to pay a visit to Scotland after my 61 days were up. When I'd had about 70 days I was ordered to report in London at a definite place and definite time "ready to proceed by air". Most officers actually took that to mean that they would be off that day and made arrangements accordingly.

All the officers I saw arrived with their complete kit at some inconvenience (it happened to be a Sunday) and had said good-bye to their wives and families. But as far as I know not one officer went off that day, and after filling in umpteen

forms and being medically examined we were told to report again on the following Tuesday or Wednesday. This suited my book as I was able to go off with my wife, who had fortunately come to see me off, and buy a house. But some officers had come a long way and had to make the best of the accommodation on the premises, when they might have had three more days with their families.

On the following Wednesday, not long after reporting, we were packed with our kit into M. T. and transported to Bourn Airport near Cambridge. Here we spent a reasonable night in R. A. F. barracks, thirteen to a room, with nothing worse to grouse about than cold water for washing and shaving, and breakfast at 07.45 hours.

Next morning we were whisked off to Tempsford airfield where we were packed with our kit (so we all hoped) into a Liberator, and fitted with Mae Wests. Crammed with 25 others into a Liberator Bomber is not an ideal form of travel especially for those cooped up in the belly of the machine or those up aloft unable to stand up without banging their heads on the roof. However, the "kite" was steady and the crew efficient, and in 7 hours or so we had touched down at Castel Benito in Tripolitania. We had a comfortable night here, four to a tent, and even enjoyed the luxury of hot water in the morning.

Off next day to Lydda in Palestine, where we arrived after dark at about 2000 hours. Six to a tent here, beds with sheets and blankets, but no pillows. We were told that we would be there for 48 hours at least, and could visit Tel-Aviv and Jerusalem, if we wished, the following 2 days, transport arrangements being laid on. This is a well-run camp. A variety of reading matter is provided, one can write letters in comfort, there is a swimming pool, and as already mentioned, efficient arrangements are made for visits to Jerusalem and Tel-Aviv. The day after our arrival we spent pleasantly enough according to our tastes and there was no sort of warning, not even a rumour, that we should be moving before the evening of the next day. In fact the 48 hours stay was taken as read.

But our luck was out. At 0300 hours next morning we were rudely awakened by an N.C.O. of the camp staff and told that we had to get ourselves and our kit into lorries waiting by the Mess within 15 minutes, and that there was no time to wash or shave. This was a bit sudden. However, it had to be done and certain officers cursed themselves for having more kit than they could carry to the M. T. in one journey; poetic justice no doubt, as they obviously had a good deal more than their 65 lbs. allowance.

We were given a scratch meal before leaving the camp, and then transported to the airfield. Here neither the plane nor the crew were ready, and we hung about for hours, with difficulty restraining our feelings at having been turned summarily out of bed at an unearthly hour for no apparent reason. Two officers had stayed overnight in Jerusalem and were left behind, and several officers had sent clothes to the *dhobi* the day after arrival at Lydda, which of course, they never saw again.

Incidentally at Lydda five unlucky officers found that all their kit, other than what they were carrying with them, was missing and nobody knew anything about it. It had been collected at Bourn with all the officers kit, but somehow had not been put on the plane. We eventually became airborne about 0830 hours, and after an uneventful and monotonous journey of 10 hours reached Karachi about 2130 hours I. S. T.

After dumping our kit in one truck and ourselves in another we were driven to a camp, where we were issued with sheets and blankets and allotted a

berth in a colossal dormitory which could accommodate 120 officers in bunks arranged in tiers of 3. We had a locker for our kit, and if you don't mind stepping on other people's faces when climbing into bed, or having your own stepped upon, perhaps twice, everything was hunky-dory.

In this camp the feeding arrangements were communal. This entailed officers queueing up with the troops, sometimes for about half an hour, grasping a plate, knife, fork and spoon and receiving a dollop of spam and baked beans in due rotation. Whether it is a good thing for officers up to the rank of Lt.-Colonel to scramble for their food in this fashion with the troops is to my mind very doubtful. Perhaps there is no harm done over a few days in a transit camp, or perhaps it is the future policy of the new Labour Secretary of State for War. Anyhow, it was not popular with the officers in the camp, who for the most part had their meals in the canteen, a well-run show, at their own expense.

At this camp we were given posting orders and despatched by air or rail to our final destinations within three or four days. There was no sign of the missing kit, and as some of the officers concerned had only thick battle dress or serge uniform they had to exist in extreme discomfort or get a local durzi to make them some cool clothing. Most of them had decided on the latter when their kit suddenly turned up, having come on another plane. One of the officers had already gone off to Delhi and let's hope his kit eventually reached him.

So ended our journey under the auspices of Air Transport Command. Perhaps we were unlucky, and judging from the article in the October number of the Journal, we must have been. But with the number of bodies passing through their hands and with the very limited staff at their disposal, not to mention a World War only just "off", the authorities have a tremendous job to contend with. Anyway, I hope this article will give intending "Stiff" walas some idea of what to be prepared for, both en route and at Home, and I hope this journey of mine won't put them off.

For my part I'm hoping to do it again this year on whatever leave I can get.

## DIARY OF A "STIFF"

By Lt.-Col., G.L.W. Armstrong.

S O here it was at last—the Move Order which would take me home on leave to the U.K. after seven years in the East.

The signal arrived on Monday morning, and after four breathless days of packing and completion of documents, Friday morning saw me on the way to catch a 'plane'. Bad weather intervened, however, and it wasn't until the following Wednesday morning that I was airborne from Colombo. Here my diary takes over......

7 November.—Away at last! Airborne over Colombo at 7.15 a.m. and landed at Karachi in time for tea....reception and organisation at Mauripur transit Camp good—even to a hot meal at 6-30 p.m. before we returned to the airfield to take off again at 8 p.m.



8 November.—Landed at Shaiba 2 a.m. for a 2 hour halt; bitterly cold, and bacon, chips and hot tea in the Station Buffet most welcome. A couple of locals selling cheap silverware by candlelight outside the hut—not much sign of trade.

Another uneventful hop in our comfortable (if noisy) York and we were in CAIRO in time for breakfast at 9 a.m. excellent breakfast in the R.A.F. buffet on the airfield...........

Off again at noon—first sight of the Pyramids which gave the impression of resting on clouds—flight across N. Africa most interesting—thousands of wheel tracks—occasional entrenchments and groups of derelict vehicles—Benghazi apparently deserted—pleasant flight over the sea to Malta. . .

First impression of Malta: a large airfield with houses between the runways. As we came in to land it became apparent that much of the bomb damage had still not been cleared up or repaired . . . . touched down at Luga airfield 4 p.m. . . . . . reception arrangements were excellent and we were soon dealing with a large tea in the R. A. F. Transit Mess. It was a pleasant change to find beer unlimited and Scotch sold freely over the bar. . . . dragged out of bed twice to be told finally that I had been unloaded off the aircraft to make room for more petrol—admiring R. A. F. Corporal listened with awe to my language!

9th November.—Occupied myself with stroll around town of Valetta (capital of Malta) . . . much bomb damage; many idle men hanging about the streets. Shops full (clothes mostly second-hand). Main impression was of a large fortress overlooking and guarding the Naval Base.

10th November.—At last! Just as I thought that I would be in Malta for ever, I was told of a seat on a York freight 'plane leaving for the U. K., and by 3 p.m. we were airborns. Mattresses were provided for the passengers, making us much more comfortable than in the seats provided in passenger 'planes . . . A quiet flight, and we touched down at Lyneham (Wilts) at 11-30 p.m. . . . reception arrangements once more excellent and after "char and wads" at the taxpayers' expense on the airfield, we were taken by bus to Bowood House, the R. A. F. Transport Command Guest House. . . hot meal ready for us on arrival there, and then to bed.

11th November.—Up again at 6-45 a.m. for breakfast before embussing for London at 8 a.m. . . . arrived Victoria 11-15 a.m. and caught 11-30 a.m. train from Waterloo to Bournemouth, arriving there just before 3 p.m."

Perhaps the first impressions of a homecomer who has never seen Britain in wartime may be of interest.

Bournemouth is, on the whole, unchanged. There are, of course, notable gaps—The Metropole Hotel, Beales, Woolworths, and Wests' Cinema are gone: the result of uninvited visits by the German Air Force. The streets were full of the Royal Canadian Air Force and the Royal Army Pay Corps. Residents may also be seen if one looks closely. The shops are full, but mostly of trinkets and knick-knacks at high prices—many of the things one wants are still unobtainable. Queues form outside shoe shops before 8 a.m. and the small daily quota of shoes is soon disposed of. Supplies of beer are adequate (except for the thirstiest!), but spirits and wines are almost unobtainable.

Other points which have caught the eye include the smartness of the average soldier when dressed in the recently approved collar and tie with battle-dress, the utter sloppiness of the "cowpat" beret, the small value of one's pound note, the number of soldiers to be seen wearing bush hats, 14th Army flashes and other formation signs familiar in India and S. E. A. C. (Incidentally, is the

"S. E. A. C." shoulder title, worn by so many soldiers on their return to the

U. K., officially authorised?).

The returned prisoners and internees from the Far East whom one has met all seem to be making wonderful recoveries—they have put on weight extraordinarily fast, and are most cheerful. Wherever one goes at the moment, one sees houses decorated with flags and banners reading: "Welcome Home John from S.E.A.C." or similar inscriptions. The recently returned troops of 2 Division have had a grand reception, and the familiar "crossed keys" are seen frequently. I saw one hopeful in Boscombe the other day with a piece of mistletoe stuck in his bush hat!

A point which all Lt. Cols or below coming home on leave should note is that they can obtain through Service channels, for their own or their parents' cars, extra petrol for 300 miles for each month of leave.

London has some first class shows running, and there is ample opportunity for dining, wining, and dancing (at a price!). Hotels are crowded, but usually find room for Servicemen, and the taxi problem now is comparatively easy.

Highlights of my trip to town:

Asking a policeman the quickest way to the Palladium. Answer:

"I'm sorry—I don't know"!

Being offered a bottle of hock for 6 guineas.

To sum up, it was a grand trip home, I'm having a first-class leave, and those pessimists who say England is not worth coming on leave to, are talking through their hats!

P.S.—Information which is unobtainable before leaving India or S.E.A.C.

"How to get a ration card."

The answer: From the India Office (not as I did, through my local food office—that's cheating!).

#### ANOTHER VIEW OF HOME.

The wife of one of our members who has recently gone home writes:

"We had a very good trip home on the "Strathaird." It was extremely comfortable. We had a single berth cabin converted to ourselves. The stewards and stewardesses were very helpful, and the food was excellent.

"England—well, it is quite wonderful!! Rations are definitely short, and in consequence everyone is on rather a starchy diet and fills up the corners with cakes, buns, potatoes, bread, etc. We are, of course, right in the heart of the country now, and it is easy to gets eggs, milk cream and fuel, but people in the suburbs of large towns have a difficult time.

"We went up to London for a day after our arrival, and it is just the same and at first glance does not seem so battered, but, of course, one soon realises there are chunks missing. It is incredibly shabby, and people wear any old clothes, but they are wonderfully polite in the shops, on buses and tubes, and even taxi drivers are cheerful (when you manage to get one). Porters again are a little short, but we have always managed to get one and they were all cheerful and obliging. Of course, down here in the country everyone is delightful, and calls out "good morning' or 'evening' as the case may be.

"The servant problem is serious, but there are more available now, and in a year things should ease. Most people have 'housemaid's hands' due to six years of household drudgery. I think one can get servants now if you can offer them a labour saving house near a town for cinemas, etc. and are prepared to pay good wages."

## SINEWS OF WAR AND ALL THAT

By LIEUTENANT-GENERAL K. M. LOCH, C.B., M.C.\*

Master-General of the Ordnance in India.

MANY years ago Shakespeare came to the conclusion that "all the world is a stage." This thought seems a good line of approach to my subject. Can we not appositely compare a campaign to a stage production or series of productions each calling for rehearsal, direction, a suitable cast, stage managementship, and last, but by no means least, adequate provision of properties? As far as we soldiers are concerned, our production and direction is an affair of the Commanders and General Staff, our cast of the Adjutant-General, our stage managementship of the Quarter Master-General, whilst the property man is the Master-General of the Ordnance.

Experience suggests, however, that when setting about staging our military play we may well be confronted with one or all of the following somewhat disconcerting conditions:

First.—The syndicate backing our venture, namely, the Government, may be a little vague as to the nature and scope of the production they require, and for that matter when and where they propose we should open—not necessarily their fault but nevertheless a bit tiresome for the company.

Secondly.—When the curtain eventually goes up the actors find themselves in quite a different play to the one they have been rehearsing.

Thirdly.—When Act I has gone a bit wrong and the audience are clearly somewhat restive, the actors call for entirely new properties to sustain Act II.

Most of you in the last few years have known what it is to find yourselves on a strange stage and in strange roles, but with your admirable versatility you are now emerging successfully from your six years' contract. A lot of you have been stage managers and known the anxieties of getting your company to the right place, of shifting the scenery and generally of having to cope with the vagaries of circumstances and sometimes perhaps even with a somewhat temperamental cast. A few of you, in fact only a relatively limited number, have been in the property business—a business which in modern war has greater significance than is usually realised.

We have got to get the right properties—without them our final curtain can only be a swift and tragic one. To ensure them in adequate quantities and at the right time is a problem which bears directly on nearly every activity of a modern State, and cuts deep into the economic blood stream of a nation.

In our lifetime, in fact within the last 30 years, the Great Democracies have twice had to fight for their very existence. On both occasions success has been achieved with but little to spare, and only after a prodigal expenditure of lives and treasure. Common to both these experiences has been the necessity for staving off defeat until our technical skill and industrial effort could be fully brought

<sup>\*</sup>In a lecture.

to bear in support of the Defence Services. It is thus of prime interest to study this problem of gearing up technology and industry to the war effort, whilst events are fresh in our memory.

Our enemies, more particularly Germany, on both occasions have started the campaign with a preponderance of industrial war potential, built up for the occasion, and also a fair measure of technical initiative—by initiative I mean, of course, superiority, which guarantees freedom of action. Over a not inconsiderable field we held the initiative in technical matters, despite our unpreparedness in other directions. Our trouble was not having the means to translate this advantage into large-scale production before the need arose.

Our enemies contemplated a short war. Once this hypothesis was shown to be false, they were faced with a decline in their comparative superiority in the production field, and as events turned out, with an almost complete loss of technical initiative, a fact brought into shrill emphasis by that remarkable development, the atomic bomb.

We should not, however, leave the matter at that, merely attributing our enemies' discomfiture to the argument that given time to develop, the preponderance of Allied war potential was bound to prevail. There is more to it than this, and we should take gratefully into account the fact that our enemies' undoing was certainly hastened in a large measure by a rigidity of outlook and a consistent failure to establish what our psychological experts call the correct group relationships between the fighting man, the scientist, the industrialist, not to mention the economist.

Why our enemies failed in this respect would go far to illustrate my views, at least in terms of what we should avoid. Suffice it to point out some of the villains of the piece: a General Staff living in a world of 1914-18, once the period of initial success was over, and above all isolationists to everything outside their immediate purview; Marshal Goering, with all the glamour of head of the Luftwaffe—how lucky for us it was merely a head, but not a brain! Again, Keitel, who everyone in Germany seemed to agree was a mere post office of Hitler, but one calculated to ensure the wrong delivery of the letters. A hide-bound bureaucracy, hard-working and sincere enough, but with an arrogance towards anyone outside their own caste. Then a crowd of super-industrialists, scientists and what not, who were rarely if ever allowed the speaking part which their importance in the drama justified—at least not until too late.

Behind this all, the almost pathetic figure of Hitler, who seemed to have sensed what was wrong but could not put it right, despite his brilliant henchman Reichsminister Speer. No satisfactory cohesion in those vital spheres links user, scientist, technician, industrialist, etc., whereby alone the economy of a country can be harnessed effectively to the war effort. Here is the stuff of those murky Wagnerian dramas, so dear to the German. To quote a very old saying "He whom the gods wish to destroy, to him they first send madness." Let us be thankful for this madness, for even with it the forces arrayed against us were formidable enough.

With regard to ourselves, it is a truism that we can never hope to be so fully prepared for war at its outset as our enemies, with their free acceptance of war as an instrument of policy, to be applied by them in a predetermined manner. We must perforce, rely on our powers of rapid expansion, and in so far as we cannot be physically prepared to the extent we would like, we must at least ensure the necessary machinery and organisation to expand with the greatest rapidity



possible. This is doubly so when development in the air and so on have rendered it feasible for an enemy to interfere with such expansion to an ever-increasing degree. More than ever the technical initiative must be ours.

A study of the last two campaigns indicates that this co-ordinating machinery—soldier, scientist, industrialist and economist—was by no means perfect on either side. Where we had the advantage, despite being late starters, was that we were prepared to adjust our ideas as circumstances dictated. Not so our enemies. Nevertheless, there is no cause for complacency—we did not make upthe lost ground as soon as we might have, and thereby the balance might well have been tilted against us.

In the stress of war it is difficult to affect changes of organisation smoothly and expeditiously. It follows that only in the comparative leisure of peace can we sow in a manner to guarantee a bumper harvest. As regards our subject of "properties" the seed we must sow is not on military ground alone—it must take root over the wider field of Government as a whole. That is our problem—inadequately solved in the past, and may well be so again in the future, unless we clear our minds as to the issues involved and their ramifications.

Napoleon had a dictum to the effect that "one manoeuvres only round a fixed point" meaning by fixed point a secure base. This dictum is as true to-day as it was over a century ago, only that now with the more comprehensive nature of war this base is not a purely military affair. It is the national economy in its widest sense. That is what we must ensure—the economic front. It follows that our first task must be to obtain a clear view of what is necessary to sustain this economic front—raw materials, industry, transportation, finance and so on. Of course, in any case we want an intimate knowledge of all these matters for purposes of normal peacetime government, but the problem in war is to know how far we can extend these activities whilst ensuring the minimum requirements of the civil economy. The measure of this possible extension is a direct measure of our possible war potential.

Accepting this argument, how do we assess all these factors? Firstly, as to the minimum required over the whole field of activities in order to sustain the civil economy. Once this essential minimum for the civil economy has been determined—no easy matter—the next step is to see what remains for our war effort. This involves not only a knowledge of our resources in any particular field, but the problem of converting them to the needs peculiar to war.

Had we, or for that matter anyone else, on the side of the Allies, fully adequate machinery for obtaining all the necessary data and for utilizing it smoothly and expeditiously in the furtherance of our cause? On the whole I think not. I merely want to state facts as I see them. To quote one instance in my own experience. Some years before the war it was necessary to plan the Air Defences of Great Britain in detail—an essential part of the project being to know exactly what were the vital points to defend.

There were clearly a diversity of these points. They lay in many fields, but mostly related to sustaining the economic life of the country. A comprehensive review over transportation, production, communications, etc., had to be made and as things turned out, it meant in practice a start almost ab initio. No full survey existed, nor had the necessity for it been realised. Out of this review emerged a great deal of matter pertinent to my argument, for instance, in some cases over-concentration of vital industry, i.e., too many eggs in one basket and in others hardly an egg at all.

What sort of machinery do we want for all this?

Our first requisite—and I am convinced this goes for peace as well as war—is for a Government to have adequate and up-to-date statistical data to see where it stands over the whole field of its economy. In peace this should enable the Government to see how best to plan general progress. In war and preparing for it, we want to assess what is essential to sustain the civil economy and what portion of our resources can be devoted to Services requirements. From this initial conception clearly arises the need for being able to interpret this statistical data where necessary into swift action, and again implicit in this is co-ordinated as opposed to unilateral action.

Arising from the above are the more specialized requirements of war in relation to the Services. This calls for a planning staff beyond the usual conception of planning this or that operation. It must constantly review the whole field of economics in the light of the possibility of war. This is no war-mongering outlook, but merely common prudence, until such time as war is eliminated from human affairs. Such reviews must cover supplies of raw material, production capacity, transportation, etc., and it is up to these planning staffs to draw attention to gaps in our economy wherever they may be. Experience shows that sometimes these gaps lie in most unexpected places. Be that as it may, this form of planning must in part be a Services concern, since they alone know what is required for the military conduct of the war. However, purely Service representation in these matters will by no means suffice—too much is involved.

The broad principle which I suggest emerges from this argument is that in future we want on one hand a civil administration with a greater general knowledge of the nature of war, and on the other Service personnel with a more highly developed sense of the economics of war. In fact, the nature and scope of modern war dictate that the civilian and soldier should think more and more in harmony on such matters and hence speak the same language.

\* \* \* \* \* \* \*

Granted that we have our basic machinery for the conduct of war, how are we going to make use of it for the immediate requirements of the Services? To revert to our stage analogy, what properties do our actors want, and how do they propose getting their dramatic effects—sword, dagger, poison, pistol, bomb or what not?

We are all rightly told as soldiers to study the principles of war, which are set out in many a military classic. We must, on the one hand, contrive to produce equipments with the maximum lethal effect, and, on the other, with the maximum protective qualities—these not against bullets alone but against disease, heat, cold, discomfort and all other causes of despondency. This is where the scientist and the technologist come in, as servants of the property man, who is in turn the devoted servant of the players—or should be.

What is the problem? The General Staff or equivalent staffs of the other Services, state a requirement designed to enable the troops—to quote Ravelais—"to give blows without receiving them." At this stage it is merely a requirement set out in the most general terms—for instance, a weapon which is to have this or that limits of range and this or that mobility. Even so, it is not always a simple matter. I remember a rather harassed technical expert on guns exclaiming, "As I see it, what is wanted by the General Staff is the mobility of a fire brigade and the broadside of the 'Lord Nelson',"—a particularly improbable aspect of technical wedlock. All we property men ask is that the requirement

should not be "crying for the moon" or that the expected period of gestation for the idea should be reasonably adequate—do not ask for something new by next Monday. That is all that is necessary, and a good property man, suitably supported by his technical "brains trust," can then carry on to advantage.

The ball is now in the property man's court. He has got to do something about it, but what? Positive action is asked for. At this stage he must call in the Services technologist. In the Services we require scientists for three main reasons and all of these are related to research, and all very necessary to our military health.

Firstly, our operational staffs must be kept in touch with all that scientific development can offer to the solution of the military problem. It may well be that research may be directed towards a cure for, say, cancer, and from it may emerge something of application to our military needs. As soldiers we may not have the highest ethical role, but it is our concern and bounden duty to see whether research over the whole field of science, no matter where it is, does not offer something which will enable us better to give blows without receiving them.

Secondly, a General Staff requirement may call for specialist knowledge in certain directions, which our Services technologist is unlikely to have. It may involve some research, for which the Services have not the resources. An example of this is the V2—the long-range rocket. Both the type of fuel to be used and its direction during flight, to name but two essential ingredients in the solution, called for highly-specialised scientific knowledge and research.

Thirdly, we want the scientist or the trained scientific mind in order to study what I call "behaviour". By this I mean an analysis of happenings over the whole field of military activities, whereby past experience can be projected into future action of an appropriate type. From our search into the past and present we must make military events cast their shadows before.

In short, in our military organisations the scientist has come to stay, and rightly so. His representation is essential to our military welfare. His full value in a military organisation, however, can be developed only if he is also represented over the whole field of government, and in a manner whereby scientific development and all it stands for permeates the whole of the State and in a co-ordinated manner.

The Services technologist is merely an officer with a high measure of technical training, directed towards design and development of military equipment and stores. His is the role of designing the properties—guns, tanks, clothing, etc., to satisfy the requirements of the user. In the future, whilst the regimental and staff officers must have an expert knowledge of warfare and a greater general knowledge than heretofore of matters technical, our technical officers must have a thorough and expert knowledge of matters technical and also an increased general knowledge of warfare. This is essential, as we do not want a generation of technical "back room boys," who know nothing of the brave display in the shop window.

Let me develop this theme by tracing out what really happens between the expression of a requirement by the General Staff and its technical translation into an equipment or what not in the hands of the troops. Of course, there must be interplay of ideas all along the line—user, scientist, technologist, manufacturer, etc., but to demonstrate my point I will divide the activities, somewhat unreally, into rigid compartments.

The "user," i.e., the General Staff wants, let us say, a means for destroying a strong point in jungle conditions. The technologist, seizing on to the idea, suggests an answer in terms of say, a recoilless gun or a rocket with appropriate mobility. After mutual consultation—user, scientist, technologist—there is general agreement that the answer is a particular type of gun mounted on a jeep. The technical solution must be one in which the factor of ease of production has been given due emphasis. It is no good suggesting a "Rolls Royce" solution, when all that is available is some bits of old iron and the village black-smith. Any major development, even in war when all technical and industrial talent can be harnessed to the war effort, is and must be a lengthy business—not a matter of weeks, even of months, but more likely of years.

It wants considerable strength of character on the part of the technical authorities to resist the natural impatience of the user. But it is the height of folly to issue to the troops an imperfect design of equipment wanting in essential qualities. "Give a dog a bad name"—once that happens you will never persuade the "user" world that a new equipment is not so bad after all. Bad equipment or what passes for it is the negation of morale. This fact all gives emphasis to the principle that we plan technically to best advantage in the relatively leisurely times of peace, and we should be given every facility to do so—otherwise we lose the technical initiative. In future warfare we may well have no opportunity to recover from initial technical shortcomings.

To revert to our main argument. The technologist is now well away. The next stage, after a spot of bother on the drawing board and elsewhere is the construction of a few pilot models. These then undergo "user" and "technical" trials, to see if the equipment is what is wanted. We will assume that after relatively minor modifications we have got the answer agreed to by both parties. At long last we have got a winner, or we think we have, and we decide to equip our forces with what we have evolved. Industry grinds out the hundreds of thousands required and the troops get the new weapon. If that were all and perfection had been reached there would never be the need for Mark II equipment. We have been running a difficult race—we have not got to the winning post yet. When we have a large clientele of users they will certainly raise objections to our solution and in certain conditions technical disabilities may be revealed despite our previous trials. This is only what is to be expected.

Our technical officers must watch the behaviour of the new toy in the field. The user, being as a rule a simple soul, voices his discontent in honest Anglo-Saxon adjectives. Whilst these serve as an indication that something is wrong, they rarely suggest a cure. For this we have to look elsewhere and that "elsewhere" is to our repair organisation. They know how the shoe pinches—a workshop cluttered up with broken springs and what not. Herein lies their value in this argument; they can both diagnose a technical fault and as often as not suggest a cure—no one else can so readily do so. To me it seems obvious that our repair organisations are a logical component of all those technical activities, which if properly integrated go to make a successful equipment—without this integration we shall be unnecessarily at a disadvantage.

We have now developed our conception of the military technologist in his relation to his military comrades. Next we must examine the other half of his make-up, which deals with industry. As I have tried to emphasise, in war there can be no sharp dividing line between these worlds—they are both prime ingredients of victory.

I gave a clue to what I mean, when I wrote that military design must give emphasis to ease of production. Whence can our services technician obtain this knowledge? Only by practical experience of what production means. When expanding for war we must recruit from industry through some sort of special reserve, set up in peace. Our regular technical officers must, however, be able to look forward into battle and backward into industry, with the confidence which knowledge of both these worlds alone can give. They must thus be given industrial experience.

There is yet another consideration which adds force to this argument, namely, the highly important role of inspection. Inspection must, however, be something more than rigid exaction of this or that specification. It must be a more elastic conception, whereby divergences from specification can be accepted, provided they do not compromise the essential military qualities desired of the particular item. That is the point—in order not to put undue strain on production we may have to accept the next best thing to what we want, but that is no matter provided it is of no real consequence to the user. On the other hand, we have got to keep production up to the mark. To strike a happy balance in this conflict of interests technical officers concerned in inspection must have real knowledge both of the essential military qualities of an equipment or store and of the problems of production imposed by its manufacture.

That is a brief picture of the birth of a weapon and the contribution of the scientist and the technologist to this happy event. The scientist has in general a consultative role and is concerned more in general concepts in their application to war. The Services technologist on the other hand, must be versed in practical experience of how to translate a General Staff specification into an actual equipment, store, or what not. Of course, the two must work in the closest touch and in the greatest harmony; but each has his separate function. It would, therefore, be wrong to suggest any rigid compartments into which their activities should be divided, but there are definite spheres of influence for both.

I hope from what has been said that you will realize the necessity for adequate scientific and technical staffs in our peacetime Services and implicit in them the need for being able to expand their cadres in war—no easy matter, since such roses do not grow on every bush.

It may be asked, where do we come in as professional exponents of the art of war? Our role vis-a-vis the scientist and the technologist is an important but difficult one, which might be not inaptly compared to that of the stereoscope, so popular half a century ago, whereby family groups, pictures of the Alps, or even of the night life of Paris could be seen in startling perspective, as opposed to the less exciting two dimensions of flat land.

In this view I am fortified by the saying attributed to Marshal Lyautey, that great French colonial administrator, when asked for the reason for his success: "I know nothing—I am an architect of general ideas." I suggest this is no escapism from an ignorance complex, but an expression of a profound insight into human affairs.

In this sphere, we are all in it. "Tinker, Tailor, Soldier, Sailor," not to speak of all the additions to the cast—scientist, economist, psychiatrists, etc.,—since that old nursery rhyme was written. They and their activities must all be harnessed to the war machine and we must so contrive in peace that we can harness up quickly when war comes. How can we ensure this in our future organisations?

First, that we should have the full statistical data as to where we stand over the whole field of national economy. We must be able to assess the minimum essential requirements to sustain the civil economy and hence to know what can be utilised directly in furthering the war effort.

Secondly, we must have plans constantly under review whereby the war potential can be developed with the minimum delay.

Thirdly, the Defence Services should have scientific representation looking inwards into our habits and outwards over the whole field of scientific development.

Fourthly, that we have a sufficiency of well-trained technologists in peace and a well-thought out plan for expansion in war.

Fifthly, that all our scientific-cum-technical activities must be closely integrated. This means the integration of research, design, development and, in my view, of production in so far as it refers to specialised military equipment.

These I believe to be the "Big Five" in our material preparations for war. Through them alone can we ensure these ingredients of future success—the maintenance of the economic and technical initiative—they are the architects to build that secure base round which our Navies, Armies and Air Forces can manoeuvre without let or hindrance.

War and its preparations are heady wines and if, amid all these brave doings, alarums, and excursions, like Macbeth you "Cry Havoc and let loose the dogs of War"—by all means do so, if you must, but please first consult the "property man."

# Leadership.

"When I took charge of the armies which were being formed in Great Britain at the end of 1943 to finish off the Germans I quickly sensed a feeling among the soldiers that the job they were to undertake was not really possible. They were not confident about the D-Day party in Normandy.

"So having ensured that all the preparations were going on well, and that the plan was prepared, I set off around England and saw and spoke to every man who was to come and fight with me in Normandy. I formed them up so that I could see them and they me, and, having had a good look at one another, I used to get on top of a jeep and talk to them. The sole reason was to inspire confidence.

"A lot of people thought I was quite mad. I am so often considered mad that I regard it as a compliment now. But it did establish confidence, and the net result was that when we went across the Channel the soldiers were quite confident it could be done."—Field Marshal Montgomery.

#### THE FOURTH INDIAN DIVISION

THE comradeship in the 4th Indian Division was something to be seen to be believed. Recently the Division completed its work; the Indian units returned to India, the British battalions to the U.K. On February 24, however, B.B.C. Radio News-Reel devoted a part of its interesting programme to the Division on its departure from Greece. Here is the report, as monitored by the All India Radio monitoring station in Simla.

B. B. C. ANNOUNCER: While the world undergoes the uncomfortable process of settling down to peace, it is to be hoped that the comradeship spontaneously generated among peoples when they were under arms in a common cause will not be lost. One of the best examples of that comradeship was seen in the Indian Army, in which British and Indian troops fought side by side. The deeds of one Division, the 4th Indian, known from its divisional sign as "The Red Eagle," needs no emphasis; they are already part of history.

Before the Division left Athens, members of its various units were brought together to make a valuable record of what General Rees described as that "great fellowship forged in the fire of war". You'll hear these men talking to you now, introduced by the Division P.R.O., Captain James Manning.

CAPTAIN MANNING: The last Indian and Gurkha troops are returning home from Europe. They were the first of India's great expeditionary force to be sent overseas in the late war. Since 1939 this Division has fought its way for thousands of miles across the Western Desert, Eritrea, Syria, Tunisia, Italy and Greece; taken 100,000 prisoners; and suffered 25,000 casualties. Before embarking at Salonica some of the men broadcast their farewells. First, I'd like you to meet someone who has been with the Division from the beginning.

SPEAKER: Yes, I think I hold the record. My name is Mohammad Abdul Rashid Malik. I am a V.C.O., and live in Pathankot. I was with the Division when they went overseas.

Manning: You've plenty of souvenirs then?

Subedar Malik: Only two: the Afrika Corps hatband of General von Arnim, who was captured by our Division, and his jack-knife, which, by the way, has a very fine bottle opener. But I also take back with me proud and happy memories of the British soldiers who have fought with the Red Eagles.

British Soldier: That's right, Subedar Sahib—and don't forget the infantry. Blimey! the stories I could tell in old Blighty! There were the Essex, the Royal Fusiliers, the Buffs, the "Swedes"—that's what we call the Royal Suffolks, y'know.

SCOTSMAN: Aye—and dinna ye forget the laddies from Bonnie Scotland—the Cameroons, the Highland Light Infantry, and the Regiment o' my ain heart and choice—the Lovat Scouts! Lovats are newcomers to this Division, but they've come a long way, mind ye. I'm a crofter on the Isle of Skye, north of the Hebrides, and after being with the lads from India I'll soon be training my sheep dog again.

GURKHA: Shsh! I'm a Highlander, too, but from the Himalayss, which are much higher than-your Scotch mountains—and my name is Naik Sham Sher Jang Singh, from Nepal.

British Soldier: Nepal! Now that's a proper land of mystery You can't nip on a steamer or the Underground to Nepal.

GURKHA: No, there aren't any railways in Nepal, and only the Nepalese are allowed into our country. It will take a fortnight for some of us to reach our homes from Regimental Centres, travelling on foot or by pony across the foothills of the world's highest mountains.

WELSHMAN: There're some Welshmen in the Division, too. Wherever there's a war you'll find a Welshman, to be sure. Some of us are gunners, but you wouldn't forget the Welsh Regiments, would you?

GURKHA: When I get to my village in India there will be feasting and dancing, and my father will be very happy. He served in the Indian Cavalry in the last War.

BRITISHER: Chip of the old block, eh, Jang Singh? Tell me, how do you Indians pick up the lingo so quick!?

Subedar Malik: Oh! I can answer that question in nine different languages—English, Italian (speaks in Italian), Greek, too (speaks in Greek), also Persian, Arabic, Hindustani, Punjabi, Gurkhali, Dogri. Indian soldiers soon pick up languages wherever they go, even in Greece, where the language is so difficult. The reason is that we have such good ears for music.

Scotsman: Talking of music, have ye no' heard the sweet sound of the pipes?

GURKHA: Gurkhas like bagpipes, too, and we have dances in Nepal just like your Highland dances.

BRITISH SOLDIER: Why do they call you Gurkhas if you come from Nepal?

GURKHA: It comes from two Sanskrit words: Gow meaning "cow", and raksha meaning "Preserver," for we are Hindus, and to us the cow is sacred.

British Soldier: And another thing. You've always got goats outside your cookhouses.

GURKHA: That's because goats are food and drink to us.

BRITISH SQLDIER: Better than the old kind of bitter, eh?

GURKHA: No, rum is our favourite drink. I must tell you that when som? Gurkhas went to London recently they found your whiskey very weak.

SCOTSMAN: Ay! it's to Scotland ye should have gone.

MANNING: Well, soon I hope your families will be drinking your health in your own homes, but I'm sure you'll always remember the many battles you've fought together.

SUBEDAR MALIK: Yes, at Sidi Barani, in Abyssinia, Syria, Tobruk, Benghazi, El Alamein, Tunisia, over to Italy for Casino and the Gothic line.

MANNING: And a very fine record, too, as all the world knows—and no better than your Divisional Commander, Major-General T. W. Rees.

WELSHMAN: Don't forget the General comes from Wales, mind.

General Rees: We're homeward bound at last. To most of the Division that means India, but practically one-third of an Indian Division is composed of British troops. So with sadness we say farewell to our British comrades. We cannot believe, however, that this great fellowship forged in the fire of war has come to an end. We believe that this brotherhood, this mutual understanding, and this wholehearted co-operation of all castes and creeds, whether they be Hindus, Muslims, Christian or Sikh, are an augury for the future of the British Empire, and, indeed, for the whole world. They show what cas be achieved by understanding, courage and determination in tackling a common task.

I had the honour of being with the Division when it fought its first battles. By a happy chance I take them home now they have fought what we all hope has been their last fight. So, on behalf of all ranks and races of the Indian Army, Indian and Gurkha, I say farewell and God speed to all our British comrades, past and present

# India's National War Academy

India's National War Academy, it is officially announced, will be located at Kharakvsala Lake, near Poona. More than 2,000 acres of land will be reserved in the vicinity for this purpose, but the Academy will finally extend over a much larger area.

Steps are now being taken to implement the recommendations of the delegation of the National War Memorial Committee, which returned to India after touring Service institutions in the U.S.A., Canada and the U.K., last year. Special sub-committees are now busy preparing the syllabus and plans for the staff, establishments, buildings and general lay-out of the National War Academy.

Dr. Amarnath Jha, Vice-Chancellar of the Allahabad University, is chairman of the Syllabus and the Establishments Sub-Committee, and Maj-Gen. D. Bateman, Director of Military Training, who is one of the sub-committee members, is also Chairman of the Accommodation and Planning Sub-Committee. Other prominent educationists and experts may be co-opted to these committees.

Candidates for the Academy, which will be the main channel of entry into the commissioned ranks for the three services, should be between 16 and 19 years of age. Promotion from the ranks and direct commission to University candidates will supplement the flow from the Academy.

The course, of four years' duration, will start with a short period of recruit training, followed by instruction in academic and common service subjects. Towards the end of the first year candidates will be attached for a period to various units, to test their inclinations and give them an experience of conditions in all three Services. Selection will then be made for specialised training for the Navy, Army and Air Force.

The syllabus for academic subjects will cover a wide range and include mathematics, history, geography, Hindustani, modern languages, English, general science, economics, law, book-keeping, meteorology, statistics and practical workshop training.

The Government has provided Rs. 5,00,000 in the 1946-47 Budget for the National War Academy. It is expected that funds for the Academy will come from public subscriptions supplemented by Government grants. The Sudan Government's gift of \$100,000 mill also be used.

# FURTHER THOUGHTS ON FRONTIER MYTHS\*

By "THE ADMIRAL."

I WANT to oppose the views expressed by Lt.-Colonel W. F. G. Spaight in his article "The Frontier Myth" in your July 1945 issue and the approval of those ideas by "Auspex" in the following issue.

The article was written to prove, in the words of its author's paragraph "Conclusion," that "The Frontier is not a good training ground for modern war. Troops and Officers steeped in Frontier training are liable to be excessively cautious, timid in patrolling, ignorant of modern tactics, unfit physically and horrified of high casualties."

I propose to show that the second sentence is based on wrong information or mis-judgment, and that for this and other reasons the idea expressed in the first sentence is a mistaken one.

From certain passages in the article it would appear that its author is under the impression that the entire physical effort of the troops in Waziristan is limited to the opening of the road from Razmak to the Narai twice a week, and that physical fitness suffers accordingly. This impression is completely erroneous. Even in areas where units are mostly engaged in static duties, pickets have to be frequently watered, rationed and relieved. The first two duties always involve escorts and sometimes carrying parties. As nearly all pickets are located on hill-tops this involves quite a considerable amount of exercise. In addition, if the Battalion responsible for the sector is up to the average in initiative and industry it is ghashting constantly in its area.

Any properly-run Battalion on the L. of C. gets exercise equivalent to about four 25-mile route marches per week. R.I.A.S.C. units on the L. of C. constantly go up and down to pickets and get quite enough work under load to keep them fit. As to the I.A.O.C., does physical fitness much affect their ability to their job?

Are excessive caution and timidity and patrolling really developed on the Frontier? On first thoughts it might seem so, but a little consideration will go far to disprove this. We do not patrol enough at night, principally because we are not allowed to; but in the day we do almost nothing else. Every route picket is a patrol, which is using the ground best suited to its task. If one remembers (or finds out) what orders must be given to a patrol and then remembers (or finds out) what a picket should be drilled to do, one finds a great similarity.

If a Column Commander says: "We will picket the route from Bibizar to Sararogha" one says, "What a Blimp! Can he never leave the old rut?" If the commander says, "We will patrol here and here" one applauds his wisdom and vision unless, of course, one has sufficient perspicacity to realise that patrols, if they are to be of any use at all, will have to go where the pickets go and stay there for the same period.

<sup>\*</sup>Owing to heavy pressure on space it was not possible to include this article in our last issue. "Picket"—an outpost or guard—has been spelt in that form throughout this articale, instead of the more familiar but nevertheless incorrect "piquet".

A patrol stooging around in the nullahs can see nothing and do little Patrols do all their most valuable work during their halts (except in an actual assault). The best positions for patrols to halt on the Frontier are positions to which pickets are normally sent. A picket ought to go to its position like a patrol. Its departure therefrom is by a normal patrol method—moving without being seen and crossing ground commanded by the enemy as fast as possible, i.e. slipping stealthily back behind the hill-top and then running like hell down the slope.

Do we develop excessive caution? Whether we liked it or not, all the Regular troops who formed the foundation of the present large Indian Army were steeped in Frontier lore, and their background and training indisputably coloured the whole army. It is therefore of interest to note that, almost without exception, the greatest feats of the Indian Army in the late war were in the attack.

Fourth and Fifth Indian Divisions when they first went into action were apart from two or three E. C. Os per Battalion, almost entirely Regular. Practically all the Indian Units excepting in the 11th Brigade, had only recently turned their attention from the Frontier to what was then called extensive warfare. Not many months before many units had actually been on operations in Waziristan. I think, however, it will be generally conceded that at Kerna and other places they succeeded in overcoming that excessive caution, timidity and horror of high casualties of which the author of "Frontier Myth" speaks In fact, their conduct was such as to prove him, on this matter, utterly and completely in error.

The Eighth Indian Division when it arrived in action contained a far smaller proportion of Regulars, but nonetheless it is of interest to note that it contained an unusually high proportion of units with strong Frontier connections, while their Commander was almost as much a part of that locality as Razmak-Narai is. The record of this Division will already be familiar to readers of this Journal.

Waziristan had in peacetime unbounded advantages over mere training for a war which had not started, and was for long not even in sight. Of those desperate battles on which Blueland hurled back the forces of Redland one could normally say that the Director brought 100% enthusiasm to his task; the officers, from 100%, to 0%; the I. O. Rs. 100% (but they were sometimes rather puzzled: "The enemy is in the East, but we will attack to the North because there are crops in the way"); the B. O. Rs. didn't know what was happening and didn't...well care. As they were in process of spending six utterly leaveless years away from home this attitude, though reprehensible, was perhaps not as surprising as one might at first think.

On the Frontier, however, nearly everyone knew what was going on and everyone cared. The reason for this was that there was a chance of the immediate application of what was being practised. There was interest. There was the opportunity of shooting a line to those who were elsewhere. There was especially in the columns, a feeling of comradeship. There was extremely high technical efficiency in unit administrative matters, which in the more efficient columns, saved hours of time.

In, say, Razcol in 1933, every officer was an efficiency expert, as they would call it in business circles. There was never a movement too few, and never a movement too much. Two British Service Officers, now C. Os., who were the in Razcol told the writer a dozen years later that they had, in a year in Razmak,

acquired more knowledge useful to them in Italy than in all the rest of their service. Indian Infantry spent two years on the Frontier out of every six. Almost every such unit was better when it left the Frontier than when it arrived. In cases where this was not so, the C.O. should immediately have been awarded a Bowler Hat (and bar).

Waziristan, in peace time, built morale. The British troop, seeing a man with a knife in his belt and a rifle on his back, was thrilled for the first time in India outside the cinema. The Indian troop, whose mainspring is his very strong professional pride, was on his mettle to show himself better than neighbouring Units. The greatest effect, however, was on the officers. They, consciously or unconsciously, contrasted this life with the form-ridden existence in a Cantonment.

In Waziristan any movement of troops might culminate in a skirmish. Down-country, it would almost certainly culminate in objections by the C.M.A. and a complaint from the Ordnance that—"Oh! horror, horror, horror! Tongue nor heart cannot conceive nor name thee!"—training had been carried out with some equipment issued for use when a war broke out.

Our Cantonments contained almost no students of war, though some of them numbered amongst their inhabitants a number of enthusiastic students of promotion. Intellectual military life, as it would be understood in Germany, was almost non-existent. Students of their unit, i.e. good regimental officers, fortunately abounded, but tended to stagnate.

To go to the Frontier from down country (or Home) was rather like going from beside a death bed to watch a P. T. Course passing out. There were no great intellectual problems on the Frontier; but it was necessary for Commanders to apply intelligently what fire they could command, to move by the best routes possible to them and to co-operate with other arms. The fact that the Brigade plan was frequently restricted by unsuitable forms of transport, or various political instructions, was of no great moment. In any operation, if we come to a 100-foot ravine with only a footbridge across it, the mobility of our tanks will be reduced, but we may still be able to employ their fire. We are always restricted by something in war—ground, climate, shipping, parsimony in pre-war years—so we may as well get used to the idea and use our brains as best we can to overcome our difficulties.

The Pathan was never the world's best umpire, but he quite unquestionably was the best umpire with whom our forces or anyone else's came into contact in peace time. No where else in the world, as far as I know, were tactical mistakes on training punished by a burst of fire.

Probably the greatest lesson learnt on the Frontier was co-operation. Nowhere else in peace time did such teams as Razcol in 1933, or Tocol in 1937, work together. Problems were simple, but they taught Infantry Gunners, Sappers and the ancillary Services what language each other talked, and to know whether they were on their elbows or some other portion of their anatomy.

Where else in peace time would the junior officer find similar opportunities of command? The writer, when a subaltern of six years' service, found himself in command of a fort and responsible for six miles of defile. The forces at his disposal were one post 4.5 How., one M. M. G. Pl and two 4 Pl Rifle Coys. About three Rifle Platoons and one M. M. G. Section were disposed in permanent

pickets. The remainder were available for ghashts, which were vigorously carried out. These operations had to be co-ordinated with an Armoured Car Section working on the road. Communications with the Post Gun presented interesting though small signal problems. We had not, of course, a single Wireless St. Although the actual conditions are extremely unlikely ever to be reproduced elsewhere, the writer cannot feel that this experience was valueless.

Let us pass now to Lt.-Col. Spaight's bald statement that the "The Frontier is not a good training ground for modern war." This in bound up with his notion that the Frontier soldier is ignorant of modern tactics.

Professor Joad, of the Brains Trust (and other organisations), would say; "It depends on what you mean by modern war and modern tactics." Modern war-or anyway the one most recently out of date-meant, as fer as the India Army was concerned, fighting in the Western Desert, Somaliland, Entres. Abyssinia, Syria, Tripoli, Tunisia, Italy, Burma, Malaya and Hong Kong. la addition, there was fighting in Norway, Holland, Belgium, France, Poland, Russa, and Germany (as many of us are no doubt aware). There were landings of tropical, Mediterranean, Channel, and Norwegian beaches. There were airbone landings in all theatres. That's modern war, that was,

In all these operations, modern tactics were used (or so one hopes). It will be seen that there can never be any question of training successfully for modern war, but only for a specific type of operation. The conditions in all theatres varied to an anuzing degree, but they had a common denominated This was "combination of skill in movement with skill in application of fire."

That principle isn't so frightfully modern, as a matter of fact. Some foreigner named Napoleon Bonaparte, in a battle with some other foreigner at a place called Austerlitz, combined the two rather well over a hundred year ago. Other people had the same notion before him. The Romans supported by flights of arrows the advance of a testudo to the walls of a fort.

Before the war we taught a few stereotyped Section formations to our troops. These formations were to be varied according to the ground. We may be described as having varied our formations from Continent to Continent this war, suiting them to deserts, Bocage country or jungles. Fire, too, vaned from theatre to theatre. In Italy, where the defenders always held feature providing wonderful observation, or on the Normandy coasts, where a forties had to be reduced, fire (which of course includes the use of bombers) was the predominant factor. In Burma, with restricted vision, and on L of Cincapable of supplying large quantities of ammunition, skilful movement was more important.

Being met together on the battlefield we require, in addition to good tactics, high morale and all the material we can get. We in the army have no control over the supply of the material. The amount which reaches us will val directly as the fright in which the taxpayer is.

We must therefore concentrate on what we can ourselves produce-

(a) Skilful application of fire. (b) Skilful movement.

(c) The combination of (a) and (b)

(d) High morale.

Good tactics.

Then we must train for a specific operation. Having completed this, we are trained for a certain phase of modern war.

At no time in the war was any unit of any country's army so trained that it could have immediately operated with efficiency in every theatre of war. We cannot, therefore, be properly trained until we know where we are to fight; but we can make a start; and we can make a good start on the Frontier.

We have seen that the Frontier gives opportunities to practice the application of fire, skilful movement and the combination of the two. Far more important than these, however, is the moral effect on units of a peace time Frontier tour. Indian Infantry, Mountain Gunners, Sappers and Miners and certain ancillary units were really live shows in the peace years. Of how many more units in the armies of the Commonwealth and Empire could this be said?

Without its continual sharpening on the whetstone of the Frontier, the scythe of the Indian Army could never in this war have cut the swathe it did.

d L

#### THINGS PEOPLE SAY AND WRITE

- "I am a bricklayer by trade."-Lord Quibell, speaking in the House of
- "The figure of Lord Nelson in Trafalgar Square is 17 ft. high."—Mr. S. Larkins.

"It is quality, not equality, that a nation needs for progress."-Lord

"An ounce of warm humanity is worth a ton of cold legality."—Miss Alice Bacon, M. P.

"The London County Council intends to spend £17,500,000 on education in 1946."—*L. C. C.* 

"Oilfields in Britain have yielded 400,000 tons of good quality oil to date."

-Dr. W. A. Macfadyn.

"Plain living and high thinking is the way to make the most of Life."— The Very Rev. W. R. Inge.

"China plans to build 40,000 miles of railways during the next ten years."—

U. S. Civil Aeronautics Board.

"People in the United States waste more good than most people in Great Britain eat."—Mr. E. Morrow.

"The smaller your force, the larger percentage you should hold in reserve."

—Field Marshal Sir Harold Alexander.

"Hitler was a mixture of Joan of Arc and Charlie Chaplin."—Herr Otto Abetz, former German Ambassador in France.

"More than 120 chaplains in the British Army were killed during the

war or died of wounds."—Archbishop of Canterbury.

"Uranium deposits, said to be the richest in the world, have been found

in Stanthorpe, S. E. Queensland."—Daily Telegraph.

"It costs about £2,500, including £750 for fuel, to fly a four-engined air liner across the Atlantic."—Air Commodore L. G. S. Payne.

"Russia is producing gold at an annual rate of from £42,190,000 to

£70,000,000 from nineteen major fields."—New York Times.

"When it is completed the Heathrow airport near London will have no superior in the world."—Lord Winster, Minister of Civil Aviation.

"The Chinese have a proverb that a lie travels round the world while truth is putting on its boots."—Mr. A. MacClay, in *United Empire*. "At one period during the war British railways had nearly 20,000 of their staff making armaments in 35 railway workshops."—London Calling.

The Mauritania recently broke the 4,000-mile run record from Fremantle

to Durban by covering the distance in eight days."—Dr. George Gretton. "The British official history of World War II was begun in 1942. It is hoped to publish a popular edition in 1947."—General Sir James Edmunds.

"A B. O. A. C. Lancastrian has just flown from England to India and

back in three and a half days, averaging 260 m.p.h."—Evening Standard.

"R.A.F. Transport Command will not even accept a pilot for training unless he has 1,000 flying hours to his credit."—Wing Commander Charles Gardner.

"The total sum paid in annuities to the descendants of the brother of Lord Nelson since the annuity was instituted in 1806 is £700,000."—Mr. Dalton,

"During the war 897 passengers, railway servants and other persons were killed by enemy action on British railways; 4,379 were seriously injured." -Chief Inspecting Officer of Railways.

"Total losses of the German armed forces in killed, permanently wounded and permanent medical casualties between September 1, 1938 and May 10, 1945, are estimated at 7,400,000."—Mr. C. Attlee, Prime Minister in Britain.

"Pupils and students of all ages attending schools in Russia increased from 8,137,000 in 1914 to 15,008,000 in 1920 and to the enormous figure of 47,700,000 in 1939."—Mr. G. S. Counts, in "Asia and the America's."

"What astounds me about the history of the Royal Navy is how cheaply

"What astounds me about the history of the Royal Navy is how cheaply we have policed the world for 300 years with less than 100,000 men. It is time we sang our own song for a little bit."—Mr. Ernest Bevin, M.P., Foreign Secretary.

"In the 1914—1918 war Egyptians working in the dock areas of Port Said and Alexandria wore an armband with the initial letters W. O. G. S.—Working on Government Service. Hence the term 'Wogs'."—Mr. P. A. Lanyon-Oraill.

"It is the British way of life that men can differ and be friends; that the results of a Parliamentary election can be accepted with not less philosophical sportsmanship than the result of a cup tie or a Test match is one of our national

virtues."-Mr. Hugh Dalton, M.P.

"The new House of Commons will have 456 loudspeakers installed. The chief problem (for those planning the building) was not the heating, but the cooling of the Chamber and the elimination of hot air."—Mr. A. Gilbert Scott, addressing the Town and Country Planning Association in London.

"Former Luftwaffe personnel, now working alongside German war prisoners on disarmament work, wear a working dress based on the British battle dress. With a headgear resembling a deer-stalker, this apparel is totally unlike that of any military organisation in the world."—B. P. I. cable from London.

"The U. S. A. plans to maintain a Navy in the post-war world bigger than the rest of the world's fleet combined; an air force more powerful than the rest of the world's air fleets combined; and a strong, modern streamlined Army which can be expanded into a huge force at a word from the War Department."— Don Iddon, Daily Mail.

"By the new B. A. O. C. services passengers can leave England at 8 a.m. on Monday, arriving in New Zealand just after 9-30 a.m. on Thursday; or reaching Tokyo after 7 p.m. on Wednesday; or in New York in time for breakfast on Tuesday morning. Daily services will fly to New York and Montreal; later

they will be increased to two services per day."-Viscount Knollys.

"A German general visited Field Marshal Montgomery's H.Q. under a flag of truce. 'You have ruined our cities; our communication lines are destroyed; our ammunition dumps blown up; our people are starving; our railways bombed out; and we have little water.' The Field Marshal's reply was a master-piece of simplicity. 'Splendid' he said; 'just as it should be.'"—Major Edward'

Culver, an American Officer on Field Marshal Montgomery's Staff.

"From five to 15 years from now guided missiles and atomic explosives may have been developed into reliable and practical weapons. During the intervening years newly-designed fleets and air forces suited to guided missiles and atomic explosives will also have been developed. We will be in a period of transition from war as we know it now to war as it may be in the future. Fifteen to 25 years from now it is possible that accurate trans-oceanic missiles will be developed. When that happens the whole character of warfare may be radically changed."—Mr. Artemus Gates, U. S. Under-Secretary for the Navy.



# WANTED: AN INDIAN NURSING CRUSADE

By Matron R. M. Hinchey, Q.A.I.M.N.S.

RAISING the standard of living in India is dependent upon 778,000 nums! Much has been and is still being written on the subject of Post-war lack, but gradually the realisation has come that, to improve existing conditions the woman is of more importance than the man. Improvement will begin from within the home, and hangs more upon the help and knowledge of the wik, mother and daughter than upon anything else.

The subject of public health and nursing has been stressed over and over again in public speeches and articles. Dr. Lazarus, at the All-India Wome' Conference, said: "The progress of India is dependent upon the health of he people. One of the most striking defects of the grossly inadequate health service is the lack of nursing personnel". Mrs. Mehta also referred to the same subjet in her Presidential address.

The report of the Committee presided over by Sir Joseph Bhore admit that "Our whole plan may be gravely jeopardised if it is unable to command the nurses it requires." It may perhaps be a matter for regret that the Committee did not have the advantage of having a nurse among its member.

It is proposed that in each village there will be a visiting doctor and member of the Women's Welfare Service, and a resident nurse. The proposition is good. There is a certain appeal for an Indian woman to become a member of the Welfare service, and it is possible that volunteers will be forthcoming. As regards health, at the present time there is one doctor per 6,300 population.

Doctors diagnose and prescribe treatment but a skilled nurse carries it out. And it is this skilled resident nurse, I fear, who is to be the biggest problem of all. Her presence in the village is of unlimited value—but has the number of nurses required been sufficiently realised? For every doctor three nurses are required (that is the ratio in England, Canada and most other countries). In India there are ten doctors to every nurse.

What is the nursing position in India in the comparatively near future! Many fine civil hospitals throughout this sub-continent are desperately under staffed—and without nurses no hospital can function; mission schools concerned with the training of nurses are similarly placed. Nurses recruited for the I.M.N.S. during the war were below half of those required to nurse Indian wounded, and British sisters and V. A. Ds. had to help fill the gap, and still do. Many women now in the Service will become regular nursing officers, which means that fewer will be available to become resident nurses. British sisters and nurses now serving in India will be returning to Britain. Thus there is every prospect that the number of nurses in India will decrease, instead of increase. To put it bluntly, in this year of Grace 1946 there are 7,000 nurses in the whole of India-and the number required is 778,000!

Indispensable is the nurse's part in this plan for improving the standard of living. She is the one who is going to be in close and constant contact with the women in their homes and basties. She it is who will teach them child welfare

practically, so that results can be seen and understood. She it is who will know the state of the water supply, and will persuade the doctor to help her on his visits. She will know what the washing facilities are, and teach, preach and practice cleanliness of home, family and surroundings.

Food values and diet, fruit and vegetables are subjects she can teach. Cooking, mending clothes, the correct clothes to wear for themselves and for their children are subjects which will fall within her province. She will know where there are bad drains or no drains at all; she it is who will report it and keep on reporting until they are improved; and she it is who will have to see that the promised latrines are there in use. By visiting her patients and trying to make their surroundings more attractive she will persuade the women by example to make their homes into more comfortable places.

Responsibility for the uplift is going to fall heavily on the nurse. There are schemes for "visiting" domestic training schools, for teachers and for welfare, but all of these will visit villages and villagers. The resident nurse, however, will live among them.

Health services depend upon the resident nurse and her knowledge of preventive medicine. Half-sick, half-well people are not disposed to be enthusiastic about new ideas that call for more work, when the exponents have left the village. To ensure success, the nurse will have to live in the village to encourage the villagers to act on her advice. She will be there, too, to teach them the value of vaccination and inoculation, to persuade and bring them to the theorem the visits the village. Prevention of tuberculosis, dysentery, cholera, typhoid and malaria are all in her charge; she will see that mosquito and fly nets are used for babies; she will make sure that no untrained midwife or dai practices.

These everyday duties of a trained Public Health nurse are the very essence and meaning of raising the standard of living. If a lasting improvement is to come it must come via the resident—the nurse.

The Nursing world has not been asleep. It has foreseen all this, and much spade work has been done. Health schools have been established in which girls are trained for this work in rural areas. The Military Nursing Services of India are training four sisters every year to be tutor sisters, so that later they will become teaching sisters in civil training schools. Auxiliary Nursing Cadets are being trained by the Army at Roorkee and Jullundur in order that they might sometime become fully trained nurses in civil life. Midwifery schools are busy trying to increase the number of midwives.

An All-India College of Nursing to be built which will train already trained nurses as tutor sisters, administrators, and dietitians. Its aim will be to provide a better training for student nurses, and also to train Public Health nurses. The Training Nurses' Association of India has held conferences, and discussed papers and plans. Miss E. E. Hutchins was sent to England, Canada and America—all with the same object in view, to gain knowledge and learn from other countries. A recruiting campaign has been conducted and nursing procedures shown to school children. The Government of India granted two scholarships, and the winners were sent to England. Another four went on a Florence Nightingale scholarship, and yet another four were sent this year to Toronto by the Rockefeller Foundation for post-graduate training.

Always the accent has been on their adequate training, for trained and registered the resident nurse must be. Danger, disaster and abuses lie ahead if unqualified or improperly trained women are permitted as resident nurses.

Certainly the nursing world has made an effort to lay a foundation, for everything that has been achieved, and is still being done, has been due to the voluntary efforts of a handful of farsighted women, among them being Miss Wilkinson, President of the Trained Nurses Association, who obtained State registration for Indian nurses.

Thus everything possible has been done as thoroughly as it could be done for the future, if only—if only—if only Indian women would become nurses. It is here that doubts arise. Where are these thousands, these 778,000 women coming from?

There is a pronounced social stigma attached to nursing as a career throughout the length and breadth of India. It is poorly paid. During their student days girls have to be helped financially. When the long period of training is over, things are at first little better, though later senior jobs carry higher salaries than those of junior doctors. No Indian family seems to have any objection to their daughter becoming a doctor—but allow her to be a nurse? No! Hence we arrive at our figure of ten doctors to every nurse.

The vast majority of girls in Nurses' Training schools are Christians. In fact, it is only in recent years that in the classes of twenty student nurses one, or perhaps two, were not Christians. Of the total of 7,000 such nurses in training and at work at least 88 per cent. are Christians, the remaining 12 per cent. being non-Christian—Hindus, Muslims and Parsees combined. The non-Christian girls who are nurses are to a large extent daughters and sisters of doctors, or of professional people who have had close contact with Western countries. But the bulk of India, the people from whom that staggering number of 778,000 must be drawn, do not yet understand the true value of the nursing profession. Nor do those who teach them help very much.

I spoke to a teacher, an Englishwoman, in an Indian school. Her reaction was immediate. "Oh, no. You see, socially——." Her voice trailed away. Then she said: "Our object in educating women is to raise them." But true education is not the mere assimilation of book-knowledge. It is the formation of character, and what profession encourages and stimulates the building of character more than that of nursing? I could not convince her that that very "raising" would come through nursing. "There have been doctors and teachers since time immemorial, but Florence Nightingale had to come before the Industrial Revolution. Moreover, nursing puts so many ideas into actual practice." She did not answer. But she looked thoughtful.

I tried an Indian woman solicitor who was going to help with the rehabilitation of women. "What about persuading a few to become nurses? You need them, you know." She wagged her head. "Ah! but nursing in India.

. "She left the rest unsaid with an expressive gesture.

Following the Nurses Recruitment Campaign in Delhi, I talked with enthusiasm to a prominent Indian doctor. He listened most politely with a tolerant smile, and at the end he waved his hand and said: "Fifty years—another fifty years—perhaps."

Many people in the medical world declare that this reluctance on the part of Indian women to play their part in the nursing profession is just unreal. The Bhore report does not even admit its existence, nor does it mention it.

It mentions the conditions under which potential nurses know they will have to live and work as deplorable. It is a fact that those conditions are appalling. That word is no exaggeration. To substantiate it, let me quote Sir Jogendra Singh, Minister of Health:

"In our civil hospitals the conditions of service for nurses repel rather than attract, and there is gross overcrowding in unhealthy accommodation. Supervising and teaching staffs are insufficient and inadequately trained."

And also Lieut.-General Hance, D.G., I.M.S.: "As long as nurses are regarded, paid and housed as menials, it is not reasonable to expect large numbers of Indian ladies to come forward to dedicate themselves to this work."

If the authorities responsible for the maintenance of hospitals would think in terms of the Nurses Home, there would be more nurses, and equally important, patients would receive the treatment they require. Nurses must be given their own room, and a Home Sister must be appointed to supervise their food, their hours, their conditions of living. They must not be herded into dormitories. If something on these lines was done, nursing would not be quite the anathema it is to Indian parents.

Proof of this was revealed during the war, for in places where living conditions were good, where there was an efficient tutor sister, and girls felt they were learning something of value, there was a waiting list. Yet even this waiting list was comprised mostly of Christian girls, with that tiny but so important 12 per cent. non-Christians from among parents who already knew and understood.

What are the qualifications demanded of an Indian girl wanting to become a nurse? She has to be intelligent, and to have passed her Senior Cambridge, though at the moment lesser standards are accepted. She has to work hard physically and mentally for three years, and probably another six months to fit her for Public Health work. And at the end of all that, post-war planners ask her to go alone to a village miles from relatives, friends and interests, at the age of 23 or 24, and stay there! And on precious little pay. Is it surprising that the response has been meagre? To attract more and more girls the prospects must be made more attractive—and not merely financially. All of us, British and Indian, know that for Public Health work there should be a resident nurse in every Indian village, and it is only when that fact is thoroughly appreciated that we realise the enormity of the problem.

Let us imagine for a moment that there was not a cloud in this nursing sky. Let us imagine that every hospital had a Nurses Home comparable with those in the U. K. or anywhere else in the world; that each hospital brought one tutor sister from outside India for five years, that is, until the All-India College of Nursing could supply their own; that the resident nurse had a comfortable house and clinic ready to receive her; and that sometimes a bus called to take her for a mental breath of fresh air. Given all those things, at the end of ten years, all that combined would not produce 30,000 nurses. The Bhore Report aims at 50,000 in ten years. It is impossible under present conditions. The A.N.S., the members of which lived and worked under the same conditions as British sisters, and V.A.D. nurses, produced precisely 199 girls who were non-Christian—and that at a time of National Emergency. At the end of those ten years there would still be 748,000 nurses urgently needed.

I can see only one remedy. A nation-wide crusade, backed up by all the modern means of propaganda, and directed with vision and drive. Not a few isolated posters of an unattractive woman in a nurse's uniform, but publicity directed as much to the parents and families as to the girls themselves. Such publicity would stress that after training girls would be better wives and mothers; better companions for their husbands; better parents. Moreover, it would stress the benefit of having one girl in the family with nursing knowledge.

It is in those characteristics that we find the true value of a nursing career, for it is a career which teaches others to preserve one of the finest things in life—health. And a Public Health nurse is only too happy to pass on her knowledge to her family and friends. She has something tangible; something of use to her country and to her people.

This crusade for nurses cannot be waged wholly by volunteers. It must be planned and carried out by publicity experts. Enthusiastic volunteers can follow it up into the remoter parts. It will need money; a lot of money. And the drive must be sustained, not spasmodic, to achieve success. Press, radio, cinema, discussion groups, posters, schools, colleges, voluntary social organisations of all kinds—all will have to be used if this scheme of "selling nursing to Indian girls" is to be 100 per cent. successful.

What better time than the present could there be to initiate this crusade? Many women's organisations are to be disbanded in the near future. Why not capitalise the spark of public spirit that has been kindled during the war? We have a glorious opportunity, and we should seize it with courage and avidity.

From all sides there is the cry: "Improve the standard of living." Here is one certain means of doing so, for without proper nursing there cannot be a healthy nation, and a healthy nation is vital to both peace and prosperity.

#### INDIA'S POLICY TOWARDS STATES OF THE INDIAN OCEAN AREA.

#### By K. M. Panikkar

Prime Minister of Bikaner State.

THE POLICY of a State or a country is determined by its geographical position. The reason is simple. The safety and security of a State are its first consideration. They are clearly dependent on geographical factors, questions of frontier, control of strategic areas vital for defence or for communication, prevention of other Powers from obtaining positions of advantage which will reduce the offensive capacity or restrict the mobility of armed forces, and, in the last resort, affect even the defence of the homeland. These, then, are the permanent factors on which the policy of a State towards its neighbours has to be based.

It follows that the form of Government in a State has but little to do with its external policy—at least in a long-term sense. Though this would appear to be axiomatic, I may give two illustrations—France and Russia. In both countries the most violent revolutions uprooted the bases of society, changed the forms of Government, while the world was led to believe that a new and international order of things would be established. But, in a few years time, facts of geography asserted themselves. The heir to the Revolution claimed the Rhine; the Bolsheviks, who denounced the spheres of influence in Persia, are now furiously pressing the same claims the Czars had put forward. In fact, General de Gaulle talks the language which Richelieu and Louis XIV or even Philip de Bel would have understood, and Stalin thinks fundamentally in terms of Catherine the Great and Czar Alexander.

True, the range and nature of weapons, developments in conveyance and transport and the conquering of space may extend the sphere of security and thereby bring about revolutions in policy, but the basic consideration remains that the object of all policy is territorial security, and this is governed predominantly by geographical factors.

Whatever, therefore, the form and basis of the Government of India, and whatever its political complexion, the interests which India has to safeguard will not change, and, therefore, her policy will remain fundamentally the same. A second assumption is that whatever the political status of India, a close and intimate association in policy between England and India, including the upholding of that policy by force, is inevitable. A permanent alliance for security between England and India is a primary necessity, and has to be accepted as such.

How can such an alliance be guaranteed? A moment's consideration will show that the whole policy of Britain in Middle and South East Asia, in the area of the Indian Ocean, has been determined by her position in India for the safeguarding of India's security. This was the object of Malcolm's mission to Persia, with which begins the chequered history of modern India's relations with Iran, of the many wars against Afghanistan, of Sir Francis Younghusband's mission to Lhasa, of the settlement with France regarding Siam, the treaty with Iraq and the recent developments on the Arabian coastline. The policy of the steel ring round India was primarily for the security of India itself. In the Indian Ocean area, Britain's policy is India's policy, and there is no ground for conflict or rivalry.

Without Britain's co-operation and support, no adequate defence machinery can be organised, as modern defence includes not merely the maintenance of large armies, but the development of air and naval forces, upkeep of distant bases, the maintenance of scientific research and technical skill at the highest level. Without the closest co-operation with Britain, such a development will be wholly beyond India's capacity for many decades to come.

It requires no strategic or other specialised knowledge to recognise that the Indian Ocean and naturally the areas washed by it are most vital to India's security. This has been so from time immemorial, though the Central Asian bias of Delhi and the unchallenged mastery of England over the seven seas obscured the point for a long time. The threat to India's security, which the fall of Singapore involved, brought home this point to many who had forgotten the lessons of history; and, but for the timely appearance of the American fleet off the Coral Seas, the policy indicated by the air attack on Trincomalee and Colombo might have had, at least for the time, disastrous consequences for India.

The importance of the Indian Ocean to India from other points of view may also be considered. All but a fraction of India's external trade passes over these oceanic routes. Our industrial development, commercial relations and even communications with other countries are dependent predominantly on the Indian Ocean. About the commercial importance of the Indian Ocean to India here is what Admiral Ballard said in his interesting book Lords of the Indian Ocean: "A momentary inspection of one of the trade charts periodically compiled by the Admiralty is more illuminating than days spent in the study of published statistics. These charts indicate the positions on certain dates of all British vessels above a small tonnage which were then at sea. They show the Indian Ocean as thronged with a moving swarm of vessels on a maze of routes." The author also emphasises the dependence of the trade and industry of India on the security of the Indian Ocean.

Admiral Sir Herbert Richmond recently wrote to me; "Some statistics I compiled in 1929 showed how greatly the prosperity of India depended on the sea. Trade with the U. K. was £127.8 millions; with the other British Dominions and Colonies, £50 million; and with foreign countries, £236 millions, making altogether £413.8 millions, an immense figure, to which should be added the value of the coastal trade, including that with Burma."

India's position in regard to the Indian Ocean differs from that of other countries washed by its waters. While Persia is mainly continental in its economy, and Arabia has also a land frontier toward which it has always expanded, India, by its physical configuration which shuts her off from the Asiatic mainland by vast mountain ranges, is rendered dependent on the sea. While to other countries the Indian Ocean is no doubt important, to India it is vital.

So, from every point of view, the Indian Ocean is offundamental importance to the very life of India. Naturally, Indian policy has, in a very great measure, to revolve round the question of security of the Indian Ocean. The political conditions in the areas which touch on this oceanic space and policy of the States which have interests in the Indian Ocean become of the very gravest concern to her. A definition of this policy cannot be attempted here at length; but a few main interests can be indicated.

Iran and the Persian Gulf.—The prevention of the dominance of the Persian Gulf by any Power capable of exerting naval pressure has to be a fundamental point of all Indian policy, as it has been of Britain. It is not that any Power which controls the Persian Gulf will immediately make war against India. The point of view which requires emphasis is that its possession by a first-class Power places India in a state of strategic disadvantage very much like the possession of Antwerp and the mouth of the Scheldt in the case of Great Britain. Napoleon described Antwerp as a pistol held at the breast of Britain. The position of the Persian Gulf is similar in regard to India. Any great Power which possesses it obtains an advantage over India and places her entire security in danger.

The attempt of Germany to get into the Gulf through the Berlin-Baghdad railway, thereby outflanking the sea routes from the Atlantic, was one of the main causes of Anglo-German rivalry leading to the war of 1914. Immediately the German plan was known, Britain took under her protection Kuweit, the ideal railhead for the scheme. Kor Abdulla and Mohrnaeral, both possible outlets, were also covered. German ambition to enter the Persian Gulf was thus checkmated.

But what of Russia, a Power with much greater potentialities, placed in a position from where she can bring her strength to bear on that vital area? The importance of the Gulf route was brought home to Russia by four years of supply which flowed in through Basra. Historically, Russia has never denied her interest in the Indian Ocean, and, until German policy drove her into an alliance with Britain in 1907, Russia openly advocated entry into the Indian Ocean as one of the major interests of Russian policy. As early as 1904 she had declared that "there should be no division of spheres in Persia which, together with the waters that bathe its shores, must remain the object of Russian material and moral protection."

We are now witnessing a revival of Russian interest in Iran. What should India's policy be in respect of this important development? Clearly, the maintenance of the independence, integrity and sovereign authority of Iran. I do not by any means underrate the difficulty of maintaining this position. The social structure and political evolution of Iran render all attempts to support that kingdom look like an effort to back up a decrepit and reactionary group of landholders and army chiefs. These are not very strong elements to back, especially when the Soviet regime provides a counter-attraction to the peasants, workers and the generally impoverished classes. Our policy has perforce to be the support of a middle-class democracy; but how far that can succeed when an immensely, powerful neighbour continuously backs the more revolutionary elements is one of the major problems of the future in the Middle East.

Iraq, of course, stands on a different footing. Britain has undertaken definite liabilities for its defence. From the security point of view, it is within the British area. But the structure of society and the concentration of political power in the hands of large landholders creates a problem which we cannot underestimate. India's interest in Iraq is to see that it remains free and outside the orbit of any other Power. The Arabian principalities, bordering on the Indian Ocean from Oman to Yemen, have imperceptibly entered the Empire defence scheme. The vast area of Hadramaut is now a Protectorate and outside the scope of Arab ambitions.

The African position also is not of any special importance now, since all potentially hostile Powers have been excluded from that continental area. But

it should be the unalterable policy of India to prevent either the littoral of the Red Sea or any portion of the Eastern coastline of Africa from falling into the hands of a major Power. There is, however, the great island of Madagascar with the magnificent port of Diego Suarez which requires some attention. At great cost, France converted Diego Suarez into an impregnable fortress, a kind of French Singapore, and M. Pellatan, the Minister of Marine, in asking for money declared in the Chamber of Deputies that, "it will command the Indian Ocean." In the hands of the French, it can, of course, command nothing, for, without the control of the Atlantic, it can never be a major naval base for France. But the danger of such a naval fortress in the Indian Ocean became obvious during the late war. Britain was forced to occupy it for fear of its falling into the hands of a major Power—Japan. The demilitarisation of Diego Suarez is, to my mind, of essential importance to India.

Now we come to what I consider the most important aspect of the Indian Ocean problem; the future of the East Indies. True, Japan has been eliminated from the Pacific as a naval Power, but has that in any sense affected the position in regard to this rich reservoir of raw materials? A new and potentially greater naval Power has entered the Pacific. Russia at Port Arthur means Russia in the South China seas. Let us not forget that the distance from Port Arthur to the Hongkong-Corrigedor-Singapore triangle is not greater than the distance from Pearl Harbour. The range of air power which, based on Saipan, was able to attack Japan shows that the security of the area which may be termed the Pacific Mediterranean is even more seriously threatened now than when Japan had occupied Hainan. In the result, the rich islands of Indonesia, held by the weak hands of Holland, become a danger point to the Indian Ocean, and hence to India. What is true of Indonesia is equally true of Thailand and Indo-China.

As to Malaya and Burma, apart from co-operation in matters of defence and security, India's only interest in these two areas is the attainment of political freedom by their people. Their geographical situation is too vital to the defence of this country for us to leave them to their own sources and to the might of Britain many thousand miles away. If the Bay of Bengal rules out the political union of India with Burma, the vital importance of that sea to India rules out the possibility of an independent defence policy for Burma and Malaya.

Of Ceylon, it is not necessary to say much. She has to be fed, defended and clothed from India. Her relations with India must, therefore, be of a particularly intimate kind. She cannot paddle her own cance in any sphere except that of political organisation. The experiences of the late war brought home these essential factors with regard to Ceylon, Burma and Malaya to all, and even the blind have had their eyes opened by the Atomic Bomb.

What should India's policy be in regard to the whole Indian Ocean area? The suggestions which I venture to put forward here should be taken as purely tentative. To my mind, it seems obvious that it is only a regional organisation based mainly on Indo-British co-operation that can safeguard the peace and security of this area. The Indian Ocean area is one of the well-defined regions of the world. The geographical position of India dominates that area and gives to it its special characteristics. Situated centrally and jutting far out into the ocean and flanked on either side by the Arabian Sea and the Bay of Bengal, India is obviously the centre and base of all organisation of this region.

It is interesting to note that the geographical unity of this region was noted by all ancient geographers. It is the Indies of the medieval writers, extending from Abyssinia to Java. Dominated in its main centres of population by the monsoon and by its dependence on the security of the sea, the problems of the India Ocean area are similar. With similar problems and with their safety and security interdependent, it seems clear that the future of this area would depend on a regional organisation. If such an organisation of security within the framework of the San Francisco Charter can be established, on which the areas directly concerned like Iran, Iraq, Malaya, Burma and the Dutch East Indies are represented along with Britain, India and, perhaps, Australia, then a machinery may be created which may have the resources, strength and capacity to ensure the independence of the units and the security of all.

How is this organisation to be brought about? Of course, the first essential pre-requisite of any regional organisation in this area is the reintegration of Indo-British relationship on a firm and unshakeable basis. Except on that basis, I cannot see that the problem can be effectively tackled at all, and I am firmly convinced that such an integration of relationship will come and that soon.

In any such organisation, a clear distinction has to be made between the defence of India and the security of India. So far as the defence of India, the organisation, structure, equipment and maintenance of India's national defence forces, that is a matter which comes only indirectly in the question of maintenance of peace and stable conditions in the security area. Ground was prepared for the separation of these two functions, the defence of India and the defence of the security area, by the separation of the India Command from the Supreme Command of South-East Asia.

The Indian security sphere covers the entire Indian Ocean area. The interest that India has in the security of the Persian Gulf, the integrity and stability of Persia and Afghanistan, the neutralisation of Sinkiang and Tibet and the security of Burma, Thailand and the Indo-Chinese coastline, apart of course from Malaya and Singapore, is obvious enough to all. In fact, with the changes in the technique of warfare, the area of security for India has become well defined. Situated strategically in the middle of this area, with her defence directly affected by conditions prevailing across her borders, India has to become the pivot of an organisation meant to preserve peace.

Historically this is the logical extension of the great Ring Fence Policy which the strategists of the East India Company from Hastings to Dalhousie had followed. Defining this system, Warren Hastings wrote as follows to Colonel

Champion:—

"We engaged to assist the Wazir (of Oudh) in reducing the Rohilla country under his dominion, that the boundary of his possession may be completed, by the Ganges forming a barrier. This our alliance with him and the necessity for maintaining this alliance....was rendered advantageous to the Company's interest because the security of his possessions in that quarter is the security of ours."

The history of British expansion in India may be epitomised as a continuous moving forward of the Ring Fence, first to the boundary of Oudh, then to Delhi, then to the Sutlej and to the present frontier. Lord Curzon, who gave to the Ring Fence system its modern interpretation, was the theorist of the Buffer State as against the subsidiary alliance, but essentially the system is the same. "National Frontiers" was a subject to which Lord Curzon had given much attention, and his Romanes lecture on the subject gives clear evidence of his appreciation of the problem in terms of Indian security.

In fact, it is not too much to say that the Ring Fence now surrounding India is predominantly Curzon's handiwork. Since the time of Sir John Malcolm, he was the one person who had a realistic appreciation of the importance of Persia. It was his foresight that neutralised Tibet, though he was accused by Lord Morley of running an independent foreign policy as if he were the Moghul Emperor reigning at Delhi—a compliment more than an accusation, when one comes to think of it. It was also during his time that the status of Siam as a Buffer State was finally determined. The security area from the land side was determined with great foresight by Lord Curzon.

The weakest link in the Curzon system of Ring Fence was on the naval side. Curiously enough, he had no appreciation of naval problems, as a very remarkable passage in his lecture on the Frontier shows. In the result, he did not attach the same importance to Socotra, Mauritius and Singapore as he did to Teheran, Kabul and Lhasa. The conception of the Indian Ocean area was unfamiliar to him, and in this matter he was truly in the line of the Great Moghuls.

The Indian Ocean area with Afghanistan, Sinkiang and Tibet as the outer northern ring constitute the real security region of India. Geographically also this is one strategic unit, with India as its great air and land centre and as the base and arsenal of its naval power. From the central triangle of India the whole area can be controlled and defended. To create the political and military institutions necessary for this defence is the primary problem.

A Regional Council consisting of Britain, India and the other units of the area is the first step necessary for such a scheme of defence. This Council will be a higher political organisation, which will be charged with the planning of the defence of the entire region. The requirements of the area from every point of view, its economic development, the utilisation of its natural resources for coordinated defence purposes, the organisation of research into matters connected with security, the formulation of a general foreign and trade policy, in so far as it may affect the military potential of the area, the direct administration of certain strategic centres like Singapore and Aden—these will be matters directly within the range of the Regional Council.

The India Command must naturally provide the executive arm of the Council in peace time and in a large measure even in war time. No doubt, the Council will work out the extent of responsibility of each unit, but, apart from England, the disparity between India and the other units of the area is so great that their share in the responsibility for providing the machinery of defence will be comparatively small. That responsibility must in the main be shared between England and India.

England's share in the liability of defence must continue to be heavy, but it will necessarily be limited to those spheres in which she cannot act effectively even if she is threatened or attacked in Europe, or is involved in a war with a major Power on the continent. Her share, therefore, can be defined as the maintenance of the security of the sea lanes and routes from Europe and America to the Indian Ocean; adequate naval support to the Indian and Regional forces for offensive and defensive operations in the area of combat; co-operation in the maintenance of air superiority and generally of affording technical assistance at the highest level as a partner in the defence of the area.

Britain's political and strategic interests in this area will by no means be inconsiderable, even assuming the independence of the units of the region. Her Colonial Empire in East Africa, her influence and authority in the Middle East, her access to the raw materials of the tropical East and her position in the Pacific

generally, apart from the safety of her sea and air routes to Australia—all these are mixed up with the security of the Indian defence area. Her trade with China and India, two of the world's greatest markets, is also of primary concern to her prosperity and strength. Great Britain, therefore, has an undoubted responsibility in her own interest to defend this area and, therefore she is not undertaking a responsibility which she would otherwise not have had to face.

If a Defence Council with the range of functions indicated above is set up, and the work of organising the security of the region is entrusted to it, the main problem which such an organisation will have to face may be defined as the creation of a high standard of technical efficiency in India itself. The actual burden of defence will necessarily fall on India, and, unless the interval of peace is utilised to create in India the minimum standard of national efficiency required for the conduct of a modern war, the whole scheme will fail as a result of India's incapacity to share her part of the burden. How is India to be provided in as short a time as possible with at least that minimum of technical efficiency in the wide range of her war potential? This is the crucial question. The solution for it lies in a large scale technical mission meant to help India to attain the highest standards of technical efficiency. When there was actually the danger of India's communications with England being cut off, this problem presented itself in an acute manner, and the Grady Mission and the Eastern Supply Council were the improvised measures meant to meet that situation.

In planning the defence for the future, we have to start with the assumption arising from the developments in the technique of warfare that at some moment the communication between England and India may be severed. Therefore, to put India in a state of industrial and technical preparedness should be one of the immediate objectives of Indo-British co-operation. That will be possible, if there is a joint technical mission whose business will be to create the minimum national efficiency in every sphere necessary for defence. The services of this joint technical mission should be available also to the other units, especially in the spheres where they have special responsibilities allotted to them.

The defence machinery of the Indian Ocean area will, therefore, consist of a Supreme Security Council of which Britain, India and the other units of the region will be members. This Council will work in close co-operation with the Imperial Defence Committee and the Imperial General Staff in England and such other regional organisations that may exist within the Commonwealth. It will have technical and research organisations directly under it in order that the latest achievements of science could be worked out in terms of defence potential.

This is the outline of India's policy towards the countries of the Indian Ocean area as I visualise it. It is based on the freedom, equal development and political stability of India's neighbours, her own national interests of security and generally speaking in the interests of peace. It does not in any manner conflict with the scheme adopted by the United Nations at San Francisco, and I firmly believe that the future of Britain and India lies in the steady pursuit of the policy broadly outlined above.

# THE LAST YEAR IN ITALY

By Colonel G. T. Wheeler.

IT has been said that the British Army studies the tactical lessons of its law war so assiduously that it is usually ready to fight it by the time the next war begins. Let it be said at once that no attempt will be made here to study tactical lessons with future wars in view. In any case it would be useless to claim otherwise, for presumably in the next war everyone will be blown by atomic energy, unprotected and unprotesting, into a quieter world. No study or knowledge will be needed for the passage.

The last year of the war was undoubtedly the best for the Righth Amy. It had almost everything it needed and the Germans almost nothing. In fact conditions were approximately the reverse of the first year of Desert warfar. An extra advantage in our favour was that in 1944 our Intelligence was much better than the German Intelligence was in 1941. We suffered very few surprises after the Anzio beach adventure.

In June 1944 the German Armies were in full retreat up the western half of Italy. The British Eighth and American Fifth Army were in pursuit. The Allied Air Forces were taking a heavy toll of German transport, and of their fighting vehicles. By the time the enemy had re-established his front about 100 miles north of Rome, he was decidedly inferior to our forces. His air force was virtually powerless; and he had less than a hundred tanks left. We had an immense air force and more than twelve hundred tanks ready to operate whenever required. He had sufficient artillery to make life uncomfortable in the forward areas, but we had so much that the movement of a single German was often engaged by more than a battery of field or even Medium artillery. We must have had more than ten times his shell power.

The relative strength in infantry is difficult to express. Mere numbers are valueless because one cannot compare a disgruntled Pole, forced into the German army and posted on the Dalmatian Coast with, say a private soldier of the Rifle Brigade driving joyously into Florence. We had only a small preponderance in numbers of Infantry divisions, but ours were stronger in both numbers and quality of men. An exception to this must be made in the case of two German Parachute Divisions and two Panzer Grenadier Divisions; these were among the best of the whole German army and were good in every way.

The characteristic of a good enemy division which is most apparent to out troops is that we never "get away" with anything. They are no more active than a poor division during a quiet period, in fact they are usually less so. But a careless patrol or raid will fail expensively every time. One of the worst tasks forward troops could be asked to do was to capture a prisoner off one of these German Divisions. Later on it became easier as their morale weakened; and, like all the others, their morale broke before the end.

June and July of 1944 were spent in hammering on at the enemy, who disputed each line of hills back to his Gothic Line. It was a fairly simple process. Each division packed all available artillery on to a Brigade sector and then

attacked, usually at night. The Germans frequently had orders to retire when attacked; in which case casualties were light. If they had orders to hold on the attack was not so happy. It usually succeeded in reaching its objective but was then immediately counter-attacked with vigour and skill. Some very costly battles resulted from these counter-attacks.

The "hill-hopping" tactics were not popular with the troops. It was hard slogging and seemed to give no tangible results, for each successive position was very like the last, and the Germans always managed to slip away in time. There was, at that time, a current joke that a senior officers' course was required for Brigadiers. Each Brigadier would be taken to the top of a hill, given an imaginary lay-out of his troops on that hill and asked what he would do.

"I would attack that high-ground in front of me, because it overlooks my position," would have been the invariable answer—or so the story went.

The next day the procedure would be repeated, and again and again, until he answered:

"I would stay where I . . . . well am."

Then he would have passed the course and could return to his brigade.

Of course it was very little to do with any brigadier, as he was only carrying out the accepted policy. The policy worked all right, though German prisoners admitted that it would have been much worse from their point of view if we had taken two consecutive hill-ranges in one operation; as that would have over-run their mortar positions and reaped a much richer harvest at less than double the cost of a single range.

When the time for the Gothic Line battle approached the Army Commander addressed all unit C. O's, and higher. This was a custom in the Eighth Army which had been started by General Montgomery, as he then was. The Army Commander gave his plan in some detail. He was very optimistic of the plan being successful, though it had no novel features.

In the event it was only a very partial success and casualties were fairly heavy. The Germans were able to move reinforcements across the front to meet it faster than was expected. They achieved this by moving in small battle groups based on an Infantry brigade. These groups moved at night, so offered no target to our Air Forces. Albert Kesselring was undoubtedly a very astute defensive general, with a wonderful ability for restoring an awkward situation.

By the time our attack had lost its momentum the winter rains had begun and both sides started digging in. For the rest of the winter the infantry had a really comfortless life. There were very few spare divisions, so periods of rest were rare. In the line the men lived in watery slit-trenches; and were kept on the alert by their proximity to the enemy. The previous winter had been one of long patrols through a wide no-man's-land, but at the end of 1944 neither side was prepared to sacrifice ground for comfort.

The front line passed through two entirely different types of country. In the east it lay in the dead flat, irrigated Po valley. In the centre and west it was still in the northern slopes of the Apennines. The plain sector was by far the more uncomfortable. Both ourselves and the enemy held the line thickly, and in some places there was virtually no No-man's-land at all. Particularly

was this so on the River Senio. The river has high flood banks on either sile; a cross section of the river is like this:



A -Dugouts.

B-Fire trench slits.

C-Low wire entanglement.

The enemy held both flood banks, and his positions were deeply dug into both of them. He used every sort of device of tunnelling, mining and wing, and occasionally flooded our positions by blowing a gap in the bank. Futurately it was an exceptionally dry winter and he had few opportunities of deing this.

Many people expressed many theories on the best way of tacking the enemy in this queer situation. The two main schools of thought wenter "backward" and the "forward" schools. The former said keep the F. D. Is about four hundred yards from the bank, so that the depth of vines screen year from view, and then let him patrol up to you if he likes; you will meet him expour own ground. The new Army Commander, General McCreery, favored this method; and both the New Zealanders and the Canadians adopted it. Some of the New Zealanders added an additional refinement in that they lived whely in houses, booby-trapped the doors and never went outside at all. Fool we taken in through a back window. It was a real example of going into winter quarters; and it did the job adequately with virtually no casualties.

The British Divisions as a rule adopted the "forward" policy. They pushed as close to the enemy as they could get and then lived a rather perilous existence some few yards from the bottom of the near bank. When opportunity offered they attacked the near bank and held as much of it as they could, which meant that each side held one side of a high bank and there grenades at the other. To complicate things further, these attacks almost invariably failed in some places, so in these the enemy still held the whole bank, with the result that both sides fired at each other in full enfilade along the

The "forward" policy was a costly to our men, and unpopular with the units who had to adopt it. It was justified by the Divisional and Brigade Commanders on the grounds that it caused the enemy a lot of casualties. Prisoners who were captured never confirmed this, and it is unlikely to be true because the absence of No-man's-land prevented our artillery from shelling the enemy F. D. L's. When the big attack on the Senio was launched it made little difference whether the start line was forward or back, because those that were forward had to come back in any case to get clear of the preliminary bombard-ment.

The winter in the hills was more pleasant, though it was certainly no pionic. The climate was the worst enemy; rain, snow and mud. The enemy

No-man's-land, as there is bound to be in hilly country. This gave patrols a chance, and produced a general feeling of having some elbow-room.

There was one feature common to both plains and hills. It was a desperate shortage of houses. The reason for this was twofold. First, the area had been, and still was, the scene of continuous battles; and, secondly, there was no readily available road-metalling either in the Po valley or on the northern slopes of the Apennines. Most houses had been damaged by bombs or shells so were an easy prey to the Sappers' bull-dozers. These literally razed the houses to the ground; lorries then carted the bricks, stones and tiles away for road making. The wood-work was soon taken for firewood. It must have been ghastly for the farmers when they returned to their houses after we had passed on. They would have found a bare square of land where their houses had stood, and nothing left with which to rebuild. "Povero Italia" was a common expression among them, and will remain a truth for many years to come. The destruction in Italy, particularly of road and railway bridges, was terrific.

The final attack in Italy began in March. It was as usual preceded by a talk by the Army Commander to all unit commanders and higher. It was a very different talk from the previous one. General McCreery detailed his plan quietly. It included several novel features, the most important of which was the use of the strategic Air bomber force to break the morale of the enemy's forward troops. He made no claims for the merit of his plan. He stated simply that it was his best effort on our behalf. If it succeeded it would be because of us; if it failed it would be because of him. One left with a feeling that one was going to fight for one's own cause, not for someone else's.

The handling of the attack was also very different from that on the Gothic line. We felt from the start that it was being controlled by a master-hand which was always several moves ahead of the enemy. Such was, in fact, the case.

The strategic bombing was prepared with great care. The leaders of the Air formations flew over the target area beforehand so that they could see what the target looked like. When the real attack began the formations flew in along a wireless beam and met a cross-beam at the point where it became safe to bomb. As a double insurance an A. A. barrage was put up 5,000 feet below the aircraft, also at the safety bombing line. In spite of these precautions two waves, out of a total of over forty, dropped their bombs on our own troops, and caused a certain number of casualties. In each case the mistake was due to the extreme similarity between all the rivers which run into the Po. They run parallel to each other and are all about the same size. Even from the ground it is difficult to tell one from another. Two waves, not on the same front incidentally, decided to work to their knowledge of the target area rather than to the safety devices of beam and flak. Each bomber was carrying an enormous number of 20 lb. bombs. Those who were in the area of the mistaken bombing said it was like a terrifying thunder-storm rushing towards them, and they confirmed the Army Commander's belief that it was bad for one's morale.

The line of the Senio was captured with no delay and very light casualties. The next river followed the next day, and from then on the enemy was given no time to move his reserves to where they were needed. Nor did he ever reform his whole line again. In many ways the battle was handled as Foch handled the last battles of 1918; an unceasing series of blows, each delivered at the time and place where it would hurt the enemy most.

The attack of the American Fifth Army on the left (west) of the Eighth Army, started a week later than the Eighth Army attack. It was the left arm of the pincer. It also went according to plan. The most remarkable feature of it was the astonishing mobility shown by the American 10th Mountain Division. This Division was composed largely of the people we know as "Hill Billies," whose habits we study in Esquire. It had been very highly trained in America and only arrived in Italy at the end of 1944, so was completely fresh. We heard they had swept the Germans out of the northern slopes of the Apennines, and it seemed the next day that we heard they had reached the Alps. How they did it, we never heard; perhaps "Gramma" was after them with her chopper.

All serious fighting on the Eighth Army front ended at the Po. The Air Force did a wonderful job at all the crossings; and the Germans left virtually all their heavy arms south of the river. They were very disorganised when they reached it, and even more so after they had crossed it. The final stages of our pursuit saw many incidents which could never have been overlooked by the stewards of the roughest race course. Senior officers in jeeps, cavalry regiments in armoured cars and even whole Divisions were liberating towns with a complete disregard for the rules about bumping and boring. The final surrender came as a surprise to the forward troops. We had no idea the enemy was in quite such bad case.

The three days which followed the news were rather dangerous; everyone celebrated in his own way. A lot decided to do so by firing off their weapons into the air; which was all right up till about 8 p.m. but after that many had lost the power of distinguishing between horizontal and vertical and bullets whistled merrily through the undergrowth.

It lends tone to a military article to finish with a few well-chosen lessons. In this case the lessons will have no relation to the article, but that will not make it unique among military writings.

Long after the last war a committee was convened to study the enduring lessons of that war. The results were published as the Bartholomew Report. One of the main lessons they adduced was that unnecessary aggressive action tends to lower rather than raise morale; and that the British soldier does not, in fact, lose his offensive spirit if allowed a period of passive defence. The winter campaign in Italy amply confirmed this theory. The British Divisions lost a lot of mon by their policy of pushing at the enemy wherever and whenever they could; and they gained no ground that mattered a hoot so far as the final attack was concorned. When the attack came it was noticeable that these Divisions were tired, and lacked the dash of the New Zealanders and Canadians who had taken things easier. It may be a hard thought, but it seemed in many cases that British commanders were driving their men to unnecessary aggressive action to further their own reputation. A sort of rivalry between neighbouring commanders seemed to arise. That is unforgiveable. There is no commander in the world who has the right to sacrifice the life of a single man in the cause of his own reputation. The atomic bomb will not change that solemn fact.

This last year in Italy saw the final product of a very highly organised amonity organization. It is probable that it will be used as a model for the future. Many unit commanders would say "God forbid" to that idea, not because it was bad, but because it missed its true psychological purpose. Let us consider what the most useful amenities are. Most men would put a bath

and a regular mail service top. The mobile bath units in Italy were often within walking distance of the forward troops and always within short motoring distance; they provided a change of underclothes which was the most popular feature of them. The mails were well organised and a Divisional move only delayed the arrival of mail by a few days.

Cinema-shows in the forward area were attended by surprisingly few. The cinema is largely a habit, and it is obviously impossible for a forward troop to develop the habit.

Extra food is only helpful when it is a definite addition to the rations, like the issue of turkey at Christmas. Producing a few sweets in B Echelon area is not a workable amenity; for, however carefully the distribution is planned the forward troop will always get less than the rear-ward one; or at any rate will think he has, which comes to the same thing. Rations are so good in war that the men's stomachs are not good media for morale-raising. So much for the forward areas, where admittedly there is not much scope.

In rest areas the men want to get their clothes and equipment into good order and to relax their bodies, and minds. In Italy the amenity services were somewhat concentrated on producing a gay town life. This has three grave disadvantages. First, it does not prepare a man to go back into the line, it makes him dread the return; secondly, it tends to make him resentful of the Base troops, who are obviously enjoying that sort of life all the time; and lastly it is, at best, a cheap imitation of the real thing. It does no good to a man to see a rather shoddy Ensa "leg-show" the day before he returns to the line, particularly if he sees the ladies of the show returning to supper in the Officers' Mess of a Base Workshop after it is over. Female legs and Base Workshops are both Profitless thoughts in a slit-trench.

This is all destructive; and what else can a soldier be? It is the psychologist's job to say how you rest a man's mind in preparation for further hardship. He should be asked. The amateur or professional amenity officer can arrange for his mind to be diverted away from hardship; but that is not the object.

The R. A. F. establish mountain camps where they send their air crews for recuperation. The life is more like that of a Cumberland shepherd than that of a London play-boy.

The only naval rating I have ever seen on a rest period, was walking down a side-street singing "Don't fence me in"; and appeared to be in no need of psycho-analysis.

## Flying 100 Years Ago

"It was just over a hundred years ago, in 1830, that one of the first bogus companies was formed, called the Aeronautical Association, by gentlemen in London who invited and obtained large sums of money from the public to engage in balloon flights of survey and exploration over Equatorial Africa.

"A year or two later there was the case of the 'Eagle', an airship built and set up in a by-way of Kensington in 1835. A large number of tickets were sold to the public, advertising that it would conduct a regular service between London and Paris. Later an infuriated mob broke up the machine."—Mr. C. Shawcross, M.P., speaking in the House of Commons.

#### "SAFE IN BRITISH HANDS AT SINGAPORE"

BY CHARLOTTE BUDD.

HAVE you ever thought what it would be like to arrive in a country without any money and not to miss it; without any newspapers or radio; in fact without any signs of life from the outer world? That was life such as I found it in Java during September and the first weeks of October, 1945. Nobody had any money; nothing could be paid for. Everyone signed for everything—but no one knew who would have to redeem-those chits one day....

The journey by plane from Singapore to the island was fascinating. The Java Sea is strewn with small islands, covered with thick forests, encircled in a border of golden seas and, bathed in sunlight, floating, as it were, on an ever-moving cloth of green and gold brocade. Java looked pretty from the air. It was difficult to imagine that just then this island harboured so many dark passions.

From Tandjong Priok, where the Sunderlands descend, a long, straight, dull road stretches itself to Batavia along an equally long, straight, dull canal. Why the road is there is not clear; hardly a soul ever walks along it, and in view of this fact the presence of extremist sentries standing guard with rifle and bayonet complete seemed aimless.

Batavia was full of cars and other extremely quick-moving vehicles, driven by Indonesians. All these vehicles, including tram-cars, also houses and walls, carried the nationalist colours (red and white) and displayed blood-curdling slogans in Malai, Dutch and English.

Hôtel des Indes made a staggering impression. Before the war it was the best-known hotel of the Dutch East Indies. Stout Dutchmen used to sit at small tables, eating steadily and stubbornly from plates piled up with rice, long streams of Javanese waiters, one behind the other, winding themselves between all these tables, each waiter serving one of the 20 to 25 dishes that constitute the famous rijstafel. Except for the gentle tinkle of spoons and forks and the dreamy music from the orchestra at the back of the dining hall, no other sound was heard in the whole hotel.

Now the place was full of noisy and nervous activity. It was overcrowded with refugees from the camps, most of them trying to act as RAPWI authorities, far from successfully. The perpetuum mobile seemed to have been reached here. The confusion was beyond description. No one seemed to know or do anything; yet everyone was frightfully and constantly busy. Enquirers were stared at aghast; the only information given invariably consisted of directing enquirers to room number so and so; the person there might be able to give information; which he did; he referred the enquirer to room such and such.

It was obvious that no one could achieve anything in this moving chaos, where the Dutch, tired to death, moved against, almost through each other, with unseeing eyes and pale haggard faces. The place was a nightmare—yet not the worst one in Batavia.

There was hardly anything to eat; breakfast consisted of a cold, leathery egg, having been fried the evening before, and some fruit. It was difficult to have lunch; one was either too late or too early; the exact lunch time few found

Digitized by GOOGLE

out. There was a kind of sago bread, just like rubber, which had to be chewed and chewed and chewed. No one got beyond that. Of the dinners, bananas formed the best part.

For those having known the hotel in its halcyon days, the sight of all these pale, emaciated Dutchmen, eating and chewing in deep silence, grimly, without a smile, without a word, was most depressing. One knew the horror that gripped all those hearts: most of them had their wives and children still in camps in the interior, in danger of being murdered. Everyone spoke in whispers, probably due to camp life, and the general suspicion of each other and everyone else; of each other, because everyone now tried to obtain the best job; of everyone else, because the Japanese General Staff was still in Hôtel des Indes, an infuriated Indonesian population was waiting for them outside the Hôtel gates, and the British were there starting to liquidate the question of the Japanese prisoners of war and repatriation of their own prisoners and internees, but was it not more likely that the British meant to steal their Colony?

During a whole week only once a child's sudden, loud laughter was heard in the hotel; everyone looked round, a few women started; the mother scolded it shrilly.

If Hôtel des Indes was depressing beyond hope, Tjidang Camp was horror itself. It consists of a city quarter on the outskirts of the town, with a few streets lined with bungalows, the whole closed in by barbed wire. Normally this city quarter might house perhaps 1,000 persons. In October there were still nearly 10,000 women and children.

Consequently the place was incredibly full; children were all insufficiently dressed and went about barefooted; most of the women, too; their way of dressing would have been considered most daring at a seaside resort. The filth and dirt were incredible; the deep gutters lining the roads were filled with mud. Refuse was simply thrown on the streets more or less á la Calcutta, but there at least bins are provided.

All the rooms in the bungalows were overcrowded; a small side room of 8 by 12 feet generally housed four people, bedding being spread on the floor; while in a normal-sized drawing room 12 to 14 persons lived: each minute kitchen even contained a bed; the cooking was done by the women outside. The confusion was unbelievable: the streets were filled with half-clad women and young boys, carrying tubs of water between them; or plates heaped with rice; everywhere women were sitting on the ground cooking something in pots on earthen fire places built before the houses; again other women and children were washing clothes fiercely, passionately. And yet with all this dashing about and grim work nothing was clean, nothing was tidy.

There was a "hospital" too, improvised in another bungalow; it was rather clean inside; but 10 beds in one living room; and the backyard packed with cases and dirt and heaps of refuse. An old Scotch lady of over 70 was there too, with a broken hip, but certainly not with a broken spirit; a bright, sparkling ray of sunshine in this place of gloom and suffering.

And there was also an asylum towards the outside of the camp; the place might have been servants' quarters in the olden days; each demented woman was by herself in a dark little room. Like that the poor wretches in the Middle Ages must have been housed. However, there was no better place for them, and they were anyway safer inside the camp than outside.

These thousands of women and children had been living for three and a half years in Tjidang Camp, where they had no privacy, nor rest, and to that had now been added the daily anxiety of the riots going on outside and of the possibility of them all being murdered one day.

By and by many of these women and children found their way to Singapore, all being evacuated by plane; one of the rest camps in Singapore was Sea View Hotel, and soon the first cables were sent from there to Holland: "Safe in British hands at Singapore." They arrived in batches, exhausted, stumbling out of the lorries that brought them from the airfield; the women with the same sallow, pale faces, with dresses that screamed poverty, children shy and clumsy, with the sly, suspicious look born from 3½ years' fear of the Jap. The first few days the kiddies would just sit on the steps of their rooms overlooking the sea, staring vacantly, more like old men and women than little boys and girls of seven and eight. It took a few days before they could be persuaded to run about wherever they wanted and that the Jap would not come and beat them.

Most women burst into tears on entering the rooms allotted to them; such a lot of space, privacy again, running water, English tubs, beds and fans and mosquito nets; British Red Cross girls, with happy, cheerful faces, awaiting them at the lorries, welcoming them, helping them with their luggage (and such poor luggage too, just one or two very small bundles), making their beds ready, taking the kiddies along with them to have some food and coaxing them to the FANY'S canteen for chocolate and cake. In a few days the little old men and women had vanished and happy children were romping about, giggling, laughing, playing, running and screaming, and altogether making far too much noise.

The women were pitifully thankful for all the help given. A few of them remarked that the thing that struck them most when coming to Sea View was the fact that they were asked to do things, never ordered. In the beginning many indulged in describing the horrors they had gone through; most stories were terrible enough. It was good policy to listen patiently to them; most of them wanted to have it off their chest. But once they had told their tale they were encouraged never to look back again upon the terrors that lay behind them but to look ahead, where so much work was waiting for them.

There were two amongst the hundreds who passed through Sea View who had realized that even life in a Japanese internment camp can have its funny side; they never spoke about the horrors and they had been in a worse camp than Tjidang Camp; they came from Sumatra. It was a pleasant change to sit with them now and then and listen to their description of camp life. They had managed to save a few bits of jewellery, an engagement ring and a wedding ring, from the Japanese.

Here is their prescription of how to hide jewellery from camp authorities. You melt candle wax, in which the rings are sunk, after which you knead it artistically into a clumsy lump; you then roll it in the mud and for all the world it then looks like a common stone: after that you throw it carelessly anywhere in the compound. When you are very clever, you make several of such stones to avoid too much attention being paid to the only one, the precious one; but that of course has the drawback that suddenly you do not know any more which is the precious one and which are the sham ones. A great deal of anxiety is then gone

Digitized by GOOGLE

through and much remelting in the dead of night. Now and then you lose your stone altogether, having forgotten where you threw it, like a dog having forgotten where he buried his bone, or a cat who can't remember where she hid her kittens.

The Red Cross stores at Sea View made the former internees gasp with wonder. The first consignments of Red Cross stores were sent to Singapore by the Australians; and what quantities and what good things they sent! Everything was of the best, and this fact more than anything else has helped to make the tired, slovenly, women real women again so soon, dying to use the lovely things given to them; there were celanese nighties and slips and undies; soft woollies for children; night gowns for babies (many of the children, born in camp, had never had a night dress in their life) lipstick, rouge, powder, mirrors; knitting wool for the women; pipes and tobacco for the men (a second lot of wool and pipe was sent out by fast airmail by the Indian Red Cross, when the first consignment was exhausted).

It was good to see them sitting on the lawn, the woman knitting happily away, comparing patterns and stitches with each other; the latter dreamily smoking their pipes; the children playing under supervision of the Red Cross girls, or going out in trucks and "bucks" for drives through the town and in the harbour. There were also frequent visits to British warships where everyone was entertained lavishly by the Navy; there were cinema shows at Sea View every other night; musical recitals; Church Services, kindergarten and English classes, knitting circles, a library and games. Off and on there was an ENSA show, the one where Marie Honri sang and played being extremely successful; she sang her songs in many languages she even sang one in Afrikaans. By the way, if you have a chance to hear Marie Honri, don't fail to do so.

Generally once every two weeks a batch of RAPWI's left Sea View, off to the ship that would take them to the U.K. and thence to Holland. And all were invariably sorry to leave a place where they had had such a happy time.

Christmas approached and the Red Cross girls decided to give all the 80 children, amongst whom were several Swiss children, a grand Christmas. Preparations went ahead in their rooms at night, but soon it leaked out that the "Sisters" were making things ready for Christmas and then suddenly they all came forward to help. When Christmas Day dawned the excitement in the Hotel was great; the Officers' Mess was decorated; tables laid out; a Christmas tree stood in the corner of the room; besides all the tables carried numerous exquisite little Christmas trees, made by British Navy friends. Under the tree the presents were spread out, several for each child, packed in coloured paper, the latter obtained at great pains in Singapore's bazaar. The children sat down at the feast; the Christmas story was told by one of the former Dutch internees, then suddenly there was a noise outside.

Father Christmas himself had arrived by staff car, and not one of the adults in the Hotel recognized in the dear old gentleman, Bob Gerber, the Swiss-Hotel Manager. He presented the gifts to each child with a little speech. All the toys had been supplied by the Indian Red Cross, collected from children in India; it was a pity that the tiny givers could not see the boundless joy of the little boys and girls who received their toys.

And then the children had their surprise for the British Red Cross Sisters; one of the elder ones started playing her violin and then they all sang with heavy Dutch accents, yet so sweetly as only little children's voices can sing,

an English carol. Two verses they sang, even the tiny tots, and when one considers that not one of these children spoke a word of English, one can imagine how much hard work even the little ones had put in to master these two verses.

When the feast was over, they all trotted off in their pretty Australian frocks and suits; each family of children received their own little Christmas tree with candles to burn in their rooms.

One hour afterwards the lorries came to carry some 45 guests off to the ship, which was leaving that evening for the U.K. The children were helped into the lorries. Father and Mother were allowed to carry their toys for them; but not one parted with his or her Christmas tree, clutching it tightly, while the British Officers hoisted them in the lorries. And so they went off to Holland.

Has all the work done for the RAPWI's been worth while? Certainly. It gave back to all those who passed through this Hotel in Singapore their confidence and trust in human nature; it has helped to make the children happy, fearless children again; it has enabled these former internees to help first themselves and afterwards others: how many women in the hotel stepped forward to help and knit woollies for the Red Cross Store, when babies' woollies started running short. And at least in Sea View a spirit of friendship and mutual appreciation has grown up between British and Dutch.

And to those who through the war years worked for, and gave generously to, the Indian Red Cross go out in full measure the warm thanks of thousands of P.O.Ws. and internees, who will for ever remember that in the midst of a terrible war the spirit of Christian charity flourished.

### Indian Army Wins Over 6,000 Awards

Nearly 6,300 awards have so far been made to the Indian Army for gallantry and meritorious services during the late war. Awards for gallantry alone total about 4,800. These include 31 Victoria Crosses, four George Crosses, 252 Distinguished Service Orders, 347 Indian Orders of Merit and 1,311 Military Crosses.

The Infantry has earned about 4,000 awards, including 29 V.Cs., one George Cross, 29 M.Cs. and 446 Distinguished Service Orders, while the Royal Indian Engineers and the Royal Indian Army Service Corps, each have about 350 awards to their credit. Of the 300 awards won by the Indian Armoured Corps, 21 are Distinguished Service Orders and 88 Military Crosses.

The invaluable and gallant services rendered by Army doctors to front line troops have earned the Indian Army Medical Corps 140 awards for gallantry alone, among them eight Distinguished Service Orders and 70 Military Crosses.

Over a hundred awards go to the India Army Signal Corps. One Distinguished Service Order and 8 Military Crosses are among them.

The Indian Artillery have over a hundred awards, which include one Victoria Cross, six Distinguished Service Orders and 38 Military Crosses,

### FIELD-MARSHALS OF THE INDIAN ARMY

BY BRIGADIER H. BULLOCK, O.B.E., F.R. HIST. S.

THE Indian Army has had twelve Field-Marshals, the first of whom attained that rank in 1870 and the latest in 1926. My present purpose is not to give an account of their military careers, which are for the most part well known, but to examine them as a class. For, viewed as such from various angles, they present some unusual features.

A full list is given at the end of this article, but their names, in order of promotion, with some basic dates, may conveniently be tabulated:—

Home.		Born.	First Commis- sioned.	Became F.M.	Died.	
						:
Pollock	• • •		1786	1803	1870	1872
Napier			1810	1828	1883	1890
Grant	••		1804	1820	1883	1895
Stewart	• •		1824	1840	1894	1900
Roberts	• •	]	1832	1851	1895	1914
Chamberlain	• •		1820	1837	1900	1902
Norman	••		1826	1844	1902	1904
Brownlow	••		1831	1847	1908	1916
Egerton	• •		1848	1867	1917	1921
Barrett			1857	1875	1921	1926
Birdwood	• •		1865	1885*	1925	1020
Jacob	• •		1863	1882	1926	

The age on promotion varies from 84 (Pollock) and 80 (Chamberlain) to 60 (Birdwood), and the length of service on promotion from 67 years (Pollock) to 40 years (Birdwood). The average age is 70\frac{3}{4} years, and the average service 53 years.

The strength and establishment of Field-Marshals of the Indian Army have varied. Originally there was nothing in the way of a fixed allotment. After the first (Pollock) died in 1872 after two years' tenure, there was no further promotion until 1883 (Napier), followed a few months later by another (Grant); but Napier was doubtless regarded as technically a Royal Engineer and not Indian Army. Grant, however, was still alive in 1894 when a second undeniable Bengal Infantry officer (Stewart) was promoted; and then the Indian Army had three Field-Marshals de facto even if only two of them were considered de jure as of the Indian service. Roberts—probably reckoned officially as British service, though a former officer of the Company's —was promoted a few months after Grant's death.

<sup>\*</sup> Previously commissioned in Militia, 1883.

Henceforward the establishment was evidently a single Marshal, until the quota was doubled on the promotion of Sir William Birdwood in 1925; and at two it still remains.

The average age at death of the first ten was about 784, and their average tenure of the rank was about 54 years. The two others, happily still living, have considerably improved on this figure with scores of about 20 "not out." It is noteworthy that only four officers of the Indian Army have attained the supreme rank out of the many thousands who have entered it since the Crown took it over after the Mutiny, nearly ninety years ago. (The first eight on our list were all East India Company's officers). The rather depressing conclusion seems to be that, however long an Indian Army officer lives and serves, and whatever his capacity and attainments, his prospects of a Baton are so infinitesimally better than a nullity as to be indistinguishable therefrom.

For ten officers, all of whom have served thirty, forty, or more years in India in "pre-prophylaxis" days, to average 78 seems remarkable, but the very small cadre of Field-Marshals is not a representative cross-section of the Indian Army, partly because the rank itself necessarily depends on two factors, one of which is itself longevity, and the other is merit.

Of the twelve Marshals, the Bengal Army provided eleven, the Bombay Army one (Jacob), and the Madras Army none. Two were artillery officers (Pollock and Roberts), one a sapper (Napier), and one a cavalryman (Birdwood), the rest being from the Infantry.

Half of them were sons of army officers, but Sir Arthur Barrett's father was a clergyman, Lord Birdwood's a member of the I.C.S., and Sir George Pollock's a saddler. Stewart's father was a rather nebulous subaltern in a Scottish regiment of militia (in which he held the rank of lieutenant for fifty years!); Norman's, "an enterprising but not too fortunate a merchant" of Cuba and Calcutta; and Chamberlain's a diplomat-baronet.

Of all the fathers of Field-Marshals, the saddler had the most remarkable progeny. David Pollock, saddler to King George III, was father of Sir David, Chief Justice of Bombay; Sir Frederick, Lord Chief Baron of the Exchequer, was created a baronet; and Field-Marshal Sir George. Amongst the descendants of these three brothers are to be found many eminent men in various walks of life, far too numerous to mention here—examples are the late Viscount Hanworth and the Bishop of Norwich.

Each of the twelve Marshals had the G.C.B., but Roberts was the only one to receive the V.C., K.G., K.P., O.M., or (rather surprisingly) the G.C.I.E. He was also the only one to be created Viscount or Earl—Baron Roberts of Kandahar in Afghanistan and of the City of Waterford, in 1892, and Viscount St. Pierre and Earl Roberts of Kandahar in Afghanistan and Pretoria in the Transvaal Colony and of the City of Waterford, in 1901. The other peers are Napier (Baron Napier of Magdala in Abyssinia and Carynton in the County Palatine of Chester, 1868) and Birdwood (Baron Birdwood of Anzac and Totnes in the County of Devon, 1938). Pollock was created a Baronet "of the Khyber Pass" in 1872, some thirty years after his exploits there; and Lords Roberts and Birdwood were, before their elevation to the peerage, similarly rewarded in 1881 and 1919 respectively. Stewart also was made a Baronet, in 1881, for his service in the Second Afghan War.

Eight of the twelve had the G.C.S.I., the exceptions being Grant and Barrett (who both had the G.C.M.G., as has Lord Birdwood), Egerton and Brownlow, Lord Birdwood has the G.C.V.O.

Only four were "pucca" Commanders-in-Chief in India, Napier (1870-76), Stewart (1881-85), Roberts (1885-93) and Birdwood (1925-30), though only the last held the appointment as a Field-Marshal; but the office was held temporarily by Grant (1857) and Sir Claud Jacob (1925), as well as by Lord Birdwood in 1924. Roberts was C.-in-C. in Madras (1881-85), Ireland (1895-99), South Africa (1900-01), and finally Commander-in-Chief of the Forces (1901-04). Some others also held appointments as C.-in-C. outside India, e.g., Grant (Malta, 1867-72).

Though none of them was ever permanently appointed Viceroy and Governor-General of India, Napier acted as such for about ten days at the end of 1863, on the death of the Earl of Elgin, and Norman actually accepted the office in 1893 in succession to Lord Lansdowne, but changed his mind almost immediately. Napier was Governor and C.-in-C. of Gibraltar, (1876-83) and Norman Governor of Jamaica (1882-87) and then of Queensland (1889-95).

The post of Governor of Chelsea Hospital was held by Grant, Stewart and Norman, and that of Constable of the Tower of London by Pollock and Napier. Three were Commanders-in-Chief of the Madras Army (Grant, Roberts and Chamberlain), but only one (Napier) commanded the Bombay Army.

Brownlow's last and highest military command was the Rawalpindi Brigade, and thereafter his only military appointment was as Assistant Military Secretary to Field-Marshal H.R.H. the Duke of Cambridge, Commander-in-Chief of the Forces. After ten years in this post, he spent nearly twenty years on the shelf before receiving his Baton at the age of 76½. He is not even included in the Dictionary of National Biography, but he is the only one whose name is borne by a unit of the Indian Army—the Second Battalion (Duke of Cambridge's Own) (Brownlow's), 14th Punjab Regiment, which he raised as a subaltern in August 1857. Yet his case is not so strange as that of a comparatively recent Field-Marshal of the British Service, Lord Nicholson of Roundhay, who never commanded a unit or formation in peace or war, and who became Chief of the Imperial General Staff although he never went to the Staff College.

Grant's second wife was the daughter of a Field-Marshal, Viscount Gough. He married her at Simla in 1844. One of Napier's nine sons married a daughter of Field-Marshal Sir George White, V.C., G.C.B., O.M.,G.C.S.I., G.C.M.G., G.C.I.E., G.C.V.O. A son of Pollock's was killed at Moodkee, when serving as a lieutenant in the Bengal Horse Artillery; Lord Roberts' only surviving son died of wounds received at Colenso in 1899; and two of Egerton's sons were killed in the First World War.

We may conclude with a formal list:—

- Sir George Pollock, Bart., G.C.B., G.C.S.I., Promoted Field-Marshal, 6 June, 1870.
- Sir Robert Cornelis Napier, Baron Napier of Magdala, G.C.B., G.C.S.I.
   Promoted Field-Marshal, 1 January, 1883.
- 3. Sir Patrick Grant, G.C.B., G.C.M.G. Promoted Field-Marshal, 24 June, 1883.
- 4. Sir Donald Martin Stewart, Bart., G.C.B., G.C.S.I., C.I.E., Promoted Field-Marshal, 26 May, 1894.
- Sir Frederick Sleigh Roberts, V.C., K.G., K.P., O.M., P.C., G.C.B., G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., Earl Roberts of Kandahar and Pretoria. Promoted Field-Marshal, 25 May, 1895.

- 6. Sir Neville Bowles Chamberlain, G.C.B., G.C.S.L. Promoted Field-Marshal, 24 April, 1900.
- 7. Sir Henry Wylie Norman, G.C.B., G.C.M.G., C.I.E. Promoted Field-Marshal, 26 June, 1902.
- 8. Sir Charles Henry Brownlow, G.C.B. Promoted Field-Marshal, 20 June, 1908.
- 9. Sir Charles Comyn Egerton, G.C.B., D.S.O. Promoted Field-Marshal, 16 March, 1917.
- Sir Arthur Arnold Barrett, G.C.B., G.C.S.I., K.C.V.O., Promoted Field-Marshal, 12 April, 1921.
- Sir William Riddell Birdwood, Bart., Baron Birdwood of Anne, G.C.B., G.C.S.I., G.C.M.G., G.C.V.O., C.I.E., D.S.O. Promoted Field-Marshal, 20 March, 1925.
- Sir Claud William Jacob, G.C.B., G.C.S.I., K.C.M.G. Promoted Field-Marshal, 30 November, 1926.

Note.—Degrees honoris causa (LL.D., Litt. D., D.C.L., etc.) have not been included.

### **OUR INFANTRY**

By G. B. S.

WORLD War II, like all wars and small or large scale operations, has brought out some very good lessons, the most important being the value of Infantry in almost every type of land battle. Field-Marshal Montgomery is said to have once remarked "Infantry is perhaps the least spectacular of all arms in battles, but still without it you can do nothing, nothing, absolutely nothing."

The Atom bomb, which was about the greatest invention of this last War, can obliterate towns or portions of a country. The Air Force, Navy and the Artillery can cause unlimited destruction. The Tanks can encircle or break through to an objective and retain it for a limited period, but to hold a country, a town, a village or an area, Infantry is essential.

The terrain of a country, the weather, the rain, swamps, streams, maintenance difficulties and various other similar factors at one time or another draw a line beyond which the armour cannot go. The infallible foot soldier still keeps going. It is his ability to adapt himself to the circumstances so easily and in such a short time which makes the Infantry indispensable.

The changes that have come into the training of an Infantry soldier in various weapons and Infantry tactics and their employment in battle are almost phenomenal. He has to be able to fire very accurately the rifle, Bren Gun, Sten, pistol, M9A1, 36 Grenade, 2-inch and 3-inch mortars; to detect and lift booby traps and mines; to use wireless; and at times to carry out less technical engineering work. He has to be physically and mentally fit to fight efficiently on flat or broken ground, on mountains, in marsh or paddy at times more than waist deep, in thick jungle, in snow and in the worst of heat.

During attack, with armour in support, when the country becomes close, he leads the armour. In defence he has to destroy tanks with his M9A1, and very often take the first blow from the enemy's force before the armour and more Infantry can be manœuvred round to annihilate it. It is the spirit of adventure, personal courage, high morale and the traditional spirit of every man of this arm which enable him to fight battles single-handed on many occasions.

In view of what he has to perform in battle, it sounds odd, but is true, that the Infantry Sepoy does not get any Corps pay, with the result that when a man enlists, he normally picks a slightly more lucrative line unless he has some form of family link with an Infantry Regiment. A financier would say "That is all right. Our Infantry is still as good as any in the world." Too true, it is,

This article was redrafted by the author from manuscript notes left by the late, Lt.-Col. Sarbjit Singh Kalha, D.S.O., 1 PUNJAB Regt., who was killed in action near SOURABAYA in Eastern Java on January 11, 1946. Colonel Kalha was one of the outstanding Indian officers in the late war. He was commissioned in 1936, and after serving for a year with the Argyll and Sutherland Highlanders, he was posted to the 2 Bn. 1st Punjab Regt., which he was commanding when he died. He was awarded the D.S.O. for his conduct in the battle for Ngankyedauk Pass in Arakan, and received the decoration from the hands of His Majesty in 1944. He was the first Sikh officer to attend the Staff College, Camberley, to which he went in May, 1944. After returning to India in January 1945 he served as Brigade Major in Sialkot, and in August last again became Commanding Officer of his Regiment. His was the first unit to land on Singapore Island on September 5, 1945.

and in fact better than most. We must make it even better. We must make such scales for I. O. Rs. pay and allowances that when a civilian decides to join the armed forces of our country, his choice of arm should depend on his liking and his suitability for a particular arm rather than on a few more rupees.

The Specialists, Signals and Engineers, have always rightly had priority over the educated man enlisted into the army, because the areas from which our soldiers were taken were limited owing to the martial and non-martial theory, and many educated men were not coming forward as Sepoys. Now that the question of "martiality" does not arise, we have a much wider field to select the men from.

Every effort should be made to get men with some education into the Infantry. If the decision is made about having no more V. C. Os. in the Indian Army, we will need literacy in the ranks even more. A Sepoy must aspire to command his battalion before retiring, instead of at the stage of Subedar-Major or Subedar as at present. The idea of labouring up to the rank of Havildar and then retiring cannot be much incentive for the average man to enlist.

It is one thing to be an efficient soldier with character, good powers of command, initiative, sense of responsibility, sound professional knowledge and to win confidence of those above and under command. It is a different thing altogether to learn the least, do the least, have no sense of responsibility and be always trying to get into the least difficult or tiring job. The former is an efficient soldier and the latter is a liability to the country and to his unit and comrades.

When one comes to select a soldier from a crowd, one is very often impressed by the person who is outstanding on the drill-square and in training, and not so bright in the field. What we want is a man with a combination of guts, education, intellect, initiative and a high sense of responsibility in him. In spite of the improvement in the types of weapons, increasing numbers and their range, the success of the battle still depends largely on the guts of the man behind the weapon. This factor will always remain paramount.

In view of the present political situation in the country, even a glimpse into the future can only be limited. One thing, however, is certain, that India will have a larger Army than pre-war, and that all the lessons learnt during the late war will be embodied into its new organisation and administration. May I list a few of these lessons?

First, this war has taught us that Infantry is the main arm of land forces, others are mainly supporting. They help the Infantry forward. If the armour captures an objective Infantry must come to hold it. If armour breaks through an area, Infantry must mop up, clear and finally hold it. All these points only go to prove the famous remark of Field-Marshal Montgomery, quoted above. At the same time, it needs no explaining that without the active support throughout of other arms Infantry cannot advance very far, nor can it hold ground already captured.

We have also learnt that co-operation between Infantry and the supporting arms is essential. We must know each other before stepping on the battlefield. All those who have spent the major portion of the war with Indian Divisions appreciate how much it means to be back in one's own formation after a short spell away. It is imperative that we stay on as Divisions and move to the N.W. Frontier or back to India as a formation. While in India, Divisions should not be dispersed over an area of more than a hundred miles. Brigade groups should stay together, with temporary composite detachments away as necessary.

For example, Division H.Q. Group, Rawalpindi, with Brigade groups, JHELUM, ABBOTTABAD and MURREE.

The second obvious point is that Infantry must be given higher priority for selection of men.

Thirdly, the basic pay of the Indian Other Rank of every arm must be raised considerably from Rs. 18. Perhaps the financial authorities have worked out what the effects of elimination of V.C.Os, if it is decided upon, and introduction of Indian Commissioned Officers as Platoon Commanders, is going to be on the Indian Army budget. Whatever the implications, it is high time that the Sepoy's basic pay was brought up to a reasonable standard. Over and above that, he should also be granted marriage and children's allowance.

A suggestion is:

Sepoy's Basic Pay ... Rs. 45 p.m. Wife's allowance ... Rs. 20 p.m. Each child (up to max. of three) Rs. 10 p.m.

Further scale to the ranks of Naik and Havildar to be fixed accordingly.

Fourthly, the institution of the N.C.O's Messes must be introduced. It is one of the means of forming brotherhood among N.C.Os. and to understand and help each other. Its value in war needs no explaining.

Fifthly, our men must get to the stage of eating from the same kitchens. Our comrades in the R. I. N. and R. I. A. F. have done so ever since they were formed.

Sixthly, we must cut out the followers except sweepers. Everybody else should be a soldier, fit and trained.

Indian Infantry in this war again proved its gallantry, outstanding courage and everything else that goes to make an army first class. Other arms have taken no smaller share in achieving our victories and fame. We could not have done it without a thorough understanding of each other, living with each other during training, and by sharing trenches in thick battles.

For the first time in a major world war, our troops have had the opportunity to fight desperate, bloody battles under our own Indian Company, Battalion and Brigade Commanders. The remarkable show put up in each case needs no saying. It was an experiment and it has proved too successful to leave any doubts. The standard is set. Again it is up to us to create such conditions of pay, living and understanding not only among the ranks of all the defence services, but also with the civil population. We have the *esprit de corps* and tradition.

## ROLLING DOWN THE RIVER

By LIEUT.-COLONEL F.J.C. PIGGOTT.

THE Monsoon was over. For five long months we had lived on the tops and sides of peaks on the Eastern side of the Mayu Range, in country known to the cartographers as "dense mixed jungle". The rains had come and gone, taking with them many of our modest residences. Landslides were amusing to watch from a distance, but unattractive if they included your home and your other shirt.

However, all that was over now, and we were about to start a campaign to end Arakan campaigns. We'd had a month out of the line, and after jungly hills the open and above all, flat, land bordering the Kalapanzin seemed very inviting. We have guarded the famous Tunnels on the road from Maungdaw to Buthedaung throughout the monsoon, and the idea of using the road appealed to us a lot. We knew the country to our East excessively well. Day in, day out, men of the Battalion could have been found all over it. If you knew where to look, that is to say. For patrols move warily, and have a preference for the less obvious routes.

Our transport platoon is a long-suffering body. At one time they owned the smartest and best-maintained collection of vehicles in the Division; or anyway, said they did. Then they had all the bigger vehicles removed, and found themselves with a few jeeps and far too many mules. Now, they were presented with a scratch lot of assorted native sampans and a few old ships' lifeboats and told to get on with it. They evinced no surprise; it is no longer possible to surprise our transport platoon.

But when you come to think of it, it is really rather remarkable. Picture the scene if you informed a baker's van driver in Leeds that his beautiful vehicle now belonged to another and that in future he would deliver the bread with the assistance of a mule of pronounced character. Then, when he had learnt how to handle it, and made it realise that its name was Jane, it was taken away, and he was told he would now deliver his wares on treacherous waterways in a leaky boat. But this is a waste of printer's ink. It is not possible to visualize such a situation, so let us get on with the tale.

After certain preliminary moves, on December 14, 1944, the operations on the Kalapanzin began. We held the gate open, and West African troops flooded through us to Buthedaung and the river. They crossed immediately south of the "town" (by then a few shell-destroyed buildings) and we moved up behind them. The plan was for us to follow them across and then turn south and make a bridgehead for them across a river flowing into the Kalapanzin from the East. Before this could happen, however, we had to receive our boats and part with our mules. The boats had to be lifted in lorries from Maungdaw to Buthedaung over the Mayu Range, put into the water at Buthedaung, loaded and floated down to us.

In the event, the West Africans went a lot quicker than expected and the boats mostly went very quickly under water. So the plan was altered.

My battalion's fleet consisted of 46 sampans and the ARAKAN CASHA. On arrival at Butheduang, all but eight of the sampans were unserviceable, and a number, with their loads, were sunk without trace. So we began to use the British soldier's inexhaustible powers of improvisation from the start.

First, we must mention the ARAKAN CASTLE. This vessel was a Fleming boat. That is to say, on iron ship lifeboat, propelled by heaving back and forth on levers in its centre: a process which causes the screw to revolve. It was not as "issue" boat; we had found it lying derelict in a creek, having been lying there for two years or so neglected by both Japanese and British. Our drivers alwayed her, and made her rusty machinery work. Proudly decorated with the Red and the White Rose, she was our flagship until she sank riddled with bullet holes.

The sampans were, theoretically, propelled by native oars. In fact, when the water was shallow enough, you got out and pushed; or if the tide was favourable, you drifted. When the tide was against you, you got to the nearest bank and tied up.

We were helped out by two or three assault boats with outboard engines affixed to their sterns. These engines were temperamental and preferred to work in either salt or fresh water, I forget which. As the Kalapanzin is tidal, we had both to deal with, so for half the time the engines protested with the same silent efficiency as a mule. They also exhibited a tendency to fall off into deep water unless closely watched.

Finally, Brigade would allot us Flemings to do troop lifts. These were near relations, legitimate and recorded on several. Army Forms, of our sub rown ARAKAN CASTLE. Two-thirds were dumb or unpowered, while one-third were powered with Chrysler engines and manned by Indian personnel of the I.W.T. The theory was that you tied a dumb one to each side of a powered, and the triple Fleming was then able to navigate the tricky waterways under its own power. What we hadn't foreseen was that the I.W.T. personnel would be stokers from coal-burning coasting steamers. They had never seen either petrol engines or the Kalapanzin. But little things like that were nothing to us. Our "muleteers" from South Yorkshire took the boats over and operated them successfully but erratically for the whole Brigade throughout the campaign.

By the time this motley armada had been assembled and persuaded to stay above water, it was time we got a move on. The West Africans were still discussing life and death with the Japanese on the East Bank of the River; and a similar argument was going on on the West bank between part of our Brigade and some other Japanese. So we were told to go down the River itself, and occupy a couple of islands in the middle. At these islands, the Kalapanzin loses its dignity for a while, and forms a figure of eight round the islands until it reforms into one stream at Kwason. Apparently ashamed of itself, it there changes its name to the Mayu River and flows sedately to the sea.

We had enough boats only to lift one Company at a time. So I chose what I hoped was a fairly unlikely spot and despatched Robin and his Company to it in a pair of triple Flemings. The boats were then to neturn to the Kin Chaung for my Tactical HQ and as many of another Company as could cram in. The remainder of the Battalion was to march to a narrow part of the river and cross in native oraft.

H (r

COME:

ılı

:ab

ALE ALE

Me:

ij

di

The departures of the first flight at 3 a.m was awe-inspiring. There was a good enough moon, but also a dense mist which limited visibility to about ten yards. Our embarkation point was a mile up the Kin Chaung, a narrow tidal creek which was virtually dry at low water. The six boats were filled at high tide and cast off. Nothing happened. Much blasphemy and pushing got them afloat and they disappeared into the fog. Attempts at turning the two triple-Flemings round were only fifty per cent. successful, and eventually I heard Robin's voice deciding that his craft should go out backwards. And then silence.

The wireless soon began to talk. First, Aubrey the Gunner, was heard saying that two bundles of boats had just drifted silently past him, one going sideways and one going backwards. Was he right in assuming that this was the British doing things the hard way? He was told, among things, that this was so, as he knew full well.

Then Robin came up and said that as he now could see no land at all, he thought he was in the main stream of the Kalapanzin. He could hear the engines of the other half of his Company and was looking for them. In ten minutes he had found them; on a sandbank not recorded on Army maps. He towed them off and proceeded on his way. Finally, just at dawn he reported that he was ashore and the boats were on their way back. The relief was intense, as, although we knew that few, if any, Japs were on the two islands, eighty or ninety men packed tight in non-bullet-proof lifeboats form a target a machine-gunner dreams of.

By now the mist had evaporated under the morning sun, and soon one of the triple-Flemings returned. The drivers reported that the Japs had shelled them en route, but unsuccessfully. The other boats had broken down, but turned up 24 hours later. So I then set sail with my wireless sets and another platoon, and joined Robin on the Northern island after a pleasant and uneventful sail.

Meanwhile, Robin had worked very fast and had inspected the whole island. Not a Jap was on it, and all the parts of interest to us were firmly held. But the remainder of the Battalion was not so well-placed. Their crossing place had been spotted by some Japs to the West and had been shelled. Six men had been wounded, and worse still the native craft had been removed by their owners; who took a dislike to the whole idea. So did the one Company who had got across on to the North-West tip of North Island, for they found themselves stuck in an unexpectedly wide belt of mangrove swamp. The only thing to do, therefore, was to use the one triple-Fleming which was left to us, and ferry everyone across after dark on to a reasonable landing place.

This we did, and by midnight the whole Battalion, except for the two-thirds of one Company billed to move on the boats which had broken down, were disposed on North Island. At dawn, therefore, we began to see about South Island, which could be, in part, inspected across the turbulent waters at the centre of the figure of eight.

Robin again led the way in an unopposed landing, and then the triple-Fleming had to sail back to our starting point for Brigade use. My object, though, was to reach Kwazon, if possible in advance of the news of our approach. However, I couldn't very well send two Platoons forward all by themselves, with no other troops on South Island and out of range of all guns. So what to do? Aubrey the Gunner came to the rescue, with one sampan powered with an outboard engine. This tiny craft, with an assault that tied to it, ferried the whole Battalion less one Company (the involuntary laggards already mentioned; who

had now reached North Island) across the gap—a feat which made Gunner Green, the boatman, our friend for life. By noon, therefore, Robin was able to reach Kwazon, to learn that the last Japs had left by boat four hours previously, maddening.

We were now some ten miles ahead of anybody else on the Kalapania, and we settled down to hold what we had got, and to make ourselves as big a nuisance to the Japanese as we could. Aircraft brought and dropped on a mail, supplies and Xmas fare, which we enjoyed in and around Kwazon. The village itself showed few signs of war, chiefly because none of our guns could reach it. The villagers were more than friendly, and for the first time since I could remember I slept in a house—complete with floor, roof and walls and even a table and chair. I also acquired the services of a very small boy called Habibullah as general cleaner-up.

Aubrey produced a 2-pdr. anti-tank gun, despite the fact that his battery was officially equipped with 25 pdr. field guns. This weapon, coupled with some of our tracer-firing Brens, was established at the southern tip of the island, where the streams joined to form the Mayu River. The combined team did good execution on Jap boats trying to float down after dark, and we collected a quantity of stores from sunken craft. Japanese picture postcards were acquired by most of the Battalion, and mine at least reached Home through normal postal channels. Several bales of clothing were also welcome; these we gave to the villagers, as they had received no cloth throughout the Japanese occupation.

Habibullah, in his official capacity, we rigged up in some Japanese shorts and a small monsoon cape; on him they were full length trousers and a kneelength cloak. Attached to him also was a label saying that the clothes were his, a gift from the British and not from the Japanese. Otherwise he might have got into trouble as a "collaborationist": he'd collaborate with anyone for a cigarette.

It was here that we started to collect prisoners. From various sources came news of Japs, and we pursued them all. My only complaint was the excessively bloodthirsty attitude of the raiding parties. Three Japs on a telephone post across the river, I thought, might produce a prisoner; but the party was all over in about ten seconds, with the Japs full of bullets, bits of grenade and their straw hut on fire. The raiders only just managed to get the telephone to show they had been there.

The prisoners we got varied as much as any other collection of men. The first fellow we picked up was suffering badly from dysentery, but our doctor fixed him up temporarily. He, like all others I've met, talked readily enough once he began to be treated properly. I usually started by using a polite form of Japanese, reverting to a more abrupt colloquial form once the conversation was going smoothly. Surprise was the prisoners' chief reaction: surprise at not being already killed, at the good treatment they received, at finding anyone who could talk their own tongue, and finally at not being ceremonially executed. Only one asked me to shoot him; whether this was due to acute stomach ache which was afflicting him or the well-publicized Bushido spirit, I cannot say. Probably the former, I think.

Another man was a Medical Sergeant, brought in bound hand and foot by villagers. He was picked up wandering lost by the banks of a stream. He was most philosophical about it all, and seemed glad to have an excuse for walking no more. (His figure was not that of an enthusiastic pedestrian). He spoke a little English, and know foreigners as Weight and the spoke as the spoke and t

treatment he received. We chatted amicably of this and that as he came into my H.Q. in a boat, chiefly of the chances of settling down in Brazil after the war. It seemed a curious conversation to be taking place on a Burmese river in wartime; but the Japanese prisoner had an uncle in Brazil, and my Second-in-Command had spent several years there, so it was a subject of interest to both of them.

Time marched on, and after we had opened the Eastern side of the figure of eight waterway, the Brigade's tail caught up with us and we could consider the next hop. At first it was to be a spot 20 miles down the Mayu River on the West bank. Then it was changed to Kudaung Island on the East side, the last stop before Akyab. For this performance we had enough Fleming boats to lift the whole Battalion, and two real vessels, M. Ls. of the Royal Navy, which had rounded Foul Point and sailed up to join us.

as k

Twenty-three miles was a bit too much to ask of the Fleming Fleet all in one hop, so we stopped at Htizwe for dinner. Then, as night fell, we moved out silently in to the main stream, and moved quickly past the deserted town of Rathedaung (it really was deserted. I had looked in, somewhat nervously, in M. L. 1275 at 6 p.m. to see. I think the only reason why the skipper went was because he saw an opportunity to hang up a White Ensign there). Then three triple-Flemings touched down simultaneously at different points, and in silence two columns converged in the moonlight on the main village, while the third headed for the best landing point and jetty from the landward side.

Luck was with us again, for my floating reserve ceased to float quite early in the proceedings. Half of it sat on a mudbank, and the other half spent the remainder of the night trying to tow it off. Once we were ashore we searched vigorously for Japs, but found only one straggler, whom we took prisoner. Then we disposed ourselves all over the island and demanded imperiously to be allowed to capture Akyab. Nobody knew how many Japs were on it, least of all ourselves. But we did know that a Combined Operation had been laid on for its capture, involving several thousand troops and apparently the whole Navy and Air Force. It seemed a good idea to get there first. However, it was somewhat naturally ruled out of court. But I still think we got the last laugh, because as is now known there was not a Jap on Akyab Island and the invasion was just an unopposed practice landing.

The next move for us was to sail to Ponnagyon across country, if the term can be used of a boat journey. By devious chaungs we moved, preceded by M.L. 1275. Behind her came that nightmare stream of triple-Flemings, horribly vulnerable to anyone with a firearm on the banks. The rivers were often only fifty feet wide but luckily mangrove-bordered. It was the first time I'd ever viewed mangrove favourably. For half the journey all went well, and I was beginning to think we were fated never to meet a Jap.

But as M. L. 1275 came to a T-junction, we met the foe, and a curious engagement took place. The Flemings were halted, and M. L. 1275 made a great deal of noise with its guns. The Japs retired from the bank, and tried to hit us with mortar fire. As we couldn't manœuvre in the narrow stream, this was more fun for the Japs than for us. They failed to hit us, though one near miss caused the vessel damage more spectacular than dangerous. The Navy were delighted as they proposed to shoot no ordinary line to other unwarlike vessels in their company. We had one man wounded in the head, very slightly. His name was, appropriately, Private Nutt.

However, something had to be done about it, so we assaulted and classified banks, and chased the Japs a mile or two inland. Brigade ordered us to he then, as an army in Fleming boats is most unsuited for fighting battles. After three days we moved on through cleared country and came out at Ponngre on the Kaladan River, where we joined up with another Battalion.

The Japs were now known to be out of Akyab and trying to move he and South. Parties were still known to be west of the Kaladan River, and were told to go upstream to Yongon and present anyone getting across them. Off we went but it was several days before boats were available to lift more than three of my Companies. In the meantime we chased Japs and rumours of Japs with great vigour and varying success, until the night of January 11-12th.

That evening my Headquarters Company came up to join us, and amic at dusk. Digging in began as usual, but there was not much time to site positive really well. In fact, our layout was not one which conformed either to the book or to our own improved (!) versions thereof. Our indignation was therefore great when we were set upon at midnight by apparently several million enthusists. Japs.

Night to me in a strange Burmese village is a place ill-suited for the conduct of a cunning defence. In fact, all you can do is sit tight, hope for the best and shoot anything you see moving. This we did. My Second-in-Command she a cow, but I shot nothing. The remainder of the men did better, and only 1 few Japs straggled past the village. We eventually counted 24 bodies, and get four prisoners, three of whom died of their wounds later.

A few minutes later another battle broke out on the river bank, when we had one plateon and the crews of those Fleming boats which were still with us. The Arakan Castle was among them. Some further Japs, plus the remains of the party who had bumped into us, had arrived there to meet some boats to take them across the river. And the boats did arrive; big, armoured ones, with machine guns and searchlights.

A most spirited fight broke out, for our Flemings blocked all but a few yards of the "beach." The searchlights were a grave nuisance and had to be be put out. A Bren gunner did this, and from the noises caused he must have put several Japs out, too. One Jap landing craft did manage to beach and lower its ramp. There was an immediate rush of Japs on board, up went the ramp and in went several British grenades. Further satisfying noises of pain and displeasure came from inside the vessel as she departed and the others didn't come in. As a matter of fact, there weren't many more intending passengers; only two, so far as we could discover next morning, and they grenaded themselves before we could catch them.

Our own losses were twelve killed and eighteen wounded in varying degrees. It is difficult to estimate what the Japs lost: in fact we don't do it. However, 24 bodies counted and four P. W., point to quite a sizeable number. And it showed that the ordinary British soldier could beat the Jap, for, from our point of view, all there was to do was to sit tight in the dark. Any Napoleonic plan I might have had (I hadn't one incidentally) could never have worked, as anyone moving was immediately the target of both British and Japanese bullets. The Japs had medium machine guns with them too: I know, because we got five machine guns in all, including two mediums.

Our river war was now nearly over; after we had buried our own and the enemy dead, and had marked suitably the fenced off graves, we moved back to Akyab. We left behind several Fleming boats, including the ARAKAN CASTLE. She lay in shallow water full of bullet holes. As the tide rose, so did the water level inside her. So did some of the kit she contained. My own was under some ammunition, and remained below water whatever the state of the tide.

Akyab was a deserted city, except for increasing numbers of the Army, the Navy and the Air Force. This is no place to describe it, except to say that it must have been a pleasant place before the war. Presumably it will be a pleasant place again some time, and if this is the case, let those who enjoy it note the War Memorial we erected near the Church, and remember those whose sacrifices made their enjoyment possible.

From beginning to end of our year in Arakan (and our river riding lasted only a month), we lost 50 officers and men. We were, I think, lucky. Other Battalions lost more, and the various Arakan Campaigns have cost many hundreds of British, Indian and West African lives. Thank goodness the last one is now over; and it is pleasant to feel that we helped in some measure to end what Headquarters termed the "running sore of the Arakan Front."

# Posthumous George Cross for F. F. Rifleman.

Bulei E

e ordenia

ing late

out at h

ttalia

ing lo b

an Rive

ing vo

to lift s

ronce 7 11-13

n, iii

toate?

per to b

Way to

a co

Rushing forward to dispose of a live grenade, Naik Kirpa Ram, 8th Frontier Force Rifles, a Dogra Rajput of Bhapral village, Bilaspur State, Simla Hills, took the full force of the explosion and saved the lives of his comrades. He has been posthumously awarded the George Cross—the fifth to be won by the Indian Army.

Naik Kirpa Ram was commanding a section during a field firing exercise at Thondebhavi, near Bangalore. He was lying close to a sepoy who was firing grenades from a discharger cup, the rest of his section being in position beside him. The third grenade fired fell short, landing only eight yards in front of the section position.

Naik Kirpa Ram saw at a glance that if it exploded many of his section would be killed or wounded. Without a moment's hesitation he dashed forward shouting to his section: "Get back and take cover."

He then picked up the grenade but before he could throw it to a place of safety, it exploded. The main force of the explosion was taken by his body and he died of wounds shortly afterwards.

#### A TECHNICAL INTELLIGENCE OFFICER IN BURMA

By Captain R. H. Hearn.

WHEN the Japanese war started we knew nothing about their equipment. They had guarded their secrets well. In the first year we made no headway in gaining information about their weapons of war. Descriptions started coming in at first from the Australians and Americans following their counterattacks in the S. W. Pacific, but although we received full information about the equipment captured, the gilt was missing from the gingerbread. We could not examine and strip the equipment ourselves.

As the tide turned and the 14th Army advanced, large quantities of equipment of all types fell into our hands. It was a veritable windfall, and a mass of information came our way. It was published in pamphlets for forward troops, helping them to make immediate use of captured equipment. Many items were sent back to Indian training centres; and specimens were sent to England to help in the training of troops likely to come out East after the end of the European campaign.

In Europe British and American technical intelligence teams worked in close liaison with forward troops and inspected new types of enemy equipment. German equipment found to be in advance of ours was flown back to England for examination, and experts copied or improved it for our own use.

The same principle was followed in Burma, only on a much smaller scale, with the marked difference that whereas in Europe equipment could be flown back to England in a few hours, in Burma vast distances had to be covered. Heavy equipment, such as tanks and guns, often had to be sent back hundreds of miles under difficult conditions before reaching railhead. Air evacuation was used as far as possible, but 'planes were mainly used for wounded and mail, and in any case aircraft available were limited.

In the first phase of the Burma campaign two Technical Intelligence Officers operated, one in Arakan and the other in Central Burma. Early in 1944, when we began regaining the initiative, these two officers dealt with all new types of Japanese equipment, examined them, wrote technical field reports on them, photographed them and despatched them to Inspectorates in India.

Their work was divided into three categories. First, and most important, to assist the forward troops. In Burma supplies had to be carried over bad roads and through monsoon weather; delay was unavoidable, and sometimes important supplies were lost. They were often short, too. The invasion of Europe was first priority then. It resulted in shortage of material for Burma—a fact understood by the troops but not always appreciated.

Thus every gun, tank, tractor, vehicle, shell, grenade or other equipment had to be utilised. Many times battalions were saved from serious setbacks by using newly-captured equipment, more especially the Japanese light and medium machine guns. The Japanese grenade discharger became a popular weapon with our troops; it was extremely accurate, simple to work, and easy to carry. Many types of weapons captured were copies of our ewn or American types, but occasionally new types were found, and it was then that the Technical Intelligence Officer was called in.

At first our troops were apprehensive of using this captured material. Everything "Made in Japan" was regarded with mistrust and thought to be useless and out of date. I suppose the thought originated from pre-war days, when Japanese articles were cheap and disintegrated at the slightest touch.

But Japanese peacetime goods and their weapons of war were very different. I do not pretend that the latter were up to British or American standards, but their main equipment was sound and dependable. I'm always hearing the argument of the Japanese hand grenade. To use this crude weapon you have to strike its head against a hard surface, such as the rim of a steel helmet, and then throw the grenade very quickly; if you hold on too long, you're liable to have your fingers burned by the flash escaping from the vent hole by the fuse; moreover, the grenade is liable to explode any time between two and seven seconds. Obviously, it is best to leave them alone, or use them in a counter role as a booby trap. If curiosity killed the cat, I always think the Jap must have very strong feline instincts.

Our second role was to write up detailed reports on newly captured equipment, and photograph each item. These field reports kept all theatres of operations in the picture. Direct liaison was maintained with the American and Australian technical teams, and thus up-to-date data on equipment captured in Okinawa, New Guinea or Burma was available. An unknown sight of a gun might be captured in Burma; without full details it would be impossible to forward a report, but by cross checking it might be found that the other half may have been picked up by the Americans or Australians. Thus we would be able to piece together a full description.

Having been inspected and photographed, the part would be sent to one of the Inspectorates in India for detailed examination. In the case of guns "firing" trials would be conducted; tanks and tractors would be made "runners." Each item would be stripped and examined. Small pieces captured would be sent by air; others by road to Dimapur and on by rail to Calcutta. The farther we advanced, the longer and more difficult became the lines of evacuation.

For equipment of extra importance we had to evacuate it ourselves. The first 47 mm. anti-tank gun captured in the Arakan in early 1944 was towed 150 miles to Chittagong at an average speed of 30 m.p.h., caught the boat with five minutes to spare, and was delivered to the Inspectorate in India within four days of its capture. Perhaps the best record was with a German 37 mm. P. A. K. anti-tank gun, captured south of Kalemyo. An immediate signal was received saying it had to be evacuated to Calcutta on the highest priority. It was hitched to the back of a jeep, towed 300 odd miles to Dimapur within 12 hours (which included time spent in retrieving a wheel of the gun, which fell off every 50 miles), and sent post-haste on to Calcutta.

"Booby traps" are another part of the technical officer's job. I was in Burma from early 1944 to late 1945 and never came across a booby trap of any description. An American team which worked with me for eight months never saw one either. We were fortunate, for booby traps were laid by the Japanese, mainly on the more "sordid" principle, such as tying grenades to our dead or wounded. Japs did not employ them on such a large or crafty scale as Germans.

The pastime of booby-trapping houses and likely souvenirs, such as placing a grenade under a steel helmet, was done by the Japanese, but only on a small scale. I never heard of a booby trap being found in a dump, the main reason, I think, being that they had not the time, for from Kohima they were continually on the run, were short of ammunition, and were a beaten and dejected army.

Sometimes a technical officer has to fill a tactical role. Japanese defence positions had to be reported on from our point of view. Two outstanding instances were at Ayadaw and Monywa, both elaborate and carefully constructed defences. In both a company of men adequately stocked with food and ammunition could have held out for many weeks.

How does a technical officer work in with the forward troops? He starts off by being attached to Corps H. Q., and through Intelligence is able to keep in close touch with Divisions and Brigades, as well as maintaining close touch with R.A. Signals and R.E.M.E. branches; the latter would sometimes obtain direct information about newly-captured equipment. Ordnance depots in the rear often had new items of Japanese equipment which had by-passed the normal channels.

In September, 1944 the first complete technical team was attached to 33 Corps, remaining with it from Imphal to Mandalay and on to Rangoon. A further team was attached to 4 Corps later. They consisted of a British and an American technical officer, photographer and four American technical sergeants. As the advance continued, new equipment came into our hands. An unusually interesting piece was the 32 cm. mortar weighing 900 lbs. and firing a bomb weighing about 700 lbs. From a dump in the Fort at Mandalay enough new items were recovered to fill an American Commando aeroplane, which carried about 10,000 lbs.

In Shwebo one dead Jap was found. Every house, basha, temple was searched but the place had been systematically cleaned out. The Japanese took great trouble to camouflage and hide their more important dumps, often placing them in the middle of thick jungle, occasionally four or five miles from a main road. They were virtually invisible from the air, and even on the ground were no easy job to find.

We were with "V" Force, and in the lull before the main attack across the Chindwin there was continual warfare in No Man's Land. The Japs had established large dump locations in these areas, many of which they could have guarded better. The biggest was at Settaw, a small village across the Chindwin. Reports said that the dump stretched over an area of five miles, and contained every type of equipment. The opportunity was too good to miss. Three days' march over mountains brought us to "V" Force H.Q. Late on the night of our arrival a Burman rushed into the camp and told us a Jap party with transport and 400 coolies were approaching the Settaw dump to salvage what they could.

Early next morning we set out, crossed the Chindwin, and reached the outskirts of the dump about midday. A wide track led east from the village, and at 50-yard intervals were large wooden bashas, each stacked with equipment of all sorts, mostly ammunition and signal stores. Two miles up the track and, going round a sharp bend, we were confronted by a party of Japanese. Both they and us were equally surprised and dived into the jungle, which suddenly became alive with chattering monkeys. They leaped from tree to tree, making a lot of noise. Soon we were mistaking Japs for monkeys and monkeys for Japs.

During this rather uncomfortable lull the American officer with a band of coolies was evacating back some of the more interesting items from the bashas. Withdrawing, weuset fire to the bashas, and crossed back over the Chindwin.

Have you ever thought of the reasons bombers were able to destroy just the very places in Japan where we knew their armaments were being made? Apart from our espionage service there, the main source was handed to us by the

Japs themselves. Attached to almost every item of their equipment was a name plate, giving an unbelievable amount of information, date of manufacture, arsenal at which it was made, full name and type and number of the item. Every name-plate was removed and flown direct to Washington, where it enabled the authorities to pinpoint specific targets in Japan.

These name-plates were also useful in building up the approximate picture of the enemy strength. In March we might capture a medium tank numbered 53; in May two further tanks might be knocked out numbered 47 and 49. Knowing the complement of tanks in a Japanese tank regiment, in time the jig-saw puzzle would slowly complete itself.

I wonder how much the Japanese were able to squeeze information from us? How often did Private Jones go into battle with his shoulder flashes stuffed into his trouser pockets? He'd taken them off, it is true, but he wasn't going to leave them behind for Private Brown to take them. How often did Captain Smith go into action with a picture of his girl friend tucked away in his breast-pocket in an envelope with his unit's name on it? Numerous instances occurred of photographs, letters, envelopes being removed from dead Japanese which had originally been removed by them from our own killed or prisoners of war.

The Japanese really were unbelievably careless. Coveted Japanese flags were nearly always inscribed with the unit's and Commanding Officer's name; sometimes its battle honours would be listed as well. Almost every Jap carried a wallet stuffed with photographs, letters, and other small items of "intelligence" interest. Japanese prisoners were worth their weight in gold. Security was not their strong point. The Jap Higher Command had been confident that no Jap would fall into our hands alive; his duty was to commit hari kari. But there were black sheep, and as a result our Japanese order of battle in Burma was always very comprehensive.

Technical intelligence officers in the forward areas are regarded with reserve and suspicion, however tactful they may be. Many troops, especially Indians, were unaware that a "Technical Intelligence" branch existed. Officers, being equally ignorant themselves, were generally to blame. There is always a natural instinct with a fighting man, who, having killed his foe and risked his life in doing so, feels that what he has captured is his, and the motto "Help

Intelligence to help you" is soon forgotten.

We found it best to adopt the principle that the customer is always right until he is tactfully persuaded to think otherwise. Working with the forward troops, our teams were able to prevent a lot of pilfering, though it had the disadvantage of being tied to only one area at a time. It was, however, fairly easy to appreciate the situation as to where to concentrate our forces; we were nearly caught over the Mandalay show, but just boarded the last ferry across the Irrawaddy and were able to be with the 19th Division when they captured the city.

Technical intelligence officers are now investigating arsenals and dumps in S. E. Asia, especially Malaya. Americans and Australians are combing Japan and the S. W. Pacific. A complete dossier will be able to be compiled and Japanese secrets laid bare, and it will be interesting to see if Japan was able to keep ahead of us. Many startling discoveries have been made and many more have yet to come to light, disproving the ever popular myth that the Japanese spent their time copying other nations, and had little or no inventive capacity of their own.



### "POCO POCO ITALIANO"

By LIEUT.-COLONEL H. B. HUDSON.

THIS isn't about war at all; it is about peace, perfect peace. I am morally debarred from writing anything about the war in Italy for two very good reasons. The important one is that I wasn't there very long before it was all over. In any case the history of the 10th Indian Division has already been written; Stevenson, of the Historical Section, spent most of the summer doing that, and I am looking forward to reading it.† I am sure that before long the Journal will be publishing one of those excellent articles by Colonel G. T. Wheeler, who commanded the recce Regiment.\* No, I am not going to write about war at all. My story starts after "VE" day. I feel that this peaceful chapter of the Indian Army's history should be recorded because it was a very interesting and I think a very important one. The editorial "we" and "us" I use refer to my own battalion and the division as a whole.

We came to Trecenta a few days before the end. We had been sent to guard a German ordnance dump, which contained the most remarkable collection of stores, some of which we found very useful. We occupied the provincial agricultural depot, which made very good barracks, and thought ourselves very lucky indeed after the discomfort of Appenine and Po valley farmsteads. Trecenta was a small market town which, when we arrived, appeared to be celebrating the withdrawal of the German army very seriously. There was some economic and administrative confusion, but this did not stop the dances in the teatro. Our officers were billeted throughout the town and we had part of the depot manager's

Then the peace was declared and Trecenta stepped up its celebrations to fever pitch. As we were on our own (how jealously we guarded our privacy!) we had a special victory parade, when the G. O. C. took the salute in the piazza. We staged this on a Sunday evening, which was a popular time for the citizens. As I walked back to the mess with the G. O. C. I gracefully acknowledged the greetings of the local beauties, most of whom I now knew by name. It was all very triumphal, but the climax of the proceedings was a dinner and dance given by us to the partisans and their ladies. We held this in the courtyard of the manager's house. It was a great success and the prettiest things were said by both parties. After that I was rather anxious to leave Trecenta. The pace was getting too fast.

The troops had a good rest here. It was a good place to start becoming a peace-time battalion again. We mounted guard in the piazza every day and started wiping off some of the stains of battle. There was much cleaning of brass and polishing of bayonets. The V. C. Os discovered that there was a curious creature called "V. C. O. of the Day" who had to make numerous appearances and even mount the guard in public. There was very good bathing in a canal, and the dhobis started their destruction of clothing on the stones by the bridge, where the washerwomen joined in the general conversation. There

<sup>\*</sup> There is one entitled "The Last Year in Italy" by Colonel Wheeler in this issue. — ED., U. S. I. "Journal."



house for the mess. It was all very pleasant.



was a conscious spit and polish complex, and drill movements which had become vague memories of the unreal past were practised with great enthusiasm. Relations with the local population were excellent. Officers even dired out. The dances in the *teatro* continued. It was really time we moved on.

The object of the next exercise was something to do with Tito. Towards the end of May we moved one hundred and seventy miles through Rovigo, Padua, Mestre and across the Piave to the far side of the Isonzo. Most of the division was in the low-lying country near Gorizia. My battalion went up on to the Carso, that rocky, barren jumble of hills which was the scene of the battles of the Isonzo in the last war. Like nomads from Central Asia arriving in India two thousand years ago we selected our future home, a village on the slopes of Monte San Michele called San Martino del Carso. There was very little shade, the houses were poor and quite unsuitable for billeting, and there was only just enough water for the inhabitants.

There were advantages, one being that we could bivouac in clean fields. Our drinking water had to be brought from the water point some miles away and the men bathed in the Isonzo at the bottom of the hill, a longish walk. The mess was first of all in a house, but flies and smell drove it into tents. The men's bivouac tents were greatly improved by building walls three feet high and pitching the tent above the wall. There was enough stone on the carso to pave the Sahara. Companies built open-air dining halls, schools and offices. I had a sangar built for myself, over which was stretched a large tarpaulin. I lived in this when it wasn't too hot, and it got very hot indeed; there were no trees. There were one or two very heavy thunder-storms, but most of the time the weather was set fair and the sun beat down on the rock.

In many ways the village was transformed. We had our gunners there too, and very good company they were. Between us we tidied up the hillsides and the village streets. Being poor land, bare and waterless, it could give but little return to the hardworking peasants. There were pine woods near, higher up Monte San Michele, but there was little ground for crops anywhere. They were a dour, rather ugly collection of people, quite unlike the Italian peasants we had met elsewhere. The reason was that they were not Italians at all. Most of them spoke Slovene and many had Slovene names. There appeared to be no one appointed as spokesman and the small community seemed to live in an atmosphere of poverty and dirt.

I don't think the men liked the San Martinians much. I was sorry for them. It isn't much fun living on the Italo-Jugoslav border trying to make a living out of a burnt-up pile of stones. We stayed two and a half months on the Carso and I think that both the officers and men enjoyed it very much; but the pleasures were not to be found in San Martino. It so happens that the Carso is on the edge of a most fascinating part of Italy, that region which is called Friuli. This is the country between the Adriatic and the Carnic and Julian Alps, an area of fishing villages, ports, flat rich farmland, foothills covered with pinewoods and mountains rising to ten thousand feet above sea level. It is a land of infinite variety; even the people are varied, Italian, Sloveneand Tyrolean.

Trieste is an Italian city. Gorizia is largely Slovene. Monfalcone was a growing port before the war. Inland, on the road to Tarvisio through the Tagliamento gap, is Udine, an ancient Italian city with fine buildings and magnificent views towards the Alps. There is a small town called Gradisca which members of the 10th Indian and 56th Divisions will always remember. The opera company from the Scala came there for two months and staged their

performances in an open air theatre on the banks of the Isonzo. Then there were all the villages on the plain where troops were billeted, Romans, Johannis, Sagrado, Cormons and Lucinico: our camps went up the Vipacco valley into purely Slovene country and across the Carso to Comeno and San Daniele.

There was sailing at the Yacht Club at Monfalcone, the fleet to visit at Trieste and there was Austria for the adventurous. Austria was perfect at that time of year. There was a route up the Isonzo valley through Caporetto, over the Predil pass and down into Tarvisio. After crossing the border the road went through Arnoldstein, Villach and Klagenfurt, following the shore of the Worthersee for the last fifteen miles into Klagenfurt. The lake was surrounded by wooded hills and in the background were the Alps. There can be no greener grass than that in Austria. Before I saw them for myself I had always imagined that the inhabitants of the Tyrol wore leather shorts, green hats and elaborate braces for tourists only. They do not; they wear them any day of the week.

So the summer went on. At the end of July the division staged the Monocle on the banks of the Vipacco. The Monocle was flippantly so-called because it was considered to be a one-eyed spectacle. It was in fact a very fine piece of production and stage management. The stage was on the banks of the river which flowed between it and the spectators. The performance started with searchlights trained on an Indian village, built two hundred yards beyond the river. There was a honking of horns and a bus marked "Chakwal-Jhelum" came down the village street, crammed with passengers and luggage. The night's entertainment ended with a noisy and extravagant expenditure of pyrotechnics (by Wehrmacht, in liquidation).

Then we moved a few miles down on to the plain to a village ten miles from Udine. Life really started there. The men were all in houses and the officers' mess was in the Villa de Brandis, with the Count, Countess and Contessina all complete. I myself had coronets all over my bedroom, and the garden was delightful. We had a band now, and were able to dine to sweet music under the cedars. We gave concerts in the villages and became part of the country-side. From my window there was a view of miles of foothills and Alps. It was as good a life as anyone could wish for. The V. C. Os. had a fine mess; the havildars had a club. There was a Rest Camp in Gorizia to which fifteen men at a time went on leave.

Everyone got to know the villagers very well and I used to see some of the V.C.Os. dining with them as I walked down the street of an evening. My orderly was on the best of terms with the de Brandis servants, who tried to teach him how to mend socks. He said he really wanted to learn Italian properly, and he probably did. But this lotus eating was too good to last and we began to hear rumours, which usually originated in Rome or Florence, that we would move to Milan in September. Indeed orders came for such an uprooting and we decided to ask some of the notables to dinner before we left. The Count had been extremely hospitable. On the night of the Japanese surrender he had produced a bottle of wine dated 1790 and signed by his great-great-grandfather. When the G. O. C. came to see us our host thought 1832 would be worth trying. On the night of the dinner party he presented us with a dozen bottles of Tocai, the product of his own vineyards.

The dinner was a great success. The band played in the garden (we dined inside, it was getting cold) and the villagers came to watch the fun. After dinner we danced in the baronial hall and parted with professions of lifelong friendship. Indeed they were a very charming collection of people and I shall be

very sorry if I never see San Giovanni again. Judging by the number of officers who slipped over there from the neighbourhood of Milan (which is no Sabbath day's journey) I am not alone in my sentiments. But that remains to be seen.

The next move was by rail. We went through Verona, past Lake Garda to Brecia, skirted Milan and detrained at Pavia. Our new quarters were near Voghera, in five different places and NOT very attractive. We found the people unfriendly and some of the accommodation (particularly my bedroom) was poor. Battalion H.Q. was in a palazzo, and what a palazzo! It had more frescoes, more red plush, more painted ceilings and gilt furniture than any other palazzo in Italy. There were grand pianos, a ball room, a marble staircase and a clock in the tower which chimed the wrong hours; but there were no bathrooms which worked properly, and the draughts were arctic. Something had to be done about the hostility of the natives so I called a meeting of all sindacos, priests and other worthies. After an impassioned speech I again shook hands with all the delegates and lasting friendship was proclaimed, and I must say they kept their word. We had no more murmurings and the scurrilous rumours about Indian troops which had been spread were heard no more.

This upper Po valley country is not particularly interesting. Milan is a fine city and Pavia is very attractive. On a clear day one can just see the Swiss Alps. But I went further afield and spent five days on the Riviera, between Genoa and Monte Carlo, which is beyond the scope of this article. It was superb. The colouring along that coast is so vivid that it is almost vulgar. A month later the division moved down to Taranto and awaited the ships which were to take us back to India. We had finished our Cook's tour of northern Italy and had now to shake off many bad habits. No more jeeps speeding towards the club at Voghera; no more vino under the cedars; no more open air dances on the banks of the Isonzo. Nothing like that about the future; we must get used to fifteen vehicles and forty-one mules. Any future "swanning" (if you will excuse an Eighth Army expression)\* would have to be done in a tonga or on a bicycle.

Those of you who have read as far as this will wonder why I think this story is so important. The reason is because of the effect these months had upon the Indian soldier. He had already got to know quite a lot about Egypt, Palestine, Cyprus and Italy, but this had all been in time of war, when there was not quite so much freedom and certainly not so much time to look round and let impressions sink in. Now his life was freer and his mind easier; he could enjoy his surroundings and could afford to be generous to the citizens he had liberated.

During his life overseas the Indian soldier had learnt a great deal. He had seen the ships which bind the Empire together across the seas he had been unable to imagine before. He had assimilated the spirit of the Eighth Army; he was proud of being a Sikh, a P.M., a Garhwali or a Mahratta but he was just as proud of belonging to the Indian Army and he knew that he was a good soldier. He developed very shrewd powers of observation and noted the good and bad points of other nationalities. He had plenty of opportunity of doing this as he lived in daily contact with Italians and fought alongside or met in the canteen British, Poles, Greeks, Canadians, Americans and South Africans.

He came to know many Italian cities, he learnt basic Italian and was very popular with Italians. He went across the Alps to Austria. Wherever

<sup>\* &</sup>quot;To swan" is to travel (usually by jeep) as if on duty, whereas the real object is to see the countryside.



he was billeted he became part of the family, sitting in the kitchen in the evening talking to Mario, Gilda and the bambino. He discovered that fundamental there isn't much difference between the peasants of Friuli and those of the Punish or Bombay. I think his mind developed enormously, particularly in the may be regarded women, and I think that this will have a very great effect upon lais as a whole, for it is the most insular country in the world and such opportunits of mass contact with other civilizations are rare.

These months of reconstruction after the war was won enabled the spot to think. I use sepoy as a generic term, I mean all Indian ranks. They wilk better citizens for this thought, and although they were delighted to get had to their homes and very grateful for the reception they were given at Bemby they are, I am sure, conscious of having a far wider outlook than when they kind in the same of the habits they have learnt are good or had Island discuss here. There are many bottles of Brylcreem in their havesals; there are spoons and forks and mugs, cigarette cases and pictures of inexistars. There is also a taste for beer and wine. But there is also a great make standing of the value of comradeship and the meaning of discipline. On the whole I think they have benefited considerably. And of course there are always those letters from Trecenta and San Giovanni ending with "tanti tanti sals a presto ritorno."

# The Nuremberg Trial

"A unique feature of the trial of German war criminals at Nurembers is that in the Court room, on the prisoner's left, is a small enclosure containing ten or a dozen translators. Four languages are needed for the proceedings—English, German, French and Russian—and by a miracle rather like that of Pentecost, any man in the court room—Judge, prisoner, journalist, general public—can hear in his own language what is being spoken in some other.

"It looks strange at first to see every person present, except the guark on which you turn a reinted. They are fitted to every seat, together with a did

on which you turn a pointer to whatever language you need.

"The miracle is performed by the translators, who, as a speech is being made, or evidence given, speak the translation in to microphones, each of which is connected with every seat in the court. The device was first practised at Geneva, and at Nurembreg it has its defects, not technical defects, but some inadequacy on the part of some translators. As I listened to a dark young woman, whose native tongue was certainly not English, giving a hesitant and obviously summarised English rendering of German evidence, I could not but be conscious that both Judges and prosecuting counsel were, like the rest of us losing a great deal."—Mr. Wilson Harris, in "The Spectator."

# A "UNITED SERVICES COLLEGE"

heninis hat foris hose of is arly in is

effect o

uch ope

nablela

a b

thted to

grenal

o vilo:

od ar bi

ler bir

inni i

ı a gov iplini:

ere i

啪艇

By Major T. A. Shurlock.

CO-ORDINATION of the Fighting Services is a problem which must be solved if Navy, Army and Air Force are to achieve next time (if there is a next time, and we are not given a chance to get a second wind) their maximum combined efficiency as soon as possible after the opening of hostilities. Let us view the problem in all its aspects.

The Royal Navy has for centuries been the one "sure shield" of the British Empire and its parent island. In time of war its essential tasks are to protect the British Isles from invasion, ensure free communications over world trade routes, cut the routes which carry food and munitions to our enemies, and cover the safe passage overseas of our armies. Before the R.A.F. become a separate service in 1918, success to British arms had been due to a judicious combination of sea and land power.

The R.A.F. has now completed what must now be regarded as a trinity of Services—three in one and one in three. In this way must the Navy, Army, and Air Force be considered if the co-operation and co-ordination of the three Fighting Services are to be the key to our future strategy.

Although by tradition and necessity the German Army was the most important arm of their Fighting Services, the Germans regarded the integration of all three services as essential. They referred to them as the Wehrmacht. An illustration of this was that Kesserling—an Air Force officer—commanded the German forces in Italy and the Balkans.

In the late war, with soldiers serving at sea as Maritime Artillery, or as airmen in Army Co-operation Squadrons, with the R.A.F. Regiment serving as infantry, and with sailors as pilots in the Fleet Air Arm or on land in combined operations, real understanding of the characteristics, powers, and limitations of all three Services became of increasing importance; their inter-dependence cannot be over-estimated.

The last century witnessed the end of the period when wars were fought between professional armies and navies. In the early part of World War I the unrestricted submarine warfare waged by Germany in an attempt to starve out Great Britain affected increasingly the normal life of the ordinary man. Other factors affected the lives of non-combatants in World War II, and it is clear that modern war embraces all the resources of national life and economy.

Rockets, air-borne armies, bigger equipment-transporting aeroplanes imply that the British Isles can no longer rest behind that "sure shield" of the Navy or under the screen of a powerful Air Force. A larger Army than we had before the war may be needed; conscription may be retained. And in future the peace-time officer will be required to train men drawn from every walk of life.

Thus if the three Services are to be regarded as one, if "limited" war is a thing of the past, if conscription has come to stay, then the education of officer candidates in the Fighting Services must be carefully reviewed. It is desirable that a boy be imbued with an inter-Service attitude of mind and outlook

from the day he leaves school and makes up his mind to enter one of the Services. If service in the Forces be compulsory, the permanent officer will be required to train militiamen; he must have the understanding mind of the man of the world; be a good mixer. He must have an intelligence which is not limited, and an horizon unrestricted by a parochial outlook.

Dartmouth, Sandhurst, Woolwich and Cranwell provided suitable instruction in the past. To-day they do not give the liberal education required. There should be established either at Oxford or Cambridge a college which might be called "The King's Services College", "The Imperial Services College", or perhaps "The United Services College". It should be under the dual control of the University and the Civil Service Commissioners, with representatives from the Admiralty, Army Council, and Air Council, and organised on the same lines as an ordinary college of the University, but reserved for the education of candidates for commissions into the Fighting Services. The Commandant would be, in rotation, an eminent soldier, sailor or airman, who had served with distinction in Combined Operations in the late War.

Students would be required to pass the usual University entrance examinations, and would become members of the College and undergraduates of the University at the age of 18; they would take their degrees and be commissioned at 21. For the first two terms students would receive their basic military—using the word "military" in its widest sense—education, and study as ence class. They would then be required to pass Honour or pass Moderations in the subjects laid down; included in these subjects—would be naval and military history, European and Empire history, military geography and French-Candidates for Honour Moderations would study German and other modern languages.

On passing this first examination, students would choose their Service and be posted to either the (a) Naval and Marine, (b) Military or (c) Air Wing-Each of these Wings would have instructors from its own Service.

From the date of joining their Wing to the end of their three-year course students would study for a degree, which would be one of the required qualifications for a commission. For Army candidates the subjects would be tactics, military organisation and administration, map reading, military law, etc., while those reading for an Honours degree would have a choice of special subjects, including Political Economy. Indian Army cadets would have Hindustani and Indian history as special subjects.

After being posted to their Service Wing each year of the course would be divided into (a) three terms of two months, (b) four months' practical training, and (c) two months' leave, taken in two periods of a month. During the "practical training" period students would wear cadet uniform, and in the case of naval cadets would carry out the training of a naval rating, ashore and affect; Army candidates would do their practical training in the ranks at the Training Establishment of the arm of Service to which they wished to be posted; candidates for the R.A.F. would receive flying instruction at their Training Schools.

If it is desired to retain Dartmouth, Sandhurst Woolwich, and Cranwell as Service Colleges, cadets could do one year's basic training in those establishments from the age of 17 to 18, before being selected for the United Services College. In this case, students would choose their Service before going to the University, and be posted to their Wing on joining the College Google

By a slight alteration in the University terms of the United Services College, the summer term could end on June 15, and the winter term begin on October 15. During these four months "practical training" could be carried out, and the College thereby utilised in one instance for a promotion course for sub-lieutenants, lieutenants, and flying officers; the following year this promotion course could be for naval lieutenants, captains (Army) and flight/lieutenants. In this way officers would come together twice during Service careers, friendships would be renewed, and ideas exchanged.

Here are some of the advantages of this system of education:

- (i) Candidates for the Fighting Services would spend their most impressionable years in a common atmosphere, and receive a more liberal education than under the pre-war systems. Such education is essential for a professional officer required to train and command men drawn from every occupation.
- (ii) Contacts made in such an environment would be invaluable in later years between officers of all Services, who would have known each other in their youth. It would be the first real step towards co-ordination of the Services.
- (iii) While undergraduates of the University, cadets would meet at lectures, games, and in the social life of the University men destined to hold important posts in the civil, consular and diplomatic Services, as well as future statesmen and leading Government officials.

If, after this comprehensive training and selection, cadets and officers should be found unsuitable or inefficient, the general education they had received would be of great value and would enable them to re-enter civil life more easily, and with greater chances of success.

# 3rd Cavalry To Be Re-Raised.

Sini

n di

ited, e

淝

02.2

(1)

W.

Ú.

Ŗί

儮

i.

ΰ

i) I Overrrun and forced to surrender at Singapore early in 1942, the 3rd Cavalry—the first regiment to be knocked out of the war as a fighting entity—is being re-raised at Lucknow on April 1st, 1946.

The 3rd Cavalry ceased to exist after the surrender, and it is now being reformed from recovered survivors of the original regiment. Volunteers from other Indian Armoured Corps units will bring the regiment up to strength.

A unique feature of the new 3rd Cavalry will be the fact that it will have no separate class compositions for squadrons or troops. All classes of men—Hindus, Muslims, Sikhs, Jats—will be accepted and they will feed and live together without class distinction.

The reborn regiment will be the reconnaissance regiment of the Indian Airborne Division, and will be organised and equipped on practically the same lines as the standard Indian infantry divisional reconnaissance regiment.

Men selected for transfer to this regiment must all be volunteers, for their duty will involve parachute jumps. Beginning at Lucknow with a period of preliminary training, volunteers will then join the Airborne Division where they will receive parachute training.

The 3rd Cavalry came into existence in 1921 as a result of an amalgamation of two of the oldest cavalry units of the Indian Army, the 5th and the 8th. The history of these two units goes back to the days of the East India Company's Bengal Army. The 5th Cavalry was raised in 1841 and the 8th Cavalry in 1846.



# WHEN EXPANSION AGAIN BECOMES NECESSARY

By LIEUTENANT-COLONEL G. A. MITCHLEY.

during the First World War of 1914-1918. Before that time battlesked been fought and wars had been won by a professional Army, whose exploits were idealised in the illustrated papers of the time, and whose bravery and course were immortalised by contemporary poets and writers. The man in the steel connected these wars in his mind with the colourful uniforms worn on ceremical occasions and, as our own country was never invaded, he looked on the Armel Forces as something outside his life. All soldiers were brave, and their methols of obtaining success were mysterious though infallible.

During 1914-1918 the man in the street had to take his share alongside the professional soldier. The civilian soldier was initiated into mysteries which had thought impenetrable and he discovered that there was no myster. When peace came the civilian soldier withdrew into his civilian life and became immersed in the task of reconstructing his own world. Periodically be foregathered with his old comrades and they "reminisced" over the purple patches and condoned the mistakes committed.

As the 1914-1918 war was a war to end wars, and as the League of Nations was calculated to solve all major problems of the future where force might be required, the Professional Soldier once again took control of the Army and descated himself to the process of rebuilding an organisation which, in his opinion, had been seriously disturbed by the events of the previous four years.

Came the war of 1939-1945, which was more national in its nature that that of 1914-1918, demanding not only the services of men but also of many women and bringing into the front like of battle the factory worker and the exempted few who were left to keep in motion the wheels of civil administration and commerce.

Now, once again, the process of release and demobilisation is in full swing and the Army is being reduced to a peacetime scale. A question which naturally obtrudes itself at this moment is:—"Did the professional Army perform its task of expansion successfully?" and its corollary: "What must be done in the future to ensure successful expansion on any future occasion?"

It is a commonplace to say that in Wartime the professional army must face expansion and dilution; the professional soldier spends his whole life preparing for such an eventuality, and sees in its fulfilment opportunities for which his whole life has been dedicated; so if failure occurred, it must have been due to a wrong conception of the nature of the task and not to any lack of fore-knowledge of the object.

The arguments and deductions in this article are based on the Army, but they apply will equal, if not greater, force to the Navy, as Britain is a maritime nation, and to the R.A.F.—Author.

Here I propose to summarise the main facts which spring to the mind of any man, be he professional soldier or civilian, to examine the pros and cons and to produce a logical solution of the problem. At the end of the war of 1914-1918 and also of the war of 1939-1945, the facts which stand out clearly are:—

- (i) That powers of leadership, sense of duty, initiative, adaptability and personal bravery are national qualities, not the prerogative of the Professional soldier.
- (ii) That many professional soldiers of all ranks and grades failed when faced with the realities of war expansion and war conditions.
- (iii) That discipline as practised by the professional army proved extremely irksome to the civilian soldier who, both in this war and the previous one, could not reconcile his ideas of civilian "freedom" to his conception of military "servitude."
- (iv) That the red-tape, circumlocution, antiquated procedure and routine existing in the professional army not only mystified but enraged our civilian soldiers, many of whom had had experience of business principles and methods, and held positions of considerable responsibility.

By expanding each section in turn, a solution of the problem will emerge.

(i) That powers of leadership, sense of duty, initiative, adaptability and personal bravery are national qualities, not the prerogative of the professional soldier.

n È:

œ!

10

It was for the professional soldier a matter of surprise, as also admiration, particularly in the war of 1914-1918, that his professional training gave him no prerogative to those qualities expected of a soldier, and he realised that these qualities are latent within everyone, and that our system of upbringing and education develops them to a greater or lesser degree in everyone. Military training directs the employment of those qualities into military channels, and adapts them to the needs of a military situation.

Military training also tends to supply a system or formula whereby the lack of these qualities may be, to a certain extent, neutralised or compensated. Whilst our national principles and ideals remain, our qualities will remain.

(ii) That many professional soldiers of all ranks and grades failed when faced with the realities of war expansion and war conditions.

This fact has been full realised by Higher Command, who have already instituted an organisation of Selection Boards which attempt to weigh accurately the potentialities of our future officers. In my article "Officers Past, Present and Future," published in the April 1945 issue of this Journal, I endeavoured to outline a scheme for raising the standard of the would-be officer, and of maintaining that standard throughout an officer's service. If the system outlined in my article forms the basis of future training and selection, the number of misfits will be reduced to a negligible minimum.

(iii) That discipline as practised by the professional army proved extremely irksome to the civilian soldier who, both in this war and the previous one, could not reconcile his ideas of civilian "freedom" to his conception of military "servitude".

It has been realised fully that the civilian soldier, be he officer or man, does not take kindly to some forms of discipline as practised by the professional soldier. In my opinion the efforts made to meet this situation neither justify the

maintenance of the present system, nor have in any way decreased the civilia soldier's distaste for being regimented on every possible occasion.

On the other hand, it is innate in all of us to appreciate good drill and pageantry, and its value as a method of training for war has proved itself on many occasions.

Again, the civilian who does not take a pride in his dress and bearing is a very small minority of the whole, and the complaint of the civilian soldier during this war has been, so far as dress is concerned, rather towards greater latitude in dress than in a distaste for good turn-out.

To a civilian, every man's home is his eastle, and once inside his castle he is his own master: in theory he consults no one regarding his actions; in fact he's "off duty". In the Army, as is so often stressed in season and out of season, a soldier is never off duty and this never being off duty is more evident in war time, when not only the soldier but also the officer is rarely out of uniform in barracks and out of barracks.

In matters of the soldiers' comfort and welfare it has only recently been realised that the soldier is a thinking entity and if he isn't, something must be done to ensure that he is. Thanks to the efforts of the Army Educational Corps, whose work in this direction has produced a complete change in the mental outlook of the Army, the soldier is no longer an automaton.

This move, however, is a comparatively recent one, and its reaction on the professional army has shown how foreign it is to its nature to consider the soldier as a man who not only should, but must think, who not only should have private interests but must be taught to develop private interests.

The aim in this direction then must be that an Army, like any team or combination, must have team spirit and must bend to the will of the leader, but each man must be encouraged to express his individuality when the necessity arises, and mental and physical freedom must be accorded when possible.

In connection with the above, I have not mentioned "universal service" whereby every able-bodied man will in peacetime receive a certain amount of military training, as I consider this period of training will form an excellent opportunity to reorient the ideas of the professional soldier, not, as might be thought, an opportunity to produce throughout the country embryo professional soldiers.

(iv) That the red-tape, circumlocution, antiquated procedure and routine existing in the professional army not only mystified but enraged our civilian soldiers, many of whom had had experience of business principles and methods, and held positions of considerable responsibility.

Not one, but many successful generals have stressed the fact that success in war depends more upon good organisation and administration than anything else. Good organisation and administration connotes a smooth-running machinery, and the simpler the machinery the easier it is to maintain.

When the peace machine expands to a war machine, it takes from the civilian machine all the personnel it requires and rejects what is superfluous and unsuitable, and yet the result is not a harmonious whole. From trades and professions, from business houses and manufacturing firms a great proportion of the personnel are absorbed into the military machine with one object, and that is to ensure good organisation and administration.

theat

d del: Hac

S CL

l ic

St.

Í Œ

ľ

Presumably the doctors, engineers, accountants, trained executives and assistants are competent in civilian life, otherwise their places would be taken by those who are. Presumably the organisation and administration of civilian firms and combines is efficient, otherwise they would go out of business.

The Army as an organisation has explained its essential difference from the largest combine by drawing attention to:—

- (a) the immensity of its size and complexity of its nature compared with the largest business combine.
- (b) the peculiar nature of its object, which is destruction and not construction.

Whatever its size, and whatever its object, the Wartime army does not absorb smoothly into its machinery the millions of trained civilians who are to work the military machine, and until it is capable of doing so, it is failing in its object.

Let us examine the case of the civilian doctor and engineer who becomes a part of the military machine. As regards professional qualifications it cannot be gainsaid that the civilian is the equal of his opposite number in the Army. Yet many of these highly qualified technicians both in this and the last war have failed to work smoothly in the military organisation, or to put the case from their point of view, their efforts are to a large extent nullified and their qualifications wasted. Similarly with highly trained accountants, bankers, executives, controllers of labour, etc. They cannot adjust the methods of organisation and administration by which they have achieved success in their own world to the military system.

Nor will the professional soldier (admittedly a trained grouser) deny that he finds the machinery, of which he is a component part, extremely slow in action and extremely galling in its rigidity. Is there any professional soldier who has not at one time or another re-organised his own office, introduced super-simple procedure and infallable methods of routine? Similarly with regard to stores and equipment and general administration. However big or however small the responsibility, we all feel we can improve on the methods of our predecessor, and that unless we do effect some changes we shall be considered lacking in initiative.

Occasionally, also, attempts are made to effect re-organisation on a large scale, and experts are consulted. Who are these experts? I will not commit myself further than to say that they are personnel who have been raised and nurtured in an atmosphere of routine, and whose minds are trained to regard forms and returns as the be-all and end-all of good organisation and administration.

The question of personal responsibility, particularly financial responsibility, has exercised the minds of Higher Command for the past half century, and the rules and instructions laid down have continued to exasperate professional officers who have been given positions of great responsibility. It can easily be estimated what is the effect of this type of organisation on the civilian soldier, who has been accustomed to making decisions and seeing them implemented because the project envisaged is necessary to the matter in hand, not because it has had the routine approval of some higher authority, or because it is within the terms of a series of conflicting Regulations.

It is beyond the civilian soldier's comprehension that a small matter, involving a few rupees possibly, should take so many man hours to decide, apart from the cost of postage and the psychological effect of delay and procrastination;

Digitized by GOOSIC

or that he is not allowed to introduce some new method, or exercise his own pixment without the concurrence of some more senior officer. In essence he saysus the Army seems to be organised not to produce results, but to keep employed a dealing with routine office work of a petty nature, the maximum number of pesonnel, and to this opinion the professional soldier has no logical answer.

Here then, in my opinion, are the essentials to making the Professus Army capable of absorbing the man power of the nation into its organisation will a minimum of dislocation both to itself and the civilian.

- I. Reorganisation of Army Organisation and Administration on lines no in conformity with the principles accepted in civilian organisation. To stai this object, it is necessary that:—
  - (i) Greatly increased responsibility and power of decision be degree to officers of all grades. Delegation of responsibility to impleace plance of responsibility.
  - (ii) Knowledge of business principles and methods, and their application to be an essential part of the training of every officer.
  - be appointed to formulate a new organisation based on civilia organisation and administration. Their task to be to make the dog (the fighting machine) was the tail (organisation and administration).
- II. A re-orientation of ideas of the purpose of discipline and of the methods by which a disciplined army can be created. The welfare and electron of the soldiers to be considered a very important part of that trained I am of the opinion that the professional soldier realises the necessity for a re-orientation of ideas on this matter, and will willingly accept construction proposals.
- III. The officer to be trained to consider himself to be the backless and the brain of the modern professional Army, and capable of acting on his evil initiative whatever situation may present itself.

If action is taken now, whilst our civilian soldiers are still with us, not use will a third world war be fought with greater economy of man-power, but the past war professional Army will become an instrument of even greater power and eleven higher efficiency when expansion again becomes necessary.

# "Dagger" Division's Education Drive.

More than 2,181 illiterate men of the 19th Indian ('Dagger') Division's literacy drive have received instruction during the last three month in verticular languages.

Every unit in the division regularly sends candidates for the 3rd class examination. In one month 218 candidates passed the examinations. It the moment, there are 3,120 candidates under instruction for certificates of education.

The education staff is meeting with many difficulties. There is a short-age of accommodation and equipment. Until recently they were using Japanese chalk captured at Mandalay, and some units are still improvising by writing with charcoal on walls.

## A BURMA BALLAD

I R

al 11.5

le l

NIO Oly

019.

ioc '

dk

w

91

he le:

ta i

Wí.

比

M

le.

ľ

ĸ.

Í

(With apologies to Rudyard Kipling).

We've taken our fun where we've found it, of variety there's been no lack, We've roamed from Moulmein to the Yomas, from Tiddim to Imphal and back; We've also seen something of rivers, the Sittang and Chindwin and too The Irrawaddy, where the flying fish flee, to mention just only a few. We started our revels in Rangoon, but we didn't stay there very long, For soon we moved on to the Salween, a position not palpably strong; So we shifted our berth to the northwards and there we awaited the Nip—We hardly could boast, we could sit still at most, doing our best to equip. Thence we went steadily backwards through Pegu, Henzada and Prome, Back to the line of the oilfields, where we felt even farther from home, Mandalay passed on the skyline, Ava just flashed into view, We had to withdraw, in case somewhat raw, to Assam to refit anew. There very few moments were wasted, with a confidence never lost, but increased.

And soon we were back in the Chin Hills, in conditions where a clash never ceased.

This went on for a season, we gave as good as we got,
With a keenness withal to avenge our withdrawal and show it was all
'tommy rot'.

In the plain of Imphal we then mustered and many a name we recall—Silchar and Moirang and Chingpu, Bishenpur and Kha Aimol—The scenes of the bloodiest fighting, where the Jap got the rudest of shocks, For they found to their cost they gained less than they lost, taking imperial knocks.

Then others continued the good work, while we were retired to rest And there an encampment soon flourished and the locals just feathered their nest,

Although we took life rather lightly, we still kept our eyes on the ball And, when at Yuletide, they said "You're for a ride", we answered "That's nothing at all".

By tracks devious and eroded, the river Irrawaddy was reached,
Where already another division a convenient bridgehead had breached,
It then was a race to Meiktila through Taungtha, Mahlaing and Oyin,
Flushing enemy in, though they're clever as sin, bunkers defended within.
We've taken our fun where we've found it, we've roamed and we've ranged
in our time,

We've had our pickings of Nippons and some of those pickings were prime, We've reversed the early decisions, British, Indians and men from Nepal; And we did it as such, 'cos we then knew too much, for the Sons of Heaven and all.

M. V. W.

### **GUERILLA WARFARE**

### By Major H. Simonds-Gooding.

GUERILLA warfare proper is carried out by armed civilian partisans in their own country against superior organised and armed enemy troops, Sometimes described as a "rabble in arms", they usually have their own peculiar methods of waging war which are very effective within local limits. They have two main roles: (i) ambushing the enemy, disrupting communications, and being a general nuisance to the rear areas; (ii) giving our troops timely information of enemy intentions and movements.

A successful ambush is the most heartening event for a guerilla. Not only does it mean a shock for the enemy, but it raises the morale of the guerilla party more than anything else. We practised several methods in the Chin Hills. One which always brought shrieks of joy to our men but screams from the enemy was the simple trick of sending two or three men to cut the enemy's telephone wire. They had only to be patient and sure enough not very much later the repair party would come along and get down to work. They never got enough time to get the join repaired.

On one occasion a party of four Chins pulled off a double ambush. First, they cut the enemy's telephone wire in a likely place, took up their positions, and waited. After some time a Jap repair party of three men appeared and began work. Our men accounted for all three. And then they waited again on the off-chance of the Japs sending out a search party for their missing comrades. Sure enough after some hours a Jap patrol, a section strong, appeared on the scene. They were moving along carelessly, and on seeing the bodies of their dead comrades, instead of advancing on them under proper covering arrangements, they crowded together round the bodies. The Chins accounted for three before they faded out into the jungle.

Another successful ambush method was to lay in wait near a track which had obviously been well used by the enemy, and usually it wasn't long before a mule train would come along and our men would have a grand time shooting up the Japs accompanying them.

Their second main role of obtaining timely information of the enemy's movements is really the more difficult. We used two methods. First, that of dressing a single Chin in his village dress and sending him alone and unarmed into a Jap-occupied village or area. The second was by deep patrol down into the Japanese-occupied Kabaw Valley. Here is an instance of when the first method was successful.

Our man's village was occupied by the Jap. He first of all laid some cleverly concealed booby trops on an important path in the vicinity of the village. Then he walked boldly on into the village dressed in his "levy" kit, carrying his rifle and ammunition. On being taken before the Jap officer in command he informed him that he was a Levy, and an inhabitant of that particular village. However, he wished now to settle down in his home and to desert the British service, of which he was sick and tired.

At first the Jap officer was inclined to be suspicious, but our man replied that he was prepared to show the Japs booby traps laid by the British near the

village, as proof of his good faith. This was duly accepted, and he showed the Japs the traps he had himself laid about an hour earlier. This completely won their confidence, and he was allowed to come back to the village on condition that he served the Japs as a guide. In fact, they were even prepared to give him rations. Four nights later he arrived back in our Levy post with the most detailed knowledge of the Jap positions.

The other method of long distance patrols involved going out for five or six days at a time. The strength of the party had to be sufficient to afford protection, and to be of such a number as would avoid any man having to do more than two hours sentry duty at night. Men have to travel as light as possible, be fit enough to traverse the worst possible country, and be able to live on shakapura biscuits and tea for a week at a time with rease. The most important thing is to see without being seen. Therefore the patrol must avoid becoming engaged with the enemy at all costs. Should an engagement take place, not only is the successful achievement of that particular patrol's object endangered, but the enemy will probably be on the alert for some time to come, thus making information very difficult to come by in that sector.

Morale is of even greater important with guerillas than with regular troops. Partisans are civilian volunteers and are usually fighting under adverse conditions. They have comparatively little sense of military discipline. Their main driving force is an intense personal desire to inflict loss and trouble on the enemy. For them a high degree of morale is vital, and it can only be achieved and maintained by tact, leadership and personality on the part of the commander.

# "Urdu Made Easy."

"Urdu Made Easy" might well be the name of a scheme now being adopted by the Indian Army by which officers, cadets and British other ranks will have the benefit of a modern, scientific course prepared by the Pelman Institute, Delhi.

In future a complete Pelman Urdu Course will be provided free for each cadet undergoing training at the Indian Military Academy and at Officers' Training Schools in India. In addition, officers eligible to sit for the Urdu examination as well as British other ranks may enjoy the benefit of this system if they so desire.

Since all cadets who pass the Army Elementary Urdu Test after April 1, 1946, will have received free tuition under the new scheme, they will not be eligible for the reward of Rs. 100 previously given to those successful in this test.

Any officer who is eligible to sit for the Urdu examination and wishes to study by means of the Pelman System will apply through his Commanding Officer to the Secretary, Pelman Institute, 10 Alipur Road, Delhi, for a copy of the enrolment form. The payment for the course will be made by the Controller of Military Accounts concerned.

On passing the test, an officer who studies by means of the Pelman system will be eligible for a reward of Rs. 65.

The terms and conditions for British other ranks are the same as those for officers,



### ORGANISED COMPOST MAKING

By Major J. H. Auret.

INDIA, once again, is on the brink of the precipice. It faces not the Japs—a man-made catastrophe—but famine. The Armies of India saved her in war. What can they do to save her in Peace?

Soldiers are diffident about dabbling in civil affairs. Famines are the concern of the civil administration, of the agriculturist, the scientist, the Deputy Commissioners and those who control supplies and transport, of the statistician and the medical man. The soldier can shrug his shoulders and leave such technical matters to others.

It is precisely this that has tempted me to write this article. I am not a farmer, or a scientist, or a medical man, nor even an administrator. I am a Regular soldier. As such I can give an assurance that the science of compost making is a simple and easy affair for the Army, and it is in that direction that I see the Army helping India in her fight against Famine.

There are many problems facing India—social, economic and political, but few compare in importance to that of the relentless pressure of the population on the land. There are many mouths and too little land to feed them with; India must feed her millions on less than an acre a head. This is the root cause of her depressing poverty, and, indeed, directly or indirectly, affects most of her other problems. Whether or not the surplus population could be drawn off the land through industrialisation, or whether population control. will ever become practicable are beside the present issue. At the moment, India's population is in grave danger of exceeding her food resources.

Even in normal times a large part of the population is living at a level of bare subsistance, their diet being not only poor in quality (lacking in sufficient of the protective foods, with their contribution towards the diet of vitamins, etc.) but also even of insufficient calory (energy) value. A famine merely accentuates the situation and thrusts it before the public eye. In actual fact the problem of food insufficiency is ever present.

A little can doubtless be done to increase the area under cultivation, but even here the scope is limited. Forests form an essential part of the agricultural pattern. Their presence or absence seriously affects rainfall, the amount of water in wells, irrigation and soil erosion. It is said that for agricultural purposes at least one-fifth of an acre should be under forest. Something can be done with bull-dozers—at a cost—to flatten and grade eroded land. Something can be done, by careful cultivation and manuring, to reclaim alkaline land. Nevertheless, the the real problem of increasing agricultural production lies in securing more food from our existing land resources.

To achieve this, two things are especially essential. One is more water, and the other is more manure. The former is in the province of the engineer. The latter is in the province of sanitation and refuse disposal, and is, more or less, in the province of every Army officer, and certainly of every unit C.O. and Quartermaster,

Nature in her wisdom has created the Wheel of Life, which is a process for continual change. It is her intention that life and growth should merge into death and decay to be revitalised into life once more. So it is that the forest grows, and the animals and the insects thrive, only eventually to die and mingle with each other until they become indistinguishable in the rich earth of the forest floor.

There is nothing smelly or unhygienic or unhealthy in the process. The air of the forest is fresh and vitalising, and quite unlike the air of the cantonment, with its stale smell of incinerator smoke. Cholera and dysentery are diseases of man-made towns, not of Nature's forests. Nature is clean and sanitary and healthy in the disposal of her wastes. She does not burn them; she does not collect them in dumps. She spreads them on the forest carpet in such a way that animal waste mixes with vegetable wastes, with leaves, and bark; pods with dead stems; dead ants mix with berries, and feathers with twigs. All Nature is interminably mingled in a hotch potch. The forest breeze aerates them. The forest rain dampens them. The forest sun warms them. These agencies turn the dead and disease ridden residues into healthy food for living plants, so that disease itself succours life.

No matter what the residues are, they decay into a dark, friable sweet peat mouldy-smelling earth. There is no obnoxious smell, no myriads of flies, none of the unpleasant unhealthiness that accompanies human efforts at sanitation. Nature's sanitation is perfect. It is not characterised by the waste that accompanies human efforts at cleanliness; it is a creative force. She does without modern sewage or incinerator. She would despise such clumsy man-made methods—would, in fact, regard them as criminal, as, indeed, they are. For Nature regards all waste as potential humus, as the very life of the soil which feeds the vegetable and animal kingdoms, and man himself.

Humus is the basis of all life. For a humus-filled soil will produce healthy crops, with a high vitamin content, and disease resistant. These qualities are passed on to the animals that devour the crops. Man, too, equally benefits by eating both the crops and the animals, and the animal products that have thrived from humus-filled soils by better health and disease resistance. Man, by destroying his wastes, indirectly destroys his own food and his own health.

Humus itself might be called the living earth. Humus is the resultant organic substance formed by the decomposition through germentation of natural wastes by means of certain bacteria and fungi. Humus is an aerobic product, the result of the work of bacteria and fungi that require air. Putrefaction is not caused by these agents, but by bacteria that decay material without air. Compost is produced by fermentation and not by putrefaction. Hence compost is a healthy, cleanly substance, devoid of the smells and obnoxiousness of the latter. These unpleasantnesses are all too often the result of man's behaviour, which is seldom modelled on natural processes.

Compost is the atomic bomb with which to fight famine. It is formed by incorporating animal (including human ) and vegetable wastes in such a manner as to decay them by fermentation. This compost is a highly humus containing product. It contains those important plant nutrients, nitrogen, phosphorus and potash in a well-balanced proportion. It also contains all the necessary trace elements which, although present in very small quantities, are so necessary to the health of plants. Compost is, in fact, the complete plant food. And of all composts, that made from human wastes and habitation rubbish is the richest, having a high nitrogen and phosphoric content,

To sum up, then, it is with compost that we must fight not only this famine, but normal food insufficiency. After composting, wastes become immediately digestible to the plants. Compost supplies humus to the soil. Not only does humus ensure healthy plants, but it maintains the soil texture in good condition. It retains moisture in time of drought, and facilitates drainage when water is in excess. It also has a residual and cumulative effect. Compost feeds plants with essential minerals, nitrogen, phosphorus, potash and the trace elements.

Burely it is criminal, even in normal times, to burn the raw materials that make this stuff? A look at the thin Indian peasantry should answer this. Perhaps one day there will be a tax on incinerators.

So much, then, for generalisations about compost. How is it made? There are various methods and modifications, but all are governed by certain general principles. So long as these are fulfilled, any method is correct. The requirements of composting are:

- (a) Animal Wastes. These form the activator or starter. It is largely the bacteria and nitrogen in these that break down the wastes into decayed manure. Urine is particularly rich and should be included where practicable. The smell of ammonia is a sign of the waste of nitrogen going on.
- (b) Vegetable Wastes. These act as an absorbent to the above, and provide bulky organic matter. Anything of vegetable origin may be used—leaves, bhursa, garden and crop wastes, lawn cuttings, kitchen wastes, habitation rubbish, etc. Paper in small quantities is not harmful, but ink and chemicals of various sorts inhibit bacteria. Hard items like large quantities of sugarcane need to be bruised first.

Normally three or four parts by volume of vegetable wastes should be composted with one part of activator. Often, in cases like a mule company, the animal wastes will be much more than a quarter of the total. This does not matter; whatever proportion is present may be composted.

- (c) Air. The bacteria and fungi that decompose the wastes are aerobix (requiring air) in the first stages. Heaps must not be trodden on or compressed, as this tends to exclude air. If air be excluded, then nature decomposes the heap by putrefactive anaerobic (not requiring air) bacteria. Correct aeration is a cardinal point in composting.
- (d) Moisture. The pile must be moist, because the bacteria use water for decomposition. The heap should be as moist as a squeezed out sponge. If dry, the decay slows down. But the heap must never be sodden, for then the water excludes air, and putrefaction and flies begin to work. A little experience soon teaches the correct moisture required. This moisture content is closely interlinked with aeration; correct moisture content is the key to successful composting.
- (e) A Base. In decomposition some acidity is formed which inhibits the bacteria. Some wood ash (plenty is available in the cookhouses), earth or slaked lime, or a mixture of these should be added to counteract acidity. A double handful per barrow load is about correct, or a sprinkling of half-inch to every six-inch layer of compost.
- (f) Heat. The compost heap will quickly ferment to a heat of 150 degrees F., or more. This kills fly larvae, and harmful organisms, and weed seeds. Some fly larvae from eggs resident in the original material will hatch in the

beginning on the colour surfaces to start with, but will die before maturity. Flies in our Tochi Scouts' Posts, have much decreased since the introduction of the composting of all wastes.

We have found that the amount of labour required for composting is less than for incineration, in which *bhangis* have to be continually stoking up. In composting all wastes are disposed of on arrival. A unit can compost its wastes without further addition of staff. It is necessary, however, for some properly trained N.C.O. or V.C.O. to occasionally see that the *bhangis* are carrying out orders properly, and to keep records of manure made, and finally to arrange its disposal. For the latter a price of, say, Rs. 1-/8 per ton is reasonable. A ton may be taken as 50 cubic feet; a cartload is generally taken as half a ton. Exsoldier cultivators should get preference and perhaps reduced rates.

In my own Corps 3,500 men, split into nine Posts, and including about 120 animals, produce about 1,700 tons a year. In actual fact our production would greatly exceed this, but our Posts are dotted about in arid tracts, and vegetable waste is very scarce.

Finally, there are some details of the methods we employed in the Tochi Scouts. We compost night soil and animal wastes in different heaps. Normally, the nightsoil is handled by sweepers only until it is removed from the charging trench; from the charging ground onwards it is handled by troops, who carry it off to spread over the gardens. The results on the produce are excellent.

The manufacturing trench is two feet deep, fifteen feet wide and as long as required. Heaps are charged by laying a rubbish layer three or four inches deep, and placing as much rubbish again on these heaps in piles. The nightsoil is poured evenly and thinly around the piles, which are then lightly raked flat, thus allowing a large area for aeration. A heap is laid along one side of the trench, and inwards for five feet, and as far along the trench side as necessary. The rubbish contains sufficient cookhouse asnes to act as a base.

On the third evening it is watered, should it be dry, and on the fourth day the heap is turned by forking it over to the opposite side. Similarly on the 8th day the heap is turned by forking towards the head of the trench. On the 24th day it is removed from the trench, fully mature and stored in a pile ready for use.

In very small Posts (of three or four platoons only) the same treatment is used, but the compost is collected in a New Zealand box specially designed for the purpose. The reason for this is that as the quantity of wastes is so small, a decent sized heap cannot be made in one or two days. Hence the wastes are gradually collected in a box which protects them from wind and rain. The former cools, and the latter interferes with the aeration of small heaps. In the case of big heaps of 5 ft. by 2 ft. by 3 ft. or greater, the surface area is less as compared to the volume than is the case of a small heap, and the interior heat is sufficient to counteract harmful effects.

Full details of this system are available in the Institute of Plant Industry, Indore, Bulletin No. 1, ("The Sanitary Disposal and Agricultural Utilisation of Habitation Wastes by the Indore Process").

The animal wastes are composted in heaps 16 ft. wide, 2 ft. high and as long as required. The heap will sink and slowly dry. When it rains the outer 4 ft. of each side of the heap are pitch-forked on to the centre. Again, after three or four weeks, or when rain subsequently occurs, the whole heap is turned.

Sometimes yet a third turning is given after a further three weeks. The compost matures in about four months. On a permanent site, where large quantities are composted, a water and hose system would be most convenient to replace the less punctual rain. Some earth also is added to these heaps. Here again a detailed technique is available in Bulletin No. 2, "The Supply of Humus to Soils", issued by the Institute of Plant Industry, Indore.

The N.C.Os or V.C.Os supervising composting naturally require written directions. In every Tochi Post the N.C.O. in charge has a pamphlet in Roman Urdu explaining not only the technique but also the principles; this enables him to act intelligently, and is better than a mere list of rules. Some such Army Roman Urdu pamphlet is easily printable.

As regards organisation, it is best left to Station Commanders' as to whether composting should take place in individual units, or whether it should be centralised. This is merely an administrative rather than a technical question. Such questions arise as economy of labour, collection, distribution of manure, transport availability, convenience of sites for charging trenches and so on.

Finally, if the Army displays that energy over the problems of peace that she has displayed in war, large-scale composting can take effect in each and every cantonment at once. A week or so will be required for organisation; even so, the first piles may well appear within one month, to be followed by thousand-ton after thousand-ton of compost, which may help India in her desperate plight.

### ADDITIONS TO THE LIBRARY

POEMS FROM INDIA (Oxford University Press, Bombay) Rs. 3, is an Anthology of poems composed by members of the Forces. The poems, chosen by Majors R. N. Currey and R. V. Gibson, cover a wide range, and convey a kaleidoscopic picture of the Serviceman's life in the East. Among the many excellent verses included in the Anthology is Major P. R. Boyles' "Burma—Defeat and Victory" which runs:

Waiting, waiting now, the battle done,
The little wind of God blows through the mind
And turns the brittle leaves of memory;
The newest memory of our thoughtless kind.
The branches stir, of lately sleeping thought,
And, sluggishly at first, the whole tree wakes
After the hail that lulled it into sleep.
We are the tree. The grasp of winter breaks;
Yet still the voices of the spring are hushed.

L

We have but memory of the winter passed And Hope, born with the dawn (so late the dawn), That strength may be restored to us at last.

We stood upon the drear and misty hill

And turned and gazed whence we had come, and saw
The hungry vapours writhing in the vale;
The ghosts who fought with us but fight no more, no more.
Above the burning world we made our fires
And cooked our rice, and shivered in the rain,
And slept, and rose, and turned and marched away;
And who knows if we shall come back again?
We were the fighting men; we bore our arms
To battle, fought, and left our dead behind;
Sorrowfully marched toward the setting sun.

High on the hills the paean throbs and rings,
Over the clouded peaks. Among the trees,
Through the deep valleys, down the forest trails,
Toward the sunrise with the morning breeze.
Splendid has come the dawn and bright the day;
The fallen die in victory at last:
The camp fires of the living glow more bright
For all the sorry darkness that is past.
This is the fight we dreamed of long ago
When all our fighting led but to defeat.
This is our battle and our hour, nor evermore
Shall we pass through the mountains in retreat.
Strong blows the wind towards the rising sun;
The winds of God, the tide of war, have turned.
Thanks be to Him, peace to the restless ghosts,

Cold on the mountain wails the little wind.

Strong in our arms and hearts, we have returned.

- "Defence is our Business", By Brigadier J. G. Smyth, V.C., M.C.—Is a book for all interested in the Empire and its defence. The author suggests that the size and organisation of our post-war forces is to a great extent a business proposition. If our post-war defence force is too weak, we shall become a second-class power; if it is too strong, it will adversely affect our trade, our prosperity and our standard of living. His chapter on "Our Post-War Defence Policy" is both interesting and instructive. He stresses that "just as we want a better Empire Trade Policy and a new Empire Air Policy, so we must have a well co-ordinated and practised Empire Defence Force ready and able to operate at any point in the world." The book is a most fascinating study, and being written by one who knows his subject well, it carries conviction.
- "World War: its Causes and Cure", By LIONEL CURTIS.—Unlike many authors who deal with this subject, Mr. Lionel Curtis does not lay the blame for world war upon any particular nation, party or group of individuals. He researches scientifically into the political and economic world of yesterday and to-day, and argues that the system of national sovereign states must give way to an international organisation enjoying universal support. The powers of the International Government, he says, should be limited to defence, foreign policy, colonies and civil aviation. All other internal and social affiars should be left to the national governments.

He warns his readers that all political parties, as at present constituted, are merely concerned with votes and party politics, and have no real conception of the issues at stake. Finally, the author suggests that the political systems in the world require a surgical operation and must be imbued with a new moral outlook.

- "Military French", By Francis Denoeu.—Is a thorough attempt to give the student a grounding in French military terms. Each lesson is planned on the basis of acquainting him with the elements of French grammar, and at the same time building up a progressive account of every aspect of military life. The latter is presented bilingually in two parallel columns. The book is no mere phrase book, and requires a certain amount of study on the part of the interested reader.
- "British Soldiers", By S. H. F. Johnston.—Is one of the latest books in the well-known series "Britain in Pictures," and gives the history of the British Army from the formation of Cromwell's New Model Army in 1645 down to the second World War. The historical detail is written with a lightness that makes this work easily readable. An interesting account of the military leaders of each period adds considerably to its value. The author comments on the popular feeling towards the British Army, which has so often resulted, in times of emergency, in its inadequate strength and lack of preparedness, due to reluctance to finance it on a sufficient scale. The story of British campaigns in Europe, North America, India, South Africa and other lands is briefly traced. The book has 25 illustrations in black and white, and eight well-produced plates in colour.
- "Merchantmen At War".—Issued by the Ministry of Information, gives a factual and comprehensive account of the life and work of the Merchant

Navy. The reader will find descriptions of the various types of merchant seamen, the procedure for sailing orders, the transport of cargoes, the experiences of survivors from action on the high seas, the organisation convoys and the chief convoy routes of the war. The vital part played by the Merchant Navy is set out with a wealth of enthralling detail. This booklet is a well-deserved tribute to our Merchant Navy and its work in keeping open or lifelines. It is excellently produced, and has some fine illustrations.

"Stalin", By J. T. L. MURPHY.—Is a historical survey of the life and career of the Russian leader. The author traces the influences which affected Stalin's youth as the son of a Georgian shoemaker, how he became attracted to the doctrines of Karl Marx, and his early activities as a member of the Bolshevik Party. The collapse of the Tsarist regime and the growth of the Socialist revolutionary movement are portrayed in detail. The full implications of the struggle between Trotsky and Stalin, together with the associated trials reveal the enormity of the task confronting the Soviet leaders in constructing the Soviet State and their determination to brook no internal opposition.

The story unfolds with the building of the new Soviet civilisation, the reasons for Stalin's changed attitude to the World Revolution, and the orientation of Russia's foreign policy from its former principles with the disbandment of the Communist International. The frequent quotation of extracts from the speeches of Stalin and other leaders should help to clarify the reader's mind regarding the trends and purpose of Soviet policy from the Revolution down to 1944. The book contains several interesting illustrations.

"The Red Army", By MAJOR-GENERAL FOMICHENKO.—Is a concise but complete account of Russia's military forces. The whole career of the Red Army is revealed, since its inception during the days of the Revolution, to its final triumphs over the Nazis at the end of 1944. The entire course of the fighting on the Soviet-German front is outlined in considerable detail. There are chapters on the instruction and training of the Red Army, on its officers and generals, and its cultural and educational activities.

Algiers 1941-1943, By RENEE PIERRE-GOSSET.—This book presents a French woman journalist's eye-witness account of the liberation of North Africa from the influence of the Axis Powers. Vivid portrayals of the characters and action of French political and military leaders such as Darlan and Weygand add a personal note to the narrative, which will certainly not fail to hold the reader's attention. The later may, indeed, feel somewhat overwhelmed with the wealth of information and personalities hitherto unknown to him.

Particular emphasis is placed on the importance of Franco-American relations during Franco's great ordeal. An interesting touch is provided by the revelation of a monarchist plot linked to the assassination of Darlan in December, 1942. The political negotiations of the Allies with Darlan are regarded by the author as a question of expediency. A description of social conditions in North Africa during the two years completes a work of very considerable interest.

"Scotland", By Jan Finlay.—Is one of the Oxford University Press "World Today" series, and is an academic survey of Scotland's historical and cultural development. The author gives a sketch of the country, in peoples and their institutions, and of the former power of Crown and Church Those who incline to visualise Scotland merely as the land of the kilt with a romantic past associated with the names of Robert Bruce and Mary Queen of Scots will find much material here on the vital issues with which Scotland is confronted to-day.

Her contemporary problems, similar to those found in other countries, include the question of Scottish nationalism, extensive unemployment, the housing shortage, Glasgow's high infant mortality and the difficulties faced by Scottish farmers. A light touch is added by comparison of the different characteristics of the Highlander and the Lowlander and a passing reference that golf, reflecting the traditional national character of the Scots, is to Scotland what cricket has been to England.

The Union of South Africa, By P. P. Balsara.—Presents in 32 pages a clear and concise picture of South Africa's background and problems. The pamphlet begins with details of the Union's population and climate, agriculture and mineral resources, followed by its rather brief history, which together with the rest of Africa is responsible for the term "Dark Continent."

The author emphasises that there are three great problems which the Union Government has to solve—the race problem, the problem of gold, and the demand of the Dutch nationalists for a Republic. The pamphlet concludes with a reference to the spirit of fear for the future which pervades the country, and must be eradicated if South Africa is to retain her position in the world. This pamhlet presents a considerable amount of information which can be easily read in half an hour.

"Tibet", By DAVID MACDONALD.—Is another Oxford pamphlet, which gives a brief survey of the geography, history, culture and commerce of that country. The importance of Tibet's trade link with India is mentioned, in addition to her cordial friendship with Britain, but it is emphasised that Tibet desires freedom to manage her own affairs without foreign interference. Much of the historical detail is too remote to be of interest to the general reader; neither is it presented in such a manner as to be easily digestible to any but the student of Tibetan affairs.

#### LETTERS TO THE EDITOR

#### THE RE-BIRTH OF A REGIMENT

To the Editor of the U.S. I. "Journal."

Dear Sir,

nd(b blic

dSr.

THE

M.

es le

le E

贮

to E

en:

ė

or, c

mes

W.

mi.

M

enc

de F. Lået

<u>4,</u>1.

100

궧.

尮

I read with great interest in the Journal for January 1946, the article entitled "The Re-Birth of a Regiment", by "Madrassi".

Nearly 27 years ago I also was posted to a Madras from a Sikh Battalion, and I remember vividly to this day my feelings of disgust at the time, of being posted to a unit consisting of Tamils, Telugus, Parayans (as they were then called—now Adi-Dravidas) and Christians. My feelings then were exactly those of "Madrassi" when he was posted from Simla to a Madras Battalion. But, like "Madrassi", it was not long before I found that my ideas, picked up in the North of India, were entirely at fault, and from that time till this I have never for a moment wished for anyone better to serve with than the Madrassi soldier.

The Northern Sepoy and the Southern are both good soldiers, provided they have good Officers. But because the Madrassi is a Dravidian and entirely different from the Northerner, as the writer of "The Re-Birth of a Regiment" justly points out, that gives the Northerner no right whatsoever to look down on the Southerner. Who did all the fighting in India during the 18th Century? The Madras soldier with a sprinkling of British troops. What Battalion stood firm when most others were streaming back through them at a certain badly mismanaged landing in East Africa during the War of 1914-18? A Madras Battalion. What Battalion was named as the best on the British side by the Turkish Commander in the Aden Hinterland in the 1914-18 War? Again a Madras Battalion.

Which Recruiting Area in India produced the largest percentage of recruits during the War of 1939-45? The Madras Recruiting Area, in spite of the fact that few recruits were demanded from the Area for the first year or two of the War. Has any of the three Battalions of the re-born Madras Regiment that have been in action overseas in the 1939-45 War proved unreliable, untrustworthy, or un-anything else, in spite of the fact that almost without exception not a single V.C.O., N.C.O., or man has more than about five years' service? They certainly have not!

The Q.V.O. Madras Sappers and Miners have always retained a reputation above reproach—even the Northerners admit this, and quite rightly so! But their men are exactly the same as those enlisted for other Madras Units. So what possible just grounds can there be for the idea that the Madrassi soldier is not as good as any other Indian soldier?—providing that he has good Officers, and this applies to any troops.

The enormous expansion that took place during the War of 1939-45 in all Services, Formations and Units, was made possible greatly through the fact that so many recruits came forward so willingly from the South, at a time when the North was drying up. Has any Officer who has actually served with the Madrassi elements of these expansions ever expressed the opinion that the Madrassi was not well worth his place? I have talked to many, including a number who have been transferred from Northern units, but have yet to meet one who is not enthusiastic over the soldier from Madras.

Although, as will be seen from the above, I am in agreement with the large majority of "Madrassi's" article, there are one or two points over while I would 'take him up'.

"Madrassi" says: "Madrassis...do not like service on the N.V. Frontier—not because of the toughish life, but because of the extremes of climate and distance from their homes. Everyone volunteered for drafts to Battalius in Burma, but there was an ominous silence when Battalions on the Freezis were mentioned. This may possibly have been the cause of the old Madra Battalions falling into disfavour in the days when the Red Flag of the Rengard was the be-all and end-all of I.A. training. The Madras Sappers and Mines have always done extremely well on the Frontier, however, and there is no delate that as the Madras Regiment grows older it will also acclimatise itself to the part of India."

The Madrassi is certainly not afraid of "the toughish life of the Frontier". In fact, I have known him up there compete equally with the justly renormal Gurkha on the hills and he has out-done a number of North Indian Battalius on the hills, marching and working.

The extremes of climate are undoubtedly severe, and are far in excess of anything which the Madrassi has ever encountered in his own part of India. He needs looking after, as anyone else does, but he gets used to the climate. In the Khyber Pass in 1919 during the record hot weather of that year, followed by a record cold weather, the Madras Battalion with which I was serving was of all day and every day, and had the lowest sick figures of all units in the lime and, except for ourselves and a Madras Field Company, all other units in the lime

I submit that one of the main reasons why "Madrassi" did not find the same alacrity to volunteer for service on the N.-W. Frontier as for Burns was because the men knew that they would see something of the War in Burns, whereas they saw little hope of moving from the Frontier in time to join in Active Service. I know that was the feeling in one of the Battalions which I commanded.

A projudice, unmerited by the men, has existed for a long time against the Madrassi; the prejudice has lessened, but it still exists to some extent Our present Commander-in-Chief and our late Governor of Madras have been instrumental in the re-birth of the Madras Regiment, and I do not think that their trust has been betrayed by the re-born Regiment or other Madras soldiers. The Madrassi is free from petty intrigues and caste prejudices; he is amenable to discipline; is cheery; has an excellent sense of humour and a real smile; le will work all day—and then some—for Officers whom he knows to take an interest in him and the some inte in him and whom he respects; he marches well and has plenty of guts; he is lord and unusually intelligent; he is clean in his habits; serves willingly Overses and there are vast numbers willing to enlist; he gets on very well with British troops, he liber his first and and troops; he likes his food, but is not bound by religious scruples over food and drink; he knows little—if any—Urdu and far prefers to learn English, which is useful to him in his own part of India; he is not naturally smart in his turn-oat because in his village he solden wears much more than a leincloth; he speads money; is rather partial to the ladies and he is inclined in a childlike way to overstay leave. With good Officers he is as good as any other Indian troops and better than some.

Yours faithfully, "CHENNAPATNATE"

Bangalorc.

#### "SOME ARMY NICKNAMES"

To The Editor of the U.S. I. "Journal."

na a Dear Sir.

STORES.

D possie

there i

198 EE

of the

I don't know who "Mouse" is, but he may be interested to hear that it is just on forty years since I went out to India to take the place of the bloodier of subthe two heroes of the witty rhyme he quoted in his article in your October, 1945 thissue. And I hope he won't mind my suggesting some slight amendments which the dubting out its full flavour. Here is the original as I heard it, long before I went so Simla:

Two.....there were of equal worth,
But not, alas! of equal birth,
And he who said his blood was blue
Was much the bloodier of the two.

This version has the further advantage of being really true. It certainly was not "he whose blood was really blue that was the bloodier of the two" but he who said so.

Please tell "Mouse" how much an old soldier has enjoyed his article. It has brought back so many pleasant memories. His last paragraph (in which he referred to the number of Field Marshals with nicknames) is striking, and I can strengthen it by adding the name of Milne, who was well known to his contemporaries as "Brindle".

May I add my congratulations on one of the best numbers of the Journal. I always look forward to its arrival, and am never disappointed. Your new cover is very nice.

Shropshire Club,
Shrewsbury.

Yours sincerely, JOHN HEADLAM. Major-General

"Mouse", and many other readers will be most interested in Major-General Sir John Headlam's interesting letter. For his encouraging remarks in the last paragraph we are most grateful.—Ed., U.S.I. "Journal".

#### A COMMON SERVICE LANGUAGE

To The Editor of the U.S.I. "Journal".

Dear Sir,

After the war of 1914-1918 the question of the co-ordination and possible amalgamation of the three Services was hotly debated, and no doubt we will hear a similar debate now. There is certainly a wealth of material on which to base arguments, for never before in our history have we had so many examples of combined and joint operations involving all Services and many different nationalities.

Previous efforts to consolidate and improve the co-operation of the Services have started at the top, and arguments have centred round the advantages and disadvantages of a Defence Minister, or have sought to evolve a combined staff at the head of all Services. No doubt the equivalent of these things were available to the builders of Babel, but it was due to the lack of a common language and not to the lack of common direction that they "left off to build the city".

Let us therefore for a change start at the bottom, and try to evolve at least a common language for the three Services. Then whatever the organization at the top, those actually fighting and working together will at least understand one another without difficulty. It is absurd that the sailor should cook his victuals in a galley, whereas the soldier, possibly next door to him, should cook his rations in a cookhouse. Think, too, of our poor allies! English is a difficult enough language in any case without adding complications to it, and with an active United Nations Organization we must adjust our ideas to working even more closely than before with allied forces.

In India, with the formation of the War Memorial Academy for cadets of all Services, this problem will demand a solution. Will a cadet ask what rig he should use when on liberty, and be told by his instructor to wear a certain order of dress on leave? Should his answer be, "Yes, Sir" or "Ay, Ay, Sir"?

Whereas the sailor keeps his memoranda in dockets and packs, the soldier keeps his correspondence in files and cases, and every Service has its own systems of making minutes. The Services can't even address a letter in the same way. Whereas the R.A.F. address a letter to a Headquarters, the Royal Navy address it to the Commander, and the Army on certain occasions address letters to a staff officer. The success with which the Service Staffs have worked together in this War in spite of these and other difficulties is a tribute to their powers of adaption and the flexibility of their outlook, but can hardly be considered the logical outcome of the merits of our system.

Not only do the different Services use different words, but they even attach different interpretations to the same word. When the soldier says that a thing "will" happen, he conveys an order. To the airman this conveys a statement of fact and he, like the sailor, prefers "is to" as the form to be used for orders. "Administration" is another snare. All three Services give this

word a different interpretation.

Abbreviations give rise to further differences. Is a "C.S.O." a Chief Staff Officer or a Chief Signal Officer? And some signals full of authorised Army abbreviations are double dutch to the other Services. This war has at least evolved an alphabet common to all our Services, and the Americans and we have even managed to co-ordinate signals procedure to a reasonable extent. Can we not go one stage further to words of one syllable? "E.T.A." amongst others is common to all Services, and there is no reason why we should not increase the common vocabulary of useful, as opposed to confusing, abbreviations.

Titles of staff officers might also be put on a common basis. The Staff Officer (Q) of one service blossoms into the Deputy Assistant Quartermaster-General of the other. The Senior Equipment Staff Officer or the Senior Naval Stores Officer have no equivalent in the Army. All three Services use petrol, but the staff officers that deal with this subject have totally different titles, not for that matter do the Services even refer to it by the same name. What is

"M.T. Spirit" to one is "Mogas" to another.

For India the problem of agreeing on a language and a set of terms common to all Services is urgent, owing to the projected Academy for all Services. For the rest of the Commonwealth it is a problem of more than academic interest which merits a solution now before new doctrines crystallize and new text books are written. We want a common Service language throughout the British Empire. Indeed, we should take a broader view and make efforts to agree with the Americans on the meaning of terms as far as possible. Thus, at any rate, the English-speaking parts of the United Nations could work

together more smoothly in whatever organization of force the U.N.O. may set up.

Is it too much to ask that India should take the lead in tackling this problem? Tackling it with respect, but not with slavish adherence to tradition. Let us, like the builders of Babel say, "Go to, let us build us a city and a tower". But in order that it may be a tower of strength let us reverse the process of Babel and evolve a common language from the present confusion of Service tongues.

Hong Kong.

Yours faithfully, M. C. PERCIVAL-PRICE.

Colonel.

#### HINTS FOR DEMOBILISED EX-OFFICERS

To The Editor of the U.S.I. "Journal".

Dear Sir,

After studing the literature and official announcements concerning demobilised ex-Service men before I left India I gathered the impression that there would be no difficulty in ex-Service men securing suitable employment without any great delay after their release in the U.K. My experience, I am sorry to say, and the result of inquiries into the subject, do not bear out this belief.

Legislation passed during the war requiring an employer to reinstate employees who have been called up has the effect of reducing the number of vacancies open to competition, and operates decisively to the detriment of (a) Ex-Regular soldiers (especially I.U.L. personnel), and (b) those who were called up before they were employed in a gainful occupation.

Recruitment to industry is restricted by this legislation, and the director of an important South Wales engineering concern told me recently that whilst it was operative it would not be possible to recruit men for jobs. Rather would jobs have to be fitted to men, *i.e.*, to the former employee who has in most cases outgrown his original job.

When I reached Britain in December, 1944, I registered in the Appointments Branch of the Ministry specially run in London for ex-Officers, and also at the Appointments Branch here in Birmingham. To date, the only definite result has been the submission of my name to a firm in the Midlands. I understand that the Appointments Branch in London recommended me, but I have heard nothing since.

Having heard nothing from the Appointments Branch in Birmingham up to the end of January, I applied for an interview with the officer in charge. He was an ex-temporary officer, and was most sympathetic towards ex-servicemen. But he had to admit that the positions he could offer were few and far between, and that the pay and conditions of some were not such as would attract one who had held a position of responsibility in any of the Service. He suggested that I see the War Officer Liaison Officer (a Regular) in the same building.

This officer assured me that the Ministery of Labour was doing everything it could to place ex-servicemen, and that he was satisfied that the officials were genuinely desirous of being as helpful as they possibly could be, but things were very difficult. Both Civil and Military officers appeared far from optimistic, and both agreed, though not in so many words, that there was still considerable prejudice against the regular soldier.

To me it appears that the ex-serviceman (especially the ex-Regular) must get out of his head any idea that he will be shown any special consideration because of his service to his country. The sole consideration in the labour market (apart from the concessions given to all disabled persons) is a cash one—can the man do the job better than his competitor? If so, he is likely to get the job, provided it cannot be done more cheaply by other methods.

Good jobs are few, and with the inevitable uncertainty of the future there is likely to be a considerable number for whom the lowest paid work only will be available, *i.e.*, what the Ministry of Labour calls "strong healthy labourers", for which there is a large demand. The ex-Serviceman must consider deeply and clearly what he wishes to do, and must be prepared to face hardship

if he wishes to pick and choose in the labour market.

Here are some points which may be useful for the Home-going Serviceman:

1. He should take advantage of any form of training he may be able to get before his release from the Service. He should be prepared to defer his release if by so doing he may take up training which will be likely to help him later in civil life.

2. He should not entertain big ideas of what he is likely to obtain in civil life. No consideration is likely to be shown on account of his service. The feeling is very widespread that those who stayed at home had more of the

hardships of war than many who served overseas in the Forces.

3. He should register with a branch of the Ministry of Labour in his own home locality, or if an officer, with the Appointments Branch, Ministry of Labour, London, before he leaves his overseas station for Home, i.e., as soon as his group is shown as "coming up" for release. On reaching England he should at once re-register with the above. He should not wait until his release leave is completed and his pay ceases, before re-registering.

4. He should be prepared to accept employment of a nature, or on lower pay than that which he wished to accept, rather than await a possible better job which may not eventuate. A man may rise even in civil life by hard

work and devotion to duty.

5. If not already a member, he should at once join his Regimental Association or the British Legion. Apart from thus being in a position to help others, and maybe should occasion arise obtain help for himself and his family, he will continue to keep in touch with comrades of his own standing.

6. If he has no opportunity of exerting influence; if he has no trade; and if he has no "pull", he should consider remaining in the Service. Letters published in the *Birmingham Mail* recently showed that certain ex-Soldiers had been advised by the Ministry of Labour to re-consider returning to the Army.

7. He should refuse employment in which any Service pension is taken into consideration in fixing wages. Cases do occur occasionally. They should

be reported at once to the Ministry of Labour.

8. He should be prepared to give good service in return for good pay. Generally speaking, wages are high, and though Income Tax bears heavily on overtime pay, there is always something in the pay packet worth taking home. But it is wrong to expect good wages for poor work, and equally wrong to accept poor wages to the detriment of others.

The Ministry of Labour officials are, I am convinced, doing all they can

to help the ex-Serviceman, but times are largely against them.

Yours faithfully, "DEMOBBED".



#### NOTES BY THE SECRETARY

#### New Vice Patrons

H.E. Sir Olaf Caroe, who has accepted an invitation to become a Vice-Patron of the U.S.I., on becoming Governor of the North-West Frontier Province, was formerly Secretary of the External Affairs Department, and for many years has been an ex-officio member of our Council. During that period he has taken a very deep interest in the progress and activities of the Institution, and his advice and assistance have always been of very great help.

On his assuming the appointment of G.O.C.-in-C., Eastern Command, Lieut-General Sir Francis Tuker has accepted an invitation to become a Vice-Patron of the United Service Institution of India. For many years past, under the pseudonym of "Auspex" and "John Hellard" he has been a regular contributor to the Journal of the Institution, and his writings and constructive criticisms have revealed his vast knowledge of military history. During the Great War he served in Mesopotamia, India and Persia; between the wars he fought on the North-West Frontier of India, and commanded a Gurkha battalion in the operations of 1937-38.

In 1940 he became D.M.T., and in 1941 left his staff appointment to raise the 34th Indian Division. His next command was the 4th Indian Division, which he took over in Cyrenaica on January 1, 1942. With his "red eagles" he fought in the North African campaign, and outside Tunis his Division attacked the enemy for the last time in North Africa. On May 12, 1945 the commander of all Axis forces in Africa, General von Arnim, surrendered to him.

Later he fought in Italy but just before Cassino he fell ill and was flown to the U.K. In October 1944 he returned to India and became chairman of an important frontier commission. In January 1945 he became G.O.C., Ceylon, and a little later took charge of 4th Corps in Burma, later becoming G.O.C., Lucknow District.

He was awarded the K.C.I.E. in the New Year Honours List.

As we go to Press we learn that General Tuker has been appointed Colonel of the 2nd King Edward VII's Own Gurkha Rifles in succession to General Sir Kenneth Wigram.

#### The Council

Lieut.-General Sir John G. des R. Swayne, K.C.B., C.B.E., late Chief of the General Staff in India, has relinquished his Presidency of the Institution on his departure for England to become Adjutant General of the Forces. Since his arrival in India nearly two years ago, General Swayne has been particularly interested in the growth and usefulness of this Institution to officers of the forces, on many occasions going out of his way to advise and suggest matters concerning policy. He will, we are confident, carry with him in his new sphere the best wishes of a host of friends in India.

Our new President, Lieut.-General Sir Arthur Smith, K.B.E., C.B., D.S.O., M.C., was until recently G.O.C.-in-C., Eastern Command. He was appointed Chief of the General Staff, India Command, in January last. He joined the Coldstream Guards in 1910 and in the Great War won the D.S.O., M.C., and the Croix de Guerre, being mentioned in despatches on five occasions.

During the recent war he was Chief of the General Staff in the Middle East from 1941 to 1942, was knighted in the latter year, and became G.O.C., London District. In 1944 he took over Command of the Persia-Iraq theatre. He was appointed G.O.C.-in-C. Eastern Command, in September, 1945.

Air Marshal M. Thomas, C.B.E., D.F.C., A.F.C., Air Officer Commanding-in-Chief, India, and Vice-President of the United Service Institution of India, has been succeeded by Air Marshal Sir Roderick Carr. Air Marshal Sir Roderick Carr was educated at Wellington College, New Zealand, served with the R.N.A.S. and the R.A.F. during the Great War, and after service in North Russia in 1919, became Chief of Air Staff to the Lithuanian Government in 1920. He was a member of Sir Ernest Shackleton's Antarctic Expedition of 1921.

Between the two wars he served in the U.K., the Middle East and the Far East, and at the beginning of the recent war commanded the Base of Advanced Air Striking Force of the R.A.F. in France. In 1940 he was A.O.C., Northern Ireland and from 1941—45 was A.O.C., Number 4 Group, Bomber Command. In 1945 he became Deputy Chief of Staff (Air) under General Eisenhower. From August 1945, he was Air Marshal Commanding, Base Air Forces, South East Asia Command.

Admiral J. H. Godfrey, C.B., another ex-officio member of the Council, has been succeeded in that capacity by Vice-Admiral Sir Geoffrey Miles, K.C.B., Flag Officer Commanding, R.I.N. Vice-Admiral Miles was formerly Deputy Director of the Staff College and at the outbreak of the late war, was Director of the Tactical School. He was Captain of H.M.S. Nelson for two years, being promoted to Rear-Admiral in 1941 and to Vice-Admiral in 1944. He was Naval member of the Military Mission to Moscow during 1941—43, and became Flag Officer Commanding, Western Mediterranean Fleet, in July, 1944.

Mr. A. D. Flux Dundas, who has assumed the appointment of Secretary, War Department, has accepted the invitation to serve in that capacity as exofficio member of the Council of the U.S.I. He entered the I.C.S. in 1922, was Political Agent, North Waziristan in 1928—31, Deputy Commissioner, Peshawar from 1934-36, Chief Secretary in the North-West Frontier Province from 1937 to 1941, and from 1941 to 1943 was Resident in Waziristan, becoming Revenue Commissioner in the N.-W.F.P., in 1943.

The appointment of Lieut.-General R. A. Savory as Adjutant General in India will have given great pleasure to his wide circle of friends throughout the Services in India. General Savory, who is an elected member of the Council of the U.S.I., and a member of the Executive Committee, until recently commanded the Persia-Iraq Command, and in December last, was appointed Adviser to the Commander-in-Chief, Middle East Forces in all matters concerning Indian troops stationed in the Middle East Command. His long connection with the Indian Army dates from the beginning of the Great War, when he joined the 14th K.G.O. Sikhs, (now 1/11 Sikh Regiment) which he was commanding in 1939.

Early in 1940 he went to Egypt as Commander of the 11th Indian Infantry Brigade, whose first "kill" was at Sidi Barrani when it captured Nibeiwa, the stronghold on which the success or failure of the campaign depended. For his part in the action, General Savory was awarded the D.S.O. Later he fought with his Brigade at Keren.

In October, 1941, he became G.O.C., troops in Eritrea and three months later was appointed to command the 23rd Indian Division on the Assam—Burma frontier during the confused period when the Japs drove north through Burma.

In June, 1943, he was transferred to G.H.Q. as Inspector (later Director) of Infantry. During the two years he held this post, there was considerable expansion in the Indian Army, and much of the success of the training and organization of the new infantry intake was due to his planning and skilful direction of policy.

In September, 1945, Gen. Savory was appointed to command the Persia and Iraq theatre.

#### New Members

The following new members have been elected to membership of the Institution, during the past three months:

Beresford -Peirse, Lt.-Genl. Sir Noel M. de la P., K.B.E., C.B., D.S.O.

Blood, Lieut. T. H.

Bowra, Colonel V.E., O.B.E.

Bradshaw, E. J., Esq.

Devisingh A. Ponwar, Captain.

Donovan, Major D. H., M.C.

Dundas, A. D. Flux, Esq., C.I.E., I.C.S.

Durrani, Lt. M. S. K.

Gupta, Captain S.D.

Hari Singh, Lieut.-Colonel.

Harrison, Colonel J. B.

Hibbert, Captain W. B.

Homburg, Major W. J., M.B.E., M.M.

Jenkins, Major J.

Johnstone, Major N. V.

Kamath, Lieut. M. M.

Khan, Lieut. A. R.

Myant, Major N.

Parab, Major G. S., M.C.

Pettigrew, Lieut.-Colonel H. R. C.

Rahmat Ullah Khan, Lieut.

Rashid Ahmad Khan, Major.

Rea, Major K. G.

Sheodan Singh, Captain.

Shallow, Lieut.-Colonel C. R.

Sharma, Major K. C.

Som-Dutt, Lieut.-Colonel D.

Thimayya, Brigadier K. S.

\*Watt, Major S. A.

Wells, Major N. H. B.

Westmorland, Lieut.-Colonel, H. L., O.B.E.

\*Wilson, Major A. J., M. C.

Other subscribing members who have enrolled during the past quarter include:

<sup>\*</sup> Life Member.

The Director, Historical Section (I), War Department.

P. M. C., Officers' Mess, 2 K. O. Y. L. I.

Admin. Comdt., 2 (U.P.) Bn., U.O.T.C., I.T.F.

P. M. C., O. T. S. Ahmednagar.

Education Officer, Ferozepore.

#### For gallantry and distinguished services

The following members of the Institution have been awarded the honours indicated for service in Italy during 1945:—

- C.B.—Major-General C. H. Boucher, C.B.E., D.S.O., I.A. (late 3 Gurkha Rifles).
- O.B.E.—Lieut.-Col. I. H. K. Chauvel, 6th Lancers; Lieut.-Col. N. G. Hunter, R.I.A.S.C.; Lieut.-Col. L. P. Lemarchand, 5th Royal Gurkna Rifles; Lieut.-Col. R. W. Peters, Central India Horse.

Among the awards to ex-Prisoners of War from the Far East for meritorious service during captivity are the following to two members of the Institution:—

M.B.E. (Military)—Major Kanwar Bahadur Singh, Kumaon Regiment, and Captain Apparanda Chegappa Iyappa, I.S.C.

#### Gold Medal Essay Competition

Entries for the 1945-46 Competition must reach the Secretary by June 30, 1946. The subject selected for the next Competition is: "Co-ordination and control in Peace and war of the forces of all services, British and Dominion, in the Indian Ocean and neighbouring territories."

The interdependence of the three Fighting Services, one upon another, was demonstrated time and again during the late war. The success achieved when the three have planned and operated with one object and under a unified direction has been remarkable. This has, however, tended to create a complicated system of command with large staffs.

Bearing in mind the necessity for the three Services to continue to train to operate as one whole, and the danger in peacetime of each retiring into its own watertight compartment, examine the possible ways of evolving from our own war experience a simplified system of command which will ensure the closest inter-service co-ordination for the Commonwealth forces in peace and in war.

A definition of the geographical scope has been left to the essayist to develop.

Full details of the rules governing the Competition will be found elsewherein this issue.

#### MacGregor Memorial Medal

Recommendations for the award of the MacGregor Memorial Medal should be submitted by May 1 of each year.

The MacGregor Memorial Medal was founded in 1888 as a memorial to the late Major-General Sir Charles MacGregor, who founded the United Service Institution of India. It is awarded for the best military reconnaissance or journey of exploration of the year. The awards are made in June, and are: (a) For officers, British or Indian, silver medal, and (b) for soldiers, British or Indian, a silver medal with Rs. 100 as gratuity. For especially valuable work, a gold medal may be awarded in place of one of the silver medals, whenever the administrators of the Fund deem it desirable. The Council may also award a special additional silver medal, without gratuity, to a soldier, for specially good work.

The award of the medals is made by His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief, India, as Vice-Patron, and the Council of the United Service Institution of India, who were appointed administrators of the Fund by the MacGregor Memorial Committee.

Eligibility for the award is open to: (a) Officers and other ranks of all forces of the British Commonwealth of Nations while serving with the India Establishment, or with South East Asia Command. (b) Officers and other ranks of the Royal Indian Navy, Indian Army, Royal Indian Air Force and of the Indian States Forces, wherever serving. (The term "Indian Army" includes the Indian Auxiliary and Territorial Forces, Frontier Militia, Levies, Military Police and Military Corps under local governments.)

Personal risk to life during the reconnaissance or exploration is not a necessary qualification for the award of the medal: but, in the event of two journeys being of equal value, the man who has incurred the greater risk will be considered to nave the greater claim to the award.

When the work of the year has either not been of sufficient value, or notice of it has been received too late for consideration before the Council Meeting, the medal may be awarded for any reconnaissance during previous years considered by His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief in India to deserve it.

The medal may be worn in uniform by Indian soldiers on ceremonial parades, suspended round the neck by the ribbon issued with the medal. Replacements of the ribbon may be obtained on payment from the Secretary, United Service Institution of India, Simla.

#### Library

An extensive library is available for members of the Institution at the headquarters in Simla. Books may be loaned to members resident in India, and those borrowing works in person must enter particulars in the book provided. Members stationed outside Simla may receive books on application; they will be sent post-free by registered parcel post, and must be returned within two months, or immediately on recall. No more than three volumes may be issued at any one time. Reference books and works marked "Confidential" may not be removed from the library.

Members wishing to retain a work for more than two months should notify the Secretary to that effect. If, after the expiration of three weeks from the date of issue a book is wanted by another member, it will be recalled. Should a book not be returned within fourteen days of the date of recall, it must be paid for, the cost of lost or defaced books being refunded by the member to whom they were issued. Such volumes which have become out of print will be valued by the Executive Committee, the members being required to pay the cost so fixed.

The issue of a book to any member under the above rules implies the latter's agreement with the regulations.



#### Contributions to the Journal

Articles on matters of military, naval and air force interest are welcomed. They should not exceed 5,000 words in length and preferably should run to 3,000 words. Contributions should be type-written, double spacing, and in view of the paper shortage, may be typed on both sides, providing a moderately thick paper is used.

Contributors unable to submit articles already typed may send them in manuscript form, and arrangements will be made for them to be typed in Simla, the small charge being deducted from the contributor's fee. Payment is made on publication, at rates up to Rs. 150 according to the value of the contribution.

All articles dealing with operational subjects are submitted to the authorities before publication, for security reasons. Contributions may, if the author desires, appear under a pseudonym; in such cases, the name of the author remains strictly confidential. The right to omit or amend any part of an article is reserved by the Executive Committee.

#### OFFICERS SERVICE STYLE (PEAKED) CAPS



Officers Drab Manchon Felt Service Cap . . Rs. 40 each.
Officers Drab Barathea Service Cap . . Rs. 18 each.
Officers R.A.F. Blue Barathea Service Cap . . Rs. 18 each

#### OFFICERS SIZE CAPS

**ENGLISH MADE MEDAL RIBBONS** 



 (All other Medal Ribbons Stocked)

#### MEDAL RIBBON BRASS BARS

(For Mounting Medal Ribbons.)



For 1 Ribbon As. 2 each For 4 Ribbons 8 each. For 2 Ribbons For 3 Ribbons For 5 Ribbons As. 4 each As. 10 each. 6 each For 6 Ribbons As. 12 each. RIBBON MOUNTED BARS & EMBLEMS

1 Ribbon Mounted Bar 4 Ribbons Mounted Bar ... AR. 4 each 1 0 each. 2 Ribbons Mounted Bar 5 Ribbons Mounted Bar .. As. 8 each 1 4 each. Rs. 3 Ribbons Mounted Bar As. 12 each 6 Ribbons Mounted Bar .. Ra. 18 each. Mention in despatches New Bronzed Oakleaf Emblems 08 each. Mention in despatches Khaki Ribbon Mounted Bar fitted with New Oakleaf Emblem Re. 1 0 each. "1" or "8" Emblems for N. Africa Star Gift Rose Emblem for 1939—45 Star Re. 10 each. Re. 0 8 each.

Regimental and Departmental Cap. Collar and Shoulder Badges and Buttons, Coat Belt Buckles, Wound Badges, Service Chevrons, Stars, Crowns, Water Bottles, Haversacks, Helmets, Sam Browne Belts, Ties, Stockings, Whistles, Whistle Cords, Putties, Divisional Signs, etc., etc., Stocked.

#### ASK FOR ILLUSTRATED PRICE LIST

Where there is no V.P. system the customers are requested to remit in advance the cost of the goods plus Postage and Packing charges.

#### M. AZAM & BROTHER,

Military R.A.F. Naval & Police Contractors, Outfitters & Tailors
LUDHIANA (PUNJAB) INDIA.



By Appointment

To The Late King George V

## RANKEN & Co., Ltd.

CALCUTTA, SIMLA, DELHI, LAHORE, RAWALPINDI & MURREE

**ESTABLISHED IN CALCUTTA 1770** 

## CIVIL & MILITARY TAILORS GENTLEMEN'S OUTFITTERS AND BREECHES MAKERS

FULL-DRESS AND MESS DRESS UNIFORMS OF ALL REGIMENTS

By Appointment to

His Excellency General Sir Robert A. Cassels, G.C.B., C.S.I., D.S.O., Former Commander-in-Chief in India,



· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·			**			
					Rs.	8.
Khaki Barathea Service Peak Ca	p and Bad	ge			20	0
Enaki Barathea Field Cap and H	Badge (	(Side	Cap)		15	0
Blue Barathea Field Cap and Ba	adge .	(Side	Cap)		20	ŏ
Green, Black or Khaki "Beret"	' Cap				15	ŏ
Pure Silver Badges for "Beret"	"Cans		each		8	ŏ
Silver-plated Badges for "Beret	" Caps		"	•••	5	ŏ
R.A.F Blue Barathea Peak Can	and Badge		,,	•••	25	Ü
R.A.F. Blue Barathea Field Cap	and Badge	(8	lde Cap		18	ő
Collar Badges, Bronze for Khaki	Jacket			<b>'.</b>	-6	ŏ
Cap Badges, Bronze for Khaki Ca	8.D8	• • •			4	
Buttons, Gilt or Bronze for Khal	ki Jacket		a set	••	Ž	Ř
Buttons, Gilt for Patrol Jacket		•••	"		7	0 8 8 0
Buttons, Gilt for Greatcoat			"		12	ň
Shoulder Titles, Gilt or Bronze	•••					ň
Shoulder Titles, Cloth slip-on			pu	::	ĩ	8
Stars (Pips), Gilt-enamelled	••	::		::	ō	4
Crowns, Gilt with Red Velvet	•••	• • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • •	,,	::	ő	•
Stars or Crowns, Bronze or Black	k	::	,,	::	2 1 2 2 2	8
Stars or Crowns, worsted on Kha	ki Cloth	•••	**		í	•
Khaki Cellular Bush Shirts	ALI OIOTH		**	••	12	8
Service pattern Shirts of fast K	haki Callul	or with	h đản	••	+2	•
pockets, shoulder straps and a	ttoched co	diam with	oo ah		6	0
Drab Flannel Shirts, to match	Rarathan'	inal	ot ooob	••	28	ŏ
Khaki Drill Shorts Rs. 6-8 a pair	Theki Dr	AUB (II	or each		15	ŏ
Khaki Woollen Stockings	, Kliaki Di	III SIM		••		. Ö
Khaki Woollen Socks	••	••	a pair	••		12
Khaki Ankle Putties, Fox's Pate	ni.	•••		••	9	12
		••	"	••	3	8
Field Haversacks, leather botton	m • •	••	33	••		
Field Waterbottles Rs. 10 each.	Q D Dale	••		•:	10	Q.
Whistle and Khaki Lanyard Rs.			T - "	•••	25	Ò
1939-43 Star or N. Africa Star or	aro. Itev	olver.	Lanyar	α	2	8
1 700-45 Stat of M. Airica Stat of	any other	meda				
Bars mounted with any ribbon			a l'oot	••	1	8
Officer's Greatcoat	••	• •	each	••	0	ę
	••	••	**	• •	275	0
Khaki Raincoat	• •	• •	,,	• •	45.	0

### Servants' Waist & Pugree Bands, Badges, Silk Ties and Sports Squares

(Stocked in your Regulation approved colours and designs.)

Wide-End superior Cord Silk Ties, well made with reinforced neck bands, with diagonal stripes in your Regulation colours at Rs. 5/- each MUFFLERS

Mufflers 36 inches square made of superior cord silk striped in your Regulation colours . . . . at Rs. 20/- each

**BLAZER POCKET BADGES** 

Pocket Badges with your crest worked in Gold or Silver embroidery on blue or your own material . . . . . . at Rs. 8/- each Pocket Badges, with your crest embroidered in white or any coloured silk, on blue or your own material . . . at Rs. 4/- each

CRESTED STATIONERY AND XMAS CARDS

80 best quality Letter Papers & Envelopes to match, embossed with your Depttl. Crest in any colour at Rs. 6

Xmas. Greeting Cards, embossel with your regimental Crest and tied with ribbon in your regimental cours, with Greetings inset and Envelopes at Rs. 6 per dozen

## YOUSUF & CO. MILITARY & POLICE TAILORS, LUDHIANA (Punjab).

Where V.-P.P. system is not available please send with order cost of goods plus postage.

## Royal Central Asian Society.

8 CLARGES STREET, W.1.

#### President:

The Right Hon. Lord Hailey, G.C.S.I., G.C.M.G., G.C.L.E.

Hon. Vice-President

The Most Hon. The Marquis of Zetland, K.G., P.C., G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E.

Field Marshal Sir Philip Chetwode, Bart., G.C.B., O.M., G.C.S.I., K.C.M.G., D.S.O.

Field Marshal The Rt. Hon. Viscount Wavell, G.C.B., G.M.S.I., G.M.I.E., C.M.G., M.C.

Chairman of Council:

General Sir John Shea, G.C.B., K.C.M.G., D.S.O.

Hon. Treasurer:

Major Edward Ainger

Hon. Secretaries:

Colonel S. F. Newcombe, D.S.O.

Lt.-General H. G. Martin, C.B., D.S.O., O.B.E.

Sir John Pratt, K.B.E., C.M.G.

Near & Middle East.

Central Asia.

Far East.

Hon. Librarian:

Lf.-Colonel F. M. Bailey, C.I.E.

#### Members of Council, 1945-46

Oswald White, Esq., C.M.G.

Miss Mildred Cable.

Sir Angus Gillan, K.B.E.

M. Philips Price, Esq., M.P.

D. Nevill Barbour, Esq.

Sir Kinahan Cornwallis, G.C.M.G., C.B.E., D.S.O.

Admiral Sir Howard Kelly, G.B.E., K.C.B., C.M.G., M.V.O

Major-General Sir Dashwood Strettell, K.C.I.E., C.B.

#### Secretary:

Miss R. O. Wingate

The Royal Central Asian Society founded in 1901, exists for the encouragement of interest in the countries of Central and Western Asia, and provides a centre, through which information can be circulated on current events and modern developments of all sorts in these countries. The quarterly Journal includes reports of the Society's lectures, discussions and papers, and also very full and valuable reviews on books dealing with Central and Western Asia.

The Council welcome applications for membership from those whose work, studies or war service are connected with one of the countries in which the Society is interested. Candidates for election must be proposed and seconded by members, and are then ballotted for by the Council. Ladies are admissible. Entrance fee £1, Annual subscription 25/-.

## UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION OF INDIA

10
The Secretary, United Service Institution of India, SIML
Dear Sir,
Please enrol me as a member (or Tile Member) of the Members
Service institution of India.
Name
(In block caps.)
Rank and Unit
Permanent Address
Present Address
BANKERS' ORDER FORM
To Messrs, (Bankers), at
On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simia for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 10 (ten) being my annual subscription for 19 and the sum of Rs. 10 ce every succeeding January 1 until further notice.
Date Signature
To Messra (Bankers), at
On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simia, for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 150 (case hundred and fifty), being Life Membership subscription of the Institution.
Date, Signature:
Γο
The Secretary, United Service Institution of India, SIMLA
Date
cer or,
Please enrol me as member (or Life Member) of the United Service Institution of India.
Yours mithfully.
Vame(In block caps.)
Cank and this
crmanent Address
resent Address
BANKERS' ORDER FORM
On receipt of this order place (Bankers), at
On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla, or the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 10 (ten). eing my annual subscription for 19 and the sum of Rs. 10 on very succeeding January 1 until further notice.  ate
On receipt of the control of the con
or the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 150 (constitution, stitution, subscription of the late.)



The Cotton Goods for India





The Wool-Wear for India



The Footwear for India

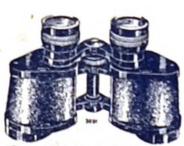
# BARRESTROUD BINOCULARS



Type C.F. 5 (6×24 mm.)



Type C.F. 10 (6×30.5 mm)



Type C.F. 24 (8×30.5 mm.)



Type C.F. 30 (7 × 50 mm.)

## BARR & STROUD LIMITED

ANNIESLAND GLASGOW W3 15 VICTORIA STREET LONDON S.W.1

Telegrams :-

Codes :-

Telegrams :-

"Tol-meter" Glasgow

h and 6th Editions A.B.

Retemelet Sowest" Los

Printed The Mall, E G

Conney; as The Civil & Military Gasette, Ltd., 4

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED STITZED by Google

## THE JOURNAL

OF THE

## UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION

OF

## INDIA



#### PRINCIPAL CONTENTS

Field Marshal Sir Claude Auchinleck ... The Fourth Christmas .. Major J. Wilson Stephens. Army Farmers in East Bengal ... Lieut.-Col. G. Noakes. March to Freedom ..... "Chusa". Rebuilding a Navy Col. C. Foucar. Col. M. C. Perceval-Price.
Lt.-Col. C. R. D. Gray.
Lt.-Col. T. M. Carpendale. Destructive Combat or Subversive War Japanese Animals in Siam ... A: Year as C.L.O. .. .. How to Conduct Troop Trials of W. & E. Lt.-Col. A. E. Bagwell Purefoy. Dopoguerra Lt.-Col. H. B. Hudson. Lt.-Col. G. L. Mallam. The N. W. Frontier Problem ... Commander E. C. Streatfeild James. "Toot." Marine Insurance .. .. Raising a Regiment Engineers in India's Modern Army .. Lt.-Col. B. D. Kapur. India's War Wealth .. .. Lt.-Col. Y. S. Paranjpe. "The Right Type" and Indranisation ... Major Gurbachan Singh.

(A COMPLETE LIST OF CONTENTS APPEARS ON PAGE ix)

## Banking by Post



If you are unable to call personally at any of the Branches of Lloyds Bank, Managers will be pleased to explain the Bank's facilities or answer any enquiries by post, if you will write to them.

Every kind of Banking Business transacted. CURRENT ACCOUNTS opened on terms which may be ascertained on application. FIXED DEPOSITS received at INTEREST. SAVINGS BANK ACCOUNTS allow WITHDRAWALS by CHEQUE. STERLING and FOREIGN CURRENCY DRAFTS sold and direct REMITTANCES made. TELEGRAPHIC TRANSFERS effected through Banks in ALL COUNTRIES WORLD LETTERS OF CREDIT supplied FREE OF COMMISSION TRAVELLERS CHEQUES BANK OF ENGLAND NOTES by REGISTERED SALARIES, PAY & PENSIONS collected.
PERIODICAL PAYMENTS & SUBSCRIPTIONS effected. by REGISTERED STOCKS & SHARES purchased and sold, and held in SAFE CUSTODY. EXPERT OPINION on INVESTMENTS obtained from Brokers. DIVIDENDS & INTEREST collected. ADVANCES allowed against Approved SECURITY.

## Lloyds Bank Limited

(Incorporated in England.)

#### Branches in the East:

BOMBAY (2 Offices), CALCUTTA (2 Offices), DARJEELING, KARACHI, DELHI, NEW DELHI, SIMLA, LAHORE, RANGOON, AMRITSAR, PESHAWAR, (Cantt. & City), RAWALPINDI, MURREE, SRINAGAR, GULMARG.

### United Service Institution of India

#### PATRON:

His Excellency The Viceroy and Governor-General in India.

#### VICE-PATRONS:

H. E. The Governor of Madras.

H. E. The Governor of Bombay.

H. E. The Governor of Bengal.

H. E. The C.-in-C. in India.

H. E. The Governor, United Prov.

H. E. The Governor of the Punjab.

H. E. The Governor of Bihar.

H. E. The Governor, Central Prov.

H. E. The Governor of Assam.

H. E. The Governor, N.-W.F.P.

H. E. The Governor of Sind.

H. E. The Governor of Orissa.

The G. O. C.-in-C., Northern Cmd.

The G. O. C.-in-C., Southern Cmd.

The G. O. C.-in-C., Eastern Cmd.

The G. O. C.-in-C., Central Cmd.

#### MEMBERS OF THE COUNCIL, 1946-47

#### **Ex-Officio Members:**

The Chief of the General Staff, (President).
The A.O.C., Air Force in India, (Vice-President).
The Flag Officer Commanding Royal Indian Navy.
The Secretary, War Department.
The Secretary, External Affairs Department.

#### Elected Members:

Lieut.-Gen. Sir Clarence Bird, K.C.I.E., C.B., D.S.O. Lieut.-Gen. Sir Noel Beresford-Peirse, K.B.E., C.B., D.S.O. Lieut.-Gen C. M. P. Durnford, C.B., C.I.E. General A. R. Godwin-Austen C.B., O.B.E., M.C. Captain W. J. Lifton, C.I.E., R.I.N. Lieut.-Gen. K. M. Loch, C.B., M.C. Philip Mason, Esq., C.I.E., O.B.E., I.C.S. Lieut.-General R. A. Savory, C.B., D.S.O., M.C,

#### Honorary Members:

Lieut.-Gen. H. H. The Maharaja of Jammu and Kashmir, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., G.C.V.O. Air Vice Marshal H. H. The Nawab of Bhopal, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., C.V,O. Air Vice Marshal H. H. Maharaja Bahadur of Jodhpur, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., K.C.V.O. Colonel H. H. The Maharaja Jam Saheb of Nawanagar, G.C.I.E., K.C.S.I.

Major-General H. H. Maharajadhiraj of Patiala, G.C.I.E., G.B.E. Lieut.-Colonel H. H. The Raja of Faridkot, K.C.S.I.

#### MEMBERS OF THE EXECUTIVE COMMITTEE, 1946-47.

Chairman: Lieut.-General R. A. Savory, C.B., D.S.O., M.C. Members: General A. R. Godwin-Austen, C.B., O.B.E., M.C. Captain W. J. Lifton, C.I.E., R.I.N. Lieut.-General K. M. Loch, C.B., M.C. Philip Mason, Esq., C.I.E., O.B.E., I.C.S.

Secretary and Editor: Lieut.-Colonel H. C. Druett. Bankers: Lloyds Bank, Simla.

#### UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION OF INDIA

The headquarters building of the United Service Institution of India in Simla is open daily, including Sundays, from 9 a.m. to sunset. It contains a reading room, in which is available a wide range of illustrated periodicals, newspapers, magazines, etc., as well as a number of Service journals. A well-stocked library is also open to members, who may borrow volumes without charge, while members stationed elsewhere may obtain books on loan post-free.

Members also receive, post-free, each of the quarterly issues of the Journal of the Institution.

#### RULES OF MEMBERSHIP

1. All officers of the Defence Services, whether they belong to the Imperial Forces, to forces raised by the Government of India, by an Indian State, by a British Dominion or Colony, and all gazetted officials of the Government of India or of a Provincial Government shall be entitled to become members, without ballot, on payment of the entrance fee and subscription.

Other gentlemen may become members if proposed and seconded by a member of the Institution and approved by the Council. They will be entitled to all the privileges of membership, excepting voting.

- 2. Life members of the Institution shall be admitted on payment of a lump sum of Rs. 160, which sum includes entrance fee.
- 3. Ordinary members of the Institution shall be admitted on payment of an entrance fee\* (see para. 4) of Rs. 10 on joining, and an annual subscription of Rs. 10 (or 15s.) to be paid in advance.

The period of subscription commences on January 1.

An ex-member on rejoining the Institution will be charged a second entrance fee of Rs. 10 if since the date on which he ceased to be a member he has served or resided in India. In other cases no charge will be made.

- 4. British Service, Dominion and Colonial officers serving in India shall pay an entrance fee of Rs. 7 only.
- 5. Members receive the Journal of the Institution post free to any part of the world. Members in India may obtain books from the library; they are issued postage free, borrower paying the return postage.
- 6. Government institutions and offices, military libraries, messes and clubs wishing to subscribe for the Journal shall pay Rs. 10 per annum. Non-members shall pay Rs. 10 per annum plus postage. Single copies of the Journal will be supplied to non-members at Rs. 2-8-0 per copy plus postage.
- 7. If a member fails to pay his subscription for any year (commencing January 1) by June 1 of that year, a registered notice shall be sent to him by the Secretary inviting his attention to the fact. If the subscription is not paid by January 1 following, his name shall be struck off the roll of members and, if the Executive Committee so decide, posted in the hall of the Institution for six months, or until the subscription is paid.
- 8. An ordinary member wishing to resign at any time during a year in which one or more Journals have been sent to him must pay his subscription in full for that year and notify his wish to resign before his name can be struck off the list of members.
- 9. Members who join the Institution on or after October 1 and pay the entrance fee and annual subscription on joining will not be charged a further subscription on the following 1st January, unless the Journals for the current year have been supplied.
- 10. Members are responsible that they keep the Secretary carefully posted in regard to changes of rank and address. Duplicate copies of the Journal will not be supplied free to members when the original has been posted to a member's last known address and has not been returned through the post.
- 11. All communications should be addressed to the Secretary, United Service Institution of India, Simla.

#### Outstanding Books Published by Thackers, Bombay

#### THE SONG OF BERNADETTE Franz Werfel

More than a hundred thousand copies sold! Few novels pose a problem of more fuscinating human complexity than this story of an en-lightened civilisation suddenly faced by the inexplicable. Rs. 9-12

POR WHOM THE BELL TOLLS

Ernest Hemingway

One million people bought it. Five million people read it. The greatest love story of all Rs. 8-12

#### INDIAN INTERLUDE Erio Beecroft

The author has created a number of delightful personalities, he succeeds in conveying to the reader a true atmosphere.

Rs. 6-14

#### MOTIVE FOR MURDER Florence Klipatrick

Clyde Moncrieff has to make a dash for England to escape from being involved in a murder he witnessed in an opium-den in Rio. His further adventures make an absorbing detective story.

#### D DAY John Gunther

Mr. Gunther is well known for his "Inside Europe" and other books of a similar type. "D Day" is recommended as one of the best books of the week by the "London Times Literary Supplement."

WITH THE 14TH ARMY
D. F. Karaka
This latest book by Mr. Karaka is an outstanding feat of close observation and accurate recording. Recent developments on this front make "With the 14th Army" a book of particular interest just now.

#### WINGATE'S PHANTOM ARMY W. Q. Burchett

"More thrilling than any fictitious thriller."

#### PACIFIC TREASURE ISLAND

The book tells of New Caledonia, the Pacific Treasure Island—the Malta of the South Seas. Of the author it is said "Burchett has become a force to be reckoned with. His writings have rightly become popular among the peoples of South East Asia." Re. 9-12

#### THE WORLD THAT WORKS George West

This is a book about the end of a world that did not work and news of a world we're all looking for—a world that works.

#### THE LIVING AND THE DEAD

THE LIVING AND Beverley Nichols
A book that has caused much bitterness and much more constructive criticism.

#### INDIA IN FABLE, VERSE AND STORY L. H. Nibiett

Here is a feast of good reading: stories ancient and modern—weird, bizarre, elevating, humourous, and serious—illustrating diverse aspects of Rs. 4-8 Indian life.

JOURNALISM
C. L. R. Sastri
A rare find and a real acquisition to Indian journalism.

#### TRY ANYTHING ONCE

"A record of true vagabondage, amazing in the variety of its icidents, and told with a naive candour, which leaves the reader rather breath-

#### ONIONS AND OPINIONS N. Q. Jog

These little essays are a sheer delight. Re. 6-12

#### PEOPLE OF BOMBAY Percival & Olivia Strip

This book describes the origin, history, religion, commercial activities inherent traits, etc., of the Parsees, the Khojas, the Banyas, the Bohras and other communities of Bombay.

#### SUNLIT WATERS Capt. C. W. W. S. Conway

This book gives an extremely practical exposi-tion of the methods and advantages of fishing with light tackle—and brings fishing history in India up-to-date.

#### MY STORY Sheelagh O'Flynn

A Baby's Record Book and Photograph Album combined.

### KNITTED 200 Anna Politzer & Thora Stowell

What is more fascinating than making your own toys at home? Here is a book of complete instructions for knitting toys, with details about materials and making up, and expert guidance throughout.

#### THE GALLANT WAY Frank Taylor

A collection of twenty-three spirited poems extolling the best in the British martial tradi-

#### THE TRIAL OF MUSSOLINI "CASSUS"

Did you read "Guilty Men"?if so (or if not) read "The Trial of Mussolini" by "Cassius." The first four editions total 100,000 copies.

#### I MADE MY OWN DOLLS

The patterns given in this book have all been made over and over again and have stood the test of being sold in competition with professional models and all have sold very well. Rs. 6-14

#### LENINGRAD Alexander Warth

Out of the beleaguered city—the starved, bombed and shelled city—he brought a story that no reader will very easily forget. Rs. 8-14 reader will very easily forget.

WHAT TO DO WITH GERMANY
Louis Nizer

His book is a triumph of brief, lucid statement, sane argument and imaginative planning, facing all the major issues and omitting no essentials.

#### STRANGE ISLAND

Molley Kaye

This is a thriller in the classical tradition of Edgar Wallace and Agatha Christie, brilliantly constructed and told with many flashes of Re. 9-12 humour.
Through Japanese Barbed Wire

(in the press).

G. Priestwood

#### THACKERS PUBLISHERS **BOMBAY**



It is the exquisite scheme, the skilful blending of colours, that makes a masterpiece. Superb blending alone can achieve perfection.



And so it is with cigarettes. It is the skill of the blender which produces such excellence as you find in "Capstan."

For years they have been renowned as the cigarettes which are blended better.

Better buy
CAPSTAN
They're blended better

W. D. & H. O. WILLS, BRISTOL & LONDON

CARM

#### A SERVICE PATTERN Officers' Popular

#### " RAINCOAT

That will keep out Wind, Cold and Water.

Have you one in your Kit?

Military Regulation Service Pat-Officers' Khaki Waterproof. "Trench-Coat" (roomy and comfy and extremely serviceable and lighter in weight than Greatcoat).

Made from thoroughly Dustproof. Windproof and Waterproof, double texture fine Rubberised Cloth of Regulation Khaki Colour.



Price Rs. 45 each

FRONT: Double breasted style, cut with a curve to Military shape with broad lapels. Open and Broad Military Storm Collar to stand and fall with Tab to button to throat. Armpits with ventilation eyelets.

Note.—With order please state size round CHEST and WAIST taken over jacket and your full height or length of coat required.

#### NEW WAR MEDAL RIBBONS

N. Africa Star, 1939|45 Star, Burma Star, Italy Star, Pacific Star, Defence Medal, France|Belgium|Holland Star, and other medal Ribbons at Rs. 1|8 per foot. Oakleaf Emblems for "Mentions" and silver Rossets Annas 8 each. Silver Arabic Numerals "1" or "8" Rs. 1 each. RIBBON BARS with safety pin mounted with 1, 2, 3, 4 or 5 Ribbons at Annas 6, 12, Rs. 1|2, 1|8 or 1|14 respectively.

GHQ Signs, Gold embd. for officers Rs. 2 a pair.

GHQ Signs, Silk embd. for O. Rks., Re. 1 a pair.

Please address your orders to:

#### YOH

(Late of Holdings, Oxford Circus, London, 1914-18)

MILITARY & POLICE TAILORS,

LUDHIANA, (PUNJAB)

Note.-Where V.-P. P. system is not available, please send remittance with order plus postage.

Telegraphic Address: "MAYFAIR," Ludhiana.

## "TILLEY" STORM LANTERN

Height overall 19 inches.

TO OPERATE



Weight 31 lbs.

RELIABLE—IN ALL
WEATHERS

#### For Indoor & Outdoor Use

Similar to illustration (War quality) but without Wire Guard

Rs. 49-12 each

Special rates for quantities on request:

P. O. Box 5 FORT, BOMBAY.

LONDON'S LEADING SYORE IN THE LAST

## FOR

## **EVERY**

## **ASPECT**

OF

Science, Medicine, Industry and pleasure too --- there is an Ilford Selo Product.

For nearly seventy years sensitised photographic materials manufact-

## PHOTOGRAPHY

ured by llford Ltd.

have been renowned the world over for their consistent high quality.

ILFORD PHOTO-GRAPHIC PLATES PAPERS-SHEET FILMS---X-RAY FILMS AND SELO ROLL FILMS

Distributed Throughout India

ILFORD (INDIA) LTD.

CALCUTTA -

DJK 4851

#### THE

# INDIAN STATES FORCES



## ANNUAL

#### 1946

The Forces of the Indian States played a worthy part with the Indian Army in the road to Victory.

The 1946 Edition of the Indian States Forces Annual contains many articles and illustrations concerning the work of these Forces both in operational areas and in the States.

To ensure receiving a copy, write as soon as possible to the Editor, The Indian States Forces Annual, Headquarters of the Military Adviser-in-Chief, Indian States Forces, New Delhi.

Price Rs. 3-8-0 each cogle

## The Journal

of the

## Anited Service Enstitution of Endia

#### CONTENTS

Page

Frontispiece			• • •		
Field Marshal Sir Claude Auchinle		• •	••	• •	• •
Matters of Moment	••		• •	••	••
The Fourth Christmas, by LieutCo		on Ste	phens		• •
Army Farmers in East Bengal, by	LieutCo	l. Geoff	rev N	loakes	
March to Freedom, by "Chusa"	• •				• •
Rebuilding a Navy, by Colonel C. I				•	
Destructive Combat or Subversi	ve War.			М.	C.
Perceval-Price				,	
The Mystery of Henry Fitzclarence	e. bv "Hv	deraba			•
Japanese Animals in Siam, by Lieu	tCol. C.	R. D. (	- Frav		
A Year as C. L. O., by Lieut Col. T	'. M. Carn	endale			
How to Conduct Troop Trials of	W. & E	by Li	••• ••••t -Ca		
Bagwell Purefoy					
Dopoguerra, by LieutCol. H. B. H	indson	••		••	••
The NW. Frontier Problem, by Lie	ent-Col C				••
Marine Insurance, by Commander E	C Stree	tfeild l	lames	• •	••
Raising a Regiment, by "Toot"	. C. Duca	.ticiia e	annes		••
Things People Say and Write	• •	••	• •	• •	••
Engineers in India's Modern Army,	hy Lieut	 -Col B	יי. זררי	 Zanur	• •
Post-War Infantryman's Individual	Training	hv "S	nero"	.xapui	
India's War-Wealth and National	Dlanning,	hy Lie	out -Co	 J V	 S
			- u u. – C (	<i>)</i> 1. 4.	υ.
Paranipe	riammig,	~,			
Paranjpe			. :		
Paranjpe Life in Post-War Britain, by Major-0	 General S	 ir Dash	.: weod	Strette	 ell
Paranjpe Life in Post-War Britain, by Major-( The East and Central Africa M	 General S	 ir Dash	.: weod	Strette	 ell
Paranjpe Life in Post-War Britain, by Major-0 The East and Central Africa M H. Bullock	General Si Gedal, 189'	 ir Dash 7-1899, 	 wcod by I 	 Strette Brigadi 	 ell
Paranjpe Life in Post-War Britain, by Major-0 The East and Central Africa M H. Bullock Those Indian Drivers!, by "Chenna	General Si Gedal, 189' 	 ir Dash 7-1899, 	 wcod by I 	 Stretto Brigadi 	 ell
Paranjpe Life in Post-War Britain, by Major-( The East and Central Africa M H. Bullock Those Indian Drivers!, by "Chenna Taking Over a Company, by Major	General Siedal, 189' apatnam" M. J. Mov	 ir Dash 7-1899, 	 wood by I 	 Strette Brigadi 	ell er
Paranjpe Life in Post-War Britain, by Major-C The East and Central Africa M H. Bullock Those Indian Drivers!, by "Chenna Faking Over a Company, by Major "The Right Type" and Indianisation,	General Sicedal, 189'  apatnam'  M. J. Moy  by Major	 ir Dash 7-1899, 	 weod by F   chan S	 Strette Brigadi   Singh	ell er 
Paranjpe Life in Post-War Britain, by Major-C The East and Central Africa M H. Bullock Those Indian Drivers!, by "Chenna Taking Over a Company, by Major "The Right Type" and Indianisation, Indian Gunners' Honour, by "Matro	General Sicedal, 189' apatnam" M. J. Moy by Major	 ir Dash 7-1899,  rnihan Gurba	wcod by F  chan S	 Strette Brigadi   Singh	ell er  
Paranjpe Life in Post-War Britain, by Major-C The East and Central Africa M H. Bullock Those Indian Drivers!, by "Chenna Taking Over a Company, by Major "The Right Type" and Indianisation, Indian Gunners' Honour, by "Matro Officer Production and Nationalisation	General Sicedal, 189'  apatnam'' M. J. Moy by Major oss'' ion, by M	ir Dash 7-1899,  mihan Gurba  ajor A	wood by F chan S J. W	Strette Srigadi   Singh 	ell er 
Paranjpe Life in Post-War Britain, by Major-C The East and Central Africa M H. Bullock Those Indian Drivers!, by "Chenna Taking Over a Company, by Major "The Right Type" and Indianisation, Indian Gunners' Honour, by "Matro Officer Production and Nationalisation Frontier Hocus-Pocus, by LieutCol	General Sicedal, 189'  apatnam' M. J. Moy by Major oss'' ion, by M . W. J. M	ir Dash 7-1899, rnihan Gurba ajor A Spaigl	wood by F chan S J. W	Strette Brigadi  Singh  Vilson	ell er 
Paranjpe Life in Post-War Britain, by Major-G The East and Central Africa M H. Bullock Those Indian Drivers!, by "Chenna Taking Over a Company, by Major "The Right Type" and Indianisation, Indian Gunners' Honour, by "Matro Officer Production and Nationalisation Frontier Hocus-Pocus, by LieutCol. Training Army Inspectors, by Major	General Sicedal, 189' apatnam" M. J. Moy by Major oss" ion, by M . W. J. M. r J. P. H.	ir Dash 7-1899, rnihan Gurba ajor A Spaigl	weod by I  chan s  J. W  nt	Strette Srigadi  Singh  Vilson	ell er
Life in Post-War Britain, by Major-Carle East and Central Africa M. H. Bullock Those Indian Drivers!, by "Chenna Taking Over a Company, by Major The Right Type" and Indianisation, Indian Gunners' Honour, by "Matro Officer Production and Nationalisation Frontier Hocus-Pocus, by LieutCol Training Army Inspectors, by Major Recent Additions to the Library	General Sicedal, 189' apatnam" M. J. Moy by Major oss" ion, by M . W. J. M. r J. P. H.	rnihan Gurba  ajor A Spaigl	weod by I  chan S  J. W  nt	Strette Srigadi  Singh  Vilson 	ell er
Paranjpe Life in Post-War Britain, by Major-G The East and Central Africa M H. Bullock Those Indian Drivers!, by "Chenna Taking Over a Company, by Major "The Right Type" and Indianisation, Indian Gunners' Honour, by "Matro Officer Production and Nationalisation Frontier Hocus-Pocus, by LieutCol. Training Army Inspectors, by Major	General Sicedal, 189' apatnam" M. J. Moy by Major oss" ion, by M . W. J. M. r J. P. H.	ir Dash 7-1899, mihan Gurba  ajor A Spaigl Donov	weod by F  chan S  J. W  an	Strette Brigadi  Singh  Vilson	ell er

## GOLD MEDAL PRIZE ESSAY COMPETITION

The Council has selected the following subject for the Gold Medal Prize Essay Competition for 1947:

#### "MAN MANAGEMENT"

Entries are invited from all commissioned officers of His Majesty's Forces, from gazetted officers of the Civil Administration in India, and from officers of the Indian States Forces.

Essays, which should be typewritten (double spacing) and submitted in triplicate, must be received by the Secretary, United Service Institution of India, Simla, on or before June 30, 1947. In order that the anonymity of each candidate should be preserved, a motto should be written at the top of each entry. A sealed envelope, bearing on the outside the motto, and containing inside the name and address of the author of the essay, must accompany each entry.

Entries should not exceed fifteen pages (approx. 8,000 words) of the size and style of the Journal. Should any authority be quoted in the essay, the title of the work referred to should be given.

Three judges chosen by the Council will adjudicate. They may recommend a money award not exceeding Rs. 500, either in addition to, or in substitution of, the Gold Medal, and will submit their decision to the Council. The name of the successful candidate will be published in the October, 1947 issue of the Journal.

Copyright of all essays submitted will be reserved by the Council of the United Service Institution of India.

TION

ibject 1 for

officers rom

ble red lia,

vch le

Digitized by GOOSIC



THE EIGHT CAMPAIGN STARS OF THE WAR, SHOWN IN ORDER OF WEARING. EACH STAR IS THE SAME EXCEPT FOR THE LETTERING. COLOURS OF THE RIBBONS ARE:

1. The 1939-45 star: Navy blue, red, and light blue.

2. THE ATLANTIC STAR : blue, white and sea green (shaded and watered).

3. The Air Crew Europe Star: black, yellow, light blue, yellow and black.

4. THE AFRICA STAR: buff, dark blue, buff, red, buff, light blue and buff.
5. THE PACIFIC STAR: red, dark blue, green, yellow, green, light blue and red.
6. THE BURMA STAR: dark blue, orange, dark blue, red, dark blue, orange and dark blue.
7. THE ITALY STAR: red, white, green, white and red.
8. THE FRANCE AND GERMANY STAR: blue, white, red, white and blue.

# The Journal

of the

# Anited Service Knstitution of Endia

Vol. LXXVI

JULY, 1946

No. 324

The views expressed in this Journal are in no sense official, and the opinions of contributors in their published articles are not necessarily those of the Council of the Institution

# FIELD MARSHAL SIR CLAUDE AUCHINLECK, G.C.I.E., G.C.B., C.S.I., D.S.O., O.B.E., A.D.C.

It is twenty years since an Indian Army officer was promoted to the rank of Field Marshal; and in all our two hundred years of leadership in India there have only been twelve Indian Army Field Marshals—of whom Lord Napier of Magdala and Lord Roberts of Kandahar strictly speaking belonged to the British Service. The promotion of General Sir Claude Auchinleck to this supreme rank recognises not only his personal qualities as a soldier of outstanding merit, but also pays the highest possible compliment to the part played by the Indian Services in the defeat of Germany, Italy and Japan.

History will reveal in time how truly great have been his achievements. It will also prove him to have been singled out by Fate, in some of the darkest hours of the Second World War, to bear—and with supreme courage and great wisdom—as great a burden of responsibility as has ever been thrust on her Commanders by a purblind and unprepared Britain. His name will live long in the memory and in the hearts of fighting men in India, to most of whom he is personally known, and in whose service—as they well know—he has given all that man has to give.

He stands now in the perplexities of peace as he did in the crises of war, a rock in whom we may all have faith. We of the Indian Services are proud to count him as one of us, and no man could have

more heartfelt congratulations than those we offer him. Few of un from the lowest to the highest ranks, have not been personally helped and inspired by him.

Many have risen to fame in the late war on the crest of the wave of success. "The Auk", our Auk, belongs to the elect few who throughout our history have helped to lead us out of the dark wood of our characteristic early disasters by steadfast courage and heroic decision in the field, by elimination of self-interest, and by understanding patience and forgiveness when beset by divided coursels and crippling handicaps. His name must be connected with our most perilous hours, through which only men of his calibre and foresight could have steered us.

In April, 1940, we see him at Narvik, just before the curtain falls on stricken Norway, extricating our seemingly doomed rearguard by hitting the triumphant Germans to the ropes. When German invasion appeared to be but a matter of hours after Dunkirk, he was in command of the troops barring the southern gates of England. From February, 1940 to early July, 1941 he was Commander-in-Chief in India, pressing on with the modernisation and expansion of her Services, to which he had already given much thought and assistance through the deliberations of the Auchinleck Modernisation Committee in 1938 and as a member of the subsequent Chatfield Committee immediately prior to the outbreak of the war.

In April, 1941, as the Axis hands reached eagerly for Iraq and the Persian Gulf—Britain's throat—he, together with India's Viceroy, Lord Linlithgow, was instrumental in moving just in time to forestall them, troops which India could ill spare—despite opposing counsels. After Dunkirk, this episode may well stand out as a turning point of the war, for very soon the oil of Persia and Iraq was to be our only supply. From July, 1941 to August, 1942 he was at grips with the growing menace to the Middle East, when British fortunes were at their lowest ebb. The storm clouds gathered in the Far East, and presently our crazy strategic structure in Malaya and Burma was to melt away before the Japanese onslaught, carrying with it reinforcements and material urgently needed for his task.

In the autumn of 1941 the astounding successes of the Germans in Southern Russia increased the responsibilities and anxieties of the C.-in-C. Middle East hour by hour. Yet, in November, 1941, calculating that there was time to launch an offensive in the West before having to turn to meet the growing menace from the north, General Auchinleck set out to destroy the enemy forces in Eastern Cyrenaica which had in the previous months been strengthened with formidable German armoured troops and mechanised infantry.

¥Ć.

e T

T É

ė

Œi L

'n

His intervention in the battle, when it seemed all but lost, the raising of the siege of Tobruk, and the retreat of Rommel to the border of Tripolitania were outstanding episodes in the long struggle in North Africa. Before the enemy had been expelled from Cyrenaica, however, Japan attacked, and troops and air forces from and intended for the Middle East were diverted to the Far East, thus snatching the chance of decisive success and necessitating retreat to the Gazala position.

Only those who shared the responsibility can understand the anxieties that now piled up. The Fleet in the Eastern Mediterranean existed in name alone, after the bloody battle of Crete and the torpedoing of "Queen Elizabeth" and "Valiant" in Alexandria harbour. The Merchant Navy had to run the terrible gauntlet of the convoys to Malta, each one an epic of sustained courage and devotion. The Germans had reached the Caucasus, and only Stalingrad, where the defenders were slowly losing ground, stood between them and the decisive strategical prizes of the Middle East. As weakness grew and dangers increased from all sides, Rommel attacked with his now formidable superiority in tank efficiency, which constituted the dominant factor on North African battlefields, when air forces were inadequate to intervene tactically in sufficient strength and frequency.

The sequel—the loss of Tobruk, the invasion of Egypt, the assumption by the C.-in-C. of personal command of the Eighth Army, and the stopping of Rommel at El Alamein—is too well-known to enlarge upon in this short sketch of the new Field Marshal's career. El Alamein was fought by him not only with the object of repulsing the enemy, but of launching an immediate counter-offensive. Syria, Iraq and Persia had to be stripped bare to enable him to stop the enemy at El Alamein. Yet, in the midst of this decisive struggle General Auchinleck planned for a deliberate offensive as soon as it could be made possible by the promised arrival of tanks and antitank guns more on a par with those of the enemy, and the heavy bomber aircraft and fresh divisions long needed, and now at last on their way to Egypt.

For a year, until July, 1943, when he was re-appointed Commander-in-Chief in India in place of General Wavell, who became Viceroy, General Auchinleck remained unemployed. Those with human understanding will appreciate what this meant to him. It is in misfortune that man proves himself.

Now began perhaps the greatest task of his career: the expansion and training of the forces in India, amounting eventually to some two and a half million men; and the responsibility and genius of organising the vast base in India for the coming offensive against

Japan. It will be remembered that India suffered from extreme industrial backwardness for such a gigantic project; and that her harbours, communications, airfields and technicians were pitifully inadequate for modern war. We in India know how great has been his achievement.

And now, in these troubled times that have followed on the end of the war—to the successful conclusion of which he contributed so great a share—he stands as resolute, imperturbable and tolerant as ever, sharing the confidence and regard of all shades of Indian and British opinion. In him great trust is placed, earned by the example he has set of unselfish devotion to duty. This and his natural kind-liness, tolerance and humanity have earned him the deep personal regard of all the Services of which he is the Commander-in-Chief, and for whose fair name and welfare he has lived.

Field Marshal Auchinleck's forty-three years of service to India is a matter of the greatest pride to the sailors, soldiers and airmen of India and to all who have served under him. India can count herself fortunate in this, her hour of destiny, to have his broad shoulders, deep wisdom and statesmanship to help carry her heavy burdens.

# MATTERS OF MOMENT

OVERNMENTS are now publicity-minded. By advertising in the public Press, by posters and hoardings they seek the co-operation of the public with a forcefulness which equals any business determined to increase its sales. But even intensive advertising must have public

support to be fully effective, and it is here that officers in the Indian Army can help in one Government cam-Matter paign—that of endeavouring to persuade young men of for Officers the right type to apply for regular commissions. By discussing an officer's life with their friends, by dispelling doubts some parents might have of an officer's work, and by seizing every opportunity of emphasising the attractions of a Service career to parent friends offcers will be doing fine pioneering work. "Personal publicity" counts, and as the third interim short course at the Indian Military Academy in Dehra Dun begins in January next, time is short. Qualifications are that candidates must be between 18 and 21; they must have matriculated, passed the Senior Cambridge with not less than two credits, or have secured the Indian Army Special Certificate. The "drill" is simple. Having secured application forms from Brigade or Area headquarters, from recruiting officers or from a University or College, a candidate

is called up by the Commanding Officer of the area for a preliminary interview; if the candidate is successful, the form must be sent to the Directorate of Selection of Personnel, G.H.Q., Meerut, before September 30, and successful candidates will later be called before a Services Selection Board and a Medical Board, after which those who are considered suitable as potential officers will attend a two years' course at the Academy in Dehra Dun.

It is much harder to be a good officer in peace than in wartime. This may at first sight appear paradoxical, but it is a fact that higher standards

are demanded from regular officers who have the task of Nα building up the efficiency of an army than from the Lowering temporary officers a country has to appoint to help to **Standards** lead it in war. If, therefore, India is to maintain its essential minimum of efficiency in peace to enable the Army to expand in war, the highest possible standard for regular officers must be adhered to. As Field Marshal Auchinleck recently said in addressing the Council of State, that India can eventually produce sufficient Indians of the right type to provide all the officers likely to be needed to lead the Armed Forces of India in the future cannot be doubted. The deeds and prowess in the late war of that band of pre-war Indian regular officers, numbering less than 600, proved it. But civilians must realise that a good junior leader in battle may not make a good officer in peacetime. Moreover, while much may be said for young leaders in war possessing fire and dash and enthusiasm, those qualities need to be balanced by knowledge of men and military lore, which knowledge can only be acquired by long experience. Without that knowledge, from which springs the power to judge men and events soberly and in their right perspective, very few good officers can emerge.

Some pertinent facts on this problem of Indian Army officers were revealed by the Commander-in-Chief at the same meeting of the Council Requirements of State, when he said that a tentative estimate of the future requirements of the Indian Army showed that Post-War about 9,000 regular officers would be needed. He hoped Indian Army that about 1,000 would be obtained from the I.E.C.Os who had applied for regular commissions; there would be about 3,000 prewar regular officers, British and Indian, left in the Army; a special class of officer recruited from V.C.Os and N.C.Os of long service, set up to fill certain specialised appointments, would yield about 1,000; and by April next year it was hoped to get about 100 Indian officers from the

new post-war course at the Indian Military Academy. Those sources would thus yield about 5,100 officers of all ranks, Indian and British, against the estimated future need of over 9,000. To make up the deficit, said His Excellency, we must depend mainly on Indian candidates who volunteer for regular cadetships at the Military Academy, though even if sufficient candidates of required qualifications come forward, they could not all be accepted at once because it would completely upset the age and service balance of the officer cadre. What was the position at the second post-war course being held at the I.M.A. in Dehra Dun? Field Marshal Auchinleck said that for the first course 300 vacancies were offered; 1,236 applications were received, of which 126 were found suitable. For the second course, which begins in August 1946, 450 candidates are required and so far about 2,200 have applied. When the new National War Academy comes into being it is hoped to produce 500 or 600 officers annually for all three Services, but that cannot be for some years.

Meantime, said His Excellency, we must have recourse to temporary expedients. First is the secondment of British Officers from the British Army to fill the gap until there are enough Indian offi-

cers, trained and experienced, to take over. No more Temporary British officers are to be appointed permanently to the Expedients Indian Army; they would in future be attached for a short specified tour, but this does not apply to the existing regular British officers of the Indian Army who belong to it permanently. The second expedient would be the retention in the Service of E.C.Os, British and Indian, who though not wishing to apply for regular commissions, may be willing to extend their service for a year or two. The third expedient is the granting of short-service commissions to Indians already serving. In the closing stage of his speech, which was given on a resolution moved by Pandit Kunzru "that a time limit be laid down for the nationalisation of the Indian Army," Field Marshal Auchinleck said: "The Honourable Mover suggests that the Indian Army should be nationalised in ten years from now, by which I am sure he means that by that time all British officers from the highest to the lowest shall be replaced by Indian officers. It may be possible that in some branches of the Army this target could be achieved, but I think it would be highly dangerous and most undesirable to make a categorical declaration to this effect. It would be even more dangerous and unreal, taking everything into consideration, to apply such a declaration to the whole Army. There are many imponderable and unknown elements in the various factors which affect the solution of the problem, and make it impossible to specify an exact period for the achievement of the complete nationalisation of the officer cadre of the Indian Army."

Some details of the "short-term" commissions now available in the Indian Defence Services for I.E.C.Os may perhaps be quoted here with advantage. Such commissions are available for three "Short-Service" years for those over 35 years of age and for five years **Commissions** for those under 35, with a gratuity at the end of the contract. There may be opportunities to extend these periods when requirements are more definitely known. These commissions are restricted to British subjects of Indian domicile or descent or subjects of Indian States, the requirements being physical fitness, proficiency in English, and certain educational qualifications. Pay, promotion and terms of service will be the same as for regular I.C.Os of the Indian Army. Both this scheme and that for the post-war course at the I.M.A. are the first fruits of the nationalisation of the Indian Army. The change-over is in progress, and more and more officers of the right type will be required. Every officer who does his level best personally to make them more widely known can feel that he is helping in no small degree to fashion the future success of an Army whose traditions demand—and will ever demand—only the highest standards.

THE PRESS in India, limited as they are for space, has, we feel, been unable to fasten adequate attention on the efforts the Army has made towards self-sufficiency in its food supplies. It is, however, a remarkable story, and one that deserves to be more widely known, if only to impress on the peoples of India that its Army is far The Army from being a drain on the country's resources. A "Grow and Food Resources More Food" campaign is no new feature in Indian Army life, for during the war the present Quatermaster General, as G.O.C., Central Command, led the way by organising one of the biggest food-producing organisations in India. The practice spread, and as will be seen from an article in this issue, there was later set up an excellent farming experiment to feed the Fourteenth Army. Incidentally, as the writer of that article points out, there may be a commercial future for one of their wares—that of producing kippers. It was but one instance of the versatility shown by these soldier-farmers, and there and in other parts of India similar enterprise brought its reward in the shape of fresh vegetables and other foods, saving as it did much space on railways and roads for other military stores.

Now, instead of the war against Japan, the war is on against famine, and, as General Durnford, now Q.M.G., announced recently, the results of all the various economies, cold storage placed at the disposal of the Civilian Government, and the amount of cattle killed, as well as the enormous quantities of food grown, show that the Army is contributing much to

India's anti-famine drive. In one month nearly 1000 tons of dal, over 600 tons of atta, over 250 tons of sugar and 83 tons of flour were saved by the reduction of the basic ration of both Indian and British troops. Later 3000 tons of flour and more than 5000 tons of sugar were surrendered to the Food Department. These figures are a measure of the Army's realistic outlook on India's food shortage.

Because we fear the facts are not sufficiently widely known we venture to record the work of smaller formations. Troops in the Bombay Presidency now produce each month nearly 80,000 lbs. of

fresh pork, 24,000 lbs. of fresh vegetables, 2,000 lbs. of What poultry, 24,000 eggs and 200 lbs. of fresh fruit. Wells in Has Been Done Poona and Kirkee, closed on account of the mosquito menace, were opened and tested to ascertain their suitability for irrigation purposes before the monsoon broke. In Northern Command troops are helping to cultivate 1,000 acres of land between Kohat and Hangu, and tractors, harrows, motor graders and transport have been supplied. The Baluch Regimental Centre produced over 200,000 lbs. of vegetables during the eleven months up to February last; the Rajputana Rifles Regimental Centre at Delhi Cantonments is doing good work in teaching better farming methods—and so successfully that farmers in a nearby village inquired as to how these Army farmers could procure yields of 20 maunds of bajra per acre as compared with their 10 maunds. At Aurangabad a Training Centre produces nearly 7,000 lbs. of vegetables, 2,000 lbs. of fruit and 1,000 eggs monthly. A new plough has been made by an I.E.M.E. workshop at Risalpur from broken-down tanks; mounted on a threewheeled chassis, and drawn by a jeep, the plough has three shares. ing the next six months a large proportion of the vegetables produced for Eastern Command should be available for the civilian population. And a military dairy farm at Lahore is now producing canned buffalo milk. Those results do not represent the whole effort, but they suffice to show that the Army's drive is a practical one. Behind it all is a real desire to help the country, for to achieve these results there has been much organisation, much preparation and much hard work. It deserves to be applauded, not least by those outside the Army who are never lacking in criticising "what the other fellow is doing". In this particular case the critics can rest assured that the Army is not only doing its best; it is achieving results which will assuredly benefit the civilian population in no small degree.

THE EVENTUAL shape of Britain's post-war forces is not yet decided upon—indeed the effects cannot yet be assessed of the implementation of Britain's obligations under the United Nations Charter "to provide forces, facilities and assistance to be on call by the Security Council

Britain's Post-war Forces and to be at the prescribed state of readiness and in certain general locations". At the end of this year, however, Britain's defence forces will number 1,000,000 trained men and 100,000 women, while another 100,000 men

will be under training. The total of those forces will be about double the number before 1939. The world-wide extent of Britain's commitments are seldom fully appreciated; she has to provide forces in Germany to assist in ensuring the execution of the surrender terms; there is a small contingent forming part of the British Commonwealth Occupation forces in Japan; there are forces sharing in the occupation of Austria, others (with American troops) helping to maintain law and order in Venzia Guilia, which will end when the final peace treaty with Italy is signed. In Greece, too, some British forces remain to assist the Greek nation in its recovery. In Palestine British troops are present to help carry out their country's responsibilities.

Coming further East are British forces in India, and in South East Asia, where they are dealing with the liquidation of Japanese occupation.

And The Government's Policy Clearing the seas of mines, storing and guarding dumps and Lease-Lend material are two other phases of work which call for British soldiers. According to a White Paper issued in London recently the four principles which

the Government proposes to follow are: (a) concentration on research, since the present scientific technical progress is so rapid that safety lies far more in the maintenance of an adequate organisation for pure and applied research than on building upon stocks of obsolescent material; limited introduction of the most modern equipment, e.g., jet-propelled aircraft; maximum use of the accumulated stocks; and maintenance of a reasonable war potential. The White Paper made it clear that the British Government was determined to maintain, in collaboration with the Dominions and India, British Armed forces strong enough to meet all possible commitments, while pursuing a research programme that will ensure those forces being supplied with the most up-to-date equipment available.

## THE FOURTH CHRISTMAS

# By LIEUT.-COLONEL J. WILSON STEPHENS

1939. ".....so why not come up and spend Christmas with us?"

I put the letter down and glanced through the open door of my sitting-room. Bengal. Seconded from my regiment, I was here in the capacity of an Additional Superintendent of Police. The station was small, and I was the only European inhabitant. I had been there for eight months.

I looked at the scene outside. An overgrown garden; tropical flowers and trees. Birds and butterflies of startling hues made points and dashes of colour as they darted from one place to another. Overhead the sky was a brilliant blue verging into molten gold around the sun. The humidity was somewhere in the nineties and—I sweated.

The letter was from a brother officer of my regiment at present commanding the Training Company in Shillong. Only a twenty-four hour journey from my station. Shillong—according to the railway posters the Scotland of India—4,500 feet up in the Khassia hills of Assam, would be cold now and filling with visitors for the Christmas holidays. Should I go? There would be a real Christmas up there, not the forced business it was apt to be down here in the plains.

I took two telegram forms and wrote. One went to Police Headquarters in Calcutta asking for a week's Christmas leave, the other to Shillong saying:— "Many thanks. With you on twenty-third." At once life took on a rosier hue. Already I had that subdued feeling of excitement that goes with thoughts of leave.

A fortnight later I was on the platform awaiting the Calcutta Mail, due at 21.30 hrs. Luggage by my side I waited as my bearer fussed with tickets and coolies. The train arrived and, my bedding laid out in the compartment, I gave myself up to thoughts of things to come.

Morning found us at Armingaon. Here the train journey ended and we had to cross the Brahmaputra. Breakfast was served on the river steamer and finished as we reached the far shore. Onwards the journey was by car; sixty-three miles of winding, twisting, climbing road. I had missed the first service and had to wait until after lunch. Never mind, I was on leave, and anticipation was half the fun.

We started off in convoy; some dozen vehicles full of the business crowd from Calcutta bringing with them their golf clubs, tennis rackets, and much generosity. Up we went, at first through thick jungle; monkeys swung from branch to branch. It was hot, and we were in shorts and open-neck shirts. Over the arm we carried an overcoat or a rug; pleasant reminder of the coming evening.

As far as the half-way-halt at Nang Po the scenery altered little, though latterly it became much less tropical. I settled myself down for a nap, my thoughts on log fires, warm blankets, friends and conversation. I had not spoken my own language now for many weeks and I was hungry for "soldier talk."

Hullo! Here we were at Nang Po. Much cooler already, in fact there was a distinct nip in the air. Tea and toast at the little hotel and I looked at my fellow travellers. These might have been holidaying in England as, owing to the war, many had brought their children out to India so that whole families were represented; in normal times an unusual sight. An air of holiday was about. Tea finished, I took the opportunity to change into grey flannels against the coming cold.

On we went, and now the scenery changed with every mile. Jungle gave place to delicate bamboo. In the distance I could see the hills, the mist swirling around their peaks. It was getting towards dusk now. The bamboos had gone, their places taken by pines, themselves redolent of the season, their graceful fingers pointing to the greying skies. There was a look of winter such as is never to be found in the plains. A thrill went through me. This was like home; felt like it too. I struggled into my overcoat for the first time for eighteen months.

Lights ahead, and soon we were amongst them. Houses and shops looked to my excited eyes like fairyland. I saw the cheerful Mongol faces of the hillmen and their women-folk, the latter dressed in Welsh cloaks, descendants of the original ones given them by the Welsh Mission still working in those parts. Easy to look at, these Khassia girls.

We stopped at the terminus and alighted. I could see my breath condense in the frosty air. My bearer, complete with coolies and baggage, joined me.

"Hullo, Jack!". I heard Richard's voice.

"Hullo, old man. This is grand." And off we went to his waiting car. There would be plenty of time to talk and plenty to talk about; for the time being we confined ourselves to trivialities. At the bungalow Joan, my hostess, was there to greet us. Enjoying every moment to the full, I entered for the first time for nearly two years a room with a fire.

A whisky and soda drunk comfortably in front of the fire and a feeling of wellbeing and relaxation overcame me. However, I was not allowed to sit idle. There was to be a 'before-supper-dance' at the Club where the band of sister Gurkha regiment would be playing. I was packed off to change into a dinner jacket. A hot bath—what heaven! A change into thick clothes in front of my bedroom fire—what luxury! and I was ready.

At the Club there was the meeting with old friends, the sight of cheerful faces, and a word with the men in rifle green and black; the band of the ....th Gurkha Rifles. All joy to one who had been away from such things for a long time.

Bed at last, and the touch of good white linen and soft blankets; the flicker of the fire for company. I was well content.

Christmas Eve.—We spent the morning on the golf course. The Shillong links are famous; this morning they were crowded. There I met many whom I had not seen for years; officers who had returned from retirement on the outbreak of war. I renewed acquaintance with men of both my own regiment and of the two other Gurkha regiments whose depots were at Shillong. All had been sent there to await posting orders.

As yet the war seemed very far away, though the stories that these men had to tell of submarines and depth charges on the way out made it seem more real. Our armies were still lined up in France, and the collapse had not begun.

Digitized by GOOGLE

December 25th.—I awoke to a real Christmas morning. We show it we true, but the sky was overcast and held the promise. Cold—the right typed cold; crisp and dry. From my bedroom window the view was satisfied Situated on a plateau, Shillong's houses were, for the most part, dotted also on little hill-tops and built in a style that went naturally with their pinewal surroundings. This morning it had the look of a continental town; Swiss, ill allowed my imagination full roin.

"Merry Christmas, Jack." Richard came into the room, and together we went into breakfast. Presents were exchanged.

To-day we had a programme to fulfil. Gifts had to be distributed to the servants, all of whom expected something on our "big day." After Chard, Richard and I went off to the Mess, where lived the officers of the two resides battalions and the training companies. Here was a great show. Annually, a Christmas Day, the Gurkha Officers (Viceroy Commissioned) came to the Mess to drink our good health. They were in musti; those of my regiment in grey flamely, rifle green double-breasted coats with regimental buttons. All were the Gurlis Brigado tic.

"Hullo, Subedar Sahib, Kusto chha, how are you? Haven't seen you for ages. Not since the Fort Sandeman days. Getting fat, you know." Be conversation flowed as did the beer drunk from shining silver tankards. The logs blazed in the great fireplaces. Trophies and portraits on the panelled will made a fitting setting to the cheerful scene. Outside the Pipers marched want down.

At lunch time the Gurkha Officers made their farewells; Richard and I stayed for a glass of sherry and a word with old friends. The talk went to the war. So far, regimentally, we were unaffected. The enormous expansion into wartime battalions had not yet begun. We were all regular soldiers; the Guith Officers still at their normal age, not yet the youngsters who, later, were to take so ably the responsibility on their shoulders. To all intents and purposes we were still a peacetime organization.

Back to the bungalow for lunch; afterwards a typical English Sunday afternoon in front of the fire; a little drowsy; a little over-caten; but very content

That evening we were due at Church. I had been roped in to sing in the carol choir and Joan and Richard came to support me. The Church was thoroughly English, stone built and homely. Windows and pews bore silent witness to departed officers of one or another of the Gurkha regiments. Here was the true Christmas atmosphere captured. The carols brought back happy memories of other days, and my thoughts took the familiar turn to home and family. The war was temporarily in the background.

Outside, overcoats on, we talked to friends for a while before returning home. "Good-night, padre. Happy Christmas to you" and we were on our way.

We were to dine with the Commissioner. Dinner was in the traditional style; turkey; plum pudding with charms and three-penny bits; minoe pies; crackers with the nuts and wine. All pure gold and a part of one's life which, child or grown up, I at any rate look forward to with undiminished pleasure.

Games afterwards until it was time to go. We said our good-byes. Home, and a final whisky and soda before bed. Joan went to bed while Richard and I talked shop until, with a yawn, I bade him good-night.

Christmas 1939. Yes, it was good and I enjoyed every moment of it. My leave was ended.

"Au 'voir, Richard. I'll be seeing you soon I expect. Hope it'll be back with the battalion: best place to be in a war. Drop me a line, old boy, from time to time. It's been terrific. I wonder where we shall be next Christmas?" And as my car wound its way down the hillside I said to myself—I wonder?

1940.—

\*\*COMPANY'S turn, Jack. You'll have to relieve Khassadar Picket tomorrow morning. Sorry! Christmas Day, I know. I'll leave the arrangements to you. O.K.?" The Commanding Officer of my battalion was giving his instructions for the weekly relief of camp pickets outside our sector of the perimeter at Tauda China, seven miles from Razmak in Waziristan.

Razmak Brigade (Razcol) was out on column. There had been local trouble, and the tribesmen were collecting. The Fakir of Ipi was known to have been in the vicinity, and it had become necessary to send out troops to show the flag. That we had been here, unable to move, since December 7 showed that this was the case.

We had left Razmak at first light on that date. By 11.00 hours we had run into trouble. Rounding the corner of the rock massif, Pakalita Sar, the leading troops had been heavily fired upon. That night two of the camp pickets had been rushed. One had been annihilated, totalling some sixty-three killed, the other, stoutly led by a Subedar who in due course received the M.C., had stood its ground until relieved the following morning.

Since then we had been immobilised at Tauda China camp waiting for reinforcements from below. Tochi Column (Tocol) and the...st Brigade were due up now at any moment. Then we should push on to Ladha. Rumour had it that we were opposed by a lashkar of some 6,000 Mahsuds. There were probably less than half that number. However, for the time being we sat, and the tribesmen were having their fill of sniping practice. I went to give a warning order to my Company Subedar to be ready for tomorrow's work.

Christmas Eve. Up here at 6,000 ft. we get a real winter and the night was very cold. The sky gave every indication of snow and there was a hush over the land. From the direction of the Mess came the cheerful sound of conversation as I hurried towards it. I was dressed in a poshteen—the long sheep-skin coat of the Frontier—over my battle-dress; on my head a Balaclava helmet, while my legs were encased in long Gilgit boots. Jove! it was cold.

I brushed aside the blanket which served as a screen to the entrance and went into the warmth and comfort. The Mess was built on the lines of a dugout, roofed over with a tent, and dug down. A stone wall built around and outside sheltered the inmates from intermittent sniping. Logs blazed cheerfully in the brick fireplace.

The officers, still for the most part regulars, were seated on chairs and sofas, the latter made of sandbags. Tonight, being Christmas Eve, the Mess was full of visitors; for we lived on top of one another in camp. A British battalion; two Indian; and my own Gurkhas; as well as Gunners of the Mountain Artillery; Sappers and others, and it was our custom to visit one another after the day's work—pub crawl if you will! I shouted for a 'whisky mac' against the cold and found myself a seat.

War! Here, although we were fighting, we did not consider that it was taking part in the real thing, though we realised that it was work that had to be done. To the regular officer who, on and off for years, had been engaged in frontier warfare, there was nothing to suggest that he was helping the war effort. However, sooner or later, we knew, our turn would come and we should be sent overseas.

For myself, I was happy to be back with the regiment. After two years in the heat of Bengal I had come back homesick for the North. To make sure that I should stay with the battalion I had committed a military crime. Given a vacancy on a War Course at the Staff College, I had wangled out of it, thus, from the point of view of the highclimbers, damning myself for life. Now, I told myself, I was sure to be left where I was. For the time being I was quite happy here on the Frontier. Life was abundantly full from my point of view.

Dinner over, we talked for a while. Outside, the occasional sniper tried his luck, the "tock dong" of the bullet crisp and clear in the frosty air. The officer of the day went out to inspect our part of the perimeter, visit the posts and inlaying picket. I went to my bed. My forty-pounder tent, dug well down so that I could stand in it and still be underground, was comfortable and snug. I was soon asleep.

I awoke to something new in the air. What was it? The light seemed odd and there was a kind of diffused radiance in the tent. The flap opened and, with much hissing, my batman entered with the morning tea. "Snow" he said. "Lots of it." So that was it. Lifting the flap I looked outside. Everything was dead white—for the sun was not yet up. Very seasonable, I said to myself. But by Jove it was cold. As I washed outside my tent in the chilly air the remarks of my brother officers came up to me from their dugouts.

"Morning, Jack. Merry Christmas. Looks lovely out there!" Hugo Wilson, my half-section, told me at length of the comfort of his early morning bed; enlarged on the beauty of a hot cup of tea taken at leisure, while the smoke of an expensive brand of Turkish cigarette curled up and out from his tent door. I threw a handful of soft snow at the speaker and, to the accompaniment of earblistering oaths, dived back into my tent to dress.

Early breakfast over, I assembled my platoon commanders under cover of the perimeter wall facing the picket we were to relieve and gave my orders. These were simple. A covering party on the edge of the big nullah and, this in position, the rest would move to our objective on the high ridge—the Marai Narai in four successive waves. The position attained, the mules, stores and ammunition would follow. "Any questions? Very well, we start in twenty minutes from now."

In camp it would be a holiday except for essential duties and fatigues. I walked across to the British unit and exchanged compliments of the season with the C.O. and his Adjutant, who were stamping their feet outside their Mess.

"Just off to relieve Khassadar Picket," I said, "Damn nuisance on Christmas Day. Still, I'll be back in time for a drink before lunch. Hope to see you in our Mess, sir." And I went off to strap on my pistol.

A signal lamp winked from the picket and was answered by ours on the perimeter wall. All O. K. up here, it reported, and I told the signaller to say that we were about to start.

"Covering party in position, Sahib."



"Thanks, Subedar Sahib. Let the first wave go off."

I watched them as they moved off in extended line over the snow. Unlikely we should meet any opposition this morning. Too cold. The tribesmen would be in their flea-infested caves. Maybe there would be the odd sniper though. It wouldn't do to take any chances.

Company headquarters moved with the second wave, and we were soon across the open and down into the river bed. There was a stream half-way across, frozen now, but not strong enough to take our weight, and we splashed through the icy water.

Then the ascent. Steep, and covered with holly bushes the height of a man, the climb soon warmed us up and set the blood pounding in our veins. I disliked these bushes. Too often they hid the burly Mahsud, long knife in hand. Thoughts of "Ghazi rushes" flitted through my head; but there was little likelihood of such horrors this morning.

Here we were at the top. The Jemadar commanding the picket came out to greet me.

"Any news Jemadar Sahib?" I asked.

"Nothing much. There's been some sniping from over there." He pointed to the ridge beyond which we were standing. "I think we got one of them, Sahib."

"Tock-dong"—a bullet whistled passed my ear. We ducked behind cover; you cannot afford to take chances with the "Finest Umpires in the world." A burst of light-machine-gun firs from the picket, the rat-tat-tat echoing from the mountain sides, and all was peaceful again.

While the business of relief was in progress I sat down and looked at the scene spread out before me. It was magnificent. Below me, the camp was a hive of activity. Smoke rose from the cook-house fires. Clear in the thin air came the sound of a Christmas hymn sung by many voices, for the padre had arrived in an armoured car from Razmak and was taking morning service. Men and animals appeared as through the reverse end of a telescope, distinct and sharp-cut, in miniature.

Beyond and on all sides were the tall, snow-covered mountains. To my left, the many towered village of Makin, lately known to have sheltered Ipi. To the right in the valley lay Marobi and the tomb of the Mullah Powindah, the Mad Mullah—of sacred memory. The wild countryside, fit habitation for the warlike Mahsud, presented a memorable spectacle. In the dim distance, screened by the spur of Pakilita Sar, the smoke of Razmak rose lazily in the still air. Close to me the scarlet splash of a robin gave the authentic touch to the scene.

My thoughts turned to last year in Shillong. The war was over a year old now. Here we were still almost unaffected. True, some units had gone to the Middle East, but that was about all. Richard and Joan were still in Shillong, the former full of grumbles, and here was I where I wanted to be, with the battalion. Normally, in peace time, the Gurkha regiment consists of two battalions. Now we had expanded to three and soon, it was rumoured, we should have to find a fourth. A fine effort for Nepal, but it played havoc with the battalion. Already promotion was the order of the day and men who, in peace time, would still be riflemen were wearing the three stripes of a Havildar. I myself sported a Major's crown four years before my time. Well, it had to be done, and that the men would do their stuff there was no question. But it seemed to me to be asking a lot.

I turned to look at the post. The handing and taking over was complete and we were ready to move back. 11.00 hours, good! I should be in time for the Gurkha officers visit to the Mess.

"O.K. Subedar Sahib—Moving."

The Mess when I arrived there was full. The tent flies had been three back and the sun was warm and comforting. Outside and in there were people. The Gurkha Officers, beer in hand, were wishing us luck; the officers from the British battalion joined in the conversation and did their best to make themselve understood. A grand gathering, heartening somehow. There is an atmospher on the Frontier that is to be found nowhere else. Everyone knows everyone else, and there is a great feeling of comradeship; a certainty that you will never be to in the cold.

I walked in and made pointed remarks about officers who had at less carned their beer as opposed to tea-swilling, bed-lying idlers who sat about drinking at all hours of the morning and doing their betters out of a seat. I was told to drink my beer and shut up.

Evening. Hugo Wilson and I began on the dinner. Both of us fancied on selves as cooks, and we were going to give the Mess a treat. I did the prans cocktail and the soup while he dealt with a complicated dish of fish and win sauce. The cook, with looks of disgust at our efforts, attended to the tunier.

At dinner we had two guests; unattached officers from Brigade Heat quarters, Gurkhas themselves. The King Emperor's health was drunk and a toast to absent friends. Conversation became general. This, as usual, we about the war and the possibilities of getting overseas. Already an officer from here and there had gone off on some job or other connected with war formation Surely, we said, our turn as a battalion would come.

"Bed, boys" I yawned, feeling full and content. Whatever happened now I must surely stay with the battalion; its fortunes would be mine, and that was good enough for me.

The blanket over the Mess door billowed and a Gurkha signaller debouched into our midst with a message for the C.O.

"Hullo! W/T message from Northern Command!" The C.O. lookel it it and passed it to me without comment.

"......the following officers will report forthwith to—Headquarters to take over appointments as Staff Captains to war brigades...." Followed a list of names, mine amongst them.

Damn! A shadow passed over my sense of wellbeing. Surely there was some mistake? Surely I had cut my staff throat by not going to the "Forcing House?" It wasn't that I didn't want to go to the war. I wanted to go with the battalion.

"Lucky man", was the general comment when I read out the news. "It means you'll be off soon. You've got a start on us", and so on.

I could not altogether share their feelings. Only recently returned, " came hard to have to go off again. It meant in all probability that I should not see the battalion for the duration. However, there it was. I should get to the war anyway. That was the way to look at it, and I began to cheer up.

Boxing Day saw me climbing into an armoured car on my way to Ramak

and the South.

70T WAS 0E be up tops

had beat

iere war! officers in

make the

18 80 MB

WB CPETS

will never

aho bed s

Who S

of 8 821

l ushus

did by

figh at

to the c

Bogad

18 to

as 🍱

11 M

u foo

ra de

10

"Good-bye, sir". I shook the C.O. by the hand.

"Good luck to you, Subedar Sahib. To you all. Let's hope we shall meet somwhere out there. Good luck. I wonder where we shall all be next Christmas?"

The steel door clanged to, the car moved off, and my driver, a young officer of the Indian Armoured Corps echoed—I wonder?"

1941.—

66 ROLO speaking to GOFU-Yes-BOLO 2 this end. What's that? Oh! it's you, Bill is it? Jack this end. What? The old man will be coming here tomorrow? O.K. Yes. We're settled in now. Situation much as it was. One battalion at the bridge, the other about two miles up the main road. You know the rest. No. Air quieting down a bit. The 101st got hell all yesterday and last night, poor devils. All well your end? Good. Well. bye, bye, Bill." I put down the receiver of the field telephone and shouted for a Motor Contact Officer.

"Go to the 101st and find out how things are going. Come back as soon The Brigadier wants a full report on yesterday's bombing. Understand? Right. Get moving."

Christmas Eve, 1941. It was five o'clock in the morning, and we had been up all night, on the move from one position to another. I seemed to have been awake for days. Let me see? I had had no sleep the previous night nor the one before that so far as I could remember, which, I had to admit to myself, wasn't verv far.

Since December 8 life had been something of a nightmare. No one, least of all the men, had had time to rest or get a change of clothes. I glanced at my filthy shorts, boots and hose-tops. Turning to the duty clerk I told him to warn me if the Brigadier returned or I was wanted on the 'phone. "I shall be under that tree," I said. "Very well, sir," he replied, and continued his work on the "battle board" which he was getting up to date.

I strolled off and sat down. Yes, December 8. We had not thought then er de la that it was going to be like this. My Brigade, all Gurkhas, originally part of a force intended for the Western Desert, was side-tracked at the last minute and We had arrived in September. To begin with the Japanese sent to Malaya. menace had not been taken very seriously; betting had been even, some saying they would never come, others that if they did it would not be before the dry season in March.

Then, late in November, the tempo had changed. Something was going On the morning of the 8th I had been at Sungei Patani in my capacity as Staff Captain to the Brigade. There I had seen the Jap planes drop their load of bombs on the aerodrome. The war was on. Since then it had been a series of retreats, and we were not the full strength Brigade we had started out.

At Jitra the 101st had taken a bad knock, officers and men. In Brigade headquarters the Signal Officer had been killed. At Gurun the Brigade Major had followed; gallantly leading troops into action when headquarters had been surrounded, he had met his end. Since then I had stepped into his shoes and now, after fifteen days of almost continuous rearguard fighting through thick jungle and rubber plantations, we in position in front of and to the north of Ipoh, the

Digitized by GOOSIC

town I had left on December 7 and at which the Brigade had been stational up to the outbreak of hostilities.

A retreat, nover pleasant, becomes less so when you are outnumbered, has no air support whatsoever, and the country in which you are fighting is trapic. The men had been magnificent. Days without rations, rest, or a clause of clothes had been their lot. Nevertheless they were in good heart and we fighting as the Gurkha soldier has always fought, hard, and without thought cost.

In two days' time we were to move to back to a "previously prepared position." Even now one of the battalions, the 102nd, was on its way there and the surely, we should hold them? Give the men a rest, a few squadrons of fights and some fresh troops to give us a hand, and we'd soon have the Nips out of Main.

Yesterday, and throughout last night, the 101st had been having a bit time of it. Their job had been to cross the Perak river at Blanja and to hold the crossing until such time as all were over. The Jap air force, with nothing to oppose them, had been at them now for thirty-two solid hours. It was not that the casualties were heavy, on the contrary they had been remarkably light, but the effect of sitting in slit trenches and being subjected to incessed dive-bombing and machine-gunning was bad for troops who had little or we means of retaliation. I could hear them, still at it, now.

I got up and went back to the office, or rather the empty space under a Malay hut that acted as such. "Think I'll go and get some food," I said to the duty officer. "No time like the present." I could not remember when I had last had a meal.

The day were on. Reports from forward indicated little or no enemy activity, though that did not mean that we could rest. Fighting patrols had continually to be out and doing. We could not afford to sit back in a country like this, and with no aircraft to give us information.

The Brigadier back, I went forward to see the 109th. En route I met two riflemen going in the same direction, and stopped to give them a lift.

"Well, where have you come from?" I asked.

"We were part of a patrol, Sahib, and got separated."

"Did you see anything; meet any enemy?"

"No, Sahib, nothing happened." The speaker and his companion were more children. There were few old soldiers in the battalions now, due to the expansion.

"Nothing to tell me then?" I continued.

"Well, we did have a little incident. We met a man sitting down in the jungle, dressed in mufti. We sat down beside him, for we were tired, and tried to get into conversation. But he did not understand our language. Bhimbakedur here noticed that he had a box with him. At first we thought it might be a gramophone, for these we know. Then we considered again and we thought that perhaps it might be a wircless set. We were uncertain what to do, but after

talk we decided that it would be best to take no risks. I took my rifle and shot

him, Sahib. There is no more to report. Nothing of interest happened, Sahib."

Thus Johnny Gurkha. I dropped them at their destination. "You prob-

ably got a fifth columnist," I said. "Well done."

At sundown all was peaceful. The air had been active and several recce planes, prelude to attack, had been over. Otherwise all fronts reported quiet. We took the opportunity to get some rest.

I was up at 0530 hrs. There had been no distrubances during the night, no 'phone calls necessitating my presence, and I was feeling a new man. Most was wards went off into the jungle to find a stream to wash in. At this hour of the morning there was a suggestion of freshness in the air. The atmosphere was sticky and flat for most of the twenty-four hours but now, with the coming of dawn, I could feel a faint lightening.

Christmas morning. Nothing, I supposed, could be less like Christmas with than this. From where I stood I had a clear view of the countryside, now brightening into another day. In the distance the jungle covered hills of the Cameron Highlands; to the left as I looked at it more hilly country with, centrally, the peak of Kladung, up which I had been wont to walk of a Sunday will morning. Nearer it, it was all jungle and rubber plantations.

Rubber! I hoped I should never see it again. Most of the fighting had taken place amongst the rubber trees and it was not a pleasant form of fighting. Immediately to my front was a tin mine, deserted now; the Chinese coolies gone with the stream of refugees I saw threading their way down the main road to Ipoh. A field of paddy stretched to the stream at my feet. Overhead the new sun gave promise of another sticky day.

My thoughts turned to the Marai Narai of last year, Tauda China, and the snow-covered camp. I wondered where my battalion was. I had had no news for a long time. Probably in Iraq, I thought, where I would have given a great deal to be with them. However, I had been amazingly lucky. I was with the first complete Gurkha Brigade that had been formed. That was an

I walked back to the Mess—a room in a Malay hut—and was greeted with "Merry Christmas" by members of the Brigade Staff. The Brigadier was already there, pouring over maps and making notes.

"The General is due here this morning at 11.00 hrs., sir."

"Yes, Jack, I haven't forgotten. Get the 109th on the 'phone and tell them to let me have a report on last night's patrol work, will you?"

At 11.00 hrs. sharp the General and his G. S. O. 1 arrived.

"Good morning, sir. A merry Christmas."

"Same to you, though I've known better", he answered as he dragged something from the staff car. "Here's a couple of bottles of champagne for the Mess", he said as he handed them to me. "You can make use of them I've no doubt."

He and the Brigadier went off together while I followed with the G. 1. The situation was discussed, and then the orders for tomorrow's move to the "previously prepared position" at Chenderiang. This, I learnt, was no Maginot line, but the General said that there we were to make a stand; reinforcements were due out from England, and we should be able to give the men a rest. We were glad to think that now we should have the opportunity to refit and reorganise. In fact, we never got it.

The conference over, we returned to the Mess and offered our guests a drink. The Staff Captain had discovered some bottles of stout and had mixed them with

the two bottles of "the Boy" and made "Black Velvet." "Goes farther the way", he said in explanation as we toasted one another.

No gathering of Gurkha Officers this year. Many who started with a on the 8th December would never again attend Mess at their Headquares Dehra Dun and Dharamsala. Here's luck to their brave spirits and to is riflemen who went with them.

I drank a silent toast to my own Gurkhas and wondered as I did so be they fared. One thing I knew, and that was that they, like these I was so had to be serving with, were doing their stuff in whatever circumstances today middle them.

Orders were issued for an early move on the next day. We hoped to go away without contact. We had a long drive ahead of us. At midnight, the first troops, the 109th, arrived in their vehicles. We, the Brigadier and myself, and them at the cross roads in Pusing village, where the road to Batu Gaid branches form the main Ipoh road.

Close by, the guns of the Field Regiment opened up with counter-prepartion fire on the far bank of the Perak river. A battalion of Jap cyclists his been reported, and we hoped to get in amongst them with a few shells.

"109th and 101st all clear, sir." The Brigade Transport Officer mix his report. I told the Brigadier. "Right, let's be off," he said and more towards my station wagon. No lights, but there was a moon, and driving well not be the strain it had been these last few nights.

I took the wheel. "Well, I've spent some varied Christmas days in agreence," remarked the Brigadier.

"This can't go on for long, sir", I replied "We'll soon be after then now and by this time next year the Nips will be wishing they had never been dragged into the war. I wonder where we shall all be by then!"

"Famous last words" answered the Brigadier with a laugh. "Better be careful. All the same—I wonder?"

1942-

PRISONERS OF WAR! And to know that the war is still to be won and that there is nothing you can do towards winning it. An unenvisible "finis."

To begin with, we had been left much to our own devices. Then, for a while, our captors had begun to throw their weight about. Face slapping and other indignities had become the order of the day.

At times the yellow men had made themselves most unpleasant. Notably on the occasion when they had ordered us into a concentration camp for refusing to sign a paper undertaking not to try to escape. Nineteen odd thousand of us were lodged in a barrack square and its seven buildings, and surrounded by barbed wire and machine guns, the latter disposed so that, if necessary, they could do the most harm. This area, about the dimensions of a full polo ground looked, when we are all in, like Epsom Downs on Derby Day, with the numbers multiplied by ten. On my floor alone, a room made to take fifty men, we numbered eight hundred and sixty officers and other ranks, including the Corps Commander. A veritable "Black Hole."

It is said that the British are at their best in adversity. The men were splendid; never was morale so high. They sang, got up impromptu concerts, and had at the top of nineteen thousand British and Australian voices they sang the lab National Anthem while the puzzled and uncomprehending Sons of Nippon and into others who were not Sons of Nippon looked on.

Disease. Diptheria and dysentery always with us, began under these delication that the delication of t

Meanwhile, our Commander was in conference with the Japanese. Eventually after three nights and days and with the full co-operation of us all, he issued an order telling us to sign and taking on his shoulders the full responsibility. There was, of course, no alternative. It was signing under duress. We were allowed to return to our areas.

Individually, the most brutal atrocities had been committed. Men had been shot and tortured by these civilized Asiatics in manners too horrible to describe. Collectively our main trouble had been, and was to remain, food. We lacked vitamins and the result was beri beri, dysentery, diptheria, eye troubles even to blindness and so on. This when the Red Cross were sending stuff by the boat full. We worked it out eventually, just before we were released that for the whole three and a half years for which we had been the guests of the Japanese we had actually cost them the enormous sum of £12 per head in food.

Our lot in many ways was unenviable, but that of the unfortunate Gurkha and Indian troops was, at this time, far worse. These had been separated from us at the capitulation and, from what we had been able to gather, they had at once been subjected to the most intense and insidious propaganda accompanied by torture. It was, I think, our heaviest burden that we were unable at any time to be with them. The story of how the loyal troops came through it all will, I hope, be one day written by an abler pen than mine. They were a lesson to us all, and most of us had the grace to acknowledge the fact.

From the British camp as from the Australian many had gone elsewhere; some to Bangkok, others, including the Generals and Brigadiers to Formosa. The camp population was continually fluctuating. American and Dutch parties would arrive from Sumatra and Java. Parties went up-country. Few of us remained constant.

From the personal point of view the lack of news from our friends and relatives was a great hardship. At this time—though we were to get some later—we had received no letters and had only been allowed to write one postcard. We thought it probable that our relatives were still ignorant of our fates. We could only hope that some news had somehow got through.

To-day, Christmas Eve, our fatigues over, we sat about the Mess, which was also our sleeping quarter; a small ex-cricket pavilion, crammed to capacity inside and out, and talked. In the afternoon we lay on our home-made beds and read. After supper Bob Shean, late Carrier Platoon Commander of the 102nd, and I went over to the Australian camp to visit friends and later to Church.

The Australians were in Selerang Barracks, Changi, the block in which we had been incarcerated there, and the surrounding houses. From all sides came the sound of singing and music, for the spirit of Christmas was abroad. At each port of call we were treated to coffee and some form of cake made from rice

flour; the Aussies, as ever, the essence of hospitality. Later we went on to the midnight service in the home-made bamboo and atap Church. The Padre spoke words of hope and said that he felt certain that we should be out by Christmas next year. Outside, a brilliant tropical moon silvered the palm fronds. From another part of the camp the haunting notes of a single cornet came faintly playing Noel! Noel!

Christmas Day 1942. We were up early, exchanging unconvincing Happy Christmases. Followed the morning fatigues, rice grinding and the like, for at this time we of the Indian Army had no troops to help us, and we did all our own fatigues, including the cooking.

In the afternoon I took a walk around the padang, the late cricket ground. Everyone was out for the evening constitutional, and the sartorial effects were not such as would have pleased a peacetime adjutant. Most of us British had arrived in the camp with no clothes other than those in which we stood up. What additions we had been able to make to our wardrob's had been given us by the more fortunate. The Japs had done nothing for us. The result, now, after ten months, was usually a ragged shirt and equally disreputable shorts, patched ammunition boots or home-made rubber sandals.

Here I met a Malay Volunteer of my acquaintance. That morning, he told me, he had been down to the Civil Gaol where the civilians, both male and female, were interned, taking with him our camp-made presents for the children. These I had seen, and they were wonderful, as good in most cases as one could have bought in a shop. Over and above this we had collected the sum of one thousand one hundred dollars for them so that we felt that, at any rate, the kids would have something of a Christmas.

The Volunteer said that officers who had wives or relations in the Gaol had been allowed to visit them that morning. They had been given half an hour together in the open. There had, it seemed, been several sad disappoint ments; wives expecting husbands, only to find that they had been sentup-country and sometimes tragedy when a husband, eagerly awaited, was found to have died in hospital. This was the first time that they had been given this privilege, and no letters had been exchanged previously. On the whole, he told me, the women were looking fit and well. They put up a wonderful show.

After dinner came visitors from other Messes to drink coffee with us, and we smoked our issue present of two Virginian cigarettes per man while we talked of the future and what we would do with it. Looking back, I thought of 1939, of Richard and Joan and Shillong. I wondered where he was; with the battalion? And if so, where? I thought of the snow-covered camp at Tauda China; of log fires and good-fellowship, and of the men. I had already decided what I would do with my future, and the "simple things" played a very important part.

Around me, in the light of the one oil lamp—for at this stage we were allowed no electric light—I watched the faces of my fellow prisoners. Here and there I caught an expression of "far away," not often did we allow ourselves the luxury of so thinking, for we had learnt that it didn't pay. Tonight there was some excuse. Christmas under a tropical moon with coconut palms on all sides! From across the padang came the throb of a Hawaiian guitar and the plaintive song of a Javanese troubador.

Our guests departed, we went to our beds. I said good-night to Bob.

"Good-night, Jack", he answered. "Let's hope we shall be out of this by Christmas next year."

"Yes", I replied. "But I'd like to get another crack at these blasted Nips before it's over. I've got one or two little things I should like to settle with them."

For a while I lay awake thinking of the war—my war. The fourth Christmas; actively speaking, the last so far as I was concerned. Somehow I doubted very much if we should be relieved in time to fight again, in spite of my recently expressed hope. Oh well! it was the fortune of war and, as the troops say, "mustn't grumble." On the contrary, I realized how amazingly lucky I had been. Was I not sound of body and unhurt? What had I to complain of? All the same, it would have been grand to take part in a victorious battle, to be in at the end. The end? When would that be, I wondered?

# Loyalty-

Two splendid stories of Indian soldiers' loyalty have recently been revealed. On the eve of his execution by the Japanese, Captain M. A. Ansari, of the 5th Rajput Regiment, scribbled a letter in the margin of a Quran. It read:

"At the present moment I have heaps of things to write but I find it difficult to do so. One thing I must tell you is that all my misfortunes were caused by my compatriots, who are only capable of selling their own mothers child. Don't think this is sheer bitterness. I am writing this because you are going to live and will be able to help your compatriots to turn from selfishness".

Captain Ansari was tortured, starved and flogged by the Japanese, and was finally beheaded. He was awarded the George Cross posthumously.

The M.B.E. was recently awarded to Subedar Shah Mohammed, 2/14 Punjab Regiment for his spirt of resistance while a prisoner of war. Sent with a party of 100 men to Canton, he was the senior officer there, and was held responsible for every escape and every refusal to bear arms. But the Japs failed to subdue his spirit.

His constant anti-Japanese propaganda was so effective that he was imprisoned for seven months, and even from his cell he continued to convey messages to his men exhorting them to resist the Japanese. He was of the greatest assistance in upholding the loyalty of Indian troops in Canton.

# ARMY FARMERS IN EAST BENGAL

By LIEUT.-COLONEL. GEOFFREY NOAKES

THE large-scale Army farming venture known as Local Resources, S.E.A.C., designed to supply fresh produce and meat to the advancing Fourteenth Army in Burma, recently came to an end with the handing over of the farms to the local civil government.

The scheme was originally conceived in 1943 by a Norfolk farmer, an AQMG in the H.Q. of Fourteenth Army. This army was then fighting the Japanese on the India-Burma frontier, with the dual task of resisting the expected Japanese offensive, and building up forces of men and material for our advance into Burma.

The movement of food for this rapidly increasing Army of over a million men was, owing to the lack of adequate railways and roads, a matter of considerable difficulty. All aircraft available were required for forward lifts and could not be spared for the transfer of stocks from India. Even if the volume of rations could be maintained, a large percentage had to be in tins, and in the hot and moist climate this was having a bad effect on the general health of the troops. Fresh vegetables and meat were especially necessary for hospital patients, many of whom were suffering from skin diseases.

With this necessity constantly in view S.A.C.S.E.A. authorised a vast scheme, with the object of providing fresh vegetables, pork, ducks, fish and goats to the troops gathered on the frontier, and later by air as they advanced into Burma.

A staff of practical farmers was selected from units and posted to the H.Q. of "Local Resources S.E.A.C." (as the scheme was known) to plan and control the whole enterprise. These included the Garden Superintendent of Government House in Maymyo, and an Indian whose business in peacetime was horticulture in Burma.

# The Vegetable Scheme.

10,000 acres of vegetables were planned and sites were selected after much reconnaisance, as far as possible in centres where troops were already located, and which were near an airfield for the lift into Burma. This restricted the choice of land, and ultimately Local Resources had to contend with farms in the Sadiya Tracts in Assam, on the Imphal Plain up in the hills, to East Bengal at sea level, with a damp moist climate throughout the year.

The seeds were obtained partly through Lease/Lend ex-America, and the remainder from India. The latter were a constant source of trouble, and the poor quality, mixed varieties, etc., caused reduced yields per acre. Furthermore, S.E.A.C. had to indent for seeds on G.H.Q. (1) who passed the order on to the Dept. of Education, Health and Lands of the Government of India. The object of this was the co-ordination of the military demands of India Command and S.E.A.C. with the civilian requirements for both imported and locally grown seeds. Chaos resulted, and apart from the fact that the seeds always arrived well after planting time, they were of very poor quality with mixed varieties and

trains. For instance, one consignment, planted over 200 acres, from tins individally marked "Dwarf Beans" turned out to be a mixture of dwarf and tall, which made cultivation very difficult!

There is no doubt that the work, already started by the Government, of incouraging the improvement of good strains was well worth while. It is only air to state that the demand for seeds during the years 1943/5 was many times reavier than in peacetime, and this is no doubt partly the cause for much of the boor quality seed. But it is after all a very true axiom that you need good seed to attain maximum yields.

Indian type of vegetables were grown during the monsoon period of seven months, and British type (peas, beans, lettuce, turnips, potatoes etc.) over the remaining five months. At Imphal, due to the high elevations and cooler climate, English vegetables were grown over a longer period.

During the first year, the labour had to be trained to cultivate the British type of vegetables, of which they had little experience. Mistakes were made, but the lessons were learnt and in 1946 the crop, had it been required, would have been heavy. The Indian labour was, however, constantly changing, so that much of the instruction was wasted. This would not occur on a civil commercial farm.

In order to cultivate the vast acreage of farms, varying in size from 200 to 2,000 acres, and control the other schemes, a Local Resources Military Unit was formed, consisting of eight officers and seventy-two British other ranks. These men all had civil experience in farming, and no praise could be too high for the work they put in. One or two non-farmers were posted, and they became very keen and want to continue farming after the war. Sixteen special units of Indian labour were raised, each 800 strong, of which a considerable proportion were malis. Local labour was also employed, particularly for clearing the land. One snag experienced was that in Malabar, where a number of the units were recruited, the word mali does not mean gardener, with the result that on arrival at the farm, the men staged a sit-down strike, saying they had not been recruited to work on the land.

D4 and D6 Tractors were obtained from military sources, and 4-furrow ploughs and disc and spike harrows imported from America. The bulk of the work was done by hand by Indian labour, however, with the *kodali*. Few Indians could be trained to use a spade or fork, and if given a long-handled rake preferred to squat on the ground holding the handle a foot from the end, with the remainder waving over his shoulder.

The D6 Tractor was found to be very suitable for the first ploughing, and was also used for dragging away tree stumps during the initial clearing of the land. Attempts were made to import a number of small row crop tractors, and had this been practicable, considerable economy in labour would have been possible.

An undertaking was given that no cultivated land would be used, and the majority of the farms were therefore hacked out of the virgin jungle—a prodigious job—before sowing could be undertaken. This took time, and it was at least a year after a farm was sited before the first harvest could be expected. Men were allotted at the rate of  $2\frac{1}{2}$  to 3 per acre of vegetables, but it must be remembered that they were untrained and this figure included cooks, chowkidars and men employed on road bridges and drain construction.

A large number of pumps up to 15000 g.p.h. size were obtained from Engineer sources for irrigation. The trailer type of fire pump was also found to be most useful, as it could be quickly moved behind a 15 cwt., but few were available until A.R.P. began to close down in India, and even then far more could have been used than were offered. The yield arrived at as a standard was four tons per acre, but after cultivation for a year or two much higher yields could be obtained.

Vegetable growing on this scale was not a commercial proposition, and the cost per maund of vegetables was always higher than the local rate. There appears, however, to be an opening for farms of 200 to 400 acres highly cultivated, and near to the large cities where a good market could be assured. An adequate supply of really cheap vegetables is of great value to the poorer Indian, and encouragement might be given to cultivators by Government subsidies and practical help in the importation of seeds and farming machinery from abroad. A really mechanised vegetable farm would require little labour, and over 10 years could be run at a profit and produce a worth-while crop.

#### Pork Scheme.

This was for the benefit of British troops, and proved a most welcome variation to goat and bully beef. A sausage factory was planned, but was abandoned in 1944 owing to the difficulty in obtaining machinery, and in any case the output of the farms was preferred as fresh pork. The quantities issued to the troops was controlled by the necessity of increasing the breeding stock, and it was difficult to strike a balance.

The farms were initially opened by the loan of a boar and 25 sows by Messrs. Keventers. This stock was in the large farm constructed at Kanglatonbi, between Imphal and Kohima. Some of the worst battles of the campaign were fought over this area and all the buildings were destroyed. Fortunately Local Resources were able to evacuate the stock to Manipur Road a few hours before the Japs arrived.

The 1,500 acre vegetable farm on the Imphal-Kohima Road was also overrun, and a British Division was actually entrenched on the farm during the battle. They much appreciated the vegetables as an addition to their bully and biscuits. The farm could not be reoccupied until the Japs had retreated in August 1944, and so the land had to lie fallow for six invaluable months. The pig farm was completely destroyed.

Five hundred sows and 150 boars were imported from Australia and installed in three farms. It was hoped to get pedigree Middle Whites, but rather a mixture including Berkshires and Large Whites with various crosses were received. Losses in transit were heavy (about 15%) but this was mainly due to the poor housing and feeding facilities on the already overloaded ships. An experiment was made with a Middle White/Khasi cross, but this was not successful. The stock, which is in fine condition, will no doubt be very welcome in India, where herds have deteriorated following the impossibility of importation during the war.

A lot of the pork was issued to troops in hospitals, and the remainder parboiled and flown into Burma in the early hours of the morning. The capture of Burma came too soon for this scheme to get into full effect, especially as over a year was spent in securing the import of the pigs from Australia.

One amusing incident occurred while a consignment was being railed on the American operated B. and A. Railway from Calcutta to Dimapur. A signal was sent warning an R.T.O. to expect a train of 1 officer, 6 B.O.R's and 400 hogs. This became corrupted in transmission, and the O.C. train was greeted with a meal for 407 men!

#### Fish Scheme.

This was designed to produce up to 25,000 lbs. of smoked and salted fish a day to both British and Indian troops. The factory was situated at Chandpur on the Brahmaputra, where adequate supplies of fish were available. In order to avoid reducing the civil supplies forwarded by rail to Calcutta and Chittagong, four large Army R.C.L's were used to visit villages on the river bank who were unable to reach the railway with their catch without the provision of ice. The R.C.L's were flat bottomed with square bows, and capable of carrying 20 tons of fish. The crews recruited from Chittagong lived aboard.

The fish was gutted, deboned and washed on benches in the factory by locally employed civilians under the charge of four Naiks and British Sergeants. The fish was then salted by immersion in a strong brine solution for about twelve hours. It was found that it would keep up to five days. When, however, movement was necessary in metal railway trucks with an interior temperature under the summer sun of up to 120 degrees, this time was reduced to three days.

The fish was bony and required very thorough washing to remove the salt. It is doubtful whether it is a commercial proposition, especially when the supply of fresh fish is adequate.

A further development was to smoke the fish to produce a "kipper" taste. Chambers about 8 feet square were built, and the fish hung on hooks inside for varying periods up to twelve hours. The smoke was produced by burning sawdust obtained from the local ship-building yards. The flavour can be controlled by the choice of the wood used, but Local Resources had to accept all types offered, and were therefore forced to use a mixture.

Since nearly all types of fish were used, some were very bony, and this was not liked by troops, who had to sit on a box, picking at the fish in a mess tin. The cost was very low indeed, amounting to no more than 50 per cent. of the cost price of the fish, and this included the filleting, etc.

If the type of fish is selected, there may be a commercial future in this method, particularly if the smoke used is from woods which give a distinctive flavour. The offal can be used for fish oil and fish meal, and would considerably reduce the cost.

## Goat Scheme.

This scheme allowed for small herds of sixteen goats (which were called "penny packets") to be reared by units. The kids were then reared in separate farms. The plan was not a success, as units were constantly on the move, and therefore constant changes of "ownership" were necessary which naturally reduced the interest of the unit in its herd.

The scheme was not intended to compete with the present commercial method of rearing goats by villagers, and the cost was at least 80 % higher.

#### Duck Scheme.

This was very ambitious, and introduced into India the Chinese Rice Husk method of incubation. Incubators were not available, and a team of Chinese hatchers was flown in from Chengtu University in China. The ducks were required primarily for issue to hospital patients as a variety to the monotonous

diet provided by normal Army rations, of which the men anyway had become heartily sick.

The stock of fowls and ducks in Bengal was steadily decreasing, as the stock was killed for the table, and the position was under constant consideration by the Bengal Government. Any relief, therefore, in the Army demand was welcomed and every assistance was offered.

It was necessary to site the hatchery in an area where duck eggs could be purchased, which was also near to an airfield. Feni in East Bengal was chosen, and a first-class farm sited by the S.C. (Poultry). The eggs were bought through local contractors at prices graded according to the fertility. All nonfertile eggs rejected after the first week were passed on to the local F.S.D. for re-issue.

In spite of a very steep increase in price for fertility above 30% the results were very poor. The local drakes had nearly all gone into the pot, and those that remained were not very effective. Drakes were bought elsewhere and loaned to the villages, but as later Keel disease was found to be endemic in the villages, a Local Resources Laying Farm was opened. The stock was selected from 16-week-old disease free birds reared on the L.R. farms, and by the autumn of 1945, a really good laying flock had been built up.

This was inspected by representatives of the Dept. of Agriculture of the Government of Bengal with a view to the Government taking it over as a going concern, but owing to finance and the fact that all the buildings stood on land requisitioned under D. of I. Rules, the difficulties were found to be insuperable, and what was probably one of the finest laying flock in India was finally dissipated.

To check the spread of any disease, the houses, each holding about 150 birds, were spaced at least two to three hundred yards apart, with their own separate pond. This was very successful; the birds, which were of course very young, layed well and looked very fit. Fish meal and oil from the Chandpur factory was used in their diet, but the ingredient which produced the biggest increase in eggs was bully beef condemned as unfit for human consumption. The cost of the eggs was high (about 50% more than the Local Purchase rate) but the result was disease free and between 80% and 90% fertile eggs.

Incubators were not available in India, and could not be imported quickly enough, so the Chinese hot rice husk method was adopted. With the assistance of the Military Mission at Chungking, a team of one Chinese Head Hatcher and twelve hatchers was flown in. This team was adequate to deal with the intake of 18,000 eggs a week. The teams were accompanied by a British and Chinese Professor and the latter, Prof. Hwangmien of Chengtu University, stayed with Local Resources until the end, and his faithful service was of great value.

When the eggs were brought in by cart, the Chinese complained that the shells were often cracked and the germs broken. The solution was finally found to be in carrying them in boats by water, which is very steady.

The eggs were sorted and washed on arrival in pot. permang. to remove any chance of disease. They were dried in the sun, and then put in the wicker tubs bound with straw and paper to keep the heat in. Round the outside was a sheet of tin to keep the rats out. Meanwhile ordinary local rice had been heated in an open sort of metal dish known as a K.O. but pronounced G.O. in Chinese. These were unobtainable in India, and the Chinese insisted on bringing their own. Once the rice was hot a layer was put in the bottom of the tubs which stood about 3½ feet high with a 2 foot diameter.

On top of the layer of hot rice 24 eggs were placed in a thin string bag. The Chinese were very expert indeed in placing the bags in the tubs, so that all the eggs rolled out flat. Each bag was followed by another layer of rice and it was this warm rice that produced the incubation temperature.

As the rice on the top and bottom of the tub cooled quicker than that in the middle, the eggs were always changed around from one tub to another. The temperature was kept between 98 and 102 degrees by this method and hatching was very regular. The Chinese seemed to know by instinct when a change of rice was necessary, and would leap out of bed at two o'clock in the morning if the temperature dropped. They never used a thermometer but held the egg up against their eyelid to test the warmth. The eye is very sensitive, and when checked by a thermometer their estimates were found to be correct within a degree.

At the end of the incubation period the eggs were placed on a huge bamboo covered hatching bed covered with mulberry paper especially imported from China. This paper was regarded as essential by the team and certainly proved very successful. Hatchability proved to be about 80%, although the teams insisted that 90 to 95% was achieved in China. The difference was put down to the rather weaker germs in the eggs from the young birds in the laying flock, and also to the excessive humidity in East Bengal.

From the hatchery the birds went into the brooder, sited alongside and capable of receiving 15,000 a week. Each hut had its own native attendant who, to check disease, was never allowed to enter another hut and always used a disinfectant foot bath on entering or leaving.

The young birds were reared on ½ inch wire trays a foot off the ground. The brooders were made from split open 40 gallon drums covered in old tentage and blankets, with a hurricane lamp to provide the heat. Keel disease, Salmonella Gærtner and Litchfield were prevalent, particularly before the rearing farm was started, and losses were heavy.

The ducklings stayed in the brooder for 3 weeks and were then flown to rearing farms near to the hospital centres. Dakotas were used, and the ducklings were carried in wicker crates about  $6\times4$  feet with 4 divisions to stop crushing. The planes were heated from the exhausts, and few casualties resulted unless the plane flew above 8,000 feet, when the birds suffered from oxygen shortage.

On arrival at the rearing farms, all birds were kept in bamboo houses holding about 400 and at least 50 yards apart, to check disease. The houses were kept very clean and strict veterinary precautions taken, but in spite of this, further losses from Keel disease were heavy. The birds were handed over to the R.I.A.S.C. at about 16 weeks, when they weighed 3 to  $3\frac{1}{2}$  lbs.

The cost of each bird was high, about twice the market value, but this was partly due to the mortality rate and the high cost of the bamboo buildings, which were depreciated in value each year by 50%.

In 1945 the disease was checked by the introduction of the laying flock and blood testing with an antigen supplied by the Imperial Veterinary College at Izatnagar, which weeded out the reactors. There is no doubt, however, that disease will always be difficult to overcome in India on concentrated farms, but that with experience they can be made a paying proposition.

They would be particularly useful at the present time to increase the total number of birds held, which has decreased so seriously during the war.

The short review of such a vast undertaking can give little idea of the difficulties encountered by the little band of British officers and other ranks who planned the scheme, and controlled the Indian civilian personnel. In all there were fourteen officers, nearly all of whom are now demobilised and back on their farms, 80 B.O.R's, about 20,000 enrolled Indians and innumerable local civilians.

The victories of the Fourteenth Army and the handing back of East Bengal and Burma to the civil Government has rendered the majority of the farms redundant and they have now been closed.

But the many thousands of tons of fresh vegetable, pork, ducks and fish produced by Local Resources formed an invaluable addition to the rations of our troops, and the whole lay-out formed a valuable experiment in large-scale production in India.

# 16th Light Cavalry to be "All Madrassi".

Oldest regiment of the Indian Armoured Corps, the 16th Light Cavalry, originally an old Madras Army unit but now composed of Jats, Rajputs and Kiam Khanis, will shortly be reconverted into an "All-Madrassi" regiment.

The 16th Light Cavalry was one of the first I.A.C regiments to be selected for nationalisation and the first to go into battle under an Indian commanding officer—Lt.-Col. (now Brigadier) J. N. Chaudhury, O.B.E. More than half its officer establishment is filled by Indians.

During the late war, after a 3,500 miles approach march from the frontier of Baluchistan to the banks of the Irrawaddy the 16th Cavalry plunged headlong into battle against the Japs exactly a month after leaving Quetta. They won, in their first eight days of fighting, four immediate awards for gallantry.

Taking part in the hard-fought Meiktila operations the regiment swept south with the 14th Army's spearheads to link up with 15th Indian Corps patrols outside Rangoon.

## R. Es. Fine Work

The story of the work of the Royal Engineers in the restitution of Holland is one of the finest stories in the history of the British Army. Even while the greatest sorties of the war were being prepared, the Royal Engineers behind our lines were making ready to rescue Holland.

Against the disaster of total flooding they had assembled in Belgium and Northern France almost 500 mobile pumps, millions of sandbags, hundreds of miles of wire, thousands of piles for pontoons, bulldozers, mechanical shovels, cranes and trucks. A floating power station which was a ship that did nothing but make electricity, was berthed in Antwerp harbour. Power lines ran from her to the great Maxton power station, and from there they were sent north across the Belgian border into Holland on the very heels of the Army.

In the end it was the Royal Engineers, in the person of Brigadier Reed, who negotiated between the front lines the agreement with the Germans to allow food into Amsterdam and the west. It was Brigadier Reed and his men who lifted the wrecked bridges from the canals, raised the Bailey Bridges found fuel for the barges, and sent food supplies moving to the starving west with in four days of the signing of the agreement.—Mr. A. D. Divine, B. B. C.

#### MARCH TO FREEDOM

By "CHUSA"

N April 25, 1945 the Japanese began to evacuate four hundred British and American prisoners of war from the Central Gaol, Rangoon, to Thailand, and at 12.00 hours on that day we learned we were to leave by road at 16.00 hours, carrying our own kit.

We were organised in four parties: (1) a working party of 200 B.O.Rs formed into four platoons, each commanded by a B.O., with another officer as second-in-command; (2) a party of British and American officers; (3) a mixed party of British and American Other Ranks, under a B.O.; and (4) British and American airmen who, for alleged acts of indiscriminate bombing, had been subjected to particularly severe treatment and strictly segregated in No. 8 Block of Central Gaol.

Apart from the R.A.F. and U.S.A.A.F., the chief units represented were the Duke of Wellington's Regiment, the K.O.Y.L.I., the West Yorkshire Regiment, Gloucestershire Regiment, Royal Inniskilling Fusiliers, Cameronians, Lancashire Fusiliers, King's Regiment, and R.A.M.C. Indian Army officers in the party belonged to the 7th Rajput, 10th Baluch, and 17th Dogra Regiments, the 2nd, 3rd, 4th, and 5th Gurkha Rifles, Burma Frontier Force and Burma Sappers and Miners.

Although those seriously ill had remained in gaol, almost every man in the contingent had symptoms of beri-beri in one form or another. Few of us had had any footwear for months; few, especially among the officers, had any marching practice since being captured; some had suffered solitary confinement since their capture. We had tried to keep fit, but everyone had progressively lost weight owing to the meagre rations. The total distance covered in the four days' marching was about 65 miles.

Here are extracts from my diary, which I recorded on May 1, the day following that on which we were rescued:

April 25, 1945. Roll call was at 16:00 hours. At 18:30 hours, in true Jap fashion, we were ordered to move, and simultaneously detail teams of men to draw hand-carts on which was loaded the Japs' kit, buckets and wooden tubs for our own food and drink. The result was confusion; each Jap came up with different orders regarding the number of men required for the hand-carts, so that there were men moving constantly between their platoons and the carts, while the sentries tried to count us, getting the numbers different each time.

The administrative arrangements consisted of cooked rice, some beans and pork carried in the hand-carts for the evening meal, while the gaol lorry went ahead with uncooked rations and large empty barrels for boiling water.

We were in four groups: the working party of 200, under me; fit men of No. 6 Block under Nigol Loring; the remainder of the officers under Brigadier Hobson; and, in the rear, the Air Force personnel, under the command of Captain Hunt, of the U.S.A.A.F. The Jap escort comprised an advance guard of one N.C.O. (with bicycle) and three men; a senior N.C.O. with about three men to each group of 50 prisoners, and, I presume, some sort of rearguard. The

Q.M. went ahead with the lorry; the Commandant with his staff marched at the rear. In addition, twelve men and an N.C.O. marched ahead to arrange bivouac areas.

Several of us were wearing canvas rubber-soled shoes thrown at us in the morning; most of us threw them away after a mile or two as they had rubbed and blistered our feet. A few had good boots or shoes, but many started the march barefooted. I had chaplis, made out of the remains of my boots.

We started off down Commissioner Road going East, turned left at the first cross-roads past the Myoma High School, then left again, and on to the Prome Road. At Myoma I saw for the first time the above-ground portion of the astonishing air raid shelter our working parties had taken three months to construct. Above ground it consisted of a pyramid-like structure, 30 feet high, in three tiers, with a flat roof. It looked vast, but the shelter itself was below ground and, I believe, a bare 12 feet square. One or two Japs were standing about; there were some packing cases labelled and ready for loading; and a car or two. But it was obvious that this former Jap Headquarters was virtually deserted.

Columns of smoke were rising in parts of the town. We passed one—a large bonfire in a compound. Some bungalows were wrecked, many undamaged; everywhere compounds were overgrown and hedges untrimmed. Not until we reached Judson College did we see any marked signs of recent bombing. The University buildings were wrecked; innumerable bomb craters were to be seen all over the place, but most bombs had done no material or physical damage.

Our pace was a most welcome slow one. The Japs were quiet and apparently unruffled; hourly halts of ten to fifteen minutes were allowed, and at the end of about eight miles we had an hour's halt for food—rice, beans, and pork fat. Before we started eating, the Commandant, Tazumi, called up all unit and sub-unit commanders. Seated in a chair, which had been carried on the lorry, he addressed us quietly and with every appearance of good humour. He described and demonstrated signals to be used on the march, the action to be taken in case of air attack, and finally, what would happen to anyone attempting or succeeding in escaping.

He explained, not very convincingly, that the Burmans were now cooperating with them, so that no one who succeeded in eluding the Japs was likely to get very far. But there was no threat of collective punishment, or that one in five of those remaining would be executed, as had always been implied before.

At about 01.00 hours we reached our destination—a mange top about 14½ miles from our starting point. This was only about 2 miles over the legal maximum of 20 kilometres laid down in international law.

April 26th.—I slept badly. It wasn't ants which kept me awake; knowing how red ants like mango trees I had put my blanket as far away from a tree trunk as possible, and was amused at those who had rushed to claim a place where they could rest their backs against one. The sentries were noisy, their boots crushing dead leaves and rousing me just when I was dozing off. One incident showed that all Japs are not wholly brutal. Flt./Sgt. Richardson was sleeping close to me, and his bare feet were sticking out of the end of his blanket. One sentry noticed this as he passed. He tiptoed up to him and re-arranged the blanket so as to cover his feet.

At 08.00 hours we fell in for roll call. It took a long time and involved two or three re-counts. My feet were sore and stiff and I walked lamely. An ache in the lower part of my calf kept me awake during the night, and I wondered whether it would wear off or get worse and prevent me marching, in which case I knew what to expect. Roll call over, we breakfasted on the remains of the evening rice and pork.

Changing of the guard followed. It was carried out with parade ground ceremonial, and seemed to take a ridiculously long time. There was a great deal of bowing, interspersed with animal-like grunts, probably expressions of devotion to the Emperor, first by the respective guard commander and then by all members of the guard collectively.

Then followed the changing of the sentries, accompanied again by much grunting and bowing, and included the air sentry, posted some distance from the guard and bivouac area. This man was draped in the individual camouflage net; it had a few leaves stuck into it here and there, but as it did nothing to break up the outline of the man or conceal his shadow, it must have been of little value.

One amusing feature of the guard's arrangements was the Guard Commander's chair, always prominent in the guardhouse of the Central Gaol. The Guard Commander always sat in it, with a sentry on his left, and except in the case of his own officers or N.C.Os, acknowledged salutes in the sitting position. I settled down to rest, but got none. The Japs were running true to form; they seemed not to have thought out plans in advance, so that there were no comprehensive or detailed orders to cover the succeeding 24 hours.

We discussed plans for escaping, but agreed that individual escapes should be forbidden. The attempt when made should be a mass one involving the complete elimination of our escort, so that the lame ducks among us would have a chance of reaching friendly cover. We agreed to wait until the situation was a little clearer, and in any case not to make the attempt before reaching Pegu, and probably not before we had crossed the Sittang River. We knew the European war must be over in a few weeks, if not days, but how long would the Japs survive? If our imprisonment was to last only a few months longer, was it right to incur the casualties if an attempted escape was made, and probably leave those too weak to be condemned to certain death at the hands of an enraged remnant of our escort?

We knew our troops had reached the neighbourhood of Prome, and that fighting had been in progress about Taungup and the Taungup Pass for weeks, but there was no evidence that our men had advanced south of Prome or made further landings south of Taungup. We also knew our troops had reached Taungoo in the Sittang Valley, but did not know whether they had taken the place or advanced beyond it.

Obviously, the sudden evacuation of Rangoon and our own unexpected move showed there had been a surprise development. The Japs had hinted that our destination was Moulmein, which meant that we would have to march north towards our troops until we reached Pegu, when we would turn east. If the Japs had made a bad miscalculation we should probably meet our troops before they could get us across the Sittang River; if they had not mistimed things then the best time to escape would come when the Kerenni Hills would be closest to our route. It amounted to waiting until we reached Pegu.

Several of us had blisters, cuts or sores as a result of the first day's march, and where it had resulted from ill-fitting footwear the M.O. advised marching

in bare feet. This was better advice than it may sound, as most men's feet were hard and horny from going bare-footed for so long. There was a small amount of medical supplies available, and dressings were done whenever possible:

At 18.00 hours we had rice and chutney; half the rice had to be kept for the midnight halt. Chutney was issued on the scale of one bottle to ten men; it was pre-war stock of an Indian merchant in Rangoon, but was good, and the first we had had since our capture. The Japs allowed themselves a bottle between two men, and half a tin of Japanese tinned salmon or tunny fish each.

April 27th.—Last night's march was an agonizing one of 27 miles. One of our number fell out exhausted before we reached Hlegu. He was last seen with Tazumi, the Jap Commandant, bending over and talking to him. When asked this morning for news, Tazumi replied: He's all right. We hope he has been sent back to Rangoon, but I rather fear that he has met the fate meted out by the Japs even to their own people who fall out. Only the knowledge of that alternative kept me going throughout the night—and there were many in like case, most worse than myself. To get going again after a halt was sheer agony. I started the march wearing chaplis. Walking was painful, and even though the pace was barely two miles an hour messages came from the rear asking for a slower pace. But this time the Japs would not permit it.

At the first halt the Commandant came to the head of the column and spoke to me. He was quite friendly and pleasant. Speaking in broken English he asked how long I had been in the Army, and what was the British Army's marching pace. Replying in simple English with a few Japanese (and instinctively Hindustani words) thrown in, I told him. He told me the Japanese Army pace and remarked with a smile that I must find the present pace very slow. I agreed, but said it was necessary as few of us were fit to march at all.

I was now marching with one chapli on and one off, with an absurd idea that by so doing I was to some extent protecting one of my feet. Shortly after dark I was grateful for this absurdity when I nearly trod on a large black scorpion. There was also a good deal of broken glass about, but it wasn't long before I preferred to risk scorpions and broken glass to the uneven gait and discarded the other chapli.

Occasionally we passed an abandoned car; a few loaded lorries passed going north; but as empty lorries going towards Rangoon passed just as frequently there was nothing to suggest the near approach of our troops, until we reached milestone 20. From there onwards to the 21st milestone bridges were prepared for demolition and at other places for land or anti-tank mines. Some holes were 1 ft. in diameter, others 2 ft.; they were deep and looked as though they were prepared for aerial bombs. At 21st milestone we branched right towards Pegu, and almost immediately had an hour's halt for our midnight meal of rice and hot tea.

We hoped we had covered half the distance for the night, but men on the ration lorry said they thought we still had 13 or 14 miles to do. From now on almost every bridge was prepared for demolition. We reached Hlegu shortly before dawn; our hearts sank when we knew there was to be another hour's halt and more tea. Every one was tired and tempers were frayed. The pace was now scarcely more than 1½ m.p.h., but greatly to their credit some men started singing. We reached our bivouac area about 09.30 hours, bedraggled and exhausted,



The area was very confined, and consisted of a smallish compound bounded by a thick bamboo fence in which there were three buildings. The best was taken by the Japs, the smallest allotted as a cookhouse, and into the third was crushed my party of 200. The remaining prisoners were bivouaced under trees. Party commanders were summoned before the Commandant, who expressed his pleasure at our obedience to his orders yesterday, and issued instructions regarding air precautions and other matters for today. One air sentry was to be found from the officer's party, the other by the Japs.

We settled down to our allotted areas. As soon as the cooks could provide it a meal of rice, chutney and boiled gram was ready. The rice was meagre, but we felt the gram gave us sustenance. I fell asleep, but was awakened by noise of aircraft and the shouts of air sentries. I watched, through a gap in the trees, a squadron of Liberators flying low. I had seen them often at 20,000 ft. over Rangoon, but never before had been able to distinguish the four-engine nacelles. Later a squadron of fighters passed over. I could not sleep again and envied some Japs who had never stirred. At about 22.30 hours (Jap time) we resumed our march.

April 28th.—We had an anxious time during last night's march. Night fighters were patrolling the road, but the excitements thus provided seemed to take our minds off our infirmities and the march was less agonizing. It was also much shorter. Abandoned cars and lorries became more frequent; most, if not all, were riddled with bullet holes and burnt out; one was still blazing. Air warnings were frequent and the speed with which most of us, headed by the Japs, threw ourselves into the ditch for cover gave the lie to our physical ailments. Once, when a lorry about 100 yards away started up, the road was cleared in a fraction of a second.

The marching rate was about the same, but the Japs weren't so indulgent, constantly urging us to go faster. We had an hour's halt at about 02-00 hours and hot tea. Arriving at the bivouac area about first light we were drawn up in an open field, with the hand-carts parked nose to tail on the road, while the Commandant reconnoitred some low bamboo and jungle covered hills the other side of the road. Some rough areas were allotted to the various parties, and we moved to them. Fighters came over and took an interest in our hide, and in the hand-carts. They continued to come over throughout the day, but only one plane shot us up, doing no damage.

Most of the men were in a highly nervous state, and with no well defined limits to our area were constantly moving further and further from the road, so that it was impossible to keep a check on their movements. The Japs, too, were suspicious and ordered a roll call. As they were not supervising, we reported all correct without a count in order to avoid disturbing those asleep or resting. We got a little rice and some golden syrup, but that was all for the day. Cooking was forbidden, and there was no water.

The Japs were extraordinarily lax. In our section there was only one sentry and he was posted on the wrong side to prevent escapes. During the afternoon 17 men made off from my party of 200, and altogether 36, including two officers, got away. It was reported that the hand-carts were being discarded, and that the Japs were throwing away kit. Under the eyes of the sentry we helped ourselves from the hand-carts. I found a brand new pair of Jap shorts, medical equipment, a bottle of iodine, quinine tablets, and a bandage.

Convinced the Japs were going to leave us, I collected my party, gave them my views and explained that I wanted them to stick together. Several

Digitized by GOOGIE

men were thus persuaded not to go off, and it was a shock to me when, after dark, the Japs returned and we fell in to continue the march. Many felt my advice had been bad, though I still considered it would be folly to break away until we had passed through Pegu.

The reason for discarding the hand-carts and lorry became apparent when we left the road just outside Pegu and followed the railway line to Wah. At this point we must have been within five miles of our troops. It amazed me that there was no ban on smoking, except when the sound of aircraft was audible. Some Japs sat on the railway line, striking matches and smoking quite unconcernedly.

At the point where we left the road a squadron leader fell out and has never been heard of since. He was at the rear of the column with the Block 8 party. I never saw the incident, but at the halt just before we left the road he either did something he shouldn't have done or didn't do something he ought to have done. The Jap sentry butted him in the stomach with his rifle and knocked him down. When last seen he was lying down with the Jap medical corporal bending over him.

The going was very rough. The dew-sodden grass was soothing to our bare feet, and the bright moon helped us, but patches of a thorny creeper kept cropping up, while the unevenness of hardened paddyfield mud were agonizingly painful. The Japs were unperturbed and unhurried; we had the hour's halt at 03.00 hours, with some uncooked gram, raw onions and jaggery, of which every man carried a handful in his pocket, if he had one. We had had no water for 24 hours, and raw onions did something to assuage my thirst.

The feet of one senior officer had become half-paralysed and he was incapable of walking; assisted by stalwart B.O.Rs he succeeded in reaching what proved to be the last bivouac. Crossing the railway before dawn we moved to a well-wooded hamlet adjoining the Naung Pattava station. I had few thoughts but that of sleep, but eighteen hours were to pass before I got any.

April 29th.—Shortly after dawn party commanders were called for. I saw the Commandant with Matsuda, the interpreter, standing in a small clearing, and hobbled towards them. I expected to hear their reactions to yesterday's escapes, and wasn't reassured when, on approaching them, Hunt of 8 Block and I were told we weren't wanted, leaving only Brigadier Hobson and Nigel Loring to face the music.

The Commandant looked grim, and the interpreter anything but conciliatory. So it was with increasing surprise that I watched the conversation proceed in what appeared to be a very affable and courteous atmosphere. The Commandant wrote something; then the Brigadier sat on a log and also wrote. They then shook hands; the Commandant walked away, followed by a dejected looking Matsuda, resembling one of the Seven Dwarfs.

I went over to the Brigadier, and heard to my great joy that my hunch had been right, and that our escort had gone. The Brigadier, standing on the log, announced that we were free. A great cheer went up, and as I looked through the trees to the east, I saw our late gaolers moving in extended order like bats out of hell towards the next village. The men crowded round each other with mutual congratulations. Then we got down to business, for there was obviously an anxious period ahead before our new-found liberty could be made secure.

The Japs had said the British troops would rescue us in a day or two. We were unarmed, and there was every likelihood that other Japs might take an

interest in us. We had no food, and the attitude of the local inhabitants was doubtful. Our encampment was soon full of villagers. The headmen, promising food and firearms, busied themselves with professions of loyalty and requests for certificates. In the end we got neither arms nor food from this particular village.

Our chief danger came from our own aircraft, which were continuously over the area and certainly unaware of our existence. Orders were therefore issued at once to ensure concealment from air observation; air sentries were posted. With the white Japanese underpants which had been given to us before we left Rangoon we laid out a ground strip message: "White P.O.Ws now free here; send help soon; drop radio". One American attempted to attract the attention of the airmen with a small piece of mirror, but without success.

While laying the message north of the bivouac, a small fight started with rifle fire and an occasional grenade in a village a few hundred yards away. The message party hurriedly moved to the west of the bivouac, screened from the north by a short line of trees, and set out their message afresh. Villagers said the firing came from a small party of Japs who were trying to intimidate them into providing bullocks; this was a new danger, and we speculated as to what would happen if our presence became known.

Food was a vital necessity—we had had no meal for 48 hours and nothing substantial for considerably longer. A few sweet potatoes had been collected, and we pooled onions and gram. While these were being prepared for cooking and we were conferring in a hut, the danger we had anticipated arrived in the shape of four Hurricanes. At first we thought they had come in answer to our signals, but our hopes were soon dashed when we heard the whistle of a bomb and its explosion. We were in for trouble. Bullets zipped through the matting walls of the hut. We decided to disperse and find cover on the ground away from the central part of the bivouac. I had hobbled to the hut, slowly and painfully. As the third plane approached, I moved out of it as fast as I have ever run in my life.

I flung myself in a small depression just as the 'plane's machine guns opened up. A second later Jock Ferrier flung himself in on top of me, bullets splashing all round us. We were still too close to the target, and started off again. I had only reached the railway when the fourth 'plane arrived. I extended myself across the sleepers and alongside one rail, thanking God for my slender proportions but feeling very naked and obvious. I was outside the line of fire, and during the next three or four runs no bullets came near. Then one 'plane, I think, saw our ground strips, dived as though to attack but did not open fire. Immediately afterwards all four 'planes flew off.

A few minutes later the whole area sprang to life. Half-naked men, singly or in small parties, streamed across the paddy field; one party ran to a village five or six miles away before they stopped. For my part I stayed near the railway station, where I heard the Brigadier had been killed. It fell upon me to take charge, but with everybody scattered it wasn't easy to know what was the best thing to do. I went off to think things out. Several joined me, including Major Drudge Coates, whose advice and assistance were invaluable. Nigel Loring sent me a message that he, with Paddy Eccles and one or two others, would remain by the ground strip message, which he had re-arranged into a large S.O.S. But aircraft did not again come near.

To contact our troops was the most important thing; the other was to obtain some food. Major Jean Lutz, of the U.S.A.A.F., volunteered to go to

where our troops were thought to be; we could see supply dropping six erange miles away—conclusive evidence that our troops were there. He set of a his own initiative disguised as a Burman, with a Chinese youth as guida.

We were offered food and accommodation for the 400 prisoners in Kan Gyam village. Making sure there was no treachery afoot, we accepted, a by nightfall about 350 of us were concentrated there. Maung Chan Tun and wife, Ma Kyin, were our hosts; the latter had herself arranged the billeting a cooking. About ten of us were accommodated in the Hoongyi Kyang, a

while we were settling down for the night, Lutz returned; he had brook back an escort of a company of Indian infantry and transport for about Nearly all the P.O.Ws (about 250) in the vicinity of the Hoongyi Kymngs companied him to the waiting transport and I, with one or two others, remain to collect scattered parties in the morning. I settled down, but despite fatige felt wide awake. The tragic end of Brigadier Hobson was difficult to forget; it solitary fatal casualty in circumstances which might well have caused a hundred and I brooded over it far into the night.

April 30th.—Out of sheer exhaustion I dropped asleep. Just after dear Chan Tun woke me with the news that there were small parties of Japs in the village and elsewhere. I looked out of the window and saw a small party being guided by a villager to a part of the village where there were no ex-prisoned as I watched another and larger party emerged. I closed the window huried, but continued watching through a slit at the bottom. They passed so close the I could easily have thrown a stone into their midst, and it was with a feeling of thankfulness that I saw them heading eastwards.

I sent messages to other parties of prisoners lying up, telling them the situation, and asking small parties to join me at the Hooongyi Kyaung; ordering the larger parties to report their position and remain where they were. Squadra Leader Duckenfield sent back: "We have had to turn back because Japs are lying on the edge of a village slightly north of us and command good view of approach to Kyaung. Propose stay here until I hear from you again. Eventually this party joined us. With the help of these village messengers located a party of 80 under Captain MacDonald at the southern end of the village, a party of 75 under Major Wernher, U.S.A.A.F. in a village about half a mix from our previous encampment; and in a more distant village to the south a party of six B.O.Rs who flatly refused to move until assured that the R.A.F. would

It seemed expedient to await developments. The Japs had gone to ground, but I could still see occasional parties. Once a single Jap appeared clothed only in shorts and armed only with a stick, plodding his weary way toward the Sittang river. Later a party of five armed Japs moved wearily in the same direction. One was seen to fall several times, rising again to struggle forward a few paces, until he could do so no longer. When our escort arrived he was seen and riddled by a tommy gun, handled by a stolid Yorkshireman, who was taking no chances.

After rice and pickled vegetables we settled down to wait for our troop. There were two anxious periods; the first when artillery opened up on a village to the west, and the second when a brisk small arms fight flared up in the direction of the railway station. Chan Tun told us that after the bombardment tanks were assaulting the village, and it seemed possible that our village might be the

f our existence and asking for his protection. "Topper" Brown volunteered to deliver it, and set off dressed in Burmese clothes and accompanied by a lillager, just before the small arms battle broke out near the railway station.

To protect ourselves from stray bullets we arranged a barricade of rice askets, happily full, and lay down in a long line on the leeward side. The firing radually died away, and shortly afterwards our lookout reported troops moving bouth across the paddy fields to the east. We recognised them as British troops at the matched them reach the end of the village, where they contacted Captain MacDonald's party. A few minutes later one section arrived at the Hpoongyi Gyaung. "Topper" Brown returned and we were all escorted back to the railway line, watched, no doubt, by small parties of Japs, who wisely refrained from interfering.

Major Roche, of the West Yorkshire Regiment, greeted us, and while waiting for transport, we surveyed the bodies of 38 dead Japs, stripped of their bodies of the villagers. These had been the cause of the small arms fight; suing suicidally from the cover of our previous day's encampment, at a cost of three slight casualties on our side, they had been killed to a man.

But there were none among us who did not feel it was a fitting climax to a long period of callous and humiliating treatment.

# Hong Kong Shanghai Artillery Disbanded

σŁ

After 105 years of service, the Hong Kong Shanghai Royal Artillery are to be disbanded. Originating in 1841, the China Lascars, as the H.K.S.R.A. were then designated, consisted of Madrassis, but later the regiment became the Hong Kong Asiatic Artillery and Sikhs and Punjabi Mussalmans filled the ranks.

In World War I batteries of this regiment took part in the fighting along the line of the Suez Canal, saw much action against the Turks and were engaged at the two battles at Gaza. In 1934 the Hong Kong Brigade, as it was then called, ceased to exist as such and all batteries were formed into the Hong Kong Shanghai Royal Artillery, which title has remained to the present day.

During the late war the H.K.S.R.A's. 23rd Heavy Anti-Aircraft battery helped defend Mersa Matruh. Another of the regiment's batteries, the 24th, served in the Suez Canal Zone and the 15th Heavy A-A Battery was at Aden. Tragedy befell the H.K.S.R.A in the Far East. At Hong Kong and Singapore all its batteries were compelled to capitulate after a gallant fight.

More than 3,000 ex-prisoner-of-war gunners of the H.K.S.R.A have now returned to India. A large number of them are being discharged on medical grounds as a result of what they have suffered at the hands of the Japanese.

### REBUILDING A NAVY

By COLONEL C. FOUCAR, M.C.

SPEAKING generally, the people of India know the Army and what it represents; but even today the Royal Indian Navy means nothing to vast numbers of Indians who have never set eyes on the sea. War affoat is utterly beyond their ken, incomprehensible and terrifying.

In 1939 this ignorance of the Senior Service was even more marked. It was not without its effect on R.I.N. recruiting. Yet, despite initial handicaps far greater than those experienced by the Army, the R.I.N. developed fast. Unlike the Army, it had to get down to the job at once; and the job was well done.

Look at a map of the World. Vital ocean highways meet, as it were, on India's doorstep. Note her vast coastline of some three thousand miles, her few and widely scattered ports. For these reasons a strong navy would seem essential for India. But the 1939 Indian Navy was lamentably small.

The Indian Navy has a long and honourable record; but for the decade following the end of the First Great War the story of the Royal Indian Marine, as it then was, is a sad one. There was drastic retrenchment, and the Service became little more than a survey department and dockyard. Officers and ratings with war experience were ruthlessly axed. The whole burden of India's maritime defence then lay on the Royal Navy at an annual cost to India of about £120,000. Of course it was a ridiculously cheap bargain; but whether it was a good bargain is quite another matter.

There was some improvement in 1928 when the R.I.M. was restored to combatant status; in the following year Indian officer cadets were regularly recruited. The next forward step was in October 1934, when the Royal Indian Navy came into being. With the restoration of the R.I.M. to combatant status, India had undertaken responsibility for her own local naval defence and the provision of certain escort vessels. But the years of financial depression and the needs of the Army prevented anything much being done.

Plans for expansion of personnel and the provision of modern ships were made. These plans were considered and accepted with minor modifications by the Chatfield Committee when it arrived in the country at the end of 1938. Modernisation was to be very gradual and spread over a number of years, finance remaining the delaying factor.

Of the existing five escort vessels, three were out of date and were to be scrapped; the remaining two would be renovated. Four new escort vessels were to be built. The plans covered a general increase of personnel, including depot, training, and other staffs; new training establishments with the requisite equipment were to be provided; reserves of officers and a Fleet Reserve would be formed; local naval defence measures would go forward.

When War overtook us in 1939 little of all this was beyond the paper stage. There were no new escort ships, and all in commission were too slow for their duties. Their main armament was not up to R.N. standards; high angle armament was hopelessly inadequate; they had no ASDIC or echo sounding

pment; their electrical equipment was of the simplest. The torpedo was nown.

The Service, with Headquarters of F.O.C.R.I.N., was based on Bombay, shore activities being centred in the congested Dockyard area. Undoubtedly saved expense by cutting numerous overheads. Thus, centralisation enabled ain officers to emulate the Gilbertian Pooh Bah by filling more than one pointment simultaneously. But the system stored up trouble against the y time when the R.I.N. would be required to justify itself.

In Bombay, F.O.C.R.I.N. was out of close touch with the Commander-Chief, the War Department, the other two Services, and all the Government ces. All these were in Delhi, where major naval questions were decided, en in the absence of naval experts. The Service suffered in consequence; it it was only after eighteen months of war that Headquarters moved to Delhi March 1941. Clearly there were disadvantages in the transfer from Bombay, but they were small when set against the earlier handicaps.

A word about the Dockyard itself, essential adjunct to every navy. In the second it was a repair and refit establishment for the handful of R.I.N. whips and certain R.N. vessels on the East Indian Station and in the Persian Gulf. In these comparatively simple needs it sufficed. But it was small, and very hintely not up to date. After visiting it in 1868 Lord Mayo had noted: "The historiary and all the appurtenances are of the most antiquated pattern".

Certainly in the years that followed the Dockyard did not stand still; but in 1939 there were still in use buildings and plant dating from Lord Mayo's time. The engineering workshops had, in fact, just completed their centenary. Happily the pre-war expansion plan had included the Dockyard. Orders for new plant were placed before September 1939 and were destined to be filled with fair speed.

The R.I.N. personnel strength in September 1939 was 114 officers and ,475 ratings. In the R.I.N.V.R. were 37 officers; there were no men in the secently sanctioned Fleet Reserve. Unlike the Indian Army, which unwillingly seceived a breathing space of many months, the R.I.N. was immediately required to place itself on a war footing. Local naval defence plans contemplated the prompt requisitioning, fitting out, and manning of numerous ships for antisubmarine and mine sweeping duties; the Examination Service at all defended ports had to be operated; the Naval Control Service, the Sea Transport Service, Port War Signal Stations and other essential activities could not be delayed.

It is impossible here to detail the many tasks undertaken by the then diminutive R.I.N., but something of their magnitude may be judged by the fact that in September 1939 no less than 31 auxiliary vessels were taken up. Civil shippard facilities and the R.I.N. Dockyard were fully employed. By mid-October fourteen ships were ready for duty; all were at their war stations by the end of the year. Of course before hostilities ended the Service had grown far greater; but for a navy which began the war with a strength of some 1,600 officers and ratings this was no mean feat.

The resources of the Dockyard were heavily strained. First it handled certain R.N. ships and the escort vessels of the R.I.N. All these were ready for war on September 3rd. Work then began on auxiliaries; eight of them were at sea by October 1st. Armed merchant cruisers were being turned out just as quickly as by the modern shipyards of Belfast. From those hectic months in the autumn of 1939 the Dockyard never looked back. It provided supervision for work undertaken in the commercial docks; began the degaussing of ships;

manufactured minesweeping and other gear; controlled all the electrical installation for requisitioned ships. Its labour force expanded fast, and there were all the attendant troubles of competition with civil employers, shortages of skilled men, and lack of supervisors. Added to this was the cramped condition of the Dockyard area itself, and the struggle to modernise without holding up vital work.

However, the biggest problem in those early days of the war was the manning of requisitioned ships. They were useless without crews, and without a Fleet Reserve the R.I.N. had neither officers nor men to spare. Training in seamanship, let alone naval seamanship with its numerous specialised tasks, is a long process. But those auxiliaries had to be manned at once. The only possible source of supply was the merchant service, and here there was keen competition from the shipping companies. The war meant increased work for ships of all kinds; often, the R.I.N. had to be content with the second best in men.

Those merchant seamen were not of the standard usually recruited for the R.I.N., many were illiterate and unfitted for specialist training such as gunnery. But the H.O. (hostilities only) ratings filled an urgent need; they stood loyally by their work; without them the R.I.N. could not have functioned in the first period of strain. By the end of 1939 they had doubled the strength of the Service. Yet, if efficiency was to be maintained, a better type of man had to be recruited and properly trained.

In pre-war days the R.I.N. had very rightly insisted on a high standard of training both for officers and ratings. Officers were generally trained as special entry cadets with the Royal Navy since no training facilities for officers existed in India. The greater part of the ratings had engaged as boys. On the hulk H.M.I.S. Dalhousie, stationed at Bombay, these lads were trained and carefully educated. Passing out, they undertook an initial period of ten years active service as continuous service ratings.

H.M.I.S. Dalhousie was not an ideal establishment; but in 1939 the building of a new school, H.M.I.S. Bahadur, began at Karachi. In 1938, too, the recruiting of special service ratings opened. These men of the educated type were required for the enlarged R.I.N. contemplated by the expansion plan. A depot for them was to be provided on the site of Bombay Castle; but when war came they were still housed in the R.I.N. Barracks inside the Dockyard.

At that time the only other training establishments, all within the Dock-yard, were the Signal School, Gunnery School, Mechanical Training Establishment and the Anti-Submarine School. Notable omissions from the list were torpedo, electrical and radar schools. Personnel employed on instructional duties numbered some sixteen officers, and a dozen warrant officers.

On the impact of war the long term policy was to increase the recruiting of special service men who, in time, would replace H.O. ratings and man the new ships that were being built. The main difficulties were the finding of instructors and equipment, and the situation created by the centralising of all activities within the Dockyard. On the other hand, two of the main bugbears of expansion faced by the Army were avoided. All recruits had to know English or Urdu; and the R.I.N. had always eschewed anything akin to the class system of the Army which, of course, could not exist aboard ship.

Radar instruction furnishes a good example of the training problems encountered. In 1939 radar was in its infancy; it was not until some three years later that the R.I.N. had qualified radar officers. The first instructor was a wireless telegraphist who was no expert. His equipment was a single early type

set, and another that was incomplete. Later a qualified officer was obtained from the Admiralty. It was under conditions such as these that the R.I.N. strove, and strove successfully, to expand.

At first new accommodation was planned on far too modest a scale. That there must be a break out of the narrow bounds of the Dockyard had been foreseen in 1938, yet the mistake was made in the early wartime expansion plans of not looking far enough ahead. The effects were hampering, and false economy proved more expensive in the long run. The intake of recruits had to be checked as there was no housing for more men. Training establishments moving out of their original Dockyard quarters found new homes; rapidly outgrew them; had to go elsewhere. Tales of cramped and makeshift quarters deterred would-be recruits; morale was affected; training was delayed and otherwise suffered.

H.M.I.S. BAHADUR opened in mid-1940, and the boy's school moved to Karachi. H.M.I.S. Dalhousie then became a training establishment for special service ratings. It was soon outgrown; recruiting was restricted; another move was made to Castle Barracks when they were ready; again, still more accommodation was required. In 1942 a temporary establishment, H.M.I.S. KHANJAR, was commissioned at Varsova, but even this could not cope with the recruits required. The problem was not finally solved until the opening of H.M.I.S. ARBAR at Kolshet in 1944. This establishment has instructional facilities for 2,500 recruits and is thoroughly up to date.

BAHADUR at Karachi became inadequate for the boys entry. It had to be enlarged. Then another establishment for junior boys was required. It was a similar tale for the Gunnery, Torpedo and Electrical Training and other establishments. However, there eventually grew up a series of thoroughly modern and excellently equipped schools with qualified instructors. The original shortcomings had been conquered, and by 1945 R.I.N. training compared favourably with that of any other navy.

A great advance was the formation in 1945 of a sea training flotilla of some of the older sloops and other vessels, and the provision of a sea training ship for boys. The previous lack of sea training in modern vessels had been a great drawback. Officers and ratings cannot be produced ashore, so all ranks had perforce to acquire much of their learning on active service affoat. Efficiency had suffered, as it suffered with the employment of H.O. ratings; but there was no alternative.

Officers training presented peculiar difficulties. With no pre-war organisation for it, the subject had to be tackled, as it were, from behind scratch. Until 1943 there was no room in barracks for reserve officers under training; they were in billets, and the distractions of Bombay were many. A series of short intensive courses gave them the rudiments of their new profession, but most of their real training was effected on service. The disadvantages of this state of affairs are manifest.

Much space has been given to this subject of training, but the full achievement of the R.I.N. cannot be appreciated unless there is a realisation of the tremendous task it faced in building up its personnel. Fortunately, by the time that Japan entered the arena the worst of the Indian Navy's teething troubles had been surmounted. Possibly it would be more correct to say that they were mown, and proper methods of treatment in hand. This was as well, for with the Japanese in Indian waters the R.I.N. faced many fresh problems.

For its new craft the R.I.N. was almost wholly dependent on overseas shipbuilding facilities. Some of the new sloops and minesweepers were already in commission by the end of 1941, others were to follow. New lesser craft had also been added to the Service. All these were thoroughly modern in armament and electrical and other equipment. To combat the Japanese in the Bay of Bengal and in Burma waters, coastal force flotillas were raised. These comprised Fairmiles and H.D.M.Ls. These small ships with their aggressive role did much to improve morale. There is no room here to speak of their work, but they achieved great distinction in operations against the Japanese.

The formation of the Landing Craft Wing was another development brought about by the fight against Japan. Here there were peculiar problems. Personnel came from the Army. Many of these soldiers knew neither Urdu ner English and, for the first time, the R.I.N. met the language problem. Communal distinctions over feeding were another new puzzle for the Senior Service. Unhandiness, resentment of the rapid promotion of some of these newcomers, and the many other trials attendant on the large-scale conversion of soldiers into sailors were further troubles. An acute shortage of landing craft until comparatively late in the war did much to delay training.

With the fall of our possessions in the Far East, the Dockyard assumed a new importance. It was now the only Allied Naval Dockyard between those of Alexandria and Simonstown in Africa and the distant bases of Australia. By 1942 it was rid of some of its encumbrances; by 1944, it had been vastly enlarged and modernised; the labour strength had risen by about six hundred per cent. the output per man was probably lower than in the United Kingdom but, despite the shortage of skilled labour and reliable supervision, the standard of workmarship was excellent. Heavier and more complex work than anything ever previously undertaken in any Indian shipyard had been achieved, and this by men who for the first time were handling modern warships.

The fall of Singapore and the loss of its W/T station, threw upon India a great share in maintaining a vital link in the Imperial communications system. Naval wireless stations had to be reorganised, extended and modernised. Equipment for this was speedily forthcoming, but again the greatest problem lay in the recruitment of adequate educated personnel. By 1944, this had been largely overcome; Calcutta and Bombay Fort W/T stations had been greatly developed; and the Indian wireless chain was complete, providing valuable links with Whitehall, South Africa, and the South-West Pacific area.

Sea Transport was another aspect of R.I.N. work which advanced greatly. The Sea Transport service is one of the Navy's most important duties, and the one most closely affecting the other two Services. It is responsible for the shipment overseas of all troops, animals, vehicles and stores of all kinds. On September 3, 1939, the whole organisation consisted of seven officers, sufficient to deal with the normal peace-time trooping work. By 1944, the establishment consisted of 97 persons, spread round all the defended ports, with an administrative and operational headquarters at New Delhi.

The work had, of course, increased many times over. The flow of men and supplies into India on the west coast, and the flow out of India to Malaya and Burma in 1941 and early 1942, and again in 1944-45, was very great. India's ports handled more shipping than ever before. The main difficulty in the development of the Sea Transport organisation lay in the dearth of experienced officers, and it was not really until late 1943, when a number of officers

with planning and operational experience in the United Kingdom and the Middle East were obtained from the Admiralty, that the manning difficulties eased.

The story of the operational work carried out by the R.I.N. remains for other pens. Suffice to say that the Service took an active part not only in Indian waters, off the coast of Burma and in the Red Sea, but was represented in the more distant theatres of the Mediterranean and the Atlantic. All that this article sets out to do is to give some indication of what was achieved in building up the Service which in 1939 was ill-equipped in ships and other essentials, and lacking in personnel. The obstacles in the way of expansion were formidable. That they were triumphantly overcome is to the credit of those officers who planned for the future, doggedly carried on the work of training, and refused to be defeated by circumstances.

Results may be briefly summarised by a few figures. By mid-1945 the manning strength had risen to over 3,000 commissioned and warrant officers and nearly 28,000 ratings; over 100 shore establishments comprising various head-quarters, coastal force and local naval defence bases, the Naval Control Service, the Sea Transport Service, training establishments, R.I.N. hospital, numerous wireless stations and many other organisations were in being; the ships in commission in 1939, including nearly all the original auxiliaries, had either entirely vanished from the scene or were employed for training and similar purposes.

Amongst the new ships were 6 sloops, 2 frigates, 3 corvettes, 16 mine-sweepers, 16 trawlers, 2 motor minesweepers, 5 coastal force flotillas of M.Ls., and the numerous vessels of the Landing Craft Wing including a landing ship, infantry, large. Other new ships were about to be commissioned. Cruisers were visualised for the near future.

The R.I.N. has travelled fast and far in the last six years; it has learnt many lessons that must be of the greatest importance in the time ahead. Adequate reserves, ample elbow room for all shore establishments, the necessity of keeping abreast of naval developments are some of these. Another is the assumption of a greater share in the burden of India's naval defence.

Providence has given to India strong ramparts and a wide moat. On this occasion the tide of war swept up to her boundaries, and then was halted. Next time, perhaps, the tide will be more difficult to stem. India, geographically and politically, stands at a very important crossways. She must be wise both as to her friends and her defences. She cannot afford to neglect her moat.

# General Godwin-Austen.

Lieut.-General A. R. Godwin-Austen, P.A.O. in India, who was awarded the K.C.S.I., in the King's Birthday Honours List, has been promoted to the rank of General. During the first World War he served in Gallipoli, Egypt and Mesopotamia, won the M.C. and was mentioned in dispatches; in the late war he commanded the 8th British Division in Palestine and Trans-Jordan, later took over the 12th East African Division which eventually smashed the Italian forces in Abyssinia, and then became commander of the newly-formed 13th Corps in the Libyan Desert.

The 13th fought and won the battle of Sidi Rezegh, relieved Tobruk and drove Rommel's forces from Derna and Benghazi to Agheila. It was at Tobruk that General Godwin-Austen wrote his laconic message: "Tobruk relieved but not more than I am", which still remains a classic in despatches from the firing line.

### DESTRUCTIVE COMBAT OR SUBVERSIVE WAR?

### By Colonel M. C. Perceval-Price

THE particular methods which brought about the final defeat of Japan and of Germany have made us inclined to concentrate our attention and consideration on methods of causing mass destruction of material, such as the atomic bomb and saturation air raids. Speculation on the future of war has become focussed on those weapons and methods which completed the destruction of our enemies, without consideration of the conditions which made them so effective. It may be wise to consider whether this restricted form of speculation is justified or prudent.

The particular weapon which completed the destruction of the SCHARN-HORST was a torpedo fired from a cruiser; but in speculating on the future role of battleships in Naval warfare we do not confine ourselves to forecasts of bigger and better torpedoes and estimates of the efficiency of defensive measures against them. These things are considered in relation to the weapons and tactics which led up to the opportunity of sending the SCHARNHORST to the bottom with a torpedo.

If the war had ended after the fall of Crete we would probably have found military thought centring round the development of airborne operations to the exclusion of other forms of fighting; or if it had ended after the fall of Tripoli our speculation would have been mainly concerned with the development of tanks, mines or self-propelled guns. There is a natural mental perspective which causes events which are close to us to hide the background.

The trend of development towards mass destruction of material has blinded us to other trends, and caused us to overlook other developments. This is partly because such mass destruction took a large part in the final defeat of our enemies, and partly because the effects of it still remain unpleasantly evident even to the victors, who have experienced this destruction is smaller measure. This development of destruction is not confined to the last war, but it has only become evident in the twentieth century. The South African and Franco-Prussian Wars were not noticeably more destructive than the Crimean or Napoleonic Wars. Nor were the campaigns fought in India by 'John' Company more destructive than those fought in the time of the Moghuls—rather the reverse.

Previous trends of military development towards the massing of particular weapons or the mass employment of particular weapons have occurred, but have been abandoned because of their very tendency to mass employment. In 1913 and 1914 the tendency was to mass as many riflemen in the front line as possible, with reserves ready immediately to take the place of those who become casualties. It was felt that the more men there were the more rifles there would be, and the more rifles there were the more bullets there would be. Obviously the more bullets there were the fewer enemy would there be left alive. Yet this mass of musketeers was soon found to be a vulnerable target without effective hitting power. They were vulnerable because of their concentration, and they were ineffective because although their weapons were lethal, they

Digitized by GOOGIC

were not given the chances that they had expected of aiming them at the enemy.

Again in 1917 the trend of development was towards longer and longer bombardments and heavier and heavier barrages. Yet this mass employment of artillery was found to be tactically ineffective on account of the very efficiency of its powers of mass destruction. True, the emplacements, personnel and morale of the enemy were to a considerable extent destroyed; but so also was the power of tactical exploitation destroyed owing to the state to which the ground was reduced.

Is it not possible that an effort to obtain even greater destruction of material by atomic bombs, rockets and saturation air raids may also prove ineffective for similar reasons?

Every missile, whether it be rocket propelled, remote controlled, airborne or dependent on atomic energy, has to start from somewhere. Research may therefore be directed towards finding a means of exploding or destroying these missiles at or close to the point of departure. The problem is not one of conveying a large weight of dangerous material accurately to the target. It is a question of setting up, within effective range of the enemy's missiles, the necessary vibration to detonate the explosive, or of creating the necessary electrical or atomic conditions to cause the release of the atomic energy in the bomb or shell.

With the radar aids of the future to assist in the location of the enemy's weapons and missiles, and with improvements in remote control by wireless it should not prove impossible to achieve this. Bearing in mind that a bomb already exists which can be made to follow a moving target, it does not seem a fanciful dream that we should be able to explode at any rate a small proportion of the enemy's missiles at their point of departure.

If this should be achieved, the more powerful the missile the more dangerous will it be to the firer. A premature with a 25 pounder may be unpleasant, but a premature with an atomic projectile is a catastrophe. Assuming development on these lines, the firer of destructive missiles finds himself in much the same position as the rifleman of 1914 in that he is both vulnerable and ineffective. The bigger and more destructive his missiles become and the more that he masses them, the more vulnerable does he become. Nor will his missiles be effective, because although they will be destructive and lethal, he will not be given the opportunities that he had hoped for to launch them at his target.

After 1914 the rifleman hid himself in dugouts and pillboxes and dispersed himself to reduce his vulnerability. He pinned his hopes on getting himself into the enemy's positions by surprise or with the aid of weapons such as tanks. It is quite possible that in the future we may find the firers of rockets and those that launch atomic missiles, trying to disperse themselves or conceal themselves from radar detection, and trying to get within range of the enemy's vital targets by making use of some form of vehicle which will protect the missiles from the vibrations to which they are vulnerable. But what is comparatively easy with a rifleman is by no means easy with a rocket launching platform or with a jet propelled plane.

Just as the employment of massed artillery in 1917 destroyed the possibilities of tactical exploitation, so also does the employment of a mass of modern highly destructive missiles destroy the possibilities of strategic and political exploitation. After two very severe lessons the world may possibly realise that

the physical and economic condition of a defeated country is of great important to the victor. It is just as important, in fact, as the condition of the energy roads and bridges are to a victorious army after a break-through. Unfortunately or fortunately, the economic condition of one country now affects all other countries who normally have dealings with it, and very considerably affects any nation whose demands on it are sufficiently great to warrant a war in order to obtain them.

The further that we learn to look ahead the more will we hesitate to use weapons which cause mass destruction. The tendency will be to try and get less powerful weapons into the enemy's country by some means or other, so at to force a decision without causing the destruction of too great a part of the enemy's economy and physical resources. In spite of this tendency no one will deny that the use of destructive combat, or the threat of its use, may have a very big effect on any future war. If we are unfortunate enough to be unable to avoid another large war it may not, however, be altogether dominated by weapons of mass destruction. From what has been said above, it appears quite possible that by the time that the memory of this war has become sufficiently dim to make another major war possible, such weapons may be largely discarded in favour of other methods of warfare.

What other trends of development in warfare are there which can be found by investigation and examination of recent history?

Before investigating trends which may become more pronounced it is advisable to go back to the fundamental reasons for war as opposed to combit. The only reason for going to war is to force another nation to do something which we cannot persuade it to do by any other means. A robber who wants another man's watch, uses force or threats of force, if he estimates that the owner of the watch cannot be made to part with it by persuasion. If the robber is sufficiently ruthless he will not hesitate to kill the owner in order to gain possession of it. But if the only effective force is a grenade which injures both the owner and the robber and completely destroys the watch, then any but the most foolish robber will pause to consider whether he cannot get the watch by some other means.

This roughly represents the state which we have reached to-day. The robber of to-morrow who will hesitate to use the destructive grenade will seek some other means of evading the owner's defences and of causing him pain without risking injury to himself or the watch. Were the robber able by some means to cause the owner of the watch acute toothache or violent indigestion, he could soon persuade him to part with his watch if by doing so he obtained immediate relief.

If we examine the history of the war and of the world immediately before and after it, a tendency to work in this very way becomes evident. Hitler's technique in dealing with Austria and Danzig was precisely on these lines. He worked from inside the country which was his objective, and caused acute discomfort and internal upheaval, which he hoped would force acceptance of his demands. In the case of Austria, the stomach trouble caused the surrender of the watch which Hitler coveted.

During the war we have seen effective work done by resistance movements inside occupied countries. The Maquis, for instance, were able to do very much more than similar movements have been able to do in the past. One of the chief reasons for this was the application of modern methods of communication to the organisation of this resistance movement. Another reason was the

vulnerability of the industrial economy and transport systems of a highly developed country to sabotage.

In less developed countries the resistance movements were also successful, notably in Yugo-Slavia and Crete. Timing and co-ordination are required to get the best results and to avoid such tragedies as the premature rising of the Poles in Warsaw. But it is modern wir less which provides the means of achieving this timing and co-ordination, and it is reasonable to suppose that in the future we may see even better organised and more effective resistance movements.

In these examples we have discovered another trend of military development very different to that which leads to more and more destruction of material. Subversive war is probably the best name for it; and it is important that we should clearly realise that it is war. Because war in the past has consisted mainly of combat, the soldier is inclined to neglect the consideration of other methods of using force to obtain a favourable decision from the enemy. Subversive war may not accord with accepted martial traditions, but then neither did gunpowder accord with the accepted martial traditions of the pre-gunpowder era.

But how do these two tr nds, towards destructive combat and towards subversive war, react on one another? Having suggested that we may be confining our thought too much to the methods and effects of destructive combat, we must not fall into a similar error and neglect all consideration of such destruction.

What more effective method of defence against weapons of destructive combat is there than to place plenty of important enemy personnel at the target? There are two ways of doing this, both of which are intimately connected with the tendency that we have noticed of achieving results by subversive activities. The first method is to conduct the struggle in the enemy's own country without removing his forces or government, and without breaking off diplomatic relations with him. A coup  $d\epsilon tat$ , followed by the establishment of a new government prepared to meet the demands made upon it, is the successful conclusion to be hoped for from this method. The second method is to invite the enemy into one's own country and there defeat him, without removing him, by making conditions so unbearable for him that he is prepared to withdraw on any reasonable terms. In neither case is the enemy given an opportunity to use weapons of mass destruction against the force which is causing him to change his national policy and make concessions.

The first method mentioned in the previous paragraph is no new pheno-There have been many cases in history of revolutions and fifth columns which have received valuable assistance from an outside Power. The initiative has, however, usually come from the revolutionaries who have sought external aid and have been prepared to buy it by promises of concessions if the revolution should prove successful. There is no reason why the initiative should not come from outside, instead from inside the country. Practically every nation has its discontented elements, and a number of those who have nothing to lose and every hope of gain by an overthrow of the existing government. Nor are there many nations in which the existing regime cannot be brought into disrepute by the help of bribery and corruption. The object of what we may term the underhand aggressor must therefore be to foster and increase such discontented elements by the use of money, the press and of broadcasting; to weld together and organise them by the provision of means of communication and of trained leaders and administrators; and finally to train and arm them so that a successful coup d'etat can be accomplished. Digitized by Google This is not a process which can be carried out quickly or without very considerable effort and expense. But if we recognise that this process is war and that the alternative is a "slogging match" with terribly destructive purches by each side, it will be realised that the effort and expense required to achieve the result by subversive activities are vastly less than those required by the "slogging match". Although it is true that the process of fostering artificial revolution is a very slow one, at the end of it the aggressor is in a position to extract the desired concessions from a country whose industrial economy and machinery of administration have not been unduly damaged. Moreover, some economic penetration will probably have already been achieved by the aggressor. In fact the conditions which are finally desired are probably reached quicker by underhand aggression than by destructive combat.

Another factor to be considered is the existence of the U.N.O. and the possible threat of destructive combat waged by forces under U.N.O. control. The aggressor who wages subversive war avoids this threat. In fact, if he is really skilful he may even gain the support of the U.N.O. A careful education of world opinion and well directed propaganda may well succeed in representing the revolution which the aggressor has fostered as the "will of the people", and with the help of a certain amount of gold, voting statistics can be made to confirm this. The "rigged" plebiscite is a comparatively easy concession to make to those who render lip service to democracy.

The second method of placing the enemy on his own target, namely inviting him into one's own country, sounds far from a satisfactory method of warfare, or even of self-defence. It is, in fact, a form of national Satyagraha, but though as a whole passive, it can be very active in detail. The degree of success achieved by resistance movements in occupied countries has shown the possibilities of this form of warfare even when hastily organised and dependent to a large extent on help from outside. But in the case of a deliberate resort to a resistance movement by a sovereign state the movement can be thoroughly organised beforehand, hidden stores of explosives, food and weapons can be prepared and equipment for efficient communication can be got ready. The forces to take part can be trained in peacetime without this training being handicapped by the constant danger of discovery by the occupying power.

How effective can such a method of warfare be, even with all the advantages of previous planning and organisation? In Ireland in the early twenties these methods forced England to make a treaty which granted most of the demands of Southern Ireland. No doubt there were other factors which helped to bring about the signing of this treaty, but there are always many factors which help to bring about the successful conclusion of a war. The fact remains that from the point of view of the South of Ireland, the outcome of the struggle was reasonably successful and that the method of applying force that they used was internal resistance within their own country.

It is possibly not even essential to have the whole of the population in support of the resistance movement, although of course such support greatly simplifies the task. A minority, by adopting the methods of American gangsters, can gain control of local Government and with careful preparation beforehand there seems every possibility that a minority could, by the same gangster methods, gain control of the Government of a country, especially one which was controlled by foreigners.

Of course, the answer of a ruthless enemy to an internal resistance movement is to take drastic reprisals against the civilian population. A nation that plans the adoption of internal resistance as a form of war must accept this risk. The casualties to the civilian population from this cause are likely to be less than those caused by a war of destructive combat. If these two forms of war are the only alternatives, there seems to be no reason for discarding subversive warfare in one's own country on account of the risk of reprisals on the civilian population. The failure of the Nazis to stamp out resistance movements by the ruthless methods that they used shows that, provided that morale remains high, internal resistance movements cannot be suppressed by such means.

This method of inviting an enemy into one's own country is naturally only a defensive policy, but let us consider the alternatives open to a nation with few resources available for engaging in destructive combat, when threatened by a nation with many such resources. The first possible course is to recognise defeat and to agree to the demands of the better armed nation. This course does at least preserve the weaker nation intact and its industrial economy and machinery of administration is not destroyed. The weaker nation only survives, however, as a slave, and the aggressor would, no doubt, take steps to see that it remains so.

The second course is to engage in destructive combat with the stronger nation. At best, the stronger nation may decide, after a period, that it does not pay to continue the combat. Even so, the weaker nation will emerge with its industrial economy severely injured, with heavy loss of life to civilians as well as to its armed forces, and with its standard of life lowered. At worst, it may find itself in addition a slave nation, or even be dismembered and find that it no longer exists as a nation at all.

The third course is to put its trust in the U.N.O. and in forces controlled by the U.N.O. This we may hope will be an effective course. It is quite possible, however, that before the necessary conferences can be held and the forces of the U.N.O. can make themselves effective, the weaker nation may find itself engaged in combat with the aggressor. Even if the final outcome of such combat is unfavourable to the aggressor, due to the intervention of the U.N.O. forces, the weaker nation will still finish with its economy impaired, a considerable toll of casualties, and a lower standard of life.

The fourth course is that which we have suggested as a possibility, namely an effort to defeat the aggressor by a previously organised resistance movement. This may, of course, be combined with efforts to arrange intervention by the U.N.O.

There are evidently definite advantages in this method of subversive warfare. To be really effective it requires loyal support from the bulk of the nation, and the morale of the nation must be high and capable of standing up to reprisals on the civilian population. But all measures of national defence ultimately depend on the morale of the nation and on its determination to preserve its national rights at all costs. Preparation for defence by internal resistance would include measures of education designed to raise the morale of the nation and to prepare it for an ordeal. Recent dictators have made similar preparations very effectively, even though their objects may have been very different to the defence of the nation's legitimate rights.

We have already outlined a possible means of aggression by subversive warfare, and we must now consider methods of defence against such aggression. These would also consist largely of education and measures designed to raise

the morale of the nation. As every discontented section of the population work constitute a possible basis for subversive aggression, defence measures work also include the removal of grievances to the greatest extent possible. Nevertheless there will always be a certain number of those whose nature it is to be perpetually "against the Government".

George Birmingham tells an amusing story of a party of Irish gusan who enlisted in the ranks of the Republicans in the Spanish Civil War, and found to their horror that a section of the world press described them as "Loyalist". Such an indignity was hardly to be supported, and the party promptly stated to fraternise with the opposite side. This is hardly a practical method of dealing with such malcontents, but it does show that the approach to the problem must be psychological. To put these habitual rebels into prison tends to make them into martyrs and heroes and achieves little.

This article has tried to show that the development of weapons caused mass destruction of material may not be the only development of the future in the ever-changing methods of warfare. It has drawn attention to developments in subversive warfare which have been taking place, and suggested that these developments may merit greater study than those of destructive combat. But are these matters the concern of the fighting Services? It is submitted that they most certainly should be. If the task of the Services is to prepare for a resort to force by the nation, should this prove necessary, then the Services must consider all methods of using force and train for them.

How convenient it would be to fight one's war in someone else's country, more especially in the enemy's country? Surely this is an object which the Services should try to achieve by study and training. The Civil War in Spain is considered by many to have been the first round in the struggle between Russi and the Axis Powers. It would have been worth a very heavy expenditure of national resources by Russia if the could have renewed the struggle in Spain or better still Germany. As nations have resorted to subversive warfare in recent years there is every reason to suppose that these methods will be tried again. They certainly deserve very much more study by the Services than they received before the war.

It may be too much to hope that there will be no more war, but possibly we may hope that there will be no more destructive combat and we may find ourselves dealing with subversive warfare instead. Would this development of subversive warfare be a bad thing? It has been suggested that the best methods of defence against it are to educate the nation, raise its morale and its standard of living and remove grievances. When defence expenditure is diverted from the manufacture of destructive weapons to such objects as these we shall be several steps nearer to Utopia.

## Giant British Airliner

Brabazon I, Britain's biggest and most advanced land plane yet developed is now taking shape. Four of the type have been ordered. Its ornising speeds will be 250 m.p.h. for the one which will be powered by orthodox engines, and 350 m.p.h. for the other three, which will be jet propelled. The first of the type is expected to be in operation by April, 1947; it will accommodate 80 people in berths, and 180 with seats.

### THE MYSTERY OF HENRY FITZCLARENCE

By "HYDERABAD"

KING William the Fourth had by Mrs. Dorothea Jordan five sons. One entered the Navy, and another the Church. The remaining three brothers all served in the Army in India, and two of them died here.

Of the three soldier FitzClarences, the one who held the highest military office was Frederick—Lieutenant-General Lord Frederick FitzClarence, G.C.H., who became Commander-in-Chief of the Bombay Army in November 1852 and died on October 30, 1854 at Purandhar, the ancient Maratha fortress near Poona which was then and is still used in a small way as a hill-station and military sanitarium. Near his grave there, which I have seen, is the church which was, I believe, built by his widow as a memorial to him.

The next most distinguished was George, who was created Earl of Munster in 1831 after his father's accession to the throne in the previous year. He reached the rank of major-general, and committed suicide in 1842.

Henry, the third of the brothers, has always been something of a mystery. For a number of years I have been trying to clear up certain questions connected with him, and at last I have attained a good measure of success.

The usual reference books have always been vague about him. Recent editions of Burke's Peerage omit him altogether, though they list his four brothers and five sisters. Older peerages are odd. Lodge's Peerage for 1832 calls him a Captain, R. N., and states that he died in India in 1818; but in the 1857 edition this is corrected to 87th Foot and 1817. The new edition of the monumental and highly authoritative Complete Peerage states that he died in India, but gives no date or place. His death is announced, without any details, in the Gentleman's Magazine for July 1818; and the Army List for May 1818 also shows him amongst the "Deaths" but no date or place is given.

My attention was first drawn to him about 1931 by the late Sir Evan Cotton, then the foremost authority on the history and genealogy of the European in India. He had come across, in Scenes and Characteristics of Hindostan by Emma Roberts (1837, Vol. I, p. 258) a passage which refers to "a bloken column at Allahabad" which marks "the resting-place of a FitzClarence", the brother of Lord Munster.

With his usual enthusiasm and zeal, Sir Evan took up this clue. It was obvious that the only Fitzclarence to whom it could refer was Henry. He wrote to the Chaplain of Allahabad, who reported that there was no trace of the "broken column," and no entry in the burial register. He spoke to me—I had recently visited the old (Kydganj) cemetery at Allahabad, and had taken notes of interesting epitaphs, but there was no Fitzclarence amongst them, and I should certainly have copied it if there had been. He inspected (I think) the copies of burial registers at the India Office, but without success. And finally he wrote to the then Lord Munster, who replied that to the best of his knowledge Henry was drowned at sea, but he could not say how, when or where.

There the matter rested for a time. Not long after Sir Evan Cotton's death I came across a newly-published reference to George and Henry, which I must

introduce by some details of their military careers.

Both were originally officers in the 10th Hussars in the Peninsula, and as such played a prominent part in the colossal row in the regiment which culminated in the trial by court-martial of the commanding officer, Colonel Quentin, in 1814.

(A printed copy of the proceedings of this trial is in the library of the Judge Advocate-General in India). Both brothers were important witnesses for the prosecution, but Quentin was acquitted of the greater and graver portion of the charges against him—which in part amounted to allegations of cowardice—and the Prince Regent in stern terms announced in a General Order that the officers of the regiment were to be dispersed, so as to break up the factions which had formed.

In consequence of this edict George and Henry FitzClarence were both "banished" to India, George being gazetted as Captain to the 24th Light Dragoons with effect from 12th November 1814, and Henry as Lieutenant to the 22nd Light Dragoons from the same day. As a matter of fact, the Governor-General at this time (the Marquess of Hastings, formerly the Earl of Moira) had previously offered to take them out to India on his staff. Before appointment to India, Moira had for some years held the office of Master-General of the Ordnance, and one of the Ordnance subordinates was a certain Thomas Alsop. From two letters printed by the Royal Commission on Historical Manuscripts (Report on the MSS. of R. R. Hastings, 1934, Vol. III, p. 300) it is clear that the then Duke of Clarence first asked Moira for an appointment in India for Alsop—who was married to one of Mrs. Jordan's five children by previous connexions—and that Moira then offered to take out George and Henry to India.

Neither letter is dated, but the Editor of the *Report* assigns both to 1812 or 1813. They run thus:—

"To a man of Your Lordship's enlightened and liberal mind no apology is necessary and I shall therefore at once state the motives of my application and my object in mine (? mind). It is at the request of Mrs. Jordan I now address Your Lordship and after the friendship that has subsisted between her and me for more than twenty years and that lady's excellent conduct for the whole of that period I cannot refuse her in requesting Your Lordship to take out to India her son-in-law Mr. Alsop. I feel the less difficulty in applying to Your Lordship as Mr. Alsop is to my certain knowledge a man of ability and in the prime of life. He is not I believe totally unknown to Your Lordship. Mr. Alsop is so anxious to have the honour of attending or of following Your Lordship that if he can obtain any situation in Your Lordship's family, he will resign his situation in the Ordnance, and take an ensigncy. I cannot venture to ask for any specific situation for Mr. Alsop, but I may with truth add he is fit almost for anything and Your Lordship would find him a perfect under-secretary...."

From the second letter I extract a few passages:-

"...The Prince Regent sent for me and talked over the kind offer Your Lordship had made me relative to my sons George and Henry....After a very long and serious conversation, it appeared both to my brother and myself it was more to the interest of my two sons they should pursue their military studies in Europe...."

Thomas Alsop was made a police magistrate in Calcutta, and died there on April 11, 1824, at the age of 50. His widow, I believe, subsequently appeared on the London stage. Her half-brother, George FitzClarence, when he did eventually reach India, became an A.D.C. to Moira, and returned overland to England in 1818 with the dispatches of the Pindari War, writing a good book on his journey. His later career has already been described.

These letters led me again to turn to the mystery of Henry FitzClarence, and in particular to try to solve the question—when and where did he die?

In the Calcutta Annual Register and Directory for 1887 I found that H.E. E. is given in more than one list as his second initial, but I have not ascertained (what name it represents) FitzClarence is shown as a Lieutenant in the 22nd Light Dragoons, then stationed at Bangalore, and as being an extra A.D.C. to Sir Thomas Hislop, the Commander-in-Chief at Madras. But his name is omitted from the Index. At the end of the volume are lists of deaths, and of passengers arriving in and departing from India by ship, but his name does not appear in any of them. But in a similar publication for the following year, Gardener's Original Calcutta Annual Directory and Bengal Register. 1818, I found amongst the "Account of Administrations to Estates in 1817" the name of Lieutenant Henry FitzClarence. Yet his name does not appear in the list of deaths in 1817—244 items—at the end of the book.

I then turned to the War Office Records, and the Librarian, in addition to providing me with some of the details from old peerages, army lists, etc., informed me that Henry FitzClarence was appointed a Sub-Inspector of Militia in the Ionian Islands on September 11, 1817, with the rank of Captain. On the following December 25, he exchanged to the half-pay of a Captain in the 73rd Foot, and on January 1, 1818 became a Captain in the 87th Foot. But the War Office had no record whatever of the date and place of his death.

I next addressed the India Office, though with little expectation of any result, for I felt sure that Sir Evan Cotton had explored that source years before. But the Superintendent of Records, while confirming that the copies of registers of deaths and burials contained no record of the matter, was kind enough to discover and supply the following extract from the (Calcutta) Government Gazette, third supplement, dated September 18, 1817:—

#### DEATHS

"At Allahabad on the evening of the 2nd instant, whilst on his progress to the Upper Provinces, in the Suite of the Governor-General, Lieutenant H. E. FitzClarence, of His Majesty's 22nd Regiment of Light Dragoons, and Aide-de-Camp to Lieutenant-General Sir Thomas Hislop, Baronet."

The notice is confirmed by an entry in the Governor-General's own diary. Under date September 2, 1817, the Marquess of Hastings, who was then travelling up the river, wrote: "I have been pained by the death of Lieutenant Henry FitzClarence, one of my aides-de-camp. He was a mild, amiable young man, earnest in seeking information, and in improving himself by study. He sunk under the fourth day of a fever....This day we have passed the fort of Allahabad." (The Private Journal of the Marquess of Hastings, 1858, Vol. II, p. 209).

It is evident that the postings to the Ionian Islands Militia, and thence to the 73rd and 87th Foot, were made in ignorance of the fact that Henry was already dead, and they were doubtless void on that ground. In any event, such things were in those days usually links in a complicated chain of promotion by purchase or by adroit avoidance of purchase, the intermediate links being mere paper transactions. It is possible that the object was to effect his return to something congenial in England, where the scandals of three years before in the 10th Hussars were doubtless beginning to fade from the memory of the public and the War Office.

So Emma Roberts was right after all, and none of the authorities are complete and correct. The remains of this forgotten son of a King of England rest in an unknown grave at Allahabad, unmarked even by the "broken column" which once commemorated the fact.

### JAPANESE ANIMALS IN SIAM

BY LIEUT.-COLONEL C.R.D. GRAY

A FTER the defeat of Japan one of the problems in South East Asia Command was the disposal of the Japanese Army animals known to be scattered all over the countries in which Japanese forces had been operating. In principle, it was ruled that (i) no animals would be backloaded to India because of the danger of spreading Epizootic lymphangitis; and because India already had a surplus of Army animals; and (ii) all animals fit for further work would be held and disposed of in the best interests of the countries concerned, through Remount channels, in conjunction with the local civil authorities.

In Burma, Malaya and French Indo-China, non-belligerent countries over-run by the Japanese, the problem was one of tracing the animals, and returning them to their former owners, or distributing them to civil authorities, without payment, for the rehabilitation of the country. Siam, however, had been an ally of Japan, and all animals found in that country were treated as enemy property, and therefore booty. No mutual aid agreement between Siam and Britain was then in existence, so it was ruled that such animals were to be sold, proceeds being credited to H. M. Government.

The Japanese submitted to us a list of their known animal locations in Siam, but it promised inaccuracy, as a footnote stated simply: "This list being made by tracing memories of investigated members, by the lack of data concerning we regret to say this list not exactly correct."

At the time of our arrival in September, 1945 the railway system had been thoroughly disorganised by the R.A.F., and the few roads were in a very bad state. We began inspections of the Japanese animals, but it took some time owing to these bad communications. Transport was extremely limited; only a few Jeeps had been flown in.

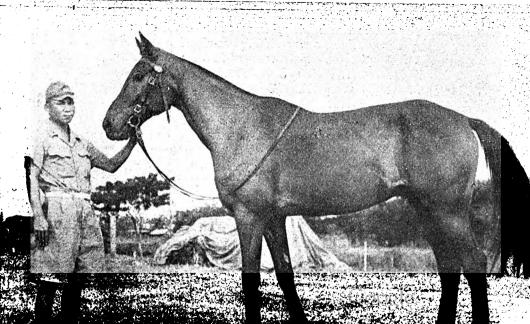
Our first inspection was at Bangkok, where the Japs had 510 animals; all were in poor condition, many being in an appalling state. A few were lying down quite unable to rise, while many had festering and fly-blown sores on withers and ribs. Almost all had overgrown feet, dropped soles, and signs of thrush. Over two-thirds were selected for immediate destruction. The disposal of such a large number of dead horses was in itself a problem in the monsoon conditions as the water level was only two feet below ground, but it was solved by digging deep pits on the top of a rifle-range butt. The animals were led up on it, shot, and pushed over—an unpleasant experience.

The Japs had rudimentary ideas on animal management, but owing to the terrible climatic conditions, indifference of their officers, and lack of "horse-knowledge" amongst all ranks, animals were pitifully looked after. Horses, to them, were merely another method of transport, and suffered the same ill-treatment as Jap cars and trucks. They were kept on undrained standings with no bedding. Tight head-ropes were common, and no grooming was ever done, although boxes of unused brushes and curry combs were found later in the men's



Above: A Jap single draught A. T. Cart. Note the pressed steel wheels.

, Below: The best horse we found in SIAM. This one had great scope and jumped



barracks. Manes and tails were long and matted. Veterinary attention was skimped, and seemed to consist only in the application of mercurochrome to all sores and cuts; yet there were ample stocks of veterinary equipment all packed in beautifully fitted field chests.

Farriery equipment was excellent, a set consisting of two neat Yakdans fitted with full tools, an anvil and a built-in centrifugal blower. The shoeing, however, was bad, all the usual faults being common, i.e., bad dumping, cutting away of heels and frog, high unnecessary nail holes, and rasping of the outer hoof walls.

The Jap soldiers showed several instances of being fond of their charges, but in curious ways. They could sometimes be seen squatting in front of a horse, hand-feeding it with offers of green grass, yet at the same time they seemed to ignore a cut mouth or a weeping eye. They gave their animals no bedding, but there was an issue of sun-hats for the horses—large discs of canvas-backed matting with ear-holes and a throat-lash. As a final instance—when the animals were destroyed many Japs stood at attention and saluted as the horse went down and some wept.

Jap soldiers were educated, and N.C.Os in particular were fond of paper work. They all carried satchels, buckled to their belts, in which were notebooks, writing paper, coloured pencils, and often a Jap-English dictionary. In consequence elaborately written feeding charts, notices as to hours of parade, and rules for work and behaviour were much in evidence. These were pinned up prominently in every basha and living quarter. Army orders were painted (usually with coloured chalks) in meticulous picture-writing on blackboards.

This efficiency was carried to extremes. If, for instance, they were asked to say how much fodder was left, they would prepare an elaborate statement in English copper-plate writing, showing amounts issued, consumed and required by day, week and month for one horse, all totals being shown in English measure, though their own system is metric. A N.C.O. would sit up all night to do this, and would present it next morning with much bowing and hissing. This hissing is really a quick intake of breath and is an automatic expression of humility and respect by an inferior before talking to or taking leave from a superior.

General discipline was so good that it was almost alarming. All orders were obeyed with a snap and on the run. Saluting was immediate and on sight—though the officer might be 200 yards away. A man carrying a load would drop it, salute, then pick it up again—or if without a hat, would bow deeply despite his burden, then proceed.

In Bangkok advantage was taken of this discipline and willingness to work by showing the Japs our standards of horse-mastership and stable management. Once they saw what was required of them they worked with a will. They were organised into a unit of two troops of four sections each, under their own officers, 45 men in all, and were taught stable routine for grooming, feeding, etc. They called themselves the "Horseguard Corps."

One indifferent interpreter was available at intervals, so most of the work had to be demonstrated by example. After a British Remount officer had groomed a horse in front of them they soon "caught on" and vied with each other in producing a shine on their horses. It was amusing to hear later that there had been much comment about this in their barracks, as it was inconceivable for a Japanese officer to instruct by personal example, let alone touch a horse to clean it.

Most of the Jap animals in Bangkok were pony stallions, and as the prisoners were required for dock labour, and only 45 men could be spared for Remount work, it became difficult to look after the captured animals in their standings, so it was decided to build paddocks for them. These were laid out on the usual Remount "kraal" system and were built without R.E. stores or assistance.

Timber, wire, roofing, etc., were "scrounged" from old bunkers, pillboxes, and disused huts, and a design was drawn by a Remount officer from which the Jap N. C. Os produced their usual over-elaborate plans with scales, distances, etc., all beautifully drawn in coloured inks. The work was well done, and soon this unit had built a small depot, complete with six paddocks, a stable of 20 looseboxes, saddle room, office and grain store. A riding track, small school and a set of jumps were added later.

Inspections similar to that carried out at Bangkok were made at other Jap camps throughout Siam by Remount and Veterinary officers. Altogether 5,227 animals were inspected, of which 3,691 were destroyed, 1,536 being retained for disposal. Thus 70% were destroyed, and 30% retained.

Many varied types of animals were found in the Jap Army in Siam chiefly owing to the fact that they had received no reinforcements from Japan, and had made up deficiencies by capture or purchase. They were able to show receipts of all purchases from the Siamese. Here are some of the animals we found:

Japanese Horses.—These were bred in Japan from mixed Jap blood. About half were rides over 15 hands, used by Jap officers and N.C.Os. The remainder were transport horses of Percheron and heavy waler stamp, and were used in high-wheeled single draught carts or in pair wagons. About 80% were chestnuts; no greys at all were found.

The riding horses were only half-schooled as judged by our standards—with little flexion and rough paces. They were, however, all very quiet to mount and ride, and could be grazed at liberty and caught up at will. The Japs u ed them merely as a means of transport to march from A to B, and never attempted jumping or school work. In the course of selecting rides for British officers, a Remount officer rode 150 of these horses and found them all very quiet—a particular feature being the way they stood quite motionless when mounted, without being held.

Chinese Ponies.—These were of two types: (a) North China (Manchurian) shapeless animals about 13.3 hands, with a long, curly coat, roach back, good bone and uncertain temper; they were used entirely for pack work, and (b) South China—a lighter type used for pack work and riding—rather like Kashmiri ponies, but with heavier heads and thick coats.

French Indo-China Ponies.—A light narrow pony, about 12 hands, the same stock as Siamese, but showing a trace of European blood. Many skewbalds, piebalds and duns, but few true colours. A useless type of pony; very excitable and perpetually kicking and scream ng, possibly because they were all stallions.

Java and Sumatra Ponies.—These were a mixed bag, some being captures from the Dutch Army, and some obtained from the villages. A light pony, about 13 hands, with a breedy head but rather leggy, with cow hocks. Could be easily recognised as all had prominently split or nicked ears. As rides they were fast, but also nervous and difficult to handle.

Siamese Ponies.—The smallest ponies seen. Known as midgets in Siam, they average 11.2 hands. The Japs used them in small, single draught carts, or as light pack ponies, for bedding rolls, etc. The best were like miniature New Forest ponies; they were extremely hardy, were fed only on grass, and had a very fast pacing trot when ridden.

Burmese Ponies.——A few only were found, brought back during the Jap retreat. They were a light type of 13.3 hands, and were probably captured from Burma Police or Frontier Force.

Indian Ponies.—Two were found, both bearing the "Mona" brand. They were in poor condition, and were destroyed.

Mules.—A mixed bag. A few Indian mules were found, but the majority were Chinese of a poor EI or EII type. Of all the mules found, very few would have been acceptable by our standards.

### JAPANESE SADDLERY

SADDLES made in Japan were very similar to the British Officers' pattern issue saddle, but had neat detachable pannels, which obviated re-stuffing, provided the new panels were available. They had prominent knee-rolls, and were only comfortable if ridden with long leathers. Bridles had a civilian-type curb and bridoon bit, with "rising-sun" brass bosses. Head collars were of string and webbing, worn under the bridle.

A. T. PACK SADDLES were similar to ours, but had adjustable arches and shaped sidebars. The Japs said that this saddle caused few galls, and that the majority of injuries come from the Chinese "X" pattern pack saddles of rough wood, which they had been forced to use of necessity. A. T. Carts were single draught. Those made in Japan were good, with pressed steel wheels and turned shafts. The larger ones had platform bodies only, not with side rails, as on our A. T. Carts. Many, however, were Chinese carts, with wooden wheels and axles.

The Japanese 37th Division was at Nakon Nayok, a hundred miles north of Bangkok, and it was here that out of 2,699 horses seen, 2,154 had to be destroyed. It was such a large proportion that we investigated the reasons, which were:

- (i) This formation had marched by road the whole way from North China to Siam, a distance of 3,500 kilometres;
- (ii) It was at Shia-Chia-Chaong, S.W. of Peiping, when it received orders to march south to link up with the Southern Forces' drive on the American Airfields in South China;
- (iii) It covered the distance in four months, averaging 30 kilometres (20 miles) a day, marching six days a week.
- (iv) En route it fought two battles near Changsha, and it was this force that re-captured Kweilin. Moving south it crossed the top of French Indo China at Vientiane, and from there went through Siam to Bangkok.

Animal casualties in this Division were heavy. Killed in battle numbered 220, died 700, drowned 10, destroyed as unfit 150. These 1,080 animals were replaced by captured Chinese and French Indo China ponies, no reinforcements being received from Japan. South of Hankow no Army fodder supplies were forthcoming, and all grain and grass had to be obtained locally.

The Japanese stated that owing to the speed of the advance and the tiredness of the troops, the horses seldom got more than two feeds a day. Of the ponies they acquired, the Manchurian type stood up best. On our inspection they were the least emaciated, and had I ss galls than other types.

While resting at Bangkok, this Division received orders to move south to selected points on the West coast of Malaya, but the war ended before the move started. Later, when examining their maps, a British Officer who had recently been on the S.E.A.C. Planning Staff, said that their marked destination was to have been the main landing area for our attack had it taken place. We repeated this to the Jap officers, and they showed very great relief—and amusement.

The Jap 15th and 33rd Divisions were at Nakom Patom, sixty miles west of Bangkok. These divisions had borne the worst of the Burma campaign, and were in very poor shape when they got back to Siam. The remnants were magnificent troops, and their discipline was high, even by Jap standards.

Their animals had had a bad time, and their records showed that they lost 5,000 on the retreat from Kohima, mainly from hunger. They ran out of food stocks, and as a result their animals died like flies, all along the escape route. The senior Jap Veterinary Officer said that only five horses returned from the original number at the beginning of the campaign. He also said that the best animals they had were the mules they had captured from the British forces.

A survey of the animal requirements of the Siamese showed that riding horses were required in Bangkok by the Siamese Army for remounting their 1st Cavalry regiment, that small ponies were wanted in the up-country districts, and that a few small ponies were required by the Pasteur Institute for serum manufacture (anti-snake bite). Sales by auction and private treaty were arranged, and two hundred riding horses, and 958 pack ponies and mules were sold. The highest price realised was the equivalent of Rs. 1,371 paid for an ex-racing mare the Japs had acquired. The total amount received was Rs. 67,906.

In addition to the above animals, the Japanese had a few Army dogs, three of which were captured. They were good Alsatians, bred in Japan, and were used for guard duties, being trained to attack any man indicated by their handlers. They were sold by auction and fetched high prices, averaging Rs. 577 each.

# Calcutta Mint to Strike Campaign Stars

Campaign medals for issue to the Indian Services are to be struck in the Calcutta Mint. The designs for the eight awards—1939-45, Atlantic, Air Crew Europe, Africa, Pacific, Burma, Italy, and France and Germany Stars, were prepared in the Royal Mint and have been approved by the King.

The Stars are to be struck in a yellow copper zinc alloy. Each is a Star of six points, 13 inches across between the extremities of the points. In the centre is the Royal and Imperial Cypher G.R.I., with the numeral "VI" below, the whole surrounded by a circle with the title of the Star, and surmounted by a crown.

No date has yet been fixed for the issue of Stars to Indian Services personnel. In the United Kingdom, where work has already begun in the Royal Mint and is about to start in the Royal Ordnance Factory, Woolwich, it will be two years before the striking of several millions of medals is completed,

### A YEAR AS A C. L. O.

### By LIEUT.-COLONEL T. M. CARPENDALE.

FEW tasks in India can be so full of interest as that of the Civil Liaison Officer. He is daily in touch with old soldiers, and with their families; he finds loyalty and genuine friendship on all sides; and he is able to smooth out many of the difficulties which confront the soldier and his family. What happier job could you wish to have?

My area as C. L. O. of the Western U.P. covered that vast tract of country lying between the Jumna—down as far as Agra—and the Ganges; stretching north from Dehra Dun to Agra, thence across the Jumna down to Lalitpur; eastwards it included the Garhwal and Almora hill districts. Altogether the district was about 460 miles in depth and 200 miles in width.

All touring had to be planned well in advance, but large tracts had to remain unvisited. Nevertheless, visits to outlying areas brought so many useful results that the time spent was amply justified. Three C.L.Os and their Welfare Workers assisted me. Our duties were to investigate cases concerning pensions, prisoners of war, family allotments, relief, etc., and keep in touch with District Soldiers' Boards and Collectors.

Touring was particularly hard in the hill areas of Garhwal and Almora. Welfare Workers had to plan their tours weeks ahead, many villages being a full day's march apart, and across steep valleys and mountain ranges. Some of these Welfare Workers were excellent—conscientious, keen and with a fine spirit; others were not so suitable. Although supposed to work for love and payment of out-of-pocket expenses, some extra monetary compensation was essential.

Loyalty and devotion of the old soldier were two of my happiest memories of the work. The fact that an officer of his regiment was coming to visit his village made many a pensioner dig out his uniform and extend that hospitality for which the Indian villager is famous. Once my wife and I were surprised to find a couple of hundred old Indian Officers and pensioners waiting for us. A pukka barra khana had been fixed at the dak bungalow, complete with the inevitable roast duck and even peche melba.

That particular area had been a recruiting centre for my father's old regiment as well as my own. Among the assembled jawans was one of 103 years of age—a fine old tough—who had walked in three miles to find out "which of the baba-log" I was. He had been my father's orderly in the 1879 Afghan Campaign. When asked his unit, he would not admit to any other than the "2nd Regiment"; the "2nd" (the 2nd Scinde Horse) was to him the only regiment worth mentioning.

He was the eldest of four of that Regiment whom I saw on various occasions. All were over 90, and yet hale and hearty. Many an hour we spent talking over old times, changed customs, etc. A daffedar who had been with me in Aden, a Rissaldar I had known on the Euphrates, an N.C.O. of the 23rd who was with me and Egerton when the latter was killed at the battle of Huwaish—they are some whom I met. Then there was a Subedar-Major who had been with my brother in Persia; an old pensioner of the 8th who had been our specialist trick

rider when I was Adjutant and who now hobbles round on crutches owing to a fall off a bicycle—"Bahut sharm ki bát hai, Sáhib, kih main cycle se girgaya." There he is now, with a snow white beard down to his waist, but as vivacious as ever. At Jelalabad I met some old Cavalry soldiers, one of whom chided me for not recognising him as the man who had taught me to ride some 38 years before on joining the 8th when I was a "bilkul bacha Sahib."

The most touching evidence of the faith of these old pensioners was shown by an old Jat of the 14th Lancers at Bulandshahr. He had come in to have a translation made of a wireless message from his son—a P.O.W. in Japan—and to have a reply sent. I was able to arrange it, and as his son had been in my regiment he was very grateful. As I was going away he hobbled after me and brought his wife, who had already sent three sons to the war, two being prisoners in Japhands. "Sahib", he said. "Ek aur arz hai". "Say on", I said, "What is it?" "Only this—that when my sons come back from the war, will you arrange for a Belaite bája to meet them at the station, march them home, and play 'God Save the King'." There you had the true Indian soldier.

Not all sides of the work were so pleasing. There was the inevitable tale of corruption on the part of junior officials and banias. Such stories were tragic, infuriating and depressing. Take, for example, a so-called "deserter". Arrested as a suspect by the police and put in jail, he might wait three weeks for the investigation by the local magistrate. Often the latter gentleman could have hastened matters—and often a more effective examination in the first place would have revealed the fact that the man had his discharge certificate on him. That kind of thing frequently occurred, and it should not have been so.

The deserter question was, of course, difficult. A "professional deserter" would enlist in a fictitious name, and desert; another man bearing the same name would be arrested and put in jail, and could not be released without a Magistrates' order or an identification escort from the unit the professional deserter had enlisted in, and that unit might well be in Burma. Many of these difficulties have, however, since been cleared up.

Many cases of these so-called deserters had arisen owing to a defective system of recruiting. Evil practices had crept in, and some old I. Os were very bitter about it. One I.O. had brought up three excellent recruits; they were not accepted in his name, but in that of a local bania, who hoped thereby to see his name among those selected for Honours. He paid Rs. 5 per head to men who brought in recruits in his name.

"Paid Recruiters" sometimes overstepped the mark. On one occasion three exceptionally good men were accosted at Delhi Railway Station by a paid recruiter when on their way to join a I.A.C.C. unit, in which they had relations. The P.R. told them he was the man to take them up. He took them to Ambala, enlisted them as "water carriers" and returned with them to Meerut for posting as "water carriers" in 'Pindi. Fortunately I was informed and the men were transferred to the Corps they wanted. Had they not been so transferred they would have gone to 'Pindi as water carriers, there found out the mistake, run away, and would later have been caught as "deserters".

Many women workers have been enrolled for village welfare work and for investigating cases concerning soldier's families. Has the scheme been financially sound? I doubt it. Few Indian women can enter any village where they are not well-known, without an escort or companion. And when they do

enter such villages they are apt to be received with suspicion, and the result is that their real influence is not very great. Even when they do make contact they cannot maintain it unless they are inhabitants of that village or people of influence.

The only women I met who were trusted were wives of British and Indian officials, a number of school mistresses, and some missionaries, whose work is especially valuable. The latter's work is not encouraged, however, because it is feared that they might be trying to proselitize the local inhabitants. That women are urgently needed for this kind of liaison work is manifest, but the solution, I am convinced, is to train them in village areas—one per village or group of villages; these would be more valuable than itinerant welfare workers.

Even in big places like Meerut and Moradabad, the number of Indian women who come forward to help in their own Indian hospitals is very small. Until a change is made in the educational system, and women become "nurse-minded" the number will always be small. Many women are keen and anxious to improve matters in their areas; in two places I know the local rani had organised, financed, and worked up some excellent training schemes for men and women in village industries and general rural development. But for outlying villages, the only person the villagers can rely upon is the missionary or schoolmistress or the wives of—generally—British officials. It is a sad reflection on Indian education.

And another sad reflection on Indian education is the amount of bribery and corruption found in the relations between junior officials and peasant villagers. Plenty of opportunities exist, and I am afraid the *patwari* comes in for his share of criticism on this count. Education of the right kind would undoubtedly remove this blot of bribery from Indian life, but it will take time. There are, however, signs of real progress in many directions.

First I would place the Rural Development Association. I had the privilege of staying with one of their leaders, Rai Bahadur Captain Kashi Nath, of Lucknow. He is an enthusiast, and in the villages in his group I found his enthusiasm had been infectious. In one village I saw a 25-year old Rural Development official; he had had the village streets paved, a malaria swamp cleared, a village school organised, built a co-operative store, established a library and started a Boy Scout troop. He had also arranged for the *Panchayat* to agree with the villagers to consolidate their holdings, so that each farmer had one compact plot of land instead of many small patches.

One day each month was set aside for a Fauji Day. That was the day when all soldiers families could be present and arrange for their troubles and problems to be investigated, letters written or translated, allotments checked, and news conveyed concerning the welfare of P.O.W. relatives. He had persuaded the villagers to give up one day each month to work free on some scheme of improvement in the village. What a proud record! And the cost to Government was his pay—Rs. 25 per mensem!

In another village I found the Rural Development worker had instituted counter-erosion work by planting a small forest on otherwise waste land; by widening the village street and thus giving more light and air throughout the village; by improving the poultry stock; and by starting village industries, such as cloth stamping, weaving, etc., all of which would give lucrative employment.

These Rural Development "workers" are trained in camp, and I was much impressed by their keenness and spirit, and by the immense possibilities

Digitized by GOOGLE

for good in the movement, if it is properly supervised, controlled and finance. This type of Rural Development Association undoubtedly offers an opening the cradicating the more depressing features of Indian village life. During the known old soldiers looked on the Association with some disfavour, believing the certain political leanings; the staff, too, might occasionally have been select with a little more care, for one black sheep night well affect the reputation of the whole Association.

At present it can only influence a small proportion of the population, part for financial reasons and partly owing to lack of confidence of their future activity. When those two factors have been adjusted, however, and a chain of these is ciations have been established throughout the length and breadth of limit they can do an immense amount of good work. Funds spent on the movement will yield good returns. Supervision is, of course, essential, and it could be recarried out by A.C.L.Os in conjunction with the "workers" of the Rural Development Association.

What lessons can be learned from the experience I had as a Civil List Officer? First, I would refer to the existing system of investigating petitions has soldiers and their families. In my opinion it is not only cumbersome but unsufficatory in many ways. It throws an enormous amount of extra work on already harrassed Collector, who has to refer it back through the usual chamble to the village for report. In the Army, cases are investigated from the lower formation to the top, and surely it would save time for the Collector to this reply direct from the village rather than through the D.S.B., Tehel, and Patronnial

The solution is a Panchayat in every village. A Panchayat is composed of men selected for their experience and energy; they know the intrigues believe petitions; they know the family history probably better than the Pancari and creating most cases settle matters without even referring to the D.S.B. They are the people to furnish an unbiassed report on cases. Records of cases would have to kept and checked but it would all give the elders a sense of responsibility a public affairs as well as imbue them with an added sense of izzat. Civic pride would be developed; the women workers could work under the protection of the Panchayat; and in numerous ways the members could smooth the path of the ex-soldier.

The second important lesson I learned, as have many others, was the new for checking the corruption and extortion which exists in many parts of the coartry. What punishment is meted out to the junior postal official who holds up part ment of allotments unless he is paid extra? What is done to the railway bobs who gets a useful income from refusing to issue tickets unless he is duly rewarded. Apathy is at the root of the trouble, and it must be admitted that the results of individual effort to stamp out the evil are disheartening. We need a native wide drive to stamp out this evil.

Another important feature in Indian life is the value of missionary organisations, and the influence of touring British officers and their wives in villages. Any British officer who has visited villages from which his men have continuous the warm welcome he always receives, and he knows how deeply the old soldier, or the parents of serving soldiers, appreciate the interest shown in these

I would suggest that the following ideas merit serious consideration.

1. I.A.C.L.Os should be appointed to supplement the A.C.L.Os, the strength depending on the military personnel recruited from each area. The could be of the retired I.O. type, selected for their keenness for the work and personnel recruited in the strength of the retired I.O. type, selected for their keenness for the work and personnel recruited in the strength of the strength of

necessarily for their war record. Pay could be met by abolishing C.L.Os appointments and perhaps reducing pay of highly-paid officials.

- The A.C.L.O. system should be affiliated with the Rural Development Associations. If that is not possible, there should be a link-up between the Association and the A.C.L.Os, the latter supervising the military side of the Rural Development Association activities.
- The Gram Panchayat system must be expanded, and Units should be the saked to send their petitions to the Gram Panchayat instead of to the A.C.L.O. or the D.S.B. This, however, would take some time, as until the Gram Poonch has its morganisation on firm lines, petitions would be untraced and untraceable.
- 4. Missionaries should be encouraged to contact soldiers' families. Many wife naissionaries are keen to do this, but they have no literature or information on how to deal with soldiers problems.
- 5. Sevadarnis and missionaries should be encouraged to attend "Fauji days" where they are being held. They might also be encouraged to form teams of workers to assist village uplift schemes.
- 6. A.C.L.Os should be given added official status and attached to the staff be of Collectors. They might also be given certain powers by the Collector to assist him in dealing with the numerous petty cases where military are concerned.

Finally, the Indian Government that is to be must organise and develop this rural development system, combining with it resettlement schemes for old soldiers. In that way a peaceful, contented, and happy India will result, and the first truly Indian Government will be able to show the world that they are worthy of the task of raising it peoples to higher standards of living.

# Awards to Indian Army.

B. L.

uln!

龇

that 0

, Desi

5305

me!

dep

MI.

10

About 6,400 awards have so far been made to the Indian Army for gallantry and meritorious service during the war. Awards, for gallantry alone total over 4,800. These include 31 Victoria Crosses, five George Crosses, 253 Distinguished Service Orders, 354 Indian Orders of Merit, 1,396 Military Crosses, 1,197 I.D.S.Ms and 1,646 M.Ms.

The Infantry has earned about 4,000 awards, including 29 V.Cs, two George Crosses, 123 D.S.Os, 200 I.O.Ms and 704 M.Cs, while the Royal Indian Engineers and the Royal Indian Army Service Corps each have about 350 awards to their credit. Of the 300 awards won by the Indian Armoured Corps two are George Crosses, 21 are Distinguished Service Orders and 90 Military Crosses.

The invaluable and gallant services rendered by Army doctors to front line troops have earned the Indian Army Medical Corps 140 awards for gallantry alone, among them eight Distinguished Service Orders and 73 Military Crosses.

Over a hundred awards go to the Indian Signal Corps. One Distinguished Service Order and eight Military Crosses are among them.

The Royal Indian Artillery have over a hundred awards which include one Victoria Cross, six Distinguished Service Orders and 38 Military Crosses.

## HOW TO CONDUCT TROOP TRIALS OF W.A.E.

BY LT.-COL. A.E. BAGWELL PUREFOY, p.s.c., B.A.

BEFORE a new weapon or other piece of equipment can be introduced in the Service it must pass not only technical trials, but also trials in the interior of the troops who will have to use it. To name only two reasons for this technical are usually conducted by experts in the use of the equipment in quests whilst the troops for whom it is intended are nothing like as expert, and will probably use it under much less comfortable conditions.

Secondly, faults that the technical trials are designed to show up are designed from those which are brought out by a troop, or "user" trial. For a ample, a portable filter that has a very satisfactory output in the hands of it technician may well give a much poorer performance or even break up altogets; when worked by a hot and tired private soldier who is being bitten by leeds Again, a device for clipping hand grenades on to the soldiers' belt may have a mirable strength, springiness and rust-proof qualities, but may prove a means when projecting sharply from the belt after the grenade has been removed.

Troop trials in the past have not always been carried out with the through ness they deserve. This has been due to a faulty realisation of the steps access to ensure a really useful trial. "Send it to the troops and see what they this of it" is a recommendation that has preceded many former troop trials. Whe has been the result! A formation has been selected, a hundred or so amplied the item in question have been sent to it, together with a questionnaire (die framed by a harassed staff officer already overworked), and the two have been passed on to various units. These units are busy training—or perhaps ever fighting—and they are unlikely to be able to afford the time and thought that trial demands if it is to be of any real value. The trial is regarded as a time fatigue. The result is almost always merely an expression of opinions, and soften as not the opinions expressed by different units are diametrically opposite

What are the essential principles in the conduct of troop trials! Ist they should be planned and supervised by people who are specially qualified to do so, and, equally important, who have the time to do so. Even where sold people are not available, however, troop trials would be improved if the principle suggested were followed as closely as possible. This article is based mainly a experience at the User Trial Establishment, India, which was formed late in 1944 with the object of overcoming the difficulties that had hitherto been met in the conduct of troop trials. In the first year of its existence over fifty such trials were carried out.

If trials are to be run by specially qualified officers, those officers must be grouped in a unit or establishment where they can carry out their work with the minimum of outside assistance. Trials make demands on troops over and about their ordinary work, and if troops are to co-operate willingly—which is essential to success—the trial staff must be as self-supporting as possible in such things transport, special equipment, and skilled tradesmen. The officers should possession tific degrees (including a physicist, a chemist, a mathematician and a engineer) and be drawn from various arms of the Service.

At the Indian establishment Engineers, Infantry, Signals and Ordnam were found to be particularly necessary. Many trials have a medical apert

the staff must include a medical officer with experience of problems of human sysiology. He will require a laboratory fitted with simple equipment. The lither ranks should include as many different kinds of tradesmen that the powers at-be will allow, but a carpenter, metal worker, equipment repairer and draughts-at an are indispensable, as well as an adequate staff of clerks. Equipment, besides at implied by the personnel already mentioned, must include stop-watches, meras, a dark room and a calculating machine, as well as general measuring struments. Such an establishment must, of course, be situated reasonably set to troops of various arms, and within reach of different types of country.

Whether a trial establishment exists or not, it is important that orders r troop trials should be received from one source only. This sounds obvious, at the point has been found in practice to need careful watching. Divergence om it is bound to lead to confusion: not only do the recipients of the demands come the victims of a tug of war on priorities, but the practice also leads to talk being asked for without the knowledge of all the concerned branches of the aff.

A trial demand, after clearly stating the Object of the trial, should leave the addressee considerable latitude in how to conduct it. It should resemble an estruction rather than an order. The preparation of trial demands is not easy, and a bad one will cause delay and possibly even a bad trial. If, for instance, the Object of a trial of a new waterproof cape is given as "To consider whether the cape is a suitable substitute for the U.S.A. quality", when there are, in fact, U.S.A. capes available with which to compare the new one, only confusion that result. Yet this may easily happen if care is not taken.

Again, delay and confusion will be avoided if a trial demand always inludes the specifications of the article under trial. The writer of the trial report hen knows the correct name of every part, and of what material it is made; there fill then be no doubt regarding what item any particular comment refers to. In ddition, full details of work already done, perhaps in the Dominions or other countries, should always be supplied when available.

The following headings have been found suitable for most trial demands: ITEM FOR TRIAL.

PRIORITY (ONE OR TWO).

DATE REPORT REQUIRED.

OBJECT OF TRIAL.

ķ

PARTICULAR POINTS ON WHICH REPORTS ARE REQUIRED. (This does not nean that there are no other points on which reports are desirable).

SPECIAL INSTRUCTIONS OR INFORMATION. (e.g., specifications; where the stores are coming from; details of trials already carried out, etc).

VISITORS TO THE TRIAL.

SECURITY INSTRUCTIONS.

Immediately a trial demand is received, it should be scrutinised very carefully, in order to determine whether any queries regarding it are necessary. The demand may arrive some time before the equipment, and time will be saved if obvious doubtful points are raised at once. Taking the waterproof capes mentioned above as an example, the Information section of the demand might say that 50 new type capes were being despatched from C.O.D.

The trial establishment—or unit—should immediately point out that in view of the Object of the trial an equal number of U.S.A. type capes would be required. It is generally wise to postpone further action on the demand until either the stores have arrived or their arrival is imminent. Time will then be saved if the demand is then examined in the light of a standard questionnaire, such as the following:—

- (a) What priority should be given to this trial, relative to others already on hand? (If the higher H.Q. are wise, they will lay down only two priorities: (i) meaning that the trial must be carried out immediately, if necessary at the expense of others; and (ii) meaning that the trial establishment has discretion when to carry it out, but that if possible the report should be ready by the date given).
- (b) Has enough basic information been received? (Some may have been asked for on receipt of the demand, but more may well be required after the equipment for trial has arrived and been examined. To judge from experience, the answer to this question will often be No, but this need not necessarily delay the start of the trial).
- (c) What steps are necessary to answer each question? (Very broadly only; leave the details to the O. i/c trial).
- (d) Are any further questions desirable? (Often Yes; that is why the trial establishment should be allowed plenty of latitude).
- (e) How many men will be required? Of what nationality, what arms, what sizes, etc? (Again broadly only; O. i/c trial will decide the details).
  - (f) For how long will they be wanted?
  - (q) What officer should be in charge of the trial?

Before the trial is launched a clear instruction regarding how it is to be carried out should be issued in writing to the officer in-charge. There are several reasons for this: to show the officer and his assistants the exact task before them, to guide any new trial staff who may have to take over during the trial, and to be filed for reference in case of similar equipment coming up for trial later on. Sometimes, also, the troops who are to take part find it a help to see the trial instruction. Standard headings such as Informaton, Object, Method, etc., should be used, and generally the best plan is to let the O. i/c draft his own instruction, discussing it with his superior before it is reproduced.

On the trial instruction will depend whether the trial gives results that are of value or results that are worthless. Concrete facts, such as measurements, where these can be obtained, are more valuable than opinions. The instruction, therefore, should lay down method designed to obtain such facts. This is a vital principle in the conduct of troop trials, and it is here that a team of specially trained and equipped officers has an advantage over unit officers already busy with other tasks.

If, for instance, it is desired to find out whether equipment "A" is more tiring than equipment "B", one approach to the problem is to make a party of soldiers use both equipments and then say which tired them most. But this method yields opinions only, not facts. Facts can better be obtained by a careful comparative assessment of factors such as timings over a course, pulse rates and sweat loss. The facts thus found will be of more value for showing which is the most tiring equipment than mere opinions alone.

Another point in the design of trials, where special knowledge is needed, is that of "randomization"—e.g. deciding which men will march with which type

of equipment, or in what order a man will fire a number of different weapons. This, if properly carried out, reduces to a minimum the likelihood of the results being due to outside factors, such as variation between men, and the fact that a man's efficiency improves with practice.

The number and nature of troops required for trials will of course vary considerably. Quite apart from the number of equipments that happen to be available, questions arise regarding arms of the Service, characteristics of men, nationality (e.g., British or Indian) and degree of training, how many expert and how many "average" shots, for instance. In 1945 a trial of wireless sets that took a month to complete needed only ten B.O.Rs, while another, of gas masks, though finished in ten days, required a hundred men from each of four battalions, British, Gurkha, Sikh and South Indian. This point must be decided during the detailed examination of the trial demand.

Whether the troops are detailed by a formation that has been ordered to carry out the trial, or whether they are produced at the request of a trial establishment, it is essential that their "goodwill" be enlisted. Without it a triol cannot be called a fair one. It is extremely easy to obtain; all that is required is to arouse their interest. Once they realise that the adoption or otherwise of an item depends largely on the trial they are to carry out, they will gladly co-operate, however unpopular the item may seem. A particularly unpleasant trial of woollen vests, which of necessity had to take place during an Indian April, is recalled, but the B.O.Rs' natural humour rose superior even to this. Provision of tea and other comforts, such as drying facilities, will help to make a strenuous trial popular.

Few trials are spectacular; most are definitely dull. Therefore visitors should be discouraged, unless they are technical experts who can play a useful part in the work. Non-technical visitors who come in the hope of seeing an interesting display will either be disappointed, or may interfere with the trial by trying to make the officer-in-charge turn it into a demonstration—a very different thing.

If the trial instruction has been carefully prepared and the troops approached in the right way there will be no difficulty in launching the trial. The officer-in-charge will often need one or two assistants for such tasks as taking times, noting pulse rates or recording measurements; any intelligent N.C.O. can do these things, and they form a useful secondary task for the establishment's tradesmen, who soon become very good at them.

Although the officer in charge will invariably set himself a target date for completing a trial, he must be prepared to prolong it if necessary. Moreover, it is important that higher authority should realise that factors may arise after a trial has started which necessitate such prolongation. Two examples of this will suffice. The equipment may prove unsatisfactory as it stands, but the trial may suggest ideas for modifying it, thereby eliminating its previous drawbacks. In the case of a small item, such as a clip for hand grenades, the trial may suggest that a completely different device may be more satisfactory. It will often be possible for such minor modifications to be carried out on the spot, in which case the trial should be prolonged to allow of their being tested.

A second possible reason for prolonging a trial is that some completely unforeseen factor may appear during its course, necessitating special investigation. This occurred during a trial of a new type of web equipment. Towards the end of the trial as planned the suspicion arose that, despite the many advantages of the new equipment, men who were it on a long march sweated more than

those wearing the old type. This being an important factor in the tropics, it was necessary to arrange a special march, and the results proved beyond doubt that some feature of the new equipment caused a significant increase in the amount of sweating.

Opinion surveys.—In spite of what has been said regarding the desirability of obtaining concrete facts rather than opinions, the latter will sometimes provide the only light that can be thrown on a problem. Again, opinions often form a useful addition to the evidence provided by the facts. The two principles to be followed in collecting opinions are, first, avoid leading questions, and secondly, whenever possible, do not obtain all opinions from one body of men. For example, in a trial of an equipment of which only ten samples are available, do not use only one infantry section on the trial if you want opinions. You will obtain much sounder results if you repeat it with several sections from different companies, or preferably from different battalions. The opinions you get will not then be influenced by one strong personality.

Analysing results.—It is nearly always necessary to subject the results of a trial to statistical analysis. If this is not done quite false deductions may be made from them. This is due to the fact that the size of a difference between two mean measurements is in itself no guide to the significance of the result.

A good example of this occurred in a trial of lightweight motor cycles compared with heavy machines. A number of runs were made by both types over a severe cross-country course. Although the means gave a difference of four minutes in favour of the lightweights, the individual timings were so irregular that at first sight it seemed that no reliance could be placed on this result. The heavyweights, for instance, achieved on two runs, times of 15 and 16 minutes, while the lightweights' runs included timings of 19 and 22 minutes. Yet statistical analysis showed beyond doubt that the probability of the mean difference being due to chance was less than one in hundred. This enabled the firm conclusion to be drawn that over rough country the lightweight cycles are superior.

Contrary cases, where results look conclusive, but on analysis are found to be not so will occur even more frequently. The need for a mathematician on the trial staff is thus clearly shown.

#### TRIAL REPORTS.

The first thing to bear in mind when preparing a trial report is that it will be hard to get people to read it. It will arrive on the desks of highly placed officers who are busy with other work, and reading a long report will be to them a considerable added labour. If it looks solid and dull it will not be read as thoroughly as it deserves. Should this happen it would be a calamity; not only has a great deal of work gone into the trial—work which merits full attention—but insufficient study of the report may lead to wrong action being taken as the result of the trial. Therefore it is worth while taking great trouble over producing a trial report. In this connection a good slogan is "A demonstrator aims at selling what he demonstrates: a trials officer aims at selling his report".

A report on a trial should therefore look attractive and readable. Long, solid paragraphs with no illustrations or diagrams should be avoided. Include plenty of photographs; these should be well mounted, have useful captions, and appear opposite the pages to which they refer. More—on looking at the reading matter it should be easy to find the part dealing with the photograph. A rather unwilling reader may have his attention caught by an interesting picture, and may turn to the opposite page in an endeavour to find the story that it illustrates. If, say, the words "(see photo No. 6)" are clearly visible, he will have no difficulty

in finding what he wants. Attention to small details like this plays a real part in getting reports read and thence in ensuring that the right action is taken in them.

The next thing to remember about a trial report is that, while the trial has—we hope—been scientifically run, the people who are going to act on the result of it will often not be scientists but General Staff officers. This means that the body of the report must be worded in language that is intelligible to the layman. It is, therefore, most important that before it goes to press it should be passed as intelligible by a member of the establishment who is not a scientist.

Sometimes amusing situations arise out of this. The report may contain a sign or expression that is common language to the expert but unfamiliar to the non-scientist. When asked to explain in the report exactly what it means the scientist may object, on the ground that to do so would seem ridiculous in the eyes of fellow scientists. His objection must be over-ruled, because if the report is to give full value it must be intelligible to the reader who is not a scientist. In addition, however, it must bear close scrutiny by the technical branches who will read it; therefore mathematical and other details showing how conclusions were arrived at should be included as appendices.

The statement that reports must be easily readable does not necessarily mean that they must always be short. There may be a tendency on the part of a non-technical higher authority to discourage long reports on the ground that a concise summary is sufficient. This should be resisted, because while, say, the General Staff may be prepared to accept the conclusions without much detailed evidence, this cannot be expected of the technical branches concerned, particularly if the item is adversely reported on. If, for instance, a particular kind of boot sole is, after trial, not recommended for adoption, the providing agents will want to know in some detail how it was tried and in what respects it failed, before they will accept the adverse report. Another reason why reports should give full details is that only if they do will they be of real value to other people working on similar problems.

It will help in both the writing and reading of trial reports if a standard lay-out is adopted. Opinions regarding the best one will of course vary considerably, but the following has been found to work reasonably well:

Heading: Item under trial, followed by-

OBJECT OF TRIAL.

DESCRIPTION OF EQUIPMENT (with photographs).

METHOD OF TRIAL (one short paragraph).

EACH STAGE OF TRIAL (e.g. trial of capacity, trial of durability, etc).

Each stage of trial to be subdivided into:

METHOD (with photos etc.), Results (with photos etc.), Conclusions.

SUMMARY OF CONCLUSIONS.

RECOMMENDATIONS.

APPENDICES (detailed calculations etc.).

It is desirable whenever possible to include a definite recommendation. Apart from anything else, it gives the authorities who have to decide what action to take on the report something to "bite" on, thereby rendering their task easier than if they were merely confronted with a string of conclusions.

It assists the busy man if the first page of a report consists of an Abstract of the whole, comprising the Object, Method, Conclusion and Recommendation paragraphs. This abstract can conveniently be reproduced on the agenda of any committee meeting where the report is to be discussed.

Troop trials, whether organised by unit officers or by a special establishment, must be scientifically planned and supervised, and carried out by troops who represent the eventual users should the equipment under trial be eventually adopted. Scientific planning will minimise the danger of drawing false conclusions. At the same time the supervising staff must be constantly on the look out for some unforeseen factor emerging during the trial, and when this does happen they must be prepared to prolong the trial until it has been cleared up. The results of many trials need analysis by a mathematician before it is safe to draw conclusions from them.

Finally, full value will not be obtained from a trial if the report on it is not studied by all concerned with the attention it deserves; therefore a fitting conclusion to a troop trial is the issue of a report that is attractively set out, and intelligible to both technical and non-technical readers.

#### R.U.S.I.

SEVERAL members of the United Service Institution of India will shortly be leaving for Home either on leave or retirement, and, for their benefit particularly we venture to direct attention to the advantages of belonging to the Royal United Service Institution, whose headquarter address is Whitehall, London.

Founded in 1831, the Institution has a comprehensive library, a lecture theatre, a quarterly Journal, and one of the finest military museums in Great Britain. The Library contains probably the best collection of military literature in the world; books may be borrowed by members and sent to any part of the U. K. Periodical lectures are given by experts in the Lecture Hall and can be attended by members and their friends. The quarterly Journal of the Institution, which is sent post free to all members, contains reports of the lectures and of the discussions following them, as well as articles of military interest and of service developments. The museum, housed in the Old Banqueting House of the former Whitehall Palace, comprises a unique collection of military relics, trophies, models, uniforms and pictures. Plans and dioramas depicting famous battles and models of the latest warships, A. F. Vs, aircraft and weapons combine to make the museum a valuable source of reference and interest.

Membership of the Institution is open to all commissioned officers of H. M. Fighting Services, including those of the Dominions; and also to ladies whose names appear or have appeared in official lists as serving or having served as officers with any of the three Services. The ordinary annual subscription is 25s., and life membership costs £20 in one payment, or in four instalments of \$5\$ 5s., or by a Deed Covenant to pay £3 per annum for seven years.

The Liaison Officer in India of the R. U. S. I. is Lieut.-General Sir Francis S. Tuker, K.C.I.E., C.B., D.S.O., O.B.E., who has himself been a life member from the beginning of his service, and who will be happy to arrange for further details of the Institution to be forwarded to any prospective member who cares to apply either to him at Headquarters, Eastern Command, c/o 12 A.P.O. or to the subliaison officer at his own local command headquarters. Sub-liaison officers have been appointed at Eastern Command, Northern Command, and Southern Command.

#### **DOPOGUERRA**

#### By LIEUT.-COLONEL H. B. HUDSON

THIS is not the name of a patent medicine, a Chicago gangster or a fascinating little harbour on the Riviera. It means "after the war", and is regarded by Italians as a disease. Mingled with the cries of "povera Italia" (U. S. I. Journal, April 1946, page 247) will now be heard the philosophical exclamation "dopoguerra". Apart from the real meaning, there is a depressing air of finality about the word. There may be a certain amount of depression about this article but there is no finality. In the words of Mary Queen of Scots, "In my end is my beginning".

First of all I must express my gratitude to those who wrote to me as a result of the previous article with an Italian title. I had never had a fan mail before, and I still cherish both the letters. As might be expected, they came from people who had been in Burma. They were quite abusive about the misuse of government transport and the good time that was had by all. They had nothing like that. And the discomforts, too; that palace with the draughty rooms and grand pianos; it is terrible what war leads to. Well, I am not entering into any competition. There will be no more Italian titles after this.

It was obvious that the spirit of the battalion would suffer after our return to India. There was going to be an anti-climax. We disembarked full of enthusiasm, eager to see our families, and with hopeful anticipation of what the future might bring. Most of the men had saved large sums, and after an interval of a fortnight or so they all went on leave after a pleasant stay at the Regimental Centre. It was now time for me to examine my credit balance and go to see if my own roof had fallen in during the past year, and in due course I was going north in the Frontier Mail. I had bought "A Short Cultural History of India" at Bombay and was feeling vulgarly contented and affable. I think my first whisky and soda cost me three rupees, but learning by experience is proverbially expensive and the undrinkable coffee was included in the bill.

My adventures began at Delhi, where I found myself in the next compartment to three I.N.A. officers who had been cashiered and released that morning. There was a large crowd to see them off and I myself was not neglected. But the real fun started at Amritsar, where the train was boarded by hundreds of people, who refused to leave it. We were therefore obliged to carry a large number of ticketless travellers on the running boards and roof. I had plenty of foom in my compartment and invited some of the more dangerously placed hangers-on to come inside. At first they regarded this as a facetious remark, but later, when the wind had cooled them down, they were delighted to come.

We had a most interesting hour until we reached Lahore. Out of the sixteen who sat or clung within or without my compartment only six definitely knew why they were on the train. Four thought Mahatma Gandhi was next door, and I am glad to say that half a dozen laughed heartily and said they had wanted a lift to Lahore for weeks. My tin of cigarettes was soon finished and I

Digitized by GOOST

had exhausted my stock of stories about Indian troops when we stopped at Mian Mir (as I prefer to call Lahore Cantonments), where everyone disappeared. I understood that there was a big reception arranged at Lahore and sure enough the station was packed. But the birds had flown and the garlands had to be abandoned.

Once I am north of the Jhelum river I feel at home. I suppose it is early associations and my P.M. orderly and the fact that my family has been in those parts most of the war. Anyway, we crossed the bridge at Sarai Alimgarh, and I knew I would soon see someone I knew. It happened at Gujar Khan. I always push my head out of the window here, day or night, because I knew so many people who might be getting on the train. This time I was lucky. Down the platform came the well-known figure of Lal Khan,\* a retired Risaldar I had known for years. We travelled together as far as Rawalpindi, where he got out after we had arranged to meet at a later date. He told me he wanted to have a quiet talk: with nobody listening, he said, looking fiercely at the other occupants of the compartment.

We were very late, and I went to sleep somewhere between Campbellpore and Attock. I woke up at Peshawar City and got out at the Cantonment station, where I was met by my old orderly. We shook hands and he told me all about the children. As the coolie took my kit out of the train I noticed that someone had written "Quit India" across my door. We left the station in a tonga driven by a man I have known for fourteen years. And so to bed.

There now followed a brief period of the unspeakable being in pursuit of the uneatable, visits to Div. H. Q. (which had conveniently moved to Rawalpindi), two visits to Hazara and one to the Murree hills. I met Lal Khan again, and we had a long talk with no one listening, and then I had to go to Delhi. It was then that I started thinking about this disease called dopoguerra. At the time I was very angry.

"The trouble is", said Lal Khan, "that no one takes the slightest notice of us, and we have no say in the affairs of the country."

We were sitting on the verandah of his house on the outskirts of Rawal-pindi city. He is a man of substance and maintains a town and country residence. His son, a major in an Infantry regiment, had just been sent home from England. He had been taken prisoner in the desert in 1941 and had seen a good deal of Europe since then. Eventually he was released just before V.E. Day, but had been in hospital for some months before they sent him back to India. I liked this young man; he had been a sepoy and had no con eits. He was not the first person who has told me that the Indian Red Cross parcels saved the lives and morale of hundreds of Indian troops in European prison camps.

"There are over fifty thousand pensioners in this District," said Lal Khan, "and there must be many more serving soldiers. But no one ever listens to us. We are the only portion of the population which had known the benefits of military organisation and discipline. We are the only people who know the British really well.

"My son and I often talk of this and we thought it needed some publicity. So we borrowed a typewriter from the old regimental bania on the Murree road and wrote a letter to the paper. We were not reactionary, but we were quite frank. We sent the letter, but it was not published. We watched the paper carefully; there were all kinds of letters about Anglo-Indian women wearing saris and the accommodation in ships being totally inadequate, but our letter never appeared. So we sent another letter asking if it had ever been received. That, too, was unanswered."

I felt sure that the bania must have had some carbon paper, so I asked if I could see the letter. It was rather long, but no longer than many I have seen published. It set out his view, very simply, that the Indian political field was dominated by those who in fact had no contact with the people. There was a very well constructed paragraph about the urgency for independence, and a long statement showing how the army had already solved the communal problem. There were a few grammatical mistakes, but as a whole the letter would not have disgraced *The Times*. The son had certainly improved his English and his general education had been enormously increased by his enforced tour of Europe.

One of the things the letter had said was that the Indian Army had proved itself the equal of any other army, and that it had been trained by British officers who had imbued it with their spirit of impartial leadership. Indians, it said, were equally capable of training and leading the army, but we must make quite sure that the leadership is impartial.

I thought of the cemetery of the Coldstream Guards between Ferenzuola and Castel del Rio, with the proud title "Nulli Secundus" over the gate. The Indian troops I had seen during the war were certainly second to none. Most of the officers were excellent. I had often wondered if there was enough tradition yet for what these two had called impartial leadership. I still wonder.

I came to Delhi in the early spring. I knew what the men felt now when, at the end of a long war, they were told that they would be going to a non-family station after their leave. No one met me, and there was no transport to take me to my quarters. I went to my future office (it was a Sunday) and found that one of the officers in my own section had never heard of me. It seemed very impersonal, but I had come prepared.

I had been back in India two months now and had been able to look around me. Dopoguerra. Everyone seemed to be rather tired, and the end of the war had brought the end of inspiration for many. To be saluted in Delhi was rare, and the turnout of all ranks was, in my opinion, shocking. I went downstairs in the lift with a Brigadier who asked me what formation sign I was wearing. I told him it was the 10th Indian Division and asked him what his was. He was wearing the G.H.Q. insignia. As I have said before, I was very angry at the time.

Then I began to think, a process which usually comes more easily to me in my bath or when horizontal and accompanied by some soothing beverage. Did not this mighty institution plan and train the greatest volunteer army of all time? Did it not organise India as a base for the most complicated campaign of the war? Did it not overcome the most appalling difficulties of climate and lack of technical facilities? I must keep such thoughts silent or I shall be unfashionable.

Nevertheless, I confess to a realisation that, as I trudge the scented passages, I am in one of the greatest Headquarters there has ever been. I feel that a great tradition has been made, and that if she chooses to do so India will be able to guide herself to victory.

When I was very young someone gave me a copy of "The Idle Thoughts of an Idle Fellow", by Jerome K. Jerome. I have the book still, with its yellow cardboard cover. Its influence was profound and lasting. I had thought of borrowing the title for this article, but I find I am still thinking about the old Baronessa and the villages of Friuli, so I stuck to my well-thumbed Italian dictionary.

We used to have a durbar every month. Once a man got up and asked why we were fighting this war and I did my best to explain. Then he asked what he was going to get out of it. Anything controversial was barred at these meetings, but this seemed a fair question, although I saw his eyes sparkle. One of the things he'd get, I said, would be a better India. Hell! I thought, I hope he does: surely the meanest of us has learnt how futile much of this modern world is, and how much more profitable it is to be peaceful. But there was no time to give a lecture on the future.

Once the shouting died down there was a dreadful anti-climax. Many people had surrounded themselves with a vision of the delectable gardens of the future. But there is no sudden change from war to peace. If war is a continuation of policy then surely peace must be a continuation of the spirit which has led us to survive the war. There can be no return to normal, for war is a cleansing through fire. There are changes in thought and desire and a wealth of educated manhood is wasted, or shall we say sacrificed. I doubt if the world will ever recover from the first world war. Cultural progress was arrested for too long, and morality received a shattering blow. The ideas which came afterwards were spurious and altogether material. Too many people of that generation had died.

I saw my battalion when it passed through Delhi. I felt very ashamed of my pale face and white knees.

Gentlemen! I give you a toast:

"Impartial leadership".

It is the key to the future.

### Airborne Artillery for Indian Army.

Five Royal Indian Artillery Regiments are to be converted into parachute regiments. They are the 9th, 12th and 17th Field Regiments, the 6th Indian Light Anti-Aircraft Regiment and an Indian anti-tank regiment.

These units will form the divisional artillery of the 2nd Indian Airborne Division. If ever these men go to war, a vast armada of heavy bombers will carry them with their guns, jeeps, ammunition and other equipment to the battlefield over which they will be dropped by parachute.

Recruits. who must be volunteers, will be drawn from almost every class in India. They will be trained by Royal Indian Air Force personnel, who themselves are now receiving instruction at the Parachute Training School, Chaklala.

#### THE N.-W. FRONTIER PROBLEM

BY LIEUT.-COLONEL G. L. MALLAM, C.I.E.

SINCE the annexation of the Punjab in 1849, almost a century has passed, during which time the tribes of the N.W.F. have been continuously in contact with Western civilisation. Strange as it may seem, the historian of these years will not easily discover any marked changes in tribal mentality which can be identified with recognised trends of human progress.

In the year 1945, Pathan tribal society presents a picture of anarchy and depression which stands out in marked contrast to the rapidly improving social and economic conditions in British India; politically the tribes seem no nearer than they were 100 years ago to domestic stability, or to an established understanding with their neighbours, based on mutual confidence. Judged in the light of the generous output of blood, toil and money both British and Indian lavished on this remote borderland, the reward in terms of Pathan standards of life is disappointingly small.

The authors of the so-called "forward policy" hoped that the occupation of parts of tribal territory accompanied by the construction of roads, posts and cantonments, besides having a temporarily pacifying effect, would soften the hard core of potential Frontier lawlessness and induce the habits of peace; but these hopes have been largely defeated by the suspicion with which the Pathan regards all forms of Government penetration that carry with them any possible threat to tribal autonomy. Education and medical facilities are more popular, but have not yet been provided on a scale large enough to have any appreciable effect on tribal society.

The result is that tribal life has gone on away from the roads and cantonments, much in the same way as it did before these made their appearance, but with this difference—that while on the one hand some of the more superficial modern habits and accomplishments, such as tea drinking and motor driving and a certain new wealth have been acquired, on the other hand there has been a steady deterioration in the internal affairs of the tribes.

In recent years, as contact with Government officials has increased, the tribal system of government has been subjected to a great strain. Government objectives have not always coincided with the interests of the tribes, and Government officials with an imperfect knowledge of the tribal system have often unconsciously inflicted great harm on it, with a zeal which is praiseworthy on grounds of expediency alone. It was not perhaps fully realised that the enormously increased power over the tribes that penetration brought with it, would be used to undermine the tribal system, unless positive action was taken to prevent it.

Democratic in form, the scattered tribal constitutions are much more vulnerable than autocracies to destructive influences from outside, and unless adequately protected must slide gradually into anarchy. For some years now, the tribal system has become so far weakened that the law-abiding element is powerless to restrain the young hot heads, and may even, as is often the case in Waziristan, be subjected to terrorisation by powerfully armed gangs.

Nevertheless, it cannot be said even now that the Pathan tribes possess no social or political order of any kind. They still profess and largely practise the Islamic religion, to which they have been devotedly attached for many hundreds of years; the original distinctions between groups, sections and subsections are still clearly marked; tribal consciousness is still vigorously alive in the so-called Pathan "Code of honour", and in the universal preference for tribal customary law (so far as it can be defined and enforced) as against the legal codes and practices of India; finally, the love of "freedom" which to a Pathan means tribal autonomy and a fierce hatred of all outside interference, burns like a flame in the breast of every tribesman.

But when all this (and any more that may be justified) has been said, the fact remains that the picture which Pathan society presents to the outside world today is nearer anarchy than social progress, nearer lawlessness than ordered government, nearer political darkness and depression than enlightenment. We look in vain for established tribunals, or a well-defined and recognised procedure for the settlement of tribal disputes, and for a proper record of judicial decisions. We see on every side the despair that leads men to resort to direct action to redress wrongs, and to invest all their savings in weapons of war. We see a wastage of natural resources, a depressed economy and a diversion of youth from profitable pursuits to gangsterism. And over all, like a menacing cloud, hangs a sullen suspicion of the foreigner who seeks to introduce civilisation by the construction of roads and fortified posts, and by the oft-repeated cry of "law and order". Despair is wonderfully infectious, and if it has taken a hold on tribal mentality, it has left its mark no less on the policy of Government.

A brighter aspect of recent Government penetration is the opportunity it has afforded for a larger number of tribesmen than ever before to come into personal contact with British officers of culture and education, and with Indian officials (often of Pathan extraction) trained and educated in British India. These officials, too, have been enabled, as never before, to study tribal conditions on the spot, and to bring technical skill to bear on some of the economic problems of tribal territory.

Furthermore, a considerable proportion of the expenditure on Government roads and other construction work has passed into the hands of tribal contractors, who have acquired a new wealth and a new experience of modern business methods. But with the completion of most of the larger works hitherto contemplated, this source of wealth and experience has dried up, and local officials have their hands too full with routine work to deal with the wider aspects of the tribal problem.

At the heart of the problems therefore lies the inescapable fact that we are faced with a breakdown of the tribal system, a fact which constitutes a serious threat to the safety of India on the threshold of a new age. But while this is no time for complacency, still less is it a time for despair. Equally with the rest of India, the North-West Frontier awaits eagerly the advent of an age in which full scope will be provided for the development of its natural resources, and for political advancement in line with the rest of India. The whole of the Indus Right Bank area, as far as the Durand Line, lends itself naturally to economic development as a single unit, but access to the undoubted resources that this area possesses is impossible without political stability, and this brings us right up against the tribal problem.

It is important also that the cultural aspect of the problem should not be overlooked. It would be a grave mistake to regard the Pathan tribes as on the

same cultural level as primitive animist tribes to be found elsewhere in India. Unlike the animist, the Pathan tribesman is separated from his Muslim co-religionists in British India by a cultural gap which is bridgeable, and can be measured in terms of education and political development. (Take for example the flourishing colony of 40,000 Pathans in Bombay, many of them from Transfrontier areas, headed by a distinguished Trans-Frontier Pathan who has risen to the dignity of a Justice of the Peace.) But so long as it remains, this gap is a danger to ordered society, because it is a breeding ground of suspicion, hate and war. For this reason, no Indian Central or Regional Government can afford to ignore the existence of an unsolved tribal problem on the North-West Frontier without endangering the safety of India itself.

In approaching the tribal problem, we must be careful to avoid generalisation on the one hand, and particularisation on the other. For instance, it is not enough merely to say that the solution is a gradual civilising process, or to go to the other extreme and say that the problem is an economic one, and all that we really have to do is to provide the tribesmen with adequate means of livelihood. Like all human problems, the one we are dealing with is complex, and is concerned with the whole range of human needs and aspirations from the government and welfare of the community as a whole to the health, happiness and livelihood of the individual. Nor must we exclude the external aspect of the problem, viz., the relations of the tribesmen with British India on the one side and Afghanistan on the other. But when all is said and done, what the tribesmen need above everything else is ordered government, as a foundation on which to build the peace and prosperity of the whole community.

Those of us who have been reared and educated in an ordered society have no difficulty in appreciating the value of sound government. We demand it, in fact, from every Ministry that is placed in power as the result of a free election; we demand it also from the permanent officials who comprise the various services in British India. On the face of it, there is no reason why the tribes who inhabit the Tribal Areas should not be brought to realise this fundamental need of all human beings living together in communities.

It may be, that if we study the Pathan tribal system carefully, we shall find that it already contains very precise provisions (somewhat out of date perhaps, and not entirely suited to modern conditions) for the government of the tribe, and that under the stresses and strains of recent years, these provisions have become corrupted or have fallen into disuse. There is indeed every reason to believe that this is so; for no tribal community in the world has been known to survive from time immemorial to the present day, without developing a just and effective form of self-government, however simple and primitive it may be, judged by modern standards.

And so, we can reasonably assume that if we approach the tribes in a spirit of goodwill on this subject of government, we shall get an encouraging response, and that our problem will resolve itself into the comparatively simple one of discovering the form of government best suited to Pathan genius, and best calculated to bring the tribes into line with conditions prevailing in British India. Our object, as we have said before, is not only to provide inside the tribal area a sound foundation for peace and social and economic progress, but also to reduce the present cultural gap between the tribes and British India, with which they are politically, racially and economically connected.

There appear to be two alternative forms of government capable of serving the above purposes: firstly, absorption in the North-West Frontier Province, and

secondly, self-government in accordance with the indigenous tribal system, modified where necessary, to suit modern conditions. I purposely exclude a third possible alternative, namely absorption in an existing Frontier State, such as Dir or Swat, because the present form of government in these States is of the dictatorial variety, which is not only foreign to Pathan tradition, but also at variance with the constitutional democratic trend in British India.

Of the two alternatives before us, no one with experience of Pathans would for a moment doubt the form of government that they would choose; no one else perhaps would seriously expect them to choose any other form but that with which by long tradition they are familiar. We do not think that any reasonable person would contemplate imposing on the tribes against their will a foreign system of government which would destroy all remnants of their tribal identity. Such a suggestion would be contrary to all previous declarations of policy by the Government of India, none of which has ever mentioned conquest as an ultimate objective.

We have arrived at the conclusion therefore that the first step in the solution of the tribal problem must be a reconstruction of the tribal system, modified where necessary to suit modern conditions. But out of this conclusion a number of questions arise, to which some answer will have to be given, before the Government of India can be expected to sponsor the proposal, and to give practical effect to it through the agency of Frontier officials.

First, how is the true tribal system of government to be unravelled from the tangle of abuse and corruption which now surrounds it? Secondly, assuming that it is possible to identify and reduce to writing the indigenous tribal system, will it satisfy modern standards of equity and good conscience sufficiently to justify its public and official support by the Government of India? Thirdly, would there be one Tribal State or a number of such states, and how would their relations with the Government of India, the Afghan Government, and the Government of the N.-W.F.P. be regulated?

Questions such as these (there are many others) cannot be answered satisfactorily without a good deal of research, and all that can be attempted here is a brief appreciation of the extent and value of the information now available on the subject of the Pathan tribal system. Unfortunately, little attention has been given to this aspect of the Frontier problem by past British administrators, and no authoritative treatise on the political constitution of the various tribes is in existence. All Political Officers with Frontier experience, however, possess some knowledge of the subject, and more still can be obtained from Pathans on both sides of the administrative border.

There is also a considerable volume of material available in the record rooms of Frontier Districts and Agencies, which contain the files of numerous judicial cases decided by reference to tribal jirgas, or Councils of Elders. When I was Political Agent at Malakand from 1939—1941, I unravelled by means of these records a part of the original tribal judicial system of the Yusafzai. A judicious selection of the older and more reliable cases, containing unanimous findings by constitutional jirgas, and their classification under the various heads of crime and civil dispute, enabled me to distinguish fairly clearly between those in which the procedure observed was in accordance with the true customary law, and those in which it was not. I then tested my conclusions out on a whole series of new cases, and in close consultation with the jirgas evolved a body of up-to-date tribal case law, which has now become the foundation of a regular legal system.

This system the jirgas can and do operate on their own, with only nominal assistance from Government officials (jirga findings are still approved by the Political Agent, and appeals still lie to a Commissioner F.C.R.) This has revolutionised the whole outlook of the tribe. Having been for many years dependent on Government officials for the settlement of all disputes, the tribe has now recovered much of its old self-reliance, and is even ready for a further constitutional advance. Preliminary discussions have already taken place with the tribal jirgas with a view to the setting up of a single representative jirga of the Yusafzai (to sit at first under the presidency of the Political Agent) to take over the administration of all departmental activities (such as Education, Medical, Agriculture, etc.) in their areas with the necessary financial powers, much on the lines of a District Board in British India.

An interesting point about this experiment is that the tribes concerned inhabit an "administered" tribal area, where they have been subjected to a large measure of direct control by Government officials. Their tribal system had therefore suffered considerably more damage than those of other more independent tribes, who have not been under direct Government control. My experience of the rapid recovery of the Yusafzai encourages me to believe that the recovery of other tribes will at least be equally rapid.

I do not wish to minimise the difficulties ahead, but however formidable they may be, the Malakand experiment has at least shown, firstly, that approached in a spirit of goodwill the tribes can respond enthusiastically to a lead in the direction of ordered self-government; secondly, that it is possible for some one without expert knowledge to uncover and bring to life again a part of the indigenous tribal system, and, thirdly, that the legal system revealed in the case of the Yusafzai still has the sanction of the tribe, conveys a high standard of justice, and is closely allied to the Muslim law of Shariat. The local Qazis, while maintaining the Shariat Law for all tribesmen willing to accept it, never offered any opposition, open or secret, to the regularisation of the tribal customary law, and assured me personally of their satisfaction at the results achieved.

But let us not be satisfied with anything less than an expert scientific investigation into all aspects of this important matter. There are, after all, other Islamic tribes now in existence, besides the Pathans. In Arabia, Kurdistan, Syria and Morocco, Islamic tribal systems are functioning more or less in a state of independence. Access to these tribes is comparatively easy, and there is probably already a mass of material available on their political constitutions. I suggest therefore that the Pathan tribal systems on the North-West Frontier of India should be studied without delay by a Commission of experts, including an eminent British scientist with experience of tribal (particularly Islamic tribal) constitutions in other parts of the world, and also with experience of the working of what is known as the Lugard policy of "indirect rule", as applied by the Colonial Office to some African tribes. I am not of course recommending any application of African tribal customs to Pathans of the North-West Frontier. The only possible connection between these completely diverse sets of tribal systems is one of principle and policy.

There is an obvious value in testing by scientific observation of tribal systems all over the world the moral standards inherent in the Pathan tribal system, and the extent to which reliance can be placed on it to promote the moral and material advancement of our tribal communities. Englishmen possessing this knowledge to an eminent degree are to be had for the asking in England, and

Digitized by GOOGIO

one could be deputed to the Government of India for a fixed period of duty. Among Frontier officials, both British and Indian, there is no lack of suitable men, experienced in the practical handling of Pathan tribesmen. With a Commission composed of such men, much valuable research work could be done, which would provide the Government of India with all the information they require to formulate a definite policy.

If the final objective may be defined as the willing acceptance by the tribes east of the Durand Line of a permanent and honourable place in the social, political and economic life of India, this will only be achieved by positive action. The old principle of non-interference in tribal domestic affairs is no longer in keeping with modern times, if it leaves the Pathan tribes isolated in a "No Man's Land", doomed to permanent outlawry for no other offence than that they cling tenaciously to their ancient tribal traditions. The more recent idea that external pressure on the tribal system, if applied strongly and consistently enough, and if combined with some vague "civilising" processes, would eventually wear down the tribal spirit and reduce the Pathan to the level of an ordinary Indian villager, must now be abandoned, if only because it would take too long.

India, like the rest of the world, is rapidly becoming "planning-minded", and the conception of democratic government is fast changing from the static to the dynamic. The economic development of the whole Indus Right Bank area as far as the Durand Line cannot be held up much longer, and no Government of the North-West Frontier Province can develop its own resources to the full until the Tribal Areas are merged for planning and development purposes within the Province as a single economic unit.

The approach to the tribal problem here advocated would call for a combined British Indian administrative effort of a high order; but with it would go a strong moral and intellectual appeal, which would not be without effect on the officials entrusted with the responsibility of promoting the development of tribal mentality towards a clearly defined objective. From private conversations I have had with Congress and Muslim League Ministers of the N.-W.F.P., I believe that such an effort would be equally welcome to both of the major political parties in India. The sympathetic interest of the Afghan Government is eminently desirable, as it would remove a possible complication—my own experience in Afghanistan leads me to believe that it would be readily given.

From the Englishman's point of view, what could be more fitting than that the British connection with this historic frontier should reach its fulfilment in the accomplishment of a task that would command the respect of the world, give added security to India, and cement for ever the old and very genuine friendship between the Englishman and the Pathan.

#### **MARINE INSURANCE\***

BY COMMANDER E. C. STREATFEILD JAMES, O.B.E., R.I.N.

"Now these are the laws of the Navy Unwritten and varied they be And he who is wise will observe them Going down in his ship to the sea."

THE old adage "A stitch in time saves nine" is very appropriate to the whole aspect of morale, whether during peace or war. When our bodies are diseased we invariably rely upon the medical profession to restore us to health and strength, but how frequently does the doctor say: "If only you had taken prophylactic action all this might have been avoided?"

Morale, until a few years ago, was viewed as a new word to describe "esprit de corps" or "pride of ship," but the recent war has taught us that, rather than being the re-incarnated spirit of our forebears, it is the very essence of manpower economy. Not until we realised that every able-bodied man had to be used did we begin to appreciate where lay the main causes for lack of efficiency and the resultant wastage. Given a reasonably intelligent healthy body, it became apparent that if efficiency could not be produced without undue wastage, there might be something radically wrong with the system. Each body is a human entity possessing a mind and a will of its own; and it is the process of developing the mind in the correct direction which constitutes the basis of morale.

There have been and still are a great many anomalies in service conditions amongst the three fighting Services, and much remains to be done to smooth them away. Basically, a sailor, soldier or airman should have much the same to look forward to, though the paths to their respective goals must of necessity lie along varying terrain even as the elements in which they serve are widely different.

The successful prosecution of the sea profession demands a sound know-ledge of men, and a high degree of sympathy with men in their various trials and difficulties, which are perhaps more evident at sea than in the other Services. This perquisite, which ranks high amongst officer-like qualities, requires to be highly developed in a country such as India, with the diverse conditions of life amongst its many peoples.

If a ship is to be thoroughly efficient the morale of her ship's company must be high, else she will be unable to acquit herself well in times of stress and emergency. Morale must, therefore, constantly be foremost in the minds of all Commanding Officers, and even more so of Staff Officers at Headquarters. The Higher Direction cannot afford to divorce itself from the life of the Service, for administration of personnel and material demands a particularly high knowledge of the men themselves and the uses to which their equipment are to be put. No staff officer, to be of any real value, can afford to cut himself off from the men of the Service for long periods, without detrimental effects to that Service. Fundamentally, the problem is one of developing and maintaining the men's confidence, both professionally and personally, in their own Service. The men must be happy and satisfied in their work, having confidence that it

<sup>\*</sup> Owing to particularly heavy pressure on space this interesting and constructive article has had to be held over for the past three issues of the "Journal," and in view of events which occurred meanwhile it is but fair to the author to explain that it was penned some time ago—Ed., U. S. I. Journal.

has a purpose behind it which, though not always apparent to themselves, is surely evident in the minds of the Higher Direction.

Many factors tend to disturb morale. Chief among them is when men have grounds for assuming inefficiency amongst the officers with whom they more frequently come in contact. Boredom, so common to the sea-faring man on patrol or long passages and when swinging to an anchor, coupled with physical discomfort in small ships in hot climates, may well contribute to the wearing down of morale; envy of others whose lot may appear to be brighter than theirs; and, finally, defeatism will also undermine the morale of any ship or establishment. In turning from war to peace, conditions vary a great deal. Much of the thrill and excitement of a naval service may tend to disappear with the advent of peacetime routine, but for a high standard of efficiency to be maintained, morale must be kept constant, and no pains can be spared to achieve this end.

We are passing through a transitional stage when many men are likely to return to civil employment, and even greater numbers may find themselves out of work, owing to inevitable reductions which follow in the wake of war. The presence of such temporary service men amongst those who have elected and are selected to retain the navy as their careers, may well have a disturbing influence. It is, therefore, doubly necessary that those who remain should be contented. This contentment cannot be achieved unless terms and conditions of service with future prospects of advancement and promotion are faithfully reproduced before the minds of the men, so that they can satisfy themselves of their choice. In this the Higher Direction must shoulder the responsibility of feeding Commanding Officers with adequate reliable information, so that they may faithfully transmit it to the men under their command.

Evasive answers and pious hopes during this interim period between war and peace, will breed a sense of insecurity between officers and men. It is, therefore, essential that only such information as has the authority of the Higher Direction should be distributed for consumption by the lower deck, and in this a note of warning is struck to all officers, whatever their rank.

We have passed through a period where recruitment has been out of all proportion to the size of the regular Royal Indian Navy, and consequently, though all recruits have been volunteers, those undergoing wartime training have not received the gentler introductions to naval life that their regular brothers entering as boys enjoyed. They have been required to develop into qualified seamen almost before they set foot aboard ship. The same applies to officers. With experience these men have developed, some more rapidly than others, into sailors in every sense of the word, and during the initial stages there has been a sense of potential instability.

Training has perforce had to be carried out on shore, so that much of our war time navy has subsequently had to face the discomfort of sea life with a jerk. Sea-sickness is not the least of these jerks, and though frequently regarded in an amusing vein, is far from a joke when actually suffered under service conditions. With the black-out, and ships battened down at night, conditions below decks have frequently been extremely unpleasant, and it speaks worlds for both officers and men of the "Wartime Navy" that the high degree of efficiency achieved was reached within such a short space of time.

Leave, which is a subject very much in the forefront of every sailor's mind, has had to take the rearmost place, consequent upon the exigencies of the Service. Recreation, too, so far as team games on shore are concerned, has often

had to be abandoned for long stretches at a time. With lack of leave facilities, its domestic worries have increased, and in the minds of some have become unduly magnified. Infrequent arrival of mails, too, contributed not a little to the disturbing of moral equilibrium. Long periods of separation, and deprivation of the normal amenities of life, have required much self-control, and here it is that the good divisional officer has played so important a part, with his practical sympathy and knowledge of conditions. Welfare, too, has taken its share, but this latter organisation is yet in its infancy, and requires to be considerably developed during peace if it is to be of the value which it should be during war.

There is untold scope for Inter Service Welfare and Civil Liaison in the countryside amongst families of serving men, in affording advice and assistance in the diverse variety of domestic problems which arise. The development of these organisations should materially assist in reducing the numbers of cases of overstayal of leave, with their consequential penalties which all tend to reduce morale.

Health has been an important factor. It is essential that it be maintained at the highest pitch in order that the rigours of the weather and discomforts of hermetically-closed ships may be met with a smile and a joke. Ill-health is frequently the cause of a tendency towards fear. It is natural to every man to be apprehensive of the unknown, but it is the degree to which he can control this apprehension which counts in the time of stress. Once actual fear becomes apparent, direct action must be taken to remove the individual, lest the infection spreads.

The absence of the sailor from his family re-acts upon his nearest and dearest, probably more acutely than upon himself, with the consequence that they write letters to him fearing for his welfare. Such letters frequently prove a disturbing influence amongst members of a ship's company, and the welfare organisation should be directed towards educating families of serving men in the type of letter to write to their men folk. In that way much assistance to the maintenance of morale can be given by the men's families.

On board ship much can be done to assist in maintaining morale by providing small amenities, such as radios, gramophones, books and games, and wherever possible by organising concert parties and picnics. Good food, however, is one certain tonic, and close attention to cooking and menus for all on board should be the constant care of Commanding Officers of all ships.

It is never possible to provide man with all his requirements in the compact space available in a ship of war, but the best use of that space can always be made. Complaints must be expected, but so long as these are healthy and constructive, no danger to morale may be expected. In fact a healthy complaint or suggestion is the sign of a potentially happy man, for it shows that he is using his spare time to improve his surroundings and better the conditions of his mess mates.

Newcomers to ships are frequently ignorant of the Service channels through which complaints and suggestions should be made, and divisional officers must ensure that men do not become disgruntled through any feeling of inferiority complex, or fear of being unheeded should they voice their feelings. All officers and subordinates must realise their duties in this respect and help to put the newcomer in the way of doing the right thing, at the right time, in the right place.

Many types make up a ship's company. Amongst them may be feel the studious and intellectual ratings who are not entirely satisfied with a six song or a game of karim in the dog watches, but prefer their text books set ratings should be given every assistance and encouragement. It is a matual set healthy form of ambitious enterprise from which the Service stands to benefit in the long run. Whilst there will always be "hewers of wood and drawed water", the potential talent amongst ratings for higher advancement are promotion has to be nurtured. It is from this source alone that sound development on and promotion from the lower deck can be ensured.

India is not naturally sea-minded and, therefore, both offices and as must develop a sea spirit which they can impart to their children, so that the soul of the sea may reach the homes of the masses. Whilst the Navy is an integrate of the harmonious—whole of the Defence Services it does claim a percial and special desire to be inculcated amongst its personnel, which can only be gendered by connections with the sea and ships.

Another healthy influence upon morale is the timely recognition of entranding service. Many ratings have but few opportunities of coming into the public eye, and it is, therefore, the duty of every commanding officer to recognise outstanding ability, and make it his personal business to see that such services adequately recognised by higher authority. Only by such action will the marked itself the services of some great machine, operated by unwerponsive Olympians from their etherial seat and removed many hundreds of miles from the sound and sight of the sea and those that sail upon it.

The personal touch at all times is indispensable, and tolerance, sympaths and patience, combined with firmness, humour and dignity, should invariable be the guiding principles in Service life, for nothing can be gained by arrows which may not be won by grace.

# Russian Scientific Research

Scientists in Russia are experiencing an all-round improvement in the economic status. Front-ranking scientists are receiving record salaries in the Soviet Union to-day, some getting as much as 20,000 or 30,000 roubles month, or about £400 to £600. Moreover, they get special rations, country houses, and so on.

In the same way Russia's enormous army of teachers, who had a we thin time during the war, are now receiving decent houses, bigger salaries at other facilities. All this is an encouragement to themselves and to other, and it represents the principle of the gradual extension of good living to more more people.

Fundamentally, the Russians are thinking in terms of a peaceful fature but of an extremely strong Russia holding her own. The attention given to be problem of atomic energy is very interesting. Hundreds of popular lectures a atomic energy are going to be given in the coming months, some in Moscow parts atomic energy are going to be given in the coming months, some in Moscow parts at underlying theme of these lectures, as a recent three-column article in President and out is that Russia is very interested in the peaceful possibilities of atomic

#### RAISING A REGIMENT

#### Ву "Тоот"

MANY new units have been raised since 1939, and there must be in India quite a wealth of experience of different and there must be in India quite a wealth of experience of difficulties and snags which such undertakings involve. There are also probably many weighty reports on these diffiniculties, and how best to overcome them.

But perhaps a less ponderous account of the experiences of one officer who embarked on the undertaking may be of some interest and even some value. Anyhow, for what it is worth, here is the story of the raising of a regiment.

In the hot weather of 1939 I was the Administrative Commandant of an Indian Territorial Unit. I also ran the local U.T.C., and was the Vice-President of one or two District Soldiers' Boards. But in spite of these various appointments my day was not a busy one, and for the first time in my life I reached a standard which made it profitable to play snooker for money (the club was next door to the office).

Even in the very old world cantonment which was my H.Q., ancestral voices got no special credit for prophesying war. We re-wrote standing orders, we reviewed our stores, and intensified our recruiting efforts. We did all we could think of in readiness for rapid embodiment. In view of the international tension, a very junior and very charming young officer was sent to me as Adjutant. He professed absolute ignorance of, and little interest in, any regimental administration—but he was no mean snooker player and as things stood no more was needed. When the time came for work I could not ask for a more loyal assistant.

On September 3 we were informed that we were at war with Germany but no orders came for embodiment, and although other I.T.F. units were called up, we were unaffected. Week after week we awaited our mobilization or embodiment orders, but none came, and we began to realise that we were the "poor relation" of the I.T.F. Our military value was evidently not rated very high. This perhaps was not surprising. The unit consisted of two companies of Infantry which were seldom up to strength. We were in a part of India notorious more for the violence of its politics than the prowess of its fighting men, and anyhow it was a "phoney war."

In October we were thrilled to hear that we were to be visited by a distinguished personage from the General Staff. The Adjutant (George we will call him) rose to the occasion. He had the office dusted and stuck up maps and charts showing recruiting figures. He had never contacted a senior General Staff Officer, and was out to be impressed. Half an hour before the great man arrived, as we were sitting at our office tables, he noticed a serious defect. The engagement block on my desk was out of date and innocent of any kind of engagement note; the few engagements of our first few months of the war could be remembered without such aids. He quickly removed the out of date sheet and filled the current ones with blue pencilled notes of engagements which were imposing in their number but, I fear, mostly fictitious. - Digitized by Google

100

Œ

We were ready, and very soon the great man arrived. He shook George considerably by knowing both our names in advance, the strength of the unit and its composition. He wanted to know whether we could raise the unit to a full battalion, and if so, how long it would be before we would be ready to take on an internal security role. I had, of course, often considered the question, but in view of the difficulty of keeping two Companies up to strength and remembering the very unfavourable opinions of some of my predecessors about the unit, I had never been too confident of being able to raise a whole battalion.

However, when an official opinion was suddenly called for I reflected that the recruiting area had a population of only slightly less than that of the British Isles, and surely from among them a thousand good men could be found! In a a moment of optimism I said I could raise a battalion. The question of how long it would take required some calculation. The unit was still "disembodied," and my permanent staff consisted of George, a clerk, a regular Q.M.H., and, of course, Abbas, the peon, who was also the bugler when the unit was embodied for annual training.

Those already enrolled would have to be called up, I myself would have to go out into the districts and enroll 500 men and I would have to find and train at least six new senior grade officers (2nd-Lieutenants) from among the educated youth of the province. Again in a moment of optimism I said we should be ready to carry out our role in six months, but how I ever supposed that it could be done in the time I still cannot imagine. However, it was.

When the great man had gone, George and I looked at one another, and for the first time I felt that the war was catching up with us. For the first time in his life George looked solemn. Our immediate problems were three. First, to call up the men already enlisted, next to enrol 500 recruits, and thirdly, to induce the Training Battalion to which we were affiliated to provide a training staff.

The first was easy and merely required signatures and dates on forms already prepared. Their reception and the preparation of the camp was a matter of routine, but everything in the way of tents, cook-houses, etc., had to be doubled at very short notice. Indents for masses of stores and equipment must be made out at once. When in doubt in such matters we knew how to start. We called for the clerk, the head clerk but, alas, the only clerk. He was a magnificent person with 40 years service, and knew the answer to most things. He knew the answer to this one. It was plain hard work.

From that day on for the next 18 months the old man typed in a cloud of cigarette smoke from 7 a.m. until 11 p.m. He never seemed to stop. Throughout that time he was almost single-handed. He knew every regulation and every new order; he forgot nothing. How exactly you raise a new battalion without such a person I don't know, and there cannot be many of them. So much for Problem No. One.

Problem Two, recruiting 500 men, was more difficult. The normal recruiting organization was not available to us. Recruiting officers seldom, if ever, visited the area. It was necessary to write to likely people all over the two provinces, and ask them to have volunteers ready for inspection at stated times and places. Many of these places could only be reached by journeys by train, boat, and that worst of bad vehicles, the ekka. We sent out parties of our older "members," as I.T.F. soldiers were referred to. We provided them with notched sticks and knotted tapes, so that they could roughly gauge height and chest measurement, but in spite of these aids their ideas about suitable recruits seldom conformed with mine.

As I have already said, most of the districts were not regular recruiting areas. In many there was no tradition of army service. Its absence led to all sorts of complications. Sometimes a huge crowd awaited me outside some Circuit House or Inspection Bungalow, all fighting each other to get a place in the queue for preliminary inspection. After making a selection and turning away a much larger party of deeply disappointed rejections one went to have a meal, to find, on returning an hour later, all the selected recruits had changed their minds and firmly refused to join. Their various relations had caught up with them and forbidden them to leave.

To give them time to settle their affairs before leaving I tried the system of giving each selected recruit a signed pass, and said I would collect them in a week. This was a complete failure; the passes had been sold as many as three times by the end of the week, and the Ganga Ram who presented himself at the next meeting was usually a very poor substitute for the broad-chested Ganga Ram whom I had selected the week before. Having paid a large sum for this pass he also felt deeply wronged when he was not accepted.

On another occasion a large party of would-be recruits were being rejected with monotonous regularity by the M. O. for hydrocele. They were deeply chagrined that, what was to them such a trifling and locally almost univer al complaint, should disqualify them for the army. Suddenly the word went round that I could override the M. O's decision. Apparently my predecessor when visiting the same place some years previously, had asked the M. O. not to reject minor cases of hydrocele.

Whatever the cause may have been I suddenly found myself surrounded by a shouting crowd exhibiting the affected parts for my inspection. "Zarur bara hain, magar itna bara nahin hain" they all explained. The standard on which I could base my estimate of normality being strictly limited and personal, I felt at a loss, but the doctor was adamant, and in spite of (or because of) their riches they went away sorrowing.

So much for recruiting. It was a strenuous month, but we got recruits.

The question of new officers promised to settle itself. Word went round that officers were required, and I was overwhelmed with applications. The office was constantly visited by venerable gentlemen asking that their son's or nephew's application should be favourably considered. Large numbers of young men called in person, and others again wrote and sent telegrams.

I considered placing the matter in the hands of a Selection Board with a member of the Advisory Committee on it, but no board can really estimate the relative merits of a succession of young men who appear before them for five-minute conversation. It is not, in fact, a question of merit, but rather an attitude to life which needs to be estimated in candidates for commissions.

One fact was outstanding. Everyone, both candidates and their venerable sponsors, were all firmly convinced that officers merely had to dress well, behave becomingly, and learn some words of command in drill. Nothing which I could say would convince them that officers had to work hard. Remember, it was still 1939. Everything that they had heard, read and seen of the life of officers in the nearby cantonment confirmed their opinion that an officer's job was almost a sinecure.

I therefore hit on a plan which very largely solved the selection problem, and at the same time corrected this wrong estimate of what is required of an officer in wartime. Any young man who was reasonably well educated and

medically fit was accepted at once. I formed a cadet platoon; the applicate had to join the I.T.F. as sepoys, they had separate tents, and were allowed supplement their messing up to Re. 1 a day. They had to undergo a fairly as nuous recruit's course with the rest of the recruits, but were given extra instruction office routine when the recruits were resting.

Many of the applicants, when they heard the terms and saw the tests when they had to live (four or more in a 160 pounder), decided that a military life halm appeal for them. Others joined, but after a week or more of recruits drill gas up the unequal struggle and asked for their discharge. At the end of the months there were a dozen or more very fit and smart young men from when select, all of whom I knew fairly well and had watched for three months. When we selected the best I cannot, of course, be sure, but they have all done well, saw brilliantly.

The third problem, that of getting a training staff out of the Training Battalion, was not easy to solve. I was too busy to go there personally as plead my cause. Expansion had begun and instructors were at a premium. In the nature of things we got what was left. However, as compensation I was as two senior S.U.L. officers who had recently rejoined. Both were experiment regimental officers of a regiment confining itself to one well-known fighting class. Although I suspect that in their hearts they did not share my enthusiasm for the experiment in widening the basis of recruiting areas for the Indian Army, they we nonetheless invaluable.

An experiment it most certainly was. The recruits were of two distinct types. One type were plainsmen, men whose ancestors had served in the arm, Rajputs, Brahmans and Mussalmans whose districts have been left behind in the general move of recruiting areas north-westwards. The other type was the aboriginal from the forest-covered hill country. These had never served in the army. They themselves would never have suggested such a thing. Even the local civil servants and police officers were almost unanimous in saying that them men would never make soldiers. They said they would not be susceptible to discipline for more than a month or two on end, they were not sufficiently intelligent, and none of them would ever make an N.C.O., far less a V.C.O. They always argued that as two or three constables could usually disperse a crowd of several hundreds of them, their fighting value could not be very high.

My own experience of them was confined to my observations out shooting when they served as beaters. When walking up a wounded tiger they seemed much less alarmed than I was, in spite of having only bows and arrows while had a double-barrelled rifle. To me men who went out after tiger with bows and arrows were not devoid of courage, and they were certainly cheerful, truthely and tough.

They were not quite without admirers, and several missionaries (and one European official) who had all spent their lives among them, believed in their potential merits as soldiers. There seemed to be some similarity between these jungle folk and Chins and Kachins of the Burma Rifles who make splendid soldiers.

Another prophecy by the sceptics was that the Brahmans, Rajputs and Mohammedans could never live in good comradeship with aboriginals, whom they regarded as savages and menials. This very real difficulty and many other were overcome largely due to the good offices of a Rajput pensioned V.C.O. who

V.C.O. (who became Subedar-Major) completely solved all difficulties connected with the very rigid caste rules of the local Brahmans and Rajputs about food and cooking.

The ritual necessary to prepare food and to prepare the eater to eat it was so elaborate that it took some three hours to have a hot meal. Any slight variation from their village diet and method of cooking was condemned as contrary to their caste rules. The Subedar-Major somehow persuaded them that such rigid ideas were old-fashioned, and today there is simply no problem. Rajputs and Brahmans, Aboriginals and Mohammedans have lived happily in small detachments together for weeks on end, and each learned much from the other about food to their great mutual advantage.

Organizing 800 civilians into a self-contained smooth-running unit brings out very starkly how much of minor administration is taken for granted in an old-established regiment. How exactly does the C. Q. M. Havildar divide out the rations to the cook-house? How exactly does the Battalion Orderly Havildar spend his day? All these things had to be legislated for in great detail. It made sus realize the tremendous value of continuity and tradition.

We were dealing with 800 civilians, mostly illiterate, in uniform and with the illiterate man's suspicion that he is being done down. Many recruits after handling a large number of sacks of rice and tins of ghee on ration fatigue were convinced that they were not getting their full "whack" of food at the cookhouse. We carefully weighed out a man's ration for a day, cooked it and tastefully arranged it on two plates representing the morning and evening meals. Two such plates were exhibited at each cookhouse, and everyone who reckoned he had got less than the specimen meals was invited to come and say so.

Again, illiterate people rely much more on rumours than the official word, so it was necessary to explain everything and broadcast as much information of day-to-day happenings as possible, so as to forestal the rumour-mongers. We found that if they understood the reason for the many rules and orders they were much more ready to obey them cheerfully. The old Indian Army custom of "open durbar" was a great help.

Another turning point in the general build-up of the battalion was the arrival of new British officers from England. It was essential to inspire them with an enthusiasm for making the battalion a success. They had to be made to realize that they were something of pioneers, and were part of a team which had the important and thrilling job of widening the basis of recruiting by training new classes of hitherto untried men.

We were particularly lucky. There was no lack of enthusiasm in those that came to us, although there was a very definite preconceived prejudice against senior officers of the Indian Army. They were not to blame for this. The Press and stage has, of course, for years made Indian Army Colonels the butt of their jests, but in recent years a number of more serious writers had condemned all senior officers so consistently and bitterly that they (senior officers) could hardly expect anything more than formal politeness and concealed contempt from young men from England.

It was amusing to notice how they reacted, and after formally paying respects to those they took to be irascible figureheads, they looked round for some younger officers to tell them what was doing. It was amusing, too, to notice how it slowly dawned on them that, in spite of their preconceived ideas, some senior officers were still human, and quite active in spite of their grey hair, and sometimes even capable of independent thought quite unconnected with

either parade grounds or "Poonah". Each instance of comparatively human behaviour or conversation by a senior officer was a fresh surprise, but the arrivals were generous enough tacitly to admit that their preconceived notion needed some adjustment, and meanwhile they mostly identified themselves with the battalion and became enthusiastic members of it. Those who were unable to do so were soon found employment in other spheres.

Even more important than the absorbi g of these British officers was the arrival earlier of a pre-war I.C.O. in place of George. He was a tall imposing person from a very famous upcountry regiment. All the young Indian officers at once looked to him for guidance. It would have been very understandable if in his chagrin at being posted to a new and unheard-of unit of nominally non-martial men, some expressions of contempt had escaped him. Such expressions, however understandable, would have been fatal. The men would have lost confidence in themselves, and the new officers would have lost sympathy with the men.

However, those expressions of contempt were never uttered. He was too big a man with too wide an outlook to allow race prejudices and personal feelings to wreck our efforts, anyhow until he was persuaded by personnel experience that the experiment was a failure. It was unquestionably to this officer's broadmindedness and co-operation in many difficult times that the experiment turned out a success.

To watch the steady transition of a rather comical motley into an organized unit is, perhaps, the most gratifying of all experiences for those responsible for the process. There were, of course, had patches, periods when everyone seemed to lose enthusiasm, epidemics of mass nostalgia, with consequent absentenism and applications for discharge. On one occasion some ten aboriginals were brought up for being absent for 36 hours. They admitted the absence, and admitted that they knew that it was against orders, but gave as a reason (to them perfectly adequate) that they had not been drunk for a month, there was no drink in camp, and everyone must get drunk sometimes; so they had gone back to their village to get drunk.

At one time it seemed impossible to get the men fit. Good food made them swell up with unhealthy looking fat, but training could not turn it into muscle. It seemed impossible to get them into hard condition. The answer was that over 90% had hook worm, and mass treatment carefully carried out and repeated soon overcame the difficulty. Mentally and physically they became more energetic and alert.

At the large industrial town where we were employed on our first Internal Security role, subversive propaganda and political agitation became a serious menace. The area was full of it. It was manifest that the strictest bounds and the sternest security measures would have been useless. Our men were split up in small guards all over the works. We therefore decided that we must treat subversive influence like a contagious disease, and as we could not isolate ourselves from it we must be inoculated and become immune.

We started our own propaganda. We tried to find out or guess all the insidious arguments which the agitators were using or were likely to use, not we gave the answers to them in advance. We preached no political creed, of course, nor did we content ourselves with airy commonplaces about loyalty to King and country. We did point out that in any country and every country a political-minded army was a menace and led to disaster. We explained how this Government or any future government in India would always suspect and therefore disband a unit which had ever shown a political bias in any direction,

Digitized by GOOGIC

How the battalion survived the very difficult times of 1942, when our recruiting areas were the centre of the storm of political violence and open insurrection; how it was converted into a regular battalion when every man had to be given the choice of signing new terms for general service or alternatively taking his discharge (and discharge is a temptation to young soldiers with about a year or two of service when the newness has worn off), how in an emergency the men rose to the occasion when called upon at very short notice to leave their L of C job, and without preliminary training to march up into the hills and face advancing Japs; how they gained a feeling of ascendancy over the Japs and in fifteen months of hard living and hard marching, paid a dividend in dead Japs and gained a reputation as a fighting unit which any well-known regiment would be proud of; all this is no part of this account, except for the fact that it all happened.

The battalion was a success, a great success, as a fighting unit. Other battalions have been raised, and out of these beginnings a new regiment has

been added to the Indian Army.

It might so easily have failed. Physically the average man was not, in appearance, up to the standard of the better known fighting classes of Northern India. They had no tradition of service in the army. Many of them would freely admit before joining the army that they were neither as brave nor as strong as the men of the Punjab, and their appearance supported the admission.

The main reason for success was, I believe, the great emphasis we put on creating a proper spirit, esprit de corps. Stern discipline and heavy punishment is clearly valueless until the men believe in their hearts that the offences for which they are punished are in fact offences and against the common good. To be slack on guard is to them no real offence until there is a general desire on the part of the majority to have smart guards. A general desire for smartness must therefore be created before punishment for slackness. An understanding of the need for physical fitness and a general desire for it must be created before rigorous training starts. The same, of course, applies to all other forms of training.

How often in such matters is the cart put before the horse, and bewildered men find themselves undergoing 28 days R.I. before they ever understood the real nature of the offence, or they find themselves in a regime of back-breaking toil without knowing that the hardening process they are undergoing is only a

way of avoiding casualties in face of the enemy.

Another tremendous factor in getting good results was the doctor, the R.M.O. Our doctor was from Madras, and no unit could wish for a better M.O., but few are blessed with such a good one. Orders about hygiene, like all other orders, are only really effective if the great majority realize and believe in their efficacy. It was not necessary to force Mepacrine down the men's throats. They believed in it, they came for it, they took care that they did not run out of stock. The same was true of the many other medical edicts. A doctor who spared himself no efforts for the comfort of the sick, who was always at their disposal, and above all who was successful in his treatment of disease, was worth listening to, and they listened and obeyed.

But all these things can be said more briefly. We had a slogan, a guiding principle of conduct. It was this: "Every man must feel that every order, however harsh, however exacting, was a necessary well-thought out order. Every officer must feel that every order which he gave would be promptly and cheerfully obeyed". Among officers there must be no cliques and no quarrels. To

be still more brief, we went all out for, and we got, "a happy regiment".



#### THINGS PEOPLE SAY AND WRITE

"Insipid food makes morose people."—Mr. Frederick Keeble.

"Liverpool is to be the first British port to become all-radar."—Sir Robert Watson-Watt.

"Nelson kept the Grand Fleet in health by exercise and onions".—Mr. Frederick Keeble.

"Big Ben is probably the biggest propaganda instrument in the world.—" Mr. T. W. Berriff.

"Except for the Nobel Prize, a Swedish tribute, I am entirely undecorated."
---Mr. Bernard Shaw.

"More than six million Poles were killed during the war."—M. Rzymowski, Polisj, Foreign Minister.

"Pedigree is almost as important in aircraft as it is in horses or dogs."—

Mr. Ivor Thomas, M.P.

"It is enough to make a Civil Servant turn in his groove."—"Peterborough", in "The Daily Telegraph."

"The standard R.A.F. Meteor gets up to 30,000 ft. in exactly five minutes." —Charles Gardiner, B.B.C.

"Britain has come out of the war with a national debt of over £23,000,000,000".—Norman Crump.

"We are flying about 700,000 miles a week on 90 regular services on 30 routes".—Viscount Knollys, B.O.A.C.

"Non-talking railway carriages are more needed than non-smoking ones."

Miss E. R. Spalding, in "The Times."

"About 800 candidates for ordination in the Church of England come from the Eighth Army."—Announcement by the C. of E.

"British exports in April reached a new high level of £2,500,000 a day."—Mr. Marquand, Secretary for Overseas Trade, London.

"More than 90% of rubber trees in Borneo and Malaya are intact."—Mr. T. B. Barlow, Chairman, Rubber Growers' Association.

"The demobilisation of the Russian Army has been proceeding in a much bigger way than people abroad imagine."—Mr. Alexander Werth.

"B.O.A.C. have operated during the past forty months without a fatal accident to a passenger."—Lord Winster, Minister of Civil Aviation.

"America is offering Dakotas to the Chinese Government for £3,000 each; the r production cost is about £25,000."—Air Commodore Harvey, M.P.

"Britain spent considerably more on the development of radar than the £500,000,000 which was spent on the atomic bomb,"—Sir Robert Watson-Watt.

"The House of Commons contains a big bevy of Brigadiers, a considerable lutch of Colonels, and a monstrous mass of Majors."—Mr. Derek Walker-Smith, I.P.

"Great Britain, which has already made one contribution to UNRRA, as agreed to a further contribution of £75,000,000."—The Chancellor of the ExIndia Lagrange Lagra

"The total national income of Britain—that is, the incomes of everybody dded together—last year totalled £10,200,000,000; in 1938 it was £5,700,000,000".

-Mr. George Darling.

"Never has a Fighting Service become such an Empire force as the R.A.F. id during the war. I suggest that an Empire Air Force should be created".

\*\*Indiana Air Force should be created in the street of the street

"In four years of war the United States of America suffered a little more member han half the number of deaths that occurred in the American Civil War".—
"rofessor Sir Henry Tizard.

"When I left Gibraltar at the beginning of 1944 more than a million one of rock had been removed as a result of wartime tunnelling."—Lieut.-General ir Noel Mason Macfarlane, M.P.

"The lost foreign assets and new foreign debt of Great Britain amount of £4,000,000,000, or nearly double the damage done by bombing and damage done by German submarines".—Mr. Fred Vinson, U. S. Secretary of the Treasury.

"By March 31, 1946 the number of people engaged directly on war work n Great Britain—in the Forces and civil defence and munitions—had fallen rom 9,116,000 on V. E. Day to 3,949,000."—Official statement in London.

"There are now only 60 people in Britain with £6,000 a year left after paying noome-tax; in 1939 there were 7,000. Or, if you take a lower figure, 75,000 people 1939 had more than £2,000 a year left after paying income-tax, whereas now there are only 34,000."—Mr. Ernest Atkinson.

"Of 10,502 ex-officers registered as unemployed by the Appointments Department at the Ministry of Labour in London, thirty have asked for a salary of £1,500 and over, and 241 for between £1,000 and £1,500".—Mr. Ness Edwards, Parliamentary Secretary to the Ministry of Labour and National Service.

"The road from Jerusalem to Jericho is better than the road from London to Brighton. The administration of the Port of Haifa is as good as Liverpool. The streets of Tel Aviv are cleaner than any city in England. Why, oh, why, and con't we tell the world what we have done in Palestine?"—National News Letter.

"During the recent war nearly 51,000 officers and men of the Royal Navy excluding the navies of India and the Dominions and excluding the Royal Marines, were killed or are missing. This number exceeds by over 20,000 the numbers killed in the Navy during the war of 1914-18".—Mr. A. V. Alexander, M. P., First Lord of the Admiralty.

"I once received an order for two autogyros from the Chinese Government. The colour scheme was to be red and cream, to appeal to our Chinese friends, but when the aircraft were taken out of their crates they were found to be painted pale blue, which is the Chinese funeral colour. No one would go near them."

—Air Commodore Harvey, M. P.

"One of the sure signs of true power and authority is a willingual admit mistakes. The man whose authority is sound and whose notion right has no fear of admitting that in this or that case he was wrong. It is is man who doubts his authority who feels he cannot afford to admit him! mistaken."—The Rev. R. P. V. Scott.

"With the arrival within the next three years of air liners with across speed of more than 400 m.p.h. passengers for America will leave London at minight (British time) and arrive in New York at 7 a.m. (American Eastern time). Eastbound they will leave New York at 5 p.m. local time and land in Lordon at 10 a.m. (British time)."—E. Colston Shepherd.

"For several years I helped to instruct in the Hong Kong Flying Chi. Although subsidised by the Hong Kong Government we were not allowed to test the Chinese to fly; Europeans, yes—even Germans—could learn to fly at the expense of the Colony. There were probably a million young Chinese subject there who could claim British nationality, but neither there nor at Singapore we there a scheme whereby they could learn to defend their land in the air. If we had taught them, the result of the battle at Singapore might have been different.—Air Commodore Harvey, M.P.

"In the Luftwaffe the shortage of liquid fuel become insupportable as from September, 1944 onwards, since as from that date the allocation was cut done to 30,000 tons a month, whereas the monthly requirement amounted to betwee 160,000 and 180,000 tons. So far as the Army was concerned, the shortage of liquid fuel, which in this case was also due to supply difficulties, first became catastrophic at the time of the winter offensive of December, 16, 1944; and this was substantially responsible for the rapid collapse of the German defensive from against the Russian break-out from the Baranovo bridgehead. There were approximately 1,500 tanks ready for action, but those had only one or two fed supply units and were consequently immobilised".—Dr. Albrecht Spect, formal Reichminister for Armaments.

## The "Lord Nelson Pension"

The "Lord Nelson Pension" under which £725,000 has been distributed since it was initiated in 1805, is to be stopped. Legislation is to be introduced in the House of Commons cancelling the annuity of £5,000 paid to the heirs of the brother of the first Lord Nelson on the death of the present Earl or heir—his brother—should he survive him.

The present and fourth Lord Nelson, who is 88, lives a secluded life on his estate at Trafalgar House, near Salisbury. Since he succeeded to the title in 1913, he has drawn about £160,000. His connection with the great sailor is remote, for Horatio Nelson (the first Earl) died childless. So the title—and the annuity—passed to his brother, the Rev. William Nelson, who also died without a heir, and his nephow Thomas Bolton was created Lord Nelson. He continued to receive £5,000 a year.

The present Lord Nelson's brother and heir, Mr. Edward Agar Horako Nelson, who is 85, also lives at Trafalgar House, which was bought by Nelson's family for £90,000. The money came out of the original £120,000 voted to them by the Parliament of 1805.

# nority is it. and whom: he was mu. Ford to it.

m

#### **ENGINEERS IN INDIA'S MODERN ARMY**

#### By LIEUT-COLONEL B. D. KAPUR

Now the war is over the feats of these engineers on the battlefields, and the stupendous advancements made as a result of nation-wide concentrated researches will be gradually unfolded. Thousands of men gained manual skill and acquired inp-to-date technical knowledge and ability through short but intensive wartime was courses. Added to this, the versatile and varied field experiences brought knowledge in modern engineering to its peak in the Army.

Will this knowledge, gained at the heavy cost of lives and strained national finances, be allowed to rust and relapse to pre-war standards?

The Signals and the E.M.E. the two offshoots of the Royal Engineers of win World War I, developed into fully-fledged modern and independent Corps in World war II, the I.E.M.E. being an offspring of the late war. Set on an independent footing, these Corps are now concentrating on the production of the late post-war technical officer in the Indian Army. They all, in addition to develop-is wing his soldierly qualities, desire to make him an up-to-date technician.

But alas! the scope for development in India is limited, owing to the immature field for technical training of officers. Naturally, the tendency is to turn overseas for advanced training. This much, of course, seems to be realized, that the foundation of the potential technical officer has been laid in the Indian National War Memorial Academy. It is purely the technical aspect of his training that appears to be the problem. If the need for a modern Indian Army is realized the necessity for a self-contained technical institution raised on modern lines, follows as a corollary. How can this desire be fulfilled in the best interests of the nation?

Before World War II Indianization of the officer element of the technical set services was just begun. Among the Indian Engineers a limited few had graduated from Woolwich; a few more joined them from the Indian Military Academy. The Signals had their first Indian Officer from the I.M.A., and thereafter every six months one came into the Corps. The scope of Indianization was restricted and the post-graduate or the advanced training of officers was of a very haphazard nature.

To begin with the Enginee's were very fortunate. Upon graduation from the I.M.A. a full three years honours course was undertaken by them at the Thomason Engineering College, Roorkee, recognized as a first-class Engineering Institution. But unfortunately the facilities of such high-class training were made available only to the first few graduates from the I.M.A. After that the Engineers adopted the normal Army methods of instruction, that is short, condensed irregular but practical courses, hoping to make engineers without the necessary theoretical grounding.

In the late war communication engineering made great advances. India had no amateur talent to come to the rescue of the rapidly expanding Signal

Corps, and British man-power provided most of the technical personal However, condensed wartime courses in modern equipment followed by stail installation and maintenance of the most complex equipment under field end tions, gave valuable experience to the Indian Signal Corps personnel. Indian who would never have dreamt of seeing such equipment had the opposite to handle it. And the men who handled it were educated only in the reliant of communication engineering practice. Before the war they were known at "Ihandiscalas," i.e., the flag-wagers. The few officers of the Indian Signal Cop underwent a 21 months' course of training at Poona and Jubbulpore, and reside the best instruction possible in those days. But the courses lacked continue and regularity of instruction.

That the late war gave a good shaking up to our self-satisfied standard efficiency cannot be denied. It was a rude awakening. It found us extend lacking in even the fundamentals of technical knowledge. Our senier office have been charged with "the blank horrors who talk in their own language meninglessly and give authoritative decisions, relying solely on their war-board ranks." Will this do for the future of a Corps that in technique has developed in a horde of specialists? It gives one a nightmare to think of relapsing to press standards. What then?

To maintain modern standards, we have to leap right ahead of our present at and ards. What is more, the speed in advancement of modern science is signs of relaxation, and calls for careful thinking in planning the advanced studies of our modern engineers. Three courses are open:

(a) Improve the pre-war courses as taught in military schools of instration and for advanced studies send the cadets to recognised technical colleges in law such as Maclagan College, Lahore for I.E.M.E., Civil Engineering College. Roorkee for civil engineers.

(b) Make arrangements in the U.K. for advanced training.

(c) Raise a combined Technical College in India which would give advance technical training to all military engineers, including instruction in higher sizes for Royal Indian Artillery Officers.

The first course can be ruled out as too much of a makeshift affair to selient any modern high standard. The second course is now being adopted. Breef technical arm is vieing hard to send its officers for advanced training to UL Candidates selected are officers who underwent short courses during the war and earned plenty of field experience, which made them practical-minded has sadly lacking in knowledge of the fundamentals of all-important theory.

The third course, a combined Technical College (call it a Milltary Scient College), is a more suitable answer. An institution of such a nature, if established would have many advantages, among them being:

(a) By centralising technical training for all engineers, the maximum possible economy in expenditure would be exercised. The first year of instruction for all engineers is the same. All engineers should be sent to this College of completion of three years' course at the Indian National War Memorial Academy.

(b) Post-war training the world over is engaging available instraint material, and India will only be able to get a small share of the best staff All available resources should, therefore, be pooled, instead of being spread out a number of separate engineering institutions.

(c) The scientific aspect of gunnery must be given its due importance to plaintain modern standards. This form of higher training has been especially revided for in the U.K. and it is imperative that our future gunners should also given this advanced training.

(d) The Institution, which would be on the most modern lines, must offer portunities for high-class training to telecommunication civil engineers as really for whose instruction no proper facilities exist in India. This is an essential requirement in the development of the national intercommunication system. It is always, the Civil Aviation Department, and the P. & T. should be allotted acancies to train their telecommunication engineers. Those Departments would, f course, share maintenance expenditure of the Institution, thus reducing the rain on the Army budget.

An investment in such an institution would pay high dividends in nodernising our engineers. The heavy recurring expenditure involved in sending totential officers to the U.K. for advanced training, would be a saving towards neeting the cost of the Institution. Science plays a major part in a modern army, and an average Army officer must have a scientific bent. For our engineers such cientific knowledge is even more important. They are all basically scientists. The suggested institution would only provide the foundation training; practical raining must also be borne in mind, particularly in peacetime, when the Army has satisfied to do.

Most of the high-grade technicians of the Army in the late war came from the U.K. In future wars India will have to draw upon her own civil technicians. Why not start working to that end? We have been taught our lessons. Lack of liaison between the Army engineers—civil, mechanical and telecommunication—and those of the allied civil technical departments, particularly the Indian P. & T. and the Railways, became most apparent. Lack of knowledge by Army officers of the organisation and functions of the civil departments, and the failure of the civil officers to fully appreciate the capabilities of the Army engineers and the requirements of the Army, led to difficulties in co-operation. Hence for the future we must foster mutual understanding between the Army and the civil technical services, and for this purpose officers should be given a quota of vacancies in the civil technical services for a tour of duty, say three to four years.

This training will form a sound foundation for our future engineers in the Army. Instead of learning with the feeling of working for no concrete results, they would learn to produce profitable work in peacetime. Temporary bridges erected on schemes, "for scheme purposes only," cannot make practical engineers. Those who have learnt to build with the knowledge that their structures must last a lifetime, will have much to give to the Army when the time comes. Co-operation between the civil and the Army thus automatically instilled will breed mutual trust and understanding.

It is understood that quite a large number of the civil engineers will be encouraged to take up A.I.R.O. commissions in our post-war Army to acquire requisite knowledge of the Army. The sooner these water-tight compartments, into which all departments (Army and civil) in India have shut themselves are broken, the better opportunities would accrue in producing modern engineers on a national basis. And now, when all future plans are being formulated, is the time to take action.

To keep our knowledge in line with the Armies of other countries, it is essential that a proportion of our engineers should be attached to other Armies

in the Commonwealth of Nations. The advancements made in U. K. and America are far ahead of what India will achieve for a long time.

Attachment of our engineers to foreign armies on tours of duty lasting from two to three years should be a special feature for the regular officer of the postwar Army. To make the best of these tours, officers should on their return, be made to impart the knowledge they have gained by a visiting tour round India to as many establishments of the Corps concerned as is possible in, say, six months.

Specialization will still have to be acquired through this foreign training. The research worker must still find his tuition and guidance outside India. But as industry develops and our scientists undertake these aspects of engineering we should become self-contained.

This trend towards modernisation has been accepted in all phases of life in India in the post-war years. India is already far behind the rest of the world in the march of time. It will take time to catch up. The late war put the clock forward. If only the tempo of this progress could be maintained, we should be heading for a great India, with a modern Army and modern armaments. No Army can be modern without scientists at its beck and call. The Indian Army to be modern, therefore, must keep its scientists, its engineers up to the mark. The only way to keep pace with other nations is to base our training on sound foundations within India, and then look overseas to broaden the outlook and increase the experience of our engineers.

#### POST-WAR INFANTRYMAN'S INDIVIDUAL TRAINING

BY "SPERO."

HAT are to be the lines on which the post-war Infantry soldier will receive his individual training? The following thoughts on the subject (though given only in broad outline) may be of interest.

First and foremost, I feel there will be a tendency to go back to pre-war methods. This tendency must be fought at all costs. I do not suggest for a moment that all our ideas were wrong, or that our training did not include some good features which we can continue. We have, however, advanced in our methods, and in our type of training, to an almost revolutionary degree, and we should hang on to them.

Here are some examples to illustrate my meaning:

Dress.—There is a tendency to go back to collars and ties. Why, after all these years of struggle for commonsense comfort, should we return to discomfort and extra expense?

Drill.—One can see the January 1 parade, and other parades of a similar type, coming back, with all their complicated ceremonial and great waste of time. Why reintroduce the "present arms"? Many of us had hoped it was dead for all time.

Training.—We never trained in the jungle before the war, and have now reached a high standard in this all-important form of training in the East. I feel there will be an inclination to quietly drop this type of training—which many of us realise is essential—owing to the difficulties of finding suitable training areas. We shall need to press heavily for the retention of jungle training.

What should the Infantry recruit be taught in the first twelve months of his service? I suggest the following as a basis. The subjects are in no particular order of priority:

Education.—I presume that in the future all Training Centres will have their own cinema and film library, and that instruction by the use of films will be used extensively. Geography will probably be taught by diagrammatic pictures on films, while many other items of common every-day knowledge will be dealt with by the "travel film" system. Numerous military subjects, and knowledge of weapons, will be taught with the aid of the cinema. I feel that its use in this sphere will be constant.

Weapon training: rifle, bayonet, L.M.G., grenade, discharge cup, M9 A, 1., Sten, 2" mortar, revolver and what have you. The recruit will have to fire with his rifle and automatic at formal targets on formal ranges for his first nine months, for otherwise he will never get grounding or confidence—but thereafter, never, except for an annual zeroing check-up.

As far as the rifle is concerned there should be no teaching of rapid fire, and no firing at distances over 300 yards. (The 2" mortar and M. M. G. take on further ranges). Grouping and snapshooting should be concentrated on—and that applies also to the L. M. G. Let Meerut conform, and also introduce competitions for such weapons as the 2" mortar, etc.

A brief reference to bayonet training: what has never been taught is how to charge "all out" for, say, 30 yards. It is not easy to run "all out" with the bayonet in a menacing position. This charge, with a parry, is all that is needed in bayonet training. We all realise that skill-at-arms is vital in war, that there are many more weapons to learn than heretofore, and time must be found for training in them. Therefore please consider the next par:

Drill.—What we want is a man with a smart, soldierly bearing who can walk and salute with a swagger, and also maintain a good turn-out. But we have got to save time for other more important subjects, at the same time as insisting on smartness of bearing and turn-out, for nobody will deny the value of both of those items in training for war. All ceremonial should be cut out except for the pre-war Quarter Guard, which was good value and has other factors to recommend it. Column of "threes" should be the only formation in which to "march past", and rifle movements should be cut down to the trail, and shoulder—no others.

If the highest standard is insisted on, all the essentials will be found in the above suggestions.

Field-craft tactics.—For the recruit these should be confined to the individual stalk, up to section competitions. This will involve real and continuous crawling practice, and the use of camouflage of all kinds. I doubt whether this has even yet been thoroughly taught. It is, however, the basis of all Infantry movement.

The recruit should also be given considerable instruction in all forms of elementary night work. One can safely say that this irksome form of training is still a neglected subject, and undoubtedly we have suffered more casualties than we should by its neglect. It must, therefore, be an important feature in the recruit's basic training.

Toughening.—P.T., boxing, swimming, wrestling, games (hockey and football). Boxing will, we hope, be basic for the recruit in the future. With the exception of P.T., the remainder of the above subjects are more often than not taught by most indifferent instructors. But they are subjects which go to make the versatile infantryman, and unless taught by first-class instructors, and by proper methods from the very beginning, they will never be correctly learnt.

I have touched on the subjects (only in broad outline) which will employ the recruit's time during his first nine months in the Service. The last three months of his individual training should be devoted to jungle training. Already he will have worked a great deal in the open, and a final polish in open warfare as a member of the platoon can be completed when he joins his unit.

There is no need for me to go into any great detail of what "jungle training" involves; our present Training Divisions can supply all the answers. Briefly, it is carrying on the individual training of the man under the far more difficult conditions of the jungle. It is by no means a breakdown in all that he has learnt before, for it merely carries on training from a different and more testing angle. Jungle training also begins to train the recruit on a higher plane, and includes such subjects as advanced watermanship, section and platoon patrolling exercises, and advanced toughening exercises, etc.

Jungle training is a subject which must be taught under expert supervision and by up-to-date methods in some special formation devoted to the subject. It is highly improbable that the average training centre, or the unit to which the

Digitized by GOOGLE

recruit is going, will have the time, training area, or facilities, to train the newly-joined recruit in individual jungle training.

If the recruit (including the young officer) has once learned his "jungle," then even after a lapse of some years it will only take him a short time to get into the swing of it again. We knew but little about it at the beginning of the late war; we learnt about it the hard way. We are the world's experts now, and we should remain so.

This final three months of jungle training will introduce the recruit to guns, tanks, air support, etc., which is another reason for the establishment of some special formation to handle the final "polishing" stage; Training Battalions will not have these training facilities, except for the cinema. The important thing to ensure is that the recruit arrives in his unit a really well-trained, versatile rifleman.

# INDIA'S WAR-WEALTH AND NATIONAL PLANNING

By LIEUT. COLONEL Y. S. PARANJPE

"Every up-to-date dictionary should say that 'peace' and 'wer' members thing, now in posse now in actu. It may even reasonably be said that the istant sharp competitive preparation for war by the nation is the real war, perment unceasing; and that battles are only a sort of public verification of mastry gain during the peace interval."—W. James, in "Memories and Studies".

TO talk of the preparation for war, when the world's most destructive we has only just ended and when the U.N.O. is straining every nerve to have war off the face of this planet, is the height of cynicism.

Reading between the lines of press reports of speeches made in the UM meetings, one does, however, get more than a little suspicious of the second the organization. Human nature being what it is, the desires for dominant spheres of influence, racial and colour prejudices, religious fanaticism and bin and uncompromising adherence to various "isms" exist in the world to set an extent that preparation for another war—at least for a non-agreesic self-preserving war—is essential for the existence of a people.

In his classical work, The Nation in Arms, Von der Goltz wrote: "Was are the fate of mankind, the inevitable destiny of nations; eternal part is not the lot of the mortals in this world." Some of us may not believe in the expression of typical Prussianism, but such sentiments cannot be ignored. The reminds me of my mother's advice to me when, as a boy, I first started to die a car. She said, "Be careful. You may consider yourself a good driver and my abide by all the rules of the road, but what about the other fellow?" In this world one has always that other fellow to cope with. Prussianism in and outside Prussia is not dead vet.

Having accepted the fact, therefore, that, whether we like it or not, we may be drawn into another world conflict, let us consider the ways and mass by which we can prepare for it.

Modern war is totalitarian. It is waged by a whole nation and not merely by the fighting forces of one nation against another, and it is the nation with does not apply the maximum effort that will ultimately be beaten. That great military philosopher von Clausewitz said that war is an act of violence pushed to its utmost bounds. These utmost bounds in modern times embrace all the available resources and all the phases of life of a nation.

Some time ago the Journal published my article "A Wider Aspect of Indianization", in which I stressed the necessity of training the young mea of India for planned industrialization of the country for peace and war producted. This article examines the question from the point of view of fitting the country to shoulder the burden of "a nation in arms" in general, and from the raw material aspect in particular.

Raw material cannot be produced to order-like trained personnel. It depends on the living, mineral and vegetable resources of the country. Then

in be improved and the best use made of what is available by modern scientific ethods, if they exist in the country. Some nations, like the U.S.A., are more returate than others in having most of their requirements available within her undaries; others have to depend on outside supply.

"War-wealth" means the potential wealth of a nation in all the commodities equired for the successful prosecution of a modern war, without any external d. It naturally includes the financial condition of the country and also the man-power in the broader sense, animal power, raw materials (both mineral and regetable), the capacity to utilise the raw materials, i.e., the state of industrializing in, the food production and the provision of normal creature comforts necessary that the population, this latter being very essential in a protracted war for keeping of the nation's morale.

War-wealth is, therefore, wider and more comprehensive than purely the ational monetary wealth, as understood by import and export trade balances at the nation's gold reserve. A rich country in this latter respect may not accessarily be war-wealthy. She may not possess her own resources of, say, the troleum, iron or coal, which are essential commodities for the prosecution of the articles such a country may import these requirements in exchange to other articles she can spare; but this automatically lowers her war-wealth according to our definition. Money, on the other hand, is "the sinews of war" and as such is the integral factor in a nation's war-wealth.

War-wealth may be increased by a nation by acquiring material resources utside her own boundaries and by keeping her communications to the sites of the source secure even in wartime. This will, however, entail commitments for and, naval and air forces away from the main theatre of operations, thus reducing the striking power of the nation at the decisive place.

A nation may also increase her war-wealth by resorting to storing, in reacetime, material likely to be unobtainable in war. Modern war demands re, however, so great that these stores can only provide for a struggle of short furation. In a long-drawn out war, due to a lack of replenishing capacity and sossible break of communications, such a method may prove fatal.

England and Germany, as they were before the last war, may be quoted as examples of these two types of nations. Neither had adequate war-wealth, hough both could be called rich countries as far as their assets in commerce and adustries went. Due to her geographical position and her naval strength, the former maintained the inflow of material, and as a result her war production all hrough the war remained at a fairly high level. Germany, on the other hand, ally realising her weakness as to her ability to maintain her communications, collected large stocks of stores and material. The war, however, lasted longer han she originally catered for, when she had to look round for fresh sources are material. This involved her in more campaigns and further bankruptcy in her war-wealth, resulting in her ultimate collapse.

War-wealthiness, in other words, is the capacity for national self-sufficiency or, in modern language, autarchy. To attain autarchy is the constant aim f every powerful nation. Empires, spheres of influence or occupation for the naintenance of law and order are all part and parcel of the same policy of striving fter self-sufficiency. Tug-of-war for oil in Iran, control for rubber in Malaya nd Indonesia. annexation for Miri oil of Sarawak, all tell the same story of utarchy.

Modern war makes great demands on a nation's natural resources. Oil, ferrous or non-ferrous metals, nitrates and other chemicals, rubber and timber are only a few examples. Uranium is now added to the list. Lack of such material has enormous influence on the national strategy. The birth of the idea of "blitzkrieg" was a logical result of incapacity of Germany to continue a struggle for a long time. Murray Harris writes in his Logic of War that in 1914, "the Hohenzollerns had put off zero hour for World War I, until adequate synthetic nitrogen capacity had been put into operation and the country became independent of Chilean nitrates.....Due to the Haber process, by 1914, production was in full swing and this relieved the German General Staff for the first time of the fear of a possible shortage of nitrogen for their armaments; reassured on this point they had no hesitation in bringing to fruition their plans for plunging the world into war".

This is the story of one item, the nitrates, and its effects on one of the bitterest struggles of our times. It only proves how strategy is not only intimately connected but entirely dependent on a nation's capacity to conduct a war on her own resources—or war-wealth.

The morals to be drawn from these and other past experiences are:

- 1. That every possible raw material source in the country must be prospected, tapped and developed.
- 2. That adequate arrangements must be made to acquire and store the material lacking in the country. A continuous flow of it in peace and war into the country must also be ensured.
- 3. That adequate and efficient transportation agencies must be provided to guarantee this flow.
- 4. That the industries of the country must be so developed as to be able to convert indigenous as well as imported raw material into all possible requirements of peace and war.
- 5. That the Defence Services must protect the Ls of C. and the industrial areas to allow the above to be carried out, uninterrupted by enemy action.

Let us study the first lesson—the development of indigenous raw materials. Raw materials do not merely mean mineral and agricultural products. Every aspect of life is affected by a war in these days and the whole of it must, therefore, be mobilized if the nation is to be made fit to face the blows and ravages of war. The hub of the wheel of a nation's life is obviously the man.

Von Clausewitz has said that war belongs to the province of social life. To conduct a well-planned war, therefore, one must begin with a well-planned social structure. This in its turn depends on the whole life of the people—physical, intellectual and moral, or in other words, their body, mind and soul.

We have in this country 400 million human beings. A very conservative estimate of the men within the working and military age of 18 and 40 would be 80 million. There is a French saying that the good God is always with the big battalions. If a large collection of poorly educated, ill-fed, ill-clad and indisciplined people were considered to be capable of forming big battalions, we should never have lost the aid of the good God and Indian history would have been written differently. He, however, dessrted us to join a better organized and better equipped people, though they were few in numbers. There is, therefore, only one

method of attracting God on to our side and that is to organize ourselves. For this people must have—

- (a) Better health, which is the foundation of all the rest,
- (b) Better education,
- (c) Better discipline, and
- (d) Better character.

This will produce a better generation of people; like bright steel out of crude and coarse iron ore. This finished material will then be in a position to fill the gaps in our national organization in peace or in war. We shall have so much of this that we shall never have to juggle about with our man-power. There never will be a man power problem for us like the Western nations had in the last two wars.

Another aspect of life of the people which is increasing in importance is the maintenance of high morale throughout the war, which will in future be waged more and more against the civilians than the front line. There are two main weapons used in this attack on the civilians, air attack or attack by long range projectiles, and propaganda. Moral damage is the object of both these weapons. The first achieves it through physical fear and the other through mental weakness. The greater the devastation, therefore, the greater will be the effect on the morale and consequently on the life of the people and their wartime activities. The rate of the industrial production will decrease, panic will set in and finally the will to win will collapse. The exodus of people from Bombay and Calcutta, even before the latter was actually bombed, proves that unless steps are taken to discipline the people, this will prove disastrous in the next war. With the advent of nuclear energy as an instrument of war the effects will increase several fold. Similarly, propaganda will do considerable moral damage, if the people are shaken in their belief in the existing government and the righteousness of the cause they are fighting for.

Patriotism, discipline, character and education to remove the fear of the unknown are the only antidotes to this. People must be taught to "take it".

Another living raw material is the animal—the quadruped species and the birds (poultry). These are of value not only as food but as working animals on the war and home fronts. Improved breeding with if necessary imported strains, scientific feeding and tending will produce good horses and mules as war animals, milch cows, bullocks for the agriculturist, better meat and eggs for food and wool for warm clothing.

The food situation in India as a result of failure of crops this year needs no comment. Even when there is no famine, the produce of grain per acre in most parts of the country is, at present, about the lowest in the world. Connected with the question of farming are many points which require minute study; some of these are artificial fertilization, canals, erosion of the soil and afforestation. Food is the first essential in maintaining a nation's morale. Every other kind of privation is cheerfully accepted by a man, but not the sight of starving women and children at home.

Besides food cultivation there are other vegetable products, such as rubber, vegetable oils, medicinal trees like cinchona, which can only be obtained in sufficient quantities if scientific and well organised plantations are encouraged.

Finally, there is the underground wealth. Geological survey of Inia lass yet been thoroughly carried out, and there are many experts of the opinia is unlimited mineral wealth exists in the country. The existing mines and the products will not be enough even to replace the losses of the first few battles is great war. During the last war England and other nations had to consequently the country of the fact that the mineral output was much greater than that of India's.

The following table shows some figures of the mineral output of cation essential items in India and other countries. The figures are approximate, as in thousands of tons; 'x' denotes small quantity.

		Coal	Iron ore	Copper ore	Petroless
India	• •	30,000	2,800	288	400
Great Britain	••	240,000	14,500	••	••
Germany (prewar)	• •	200,000	6,000	1,120	450
U.S.A.	• •	600,000	61,000	1,000	240,000

This table will convince one of the urgency of prospecting and developing a bring Indian production up to the level attained by Western countries.

The development of all the various raw materials is interdependent. Human health cannot improve unless there is better food, nor can animals well-fed and well-bred unless there is food for them as well. On the other had unless men and animals are physically fit to do hard work agriculture and industries cannot supply necessary food, fertilizers or modern agricultural implement

In spite of all these efforts, material which does not exist in the count cannot be produced out of the hat. No nation can be completely self-sufficient. Unavailable but necessary commodities must, therefore, be obtained from self-bouring countries. I stress the word "neighbouring", because the further is sources of supply and the longer the Ls. of C., the greater the strain on the transportation services and the more vulnerable will they be to hostile action.

Further, the greater the threat to these life lines, the bigger will be the forces detached for their protection. In both the World Wars Germany ted all possible steps to blockade Great Britain by cutting her life lines. Even terporary successes in her object caused anxiety and alarm in Britain. Daring these wars disproportionately large British and allied forces were engaged menty for keeping the life lines open. Unless, therefore, one is complete master and under the sea and also in the air over the area of the Ls. of C., long and values able life lines are a large debit on the balance sheet of a nation's available forces.

I shall here deal with only one or two import items. Let us take the mineral oil first. Until uranium takes its place as a motive agency in war, of is without doubt an item of priority A 1 plus. It has been estimated that the German requirements per year during the last war averaged about 15 million tops. If this is taken as a rough guide for basing our estimates in any future war, it is obvious that we shall have to look around and see where we can get so much of from.

The present production of mineral oil in India is just under half a million tons. This is mainly in Assam and Attock. It is, however, believed that there

alamiis a considerable amount of oil available in India which is not yet tapped. pendi to the neighbouring countries the situation is as follows:

thin Quantity (Million tons) Length of L. Relations. of C. miteatri Burma 1.6

Remarks.

780 miles Friendly Common land fron-(Rangoon to tiers Pipe line to Calcutta) India or to Moulmein possible.

nineral orie es are ave

lia's

288

,120

,000

z and de

Iraq and Iran 11.5 1,100 miles (excl. Kirkuk) (Abadan to Karachi).

Unknown. De-Available only at pends on polihead of Persian G.

Many claimants.

tical situation in M. E. & Iran

Sumatra & Borneo 5

2.300 miles (Borneo to Madras).

Unknown. Depends on Dutch Long L. of C,

& SEA politics.

Other countries beyond this limit are not taken into consideration because of the long lines of communications.

From the above figures it can be easily seen that even with the countries l manner tioned in the table supplying exclusively to India, the total quantity of oil hishe can obtain just exceeds the target figure of 15 million tons. The necessity full for storage in very large quantities, therefore, cannot be emphasised too strongly. The It becomes a vital action in peacetime for success in war. Just as important,

of course, is further oil survey and synthetic production. All these will entail nija large amount of expenditure, but this must be accepted. letely 🖆

Similarly, tin and lead has to come from Burma and Malaya, rubber from htained 2 Malaya and the East Indies and copper from Rhodesia. It is interesting to note here that most of the import items that we shall need come from countries bordering the Indian Ocean; haulage of these will, therefore, be over short distances. bigger to

All these considerations, quite logically, lead us to the question of the transportation services. Murray Harris quotes the following words of Mr. Wendel Willkie about the last war. "This war," he said, "was often described as primarily war of production, but it has now been transformed into one that is primarily a war of transportation." There is no reason to assume that the importance of this phase of war will in any way diminish in the future.

The initial and by far the most important agency of transportation is the merchant navy, as most imports have to be brought across the sea. From a study of the trade routes for the various commodities it will be found that the seas over which our ships will have to ply are mainly the Arabian Sea and the Bay of Bengal. In other words it is an oceanic area enclosed by the Asiatic coast on the North and the East, by the African coast on the West and a line drawn from Madagascar to Sumatra in the South. Certain very few items will have to come across the Pacific or from Europe.

India has at present no merchant navy worth the name. As our existence sas a nation depends on the carrying capacity of these ships this must receive its

due priority in national planning. A tonnage of five million with a shipbulder industry capable of turning out a million tons a year to replace war losses shall be the initial target.

Next in the sequence, is the railway system for distribution of the imputed material from the ports to the industrial areas and later from these areas to the consumers. This applies equally to both army and civil needs. Moden community relies largely on transportation, because everything it consume must be carried.

Though fairly extensive, Indian railways have some shortcomings from the defence point of view, which is mainly concerned with the use of railways for rapid concentrations of men and material at any chosen point. Firstly, then is the existence of single track only on many a main line. Secondly, the shorter of engines and rolling stock, for which we have to depend on other countries, and thirdly, the bottle-necks caused by the changes in gauges. These faults must be eradicated for the smooth running of the system.

The last link is the roads. All roads utilised in war have to be fit it taking very heavy traffic, not only in the numbers of vehicles, but individually weights. A modern heavy tank weights 75 tons and these weights are likely a increase. All bridges on the main arterial roads must be built to take up to live ton weights, and others to take at least 50 ton vehicles. But improvement in the roads alone will not help to organise better road transport. Transport vehicles for these roads are at present all imported, and these require to be made in the country in sufficient numbers to supply war demands.

Having provided ourselves with all the raw material, animate and insermate, the next step is to industrialise. Bulk of the articles for peacetime country on and almost all those necessary in war must be manufactured in the country. In raw materials no country can ever hope to be completely at sufficient, but finished products must be made here. In war all industry in the country switches entirely on to the production of war equipment and munities the civilian requirements are, therefore, cut down to the minimum.

Lord Stamp, who was Economic Adviser to the Government in England, wrote in 1941: "The task of the industry is obviously not to product the things that the population uses in the ordinary way for the enjoyment of like but only to provide the most effective means of waging the war, to which all desired is subordinate. Every industry that does not contribute to this object must be set aside or restrained in scope." There cannot be a more authoritative declaration to describe the functions of the industries of a nation at war.

This, however, can only be done if the peacetime industries are sufficiently well developed to take on the burden of war. The present is the time to devok every energy in this direction. Western nations are recovering from the effect of the last war, and it will be some time before they attain the production capter of pre-war days. We are a creditor nation, and every advantage should be taken of the situation to secure a leading place in the industrial world.

Scientific research, I include in industrialization; because on it deposits the latter's institution and progress. The most important research for the present would appear to be the one on the subject of atomic possibilities. Uranium in small quantities is available in India at Gaya (Rajputana) and Nel on This research is very expensive, and unless the Government is prepared to speak large sums of money on it, no progress can be reasonably expected.

This brings us to the last but by no means the least important of the lessons —the protection of the life lines and the industrial areas.

In the table showing our possible sources of supply of oil a column indicating the distances of the respective countries from India has been included intentionally. The disadvantages of long life lines has also been dealt with. A short appreciation of what would be the actions in war of an enemy country in the West and in the East of India, will not be out of place here.

In case of a Western country, her first actions to blockade us will be-

- (a) to acquire sea and air bases in Iran,
- (b) to prevent Iranian oil from reaching us,
- (c) to attack our life lines through the Arabian sea. This he will be fairly successful in achieving as far as the limitations of distances for naval or air attack go, except perhaps the route South of Laccadive Islands,
- (d) to make the ports of Karachi and Bombay untenable.

Similarly an Eastern nation will try-

M

lorior:

19 g p

ıt. B

媽

四匹

e I

ur#

, h:

地

- (a) to enter Burma and prevent all exports to us from that very warwealthy country.
- (b) to acquire sea and air bases in Burma and Malaya,
- (c) to cut our life lines in the Bay and to the East Indies, and
- (d) to make Calcutta, Vizagapattam and Madras very insecure ports.

Neither of these prospects individually are very bright, but if both occur simultaneously the result will be fatal.

It is, therefore, necessary to think about the possible counter measures. The obvious answer is that the navy and the air force alone cannot prevent this. The only way we can guarantee the supply of oil from Iran and imports from Burma can only be done by a land army on the spot. This is where the diplomatic relations with these countries loom into importance. Our initial object in war must, of necessity, be the security of these two neighbours. Our geographical boundaries may be the Hindukush and the Chindwin, but our strategical boundaries must extend to the Euphrates and the Salween.

Diplomacy here has to play its part intelligently. It is an important accessory in solving the problems of self-sufficiency and defence. The formation and training o an efficient diplomatic corps is, therefore, an essential step, which should be taken without further delay.

To ensure the security of the sea routes, island bases such as the Andamans and Nicobars in the Bay and Laccadive and Maldive in the Arabian sea are extremely valuable. They will act as fixed aircraft carriers and bases for small naval craft. A friendly Ceylon will also be an asset.

India also suffers from a lack of sufficient number of good ports. There are at present only Karachi and Bombay on the Western and Calcutta, Vizagapattam and Madras on the Eastern coast big enough to deal with big ships and their merchandise. For a nation of the size of this country there should be many more ports properly developed. Those like Cochin further away from the possible enemy air bases should be selected and build up in peacetime. They will be invaluable in war.

These are not the only commitments of the defence services. They are take their share in the protection of the industrial areas and the internal communications against enemy attacks. They are responsible for active anti-most defence. In this atomic age, when even one plane getting through and draping one bomb can annihilate entire areas, passive air defence has acquired guize importance. This must be taken full notice of during industrial planning and industries should be located with this in view. One entire factory ton such as Tatanagar is, from its defence point of view, unsound. When land spaces in India are so vast dispersion, use of mountainous country, concealment and unde ground installations must be the guiding principles in all siting. The will increase the cost of production but it is an evil which has to be accepted.

Apart from the requirements of a striking force, the above initial obligator, functions of the armed forces determine the peacetime strengths of the three services.

It would appear that during the examination of this subject, I have at given finance the importance it deserves, though it is the vehicle on which the plans on paper can reach the goal of realism. The continuation of lang struggle will certainly depend on a nation's financial endurance. In a country with a abundance of raw materials, rich in mineral wealth and with a progressive and enterprising industry, monetary wealth is a natural and automatic acquisition. During the last war India was the main base for the Middle Rast and Burns theatres, her war industries flourished and she established credit about. There is no reason why the same process should not continue, if full advantage is taken of the present world situation. Industries, general progress and wealth go round in a circle. For India it can be a virtuous and not a virins circle.

Another point which I did not touch on is that of Allies, and the help lake can get from them. From the world situation it can be safely deducted that any future a med conflagrations will be between groups of nations. Judging from the present state of industrial progress in the Eastern countries, India's neighbours cannot supply her with material for war. Any such help will have to come from countries far away from her frontiers, with long vulnerable life lines. She must, therefore, be prepared and plan to stand on her own legs.

Thus far we have discussed the various factors—social, agricultural, industrial and strategical—which affect planning. To facilitate a proper understanding I have tried to illustrate it diagramatically. The chart at the end shows the evolution process of a country from a comparatively low standard of attainment in the field of the planned development of its war-wealth to a first-class power in the world.

Political changes are occurring in India very rapidly. Possibly there will soon be an Indian Minister for War, followed by, in due course, a self-governing India as a result of H. M. Gs recent declarations. The responsibilities for the defence of the country will then have to be shouldered by the country itself. True, Great Britain and her Dominions may be counted upon to give active support in an emergency, because the safety of this country, as a result of its geographical position, is vital to Britain. Elaborate plans for the defence of the country will be one of the chief concerns of the new government.

Any plans of this nature must be "dynamic", an apt word used by Colonal Garcia to indicate "the highest standard of effectiveness by focusing on the

solution of the problem, the maximum of professional and technical efficiency, ingenuity and inventiveness, all passed into service to achieve some aim seemingly unattainable, which static planning would fail even to envisage."

ng a

8 1002

山上

tire bar

Whos

18

To translate such a dynamic conception of a plan into practice the defence heads must be in a position to get expert advice on matters pertaining to the social and industrial spheres. This will only be possible if co-operation exists between the war department and civil life. A solution is to creat a new department under the Minister for War, called the Department of National Mobilization. This should be headed by a civilian Director and a service Assistant Director of senior rank.

The various branches in this department should also have civil and service personnel employed to ensure that the service point of view is constantly kept in view. The Director should be a member of the War Council, which under the presidency of the Minister for War should have the following as the other members—the C.-in-C., the Deputy Minister for Finance as the financial adviser, and the Deputy Minister for Foreign Affairs as the political adviser. The Council should not be allowed to become an unwieldy body, and additions of further members therefore would be inadvisable. The President should, however, call any one or more persons required to tender advice or to give expert opinion, to sit on it for the solution of any particular problem.

The C.-in-C. in the Council is the strategical brain, combining the three services. He will, after consultation with the General Staffs of the three services, have formed the strategical plan. The Director of National Mobilization is the expert on the national raw materials and industries, and will have planned in consultation with his service assistant. The Financial and Political members are high ranking officials in their own spheres and their opinions will be authoritative. The whole together will then be in a position to do the Supreme National Planning for War.

This organization, as it will fit into the framework of the National Government, is shown below. The asterisks indicate the members of the War Council.

#### National Cabinet. Minister for War,(\*) Other members of Cabinet. with Permanent Secretariat. Director of Nat. Mobn.(\*) Dy. Finance Dy. Foreign C.-in-C.(\*)Minister(\*) Minister(\*) (Civil) Asstt. Director of Nat. Mobn. (Service) Agriculture Industries Transportation Foreign Man Army Navy Air Force $\mathbf{Power}$ Trade Staffs

This will ensure complete co-operation and co-ordination of the national war-effort and home-effort. It allows for consultations between service and civil experts at all stages. At the highest level is the War Council, which prepares the final executive plan. At lower levels, members of the departments of War and

National Mobilization can consult each other on problems arising from timely time. For instance on a question about man-power an officer of the Persons Directorate of the A.G.s Branch can confer with an equivalent civil and or serior officer in the Man-power Branch of the Department of National Mobilization. This Department, in its turn, will be able to consult the various other departments of the Government of India, interview industrialists, extract information collate it and keep it ready as and when required by the War Council. In other words, it will act as a Technical Intelligence Branch dealing with the matical war-wealth. In this capacity it will be an advisory body only.

This, I suggest, should be the framework for India's National Plansis for War.

To conclude, I would like to quote a passage from F.S.R. Vol. III, Chap I to show where the soldier enters the field of national planning for war.—

"The introduction of new weapons and the increasing mechanizates armies, besides influencing strategical and tactical combinations in the felt necessitate the most carefully considered allocation of the national resource for the purpose of prosecuting the war. The demands for warlike stores of all kinds will in any major war only be met by the mobilization of industry in accordant with plans prepared in peace.

"A wise direction of industry and correct distribution of man-power vil be as important as generalship in the field. It is essential that the army short keep in touch with the organization of industry and with mechanical development in civil life, in order to judge how far they can be used or adapted for military purposes, and what effects they will have on operations in the field."

### Famous Divisions Disbanded.

The 25th (Ace of Spades) Indian Division, which recently returned from Malaya, has been disbanded. Formed in 1942, it served in the Arakan and won a great victory at Kangaw. After the surrender of Japan the division which had gone through two years of heavy fighting in Burma, was sent to Malaya.

With the disbanding of the 25th Indian Division also disappears the 51st Indian Infantry Brigade, the first brigade in the Indian Army to be composed entirely of Indian battalions. The brigade was commanded at first by Brigadist R. A. Hutton, D.S.O., O.B.E., later by Brigadier K. S. Thimayya, and later still again by Brigadier Hutton. Its finest action was at Hill 170, in the Mayu Rangin Burma, where during four weeks of fighting the Japanese suffered over 2000 casualties and lost 26 guns. The Japanese later described the battle as the toughest and fiercest in the whole of the Burma campaign.

The 20th Indian Division, one of the most famous divisions of the Fourteenth Army, has been disbanded. From the time of its entry into the Fourteenth Army in 1942 until the end of the war men of the division killed more than 10,000 of the enemy. Raised in Bangalore in 1942, the division had only one commander, Major-General (now Lieutenant-General) Douglas Graces. Awards to the division included two V.Cs (Lieut. A. G. Horwood and Jemadus Parkash Singh), 26 D.S.Os. and 152 M.Cs. The division ended its career carring out occupational duties in French Indo-China, whence it was recently brought back to India.

# on Home Front. Maximum Effort in Battle on War Front, Maximum Effort Foreign consumers. Sphere of National Organization. high morale helping better people with production. Contented ports The fighting men The War animals Supplies Munitions Material. Industries for peace and war requirements. Food and vegetable and women. Working animals Animal food. The working men Transportation Services products. come FINANCE Expendiure Ė Foreign Sources of supply. Jm pon ts. Improved and productive agriculture, forestry and plantations. More mineral, and natural wealth An improved generation of people in hody mind and Soul. Better working animals and animal food. Sphere of National Planning. 1 Modernization Prospecting Development Afforestation Plantation Canalization Industry Enterprise etc. Education Discipline Character building. Breeding Feeding Tending Health Planned evelopment of country. Digitized by

MEG

arising to local of the actional Rearisons one extract to Council g with the maly.

or ne-

hom 1: store:

les tedis

1000 1000 1000

兩個個個個個個

DIAGRAM SHOWING EVOLUTION OF A NATION IN ARMS

#### LIFE IN POST-WAR BRITAIN

By Major-General Sir Dashwood Strettell, K.C.I.E., C.B.

IT IS six months since I wrote my last article, and I would that I could say with "Gloster":

"Now is the winter of our discontent Made glorious summer.....

But as a matter of fact in many ways the standard of comfort has deteriorated. In view of the tragedy of possible famine in India, it may seem ludicrous for us in England to complain of our food, but reductions have been made, e.g., in tats, bread darkened and shortly to be rationed, with threats of even further cuts. It is not so much the cuts that have been irritating—it is the continual change in policy and lack of foresight of the Ministry.

If on one day the Prime Minister issued an optimistic view of the future as regards food, the next day the Food Minister would announce cuts, and, from the late Chairman of UNRRA'S statement, it is quite obvious that the warning of coming calamity was issued five months before. In face of existing difficulties the news of the failure of crops in India was almost stunning. It is to be hoped that world sympathy has not been aroused too late. In any case, M. La Guardia is a live wire.

Last time I wrote to you I referred to Lord Gort having had to resign from his post in Palestine. The issue of the Journal containing that article happened to reach me two days before his death was announced. Though one had anticipated the possibility, the news came as a shock, as, four or five weeks before, I had a letter from his daughter which was guardedly optimistic. We went to the Memorial Service in Westminster Abbey, and there was a great collection of notable people in the reserved seats; but what was most striking was the great number of the public who came to pay their last tribute to a great man.

Elections for the County Councils in England have been held since I last wrote, and, except in London, the swing towards the Left has not been so noticeable as it was in the elections for the House of Commons and for the Municipal Councils. In London the Municipal Reformers lost heavily, and the Socialists majority was considerably increased—end this in spite of a fighting and constructive broadcast by the M. R. leader. Many people attribute the cause of the defeat of the M. R. party to apathy on the part of Conservatives, of whom it is said that only 15% registered their votes.

At the moment of writing the National Health Bill is being debated in the House. Without wishing to discuss the issue from the political angle, the view of the average man in the street is that it would have been better to take the scheme more slowly. In their hurry to show that "Labour Does Things" details are apt to be scamped, and less time devoted to debate. No one could argue against the general principle of the scheme, but many people object to the Minister of Health being placed in the position of Dictator.

The Journal recently drew attention to the Royal Central Asian Society, and your readers may be interested to know that at the last lecture, given by Lieut.-Colonel Cobb, of the Indian Political Service, on "Gilgit", he brought from

Digitized by GOOGLE

H. E. The Viceroy a magnificent head of an "Ovis Poli", reputed to be the fourth biggest head on record, and presented as a gift to the Society, whose crest is the head of that great sheep.

I hope to see something of the representatives of my regiment at the Victory Parade.\* Many of us were disappointed to hear that the Garden Party which was to have been held at Hurlingham to meet these soldiers had to be cancelled, but doubtless we shall have other opportunities of seeing them. Incidentally, there were varied opinions held on the wisdom of holding the Victory Parade in London; indeed, several municipalities refused to spend money on the celebrations. It does seem strange that, with shortage of food, ships, money, etc. we should waste those very things on a belated celebration.

It was, however, a pleasure to hear that "Alex" was to fly here from Canada to attend the Parade; and also that Field Marshal Sir Claude Auchinleck (whose promotion to the rank of Field Marshal has been so warmly welcomed) would be able to fly Home and take part in the Parade.

Rarely has so much space been devoted in the newspapers to India, and the work of the Cabinet Mission in Simla and Delhi has been very well reported. Talking of the Press, there is a general desire on the part of the Public that the allotment of paper to the Press should be increased. Owing to the lack of space, journalism is more selective than ever, and newspapers present to the public very one-sided accounts of events. For instance, if one read the accounts of speeches in Parliament in *The Times* and the *Daily Telegraph* they are very different and scarcely recognisable as being reports of the same speeches. And I have no doubt that the accounts in the *Daily Herald* would be still different.

There is a great deal of anxiety these days about the numerous thefts that have lately taken place here in England. To the ordinary man it would appear that we are tackling the problem the wrong way round. The reason for all these robberies is the Black Market, the large prices obtained there, and the ease with which stolen commodities can be got rid of. A considerable stiffening of the sentences for those convicted of dealing in the Black Market would undoubtedly have the result of increasing the difficulty of disposing of stolen property. Fines are not sufficient, but penal servitude dealt out to these menaces to society would have a most desirable effect.

## **Art Society For Officers**

The Army Officers Art Society, founded in 1925 for bringing together officers interested in art and organising exhibitions and disposal of their works, has held fifteen exhibitions, and intends to hold the next early in 1947.

All officers interested, and those who would like to become exhibitors, should communicate with the Hon. Secretary, Colonel L. N. Malan, 10, Blenheim Road, London, N.W. 8, who will send all particulars relating to the Society and the Exhibition.



<sup>\*</sup> This article was written before June 8.

### THE EAST AND CENTRAL AFRICA MEDAL, 1897-1899

BY BRIGADIER H. BULLOCK, O.B.E., F.R. HIST. S.

THIS interesting war medal was instituted in 1899, and had only a short life, being soon replaced by the Africa General Service Medal of similar design but wider scope. It was not issued without a bar: the four bars were "Uganda 1897-98", "Lubwa's", "1898", and "Uganda 1899". All these bars were awarded to Indian troops, who may indeed have outnumbered Africans among the recipients, and with special reference to whose medals this account has been compiled. From the collector's point of view, the medal is rare.

There is no formal history of these campaigns, and none of the minor sources has much to say about the medal; but Major (later Brigadier-General) H. H. Austin's With Macdonald in Uganda (London, 1903) gives valuable details of the fighting in Uganda in 1897. Sources drawn upon include the histories of the old 4th and 27th Regiments of Bombay Infantry, The Historical Records of the 127th Baluch Light Infantry, by Officers of the Regiment (London, 1905), and History of the 1st Bn. 6th Rajputana Rifles (Wellesley's), by Lieut.-Col. F. H. James, O.B.E., M.C. (Aldershot, 1938). The absence of accessible accounts of the 1899 expedition against King Kabarega is remarkable: even Sir H.H. Johnston's The Uganda Protectorate (London, 1902) does not help. From such sources I compiled a short account of the Indian Contingents in Africa, 1891-1922, which was published in the Journal of this Institution in July 1944; and the background given therein has not been repeated here. It is probable that, working in India and in wartime, I have overlooked some authorities; and I should be grateful for additions and corrections. I have derived much assistance from the study of actual medals in my collection or which have passed through my hands.

The medal was ordinarily struck in silver; but a few in bronze were awarded to Indian followers. I have never seen or heard of a medal with more than two of the four bars.

The titles in 1939 of the Indian units of 1897—99 were:—

4th Bombay Rifles

27th Bombay Infantry (alias 1st Baluch L. 1.).

14th Sikhs

15th Sikhs

. 1st Bn. (Wellesley's), 6th Rajputans Rifles.

3rd Bn. (Queen Mary's Own), 10th Baluch Regiment.

1st Bn. (King George V's Own) Ferozepore Sikhs, 11th Sikh Regiment.

. 2nd Royal Bn., (Ludhiana Sikhs), 11th Sikh Regiment.

### "UGANDA 1897-98".

This bar was awarded to those who took part in the operations in Uganda, other than those against the Sudanese mutineers (for which the "Lubwa's" bar was given), from July 20, 1897 to March 19, 1898, or who reached Uganda between those dates. Three separate bodies of Indian troops received it: (i) the small

detachment of about 30 men of the 14th and 15th Sikbs, of which details are given below under "Lubwa's": (ii) the Indian Contingent in the British East Africa Protectorate, about 300 strong, all Punjabi Musalmans, who went up into Uganda in November 1897; and (iii) the 27th Bombay Infantry (1st Baluch L. I.), who arrived at Mombasa from India on December 12, 1897 and then went up-country on the 600-mile march to Kampala on Lake Victoria. Owing to difficulty and delay in getting forward to Uganda, two companies of the 1st Baluch L. I. were diverted to Jubaland, where they took part in the operations against the Ogaden Somalis (see below, under "1898.")

The 1st Baluch L. I. saw a good deal of fighting between the end of March and beginning of December 1898, and their casualties during their whole stay in Africa were 2 Indian officers and 19 Indian other ranks killed, 1 British officer, 2 Indian officers and 20 I.O.Rs. wounded, whilst 1 I.O. and 12 I.O. Rs. died of disease. Many of the battle casualties were incurred in a single affair, the attack on Lieut. Hannyngton's detachment near Kitabu on October 10, 1898, when an Indian officer and 13 I.O. Rs. were killed and Hannyngton and 8 men wounded.

For their gallantry on this occasion the following 17 men of the battalion received the Indian Order of Merit, third class: 2657 Naik Yusuf Khan, 1765 Naik Sultan Mahomed (of the 30th Bombay Infantry, attached), and Privates 2737 Nur Mahomed, 262 Sharif Khan, 20 Ghulam Mahomed, 1441 Nur Dad, 2858 Barkatullah, 153 Shah Zad Shah, 767 Subey Khan, 959 Subey Khan (whose medal is in my collection), 188 Khuda Bux Khan, 403 Fazal Khan, 1361 Shazada Khan, 162 Karam Dad, 1132 Mir Firoz Ali Shah, 295 Sher Dad and 31 Nur Mahomed, whilst it was announced that 296 Pte. Ahmed Khan would also have been decorated had he survived.

I have not seen a complete medal roll of the 1st Baluch L. I. There is in the records of the Government of India a roll of some 340 officers, men and followers of the battalion in which the "Uganda 1897-98" bar (only) is claimed; but this roll appears to have been preceded by another, and succeeded by a third. This piecemeal claiming of medals may be the reason why some are inscribed "27th Baluch L. I." and others "1st Baluch L. I." Both these designations are impressed on the medals.

Two members of the Indian Contingent in the B.E.A. Protectorate also received the I.O.M., 3rd Class, for these operations: 226 Lance-Naik Wazir Ali, 31st Bengal Infantry, for gallantry at Murli on April 26 1898, and Jemadar Bahadur Ali Khan, 1st Sikhs Punjab Frontier Force, for gallantry at Jass Canp on April 26 and at Murli Post on May 30, 1898.

The number of Indians who received the "Uganda 1897-98" par must have been about 950, making a small allowance for medical personnel, with perhaps 50 tollowers.

"1898"

This bar was awarded to the forces employed in the expedition against the Ogeden Somelis from April to August 1898. They were:—

1 0	S	trength
4 companies, 4th Bombay Rifles*	• •	330
2 companies, 1st Baluch L. I.	• •	155
4 companies, 1st Uganda Rifles (Indians)	••	350
		835
3 companies, East Africa Rifles (Africans)	• •	250
		1,085

<sup>\*</sup> One Coy. Rajputs, one Coy. Jats, one Coy. Punjabi Musalmans, and one Coy. mixed classes (half Sikhs).

A wing of the 4th Bombay Rifles arrived at Mombasa from India on Red 7, 1898, and from this one company left for Kismayu on April 4. Another company followed it about the middle of the month, and another about the beginning May. One Indian Order of Merit, 3rd Class, was given in this campaign, to E Naik Butta Singh, 4th Bombay Rifles, for bravery near Helishid, on Lake Was on June 22, 1898. On this day a party of the 4th Bombay Rifles (41 mes, most) Sikhs, under an Indian officer) was ambushed, and 27 including the L 0 was killed. Butta Singh, though himself wounded twice, conducted a skilful sit gallant withdrawal with a party of four other riflemen, two of whom were wounded During the expedition the battalion had several other casualties, including a British officer and a naik eaten by crocodiles.

After the operations were concluded, the wing returned to Membes intellatter part of November 1898 and embarked for India in December These comparies of the 1st Uganda Rifles arrived at Kismayu on July 23, 1888 at took part in the final operations.

### "LUBWA's"

This bar was granted to all who took part in the operations egainst the Sudanese mutineers, from September 23, 1897 to February 24, 1898. The engagement of Lubwa's Hill was fought on October 19, 1897, and fighting continued at that vicinity till January. The "hard core" of Indian troops who bere the brunt of it consisted of a small detachment drawn equally from the 14th and 15th Sikhs, under the command of Lieut. Norman Macdonald, 14th Sikhs, who was brother of the commander of the expedition and who was killed at Lubwa's a October 19, 1897. This detachment arrived at Mombasa from Bombay on July 9, 1897, and left Mombasa on its final return to India on March 26, 1899. Its strength was one Indian officer (Jemadar Bhagwan Singh, 14th Sikhs), some 3 N. C. Os. and sepoys, and one or two followers.

The total casualties have not been ascertained, but from October 18 the beginning of December 1897 there were 17 Sikhs† at Lubwa's, of whem 7 kel been killed or wounded. On December 7 they were reinforced by Norman Medonald, who had with him the remaining Sikhs, 15 in number.

Jemadar Bhagwan Singa with two sepoys of the 14th Sikhs (1733 Kala Singh and 1752 Bagga Singh) received the I.O.M. 3rd Class, for gallantry at Lubwa's Hill on October 19, 1897; whilst for their conduct at the fight at Lubwa's Fort on December 11, 1897 the same decoration was awarded to 3036 Sepot Sahib Singh, 3277 Sepoy Phuman Singh, 3184 Golab Singh, 3434 Sepoy Bishan Singh and 3385 Sepoy Karpal Singh, all of the 15th Sikhs, and Jemadar Bhagan Singh was advanced to the Second Class of the Order. For gallantry at Kabegambo on February 24, 1898 the I.O.M., 3rd Class, was awarded to 1545 Nath Sham Singh, 14th Sikhs and 2354 Havildar Attar Singh, 15th Sikhs, as well as to 87 Sepoy Jehan Khan of the 27th Punjab Intantry who was serving with the 187 Sepoy Jehan Khan of the 27th Punjab Intantry who was serving with the 1887 Sepoy Jehan Khan of the 27th Punjab Intantry who was serving with the 1888 Indian Contingent, B. E. A. Thus ou, of the 28 I. O. Rs. of the two Sikh battslions, 9 received the I. O. M., while their Indian officer won it twice over.

A number of other Indian soldiers, though not engaged at Lubwa's itell, took part in the operations at the latter part of the qualifying period and the received the "Lubwa's" bar. The Indian Contingent in the B.E.A. Protectorate, which was normally quartered at Mombasa, began to move up as a reinforcement

<sup>\* 14</sup>th Sikhs—1 B.O., 1 I.O., 13 I.O. Rs., 1 follower, † 15th Sikhs—15 I.O.Rs., 2 followers.

189î-18

state or Lieut.-Col. MacDonald in November 1897, and 150 Punjabi Musalmans of pullable Contingent under the command of Major T. E. Scott, D.S.O., arrived at the Lubwa's about January 9, 1898. They were followed by Major W. C. Barratt, a the D.S.O., with 60 or 70 more sepoys, who arrived at Kampala about the beginning of February 1898 and took part in the big fight at Kabegambe which ended the main resistance, on February 24, 1898. Thus about 220 of the 300 men of the lambiandian Contingent received the clasp for "Lubwa's".

The 1st Baluch L.I. were sent as reinforcements from India and reached flowbasa on December 12, 1897. They then proceeded up-country by detachments, but progress was slow owing to supply aud transport difficulties, and by he end of the qualifying period for the medal (February 24, 1898) only two letachments had entered Uganda near the railhead at Ndi. The numbers of his unit who received the Lubwa's bar appear to be 4 British officers, 6 Indian officers, 237 I.O.Rs., and 16 public followers.

The total number of Indians to receive this bar may be estimated at 500, nade up as follows:—14th and 15th Sikhs, 33; Indian Contingent B.E.A., 220; st Baluch L.I., 243; and a few medical and commissariat personnel.

The 1st Baluch L.I. left for India on May 11, 1899, without having taken to the operations against Kabarega and thus not qualifying for the "Uganda set 899" bar. An account of the detachment of this battalion which received the left 1898" bar has been given above.

I have not seen any of the 14th and 15th Sikh medals, but I have inpected their medal roll in the records of the Government of India. Of their nen who were decorated with the Indian Order of Merit, Phuman Singh became subsedar-Major and Honorary Lieutenant, and had the order of British Indian ind the Indian Distinguished Service Medal. Of the Indian Contingent B.E.A. rotectorate medals I have had three. Two were engraved with the name of the recipients followed by "Indian Contingent" (abbreviated), the inscription is sloping capitals in one instance and in upright capitals in the other. In attalion (4th Punjab Infantry), being engraved in sloping capitals. All three were two-bar medals—"Uganda 1897-98", "Lubwa's"—and awarded to Punjabi Musalmans.

All the 1st Baluch L.I. medals which I have seen have been impressed, in small capitals as used for example on the Queen's South Africa medals; but the battalion is variously given as 1st Baluch L.I., 27 Baluch L.I., and 27/Bom. Infy. It is sometimes stated that all East and Central Africa medals were issued unnamed, but this cannot be correct, for the 1st Baluch L.I. medals ire obviously officially named, probably at the Royal Mint in London. A very we medals with the single bar "Lubwa's" were issued. I have never seen one, but I have verified from the roll that two followers of the 15th Sikhs received medals, though whether they were in bronze or silver is not clear.

Three battalions—the 4th Bombay Rifles and the 24th and 27th Bombay nfantry—were in 1901 granted the battle-honour "British East Africa" followed n each case by the appropriate date, the award to the 24th being for their services n 1895-96 in the Mwele (Mazrui) expedition, for which the East and West Africa nedal, without bar but inscribed "Mwele 1895-96" on the upper part of the rim, was given.

#### "Uganda 1989"

The 1st\* Uganda Rifles, which was sometimes (though apparently unofficially) known in its early days as the Uganda Regiment, was an Indian unit formed to take the place of the former Uganda Rifles, most of whose Sudanese mutinied in 1897. It was raised at Poona between February and April 1898, with an establishment of about 400 rank and file in four companies: two companies were Sikhs and two Punjabi Musalmans. The two Sikh companies reached the north shores of Lake Victoria early in January 1899, the British officers being Lieut.-Col. J. T. Evatt (in command), W. E. Chitty, P. B. Haig (Indian Medical Service), and M. L. Hornby. A company of Punjabi Musalmans, commanded by F. S. Keen, followed a few days later: and the last company, under H. B. Rattray, was a week or two behind it. Part of the unit, perhaps one or two companies, received the East and Central Africa medal with bar "Uganda 1899", for the operations against Kabarega between March 21 and May 2, 1899. Kabarega, King of Unyoro, had joined hands with the Sudanesc mutineers, but was completely defeated and captured by a force of sepoys and Baganda under Lieut.-Col. Evatt and was exiled to the Seychelles Islands.

All the above-named British officers received this bar, and Chitty, Evatt and Hornby had the "1898" bar also, for the Uganda Rifles had taken part in the last phases of the expedition against the Ogaden Somalis. †Some of the 1st Uganda Rifles were to receive, for services in the following year, the later Africa General Service medal with bar "Uganda 1900". The original Indian personnel were relieved and returned to India in May 1901, having had a good many casualties in action or through sickness.

The bar is rare. I have picked up a couple in Northern India, both having been awarded to Sikhs, both inscribed "1/Uganda Rifles", and both having the "1898" bar also. One was neatly engraved in sloping capitals, the other very crudely inscribed in a rough scratch-engraving in capitals. I have had another East and Central Africa medal, with bar "1898", awarded to the Punjabi Musalman quartermaster -havildar of the 1st Uganda Rifles, which was named in exactly the same rough manner and obviously by the same hand, which I suspect was that of the battalion armourer. I have never seen a single-bar "Uganda 1899" awarded to an Indian, and it is probable that few exist as most of the sepoys engaged must have received the "1898" bar also.

The 1st Uganda Rifles became on 1st January 1902 the 5th Battalion of

the King's African Rifles, with a strength of 400 Punjabi Musalmans.

It is difficult to estimate the number of "Uganda 1899" bars awarded to Indians, in the absence of any precise account of the operations. Two Indian companies of the 1st Uganda Rifles—say 200 men—may have been engaged, but the rarity of the bar suggests a much smaller number, perhaps less than a hundred.

#### ESTIMATE OF MEDALS ISSUED.

The estimated number of silver medals issued to Indian troops is:

With single bar, "Uganda 1897-98" 450

With two bars, "Uganda 1897-98", "Lubwa's" 500

With single bar, "Lubwa's" ? (very few)

With single bar, "1898" 765

With two bars, "1898", "Uganda 1899" 100-200

With single bar, "Uganda 1899" ? (very few)

No estimate for bronze medals can be given, but they are rare.

<sup>\*</sup> No second battalion was however raised, and the "1st" was latter dropped from the title.
† 5 British officers, 1 British N. C. O., 268 Africans, 105 Indians (Punjabi Musalmans and Sikhs). Four of the five British officers belonged to the Indian Army.

#### THOSE INDIAN DRIVERS!

By "CHENNAPATNAM"\*

A N article published not long ago concerning operations in the Western Desert said: "The troop-carriers were driven by Indians, and the inability of these Indians to understand the orders and directions given to them by the guides and officers in command of vehicles caused frequent misunderstandings."

The words are expressed by a British Service Officer (who, unfortunately, was afterwards killed in action).

Who were "these Indians....who caused frequent misunderstandings"?

Munisami was born of humble parents in a village in South India. To be more correct, he was born not in the village, but on its outskirts, since the outcastes, of whom Munisami was born a member, are not allowed to live in the village.

With rare exceptions Munisami never knew the meaning of a square meal, nor had he or his parents any possessions of their own beyond the barest necessities of life such as a *dhoti* or two, a few cooking, eating and drinking vessels, and a low, thatched, mud-walled hut.

Munisami's father and mother worked daily in the fields from early morning till evening for a landowner whom they hardly knew. From this landowner they received an allowance of food, just enough to provide one meal a day, also three rupees a month as pay, and occasionally, at the time of a big festival, the landowner would give the family a new dhoti or a towel.

The chery (portion outside the village, allotted for the outcastes) where Munisami lived, consisted of the usual low, thatched huts with mud walls. In the adjoining village was a good well, but its water was not available for the outcastes' use. For them the nearest water was about a mile away in a tank which was used also by the cattle. This tank almost dried up in the hot weather, thus making conditions very hard indeed for the outcastes. But nobody seemed to think or worry much about them.

Munisami was of a cheerful nature, like most of his kind, and he did not regard his lot as particularly hard or unfair, though he sometimes thought how fat and lazy the bania was, when he (Munisami) often had to tighten his dhoti over an empty stomach. The bania, fat and greasy, was always to be seen sitting cross-legged behind the wares in his shop. He never took any form of exercise and always drove a hard bargain. Many of the villagers and the nearby outcastes were heavily in debt to him. Once a man borrowed money from the bania, it took him years to pay back the capital and interest. In many cases the debt pessed on from father to sou.

For a few years Munisami attended the Government school in the village. The scholars from the village were accommodated in the class rooms, but the outcastes, although officially entitled to equal facilities for education, were not permitted to enter the doors, and sat on the verandah picking up as much as they

<sup>\*</sup>This article is based on fact.

could of the lessons going on inside the school. At an early age Munisami left school and went to help his parents in the fields and tending the cattle.

Sometimes a friend would return to the chery from the big city which was more than two days' journey away. What tales he had to tell of life in the city! Of trains and ships, of motor cars and trams, of cinemas (he called them bioscopes) and shops. All so big and so strange-sounding to the boy who had never known anything outside his village life.

Young Munisami's enthusiasm was infected and he determined to leave what now seemed to him a dull village life and go to see the city. Having borrowed a few rupees from the bania, at what Munisami did not realise was an exorbitant rate of interest, and after making his farewells to his parents and friends, Munisami set out for the city.

The first part of the journey was on foot and he managed to get a lift in a friend's bullock cart for part of the way till he reached the main road. Then by bus to the railway. The bus and railway journeys he found full of interest and he had endless conversations with his fellow passengers. There were people speaking languages that were strange to Munisami, wearing different clothes and having other customs. He was rather frightened at the railway station with the crowds and the big trains steaming in and out. That night he lay down to sleep on the station platform amongst the many others there. The journey in the train was scaring at first with the noise and the swift motion. But after a time he became accustomed to the strangeness of everything and found the trip most entertaining.

Then came his arrival in the big city with all its new sights and sounds and excitements. The traffic seemed very disconcerting and the road was clearly no place in which a poor village boy could safely walk!

We must cut short all his impressions of the big city, as they alone would make a long story. After a few days of sight-seeing, Munisami found that his money was nearly at an end. He therefore sought work as a coolic. The work he obtained was for long hours daily, but of uncertain tenure, as it was from day to day only, and the pay was not much. It gave him sufficient for his food and somewhere to sleep, but he was not able to save anything.

Munisami had heard that you could earn good money by pulling a rick-shaw. He saw many rickshaws on the roads and it looked to him to be very heavy work. But he was used to hard work and thought he would try this occupation. So Munisami arranged with a rickshaw contractor for the use of a rickshaw and the next day he took his stand for the new work.

On some days in this work Munisami was unable to earn sufficient money to cover his cost of living in the city. On others, more fortunate, he gained enough to pay for his food and the share of a room, for the hire of the rickshaw from the contractor, for a few beedies and a little spare to put by as savings. But the tax that the work put on his health!

Runs between the shafts of the rickshaw were all much the same, except for the distance and the fares paid by different passengers. The passenger or passengers (there might be two) would mount the rickshaw and tell Munisami where they wanted to go. He would then pick up the shafts, grip them tightly, bend his slender young body parallel with the road, lean forward and heave the rickshaw with its occupants into motion. It was always a strain to overcome the initial inertia and gain momentum. A few paces forward and he would commence to run. Faster and faster would he increase the pace, till he

Digitized by GOOSIG

was bowling along at a good ten miles an hour, feet thrashing the hot, hard surface of the road, slim young body and head bent slightly forward, hands upon the shafts, crying "Varrum! Varrum!" (We're coming, We're coming) to clear the way, dodging in and out amongst the traffic and people on the road. By now he would be panting for breath.

He would reach a street crossing where perhaps the traffic was held up. Back he would throw his slim body and head; arms would straighten as he flung his weight back to check the momentum of the loaded rickshaw to bring it to a stop. The pulling up was hard work but the short check afforded an opportunity to regain some breath and to ease the straining muscles of his legs, arms and back.

With the release of the stream of traffic, again would come the strain into motion of the loaded rickshaw. Off again at a grand pace. The sun was beating down from above and up from the burning road surface; the heat was moist and oppressive. Every now and then Munisami would relax the hold of one hand on the shafts to wipe the streaming sweat from his face, with a piece of rag carried for the purpose. By now his arms, chest, back, neck and legs were streaming with sweat, as well as his face and, in a long run, his *dhoti* also would become soaked through.

A run on a flat road was trying enough, but on hills, both up and down, it was doubly so. Down a hill Munisami would race and it was difficult to control the laden rickshaw behind him. Uphill he toiled with arms, back, legs, lungs and heart all straining; little body bent parallel to the ground, the whole of his lightly-built frame and slight weight thrown forward, sweat streaming from every pore, breath coming in gasps, muscles straining and passengers lolling back at their ease, perhaps not giving a thought to the toiling figure straining them up the hill; not considering the possibility of walking up the hill themselves in order to relieve the rickshaw puller's burden; not remembering that he was very likely hauling more than four times his own weight up the hill.

So to the end of a run. Throw your whole weight back; strain on your arms; bring the loaded rickshaw to a stop; set down the shafts gently; wipe the streaming face; control the heaving chest; hold out a hand for the fare; hope for just payment. Receive what? Perhaps the legal fare and a little baksheesh; perhaps the bare legal minimum; perhaps less than the legal fare. What can he do but accept the sum given by the cool and composed passengers? He has little redress against underpayment and can do little but plead for some slight increase. If the passengers are kindly disposed they may add a mite or two; otherwise they will go grumbling away, leaving Munisami hot, tired, thirsty, exhausted, under-paid and wondering where his next meal is to come from.

Then Munisami would look about to see whether there might be some water available to quench his thirst after the run. If he was lucky there would be a stand-pipe by the road. What matter if the water that came out into his cupped hands was almost burning hot through having been in a pipe exposed to that fierce sun? It was at least water. Or it might be a time of day when the water was turned off (as it is in many places for several hours daily), when he would get none. Thereafter for a time Munisami would sit on the flocrboards of the now empty rickshaw in order to cool off and regain his breath, before going off to look for other passengers.

One day a British Officer engaged Munisami for a run and the Sahib spoke Munisami's own language. The run started in the usual way. But after Munisami had been running for a time and on an upward slope of the road, the Sahib told Munisami that he might go slowly. It was hard work running with the rickshaw on the upward slope and Munisami, appreciating the consideration shown to him, dropped from a run to a fast walking pace. At the crest of the slope Munisami again broke into a run and raced down the incline ahead. The exertion of the pull up the hill and the run down the other side brought the sweat streaming from every pore of Munisami's body.

Next came a steep uphill, where it was necessary for Munisami to throw his whole weight and strength into the task of straining the rickshaw and passenger up the steep gradient. Every muscle was tense; breath coming in gasps; sweat streaming off him. A little way up the hill Munisami heard the Sahib tell him to stop and put down the shafts of the rickshaw. To Munisami there appeared to be no reason for a stop and as he continued to strain on up the hill he turned his head with an enquiring look to ascertain the reason why the Sahib should want to stop half-way up the hill. The Sahib said "Stop for a minute and I will walk to the top of the hill."

Many a time had Munisami had to haul two passengers up these hills and he had not encountered this consideration before. He was a willing lad and did not intend to put the Sahib to the slight trouble of having to walk up the hill. He therefore grinned and shook his head in negation, replying "No, Sahib, I can do it all night" and redoubled his efforts on the hill.

At the end of the run the Sahib paid Munisami the full fare and gave him some baksheesh. Then, whilst Munisami wiped his streaming face, arms and chest and somewhat recovered his breath, the Sahib began talking to him. The Sahib asked Munisami whether he liked rickshaw work. Munisami replied that it was terribly hard and that he didn't like it, but that he had to earn a living and had no other work. The Sahib asked Munisami if he had ever thought of joining the Army as a Sepoy and explained to him that it was hard work also in the Army, but good healthy work with plenty of good food, free clothing and good pay, and a good life.

This proposition sounded better to Munisami than the health-destroying rickshaw work that he had been doing for nearly two years. Being of a conservative nature, however, like most of his kind, this new idea required some consideration and Munisami felt that he needed some time to think about it. The Sahib, however, appeared to wish him to agree. Munisami therefore thought it easiest to agree, and did so, without, however, having the intention of necessarily putting his agreement into actual practice.

The Sahib seemed pleased at Munisami's agreement, but he told him to think it over and to meet him again the following day. Munisami promised to do this.

Between then and the next day Munisami thought a good deal about the proposition of becoming a Sepoy. He spoke to a few friends about it. He knew little about the Army. There was a War going on somewhere he knew, but it had not affected him personally very much in the past. The Army was in some way connected with the war he thought. The Sahib had said that it would be necessary to leave this big city if he joined the Army, but that he would be given leave sometimes to visit his home.

If he stayed in the big city, which by now had lost its first glamourous impressions, Munisami could see no alternative other than continuing with the very trying rickshaw work—until his health broke down, as it assuredly would in that work—and then what? On the other hand, the Sahib's proposition had some good points in it and sounded attractive in several ways. Besides, Munisami liked the Sahib and did not feel that he would mislead him with false promises.

When the next morning came Munisami had almost made up his mind to tell the Sahib when they met that he really would like to become a Sepoy in the Army. The Sahib had told Munisami to meet him at 7 a.m. At sunrise Munisami got up, washed himself and went about his other early morning duties. Then he got out the rickshaw and started towards the meeting place that had been agreed upon the day before.

Munisami had allowed ample time to reach the rendezvous by 7 a.m., but on his way there two people demanded of him that he should take them to a place that was some distance off the direct route to his meeting place with the Sahib. Munisami told these two people that he could not take them as his rickshaw was already engaged. There were no other rickshaws about at the time, and the two men became obstreperous and insisted that Munisami should take them. He set off therefore to complete this unexpected and unwanted run as quickly as he could.

As he ran on with his load and the time passed, Munisami began to worry in case he should not be in time to be back to meet the Sahib at the rendezvous at 7 a.m. In that case the Sahib might come and go and he might never see the Sahib again. As he bowled along he passed a clock and saw that there were only ten minutes to go for 7 o'clock. He had already run two miles with his unwelcome passengers and there was a further mile to do before he reached the place to which they wanted to go. From there it would be two miles back to where he hoped to meet the Sahib at 7 o'clock.

He realised now that even if he ran as fast as he could for the remainder of the outward journey and also all the way back, when the rickshaw would be empty, he still could not be at the meeting place by 7 o'clock. However, he would do his best and he hoped that the Sahib would wait for a time and not be too angry with him for being late. So Munisami redoubled his efforts and sped on. At last the outward journey was finished and Munisami brought his loaded rickshaw to a stop. With the three-mile run that he had just completed and the extra effort which he had put into it in order to make up as much time as he could, he was streaming and panting hard.

Then the annoying passengers told him to wait. This was too much-he would miss his Sahib—and he became frantic. After several minutes' waste of time by the passengers, they paid Munisami a miserly sum. Not being in a position to spend further precious time, Munisami took the meagre fare and started straight off on his return trip. After running the remaining two miles he at last drew near to the place agreed upon for the meeting, ten minutes late, streaming hot and panting for breath. But, Ram! Ram! the Sahib was waiting there.

When Munisami did not appear at 7 o'clock the Sahib thought that he (Munisami) had decided against becoming a Sepoy, and that he probably would not turn up at all. However, he decided to wait for ten minutes or quarter of an hour, as he knew that Munisami was certainly too poor to be able to afford a

watch and would probably not know the time accurately. So when, about ten minutes past seven he saw Munisami come running up the road, he was glad as he was looking forward to meeting the lad again.

The Sahib felt very sorry for Munisami when, as he drew near, he saw the state that the boy was in after his five-mile run. The Sahib got into the rickshaw and told Munisami that he might walk instead of running. Munisami, grateful, set off at a fast walk. After a time the Sahib stopped him and got out of the rickshaw. They then had a further talk together, at which the Sahib found that Munisami really did want to join the Army.

At the medical examination the Medical Officer was a trifle doubtful about Munisami's heart and lungs and told him that had he continued very much longer with rickshaw work his heart and lungs would not have been good enough for admission to the Army. Munisami felt truly grateful to his Sahib who had saved him from the awful life which would soon have ruined his (Munisami's) health.

Thus Munisami joined the Army.

He went to a Mechanical Transport Company, where he learnt to drive cars and lorries. The boy, who had never driven anything but a bullock cart before, felt that his soul was being released through his foot on the accelerator pedal, with the motive power under his control. Being used to the slow-moving bullock cart, Munisami found it difficult at first to appreciate the speed at which a car or lorry could go. But as the instruction progressed, Munisami became a good driver and good mechanic.

He liked the life also. There was as much good food as a boy could want; far more than he had ever seen or even dreamed of at home or in the big city. He found also that the monthly pay, which did not sound very much, was sufficient to enable him to send his father and mother two or three times the amount that they were able to earn at home and, in addition, Munisami had enough left over to put some into the savings bank and to pay for a supply of beedies, a trip to the cinema and a visit to the bazaar for himself at sufficiently frequent intervals.

Munisami worked hard and well and made many friends in the Company.

Then came the day when Munisami's name, amongst others, appeared to proceed Overseas. He was a little scared, but also rather thrilled, at the idea of going so far away to another country beyond the sea.

Munisami went to Egypt, where he saw much active service driving a 3-ton lorry.

One day a harassed Officer of a British Unit was shouting directions in English to the Indian driver of a 3-ton lorry in the Western Desert. There happened to be no one nearby who could interpret. Munisami was very willing to do whatever was wanted and he did his best, but is he to be blamed for his "inability to understand the orders and directions given" in English which "may have caused misunderstandings"?

They may be trying at times, but they have done—and are still doing—a grand job of work, and they are a grand lot (as everyone will testify who has worked with them), those Indian drivers.

#### TAKING OVER A COMPANY

By Major M. J. Moynihan, M.C.

This article is for the benefit of junior officers; it was wirtten in the field and contains nothing that cannot be found in training manuals, but such manuals and certain I. A. Orders are not always available, and this very readable summary may be useful to junior officers.

YOU are taking over "X" Company, and as soon as possible you will want to know who's who and what's what in your new company, so that you can go ahead with training.

Who's Who. (a) On the Ground. In a four-class battalion like ours, taking over a Company really involves taking over a Class. Appointments, transfers and promotion concern not only your own company, but the men of your Class in H.Q. Company and Administration Company as well. Therefore hold a parade of all the men of your Class in the Battalion. Fall them in in order of seniority (and check the long roll as you do so). That will show you who's who on the ground. It also makes it clear to everyone concerned that you have your eye on him.

(b) On Paper. Not all your men will be present; some will be on leave, in Reinforcement Camp, in Training Division or Centre. Next thing therefore is to get your complete "Who's Who" on paper; work it out from your own nominal rolls and check and complete them from records in the Adjutant's Office. Make a numerical summary of these nominal rolls, after which you can begin thinking about recommendations for postings and transfers.

In making these recommendations and in running your company generally, you will want to know a great deal more than the mere strength, seniority and War Establishment of your class. From personal contact and from the records find out the qualifications of each man; start with the Section Commanders. If possible, run an N.C.Os cadre. Get the N.C.Os together and tell them what you expect of them.

Tell them their first duty is to know their men; get them to make out a "Section Long Roll" of their sections; give them a pro forma—and an envelope to keep the roll in. When anyone joins the section get the Section Commander to parade the new man with the long roll, his kit inventory and A.B. 64, so that you can check the new man in.

COMPANY RECORDS. These should be designed to show you at a glance: (i) What specialists you have; (ii) men who have passed school examinations; (iii) unfits, or bad types, to be weeded out; (iv) men who have been wounded or received honours; (v) what men belong to the same sub-class; (vi) what men come from the same locality; and (vii) what men have relations in the Army.

Specialists. These should contain names of those who have done special courses, or have previously served with H.Q. Company or Admin. Company, or are specialists with the company at company weapons. Give a copy to the H.Q. and Admin. Companies, and to the Adjutant. The list will help you to allot men to vacancies which may have to be filled from your class.

School Examinations.—Will show the educational standard of your Company; also what individuals who, through lack of opportunity, are below standard. You can then set about coaching them.

Unfit men.—This list can at first only be a cockshy; but you can make a start by collecting names from Platoon Commanders, and by glancing through your conduct sheets. The main test will be personal observation, confirmed by M.Os inspection and by actual disciplinary cases subsequent to your taking over.

Wounds, Honours, Awards.—This list will help you in your postings, and in choosing good men as instructors in training formations.

Sub-Classes, Localities, Relationships.—These lists will give you a framework for the understanding of each man's background, and also assist in sifting any problem which may have its origin in some intrigue.

WELFARE. This may be classified under the following headings:-

Accounts.—Get from the Accounts Clerk a statement showing the rates of pay and allowances of each rank, after which check from the A.B. 64s (a) rates of pay, (b) family allotment, and (c) names and addresses of heirs.

Health.—Hold an M.Os inspection as soon as possible, and hold your own sick parade daily under your Pay Nail: before those reporting sick go to the M.I. Room; see that all minor ailments are treated in the company, either by the Platoon Havildars or your own S.Bs. Check your Platoon Havildar's medical haversacks. The M.O. issues them and their contents.

Leave.—See that the leave roster is complete; give a copy for record and safe custody to the Adjutant's office. When a leave party is detailed, read out the names at roll call. If there are any objections or counter-claims, settle them in front of the whole company.

Petitions.—Go into these very carefully. Read the notes on submission of petitions and complaints in the Pamphlet on Family Welfare; it shows you which petitions are sanctioned. As company records may go astray or get lost, it is reassuring to the man, and also a useful precaution, to give a copy of petitions sanctions to the petitioner. If he goes on leave he can take the copy with him. If the Company changes hands, he can show it to the new Company Commander as a reminder.

Amenities.—Have your own ideas about these. Do what you can by local purchase (if the adjutant will sub-allot amenity funds), by salvage, and by improvisation, to provide and make the simple articles and materials which the men really want—stationery, cloth, literature, sports kit, lamps, cleaning materials, oil, eating utensils, etc. An unofficial Amenities Naik helps. Here are two important points to watch regarding morale: first, see that your men write letters home; secondly, should any man be killed, wounded, or injured, try and write a personal letter to the relatives.

You have now found out who your men are; you are satisfied about their welfare. Now the "Q" side remains. It may be divided into four headings: Stores (controlled and non-controlled), Supplies, Scales, and Loading Tables.

Stores.—Find out from the Q.M. what "controlled" stores you should have; strictly speaking, there is no such thing as a Company W.E.T. But the

Q.M. will sub-allot to companies pro rata to the Battalion supply. Having found out what you should have, order an inspection and see what you actually have. Note what is deficient and useless and indent accordingly. For Company weapons arrange for an armourer's inspection.

For non-controlled stores, hold a kit inspection—personal kit and equipment, and company stores. Note what is deficient and indent accordingly. Having indented, follow it up; check receipts against indents; re-indent; badger the Q.M. about any articles not supplied. On the other hand, help him by seeing that men repair their clothing and kit; remember that you have a bootmaker, and that the battalion has a tailor, who should be at your disposal one day in seven. See that each man's number is on every article.

Supplies and Scales.—Find out the existing scales, and work out amount of rations, distribution of ammunition down to each man. Keep the scale for reference.

Loading and conversion tables.—This brings you to the question of loading tables and transport, and of conversion tables from A.T. leads to M.T. loads. The object is to enable you to calculate quickly what transport you will require to lift the company load whatever company strength may be. Get a pair of scales and weigh articles of kit, stores, ammunition. Here are some:

Basic fighting load		••	• •	' 24 lb	٠.
Blanket		• •	• •	5 <del>1</del> lbs	8.
Groundsheet	• •	• •	• •	$3\frac{1}{2}$ lbs	s.
Mosquito net	• •	• •	• •	1½ lbs	
Filled magazines (six)		• •	• •	20 lbs	s.
Spare barrels (three)			• •	20 lbs	۶.
Box S.A.A	• •	• •	• •	75 lbs	
Box Sten	• •	• •	• •	50 lbs	
2" mortar bombs (48)		• •	• •	170 lb	s.
Pakhal	• •		• •	80 lb	s.
Picks (ten) shovels (1	4)	• •	• •	160 lb	۹.

You have now taken over the "A" and "Q" sides; now to the "G" side—training. You will be given special directives about this, but try and follow the usual sequence from individual to collective training.

- (i) W.T. Get your men on to the range, or organise field firing as soon as possible. Check any tendency to relapse into the old peacetime singsong methods of instructions, especially in fire orders. Hold bayonet practices in P.T. periods.
- (ii) For the school, begin at the very bottom. Ask yourself what it must mean to be totally illiterate, and draft your school programmes accordingly. You may think you are beginning at the beginning with teaching your R.T. class figures from 1 to 100; but are you sure they can all count aloud? And are you sure they can draw straight and circular lines? At the other end of the scale arrange classes for English for those interested.

Sport and P.T.—Make instructors follow the correct sequence of instruction. Organise section competitions. Keep a record of swimming results. The aim must be swimming a fair distance in uniform, less equipment, but with 100 rounds and rifle with fixed bayonet.

Exercises with A/T and attached Personnel.—Weekly if possible. Begin with a route march and watch march discipline. This will give you much to check; it will also give you a good opportunity to check your war equipment and its distribution on the ground.

Night Exercises.—One exercise (and one night firing) a week. Begin at the bottom, with mere inter-com. Movement at night and night ambushes are the main items.

River Crossings.—From swimming practices pass on to river crossings. You can never rehearse these enough, and they involve a good deal of forethought in the working out of Loading Tables for your boats.

Try to organise two N. C.Os. cadres—one for Section Commanders or Naiks, and one for L/Naiks and unpaid L/Naiks. You may have to cram your parades for these into two periods—one early in the morning and the other in late afternoon. Also endeavour to run a cadre for V.C.Os in R-T.

Apply to the Adjutant for any vacancies on courses. If they are few, make the most of appointments and transfers inside the Battalion. With men going on leave you will find many chances of grooming men for the next job above them. Make an umidwar L/Naik your orderly or company runner; see how he shapes, and attach him to the Battalion H.Q. as Battalion runner. As someone aptly called it, the Battalion Office is the Sepoy's Staff College. Attach your reserve specialists to H.Q. and Adm. Company for refresher work. In all these ways you can keep men from going rusty.

You have now taken over your company. You have checked your W.E. ("A"), your W.E.T. ("Q"), and you are ready to maintain and make the most of them ("G"). Your company office contains papers, if not files, on:

- "A": Posting and long rolls; discipline; petitions and applications; amenities; accounts; leave roster; M.Os Parade states; sick reports; honours and awards.
- "Q": Controlled stores; non-controlled stores; rations and ammunition; loading tables.
  - "G": Training Programmes.

Make out a fortnightly progress report covering the above headings, and include in it your intelligence summary, sending it to the Adjutant, with a copy to Q.

Until you know your company by heart there is no better way of getting a grip on things than by working them out on paper. And when you do know your company by heart, this is still the best way of ensuring smooth running while you are in command, and a clean handover when it is your turn to be relieved.

## Lt.-General R. A. Savory

Lieut.-General R. A. Savory, C.B., D.S.O., M.C., Adjutant General in India, who is Chairman of the Executive Committee of the United Service Institution of India, has been appointed the first Colonel of the Sikh Light Infantry.

#### THE RIGHT TYPE AND SOME THOUGHTS ON INDIANISATION

By MAJOR GURBACHAN SINGH.

GREAT Britain has recognised India's claim to national independence, whether it be a kind of self-government within the framework of the British Commonwealth of Nations, or otherwise. Self-government presupposes a capacity for self-defence and unless India is ready to shoulder the responsibility of her own defence, her independence will mean but little.

Public men in India have been declaring over a number of years that India is only too anxious to take over her own defence if the British would but let her do so. The British point of view, on the other hand, has always been that the armed forces in India cannot be "Indianised" as quickly as they wish because the right type of Indian young man is not coming forward in sufficient numbers to officer the Indian Army. They further contend that India's freedom will not be worth a day's purchase if her defence cannot be handed over to a cadre of efficient and experienced Indian officers, and that to gain experience takes time.

No one who has the good of India at heart will disagree with the latter contention, but there is a lot of disagreement over the former. Merely to say that the right type is not coming forward does not take us very far. What is the right type? Does he exist? If he does, what is there that holds him back? No one has yet described what the term "right type" means.

My task in this paper is to study, and make an attempt to determine what the "right type" is. It behoves all of us to be of one mind when we use this term, for if we are not, the present misunderstanding and therefore mistrust, is bound to continue. I will also say a few words about the "right type" of British officers who will be welcome in the new Indian Army.

Let me say at once that the "right type" does exist. Indeed, he has existed for a long time but, owing to our faulty methods of selection, we have failed to catch him in sufficient numbers. The four hundred and fifty odd Indians who form the regular Indian officer element of India's armed forces to-day, and many ICOs, are a fine body of men and they in a nutshell constitute the right type. During the recent war these men have proved that courage, determination and resourceful leadership are not the monopoly of any race. Given the training, good equipment and the opportunity to put that training to the acid test of war, Indian officers have acquitted themselves well in all types and conditions of warfare.

What are the attributes of the right type? The foremost attribute of military leadership is a sound general education, with a more than cursory acquaintance with such subjects as science, economics, geography and history. Modern war has shown that leaders must have an elastic and adaptable mind if they are not to crack up under the stress of battle. Only a sound educational background will develop these qualities.

The author of this article was an instructor at an OTS in India recently, and found that many of the cadets who came from civil life lacked qualities of leadership owing to their faulty education. Their scholarship had been purely academic and had not been designed to develop leadership. Candidates who

came from the ranks, especially those who had been on active service, purse excellent qualities of leadership but lacked a sound educational budges and as a result were very slow in the uptake.

What is wanted is a happy mean between these two extremes. Again overhaul of the entire educational system of the country is now envisaged by authorities, and the opening of new military preparatory schools should all course produce the right type of general education for an army career.

I would emphasise that in order to get larger numbers of candidate must not reduce the standards of qualifications which ordinarily applied to calculate entering the I.M.A. before the war. If we do we shall never have an efficient Army.

Turning to politics, to have a politically minded army is to had fer national disaster. Politics, unfortunately, colour the tenor of all life in his to-day, but if our future Army is to carry out its normal military funcine efficiently, politics should be taboo. A cadet therefore who comes from a pictically active class is most undesirable in the officer ranks of the Army. Is aware that soldiers have the right to vote and are, of course, entitled to the individual political opinions as long as they do not make a public exhibits of them. A soldier's duty and loyalty is to his country and not to the part government of the day.

Next, the "right type" must have a sense of responsibility, self-disciple, character and, in short, all the qualities of leadership which are known by self as that indefinable mysterious term "personality". A natural leader with positive type of personality gets the best out of his men while one who trisk drive them does not get very far.

Listly, one who looks upon a career in the Army as a money-maker business only is not the right type. The youth of the country must possible service in the defence forces as a great honour because honour it is.

I have tried to outline some of the attributes which go to the making at the right type. I have not attempted to discuss the very obvious ones. It is candidate who offers himself for a commission has these attributes his character building and general military education at the proposed War Memorial Academy should fit him very adequately for a successful career in the Army.

The defence of India will be a joint Indo-British responsibilty for many year to come. British and Indian officers have learnt to respect each other mode the stress of battle and, given good-will on both sides, there is no reason thy the happy relationship should not continue in the years of peace ahead. The hands and taking over of the complete defence of India will be a gradual, but no necessarily a slow, process. India would want the very best type of British officer in her Armies. Birds of passage to whom the "glamour of India" due not appeal, will be misfits during the period of transition as will be those the always "wanna go home".

As regards Indian officers the responsibility which lies on the shoulders the selection boards cannot be stressed too much. Once the "right type" this I have attempted to define earlier has been chosen, the next stage will be the test of the new War Academy—which will probably turn out its first finished probably in about 1963. The cadet, above all, must be given the opportunity to develop his initiative and powers of discussion. When a cadet has taken up a more stand on any issue, right or wrong, let him defend it. There is no better way if making young men confident and morally strong.

The Indian Army that this cadet will eventually officer will be a wellalanced force where, unlike in the past, one arm of the Service will not prelominate to the detriment of others. The Army will be as representative of
the various Indian communities as possible and the decision to keep on in peaceime The Madras Regt., The Bihar Regt., and other new regiments raised during
the war, is a step in the right direction. The Army will be a small but highly
ducated and mechanised organism, as the cost of keeping an army of our
1939—45 size would be prohibitive.

There is a widespread enthusiasm for education in the Army to-day and the jawán now takes an immense interest in the things of the mind. A very large number of Indian soldiers have been overseas and, after a long stay in countries like Egypt, Palestine, Iran and Italy, have awakened to the significance of incient history. Their stay in countries like Malaya, Java and Borneo is bound have prolonged effects on their outlook on things in general. The sepoys take furrent affairs seriously nowadays. The "line bat" is quickly giving way to rational discussions. These factors are portents which cannot be ignored and the sepoy of tomorrow would look to his officer to interpret them to him.

The reputation of the Indian Army stands higher to-day than it ever lid before. Indian soldiers have shown their prowess in battle, being proved second to none. It has taken many years of hard work and human understanding, coupled with good man-management, to bring the Indian Army to this pitch and there is a deep bond between leader and led. This achievement has been mainly British. To take over this bond unimpaired, India will need the highest quality of military leadership and character but already a good, if small, start has been made. The finest troops cannot avail without good leadership.

## New Pay Code for British Personnel in India.

In the White Papers announcing the post-war emoluments of members of the British Armed Forces it was stated that the arrangements to be made in regard to British Service Officers and Other Ranks remunerated under the Indian Pay Code were being examined.

Both H. M's Government and the Government of India have now reached the conclusion that it is undesirable to maintain a separate code for members of the British Services serving in India or elsewhere, and they have, therefore, decided that from July 1, 1946, the new Code, as announced in the White Papers referred to above, and also the UK Income Tax Code, should apply both in India and the Far East. The change will enable members of the United Kingdom Forces to be remunerated on a common basis wherever they may be serving, and will greatly facilitate the administration of pay and allowances.

In conformity with the practice under the British Pay Code in certain other localities overseas, a tax free allowance will be introduced to cover extra costs arising from local circumstances. This allowance will be called Local Overseas Allowance, and the rates will vary according to whether the recipient is married or single.

The statements in the White Papers regarding the termination of war gratuity, postwar credits and war service increments apply equally to the British Services in India and the Far East as elsewhere. As regards Japanese Campaign Pay, this will continue up to the Anniversary of J. Day—August 15, 1946— when it will cease.

In order to avoid hardship which might be caused by a sudden and serious loss of higher rates and the incidence of heavier taxation, arrangements will be made for the grant of war excesses and ransitional allowances broadly on the lines of those provided in the White Papers, with certain additional designed to meet the special features of the Indian Pay Code.

#### INDIAN GUNNERS' HONOUR

By "MATROSS"

THE grant of the title "Royal" to the Indian Regiment of Artillery will give great satisfaction not only to the Indian Army as a whole, but also to all Gunners. For though the Indian Regiment of Artillery only came into being in 1935, the Indian Gunner has a far longer record of devoted service.

The early history of Indian artillerymen in the British Service is obscure, but for many years it was the accepted policy not to enlist any Indian for duty with the guns. On June 17, 1748 the Court of Directors of the East India Company laid down that "no Indian, or person of mixed breed or Roman Catholic of what nation soever, should be admitted into a laboratory or military magazine," and this order was later extended, so as to prohibit the employment of Indian gunners. Indians were, however, enlisted as Gun Lascars, their duties being confined to moving the guns in action by means of drag ropes and to the carrying of ammunition.

The prejudice against Indian artillerymen succumbed at last to stern necessity, for in August 1777 the acute shortage of European gunners led to the raising of the first company of Golandaz for service with the Oudh Brigade. This experiment was made at the suggestion of Colonel Pearse, Commandant of the Bengal Artillery, which was then a purely European Corps.

The new unit under Lieut. Robert Bruce accompanied General Goddard's force from Bengal to Bandelkund and Bombay in 1778, and so satisfactory was its behaviour that two additional companies of Golandaz were raised in Bengal. It was then decided to group the three companies together under Major P. Duff with an Adjutant and a Quartermaster, and a Captain Lieutenant to command each company.

In 1778 a re-organisation of the Bengal Artillery took place and the Golandaz were augmented to three battalions of eight companies each. These Battalions were raised at Calcutta, Cawnpore and Fatehgarh and the 2nd and 3rd Oudh Companies were incorporated in them. The gun lascars were at the same time reduced.

One immediate effect of the introduction of this new organisation was the withdrawal of battalion guns from infantry regiments; the guns were handed over to the Golandaz. Actually, this reform was a wise one, since guns could be handled far more effectively in action when grouped in units under artillery officers than when allotted in pairs to each infantry battalion. Moreover, the gunners could be better trained and administered by their own officers working in companies than they were when scattered throughout the army in small detachments, usually under N. C. Os.

But infantry officers resented the loss of their battalion guns—and perhaps also the resulting loss of certain perquisites connected with their upkeep. The result was an agitation against the new policy of employing Indians on artillery duties, and on November 23, 1779, an order was issued for the disbandment of all Golandaz, despite the vigorous protests of Colonel Pearse. This order was

Digitized by GOOGLE

duly carried out, and most of the discharged Indian gunners, disdaining to enlist as gun lascars, joined the Mahratta service. The guns were again handed back to infantry battalions, where they were usually served by only partially-trained sepoys without expert supervision.

To replace the three disbanded Golandaz battalions, the East India Company had recourse to re-enlisting gun lascars, who were required "to perform all the duties of ordnance with the exception of pointing and loading guns and mortars." But gun lascars were not trained artillerymen, and when the shortage of European gunners again became acute in 1782, three companies of Golandaz were hastily raised at Fort William, Chunar and Dinapore. By 1785 all three had been reduced, despite the strong recommendation of the Governor-General that at least two of them should be retained on the establishment as some recognition for their excellent service.

It soon became apparent that the European gunners assisted only by Gun Lascars could not undertake the increasing responsibilities of the artillery arm, and in 1798 another experiment was tried which was in the nature of a truly British compromise. Instead of raising new units of Indian gunners, it was decided to add an Indian Officer and 46 Indian N. C. Os. and men to each European Company of Artillery, the idea being that each gun detachment would include men of both races. The system was universally unpopular from the start.

The Golandaz, who were collectively described as "The Component Part," disliked working beside men of different race, language, customs and religion. The British gunners distrusted the Indians' reliability in drill, and this in the days of muzzle loading guns was a serious matter, for carelessness in handling black powder charges usually resulted in death or mutilation for members of the gun detachment. So strong was the protest from both British and Indian gunners that in 1802 the obnoxious "Component Part" system was abolished. The Indian gunners were withdrawn from the European companies and were eventually formed into a separate unit of five Golandaz companies.

The new establishment of Golandaz was not officially authorised till 1806, and to raise the companies it was necessary to enlist many Indians who had fought the Mahratta guns so staunchly against Lake. But the organisation of separate Indian units was a sensible one, and the establishment was increased to seven Companies in 1809, to ten Companies in 1812 and to fifteen Companies in 1818. Five more companies were raised in 1824 and in 1827 the "Native Artillery" was reorganised into two Battalions, each of eight Companies. By 1845 the Golandaz of the Bengal Artillery consisted of three Battalions, each of eight Companies.

Meanwhile in Madras a very similar struggle had taken place to employ Golandaz in the face of the deep-rooted prejudice against allowing Indians to learn the mysteries of the Gunner's art. A "Native Artillery" Battalion of ten companies was raised in 1784, but in the following year it was disbanded together with its attendant Gun Lascar establishment. To replace these ten companies, a system of mixed units was tried, very similar in conception to the unpopular "Component Part" scheme in Bengal. In Madras the Indians attached to each European Company were called "Assistant Native Gunners," but as each company received 3 Indian Officers, 12 N.C.Os. and 200 men, it is probable that their duties were chiefly those previously undertaken by Gun Lascars rather than trained artillerymen.

Apparently this mixed system was no more satisfactory in Madras than it subsequently was in Bengal, for in April 1786 the corps of Native Assistant Gunners was broken up and the men were drafted into Sepoy battalions or into the Gun Lascar establishment. At the same time it was clearly laid down as the "express orders" of the Honourable Court of Directors that "none of the natives from the interior country of Hindustan shall henceforth be taught the exercise of artillery."

By March 1799 the scruples of the Honourable Court of Directors regarding Indian gunners were overcome to the extent of raising a single Golandaz Company for service at Madras, but this unit was disbanded in March 1802. Three years later however a Troop of Native Horse Artillery was raised and a second Troop was added in 1819. By that year there were also ten Golandaz Artillery Companies which were formed into a separate Battalion.

In Bombay the first "Native Artillery" units were raised in 1826 when five companies were formed. Three more companies followed in 1827, two more in 1843 and another two in 1846.

The Golandaz earned an excellent reputation for skill and steadiness in the Mahratta War of 1817, in Burma, Afghanistan, Gwalior 1843, the Sikh Wars, Persia, Arabia, Sind and Aden. The 3rd Bombay Golandaz Company bore the distinction "Hyderabad" on its appointments for its services in the Sind Campaign, while the 2nd Company 6 Battalion Bengal Artillery, was granted the unique official honour of having a mural crown engraved on its guns in memory of its gallantry in the defence of Jelalabad.

During the outbreak of 1857, only ten Golandaz regular units of the existing 42 were involved in mutiny, and in no single case was any violence offered to the officers. In most cases, companies mutinied only under pressure from their comrades of the infantry and cavalry, and several Golandaz units performed active duty in suppressing the outbreak.

When, after the Mutiny, the East India Company's Artillery was absorbed with the Royal Artillery, the Golandaz companies were reduced except for two Bombay units which later became 5 Bombay and 6 Jacob's Mountain Batteries. They, with the four Punjab Frontier Force batteries, remained and were later joined by other Indian Mountain Batteries, but none of these units was incorporated with the Royal Artillery till 1927.

So after 150 years, the old prejudice against the Indian artilleryman has been gradually dispelled, until to-day his final justification comes with the grant of the title "Royal" to the Indian Regiment of Artillery.

#### OFFICER PRODUCTION AND NATIONALISATION

BY MAJOR A. J. WILSON, M.C.

Nationalisation of the Indian Army over a period of years has for long been accepted as part of the Government plan for transferring political power in India from British to Indian hands. The Government of India, in agreement with the British Government, has decided that permanent commissions in the Royal Indian Navy and the Indian Army will in future be restricted to Indians and others domiciled in India who are subjects of His Majesty or of a Prince or Chief in India. It has been recognised that the three Indian Services will still require a quota of British Officers until there is an adequate supply of qualified Indian officers.

This decision, made public on October 22, 1945, was further implemented on February 25, 1946 by the re-opening of the Indian Military Academy, which will train Indians for regular Army commissions until it is absorbed into the new Indian War Memorial Academy. The ultimate cadet capacity of the present Academy will be in the neighbourhood of a thousand, providing (on the basis of a two-year course) for approximately 400 officers to be commissioned annually.

The policy and the means of implementing it are clear. One obstacle only stands in the way of its attainment—a barrier which cannot be sidetracked or removed by anybody but Indians themselves. The failure of young Indians of the right type to volunteer their services for training as officers is a fundamental barrier to completing nationalisation of the Indian Army; it is also likely to prove a serious handicap to the political development of the country.

The transfer of power to Indian hands, if it is to be based on fact and not on fiction, cannot take place except on the firm foundation of military security, which in turn can only rest upon strong, united and Indian-officered defence forces. Only with freedom from outside interference and her status as a "land island" thus secured can India face the problem of solving her pressing political difficulties and of developing her economy, so that she can ultimately assume her place among the great Powers of the world, now open to her by reason of her strategic position and largely undeveloped economic and industrial resources.

Why is there this failure on the part of young Indians to come forward for training? Perhaps the most important reason is to be found in the failure of the average educated Indian—including the political leaders,—to understand, fully the military implications of Indian independence. It is natural, and derives from the fact that Britain has, since living memory, been the authority primarily and ultimately responsible for the defence of India, which has been able to develop without fear of outside interference, secure in the knowledge that her long and vulnerable coast-line was defended in the last resort by the Royal Navy, while a combination of the British Army and largely British officered Indian Army assured the defence of her land frontiers.

The full implications of this responsibility for her own defence are seemingly only now being realised by India's political leaders, and will take considerably longer to become apparent to the class of educated Indian from which officers of the future Indian Army will largely be drawn.

Many Indians fail to realise that the decision to change the British-Indian Army into a national Indian Army is now an established military policy. This failure may be attributed to many causes—distrust (even perhaps at this stage) of British intentions, criticism by some Indians of the Indian Army as a "mercenary force," and the memory by some Indians of the stupid, prejudiced and shortsighted 'attitude towards nationalisation current in some quarters of the Army in the early stages of its introduction. Closely linked with these factors is a reluctance on the part of India's political leaders to call forward the best of India's young men to play their part in making the Indian Army a truly national force.

Uncertainty of the political future of the country and its effects on the Services is a further reason for the general disinclination of young Indians of the right type and background to offer themselves, for training as officers. Many are apprehensive of the attitude a Central Administration may take towards the Army in the future in the matter of status and pay. This impression, however ill-founded in fact, is nonetheless current and potent in India, and is having a considerable effect in discouraging young men with ability and prospects in other fields from embracing the Army as a career.

Nor should the purely economic aspect be overlooked. Openings of all kinds exist, and there are large sums of money to be made at present in civilian life in India, while the pay of Army officers, though by no means ungenerous, is not at the same time such as is likely to tempt the young man who is largely actuated in his choice of a career by financial considerations.

To all these reasons one must add the absence of enlightened patriotism and a sense of duty in the minds of many young Indians. This is due largely to avoidable defects in the educational system of the country, with its undue emphasis on the attaining of arbitrary and abstract standards of knowledge coupled with the lack of provision for training in citizenship. The Indian Universities, for example, tend to turn out selfish and undisciplined products who are unlikely even to feel any sense of responsibility for the defence of their country, far less and inclination to take a part in the task themselves.

The concept of service for its own sake is as yet a wholly alien one to the majority of young Indians, and in all too little education in India is the close relationship of position with responsibility adequately stressed. Full and adequate numbers of public servants in all departments of the State cannot be expected in India until this gap in the educational system of the country is more completely filled.

What remedies are there for the present serious state of affairs, other than tacit acceptance of an unsatisfactory position? First and foremost a solution of the communal problem would go far towards resolving the doubts at present held by many young Indians, who would otherwise submit their names for training as officers. Secondly, further attempts must be made to explain to the Indian public that the responsibility for the defence of India will shortly be theirs. A strong national Indian Army will be required, and if the leadership of this Army is to reach the standard deserved and expected by the magnificent fighting men who will form its rank and file, only the best of India's youth will be acceptable for training as officers.

It would be a breach of faith with the past, as well as to store up trouble for the future, if any but the very high standard of the present Indian Army were

to be accepted, for undisciplined, inefficient and indifferent Armies bring discredit as well as disaster to the country for whose security they are in so large measure responsible. It must, therefore, be the object of everybody, British and Indian, connected with the defence of India, however humble their position, to lose no opportunity of stressing that responsibility for India's defence will shortly become absolute, and that it is in the hands of Indians themselves to determine the quality of their defenders.

For the lack of education in citizenship and its responsibilities it is difficult to suggest any short term and immediate policy. So far as the Army itself is concerned, this remedy lies in the teaching of leadership and citizenship in all its forms at the Indian Military Academy, and at the future War Memorial Academy. Only by making the most strenuous efforts in this direction will it be possible to develop a cadre of officers actuated by patriotism and a sense of duty and not by the desire for power of personal effort. It is to be hoped that other educational establishments in India will follow the lead of the Army.

Closely allied to training in the responsibilities of a citizen lies the relationship of the Army officer to politics. The young Indian is both by up-bringing and inclination a political being—and in the present nature of things it is both healthy and desirable that he should be so inclined. It is, however, difficult yet vital to persuade him that a soldier must, in his public life at least, be utterly detached from and uninfluenced by political considerations. His task is to serve the Government of the day without reference to its political complexion or his own opinions. Insofar as this remoteness from politics is an essential quality of all public servants, the Army has here again an opportunity to give a valuable lead to the rest of India.

To summarise, the transfer of power from British to Indian hands cannot take place except on the firm foundation of Indian security. This security is in turn based on a strong united Indian Army, officered by a cadre of Indian officers worthy in all respects of the magnificent material in the ranks it will be their privilege to lead.

Every effort must therefore be made to persuade young Indians of the right type to play their part as leaders in maintaining this security, so that India can develop either as a member of the British Commonwealth or as an independent sovereign state without fear of molestation.

## Officers Required by Indian Artillery.

Following the recent announcement concerning the expansion of the Royal Indian Artillery, officers in other arms of the Indian Army have been called upon to volunteer for permanent transfer to this branch of the service. An India Army Order, inviting applications for transfer, is under issue.

Only British and Indian officers holding regular commissions in any arm of the Indian Army and I.E.C.Os. under 35 years of age who have volunteered deferment of release in either of the categories D.V.R. D.V. and D.V.2. should apply for transfer.

Officers selected will attend a four-month conversion course at Deolali and final acceptance will depend upon their reports during this training. While under instruction officers will retain their temporary rank and after training will, as far as possible, be posted to regimental appointments in that rank.

#### FRONTIER HOCUS-POCUS

By LIEUT.-COLONEL W. J. M. SPAIGHT,

LAST year I wrote a short article on the N.-W. Frontier, and sent it to the U.S.I. of I the under a nom de plume. The Editor, however, said that he would prefer to publish it under my own name and I agreed.\* It appeared in the July 1945 edition of the Journal, and was called "The Frontier Myth". In the article I said that it was a myth that the Frontier was a good training ground for modern war. Two articles have since appeared in the Journal, disagreeing with my point of view. One was in the January 1946 edition, called "Frontier Realities" by Brigadier M. R. ROBERTS, D.S.O. and one in the July 1946 edition called "Further Thoughts on Frontier Myths" by "The Admiral".

The lack of anonymity, when answering senior officers, rather restrains my reply. I have the three articles before me as I write, and I have decided that I was writing about different conditions to those discussed in both Brigadier ROBERTS'S and "The ADMIRAL'S" articles.

In my article I stated that "The following points apply in particular to Waziristan during wartime, and not to actual punitive columns". Brigadier Roberts writes of "fighting" Pathans and, at one place in his article, states "errors.....are usually brought home to one very quickly with unpleasant circumstances". The "Admiral" writes of "In, say, Razcol in 1933, every officer was an efficiency expert" and also mentions Tocol in 1937 (when there were operations in progress), as an ideal of co-operation between arms of the service.

Since 1937 the Bannu-Razmak road has had to be opened by regular troops, and this has taken up so much time that it is the most pressing duty for many battalions in Waziristan. I cannot understand why "The Admiral" thinks that this stretches only from Razmak to the Narai—a distance of some seven miles—and which is the sector with by far the most men and weapons to cover it; with large reserves at hand in Razmak. The Gardai Brigade has such a large proportion of its strength tied down in permanent camp and route pickets, from Tal Bridge to No. 76 Picket at Razani camp site, that unless relieved by other troops, it can hardly do anything else but open the road.

Since 1942 almost all troops in Waziristan have been war-raised. During wartime troops on the Frontier have normally, and rightly, received low priority in all matters—including the quality of recruits and the numbers and type of weapons. Until very recently frontier units have been starved of regular officers. Transport, both M/T and A/T, has been restricted. Many new units had "HAD IT" when they went to the frontier—for they never got to the war.

Under wartime conditions the policy has been to avoid incidents at all costs. As an example; in December 1940 there was an unfortunate, and expensive, action on Pakkalita Sar, which is some 4,000 yards South of Razmak

Digitized by Google

<sup>\*</sup>Our letter asked the author if he wanted the article published under his own name or a pseudonym, adding that we should prefer the former. It is but fair to add that if any contributor wishes to write under a pseudonym, it does not jeopardise acceptance in any way; every article is judged strictly on its merits. It does, however, add to the reader-interest of an article if it is published under the author's name. Our attention has just been drawn to an unfortunate printer's error, which we regret, in wrongly printing the author's initials in the July, 1945 issue of the Journal. They are as shown at the head of this article.

camp, and just to the north of the Tauda China camp site. Since the return of that column Razcol has not visited Tauda China, nor have troops gone more than some 2,000 yards South of the Razmak camp wire. Razcol training columns have moved on the Bannu road, rarely further than Dosalli. Brigade and battalion schemes have been confined to the immediate vicinity of camps.

The policy has paid; since the Datta Khel Column of 1942, there has been no show on the frontier. But the new troops and the new officers have most certainly made mistakes, and have usually got away with it. The Razmak-Bannu road is opened some one hundred times a year. On every road-open day elements of ten infantry battalions and numerous ancillery troops are employed. On every such day there are, it is safe to say, several tactical errors on, at least, a platoon basis and numerous individual errors, such as failure to make correct use of cover. Yet casualties to road protection troops are negligible, and many of these are caused by long-range sniping. Razcol, on its practice columns, has not suffered a casualty since 1944 and, I understand that Tocol (The Bannu Brigade columns) has not suffered a casualty for an even longer period.

"The Admiral" speaks of Razcol in 1933 in a most flattering, and nostalgic manner and, while I agree that it was more fun then than now, I don't think that we were really as good as he suggests. In 1933 we certainly covered more ground, it was a time of quiet on the frontier and the practice was to post section, rather than platoon, pickets. Still, I do not think that any battalions came up to "The Admiral's" standard of "Any properly run battalion on the L of C gets exercise equivalent to about four 25 mile route marches per week". I can remember Razcol moving from Degan in the Tochi to Gardai, a distance of some 20 miles, in one day in February or March 1933. On that day the company that I was commanding picketted about six miles of the route from the Lawargi down to Gardai. It was glorious, but it was not exactly war, and we could not have done it if there had been any hostiles about. In 1942, against very slight opposition, the battalion of which I was 2nd in command covered less than half the route that my company had held in 1933.

As regards "The Admiral's" teams; I seem to remember that the 26 November 1936 Tocol action, which caused a flare-up that lasted for years, was, to a large extent, brought on because there was no artillery at all with the column.

Both Brigadier Roberts and "The Admiral" chastise me in the names of all the Indian formations that have won fame in this war. I do not think that many troops went direct from any frontier station into actual operations. In early 1942 some went to Rangoon, in time to participate in the Burma retreat. Otherwise I am of the belief that regular, or war-raised, Indian Army units, from Frontier stations, that went to Malaya, Burma, Egypt or Italy all spent some months training for their special theatre before going into action. I presume that there is hardly a unit of the Indian Army that had not spent some time, on some part of the frontier, in some period of its history. I do not think it fair to give the Pathan the credit for all the hard training that Indian units did before going into battle in this war.

I also think "The Admiral" unwise in scourging "Auspex" in the name of the Commander, Eighth Indian Division.

Perhaps my original article may have exaggerated some of its points, but I believe that it is, in general, correct. The longer one gets away from the frontier the nicer it seems. I know that, round my birthplace, thirty years ago the grass was greener, the fields larger and the sun brighter than they are these days.

Digitized by Google

#### TRAINING ARMY INSPECTORS

#### BY MAJOR J.P.H. DONOVAN.

INSPECTION" has a limited significance to the layman. Being a specialised branch, it is seldom that any of the Services have access to any of its departments. The Defence Services have in the past only been concerned with the receipt of stores, but a knowledge of how those stores are made and inspected would certainly help to increase the efficiency of the Navy, Army and Air Force. For this reason a basic knowledge of "Inspection" in the training of the post-war Defence Services will assist materially in better maintenance and preservation of stores within units and formations.

During the late War the Services Inspection organization grew to alarming proportions. It started with a nucleus of technically trained men who, together with a small administrative body, were responsible for organising the inspection of all Army, Naval and Air Force equipment before it was issued. To obtain additional qualified officers in India, and also assistants for laboratory tests, was not easy. Apart from testing and reporting on samples, however, these officers and assistants endeavoured to standardise inspection by frequent tours of Inspection Depots, where bulk inspection of stores received direct from contractors' premises is carried out.

It is clear, therefore, that if in the future we are to maintain standard equipment throughout the United Nations, which is now the intention, the first thing to consider is how we are to obtain suitably qualified officers and men to advise on and report on future equipment. The Services must, in any case, develop a scientific staff of its own of the highest order of attainments, and the problem, as I see it, is: How is that staff to be trained? Training courses should, I feel, be established and divided into four levels of training: Basic, Job, Technical and Advanced. These I propose to discuss purely from a military point of view.

Trainees, starting with the Basic course, would undergo the next senior course according to their merit and aptitude. To co-ordinate responsibility for designating persons to be trained it would be necessary to divide the particular country concerned with Inspection in zones. Each zone or area would be responsible for selecting persons for training; the training policy would be laid down by G.H.Q.

The basic training would include instruction on subjects which would give a substantial background to the Inspector and impart to him an understanding of Army organization and procedure, reports and forms, channels of command and communications, civil service rules and regulations (Pay, Promotion and Leave) travel orders, allowances, duties and responsibilities of inspection, contract terminology, specifications, drawings and general information about instruments and tools of inspection and their care and maintenance.

It would be arranged for new employees, to prepare them for initial responsibilities; for those already in the service the course would be planned to improve their efficiency or to guide them into specialised commodity items or a

variety of types of inspection; while for those in the latter category who showed merit, advanced training could be arranged to teach them to assume supervisor responsibilities.

For the second type of course, which we might call the "Job" course—the training curriculum should be designed by each zone of Area H.Q. with the object of assisting Inspectors to improve themselves in the execution of their duties. Those in the "Examiner" group would find this second phase of training of great value; his work is of a repetitive character, such as examinations for visual defects, checking measurements by special gauges, etc. The fact that his work is simply explained means that this particular course could be made available for students with little difficulty.

Inspectors have hitherto been military and civilian officers, but if we are to develop our own scientific staff in the Army in future they will have to be military. They will have to be carefully selected, possess the requisite technical knowledge, be aware of the raw materials employed in manufacturing various types of equipment, and of the standard of those raw materials. An accurate knowledge of administrative responsibilities must also be within their sphere. Their work is of a semi-professional character, and the training for it is necessarily continuous and of a broad scope, and different from the relatively elementary training that is adequate for Examiners.

The last group to be considered—the Advanced—is the Administrative and Supervisory group. They must be able to direct and control inspection methods and analyse inspection operations. Roving or Field Inspectors, working on their own, would fall in this category, since they must exercise independent judgment.

So far as schedules, conditions and resources permit, all supervisory Inspectors should take the whole course, with periodic refreshers. Those considered suitable for promotion should be sent to the requisite training course.

Regular visits to laboratories should be made by Inspection personnel to keep them well-informed on latest developments and scientific procedures by which accurate measures of quality are obtained through objective tests. By visits to Inspection Depots they can make themselves acquainted with methods of packaging, packing, marking and shipping. Laboratory facilities of Government agencies as well as those of colleges, technical schools and other centres of learning should also be made use of to provide demonstrations of processes and procedures related to the work of inspection personnel.

When a newly-developed item of equipment is contemplated for production, arrangements should be made for a preliminary training of certain key personnel who are to be eventually assigned inspection tasks related to the item, at the laboratory or plant where final development is in progress. Observance of this policy should be directed towards assuring that all Inspectors to be assigned to the new item when it goes into production will have been systematically trained for their inspection job at the time the first production in the contractor's plant is scheduled.

I have not gone into detail as to the curriculum to be employed on the training courses. Naturally, it will range from elementary knowledge of rules and regulations to the servicing of contracts and standard practices in loading and shipping. But it will aim at providing the Defence Services with a body of men thoroughly trained in the proper inspecting of arms and equipment.

There is however one aspect of training I should like to stress, and the advanced Training. Courses should be provided to afford to commodity child aspectors and other selected supervisory inspectors such information as with essential for proper supervision and direction of Inspectors, and for the admittration of inspection in its relationship with the contractor's organization.

Advanced training courses should include instruction in leading exercised by supervisions, in the improvement of morale, in the citical and of contractor's manufacturing, assembly, and inspection methods; in standard practices in packaging, marking, loading and shipping; in Government shipping documents and reports required of supervisory inspectors; in the last principles of quality control; in testing procedures to determine the according of inspection equipment; and in those duties essential to proper scheduling inspection jobs and assignment of inspection personnel by higher authority.

That leads to my final point. Hitherto the Ministry of Supply has been responsible for all Service stores. Should it continue to do so? Should not be Services resume control of the production of such things as A.F.Vs. and aircait as well as guns? Why should not all necessary plants be handed over to be Services, together with the technical staffs, making the Ministry of Services together with the technical staffs, making the Ministry of Services are natters of high policy, but not the less I suggest they are matters that might well be seriously consisted

Our combined Forces to-day are so closely linked together that speedy and accurate standardisation of all our methods, both tactically and state god, should for the future be our chief aim, and "standardisation" must be the foundation of the training of Army Inspectors.

#### Technical Revolutions in Aviation.

Not everyone fully realises that the end of the war found us just out the threshold of a vast new technical revolution in the field of aviation. Technicals tell us there have been three great revolutions in the short history of aristion: first between 1914 and 1918, when there emerged the first breed or specific of practical aircraft—the old classic biplane types; second there appeared a my breed of aircraft about 1931, the high performance piston-engined monophist the Spitfire was one of the first of those and that was the type with which the R.A.F. fought the war.

Now, in 1946, we are beginning on a third revolution, which is affecting combat aircraft, transport aircraft and civil aircraft alike. It is based on a met method of propulsion. The gas turbine engine is the key to the situation; whether we harness it to a propeller, temporarily, or more permanently where it is direct in a jet, it is fundamentally a new engine.

Gas engine turbines are setting problems of a new range of speeds. At 760 miles an hour the speed of sound is attained at ground level, while at 30,000 feet the speed of sound, which varies with the temperature, is only 660 miles at hour. These speeds are being approached.

At the speed of sound, we are told, a strange wall arises and there is ref. stiff air resistance. It is a formidable task to break through that barrier, but once through it, technicians tell us possibilities arise of quite phenomenal speek. These possibilities are certain in the not distant future to become an actuality—Mr. A. Strachey, M.P., Under Secretary of State for Air, addressing the llows of Commons.

#### RECENT ADDITIONS TO THE LIBRARY

Is many friends in India will revel in Field Marshal Lord Birdwood's "IN MY LIFE" (Skeffington). It is a book full of good stories, the vast majority which have their setting in India, where the author has spent nearly fifty years his life. We cannot refrain from quoting one story. It concerns "Bill" eresford—"a wonderful character, who for years occupied a unique position in India, for he seemed to know everyone." He was Military Secretary to Lord ufferin and his successor, Lord Lansdowne.

"Bill was a very kind-hearted man, and always ready to help anyone who ight be down. On one occasion at a levee, when it was his duty to call the ames of all who passed the Viceroy, every man, of course, presented his card. ne unfortunate man who appeared without a card whispered: 'Of course, you now me well'—but he was horrified to find himself announced as 'Gentleman ithout a card' and bowing to His Excellency in that character'.'

"THE SOVIET PRESIDENT SPEAKS" (Hutchinson.) This selection of seeches delivered during the war by M. I. Kalinin gives a vivid picture of warmer Russia. M. Kalinin, who for twenty-seven years has been head of the apreme organ of Soviet power, was born in 1875, was one of the most active aders of the armed insurrection in the days of the Great October Socialist evolution.

The contents of the book range from addresses and appeals to various ctions of the Home front to concise reviews of the military situation, forth-ght surveys of international affairs, and an address on "Slavs and the War". provides a great deal of information about the Soviet War effort and its relation the whole history of the U.S.S.R. as a State of a new type—notably in a long ticle, "The History of the Soviet State", which is a most useful summary in self.

Two other books for those interested in Russia are From Moscow to E Russian Frontier, by Evgeny Krieger (Hutchinson), and Studies in Ussian History, by Nicholas Ruskin, (United Publications, Delhi). The thor of the former book was one of the best-known Soviet war correspondents; was present at the battles of Moscow and Stalingrad, accompanied the vast fensive which swept forward, liberating the Ukraine and White Russia; and tnessed the recapture of Sevastopol and Odessa. This book, which is a selection from his dispatches, provides a graphic scenario of the whole course of the ron the Eastern front.

The latter volume contains six historical studies which provide a reliable ckground against which those interested in Russia can view the widespread t still uncrystallized ideological changes of modern times. They stop short the Revolution, and even of what is sometimes called the Revolutionary Period, except as regards Russian Turkestan, they do not go beyond the Emancipan of the Serfs in 1861.

EIGHTH ARMY—EL ALAMEIN TO THE RIVER SANGRO. By Field urshal Sir Bernard L. Montgomery. Formed in September, 1941 by our own mmander-in-Chief, Field Marshal Sir Claude Auchinleck, the Eighth Army sa very happy family. Later, under the command of Field Marshal Montgomery, went from Alamein to half-way up Italy without losing a battle or even a ious action, and without ever withdrawing a yard.

This volume, excellently produced and printed in Germany by the his ing and Stationery Services of the B.A.O.R. and containing several map wit read by all who served in the Eighth Army and by all students of military sing with great interest. It covers the period from August 13, 1942 to Demand 1943 and is based on Field Marshal Montgomery's personal diary.

Another book concerning the North African Campaign is Tunca; Chester Wilmot. The author was a member of the Australian Bradesic Commissions' Field Unit in the Middle East, and in this book he tells the set of what took place in and around Tobruk in 1942. He has been able to inhis story much data from enemy sources and quotations from the dissist German officers.

B. B. C. WAR REPORT, June 6, 1944 to May 5, 1945.—(Oxford University Press.) These dispatches by the B.B.Cs. War Correspondents give an intering and vivid account of the progress of the campaign in North-Western Experimentally to the Baltic. "War Report" was first broadcast in the Rail Home Service after the 9 o'clock news on D Day, June 6, 1944. In the main that followed it was listened to daily by an audience of from ten to fifteen min listeners in the British Isles and by millions across the Channel, and the Rail has done well to publish in one volume some of the finest eye witness description accounts of the road to victory which we have read.

It shows what astonishing strides were made by radio reporting design the war, for many people will recall the public controversy which are design the Battle of Britain in 1940 by a recording made at Dover by Charles Garles. At that time many people felt that an eye-witness description of a dogigation head between R.A.F. fighters and the Luftwaffe was not a proper thing to have cast. The contention was that an incident in which men were losing their less was being treated as if it were a cricket match or a horse race. The mightip were sincere, but the pressure and nearness of the war and its life and deal meaning to everyone brought about an overwholming change of attitude it millions later listened to the broadcasts of D Day, and Arnhem, and the content of the Rhine.

Whether the reader heard the broadcasts or not, he will find it of about interest.

The Quest of Leadership, by Donald Portway (Thacker). In author of this valuable book needs no introduction to members of the U.S.I of India, for he has contributed two or three most interesting and useful articles this subject in past issues of the Journal. Leadership comes but to the fernot only to those very few who are born for it, but also to those who work has innate in one the qualities of leadership, the only way open to the majority of those who would lead their fellow-men is to work patiently to achieve leadership. For leadership is a matter of vital concern not less to those who again he lead than to those that are content to be led. Colonel Portway has devoted lifetime to the training of youth, and his experience as President of the Board for Officer Selection in the Bombay and Central Provinces give him valuable knowledge on this subject of leadership in its relation to India. The book is most readable, and can be confidently recommended to all interested in this vital subject.

JUNGLE, JUNGLE, LITTLE CHINDIT, by Major Patrick Boyle and Major Jon Musgrave-Wood, (Hollis and Carter). As Major-General Lentaigns and in his foreword, 'in both World Wars the German General Staff has been proposed by the British sense of humour, which has always been stronged in

lversity." The fighting in Burma put as great a strain on the British soldier any other campaign in World War II, but it did not defeat his ability to crack joke when things looked bad—as any reader of this book will discover. blume contains many drawings and cartoons, and those, combined with the text atter, are guaranteed to raise a laugh, whether the reader has served in Burma

THE REVOLUTION IN WARFARE, by Captain B. H. Liddell Hart (Faber mid Faber). This book deals with the history of modern warfare and its tenden-Miles. It is divided into two parts. In the first the author describes the develop-Went of modern warfare in terms of the tools of war, from the growth of fire-Fower in the Napoleonic wars to the evolution of the tank. In the second part e deals with the purposes of modern war, reviewing the history of warfare from He Middle Ages and the various restrictions upon warfare acknowledged in feudal mes. "Unlimited warfare" established itself with the wars of the French evolution; another landmark was the American Civil War, which the author msiders to have been in many ways the prototype of the modern "total war". ie shows how these tendencies became accepted in military theory by the general attisinterpretation of the work of Clausewitz, and were reinforced both by mechaniis not only invention and political and social causes. "Total War", he says, is not only ad in itself, because of its destructiveness, but is bad because it produces the rong kind of peace. It is "the combination of an unlimited aim with an unmited method".

FLAT-TOP, by F. D Ommanney (Longmans, Green) is the story of a trip n an escort carrier to Russia. During the voyage one enemy aircraft and four -boats were sunk, and as a result a convoy of fifty ships, heavily loaded with ar supplies for Russia, was brought into port with the loss of only two in the eth of persistent "Wolf-pack" attacks lasting over a week.

THE BALTIC NATIONS, by F. W. Pick (Boreas Publishing Company) gives

a compact form a historical survey of Estonia, Latvia, and Lithuania.

Indian Studies (United Publications, Delhi) give a picture of various spects of Indian life, and is particularly interesting to the newcomer to India nd more so, perhaps, to many people in the United Kingdom to whom some acts about the country would be extremely useful.

GOVERNMENT CONTROL IN WAR, by Lord Hankey (Cambridge University stablish some basic principles and to draw from the past some lessons for the Press) is a synopsis of the development of Government Control, and seeks to

uture.

FRESHWATER GATES, by Colonel Evelyn Prinsep, is a collection of the author's writings in prose and verse over many years, and will be read with much

nterest by his wide circle of friends in India and elsewhere.

LORD MACAULAY'S LEGISLATIVE MINUTES, By C. H. Dharker (Oxford Jniversity Press). The majority of Lord Macaulay's Minutes, written when he was Law Member of the India Council, have never before been published. This selection of thirty-five minutes is now made public by permission of the Legislaave Department of the Government of India. Apart from their literary merit, hey add to our knowledge and appreciation of Macaulay himself, as Mr. Dharker points out in his critical and historical introductory chapters. They also form valuable contribution to the administrative history of India, besides throwing ight on the development of Indian political thought.

INDIAN EMIGRATION TO AMERICA, by S. Chandrasekhar, and Transition N INDIA FROM WAR TO PEACE, by Gyan Chand, are two informative pamphlets

ublished by the Indian Council of World Affairs, New Delhi.

Digitized by GOOGLE

#### LETTERS TO THE EDITOR

#### SALUTING

To The Editor of the U.S. I. "Journal."

Dear Sir,

As one who spent much time at Sandhurst learning to salute come? may I protest against the distressing contortions which to-day pass as a size with so many soldiers.

It seems to me that the present method of teaching must be on the kur

ing lines:

Onc.—Throw the head well back.

Two.-With a forward and upward motion, place (with a slight quie the back of the hand against the right eyebrow, palm outward, fingers particularly vertically. The right elbow well forward.

Three.-Lower the hand gently to the side.

In support of my complaint, I would mention that a senior officer less released from three years in Changi Jail asked me, in all seriousness, whether Army had adopted a new salute since he had been a prisoner.

S. B. A. C.

Yours faithfully, A. W. MILLS Lieutenant-Crimi

#### WHAT A "STIFF" OFFICER MISSED

To the Editor of the U. S. I. "Journal"

Dear Sir,

After many years out East, what were some of the things I mised during my recent couple of months' stay in England? Here are some of them.

I missed the old milk-cart on its daily rounds; its brightly burnished is milk urn; its well-groomed horse; and the milkman with his picturesque le striped apron, were familiar sights in my young days.

I did not see many-if, indeed, any-of those poles which used to be plant outside hairdressers' shops. You may remember they had gaudily paint

stripes round them.

The old muffin man-how well I remember during the cold winter en ings, with his hand-bell, his board on his head, and his muffins covered with green baize cloth?

The young perky butcher's boy, with that curiously shaped beard on his head, is now no more. Possibly he has been one of war's casualties, never &

return.

You remember those huge glass bottles which used to stand in chemist windows, and which were filled with some colourful liquid? I seem somehow his to have seen any of those. The increased sale of popular medicines has probably something to do with their disappearance, for chemists' windows look may better dressed with them than the old bottles.

As with the old horse-drawn trams, the "twopenny tube" from Chiphan Common to the City, the horse-drawn fire engines, the postman's uniforms, and many other things at Home, they all seem to have gone for good.

> Yours faithfully. "VISITOR."

#### IS THIS A RECORD?

To the Editor of the U.S. I. "Journal"

Dear Sir,

There are many Indian Commissioned officers who have attained the rank of Brigadier and of Colonel, but I think I am correct in saying that they are all direct commissions.

The appointment lately of my old friend Sindhu Deen (I.C.O.3.) as Deputy Inspector-General of the Burma Army, with the rank of full Colonel and the award to him of the M.C. last month, make an opportunity of drawing attention to a career which is probably unique in the annals of the Indian Army, as Colonel Deen has risen to his present position from the ranks. Do you know of any other such case?

The following is Colonel Deen's military history, which he has given me

permission to reproduce:

Recruit, 2/20 Bu	rma Rifles	<b>.</b>	••	• •	• •	1924
10301 ulv, 2/20 Da	11110 2011100	•				1925
Lance-Naik	• •	• •	• •	• •	•	1926
Naik		• •	• •	• •	• •	
Havildar				• •	• •	1927
Jemadar				• •		193 <b>0</b>
	• •	• •	• •			1932 - 34
I.M.A.	• •	• •	• •	• •	• •	1934
2nd. Lieutenant		• •	• •	• •	• •	
Lieutenant		• •	• •		• •	1935
	••					1942
Captain	• •	• •	• •			1943
A/Major	• •	• •	• •	• •	••	1942-43
Staff College, Qu	letta			• •	• •	
A/LieutColonel				• •	• •	1945
		• •				1946
A/Colonel	• •	• •	••	M A		tioned in
			T T			

He was awarded the Sword of Honour at the I.M.A., was mentioned in dispatches in 1942 and in 1945, and was awarded the M.C. in the latter year.

An interesting sidelight is that an officer who was Colonel Deen's Company Commander when Colonel Deen was a Lance-Naik is now a Lieut.-Colonel in the same station with him!

Yours faithfully, R. M. HALL.

Bassein, Burma.

# SCHOOLS FOR SOLDIERS' DAUGHTERS

To The Editor of the U.S.I. "Journal."

Dear Editor,

I would like to add my congratulations to Anand for his excellent article n the *Journal* for January 1946, which I have just received.

Excellent post-war institutions and schemes for the education, instruction and uplift of the Indian soldier and his sons, as memorials for their work in the ast war, are well on their way. K.G.R.I.M. Schools are being enlarged or in reased; a plan model of the Indian National War Memorial Military Academy as been published.

But what is being done for the education and uplift of the daughters of these soldiers? After the youths of the country have been enugatened and uplifted, whom are they going to marry to make their future wives, mothers and sisters?

Is there a single girls' school in India which turns out young women worthy to be mothers, wives and sisters of their future fighting forces? Indian officers and gentlemen have to depend on Christian Mission and Church Schools for the education of their daughters, or are compelled to send their daughters to schools in the U.K. Some of the better class European Schools in India suffer from the snobbery of not admitting Indian girls, and pride themselves on such small-mindedness.

We must have schools for the daughters of the Fighting Forces of India side by side with those for their sons. There must be Garrison Schools in every Cantonment, where families are allowed, for girls and boys (of the pre-K.G.R.I.M. School age). These schools should be affiliated to the civilian schools of the Government Education Department.

There must be Queen or Princess Elizabeth R.I.M. Schools for the girls of Indian Fighting Forces up to the pre-university entrance stage. These must be boarding schools, where the girls will learn self-reliance and resource, and develop character without the inhibitory influence of their parents. It is absurd to argue that Indian parents will not send their daughters to such schools. They will, if the confidence of the parent has been established and the value of such institutions is pointed out to them. A considerable number of young Indian women broke away from their chains when they joined the WAC(I) and other Women Services during the war; a good many of these must recollect their fear, lack of experience and resource when they made their first journey in India unaccompanied by parent or relation. These alone will assist in enlightening their parents and encourage their younger sisters to avail of the advantages of such schools.

These schools must not be cheap. Nothing good can be had cheaply. They should be sufficiently endowed to allow the daughter of a Sepoy to have the same standard of instruction, accommodation and feeding as the daughter of a Commissioned Officer or Sirdar. The education should be on broad lines, domestic and academic, the latter chiefly for those who wish to indulge in university or professional careers. Games and sports must be encouraged.

The staff for a start must be imported from the U.K.; otherwise the undesirable product of the Mission Schools would be all that is available in India.

If each Regiment and Corps of the Indian Army, Navy and Air Force would endow a studentship, valued at, say, Rs. 3,000 per year as a memorial to each battalion and unit they raised in the war, and the Indian States similarly endowed studentships for which they had the right to nominate a candidate so long as she conformed to the necessary standard for admission to the Institution, with the generous and big-minded support of the State, it should be possible to establish a school for say a hundred girls for a start in Dehra Dun or the Simla Hills almost immediately.

It will achieve nothing if the youth of the country are enlightened and their girls are allowed to lag behind.

Yours truly, "CHARLES".

Digitized by GOOGLE

#### NOTES BY THE SECRETARY

#### **Annual Meeting of Council**

LIEUTENANT-GENERAL Sir Arthur Smith, K.B.E., C.B, D.S.O., M.C., President of the United Service Institution of India, presided at the annual meeting of the Council on May 21, the other members present being: Air Marshal Sir Roderick Carr, (Vice-President), General A. R. Godwin-Austen, Lieutenant-General Sir Clarence Bird, A. D. Flax Dundas, Esq., Lieutenant-General C. M. P. Durnford, Lieutenant-General R. A. Savory, and Hugh Weightman, Esq. Apologies for inability to attend owing to their absence from Delhi were received from Lieutenant-General Sir Noel Beresford-Peirse, Lieutenant-General K. M. Loch, Captain W. J. Lifton, R.I.N., P. Mason Esq., Vice-Admiral Sir Geoffrey Miles, Lieut-General H. H. The Maharaja of Jammu and Kashmir, Air Vice Marshal H.H. Maharaja Bahadur of Jodhpur, Colonel H. H. the Maharaja Jam Saheb of Nawanagar, Major-General H.H. The Maharaja of Patiala.

The President reported a continual rise in membership, which had again reached a record figure. Financially the Institution was in a very healthy condition, despite the increased costs inevitable in wartime. More members were availing themselves of the facilities of the Library of the Institution, rearly 1,000 books having been borrowed by members during the year.

Mainly owing to retirements, the President explained, many changes had occurred on the Council. His predecessor, Lieut.-General Sir John Swayne had relinquished the office of President on leaving for England to take up his appointment as Adjutant-General of the Forces—an appointment which his many friends had been sorry to learn he had been unable to assume owing to ill-health. Air Marshal Sir Roderick Carr had become Vice-President, and the other ex officio members were now Vice Admiral Sir Geoffrey Miles, A. D. Flax Dundas, Esq., and Hugh Weightman, Esq. Among the elected members Major-General J. B. Dalison (to whom the Institution was most grateful for his work as Chairman of the Executive Committee), Lieut.-General Sir T. J. Hutton, Captain H. E. Felser Paine, Major-General D. A. L. Wade and Lieut.-General Sir H. B. D. Willcox had not offered themselves for re-election, and he was sure that members would wish him to place on record their deep appreciation of the services rendered by those members in the past.

After discussion, it was agreed that the subject of the 1946/47 Gold Medal Essay Competition should be "Man Management". Entries for the competition would close on June 30, 1947.

It was decided that a recommendation that the MacGregor Memorial Medal for 1946 be awarded to Major P. A. THOMAS, I.E., should be submitted to H.E. The Commander-in-Chief for his work in connecting the system of triangulation in Iraq and Persia with the Great Trigonometrical series of India, thus completing the only missing link in the system of triangulation extending from Europe to the Far East. The recommendation of the Executive Committee that a second silver medal, with Rs. 100 gratuity, be also awarded to Subedar M. Z. A. Quraishi for the fine work he performed in assisting Major Thomas was also accepted.\*

<sup>\*</sup>H. E. The Commander-in-Chief has since approved these two recommendations, and has asked that his congratulations be extended to the two recipients for their fine work.

It was decided that the Executive Committee for 1946 47 shoulk composed of: Lieut.-General R. A. Savory, (Chairman), General A. R. Goliff Austen, Lieut.-General K.M. Loch, Philip Mason, Esq., and Captain W. J. Esq. R.I.N.

#### Council Election

The result of the Council election for 1946 showed that the foliage members had been re-elected: Lieut.-General Sir Clarence Bird, K.C.I.R. C. P. D.S.O., Philip Mason, Esq., C.I.E., O.B.E., Lieut.-General R. A. Savor, C. D.S.O., M.C. New members elected to the Council were General A. R. Golin M. Austen C. B., O.B.E., M.C., Lieut,-General Sir N. B resford-Peirse, K.B.B.C. D.S.O., Lieut.-General C. M. P. Durnford, C.B., C.I.E., Captain W. G. Link C.I.E., R.I.N., and Lieut.-General K. M. Loch, C.B., M.C.

#### Honours and Awards

The following awards to members of the Institution for memoria conduct whilst prisoners of war in Japanese hands are announced:

O.B.E.-Lieutenant-Colonel C. C. Deakin, D.S.O., 5/2 Punjab Recipies

M.B.E .- Major Kanwar Bahadur Singh, Kumaon Regiment; Capital Apparanda Chegappa Iyappa, I.S.C.

The M.C. has been awarded to Major J. F. Worsley, 3/2 Punjab Reserved and Captain P. G. Malins, R.I.A.S.C., for gallant and distinguished service? South East Asia after August 15, 1945.

#### King's Birthday Honours

of Quartering, G.H.Q.

Among those on whom His Mujesty conferred honours in the Birth Honours List were the following members of the United Service Institution India:

K.C.B.—Lieut.-General R. M. M. Lockhart, C.B., C.I.E., M.C.; Lieut.-General R. M. M. Lockhart, C.B., C.I.E., M.C.; General Sir Arthur F. Smith, K.B.E., C.B., D.S.O., M.C., Chief of the General Staff, and President of the United Service Institution of India.

C.B .- Major-General R. S. Lewis, C.B.E. ; Major-General R. P. L. Raukin

C.B.E., M.C., Major-General D. A. L. Wade, O.B.E., M.C. K.C.S.I.—General Alfred Reade Godwin-Austen, C.B., O.B.E., M.

P.A.O., G.H.Q. C.S.I.—Hugh Weightman, Esq., C.I.E., I.C.S., Secretary, Extended Affairs Department, and an ex-officio member of the Council of the U.S.I. of It.

K.C.I.E.—Lieut. General K. M. Loch, M.G.O. in India, and a member the Council of the U.S.I. of I.; Naravanan R. Pillai, Esq., C.I.E., C.B.I. I.C.S.; Sir Kenneth Mitchell, C.I.E., I.S.E.; Sir George Tottenham, C.S.

C.I.E., I.C.S. C.I.E.—Major-General J. S. Ballentine; Major-General D. R. K. Ballentine; Major-General D. R. K. Ballentine Bateman, D.S.O., O.B.E.; G. W. Benton, Esq., D.I.G.P., C.P. and Berar; Her. Crookshank Esc. Control of the Communication of the Communi Crookshank, Esq., Geological Survey of Indir; Brigadier R. G. Ekin, Commander Nowshara, Brigadier R. G. Ekin, Commander R. G. Ek Nowshera Brigade; Lieut.-Colonel A. C. Galloway, Political Agent, Behart Brigadian W. Handard E. Brigadier W. Hesketh, Director of Mechanisation, G.H.Q.; J. E. Moloner, B. Director of Shinkers and Machanisation, G.H.Q.; J. E. Moloner, B. Director of Shipbuilding, G. of I.; Major-General F. M. Moore; Colonel H. M. Donald, D.D. of Barrier, G. of I.; Major-General F. M. Moore; Colonel H. M. Donald, D.D. of Recruiting, Northern Area, Brigadier M. S. Toversham, Direct

Knighthood.—Arthur W. H. Dean, Chairman, Delhi Improvement Trust. C.B.E.—Brigadier R. Gardiner, O.B.E., R.E.; Brigadier H. Williams,

O.B.E.—Major-General A. R. K. Chib Bahadur, M.B.E., Alwar State rees; Colonel W. D. H. Bayts; Colonel G. Barnett, M.C., R.A.V.C.; Brigadier A. Bain; Captain I. S. Chopra; Lieut. Colonel H. E. M. Cotton; Lieut.-Colonel C. Crichton, M.C.; Brigadier J. M. Hobbs; Colonel C. E. Thompson, J.A.G. partment; Lieut.-Colonel R. S. Weightman, R.A.; Brigadier J. Wickham.

M.B.E.—Lieut.-Colonel R. Bristow, I.A.O.C.

#### w Members

E.

The following new members have been elected to membership of the stitution during the past three months:

Afzal Khan, Major M.

Bagwell-Purefoy, Lieut.-Colonel A. E.

\*Bond, Major D. A.

Burrows, H. E. Sir Frederick, K.C.S.I., Governor of Bengal. Carr, Air Marshal Sir Roderick, K.B.E., C.B., D.F.C., A.F.C.

\*Chand, Captain S. P.

Chapman, Captain M. W.

Chappel, Major-General B. H., D.S.O.

Chaudhuri, Brigadier J. N., O.B.E.

Clements, Lieut.-Colonel, A. E.

Cowgill, Lieut.-Colonel A.W., M.B.E.

Cunningham, Major J. J. V. C.

\*Daine, Captain P. E. L.

Donovan, Major J. P. H.

Drummond, Colonel C. A. F., O.B.E.

Ellis, Captain N. A.

Ellis, Captain T. F.

Evans, Major A. Conway.

Flewett, Lieut.-Colonel T. E.

Forbes, Lieut.-Colonel L. C.

Foss, Lieut.-Colonel T. F.

Fowler, Major R. A. J., M.C.

Fryer, Major R. H.

Giles, Captain R. M.

Griffiths, Major G. B.

Gooday, Lieut, E. G.

Grant-Taylor, Lieut.-Colonel L. H.

Hamid, Lieut.-Colonel M. A.

Harpal Singh Bedi, 2/Lieut.

Herbert, Lieut.-Colonel A. E.

Hoshiar Singh, Major.

Hamilton, Lieut.-Colonel G. J., D.S O.

Harmandar Singh, Capt.

\*Herriott, Captain A. D.

Hewett, Captain R. W.

Jackson, Lieut.-Colonel G. E.

Johnstone, Major A. J. F.

Khan, Lieut. A. W., R.I.N.V.R.

Khan, Major I.D.A.

NOTES BY THE SECRETARY Lockhart, Licut.-Colonel W. E. McAlister, Captain R. W. L. Meik, Lieut.-Colonel D. C. Milos, Vice-Admiral S'r Geoffrey, K.C.B. Macnamara, Colonel C. V. Mallam, Lieut,-Colonel G. L., C.I.E. Mehta, Captain V. Menon, Lieut. A. M. Menezes, Major S. L. \*Milligan, Major W. A. Mohammed Sher Ali Khan, Colonel Nawabzada, \*Montagu, Lieut.-Colonel J. D. Morris, Brigadier A. DeBurgh, D.S.O. Mudie, H. E. Sir Francis, K.C.S.I., K.C.I.E., O.B.E., Gorena of Si Puradkar, Captain A. D. \*Packwood, Lieut,-Colonel S. W. Prithvi Pal Singh, Major Rogers, Lieut.-C. Ion I H. Rooke, Leut, Celonel H. T. B. B. Raja, Major K. A. S. Rashid, Major I. Rikhye, Major I. J. Robinson, Lieut.-Colonel F. G. Robson, 2/Lieut. B.E. Roe, Captain K. P. Russell, Major W. A., M.C.

Sawhny, Major L.

Scott, Major W. N. Scouller, Major R. E.

Smith, Lieut.-General S'r Arthur F., K.C.B., K.B.E., C.B., D.M. M.C.

Satinder Singh, Captain.

Sheodatt Singh, Colonel Thakur.

Sibree, Captain P. L.

Smith-Ansley, Lieut. Colonel J. W. Smitherman, Lieut.-Colonel P. H.

Surita, Major I. B., M.C.

Tanner, Colonel W.

Thomas, Lieut.-Colonel G. F. J.

Triggs, Colonel R. G.

Vickers, Lieut. Colonel J. S., D.S.O.

Weightman, Hugh, Esq., C.S.I., C.I.E., I.C.S.

White, J., Esq.

Woodward, Lieut.-Colonel R. S., O.B.E.

Other subscribing members who have enrolled during the past quarte include:

Headquarters, No. 227 Group, Royal Air Force. (for forty ogs quarterly).

> Hon. Library Secretary, United Services Gymkhana, Nasik Road P. M. C. 2nd 87kh F. F. Regiment,

#### U.S.I. ESSAY GOLD MEDALLISTS

#### And MacGregor Memorial Silver Medallists

member has been good enough to suggest that we publish a list of winners of the Gold Medal Essay Competition, conducted annually by its Institution, and also a list of those who have won the MacGregor Memorial liver Medal, inaugurated in 1887.

Several members have, it will be noticed, won the Gold Medal Essay Comlection twice, among them being Captain J.A.S. Colquboun (1873 and 1874), olonel J.P.C. Neville (1895 and 1899), Lieut.-Colonel F. S. Keen, D.S.O. (1920 and 1923), Major L. E. Dennys, M.C. (1926 and 1929), and Major (now ieutenant-General) C.M.P. Durnford, (1930 and 1934).

A study of the lists reveals the interesting record of Major G. Cockerill 10w Brigadier-General Sir George Cockerill, C.B. happily still living in retirement 1 London), who has won both the Gold Medal Essay Competition and also the IacGregor Memorial Silver Medal.

Winners of the Gold Medal Prize Essay have been-

1872 Roberts, Lieut.-Col. F.S., V.C., C.B., R.A.

1873 Colquhoun, Capt. J.A.S., R.A.

1874 Colquhoun, Capt. J.A.S., R.A.

1879 St. John Major O.B.E., R.A.

1880 Barrow, Lieut. E.G.

1882 Mason, Lieut. A.H., R.E.

1883 Collen, Major E.H.H.

1884 Barrow, Capt. E.G.

1887 Yate, Lieut. A.C.

1888 Maude, Capt. F.N., R.E.

1889 Duff, Capt. B.

1890 Maguire, Capt. C.M.

1891 Cardew, Lieut. F.G.

1893 Bullock, Major G.M., Devon Rgt.

1894 Carter, Capt. F.C., N'land Fus. 1895 Neville, Lieut.-Col. J.P.C.

1896 Bingley, Capt. A.H.

1897 Mullaly, Major H., R.E.

1898 \*Clay, Capt. C.H.

1899 Neville, Col. J.P.C.

1900 Thuillier, Capt. H.F.

1900 \*Lubbock, Capt. G.

1901 Ranken, Lieut.-Col. G.P.

1902 Turner, Capt. H.F.F.

1903 Hamilton, Major W.G., D.S.O., Nflk. Regt.

1904 \*Bond, Capt. R.F.G., R.E.

1904 MacMunn, Major G.P., D.S.O.

1905 Cockerill, Major G., Roy. War Regt.

1907 Wood, Major E.J.M., 9th Deccon Inf.

1908 Jeudwine, Major H.S., R.A.

1909 Molyneux, Major E.M.J., D.S.O., 12 Cav.

1909 Elsmie, Lieut.-Col. A.M.S., 56 Rif.

1911 Petrie, D. Esq., Punjab Polico.

1912 Carter, Major B.C., The King's Regt.

1913 Thomson, Major A.G., 58 Rif.

1914 Bainbridge, Lieut.-Cel. W.F., D.S.O., 51 Skhs.

1914 Norman, Major C. L., M.V.O., Guides.

1916 Crum, Major W.E., Cele, L. H.

1917 Balker, Major W.F., R.F.A.

1918 Gompertz, Capt. A.V., M.C., R.E.

1919 Gompertz, Capt. M.L.A., 108 Inf.

1920 Keen, Lieut. Col. F.S., D.S.O., 15 Sikhs.

1922 Martin, Major H.G., D.S.O., O.B.E. R.A.

1923 Keen, Licut. Col. F.S., D.S.O., I.A.

1926 Dennys, Major L.E., M.C., 12 F.F.R.

1927 Hogg, Major D. McA., M.C., R.E.

1928 Franks, Major K.F., D.S.O., 5 M.L.I.

1929 Dennys, Maj L.E., M.C., 12 F.F.R.

1930 Durnford, Major C.M.P., 5 Raj. R.f.

1931 Ford, Lieut.-Col. G.M., 5 M.L.I.

1932 Thorburn, Lieut, R.G., Cameronians, 1934 Durnford, Major C.M.P., 6 Raj. Rif.

1937 Ranking, Lieut,-Col. R.P.P.L., M.C., 2 R. Lrs.

1938 Milne, Major J. D., R. Scott.

1945 Foucar, Col. E.C.V., M.C.

#### MacGregor Memorial Medal

Recommendations for the award of the MacGregor Memorial Medal sheed be submitted by May 1 of each year.

The MacGregor Memorial Medal was founded in 1888 as a memorial to the late Major-General Sir Charles MacGregor, who founded the United Service Institution of India. It is awarded for the best military reconnaissance of journey of exploration of the year which, during the war, may have been achieved during an escape from a Far Eastern enemy country into, for instance, India.

The awards are made in June, and are: (a) For officers, British or Indian silver medal, and (b) for soldiers. British or Indian, a silver medal with Rs 100 as gratuity. For especially valuable work, a gold medal may be awarded it place of one of the silver medals, whenever the administrators of the Fund decay it desirable. The Council may also award a special additional silver medal without gratuity, to a soldier, for specially good work.

The award of the medals is made by His Excellency the Commanderia Chief, India, as Vice-Patron, and the Council of the United Service Institution of India, who were appointed administrators of the Fund by the MacGreet Memorial Committee.

Eligibility for the award is open to: (a) Officers and other ranks of all forces of the British Commonwealth of Nations while serving with the India Establishment, or with South East Asia Command, (b) Officers and other

ranks of the Royal Indian Navy, Indian Army, Indian Royal Air Force and of the Indian States Forces, wherever serving. The term "Indian Army" includes the Indian Auxiliary and Territorial Forces, Frontier Militia, Levies, Military Police and Military Corps under local governments).

Personal risk to life during the reconnaissance or exploration is not a necessary qualification for the award of the medal; but, in the event of two journeys being of equal value, the man who has incurred the greater risk will be considered to have the greater claim to the award.

When the work of the year has either not been of sufficient value or notice of it has been received too late for consideration before the Council Meeting, the medal may be awarded for any reconnaissance during previous years considered by His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief in India to deserve it.

The medal may be worn in uniform by Indian soldiers on ceremonial prades, suspended round the neck by the ribbon issued with the medal. Replacements of the ribbon may be obtained on payment from the Secretary, United Service Institution of India, Simla.

Officers who have won the MacGregor Memorial Medal since the establishment in 1887 are:

1889 \*Bell, Col. M.S., V.C., C.B.E., R.E.

1890 Younghusband, Capt. F.E., K.D.Gs.

1891 Sawyer, Major H.A., S.C.

1892 Vaughan, Capt. H.B., S.C.

1893 †Bower, Capt. H., 17th B.C.

1894 O'Sullivan, Major G.H.W., R.E.

1895 Davies, Capt. H.R., Oxf. L. I.

1896 Cockerill, Lieut. G.R., 28th P.I.

1897 Swayne, Capt. E.J.E., 16th B.I.

1898 Walker, Capt. H.B., D.C.L.I.

1899 Douglas, Capt. J.A., 2nd B.L.

1900 Wingate, Capt. A.W.S., 14th B.L.

1901 Burton, Major E.B., 17th B.L.

1902 Ray, Capt. M.R.E., S.C.

1903 Manifold, Lt.-Col. C.C., I.M.S.

1904 Fraser, Capt. L.D., R.G.A.

1905 †Rennick, Maj. F., 40th Pathans.

1906 Shahzada, Ahmad Mir. Risr, 36th Horse.

1907 Nangle, Capt. M.C., 92nd Punj.

1908 †Gibbon, Capt. C.M., R. Ir. Fus.

1910 Sykes, Maj. P. M., C.M.G., 2nd D.G.

1910 Turner, Capt. F. G., R.E.

1911 Leachman, Capt. G E. R., Suss. R.

1911 Gurmukh Singh, Jemdr., 93rd Burma Infantry.

1912 †Pritchard, Capt. B. E. A., 83rd L.I.

1912 Wilson, Lieut. A. T., C.M.G.; 32nd Lrs.

1913 Abbay, Capt. B. N. 27th Cav.

1914 Bailey, Capt. F. M., I.A.

1914 Morshead, Capt. H. T., R.E.

1915 Waterfield, Capt. F. C., 45th Sikhs.

1918 Noel, Capt. E. W. C., D.S.O., Poll. Dept.

1919 Keeling, Lt.-Col. E. H. M.C., R.E.

1920 Blacker, Capt. L. V. S., Guides.

1921 Holt, Maj. A. L., O.B.E., R.E.

1922 Abdul Samad Shah, Capt. O.B.E., 31st Lrs.

1923 Bruce, Capt. J. G., 2/6th Gurkha Rif.

1925 Spear, Capt. C. R., 13 F.F. Rif.

1926 Harvey-Kelly, Maj. C. H., G. H., D.S.O., 10 Baluch Regiment.

1927 Lake, Maj. M. C., 4 Bombay Grs.

1928 Boerman, Capt. J. F., 10 Baluch Regt.

1930 Green, Capt. J. H., 20 Burma Rif.

1931 O'Connor, Capt. R. L., 9 R. Jat R.

1932 Birnie, Capt. E. St. J., Sam Browne's.

1935 Ferguson, Lt. K.A.P., R.A.

1935 Bostock, Lt. T. M. T., R.E.

1936 Angwin, Capt. J. B. P., R.E.

1937 Goadby, Maj. F. R. L., M.B.E., 6 Raj. Rif.

1939 Lancaster, Maj. A. S., 10 G.R.

1940 Hammond, 2nd-Lt. R. R., Norfolk R.

1942 Tekbahadur Limbu, Subedar, N. S. S., Bn., B. F.F.

1943 Wingate, Major-Genl. O. C., D.S.O.

As announced in the report of the annual Council Meeting, the medal for 1946 has been awarded to Major P. A. Thomas, I.E.

#### OFFICERS SERVICE STYLE (PEAKED) CAPS



ers Drab Manchon Felt Service Cap .. Rs. 40 each.
ers Drab Barathea Service Cap .. Rs. 18 each.
Officers Drab Felt Gurkha Hat with Puggri .. Rs. 25 each
Officers R.A.F. Blue Barathea Service Cap .. Rs. 18 each

#### OFFICERS SIZE CAPS

#### **ENGLISH MADE MEDAL RIBBONS**



1 Ribbon

2 Ribbons

3 Ribbons

(All other Medal Ribbons Stocked)

#### **MEDAL RIBBON BRASS BARS**

(For Mounting Medal Ribbons.)



.. As. 2 each For 4 Ribbons .. As. 8 each .. As. 4 each For 5 Ribbons .. As. 10 each .. As. 6 each For 6 Ribbons .. As. 12 each.

#### RIBBON MOUNTED BARS & EMBLEMS



ibbon Mounted Bar As. 4 each 4 Ribbons Mounted Bar ... Re. 1 0 each. libbons Mounted Bar As. 8 each 5 Ribbons Mounted Bar .. Rs. 1 4 each. ibbons Mounted Bar  $\mathbf{Rs.}$ As. 12 each 6 Ribbons Mounted Bar ... 18 each. lention in despatches New Bronzed Oakleaf Emblems Re. 08 each. lention in despatches Khaki Ribbon Mounted Bar fitted with New Oakleaf Emblem Re. 1 0 each 'l" or "8" Emblems for N. Africa Star Re. 10 each lift Rose Emblem for 1939—45 Star Re.

imental and Departmental Cap. Collar and Shoulder Badges and Buttons, Coat Belt kles. Wound Badges, Service Chevrons, Stars, Crowns, Water Bottles, Haversacks, Helmets, Sam Browne Belts, Ties, Stockings, Whistles Cords, Putties, Divisional Signs, etc., etc., Stocked.

#### ASK FOR ILLUSTRATED PRICE LIST

ore there is no V.P. system the customers are requested to remit in advance the cost of the goods plus Postage and Packing charges.

# M. AZAM & BROTHER,

Military R.A.F. Naval & Police Contractors, Outfitters & Tailors
LUDHIANA (PUNJAB) INDIA.

Digitized by Google

.. Rs. 3 peryard



By Appointment

To The Late King George V

# RANKEN & Co., Ltd.

CALCUTTA, SIMLA, DELHI, LAHORE, RAWALPINDI & MURREE

**ESTABLISHED IN CALCUTTA 1770** 

# CIVIL & MILITARY TAILORS GENTLEMEN'S OUTFITTERS AND BREECHES MAKERS

ESTIMATES SUPPLIED FOR
FULL-DRESS AND MESS DRESS
UNIFORMS OF ALL REGIMENTS

By Appointment to

His Excellency General Sir Robert A. Cassels, G.C.B., C.S.I., D.S.O., Former Commander-in-Chief in India.



					_	
Khaki Barathas Cometan Dane					Rs.	8.
Khaki Barathea Service Peak Ca	p and Bade	ζe		••	20	U
Khaki Barathea Field Cap and B	adge (	Side		• •	15	0
Blue Barathea Field Cap and Ba	.dge (	Side	Cap)	• •	20	0.
Green, Black or Khaki "Beret"	Сар	• •		••	15	0
Pure Silver Badges for "Beret	Caps		each	• •	8	0
Silver-plated Badges for "Beret	"Caps		**	••	5	0
R.A.F Blue Barathea Peak Cap	and Badge			• •	25	0
man bitte Barathea Field Can	and Radga	(S:	lde Cap	)	18	0
Outer Dauges, Bronze for K habi	Inchat	••	a pair		6	Ò
Cap Badges, Bronze for Khaki Ca	Lps		each	• •	4	Ō
Duttons, Gilt or Bronze for Khal	ri Jacket	• •	a set	• •	7	8
Ductions, Gill for Patrol Jacket		••	12	••	7	8
Buttons, Gilt for Greatcoat	••		"	• •	12	Ò
Shoulder Titles, Gilt or Bronze	• •		a pair		2	Õ
SHOULder Titles, Cloth slip-on	• •		"		ī	Š
Stars (Pips), Gilt-enamelled		••	"	••		4
Crowns, Gilt with Red Velvet	••		**		2	ŝ
Stars or Crowns, Bronze or Black			**	•••	2 2 2	8
Stars or Crowns, worsted on Kha	ki Cloth		**	•••	ī	Ř
Knaki Celiniar Bush Shirts			• •	::	12	8
Service pattern Shirts of fast Ki	aki Cellula	r wit	h dian	••		٠
DUCKELS, Shoulder Strong and a	tteched cal	1			6	0
JAND PRABLES SHITTS, to match "	Raratheo"	igab	ot oaah	•••	28	ŏ
THE DITTION OF THE PARTY.	Khaki Dril	i Sind	ike .		15	ŏ
ELIAKI W COLIED STOCKINGS				••	- 6	ŏ
Khaki Woollen Socks	• •	•• .	a pair	••		12
Khaki Ankle Putties, Fox's Pate	nt.	•••	_	••		
Khaki Wooilen Hosetops		••	**	• •	9	Ŏ
Field Haversacks, leather botton	n • •	••	37	• •	3	8
Field Waterbottles Rs. 10 each.	R Rale	••	each	••	10	Õ
Whistle and Khaki Lanyard Rs.	S. D. Delo	1 1		•••	25	0
1939-48 Star or N. Africa Star or	ann other l	iver	Lanyar	d.	2	8
THE TO BOAR OF IT. AIR ICA BOAR OF	any other I	цеца			_	_
Bars mounted with any ribbon			a foot	••	1	8
Officer's Greatcoat	••	••.	each	••	0	в
Khaki Raincoat	••	••	22	••	275	0
WHORI Traincost	••	••	,,	• •	45	0

#### Servants' Waist & Pugree Bands, Badges, Silk Ties and Sports Squares

(Stocked in your Regulation approved colours and designs.)

Servants' Waist & Pugree Bands & Pugree Badges
(Your Servants will look neat and smart when wearing Bands and Badges.)
Waist & Pugree Bands in your Corps, Regiment or Departmental
colours fitted with electro nickel-plated buckle and runner
adjustable to any size waist
Servants' Pugree Badges, electro silver-plated of your Corps,
Regiment or Departmental design
... at Rs. 4/- each

WIDE END TIES

Wide End superior Cord Silk Ties, well made with reinforced neck bands, with diagonal stripes in your Regulation colours at Rs. 5/- each MUFFLERS

Mufflers 36 inches square made of superior cord silk striped in your Regulation colours . . . at Rs. 20/- each

CRESTED STATIONERY AND XMAS CARDS

80 best quality Letter Papers & Envelopes to match, embossed
with your Depttl. Crest in any colour

at Rs. 6

Xmas. Greeting Cards, embosse! with your rezimental Crest and tied with ribbon in your regimental cotours, with Greetings inset and Envelopes at Rs. 6 per dozen

# YOUSUF & CO. MILITARY & POLICE TAILORS,

LUDHIANA (Punjab).

Where V.-P.P. system is not available please send with order cost of goods plus postage.

#### ROYAL UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION\*

FOR

THE PROMOTION AND ADVANCEMENT OF THE SCIENCE AND LITERATURE OF THE THREE SERVICES

#### **PATRON**

HIS MAJESTY KING GEORGE VI.

#### PRESIDENT

General H.R.H. The DUKE OF GLOUCESTER, K.G., K.T., K.P., G.C.B., G.C.M.G., G.C.V.O.

#### VICE-PRESIDENTS

Admiral of the Fleet LORD CHATFIELD, P.C., G.C.B., O.M., K,C,M.G., C.V.O. Field Marshal LORD CHETWODE, G.C.B., O.M., G.C.S.I., K.C.M.G., D.S.O. Admiral of the Fleet The Earl of CORK AND ORRERY, G.C.B., G.C.V.O. Marshal of the Royal Air Force Sir EDWARD ELLINGTON, G.C.B., C.M.G., C.B.E. Field-Marshal Sir CLAUD W. JACOB, G.C.B., G.C.S.I., K.C.M.G. General Sir HARRY H. S. KNOX, K.C.B., D.S.O. Brigadier-General The Earl of LUCAN, P.C., G.C.V.O., K.B.E., C.B., T.D.

#### **ELECTED MEMBERS OF COUNCIL**

Royal Navy: Captain W. W. Davis, D.S.O., R. N., Admiral Sir Charles J. C. Little, G.C.B., G.C.E. (Vice-Chairman) Admiral of the Fleet Sir John C. Tovey, G.C.B., K.B.E., D.S.O., Admiral Sir Algernon Willers, K.C.B., D.S.O.

Royal Marines: General Sir T. L. Hunton, K.C.B., M.V.O., O.B.E.

Royal Marines: General Sir T. L. Hunton, K.C.B., M. V.O., O.B.E.
Royal Naval Reserve: Commodore R. Harrison, D.S.O., R.D., R.N.R.
R.N.V.R: Commodore J. M. Dick, C.B.E., V.D., R.N.V.R.
Regular Army: General Sir Ronald Adam, Bart., K.C.B., D.S.O., O.B.E., General Sir Charles
Bonham Carter, G.C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O., General Sr Walter M. St G. Kirke, G.C.B., C.M.G.
D.S.O., General Sir Frederick Pile, G.C.B., D.S.O., M.C., General Sir Thomas Reddell,
Wolvetor, K.C.B. D.S.O.

D.S.O., General Sir Frederick Pile, G.C.B., D.S.O., M.C., General Sir Thomas Reddell, Webster, K.C.B., D.S.O.

Territorial Army: Brigadier J. A. Longmore, M.B.E., T.D., D.L., Colonel F.D. Samuel, C.B.E., D.S.O., T.D., Colonel B. Abel Smith, D.S.O., M.C., T.D., A.D.C.

Indian Army: General Sir S. F. Muspratt, K.C.B., C.S.I., C.I.E., D.S.O.

Royal Air Force: Air Marshal Sir Norman Bottomley, K.C.B., C.I.E., D.S.O., A.F.C., Air Chief Marshal Sir Robert Brooke-Popham, G.C.V.O., K.C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O., A.F.C. (Chairman of the Council), Air Marshal Sir E. L. Gossage, K.C.B., C.V.O., D.S.O., M.C.

A. A. F. and R. A. F. V. R.: Air Commodore Lord Willoughby de Broke, M.C., A.F.C.

#### REPRESENTATIVE MEMBERS

Admiralty: Director of Tactical and Staff Duties: Captain C. L. Robertson, R.N. War Office: Director of Staff Duties: Major-General J. S. Steele, C.B., D.S.O., M.C. Air Ministry: Director of Operational Training: Air Commodore N. S. Allinson.

#### **EX-OFFICIO MEMBERS**

First Sea Lord and Chief of the Naval Staff, Chief of the Imperial General Staff, Chief of the Air Staff, Director-General of the Territorial Army. President of the Royal Naval College. Greenwich, Commandant of the Imperial Defence College, Director of the Royal Naval Staff College: Commandant of the Staff College, Camberley, Commandant of the R.A.F. Staff College.

#### HONORARY MEMBERS OF THE COUNCIL

Major-General H. C. Thacker, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O. (Canada).
Lieutenant-General E. K. Smart, D.S.O., M.C. (Australia).,
Major-General Sir A. H. Russell, K.C.B., K.C.M.G. (New Zealand).
Field Marshal The Right Hon. J. C. Smuts, P. C., C.H. (South Africa),
Lieutenant-General H.H. The Maharajah of Jammu and Kashmir, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., K.C.V.O., A.D.C. (India).

Secretary, Editor and Chief Executive Officer: Captain E. Altham, C.B., R.N.





MI

60,1

..it's truly a de luxe Cigarette OBTAINABLE EVERYWHERE IN MAGNUMS OR STANDARD



Digitized by GOOGIC

#### UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION OF INDIA To The Secretary, United Service Institution of India. SIMLA Date..... Dear Sir. Please enrol me as a member (or Life Member) of the United Service Institution of India. Yours faithfully. (In block caps.) Rank and Unit ...... Permanent Address ..... Present Address ..... BANKERS' ORDER FORM To Messrs. ..... (Bankers), at ..... On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla, for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 10 (ten) being my annual subscription for 19 and the sum of Rs. 10 on every succeeding January 1 until further notice. Date. ..... Signature. .... To Messrs ...... (Bankers), at ..... On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla, for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 150 (one hundred and fifty), being Life Membership subscription of the Institution. $T_0$ The Secretary, United Service Institution of India, SIMLA. Date..... Dear Sir, Please enrol me as member (or Life Member) of the United Service Institution of India. Yours faithfully, (In block caps.) Rank and Unit..... Permanent Address..... Present Address.... BANKERS' ORDER FORM (Bankers), at ..... To Messrs. ..... On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla, for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 10 (ten), being my annual subscription for 19 and the sum of Rs. 10 on every succeeding January 1 until further notice. Date. ...... Signature ...... (Bankers), at ..... To Messrs. ..... On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla, for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 150 (one hundred and fifty), being Life Membership subscription of the Institution. Date. ..... Signature.



The Cotton Goods for India





The Wool-Wear for India



The Footwear for India

# BARRESTROUD BINOCULARS



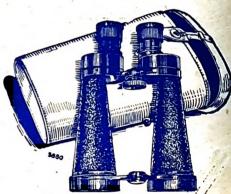
Type C.F. 5 (6×24 mm.)



Type C.F. 10 (6×30.5 mm.)



Type C.F. 24 (8×30.5 mm.)



Type C.F. 30 (7 × 50 mm.)

# BARR & STROUD LIMITED

ANNIESLAND GLASGOW W3 15 VICTORIA STREET LONDON S.W.1

Telegrams:—
"Telemeter" Glasgow

Codes:—

8th and 6th Editions, A.B.C.

Telegrams:—
"Retemelet Sowest" London

Printed by P. Heal (Manager) at The Civil & Military Gazette, Ltd., 48 The Mall, Lahore, and edited and published by Lieut.-Col. H. O, Druett for The United Service Institution of India, Simla.

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

Digitized by Google

# DURNAL



#### PRINCIPAL

#### CONTENTS

Frontispiece Planning India's Post-War Armed Forces Three Years With The Chin Levies . . . Is Scientific Selection Successful? Scientific (?) Selection Oh! To Be In Poona Army/Air Organisation for India's Defence Britain, Russia and Asia
The Cs.-in-C, in India since 1860
Was Our Pre-War Training Wrong?
New Pay Code for B.S. In India
Sport At Delhi in 1804
Southern Rhodesia Wants Immigrants Air Defence And Its Lessons In Search of Sailors ...

The Hon, Sardar Baldev Singh. H.E. F. M. Sir Claude Auchinleck, H. E. W. Braund. Lt.-Col. Rajendra Singh. "Lictor". "Mouse". Maj.-Gen, C. H. Boucher, Lt.-Col, G. E. Wheeler, Brig. H. Bullock, Lt.-Col, W. H. Huelin, Major-Gen, J. B. Dalison, "Hyderabad". W. D. Gale.

Air Marshal Sir Roderic Hill.

Cmdr. E. C. Streetfell

(A COMPLETE LIST OF CONTENTS APPEARS ON PAGE ix)

# Banking by Post



If you are unable to call personally at any of the Branches of Lloyds, Bank, Managers will be pleased to explain the Bank's facilities or answer any enquiries by post, if you will write to them.

Every kind of Banking Business transacted. CURRENT ACCOUNTS opened on terms which may be ascertained on application. FIXED DEPOSITS received at INTEREST. WITHDRAWALS by SAVINGS BANK ACCOUNTS allow CHEQUE. STERLING and FOREIGN CURRENCY DRAFTS sold and direct REMITTANCES made. TELEGRAPHIC TRANSFERS effected through Banks in ALL COUNTRIES WORLD LETTERS OF CREDIT TRAVELLERS CHEQUES supplied FREE OF COMMISSION by REGISTERED BANK OF ENGLAND NOTES SALARIES, PAY & PENSIONS collected.
PERIODICAL PAYMENTS & SUBSCRIPTIONS effected. STOCKS & SHARES purchased and sold, and held in SAFE CUSTODY EXPERT OPINION on INVESTMENTS obtained from Brokers. DIVIDENDS & INTEREST collected. ADVANCES allowed against Approved SECURITY.

# Lloyds Bank Limited

(Incorporated in England.)

Branches in the East:

BOMBAY (2 Offices), CALCUTTA (2 Offices), DARJEELING, KARACHI, DELHI, NEW DELHI, SIMLA, LAHORE, RANGOON, AMRITSAR, PESHAWAR, (Cantt. & City), RAWALPINDI, MURREE, SRINAGAR, GULMARG.

# United Service Institution of India

#### PATRON:

His Excellency The Viceroy and Governor-General in India.

#### VICE-PATRONS

H. E. The Governor of Madras.

H. E. The Governor of Bombay.

H. E. The Governor of Bengal.

H. E. The C.-in-C. in India.

H. E. The Governor, United Prov.

H. E. The Governor of the Punjab.

H. E. The Governor of Bihar.

H. E. The Governor, Central Prov.

H. E. The Governor of Assam.

H. E. The Governor, N.-W.F.P.

H. E. The Governor of Sind.

H. E. The Governor of Orissa.

The G. O. C.-in-C., Northern Cmd.

The G. O. C.-in-C., Southern Cmd.

The G. O. C.-in-C., Eastern Cmd.

#### MEMBERS OF THE COUNCIL, 1946-47

#### Ex-Officio Members:

The Chief of the General Staff, (President).
The A.O.C, Air Force in India, (Vice-President).
The Flag Officer Commanding Royal Indian Navy.
The Secretary, Defence Department.
The Secretary, External Affairs Department.

#### Elected Members:

Lieut.-Gen. Sir Clarence Bird, K.C.I.E., C.B., D.S.O. Lieut.-Gen. Sir Noel Beresford-Peirse, K.B.E., C.B., D.S.O. Lieut.-Gen. C. M. P. Durnford, C.B., C.I.E. General Sir A. Reade Godwin-Austen, K.C.S.I., C.B., O.B.E., M.C. Captain W. J. Lifton, C.I.E., R.I.N. Lieut.-Gen. Sir Kenneth M. Loch, K.C.I.E., C.B., M.C. Philip Mason, Esq., C.I.E., O.B.E., I.C.S.

Lieut.-General R. A. Savory, C.B., D.S.O., M.C.

#### Honorary Members:

Lieut.-Gen. H. H. The Maharaja of Jammu and Kashmir, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., G.C.V.O. Air Vice-Marshal H. H. The Nawab of Bhopal, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., C.V.O. Air Vice-Marshal H. H. Maharaja Bahadur of Jodhpur, G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E., K.C.V.O. Colonel H. H. The Maharaja Jam Saheb of Nawanagar, G.C.I.E., K.C.S.I.

Major-General H. H. Maharajadhiraj of Patiala, G.C.I.E., G.B.E.

Lieut.-Colonel H. H. The Raja of Faridkot, K.C.S.I.

### MEMBERS OF THE EXECUTIVE COMMITTEE, 1946-47.

Chairman: Lieut.-General R. A. Savory, C.B., D.S.O., M.C.
Members: General Sir A. Reade Godwin-Austen, K.C.S.I., C.B., O.B E., M.C.
Captain W. J. Lifton, C.I.E., R.I.N.
Lieut.-General Sir Kenneth M. Loch, K.C.I.E., C.B., M.C.
Philip Mason, Esq., C.I.E., O.B.E., I.C.S.

Secretary and Editor: Lieut.-Colonel H. C. Druett.

Bankers: Lloyds Bank, Simla.

#### UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION OF INDIA

The headquarters building of the United Service Institution of India in Simla is open daily, including Sundays, from 9 a.m. to sunset. It contains a reading room, in which is available a wide range of illustrated periodicals, newspapers, magazines, A well-stocked etc., as well as a member of Service journals. library is also open to members, who may borrow volumes without charge, while members stationed elsewhere may obtain books on loan post-free.

Members also receive, post-free, each of the quarterly issues

of the Journal of the Institution.

Rules of Membership

1. All officers of the Defence Services, whether they belong to the Imperial Forces, to forces raised by the Government of India, by an Indian State, by a British Dominion or Colony, and all gazetted officials of the Government of India or of a Provincial Government shall be entitled to become members, without ballot, on payment of the entrance fee and subscription.

Other gentlemen may become members if proposed and seconded by a member of the Institution and approved by the Council. They will be

entitled to all the privileges of membership, excepting voting.

2. Life members of the Institution shall be admitted on payment of a lump sum of Rs. 160, which sum includes entrance fee.

3. Ordinary members of the Institution shall be admitted on payment of an entrance fee\* (see para. 4) of Rs. 10 on joining, and an annual subscription of Rs. 10 (or 15s.) to be paid in advance.

The period of subscription commences on January 1.

An ex-member on rejoining the Institution will be charged a second entrance fee of Rs. 10 if since the date on which he ceased to be a member he has served or resided in India. In other cases no charge will be made.

4. British Service, Dominion and Colonial officers serving in India shall pay an entrance fee\* of Rs. 7 only.

5. Members receive the Journal of the Institution post free to any part of the world. Members in India may obtain books from the library; they are issued postage free, the borrower paying the return postage.

Government institutions and offices, military libraries, messes and clubs wishing to subscribe for the Journal shall pay Rs. 10 per annum. Non-members shall pay Rs. 10 per annum plus postage. Single copies of the Journal will be supplied to non-members at Rs. 2-8-0 per copy, plus postage.

7. If a member fails to pay his subscription for any year (commencing 1st January) by 1st June of that year, a registered notice shall be sent to him by the Secretary inviting his attention to the fact. If the subscription is not paid by 1st January following, his name shall be struck off the roll of members and, if the Executive Committee so decide posted in the hall of the Institution for air months. decide, posted in the hall of the Institution for six months, or until the subscription is paid.

8. An ordinary member wishing to resign at any time during a year in which one or more Journals have been sent to him must pay his subscription in full for that year and notify his wish to resign before his name can be struck off the list of members.

9. Members who join the Institution on or after the 1st October and pay the entrance fee and annual subscription on joining will not be charged a further subscription on the following 1st January, unless the Journals for the current year have been supplied.

10. Members are responsible that they keep the Secretary carefully posted in regard to changes of rank and address. Duplicate copies of the Journal will not be supplied free to members when the original has been posted to a member's last known address and has not been returned through the post.

All communications should be addressed to the Secretary, United

Service Institution of India, Simla.

<sup>\*</sup>For the duration of the war, the entrance fee has been waived.

# Outstanding Books Published by Thackers, Bombay

#### THE SONG OF BERNADETTE Franz Werfel

CTTC: 3 dys, E

d i d

POT, E

15

T ib ay dia

i kd

trac (

5 E

des

More than a hundred thousand copies sold! Few novels pose a problem of more fascinating human complexity than this story of an en-lightened civilisation suddenly faced by the inexplicable.

inexplicable.

FOR WHOM THE BELL TOLLS

Ernest Hemingway

One million people bought it. Five million
people read it. The greatest love story of all

Rs. 8-12

#### INDIAN INTERLUDE

The author has created a number of delightful personalities, he succeeds in conveying to the reader a true atmosphere.

R3. 6-14

#### MOTIVE FOR MURDER Florence Kilpatrick

Clyde Moncrieff has to make a dash for England to escape from being involved in a murder he witnessed in an opium-den in Rio. His further adventures make an absorbing detective story.

D DAY John Gunther

Mr. Gunther is well known for his "Inside Europe" and other books of a similar type. "D Day" is recommended as one of the best books of the week by the "London Times Literary Supplement."

Re. 7-14

Re. 7-14 Rs. 7-14

#### WITH THE 14TH ARMY

This latest book by Mr. Karaka is an outstanding feat of close observation and accurate recording. Recent developments on this front make "With the 14th Army" a book of particular interest just now. Rs. 4-12

#### WINGATE'S PHANTOM ARMY W. G. Burchett

"More thrilling than any fictitious thriller."

#### PACIFIC TREASURE ISLAND

The book tells of New Caledonia, the Pacific Treasure Island—the Malta of the South Seas. Of the author it is said "Burchett has become force to be reckoned with. His writings have rightly become rightly become popular among the pooples of South East Asia."-

#### THE WORLD THAT WORKS George West

This is a book about the end of a world that did not work and news of a world we're all looking for—a world that works.

Re, 5

#### THE LIVING AND THE DEAD

THE LIVING AND TO Beverley Nichols

Beverley Nichols

A book that has caused much bitterness and book that has caused much bitterness and Beverley much more constructive criticism.

# INDIA IN FABLE, VERSE AND STORY L. H. Niblett

Here is a feast of good reading: stories ancient and modern—weird, bizarre, elevating, humour-ous, and serious—illustrating diverse aspects of Indian life.

#### **JOURNALISM**

C. L. R. Sastri A rare find and a real acquisition to Indian

## TRY ANYTHING ONCE Frank Clune

"A record of true vagabondage, amazing in the variety of its icidents, and told with a naive candour, which leaves the reader rather breath-Re. 6-4

# ONIONS AND OPINIONS N. G. Jog

These little essays are a sheer delight.

# PEOPLE OF BOMBAY Percival & Olivia Strip

Rs. 6-12

This book describes the origin, history, religion, commercial activities inherent traits, etc., of the Parsees, the Kholas, the Banyas, the Bohras and other communities of Bombay.

# SUNLIT WATERS Capt. C. W. W. S. Conway

This book gives an extremely practical exposi-tion of the methods and advantages of fishing with light tackle—and brings fishing history in India up-to-date. Re. 12-8

#### MY STORY Sheelagh O'Flynn

A Baby's Record Book and Photograph Album combined.

# KNITTED ZOO Anna Politzer & Thora Stowell

What is more fascinating than making your own toys at home? Here is a book of complete instructions for knitting toys, with details about materials and making up, and expert guidance throughout.

Re. 6-5

# THE GALLANT WAY Frank Taylor

A collection of twenty-three spirited poems extolling the best in the British martial tradi-

# THE TRIAL OF MUSSOLINI "CASSUS"

Did you read "Guilty Men" if so (or if not) read "The Trial of Mussolini" by "Cassius." The first four editions total 100,000 copies. Ro. 2-14

I MADE MY OWN DOLLS

Thora Stowell

The patterns given in this book have all been made over and over again and have stood the test of being sold in competition with professional models and all have sold very well.

Re. 6.14 Ra. 6-14

#### LENINGRAD Alexander Werth

Out of the beleaguered city—the starved, bombed and shelled city—he brought a story that no reader will very easily forget. Rs. 8-14
WHAT TO DO WITH GERMANY
Louis Nizer

His book is a triumph of brief, lucid statement, sane argument and imaginative planning, facing all the major issues and omitting no essentials. Re. 7-14

STRANGE ISLAND

Molley Kaye

This is a thriller in the classical tradition of Edgar Wallace and Agatha Christie, brilliantly constructed and told with many flashos of Res. 2.19

humour.
Through Japanese Barbed Wire (in the press).

G. Priestwood

## THACKERS PUBLISHERS **BOMBAY**



Breeders of racing bloodstock know what it takes to win the Derby. Speed without stamina will never do; staying power without speed is equally useless. The two qualities must blend perfectly, and the breeding of such colts is for experts only.

With cigarettes it is also the blending which counts. Skilled experts are needed to produce excellence such as you find in "Capstan." This popular brand has been famous for many years as the cigarette which is blended better.



Better buy
CAPSTAN

They're blended better

W. D. & H. O. WILLS, BRISTOL & LONDON

CAB/102

#### A SERVICE PATTERN Officers' Popular

## "RAINCOAT"

That will keep out Wind, Cold and Water.

Have you one in your Kit?

Military Regulation Service Pattern Officers' Khaki Waterproof. "Trench-Coat" (roomy and comfy and extremely serviceable and lighter in weight than Greatcoat).

Made from thoroughly Dustproof.
Windproof and Waterproof, double
texture fine Rubberised Cloth of
Regulation Khaki Colour.



Price Rs. 45 each

FRONT: Double breasted style, cut with a curve to Military shape with broad lapels. Open and Broad Military Storm Collar to stand and fall with Tab to button to throat. Armpits with ventilation eyelets.

Note.—With order please state size round CHEST and WAIST taken over jacket and your full height or length of coat required.

## NEW WAR MEDAL RIBBONS

N. Africa Star, 1939|45 Star, Burma Star, Italy Star, Pacific Star, Defence Medal, France|Belgium|Holland Star, and other medal Ribbons at Rs. 1|8 per foot. Oakleaf Emblems for "Mentions" and silver Rossets Annas 8 each. Silver Arabic Numerals "1" or "8" Re. 1 each. RIBBON BARS with safety pin mounted with 1, 2, 3, 4 or 5 Ribbons at Annas 6, 12, Rs. 1|2, 1|8 or 1|14 respectively.

GHQ Signs, Gold embd. for officers Rs. 2 a pair. GHQ Signs, Silk embd. for O. Rks., Re. 1 a pair.

Please address your orders to:

# YOUSUF & CO.

(Late of Holdings, Oxford Circus, London, 1914-18)

#### MILITARY & POLICE TAILORS,

LUDHIANA, (PUNJAB)

Note.—Where V.-P. P. system is not available, please send remittance with order plus postage.

Telegraphic Address: "MAYFAIR," Ludhiana.

# "TILLEY" STORM LANTERN

Height overall 19 inches

TO
OPERATE



Weight 31 lbs.

RELIABLE-IN ALL WEATHERS

# For Indoor & Outdoor Use

Similar to illustration (War quality) but without Wire Guard

Rs. 49-12 each

Special rates for quantities on request:

Army & Navy Stores Ltd.

P. O. Box 5 FORT, BOMBAY.

# FOR

# **EVERY**

# ASPECT

OF

Science, Medicine, Industry and pleasure too --- there is an Ilford Selo Product.

For nearly seventy years sensitised photographic materials manufact.

# PHOTOGRAPHY

ured by Ilford Ltd.

have been renowned the world over for their consistent high quality.

**ILFORD PHOTO.** PERS-SHEET LMS--X-RAY FILMS AND SELO ROLL FILMS

Distributed Throughout India by .

ILFORD (INDIA) LT

CALCUTTA OMBAY

DJK 4851

## THE

# INDIAN STATES FORCES



# ANNUAL

## 1946

The Forces of the Indian States played a worthy part with the Indian Army in the road to Victory.

The 1946 Edition of the Indian States Forces Annual contains many articles and illustrations concerning the work of these Forces both in operational areas and in the States.

To ensure receiving a copy, write as soon as possible to the Editor, The Indian States Forces Annual, Headquarters of the Military Adviser-in-Chief, Indian States Forces, New Delhi.

Price Rs. 3-8-0 each

# The Iournal

# Anited Service Enstitution of Endia

#### CONTENTS

Frontispiece: The Hon. Sardar Baldev Singh	
Matters of Moment	311
Planning India's Post-War Armed Forces, by H.E. Field Marshal	
Sir Claude Auchinleck	320
Three Years With The Chin Levies, by H. E. W. Braund	327
Is Scientific Selection Successful? by LtColonel Rajendra Singh	335
Scientific (?) Selection, by "Lictor"	342
Oh! To Be In Poona, by "Mouse"	347
Army/Air Organisation for India's Defence, by Major-General	
C. H. Boucher	351
Britain, Russia and Asia, by LieutColonel G. E. Wheeler	356
The Commanders-in-Chief in India since 1860, by Brigadier H.	
Bullock	363
A P.O.W. in Japan, by Colonel W. A. Trott, M.C	370
Four Months Watching Arnhem, by Captain S. P. Morse	376
Things People Say and Write	379
Was Our Pre-War Training Wrong? by LtCol. W. H. Huelin	382
New Pay Code for British Services in India, by Major-General	002
	390
	397
· ·	
Lessons of Wars Through The Ages, by Major D. H. Donovan	401 407
Southern Rhodesia Wants Immigrants, by W. D. Gale	
Air Defence and Its Lessons, by Air Marshal Sir Roderic Hill	412
A Fascinating Parallel, by "F. G."	418
Indian Engineers' New Honour, by LieutColonel M. E. S. Laws	422
England—June, 1946, by "Cecil Varcus"	426
A "Home" News-Letter, by Major-General Sir Dashwood Strettell	431
In Search of Sailors, by Commander E. C. Streatfield James	433
A Plea For Animals In India, by L. Conway Evans	438
Why Not a Railway Transportation Corps? by "Bummelzug"	442
Why Only a Railway Transportation Corps? by LieutColonel	
R. B. Emerson	445
Military Geology and What It Means, by E. J. Bradshaw	447
Opening and Developing a Captured Port, by Lieut-Colonel	
G. L. W. Armstrong	453
Planning and the Small Stores, by LieutColonel Geoffrey Noakes	458
The Post-War Officer, by Colonel R. M. Bruce	<b>46</b> 0
The Valley Of The Gods, by Major J. E. Heelis	464
Visit of the Indian Victory Contingent to England	468
Letters to the Editor	475
Notes By The Secretary Digitized by Google	478

#### GOLD MEDAL PRIZE ESSAY COMPETITION

The Council has selected the following subject for the Gold Medal Prize Essay Competition for 1947:

#### "MAN MANAGEMENT"

Entries are invited from all commissioned officers of His Majesty's Forces, from gazetted officers of the Civil Administration in India, and from officers of the Indian States Forces.

Essays, which should be typewritten (double spacing) and submitted in triplicate, must be received by the Secretary, United Service Institution of India, Simla, on or before June 30, 1947. In order that the anonymity of each candidate should be preserved, a motto should be written at the top of each entry. A sealed envelope, bearing on the outside the motto, and containing inside the name and address of the author of the essay, must accompany each entry.

Entries should not exceed fifteen pages (approx. 8,000 words) of the size and style of the Journal. Should any authority be quoted in the essay, the title of the work referred to should be given.

Three judges chosen by the Council will adjudicate. They may recommend a money award not exceeding Rs. 500, either in addition to, or in substitution of, the Gold Medal, and will submit their decision to the Council. The name of the successful candidate will be published in the October, 1947 issue of the Journal.

Copyright of all essays submitted will be reserved by the Council of the United Service Institution of India.

# OFFICERS SERVICE STYLE (PEAKED) CAPS



icers Drab Manchon Felt Service Cap . . Rs. 40 each. ficers Drab Barathea Service Cap . . Rs. 18 each. Officers Drab Felt Gurkha Hat with Puggri .. Rs. 25 each Officers R.A.F. Blue Barathea Service Cap .. Rs. 18 each

#### OFFICERS SIZE CAPS

Blue Gold Cord Welted Officers Side Caps any Regiment Department liers Side Cap Badges Gold Embroidered

Rs. 16 each

#### ENGLISH MADE MEDAL RIBBONS



irma Star Medal Ribbon ...Rs
tience Medal Ribbon ...
cific Star Medal Ribbon |
lantic Star Medal Ribbon |
lantic Star Medal Ribbon |
ly Star Medal Ribbon |
ly Star Medal Ribbon |
lance and Germany Star Medal Ribbon | Aircrew Europe Star Medal Ribbon 1939-45 Star Medal Ribbon North Africa Star 1939-43 Medal Ribbon Mention in Despatches (Khaki, Green or per yard. Rs. 3 per yard Blue) Ribbon

(All other Medal Ribbons Stocked)

### MEDAL RIBBON BRASS BARS

(For Mounting Medal Ribbons.)



or 1 Ribbon For 4 Ribbons 8 each. or 2 Ribbons For 5 Ribbons As. 4 each 10 each. or 3 Ribbons As. 6 each For 6 Ribbons 12 each. As. RIBBON MOUNTED BARS & EMBLEMS



Ribbon Mounted Bar Ribbons Mounted Bar As. 4 each 4 Ribbons Mounted Bar ... Re. 1 0 each. As. 8 each 5 Ribbons Mounted Bar ... Rs. l 4 each. Ribbons Mounted Bar As. 12 each 6 Ribbons Mounted Bar .. Rs. 18 each. Mention in despatches New Bronzed Oakleaf Emblems Rę. 08 each. Mention in despatches Khaki Ribbon Mounted Bar fitted with New

Oakleaf Emblem "1" or "8" Emblems for N. Africa Star I 0 each Re. 10 each Gift Rose Emblem for 1939—45 Star

egimental and Departmental Cap, Collar and Shoulder Badges and Buttons, Coat Belt uckles, Wound Badges, Service Chevrons, Stars, Crowns, Water Bottles, Haversacks, Helmets, Sam Browne Belts, Ties, Stockings, Whistles, Whistle Cords, Putties, Divisional Signs, etc., etc., Stocked.

#### ASK FOR ILLUSTRATED PRICE LIST

here there is no V.P. system the customers are requested to remit in advance the cost of the goods plus Postage and Packing charges.

# M. AZAM & BROTHER,

Military, R.A.F., Naval & Police Contractors, Outfitters & Tailors LUDHIANA (PUNJAB), INDIA.



					Re.	8.
me hame all a Grands Deals Com	and Dad	~~			20	0
Khaki Barathea Service Peak Cap	SHO DRO	Side Ca	· ~ \		15	ŏ
Khaki Barathea Field Cap and Be		Side Ca		••	20	ŏ
Blue Barathea Field Cap and Bad		• • •	·v	••	15	ŏ
Green, Black or Khaki "Beret"	Cap		ch	••	-8	ŏ
Pure Silver Badges for "Beret"	Caps			••	5.	
Bilver-plated Badges for "Beret	· Caps		*	••	25	ŏ
R.A.F Blue Barathea Peak Cap a	nd Badge	1013	- 0	••	18	ŏ
R.A.F. Blue Barathea Field Cap a	nd Badge		a Cap)			
Collar Badges, Bronze for Khaki J	acket		pair		6 4	Ŏ
Can Badges, Bronze for Khaki Ca	D8		ach	••	7	Ň
Buttons, Gilt or Bronze for Khak	Jacket	1	set	••	~ ~	ŏ
Buttons, Gilt for Patrol Jacket	••	••	99	••	7	5
Buttons, Glit for Greatcoat	••	••	90 .	••	12	ŭ
Shoulder Titles, Gilt or Bronze	••	•• (	a pair	••	2 1	0 8 8 0 0 8
Shoulder Titles, Cloth slip-on		• •	79	••	1	8
Stars (Pips), Gilt-enamelled		••	,,	••	2	4
Crowns, Gilt with Red Velvet		, ••	**	• •	2	∙8
Stars or Crowns, Bronze or Black		• • •		••	2	.8
Stars or Crowns, worsted on Kha	ki Cloth	••	22	••	.1	8
Their Callules Buch Shirts		••	99	• • •	. 12	8
Service nettern Shirts of fast Kh	aki Cellul	ar with	flap			
				••	6	0
Drob Flornal Shirts to match "	Barathea	18CKO	i calu <u>n</u>		28	. 0
Khaki Drill Shorts Rs. 6-8 a pair,	Khaki Dr	ill Slack	KB	••	15	0
Khaki Woollen Stockings					6	0
Khaki Woollen Socks	••		pair		.8	12
Khaki Ankle Puttles, Fox's Pate	n t.	••	- >>	• •	Ð	0
Khaki Woollen Hosetops		•••	1)	••	8	8
Misk Woonen Hosewas botton	•		each	•••	10	
Field Haversacks, leather bottom Field Waterbottles Rs. 10 each.	R Relt			•••	25	
Whistle and Khaki Lanyard Rs.	9-8 Par	Alvar T	.anvar	ď	- 2	8
Whistie and Knaki Lanyard Its.	Ann other	Model	Ribbo	ne	-	•
1939-43 Star or N. Africa Star or	any orner	шочет	a foot		1	8
			each		ō	6
Bars mounted with any ribbon	••			••	275	
Officer's Greatcoat	••	••	"	••	45	
Khaki Raincoat	••	• •	29	••	40	U

#### Servants' Waist & Pugree Bands, Badges, Silk Ties and Sports Squares

(Stocked in your Regulation approved colours and designs.)

Servants' Waist & Pugree Bands & Pugree Badges
(Your Servants will look neat and smart when wearing Bands and Badges.)
Waist & Pugree Bands in your Corps, Regiment or Departmental
colours fitted with electro nickel-plated buckle and runner
adjustable to any size waist
Servants' Pugree Badges, electro silver-plated of your Corps,
Regiment or Departmental design

at Rs. 4/- each

WIDE-END TIES

Wide-End superior Cord Silk Ties, well made with reinforced neck bands, with diagonal stripes in your Regulation colours at Rs. 5/- each MUFFLERS

Mufflers 36 inches square made of superior cord silk striped in your Regulation colours ... at Rs. 20/- each

**BLAZER POCKET BADGES** 

Pocket Badges with your crest worked in Gold or Silver embroidery on blue or your own material ... at Rs. 8/- each Pocket Badges, with your crest embroidered in white or any coloured silk, on blue or your own material ... at Rs. 4/- each

CRESTED STATIONERY AND XMAS CARDS

# YOUSUF & CO. MILITARY & POLICE TAILORS, LUDHIANA (Punjab).

Where V.-P.P. system is not available please send with order cost of goods plus postage.



The Hon. Sardar Baldev Singh.

Defence Member in the Interim Government

THE Hon. Sardar Balder Singh was, until his appointment as Defence Member, Minister for Development and Civil Supplies in the Punjab Coalition Ministry, and before holding that office had been Development Minister than the form of the

in the former Punjab Unionist Ministry. He was Leader of the Panthic Akali Party in the Punjab Legislative Assembly. Aged 43, he is the son of Sardar Sir Indar Singh. THE UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION OF INDIA, SIMLA.

Statement of Account for the year ended 31st December, 1945.

## THE UNITED SERVICE

Balance Sheet at

CALLIAL AND L	MBILITIES						
			Rs.	A. 1	P. Rs.		,
CAPITAL—				-		•	•
As at 1st January, 1945	••	••	1,49,002	2 9			
.1dd—Excess of Income over Experience year ended 31st December, 19 account attached	nditure du 45, as per I				1,52,215	3 6	8
Employees' Provident Fund	••	••			6,158	. 0	¢
Gratuity to Peons	••	••			916	0	¢
Lianilities.							
Electricity Audit Fee	• •	••	54	5 0			
Journal Printing and Proof Page	ling	••		0 0			
Journal-Postage and Freightage	••	••-	422 1	-	3,450	0	ş
•		_	<u> </u>		10.		
Members and Subscribers at Credi Advertisers at Credit	it	••			2,816 120	8	0

## institution of india

31st December, 1945.

12 1

PROPERTY	AND	Assets.	
PROPERTY	AND	ASSETS.	

BUILDINGS (BOOK VALUE)— As at 1st January, 1945

Less—Depreciation at 11%

LIBRARY BOOKS (BOOK VALUE)—

As at 1st January, 1945

Add—Additions during 1945

Less—Depreciation

50% on additions

Less—Depreciation

Less—Sales during 1945

468 5% on opening balance 356 11

FURNITURE AND FITTINGS (BOOK VALUE)—

As at 1st January, 1945 Less—Depreciation 6%

MAGIO LANTERN (BOOK VALUE) As at 1st January, 1945

PICTURES AND SCULPTURES (BOOK VALUE)—

As at 1st January, 1945

MEDALS AND TROPHIES—

As at 1st January, 1945

SUNDRY DEBTORS— Members at Debit

Advertiser at Debit

Investments-Lodged with Lloyds Bank Ltd., Simla for safe custody 4% Bombay Port Trust Debentures, Face value

Rs. 3,000 at Rs. 90 4% Bonds 1960-70 Loan, face value Rs. 8,000 at  ${
m Rs.~103}$ 

Řs. 107

31% Bonds 1947-50 Loan, face value Rs. 4,000 at Rs, 106-5-0 Carried over

1,209

2,700 0 8,240 0

4% Bonds 1960-70 Loan, face value Rs. 5,000 at 5,350 4,252

> 20,542 8 Digitized by Google

16,277

Rs.

P.

0

Rs.

16,525

248 0 0

9,383

10,096 14 12

713 7

10,081 11

2,319

139 0

322 0

24

824 11

0

0 0

0 0

8

0

0

0

0

9,257 0 0

**2,180 0** 0

298 0 0

3,682 5

3,113 8 3

1,249 1

36,056 14 11

iv

THE UNITED SERVICE

Balance Sheet as at

Rs.  $\mathbf{R}\mathbf{s}$ .

Brought forward

1,65,672 15 5

Total

1,65,672 15

Simla: 14th April, 1946.

 $\mathsf{Digitized} \ \mathsf{by} \ Google$ 

31st December, 1945.

ME

) No

			Rs.	A.	P.	Rs.	A.	₽.	
Brou	ght forward	. • •	20,542	8	0	36,056	14	11	
4½% Bonds 1955-60 Loan, Face valu	e Rs. 10,000	) aţ						- 1	
Rs. 120		••	12,000	0	Q				
3½% Bonds 1965 Loan, Face yalue R Rs. 94-11		• •	7,575	0	Q				
3% Bonds 1963-65 Loan, Face value	Rs. 15,500	at	15 100	^	^				
Rs. 98	Da 15 000		15,190	Q	0				
3% 1946 Defence Bonds, Face value	Ks. 15,000	au	15,000	0	0				
par 3½% Bonds 1947-50 Loan, Face value	e Rs. 8,400	at	20,000	·	Ŭ				
Rs. 98-8	••	• •	8,274	.0	0				
3% Bonds 1949-52 Loan, Face Value Ris. 100-12-5	Rs. 4,000	at 	4,030	15	9				
3 Years Government of India Interes	t free		•						
Defence Bonds	• •	• •	21,000	0	0	1,03,612	7	9	
Warenega Down vp									
Expenses Prepaid— Telephone			181	5	4				
Periodicals	••	••	304		Õ	485	9	4	
		_							
LIBRARY CATALOGUES—			050	0	^				
As at 1st January, 1945	••	• •	973		6	010	0	0	
Less:—Sold during 1945	• •	•-	60	0	0	913	8	6	
C			•						
CASH AND OTHER BALANCES— Balance at Lloyds Bank Ltd., London	n	•	660	1	0				
Balance at Lloyds Bank Ltd., Simla	ц	••	000	-	Ÿ				
	• •	• •	6,223	8	8				
In Current Account	••	••	10,080		Õ				
In Savings, Account In Savings Account (Employees	Provident 1	Fund	_0,000		-				
and Peons Gratuity Contra)			7,064	0	0				
Balance in hand with the Secretary	••	••	576	1	3	24,604	6	11	
Datation in hand with the continual						-			

Total

1,65,672 15 5

Examined and found correct in accordance with the books.

AIYAR & Co., Registered Accountants, Auditors.

#### THE UNITED SERVICE

#### Revenue Account for the year

				Rs.	A.	P.	Rs.	A.	P.
To Establishment							11,267	8	0
" Contribution to Employees		t Fund with	••				11,201	Ŭ	U
Interest		- 1					517	10	0
" Gratuity to Peons			•••				854	0	ŏ
" Contingencies							1,636	9	6
" Printing and Stationery							383	8	6
" Insurance Rates and Taxes			•				573	_	Õ
" Electricity	••						175	6	ŏ
" Postage and Telegrams			• •				885	4	ŏ
" Exchange and Bank Comm	ission						117	$1\overline{2}$	2
" Repairs to Buildings							273	1	ō
,, Audit fee							300	ō	Ŏ
" Miscellaneous Expenses	••	••	••				6	5	Ŏ
U. S. I. Journal Expenses-					•				
Printing & Proof reading				12,275	1	9			
Premia	••	• •	::	4,994		8			
Postage & Freight	••	••	••	1,882		6	19,152	5	11
A	<b>~</b>								
" Arrears of Subscription wri	tten on	••	::				120	0	0
" Purchase of Periodicals	• •	• •	• •				714	10	0
Depreciation-									
Building	• •			248	. 0	0		1.	
Library Books				824	11	0			•
Furniture & Fittings	• •	• •		139	0	0			
Magic Lantern	• •	••	••	24	0	0	1,235	11	0
							•		
Surplus—	• •	\$			•				
Excess of Income over Expendence	diture	••	••				3,210	3	11

Total

41,423 13 0

Simla: 14th April, 1946.

#### INSTITUTION OF INDIA

ending 31st December, 1945.

				Rs.	A.	P.	Rs.	A.	P.
By Government Grant	••	• •					9,000	0	0
" Member Subscriptions	••	• •	••				23,669	_	Ŏ
" Life Subscriptions " Army Lists	• •	••	• •				4,200		0
"Sale of Journals	••	• •	••				2 412	8 8	0
"Advertisements in Journal		••	• •	1,243	15	0	<del>1</del> 12	O	U
Less—Commission	• •	••	• •	43	0	0	1,200	15	0
" Interest on Investments	••	••	••				2,938	14	0

Total

41,423 13 0

AIYAR & Co., Registered Accountants, Auditors

#### THE UNITED SERVICE

#### (MACGREGOR

		Ca	ur.					
To Balance on 1st January, 1945 with	Llovds Bank		Rs.	A.	P.	Rs.	A.	P.
Ltd., Simla in current account		••				1,120	10	1
" Interest on Investments	• •	• •, ,			-	262	8	0
	Total	•• :			_	1,383	2	1
			i	Bala	nce	Sheet a	s at	
CAPITAL AND	Liabilities.							
			Rs.	٨.	P.	Rs.	٨.	P.
Balance of Fund—						. 1	- 4	_
As at 1st January, 1945		• •				6,157		1
Add—Excess of Income over Expende	iture for 1945					257	0	0

Total

6,414 10 1

SIMLA: 14th April, 1946.

MEMORIAL FUND).

ending 31st December, 1945.

By Bank Commission ,, Closing Balance on 31st December, 1945		Rs.	A.	P.	$\mathbf{R}$ s	. <b>A</b> .	P.
	-				5	8	0
with Lloyds Bank Ltd., Simla in current account					1,377	10	1

Total

1,383 2 1

31st December, 1945.

PROPERTY AND ASSETS.

Investments:—
(Lodged with Lloyds Bank Ltd., Simla for safe custody).

3½% Government Loan 1842-43, Face value Rs. 2,000 at Rs. 58 (approx.)

3½%Government Loan 1865, Face value Rs. 4,300 at Rs. 58 (approx.)

3% 1963-65 Loan, Face value Rs. 1,400 at Rs. 98 .. 1,379 0 0 5,037 0 0

Balance at Lloyds Bank Ltd., Simla in current account .. .. ..

1,377 10 1

Total

THE CIVIL AND MILITARY GARRETT, LTD. LANGER.

# The Journal

of the

# United Service Institution of India

Vol. LXXVI

OCTOBER, 1946

No. 325

The views expressed in this Journal are in no sense official, and the opinions of contributors in their published articles are not necessarily those of the Council of the Institution

#### MATTERS OF MOMENT

MILIONS of pounds have been spent on atomic bomb tests—they are said to have cost no less than £125,000,000. They have proved what they were expected to prove—that atomic bombs represent a threat

The Atomic Bomb Tests to mankind just as appalling as sober scientists knew before the tests were made. First reports of the explosion in the air were, we suggest, completely and dangerously misleading. In sweeping generalisations

the world was told that the bulk of the guinea pig fleet had survived. Such reports lull people into the false assumption that the atom bomb is not so serious after all; that it is just "another bomb". Fortunately the world public has been able to watch in news reels the effect of the greatest destructive force known to man; it was an awe-inspiring and unforgettable spectacle which left no shadow of doubt in the minds of those who saw it that we now live in an age which may see our whole conception of life changed. It is not sufficeint to know that this new form of attack is wholly different in kind from all bombs based on chemical explosion; it is not sufficient to realise that if such bombs are loosed by any one Power it will mean a catastrophic break in the world's cultural development. The destructive efficiency of atom bombs was proved long ago. What we must avoid is the mistake of assessing the effect of an atomic bomb in terms of destruction to ships' structures; ships may be destroyed, towns and buildings razed to the ground; but if manpower is killed, then armies, fleets, airforces, munition-making centres can all be effectively crossed off the lists.

To measure the significance of atomic energy in warfare by the yardstick of destruction of ships is wilful blindness, for it has already been

Appalling Destructive Power proved that living beings in the vicinity of the explosion suffer instant incineration from the terrific heat set up by an atomic bomb. At Hiroshima the first bomb exploded over a level expanse of more than ten

miles of wooden houses, destroying four square miles first by blast and then by fire; of the 320,000 people in the town, approximately 80,000 were killed. Whereas Hiroshima had the effect of being consumed by fire, Nagasaki had the appearance of having been struck by a hurricane, with its wrecked skeletons of factory sheds leaning away from the heat; of the 100,000 people estimated to have been in the industrial valley at Nagasaki, 40,000 were killed. That brief reference to atomic destructive power is more enlightening than the fact that no capital ship was actually sunk at Bikini in the first test.

We must leave it to our statesmen to see that

We must leave it to our statesmen to see that there is a proper appraisal of these experiments in the public mind. The task of military students, and of all whose profession is that of arms,

Strategic Geography has Changed students, and of all whose profession is that of arms, is to review all strategic plans and, indeed, the whole strategic geography of the world, in the light of this new force. Modern war, as General Tuker wrote in 1944, now

takes place from the interior of one country into the interior of another. and not against its borders. Defence will not only be on the frontiers of a country, but will have to be powerfully maintained over the face of a whole country; rockets—and atom bombs—directed by radio on to predetermined targets point to the vital necessity of dispersal in the interior of a country, and in this connection we draw special attention to the thought-provoking and realistic article in this issue by General Boucher. That article has particular reference to India, but we need also to ponder over the fact that these new instruments of war have changed the relative importance of strategic points throughout the world. The Mediterranean, for instance, can be said to have lost much of its importance as a main shipping route, as it cannot now be defended by superior sea power alone. and the Cape route to the Far East may again come into its own. Dakar, on the West African coast, will have far more significance in American strategical plans than it has had hitherto; and there are many other examples which could be quoted to show that radar, atom bombs, radiocontrolled rockets and other engines of war force upon us the inexorable fact that there is need for all to study, to plan, and to think deeply. Our ideas must not be of the "parochial pump" variety; they must go far afield. It behoves every officer of every Service to keep himself up to date by reading, studying and enriching himself with knowledge, for if he does not do so, and the time comes when he must apply that knowledge, he can be certain of at least one thing: he will be too late.

ANY IMPORTANT points of personal interest to officers emerge from the informative address—a full report of which appears in this issue—recently delivered by H. E. The Commander-in-Chief at the Staff College, Quetta. One problem which is still disturbing is the re-

The Officer Shortage luctance of Indian youths with character, enterprise and zeal to offer themselves as officers of the future Indian Army. Why is this so? The Indian Army will in the comparatively near future be India's own Army,

manned by Indians, guarding its shores, defending it in case of attack. and available in case of need for internal security work. Decades of training, fighting, playing and living together have welded it into a strong arm, and have given it a tradition second to no other Army in the world. That is no mere "sales talk;" it is cold, hard fact. If we say it has developed under the guidance of Britain, we say it with a sense of pride—not the pride of self-esteem, but pride that men of two nations should have worked together in such harmony and with such success in the building of the structure. Credit for the achievement is mutual. To continue the work young Indians with the right spirit have for months past been invited to offer themselves as candidates for commissions in the Armed Forces. Why are they reluctant to come forward? Soldiering is an honourable profession: it carries with it certain privileges, and demands in return those qualities which make men—character, leadership, skill, and grit. Every nation has such men; India has them, as she has shown during the war.

Some may say that the men have come forward, but that the method of selection has been responsible for their rejection. In this connection we

The Position in Brief would draw the attention of readers to two articles on the subject in this issue. The writers have stated their case with moderation and clarity, and the criticisms deserve careful consideration. Is it a fact, however,

that the method of selection is a contributory cause of this poor response to the appeal for officers? Many people have probably been nearer the correct reason in suggesting that it is due to insufficient emphasis being placed on the subject during student days. That aspect, however, has now been taken in hand, and a Committee is working out how best to meet it. The whole subject of officer shortage is, however, really touching closely each and every officer in the Army, and particularly our Indian colleagues. What, in brief, is the position? India is about to have its own Army—not a new Army, but one fully trained and equipped; its peoples, whether they like it or not, must have an Army; and it must be officered; and from a population of 400,000,000 the Army alone, as was mentioned in our last issue, requires about 9,000 officers; all sources at present yield 5,100, of whom about 3,000 are pre-war regular officers, the majority British.

Can it be seriously suggested that the youth of India is faint-hearted. languid and lacking that spirit which makes fighters? An occasional

A Personal Matter for Officers

glance at any newspaper refutes that fear. Discipline they may and often do lack; but vigour and pep are usually there in full measure. Allowing that India has the men, how are the Armed Forces to attract

them? Personal publicity, we suggest, is one way which would be most productive. Officers in the Forces, who can look the world straight in the eyes and be proud of their profession, are the men who can get results. They know which of their sons, their nephews, their friends will make officers. A persuasive talk from a serving Indian officer is worth more than other forms of publicity, and if every officer made it a point of honour to bring along each year one Indian of the required physique, he would not only be helping to develop a sense of patriotism, of love for country, but would be materially helping to secure for all time that deep respect which citizens have for their soldiery.

It is a matter for regret that there are in India no military correspondents of the Indian Press, as is the case in America and Britain. It may

**Educating** Public **Opinion** 

be that in its new sphere the Indian Press will seek to educate the people on the defence problems of their country, and we suggest that this is an idea on which those who control the Press here might do well to

ponder seriously, for such writers would in time achieve a following of well-read, thoughtful people. Those military correspondents would have a heavy responsibility; they would themselves be keen students of military history; would keep the reading public well-informed on matters military; would interpret the thoughts of military leaders to the public. Here, indeed, is an opportunity for one or two leading Indian journalists to work for the common weal. The Indian Press needs a Cyril Falls. Once such experts have their following they can wield immense influence, and by Press, radio and public speaking inculcate a new spirit in the minds of the more advanced Indians. A sane and sensible Press is, indeed, one of the firm foundations of any great self-governing nationand India will be no exception to this rule. If we may venture to suggest it, editors of the more enlightened Press, having the good of the country at heart, might seriously consider themselves directing public attention to the Army. The need for introducing the right type of youngster into the commissioned ranks gives them an admirable lead,

7ITH THE run-down in strength of the Indian Army, considerable re-organisation is taking place, one of which is of no small importance to the regimental officer. We refer especially to Welfare, which on

the closing of the Welfare General's Branch will henceforth be an "A"

Every Officer A' Welfare Officer subject. That does not mean that Welfare qua Welfare will suffer. The change is rather one of numbers than of purpose, and though, perhaps understandably, the thought has arisen that "welfare" is a specialist duty,

Officer thought has arisen that "welfare" is a specialist duty, that thought will have to disappear now that the Armed Forces are being placed on a peace-time basis. That "Welfare" is the work of someone outside the unit is a dangerous idea, probably fostered by the attention devoted to the subject during the War. We have, however, now to realise more than ever that every officer is a welfare officer, not merely thinking in terms of procuring and providing amenities, but ever ready to extend a sympathetic personal interest in the life and work of his men.

\* \* \*

Mutual confidence and mutual respect between officer and man are two essential qualifications in the relations between the two. There need

Some
"Welfare"
Pointers

be nothing sloppy or sentimental about it. If an officer is efficient at his job his men will have confidence in him; there will develop a sense of unity—a team spirit; in games, in recreation, the good officer joins in

spirit; in games, in recreation, the good officer joins in and enjoys it. Let saluting be a greeting between comrades—and let it be accompanied by a "salaam" and not merely a lifting of the hand. Knowing men as individuals and knowing their characters—the sulky, the good-humoured, those that are lazy, the hard working, the grumblers—is one of the surest indications of a good officer. An efficient officer never forgets that his men see things differently, and always keeps them "in the picture"; he meets his men in the lines, finds out their interests (if you know him, the simplest sepoy has some pet subject). Strict discipline and good welfare go together; welfare aims at keeping men happy and contented; it does not mean pampering them. The "good" officer will look out for ways and means of improving and changing things for his men; will encourage as well as blame; will have a cheerful word and a smile. In short, looking after men's welfare is a big job, and if tackled with enthusiasm will benefit the officer, the men, and the unit.

\*\* \*\* \*\*

IT IS GOOD news that the Secretary of State for War in London has determined that education in the post-war British Army is to continue on the same broad lines which were so outstandingly successful in the late war. His plans provide for universal community education in

Army Education citizenship and current affairs topics; voluntary individual education; and resettlement education. It is all to be organised on three levels—the elementary stage; the intermediate stage, which will apply to the bulk of

Army personnel on a unit basis; and the advanced stage for further and more specialised education. "It is my intention", said Mr. Lawson, "to identify Army education as closely as possible with civil education". Men

in modern Armies are decidedly better soldiers when they are well-informed, and it cannot be gainsaid that the A.B.C.A. system of pamphlets and Map Reviews paid handsome dividends. It is so highly regarded in Great Britain that those who directed A.B.C.A. have now been called to take charge of an identical scheme for the civilian public; (India as a whole is far behind the general public in Britain in its knowledge of current affairs, but the expansion of the system among India's educated public is worth considering).

Mr. Lawson recognised that compulsory military service would interrupt that period of a young man's life normally devoted to educational and vocational training; in civil life much of this

vocational training would be carried out in his em-The ployers' time, and as far as the exigencies of the I.A.E.C. Service allowed, similar facilities would be made appointment to the Educational Board of Officers concerned with military training, ("Education" being an "A" matter in the British ing, the Educational ("Education" being an "A" matter in the British Army, in contrast to India, where it is on the "G" side) and also joined issue with the Secretary of State by pointing out that that Board had no contact whatever with the Universities. Education in the Army, he urged, should stand in the same relation to the Universities as does the R.A.M.C. to the B.M.A. Mr. Lawson's statement shows that he is firmly resolved to see that education in the post-war British Army shall be a live subject, and the early formation of an Indian Army Educational Corps shows that the Indian Army, too, is determined to ensure that its soldiers are well equipped mentally for their work. Given the necessary organisation there is no doubt that the new Corps will be as successful as its forerun-

Little of animals". So writes a contributor to this issue, and all who love animals will admit its truth. This is a subject on which we of the Armed Forces can, if we wish, exercise a real influence—not, we would

For Animal Lovers

ner in the British Army.

add, because we are offenders, but because we are disciplined men who should take it as a public duty to see that this cult of kindness to animals is actively support-

ed. It is a paradox that in a country where religious beliefs are so bound up with the animal world, and where animals are held in such high estimation, cruelty abounds. Many of those in charge of animals do not yet seem to understand that they would get far better results from a well-kept, properly fed and rested animal than from one which is half-starved and overworked. This state of affairs is no new thing in India. In the early days of the last century incredible cruelties were perpetrated on the animals pulling the dak gharry and on other beasts of burden. India

was, however, then a backward country, and distances being so vast a campaign aimed at educating the masses was not possible. Moreover, India was fifty years behind Great Britain in introducing an Act making cruelty to animals a punishable offence. To-day India is far from being a backward country—distances have melted away with faster communications; and with wireless millions of people can be addressed simultaneously. Today, then, public opinion can be changed with much more ease than a hundred years ago, and as the Armed Forces are the biggest and most disciplined body in the country, they should by example, by speech, and by endeavour help in this worthy cause.

Societies for the prevention of cruelty to animals have existed in India for nearly a century. One was founded in Calcutta in 1861; another in

An All-India S.P.C.A.

Karachi twelve years later; while others were formed in more towns in succeeding years. Much good work was done by these and many other smaller societies, but success and permanence varied as enthusiasm waned

and transfers and departures of the leaders occurred. Evidence of this lack of continuity led one enthusiastic worker, Mrs. A. M. Lloyd (now Lady Lloyd), Honorary Secretary of the Delhi S.P.C.A., to endeavour to establish a co-ordinating body, and after much hard work on her part the All-India S.P.C.A. was founded in 1929, with its office in Calcutta. It now has some 54 Societies affiliated to it. One of the most active of them is without doubt the Delhi S.P.C.A. Inspired and led for the past twenty years by Lady Lloyd, still its hon. secretary, it is a model organisation whose admirable work has done a power of good for dumb creatures. The Society treats over 8,000 animals annually in its own hospital and branches, which include a free dispensary for animals belonging to poor people, where upwards of 2,000 outpatients are treated annually, (a figure which refers only to the first of each course of treatment); sends out each week a specially-equipped van to outlying villages to give free veterinary service to the animals there; has twelve Inspectors on cycles patrolling Delhi streets; employs farriers at the hospital forge, where about 4,000 horses and over 1,000 cattle are shod annually; has pressed successfully for the provision of shelters for songa ponies and water troughs in New and Old Delhi; and has a first-class veterinary staff. All this has meant sustained public-spirited effort, and that Society, and other Societies throughout India, deserve a far wider measure of public support.

We are convinced that officers of the Indian Army are with us in this desire to see that cruelties to animals are lessened. Much can be done

How **Officers** Can Help

by individuals who, seeing an animal ill-treated, will take the trouble to report it; by joining the local S.P.C.A.; by "practising what you preach", and by showing kindly consideration to one's own pet animals and birds and by being frank, even with friends, if unconscious cruelty is being done to animals. In connection with our first point, it is well t know the best procedure, which is to take the number of the cart or tong the colour of the animal, the time and the place; experience has show that if a threat is made to the driver that the case is to be reported, I often changes his horse or keeps it off the road for a few days. Send the report to the local S.P.C.A., from whom an acknowledgment will probable arrive, and from whom a report of the progress of the case will doubtles subsequently arrive. This matter of the prevention of cruelty to animal is, therefore, a public duty which falls on every citizen—soldier or civilia. Though men may protect animals from ill-treatment solely with the of ject of befriending the animal, yet nonetheless his kindly act makes his a better citizen. And that is what we members of the Indian Army aspir to be.

TOO LITTLE acknowledgment was given during the inter-war year to the self-sacrificing work done by numerous wives of British Officers among the sepoys' families in the Unit lines. Despite difficulties and discouragements in the early stages, their work did more than show the

A Tribute To Officers' Wives women how to overcome illnesses; it also helped in a small measure towards making a "happy Regiment and those who so willingly gave their time and energie to family welfare work in the Lines in the past have

the satisfaction of knowing that their endeavours were warmly appreciated, and have always evoked the admiration and gratitude of officers, hig and low. The Commander-in-Chief, indeed, has recently expressed publicly his "sincere gratitude and admiration for the splendid work done be many devoted wives and others for the welfare of the families of India soldiers". Now that India is to officer its own Army, this valuable tradition will be carried on by the wives of its officers—and it is a pleasure to learn that many such ladies are taking up the work with the same enthusiasm and zeal as their predecessors. Their task is not easy, for many Indian soldiers' wives come from villages where ignorance, superstition and prejudice are rife, and the more active interest the officer wives evince in the running of the Unit Welfare Centre, the greater with the response from the women folk.

It is a sphere in which the officer's wife can play a practical part, for a sepoy's wife will, after the ice has been broken, find much to discuss with

The Unit Welfare Centre her own sex. But apart from such general interest, the Unit Welfare Centre needs to be organised on a proper basis; a well trained nurse dai, who can supervise work in the maternity section and deal with immediate

treatment of minor ailments, is of great value, for she can also teach knitting, sewing, child welfare, elementary hygiene, etc. In some units sh

paid extra to run a kindergarten class. Here, in a friendly informal atosphere, the officers' wives are sure of a warm welcome, and it is here at they will be to the soldiers' wives what their husbands are to the diers—someone in whom they can put their trust.

\* \* \* \*

A system has developed in certain stations which deserves to be more dely known. Its executive is the Station Welfare Committee, on which all local C.Os serve, and which administers a Central The Fund subscribed to by (a) The Central Maternity and ation Welfare Child Welfare Fund, (b) Unit subscriptions, and (c) Committee private enterprise. The Committee holds itself responole for applying for the Maternity and Child Welfare Grant for the ation. All bills for the normal upkeep of Unit Welfare Centres in the ation are paid by the Committee monthly; they include such expenses wages, extra medicines, transport, fuel, hospital fees, replacement of uipment and linen, etc. All equipment for the Unit Welfare Centres is pplied by the Station Welfare Committee, so that when a Unit is transrred, the complete Centre is ready to be taken over by the incoming nit. Small units are affiliated to the nearest Unit Welfare Centre, so at no individual family is neglected. Unit subscriptions to the Central and are limited to the amount necessary to make up the amount requirto cover running costs of the Centres in the Station, though, of course, ach unit can expend additional monies from its own funds on its own

The Welfare General, Lieut.-General Sir Noel Beresford Peirse, has ald us of his great appreciation of the efforts of those Units whose Centres have proved successful, and he is anxious to assist in **Help For** every way possible the efforts of those who seek to

nit Centre.

Those Which Need it.

every way possible the efforts of those who seek to expand the work already done. Every officer of the Indian Army well knows the immense value of this orale and efficiency of his men. On the other hand, it is clear from the eenness with which Indian ladies are taking up their task that they, too, expreciate its importance in the life of the Unit and its usefulness to those those life has hitherto been lived in utterly different surroundings. From their participation in this work both officers and their wives will have ause for pride—that pride from which springs devotion, enlivened and tade actual by personal energy and service.

By H. E. FIELD MARSHAL SIR CLAUDE AUCHINLECK,\*
G.C.B., G.C.I.E., C.S.I., D.S.O., O.B.E., A.D.C.,

Commander-in-Chief, India

I AM going to talk about our plans for the future of the Armed Forces of India assuming that India remains within the British Commonwealth of Nations as a fully autonomous Dominion. It is, I think, necessary to make this assumption a basis of our planning, as if India does not remain a member of the Commonwealth, so many unknown and uncertain factors are brought into the problem as to make any realistic planning practically impossible.

I will assume, then, that India will remain within the Commonwealth and that she will, in consequence, be ready to help in its general defence against an aggressor, and also to rely on the aid of the other members of it, should she herself be attacked. It is then my task, helped by my advisers in Naval, General and Air Headquarters, to try to produce and maintain in peace the Armed Forces which will enable India to defend herself against the first shock of an assault, or to help any other part of the Commonwealth, which may be threatened, to do the same.

You will realise, I know, that we are rigidly limited in our planning by financial considerations, and that we have to restrict ourselves to the absolute minimum forces needed to give security, and to ensure as rapid an expansion as possible on the outbreak of war. I can assure you that to reconcile what we think is essential with what the Financial Authorities think they can give us is a most difficult business. In the end, a compromise is almost always necessary and compromise, in a matter of life and death—such as war—is always unsatisfactory. However, this conflict is, I fear, inevitable and must be accepted.

You might well ask, in view of the uncertain political situation in the country, why we are making any plans at all. What guarantee have I, or any one else for that matter, that the new national Government of India will not have quite other ideas as to the form and size of the Armed Forces it needs, and proceed to reorganize these on completely new lines? I can only say that I have no such guarantee. I am sure, though, that it would be wrong to stop planning for the future and just mark time. To do so would, I am certain, set up a rapid and dangerous decline in morale and efficiency, not only in the Headquarters of the Armed Forces, but in those Forces themselves.

I am afraid I am not one of those who believe that all wars have ceased. The planning and development of new weapons of war is going on at an alarming rate on all sides, and I have no doubt myself that in five years time many of our present-day weapons will be as out-of-date as the horse is to-day so far as war is concerned.

The reconstitution of an Army, or of a Navy or an Air Force for that matter, is a long and complicated business, which must extend over years, and once started, cannot easily be altered or changed. If we lag behind our potential enemies in our planning and in putting our planning into effect, we run the greatest risk of being caught unprepared. In the conditions of modern war,

to be caught unprepared at the outset may well mean immediate and total defeat, if not total extinction as a nation.

I say, therefore, that however uncertain may be the constitutional position in India to-day, we cannot afford to mark time in our plans to ensure the defence of the country. My aim is to ensure that these plans shall be adequate for their purpose, whatever form of Government or constitution may eventually be set up in India. I do not think that it is in any way impossible to plan on broad lines with this end in view.

I will now tell you briefly how far we have got in our planning.

R.I.N.—So far as the Royal Indian Navy is concerned, we hope to have a balanced, if not very large fleet, consisting of three cruisers as its nucleus, with sloops, frigates and other smaller vessels as considered necessary. The R.I.N. is a young force, which, through no fault of its own, grew up too quickly, perhaps, during the late war, though we all know how excellently it proved itself in many parts of the world and what high praise it earned from its big brother the Royal Navy. All the same, it did expand to a tremendous extent in a very short space of time.

This rate of expansion is not possible in peace-time if firm foundations are to be laid for India's navy of the future. The manning and handling of big ships is a specialised art and cannot be learned in a few days or even months. Therefore we are starting slowly, hoping thus to build firmly for future expansion. I hope we shall see the first of our cruisers in Indian waters next year, if all goes well.

R.I.A.F.— As to the Royal Indian Air Force, that too expanded very rapidly in the war years, too rapidly to allow of it being built up as it should have been, had conditions permitted, into a balanced and self-contained Force. There was a natural and very proper desire to see Indian squadrons taking their place in battle against the enemy, with the result that, when fighting ceased, we found ourselves with ten R.I.A.F. squadrons, all fighter squadrons and practically entirely officered and manned by Indians. We all know how well these squadrons fought in Burma.

Behind these squadrons, however, the R.I.A.F. had no maintenance organization of its own. There was, and still is, vast repair and maintenance organization for the upkeep of the Air Forces in India, but this is a mixed R.A.F. and R.I.A.F. organization, and depends very largely indeed on the R.A.F. for the large number of skilled technicians and artificers required, though intense efforts were and are being made to train Indians to fill these essential posts.

What we now have to do is—first, to provide the R.I.A.F. with the necessary Indian repair and maintenance units, so as to make it independent of the R.A.F. and a fully self-contained and self-supporting national force. We are therefore not going to rush ahead and form more R.I.A.F. squadrons immediately, as this would be a short-sighted and ill-balanced policy, quite out of keeping with our object.

We propose to make the existing ten squadrons into a balanced force of fighter, bomber and transport aircraft, so that our Indian airmen may become expert in flying multi-engined aircraft as well as single-engined fighters, and so that our Indian squadrons may have their own administrative backing behind them.

This will take two or three years at least. When this first stage is complete, we propose to increase the number of squadrons in the R.I.A.F. until it can take over the sole responsibility for the local defence of India. Our present plans allow for an Air Force of some twenty squadrons of all types, fighters, bombers, transport aircraft and others, so that the R.I.A.F. will have to expand to double its present strength. Our intention is that this expansion in actual squadrons shall be accompanied by the simultaneous building up of the necessary training, repair and maintenance establishments on an entirely Indian basis.

INDIAN ARMY.— The basis of our planning has been that in peace we must have the nucleus of a field army ready for use in emergency with the least possible delay. In other words, we hope to have our divisions and brigades complete, not only with their fighting units, but also, so far as is possible, with their transport, medical and other administrative services.

We hope, too, that we shall be able to keep these divisions concentrated under their own commanders and staffs, in suitable training areas, so that they can really prepare themselves for war and keep alive the divisional spirit which has grown up so strongly in the last war. Our plans include one armoured and one airborne division as well as several infantry divisions. The infantry divisions will keep the signs and numbers they had in the late war, though the units must change, of course, from time to time.

These divisions and brigades will consist entirely of units of the Indian Army; in fact this is already the case. As you know, up till now our divisions and brigades have been a mixture of British and Indian units and a very good mixture it has been, as anyone who has read the histories of the Indian Divisions of the last war will know. Coming constitutional changes make it necessary to put an end to this close partnership, and from now on our divisions and brigades will be composed solely of Indian units. I am sure that, under this new arrangement, the divisions of the Indian Army will keep up the great name they have won for themselves throughout the world.

This new policy has meant a great increase in the strength of the Royal Indian Artillery, which has now to find all the medium, field, anti-tank and anti-aircraft artillery which, at the beginning of the last war, were practically all British units. This is as it should be, and I have no doubt that the R.I.A., from their recent record in Africa and Burma, will do the work admirably.

At the moment, however, the R.I.A. is desperately short of officers, British and Indian, and there are none available in India or the United Kingdom to fill the gaps. It takes time to train an artillery officer, and I am afraid we shall have to reduce a number of units to cadre for the time being until we can get more officers trained. The same shortage of officers applies also to the Royal Indian Engineers and to the Indian Signal Corps, and more young Indian officers are very badly needed for these Corps.

In addition to our divisions and brigades of the Field Army, we shall need some Frontier Brigade Groups to help the civil authorities to keep order on our Western Frontier, and these will consist, as they have always done, of Infantry, Artillery, Sappers and Signals, with some armoured units to reinforce them if necessary. We have a big plan for the expansion of the Civil Armed Forces, that is the Scouts and Militia Corps, on the Western Frontier, so that these can more and more take over the duty of policing the tribal areas and so replace regular troops, which can then be concentrated and trained for modern war.

Digitized by GOOSIG

The North-West Frontier has been in the past, and still is in many ways, an excellent training ground for *junior* Commanders—such as section, platoon and company Commanders, and for the individual soldier, but it is not really a good training ground for an Army which may have to fight a first-class enemy in very different conditions of ground and climate. Therefore it is my aim to reduce as far as possible the number of regular troops employed in Frontier Defence duties.

In addition to the Army in India, we have still a large number of divisions and brigades of Indian troops overseas in the Middle East, Iraq, Burma and Malaya, besides our occupational troops in Japan.

These troops, except for those in Japan, are being paid for by the British Government and will eventually come back to India unless the future Government of India, whatever it may be, agrees to lend them to the British Government for garrison duties in these countries. If and when they do come back to India, they will be surplus to India's needs and will have to be disbanded. This does not mean that every individual unit overseas will be disbanded, as many of them are likely to be kept on in the post-war Army, but an equal number of troops will have to be dispensed with and these will mostly be war-raised units.

If the future Government of India wishes to retain British troops in ithis country, and if the British Government agrees to their being kept—and this is an important proviso—these troops will be organised in independent Brigade Groups. This process has already started, and there are at the present moment five or six such groups composed of British Infantry battalions and British Artillery regiments in various stations throughout India. This is a necessary and convenient arrangement which follows on the decision to have all-Indian Divisions and Brigades in the Field Army.

How many, if any, British units will be kept in India will be for agreement between the future Government of India and the British Government, but, as I said before, it will be primarily a matter for India to decide. It is the intention to have such British Brigade groups as may be kept in India, concentrated under their own Commanders so as to make their training and administration easy to carry out.

In addition to our divisions and brigades of the Field Army, we hope to have one Corps Headquarters with some Corps troops. This Headquarters, which will probably be located at Karachi, will have the task of planning for war and of taking command of any expeditionary force which it may be necessary to form to deal with a sudden emergency. In peace it will also have the duty of carrying out training exercises with and without troops.

As for the supply of officers, you will have heard of our plans for a National War Academy, an Indian "West Point". An excellent site has been tentatively selected on Lake Kharakvasla, near Poona, and we are now going ahead with plans to secure the land. If our future plans mature, this will be a magnificent place, fully worthy of India and of the great achievements of her fighting men in the last war.

We hope it will hold some 2,500 to 3,000 cadets, who will go through a four years course, organized on the best and most modern lines. As you know, it will train officers for all three Services and thus, I hope, lay the foundations for that close comradeship and co-operation between them which is so essential to success in war. I ask the support and help of all of you in order to make this scheme the success it deserves to become.

At the moment we are still finding it very difficult to get the right class of youth to come forward to apply for regular commissions in the Army. When the National War Academy gets going I hope this difficulty will disappear, but this cannot be for three or four years yet, as the Academy has still to be built. Meanwhile it is essential that we should begin at once to get the best young officers it is possible to procure.

You, I am sure, will be in full agreement with me in this, and here again I ask your help. You are the best missionaries the Fighting Services can have and, in your own future interests as well as those of India, I ask you to do all you can to encourage boys of courage, character and intelligence to come forward for regular commissions. As I have so often said, the quality of an Army is the quality of its officers. India has some of the finest fighting men in the world. They deserve and must have the best officers we can give them.

Before leaving this subject of the future of the Army, there are one or two domestic matters on which I might be able to tell you something. The first is on the question of accommodation in the next few years. It is clear that our policy of keeping divisions of the Field Army concentrated in good training areas will mean building a lot of new quarters for officers and men. Until these new quarters can be built, quite a large part of the Army will have to be in temporary accommodation. This may seem to some of you a little cruel after six years of hard campaigning, but it cannot be helped. We must just make the best of it, and I am glad to say that Divisions are making the best of it, as I saw the other day when I visited the 5th Division at Ranchi.

On the other hand, the reduction in the number of British troops and the concentration of Indian troops in training areas will make excellent permanent barrack accommodation available for Training Centres, Schools and administrative establishments of all sorts, and this will mean, I hope, that the general standard of accommodation for Indian troops and their families will be raised considerably. Meanwhile our Services Post-war Accommodation Committee has been hard at work in Delhi and has produced some first-class proposals on absolutely modern and up-to-date lines, which we hope to be able to put into effect.

The second question is the pay of the officer—a most important one, as I fully realise! As I see it, assuming that the constitutional changes go smoothly and by agreement, the Indian Army is likely for some time to need the services of a number of British officers in the senior and middle ranks. These officers will be replaced by Indian officers as rapidly as they can be trained and given the necessary experience to fit them to command and to hold the higher staff appointments. This process cannot be hurried too much unless you are prepared to risk a serious reduction in the efficiency of the Army as a whole. At least that is my opinion, which is shared I believe, by most of the senior Indian officers in the Army to-day.

So long as there are British officers, seconded, attached, or permanent, serving in Indian units, it will, I think, be necessary to relate the pay of Indian officers to that of these British officers. That is, the pay of both must have a common basis—a basic rate of pay for both, to which can be added overseas or any other special allowances necessary. These are the lines on which we are working.

As you know, there is an Inter-Services Pay Committee sitting in Delhi working out proposals for the future pay and terms of service for the R.I.N., I.A., and R.I.A.F. This Committee is dealing with the pay and conditions of the

Other Ranks of the three Services as well as of the officers. In fact, their big problem is the pay of the Other Ranks. Now the Government of India has also set up a Commission to enquire into the future pay and conditions of living of civilian servants of Government and labour generally. This is an enormous subject, and I have come to the conclusion that, as all these questions, whether military or civil, must really start from the basis of the cost of living, we must link up the conclusions of our Committee with those of the Pay Commission.

This means that it is unlikely that any decision will be reached before the end of the year, or perhaps for several months after it. Meanwhile, I would ask you to remember that the Government must have officers and men in its Armed Forces and knows that it will not get them unless it pays them well and offers them reasonable terms of service. I do not think there is any real cause for anxiety as to the future, though it is not likely that everyone will get what he thinks he ought to have. This never happens in my experience!

One more point in this connection is that, whatever changes may be made in the pay of officers, up or down, the position of existing holders of appointments will be protected, that is to say, an officer will not be compelled to take the new rates until he is promoted or given a new appointment.

Now a word about the uniforms of the future Army. Our Post-War Dress Committee has made its report, which I am now considering. Briefly, we shall keep the serge battle dress for cold climates, as in the last war. We are experimenting to see whether a thick bush shirt would be better than the present battle dress blouse. There is some difference of opinion about this, people from Italy having a strong liking for the blouse, while those from Burma are not so keen on it.

For hot climates we shall keep the olive green bush shirt and trousers with the short gaiters. For full dress and walking out in hot weather we hope to introduce an olive green, well-fitting tunic with closed double collar, with piping and chevrons in the regimental or Corps facing colours, and also coloured shoulder titles.

Badges of rank will be gold or silver embroidery on the shoulders. Regimental badges and buttons will be silver—boots and shoes will be black. We shall issue olive green shorts for drill and training in barracks and also I hope, denim overalls for dirty work. The general head dress for the I.A. will be the cloth beret—scarlet or drab for the Infantry, dark green for Rifle Regiments, royal blue for the Artillery, Engineers and R.I.A.S.C., dark blue for the Armoured Corps and Signals, grass green for Boys Units, maroon for Airborne troops, and so on.

In war, and during field training, the beret will be replaced by the fighting hat in olive green or the steel helmet. Sikhs, of course, will keep the pagri, which will conform in colour to the beret worn by other classes of the unit or Corps. Regimental and Corps badges will be worn by all ranks on the beret or pagri on a backing of the regimental or corps colour. In the full dress tunic regimental badges will also be worn on the collar. The peaked cap will probably disappear, except for colonels and general officers, who will keep their red bands.

For ceremonial, leather belts will be worn with the olive green tunic by officers and men.

In hot weather, mess dress will be the olive green tunic, of which the collar can be worn open and still look very smart, and trousers. For cold weather we

intend to have the blue serge jacket and trousers, with the appropriate badges and stripes, and so on. If units so wish, officers may wear the coloured flat field service cap of regimental pattern, (the side cap) with mess dress, but not on parade. This will be optional, but the pattern in any one regiment or corps must be the same throughout.

These decisions have been arrived at as a result of very complete enquiries made from all ranks of the Indian Army. We hope to get out orders on the whole subject before very long.

There is one other most important matter to which I want to draw your attention, and it is this. The new weapons of war which are now being rapidly developed in many countries, such as atom bombs, bacteriological warfare, guided projectiles and so on must, I am sure, have a most marked effect on the size and make-up of Armies in the future. At the moment our divisions are organised and equipped as they were in the last war, but I am sure that this cannot last long. I feel that all these new weapons will have the effect of making it more and more difficult to supply large armies in the field.

Enormous bases of supply and crowded roads and railways for lines of communication will not, in my opinion, be possible, in the face of the long-range, accurate attack of these new weapons. I believe this will force us to reduce the size of armies in the field, and that such armies as we may be able to maintain will have to be very highly protected, extremely mobile, very hard-hitting and self-contained to the greatest possible degree. I suggest that you might give thought to this problem. I have already instructed the General Staff at G.H.Q. to give it their urgent consideration.

There is one final point I wish to make to you. It is concerned with loyalty.

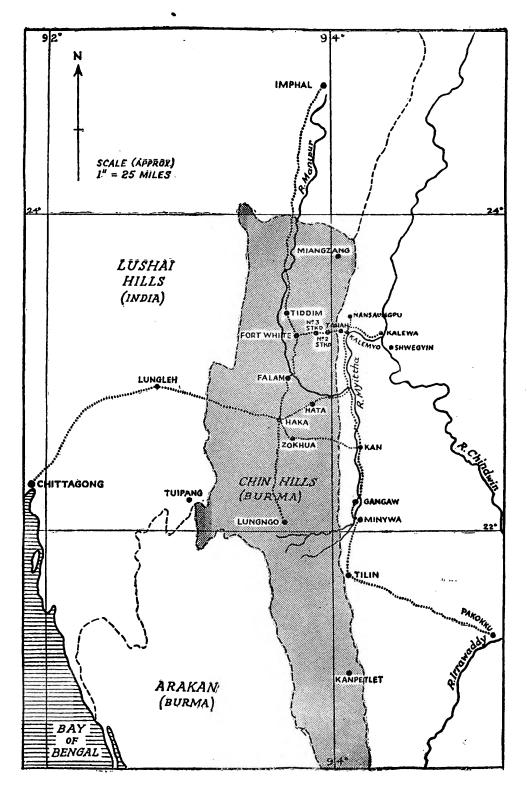
An officer is bound to be loyal to his Service and to his Country. He may hold whatever political opinions he likes, but so long as he is serving as a sailor, soldier or airman, he must not allow politics to affect his loyalty to his Service or to the Government which is in power, even if he thinks that it is not the right form of government. We all know that the political situation in India to-day is confused and the future most uncertain. I think I can say that no one knows better than I do the difficult position in which many Indian officers find themselves. I hope that the political situation may clear up in the near future and so, I am sure, do all of you, but it may not. So long as this uncertainty continues, I hope all officers will remember their duty and their loyalty, and not allow their political opinions to interfere with either of these.

If an officer feels so strongly that he cannot restrain his feelings in this matter, it is his duty to resign. I hope most sincerely that none of you will have to take such a drastic step, as the Army needs to-day all the officers it can get.

#### British Armed Forces, 1939-46

During the War the numbers of men of Great Britain who served between September, 1939 and May, 1946 were: Royal Navy, 964,000; Army, 3,927,000; R.A.F., 1,274,000, making a total of 6,165,000 men.

The figures for women are: W.R.N.S., 89,000; A.T.S., 315,000; W.A.A F., 223,000; Nursing services, 29,000, making a total of 656,000 women.



## THREE YEARS WITH THE CHIN LEVIES\*

By H. E. W. BRAUND, M.C.

THE year 1942 was a fateful one for the whole world. For the Gangaw Valley in North-West Burma the month of May brought tragedy, to shatter for probably a decade a tranquillity that far removal from the railway and mechanized industry had apparently established as immutable. It also brought the spectre of an Imperial Army withdrawing in the face of an Oriental enemy, trained and equipped for a conception of War for which the dead hands of disarmament and appearement had disqualified us.

Kalemyo, the biggest town in the Northern end of the valley, stands at the crossing of the roads which run northwards from Pakokku on the Irrawaddy River to India, and westwards from Kalewa on the Chindwin River to the Chin Hills. Here the confusion which was the common lot became worse confounded by the merging of two streams of troops and refugees, battling their way northwards like exhausted swimmers for the surface. But here, among the chaos, might also have been found the first symptoms of method in the activities of a very small band of officers, whose preparations clearly were not directed towards withdrawal to India. Under Lieut.-Colonel (later Brigadier, D.S.O.) F. W. Haswell of the Burma Rifles, and Captain (later Major M.C.) D. E. B. Manning of the Burma Forest Service, the Western (Chin) Levies were being born.

By coolie, bullock cart and any other means of transport that could be devised, a hard-won but steady stream of rations and supplies moved westwards out of Kalemyo and across six miles of open paddy land: it was then swallowed by the jungle that was to be the dominant factor in our operations for the next two-and-a-half years, and finally unloaded five miles further on at No. 2 Stockade, of impressive name but indefensible property. Here the Chins took over. Norman Kelly, the Irish Assistant Superintendent at Tiddim, had not merely the advantage of three years service in the area, but also that invaluable quality which impels naturally the confidence and loyalty of the people. And so the villagers in their hundreds sped down to "No. 2" and toiled back again each with his sixty pound burden of rice, peas or salt.

That the Japs, after a final battle with the British rearguard at Shwegyin on the East bank of the Chindwin, then called off the chase gave us the breathing space necessary to clear "No. 2" of everything that had been put into it, including (to the ultimate salvation of the Officers, for the Army found no means of rationing us for some months) a dump of tinned foods, milk, tea, sugar, etc. which the Burmah Oil Company (of a foresight that other authorities sadly lacked) had installed there for the benefit of such of their large staff as chose this route for their trek out. In the event—and fortunately for us—very few of them did.

Thus, over Kennedy Peak's near 9,000 feet into Tiddim, or across the Manipur River suspension bridge to Falam 74 road miles distant, or thence to Haka, a further 34 miles on, and from there to outposts extending to 100 miles further South still, the rations were dispersed, and with them the motley, untrained, ill-armed and far from comprehending bands of volunteers who were the Levies, and the few Officers who were committed to the experiment of backing them against the Jap.

<sup>\*</sup>This article, condensed from a longer one, was written by the author in March, 1945. The second instalment will appear in our next issue.

### THE CHINS

The Chins and their kindred tribes are to be found in the mountain ranges that separate India from Burma. Very sparsely scattered, they live in small closely crowded villages (averaging perhaps 200 houses) sited as far up the hill sides as the conflicting considerations of an assured water supply and a vantage point permit.

They have all the characteristics of the hillman—a warlike tradition with head hunting at its core, a clannishness that makes for an infinity of local dialects, a frail physique astonishingly belied by their feats as porters, animistic beliefs that crowd the walls of their houses with the skulls of wild and domestic animals, and a domestic economy moulded by a life lived never very far above starvation level.

Strongly bound by his family lies, loyal to his own community, dirty, litigious, suspicious of strangers, slow to accept change, a notable hunter, the Chin remains, by the very inaccessibility of his homeland, backward, uneducated, and, in consequence, blessed with freedom from the usurious petty trader, the petrol engine, venereal diseases and political rivalry.

Not unlike the better known Gurkha in form and features, the Chin is conspicuous for the differing hair styles (worn long) adopted by the men of the various tribes, while in his womenfolk—little less emancipated than himself—the length of the skirt is the most apparent distinguishing feature. Thus, in the Tiddim area the man wears his hair tied in a bun at the back of his head and his wife a knee length skirt, while to the South around Haka the man wears his bun prominently forward on his brow and his wife an ankle length skirt. Except for such as travel in the entourage of civil officers the man from Tiddim would have difficulty in making himself understood in Haka.

There are at present no strategic or commercial reasons for opening up the Chin Hills in peacetime. As certainly, therefore, as the wartime roads will revert to jungle so will the Chin be reclaimed by the self-contained parochialism from which the War so startingly roused him. In the World that we appear to be making perhaps it is as well that this should be so.

It would be giving a false impression of our isolation were no mention made of the Chin Hills Battalion of the Burma Frontier Force which, based on Falam, was still in being; or of several hundreds of Chin survivors from various units of the Burma Army who, having found their way back to the Hills from the debacle, were absorbed into the Levies. The Battalion in peacetime was probably one of the best disciplined and best turned out units in Burma, but it had not for the most part been involved in the campaign, and the universal state of morale after the withdrawal was so infectious that, but for a strong character in the C.O., Lieut.-Colonel A. C. Moore, it is at least possible that it would have disintegrated. the circumstances it was-and rightly-kept comparatively concentrated in the Falam area and, could not be regarded as a regular backing to the bulk of the Levies' commitments. The men of the Burma Rifles certainly had the advantage of battle experience, but this, initially, was completely offset by their dejected and unenthusiastic attitude towards continued service with the Levies, an attitude only too easily appreciated by anyone with knowledge of the ineptitude and lack of foresight of which they had been the victims. Ultimately they proved themselves, but in those early days were almost as much a hindrance as a help.

Before attempting any account of what life with the Levies was like, mention must also be made of the three senior Civil Officers in the Hills, Messrs. L. B. Naylor (later C.B.E.), Deputy Commissioner at Falam, and N. W. Kelly, O.B.E.,

and J. Poo Nyo, the Assistant Superintendents respectively of the Tiddim and Haka Sub-Divisions. Welcome or otherwise, to some extent we must have appeared in the role of disturbers of their peace, but their co-operation was whole-hearted; in fact for the critical period of the first eight months Naylor largely released Kelly and Poo Nyo from their civil duties and, without military rank but with none but military officers under their command, they served as "Zone" commanders of the Levies in their respective "parishes". Without this arrangement it is doubtful whether we could have recruited Levies or depended on the villagers for transport to any effective extent: and when Rupert Carey (later O.B.E.) and I relieved Poo Nyo and Kelly respectively in February 1943 we took over a going concern with the added advantage of having our predecessors in office still behind us for help and advice.

Of the "full time" Levy Officers, Haswell was the only regular among us: but with many years experience of the hill tribes of Burma he dropped the mask without an effort and made an excellent bandit chief. He was a happy choice for a strange command that for long had all the elements of a losing gamble, and his efforts did not go unrecognised. Manning, who would strongly resent any reference to his years, was nevertheless of a generation for whom an office chair in Simla or New Delhi was the natural outcome of eviction from Burma. But he forewent his claim in order to come into the Levies primarily as Supply Officer, and ultimately as jack-of-all-trades, as his M.C. indicates. James and Bankes (both later M.C.), Carpenter and Wright (both later "mentioned") were all Forest Assistants of timber firms in Burma. My civilian lot, as an Assistant of Steel Brothers, was also an up-country one on oilfields and mines.

So the "founder members", with little military training among them, nevertheless started with the overriding advantage of knowing how to live in the jungle. And yet, at the end of six months we were all of us probably prepared to admit how little we knew even of that, for those early days really were a severe test of mind and body. During nearly three years something more than fifty officers were in and out of the Levies. Some others of them will be mentioned in the pages that follow.

The break of the rains in May 1942 found us dispersed from Hiangzang in the extreme North of the Chin Hills to Lungngo, which was as far South as we ambitiously sought to dominate. On the map this is a distance of a mere 130 miles, but by road it is about 250 miles, or say three weeks marching when travelling with coolie transport. The area Eastwards from our bases (i.e. Tiddim, Falam and Haka) to the Chin Hills border is approximately 3,500 square miles on the map, or nearly 6,000 on the ground. This "to kick off with", because we later had patrols operating over 100 miles South of Lungngo. And that we by no means confined our operations to the Hills, but carried out some effective harrying of the Japs in the Kalemyo/Gangaw valley, and some conception of the area of our activities is possible.

The topography of the country is such as either to make or break you in a short time. Viewed from the valley in the open season, the Chin Hills are a successive piling up of roughly North to South ranges of forbidding aspect, the final mass rising to a steel-blue horizon at a height of 8,000 to 10,000 feet. Apart from the mule track that links Falam with Tiddim and Haka and all three with the valley, there are no paths on which two men can walk abreast for any distance—the gods' gift indeed to those who wage war by ambush! The torrents which in the rains trimble from every declivity to join the violent surges down the valleys, almost all dry up during the open season, when a full water bottle at the start of the day becomes essential.

The valleys stand thick with deciduous jungle and, despite the depredations of a race that might have sprung from Esau, are well stocked with game, among which tiger, bear, monkey and barking deer are common. The hills sweep steeply up from the very stream beds and, except where village cultivation has taken its toll, the jungle rises unbroken with it until at about 4,000 feet it meets the outpost sentinels of the pines to which, above 6,000 feet, it almost completely surrenders. The paths, over which fifteen successive pairs of boots have carried me upward of 6,000 miles, zigzag steeply, sometimes precariously, and at all times apparently endlessly, to the summits of the ridges where, with packs off and sentries out, fifteen minutes of collapse prefaces the downward plunge that wantonly throws away the height so bitterly won.

Two such climbs and descents in the course of a march may bring you at the end of the day to a village not more than twelve miles from your starting point (villages are seldom closer together); but if it has been a march of driving rain with 8,000 feet of climbing and torrents to be waded or rope-hauled across; if the leeches are out in force and your boots have lost their nails; if one of your Levies starts to fall back with malaria and his rifle and equipment have to be shared round; and if on arrival the blanket in your pack is little drier than the clothes on your back, then you'll feel, just the same, that you could not have made another mile.

The officers, of course, were dispersed far and wide over this vast area. You were lucky if you had another within two days march of your own post. In the extreme North Ted Wright went many months without a meeting, while down in the Lungngo sector David Cozens, an erstwhile chartered accountant of the B.O.C. (hardly a jungle training!) became an almost legendary figure so complete was his isolation. He later won a very well deserved M.B.E. for his performance, providing as he did one of the deepest tentacles of information into enemy-occupied Burma, with agents in the Arakan, Kanpetlet and Tilin areas.

It is easy to imagine, in the conditions described, the cynical amusement with which we used to read in our month-old copies of *The Statesman* advertisements from such as "twelve members of a lonely——mess on the borders of Assam appeal for the gift of a piano", or, better still, a railing against a once-weekly change at the only local cinema as a fate to be contended with! Nothing, on the other hand, caused more disgust than the grossly misinformed articles on the Chin Levies that were suffered to appear in print, written for the most part by such as having "penetrated" as far as Corps Headquarters at Imphal had the story "straight off the ice" from a mule company commander just back from twelve hours in Tiddim, and possibly a meal with the Levy Supply Officer there.

The straw to break the camel's back, however, was an article published by our own Government of Burma within a month or two of our third anniversary, according to which regular troops "took the full force of the front line fighting—while the Levies gave every support from the rear. These provided labour for porterage and road and camp building"! Had the writer of the slander shared the lot of a Levy Officer, the only regular troops he would have seen in front of him, and at times behind him, would have been the men of the 33rd Japanese Infantry Division!

It was one of our biggest handicaps that our outposts had to operate without W/T sets for over two years. Had Cozens had a set at this time the commanders of the ill-starred venture in Arakan in 1942-43 would have had ample warning of the move of a Japanese battalion overland from the Irrawaddy through the Kanpetlet hill tracts to Arakan, since Cozens was in touch with the move all

along. In the event the arrival of this battalion on the flank of our forces in Arakan came as a complete surprise, and was a decisive factor in the failure of that campaign. Our trouble was not so much shortage of equipment as an almost complete lack of liaison from India, where ignorance of the area and scope of our operations was profound.

In July 1942 the barely working Levy mechanism was subjected to its first strain. The Japs, who after the Shwegyin battle had made no further offensive move beyond occupying Kalewa some miles upstream on the opposite (i.e., West) bank of the Chindwin, put a company of 150 troops into Kalemyo. With them was a senior officer, one Yamata, who, signing himself (if I remember rightly) "Officer commanding the Nipponese Western Army for attacking the Chin Hills", started sending to us by various ways and means threatening letters setting out the dire measures he was about to undertake against us, and calling on the Chins to revolt against British rule and their Levy Officers. (Some of these letters have been published in a book called "Wingate's Phantom Army"). At the same time the Japs set prices on the heads of Levy and Battalion Officers, in some cases by name.

At the time I was camped in thick jungle near Natchaung, outside the Chin Hills and 15 miles from Ka'emyo, with a force of fifty Levies and the task of covering large convoys of villagers who were coming down daily to clear a dump of several thousand bags of rice and peas that we had brought in situ for the Levy larder. Luckily all but about 400 bags of this had been removed when the first of the threatening missives arrived. I say luckily, because having called together my Levies and read out the letter to them in the assumed spirit of sharing a good joke, half of them then took advantage of darkness and my absence (in an ambush position covering a 'land mine' comprising a five-pound tin of Kraft cheese filled with rubble and explosive) to desert! Needless to say the enthusiasm of the villagers for getting away the remaining bags evaporated, and I was left to abandon them and march the dispirited survivors of my band back into the Hills.

Followed the first of my three visits to Levy H.Q. at Falam in almost as many years, and a lightning move to No. 3 Stockade on the Kalemyo/Fort White road to reinforce the efforts of Norman Kelly and Peter Bankes of the Levies, and Jack ("Wild") Oats (later M.C.) of the Battalion to stop the rot started by the threat of a renewed Japanese advance. We touched bottom when a deputation of the local chiefs presented to Kelly a request to the effect that, since we were too few to be effective and such resistance as we might offer would undoubtedly incur reprisals against their villages, we should remove ourselves to India immediately. They, for their part, would provide every officer with an escort to see him out.

This was a nasty one! Fortunately, however, the Chin provides his own remedy for all occasions of gloom. By slaughtering a couple of mythun (a local breed of cattle, of magnificent proportions but maintained for none but sacrificial purposes) and broaching many pots of zu (the local rice beer, of no mean potency), as many as possible of the Levies were summoned to partake. By dawn, far gone in our cups, we had all so mutually assured ourselves of our tiger-like qualities that the danger was past and the fight was on. In all our subsequent ups and downs that occasion remains for me the "Tattenham Corner" of our history, and we should never have made it without Kelly's influence.

A few days later we produced the first shot from our locker when the bombing of Kalemyo by a squadron of Blenheims provided the Chins with evidence that the forces of the "Asoya" (government) had called a halt somewhere or other.

The occasion was improved by our having been notified of the bombing in advance, so there was a touch of apparent magic in our ability to tell the Levies what to expect and when; while at No. 3 Stockade a lucky spell of fine weather provided a grandstand view of the actual bombing. A repeat performance the next day resulted, unfortunately, in one of the Blenheims crashing near "No. 3". The three wounded members of the crew have reason to remember with gratitude the Levy patrol under an English-speaking ex-schoolmaster which brought them in, since they assumed the approaching Levies to be Japs and were painfully crawling away from their burnt-out plane until hailed in English and brought in on stretchers.

In October came another, and major, piece of self-advertisement—our first issue of rations in five months, and by air at that! The drop took place at Tiddim, and since air supply became henceforth such an integral part of Allied operations in Burma, it is of interest to record (though the claim is open to correction) that this was probably the first drop in Burma on the new familiar pattern. The impression it made on the Chins can better be imagined than described.

Since the inauguration of air supply made possible the obtaining of arms and equipment, it is as well to describe the conditions under which the Levies had been patrolling, raiding and holding ambush positions in the preceding five months of more or less continuous rain. The men of the Burma Rifles nearly all had their arms (the Chin's concept of the prestige conferred by the carrying of a firearm in his own Hills is such that he would be in extremis indeed who got home from worst possible military disaster without it!).

The "A" Levies, as the recruited villagers were called to distinguish them from the regulars, had possibly ten per cent of rifles among them. The rest were armed with flintlocks of fantastic antiquity and history, passed down from father to son for generations, kept in good condition by the Chin's passion for hunting, and now brought out for use against a modern enemy. It is probably a unique boast that I, and other Levy Officers, manned ambush positions against the Japanese in the late war, relying for a fair proportion of our fire power on weapons made before Waterloo! To test out the possibilities of rapid fire with these flintlocks, Peter Bankes and I carried out one day a test which showed that in optimum conditions you could be back at the aim in just under sixty seconds after firing your first shot. To describe one's tactics in these conditions as hit and run is inadequately to stress the "run".

The standard of clothing rivalled that of the arms. Nobody (speaking for my sector) had a change of clothing. Probably nobody owned a hat, shirt, shorts, socks and boots. Gunny bag, with holes cut for arms or legs according as to whether they were doing duty as shirts or shorts, were a common feature. There were practically no capes or groundsheets. There was any amount of rain. In order to clean the rifles and flintlocks a pig had to be bought and killed at regular intervals and the fat issued in lieu of oil. In these conditions the Levies regularly patrolled distances that involved sleeping in the jungle with the leeches for company. On return to Sector H.Q. my "drill" used to be to get every man stripped naked round a large fire until his clothes had dried, drinking the while a mug of hot water, since at this stage there was no tea, milk or sugar. On one such occasion one of my Levies who started the day a fit man died of exposure before reaching camp in conditions that had me badly scared on account of my own skin.

October 1942 also saw the first probe into the Hills by the Japs. Haka was the Zone thus honoured, and the enemy force was reckoned to number nearly

500. James, with less than a tenth of this number, got the information in good time, thanks to his Intelligence network, and was into an ambush position some miles forward of his camp before the Japs arrived. The latter, either because their information was inaccurate or because they counted on the Levies throwing in their hand in the face of such numbers, came up the road like a football crowd, without scouts or any apparent precautions, and making any amount of noise. They were ambushed at short range at a point where the road crosses a narrow saddle linking two hills. The slopes on either side of the road were steep in any case, but in addition they had been thickly sown with small and very sharp bamboo stakes (panjies) so that anybody trying to escape down them would be taken care of. The fire power included a Bren in a perfect position of enfilade, and about fifty casualties were inflicted in a few minutes.

In accordance with their role the Levies withdrew in the face of counterfire as soon as the Japs had recovered from the surprise, but, despite wild rumours for several days that the Japs had switched over to another track and were still moving on Haka (where there was great consternation in consequence!), it seems certain now that they called off their venture at the scene of the ambush. This action had results vital far beyond the infliction of heavy casualties because, as in the Tiddim Zone at the same period, morale was at so low an ebb that patrolling was at times limited by the numbers of Levies who could be cajoled into going out! As soon, however, as it was generally realized that a very large force of an "invincible" enemy had been sent packing by a band of untrained villagers, tails went up all round and the Levies were starting to find themselves.

Christmas Eve brought me my first success in the shape of a raid on the Jap-occupied village of Tahan near Kalemyo, carried out in conjunction with "Wild" Oats of the Battalion and a platoon of his chaps. We pulled off a complete surprise for, a single sentry excepted, not a Jap in the place was armed when we opened up on them. Here again we pulled out as soon as they started to get on terms with us, only to be shot at by a patrolling Lysander on our way home. Luckily it did us no more harm than the Japs had done. They were later reported as having cremated twelve dead that night.

A few days later Peter Bankes carried out a splendid night raid on the village of Nansaungpu, also near Kalemyo. He raced his platoon, armed with bamboo torches, down the track through the village, setting fire to the houses as he went: then, taking up a position at the end of the village, he shot up the Japs as they left the burning houses. He succeeded in taking alive what would have, been our first Jap prisoner, but unfortunately the man was shot on the way back to camp in an attempt to escape. The three actions thus described cost us one wounded man in casualties.

Now the Chin Hills were coming into the news. In January 1943 a company of the 5th Royal Gurkha Rifles arrived in the Tiddim Zone as advance party to their Battalion and by the end of May, to their Brigade. At the same time Haswell relinquished his command of the Levies in order to take over that of the Chin Hills Area, a new appointment. He was succeeded in the command of the Levies by Lieut.-Colonel F. O'N. Ford, another officer known to many of us, and popularly to many more in pre-war Burma as "The Assassin". He was a most active individual, and during his stay became known to a lot of the Levies in their outposts. At this time, also, the Civil Zone commanders were succeeded by military officers, Carey and myself, as with the prospect of closer contact with the Army, our "set up" hitherto was clearly to raise difficulties.

The hot weather of March/May 1943 had, militarily, all the properties of a gathering storm. Jap strength in the Kalewa/Kalemyo area increased considerably, and reports of stores moving up the Chindwin were persistent. Towards the end of May, a day or two before the rains broke, they launched their expected attack against No. 3 Stockade in battalion strength and occupied it after driving out the two companies of the 5th Gurkhas and three platoons of Levies, under Peter Bankes, which had held it. From this point on, operations in the Tiddim Zone became primarily a military responsibility, though until the Jap offensive in March 1944, which overran the countryside as far as Imphal in India, the Levies, notably under Jimmy Carpenter and David Mitchell, continued to maintain a precarious hold on their posts to South and North of the lost "No. 3" and to be the main source of information for the regular forces, which increased gradually to Division strength.

Towards the end of that same May, "The Assassin", who was a Kachin rather than a Chin expert, was transferred to the command of the Kachin Levies, who were then operating North of Myitkyina in the Fort Hertz/Sumprabum areas. His successor was Lieut,-Colonel L. B. ("Cultivated") Oatts of the H. L. I. (an apposite touch this, since he was soon to find his command decidedly Highland, Light and Infantry!). Like his predecessors he had some previous experience of Burma, but it was hardly an auspicious time to take over command of the As the months previous to his arrival had seen an influx of much new officer blood, it is of interest in the light of their diverse peacetime occupations to introduce some of them: J. H. Gemmell (later M.C.), a tea planter from Assam; Dick Rees (later M.C.), an embryo physical training instructor from Wales; George Lewis, a petroleum geologist; David Mitchell, an Oxford don; J. B. Watson, a motor car salesman; Sam Cope, Dick Lewin and Bryan Smyth, Burma teak "wallahs"; Willie Grieve, a merchant from China; "Joe" Byrne, a Shan adopted in infancy by Irish parents; Pat Rathborn, of the Burma Civil Service and an exrunning blue; Ian Hills, from an office in Scotland; and Bernard Johnstone, a Rangoon lawyer (later to die of blackwater on the Chindwin).

Came for me in June 1943 six weeks leave in India which, with how much exaggeration I don't know, I nevertheless felt saved my sanity. On my return to the Hills I found, and never regretted in the light of the deteriorating state of affairs in the Tiddim Zone, that Rupert Carey and I had exchanged pitches and that I was bound for Haka. Rupert was already in Tiddim with Peter Bankes and Philip Barton, of the Burma Frontier Service who, without military rank, had rendered and was further to render yeoman service in the cause of the Levies. We had a memorable party before I moved on, but it was the last time I saw Peter alive, for a few months later, when he himself was newly back from leave, he was tragically murdered by a renegade among his own men, who then deserted to the enemy-occupied valley.

To the credit of the Chins be it said that their sustained loyalty and friendliness towards us placed an act of this sort right outside the bounds of what one imagined as credible: but it makes his loss no less a tragedy. Peter was a giant of a man, and had been a pillar of the Oxford boat for three years before he came out to Burma, where I had only once met him in pre-Levy days. In the Hills we saw a lot of each other in a variety of circumstances, and I had come to count him a friend of the greatest worth. A son was born to his wife in India some months after his death; nor did he live to know that his raid on Nansaungpu had won him the M. C.

The second instalment of his article will appear in our next issue.

### IS SCIENTIFIC SELECTION SUCCESSFUL?

By LIEUT.-COLONEL RAJENDRA SINGH.

THE answer to this problem must be given in relationship with the over all object of NATIONALISATION or INDIANISATION of the armed forces.

After all, what's in a name? Nothing; if one does not understand it or does not care to find out the significance. To some "Nationalisation" and "Indianisation" would mean one and the same thing, while to others the two words may mean nothing because they are not interested. Those who are interested must appreciate the difference between the two conversions: one deals with the body and its spirit while the other only with its part. This change in nomenclature, if it is not to be a change in name, is in the spirit of the changes now taking place in all spheres of political life of this country.

Leaders of all parties and shades of opinion have declared that India needs and must have powerful Armed Forces to defend her freedom. The non-violence of the Gandhian type is a political weapon for home consumption. The Armed Forces, if they have to achieve their purpose, must be efficient and ready like a sharp and powerful weapon. The State must lay down the policy and the Forces must carry it out. In the shape of things to come, the National Army of India must be primarily for the defence of that country.

What is to be the basis of these Forces? Have we to build on foundations which already exist or to start from the beginning? The answer depends mainly on the process by which India attains her freedom. If political power on transfer is carried on according to the old system, the present Forces must form the nucleus of the Army of the future. Even the Red Army after the revolution was based on the foundations of the Czarist Army. According to this process nationalisation will only mean the conversion of the spirit.

#### NATIONALISATION

The spirit of the Army emanates from the State. Some confuse this spirit with the political and patriotic motives of the individual. This is wrong. The Forces as an instrument should be beyond politics. The individuals may be politically conscious and aware of their patriotic duty. Those who want to introduce politics and communalism will have only themselves to blame if they find the sword blunt and corroded when they draw it for action.

Political influence in the Forces has never helped any State in the achievement of its aim—the advancement of the country. It has always proved to the contrary. "Beneath all the disorders that become more and more frequent among the soldiers the commander can discern the hands of politicians, against whom he can obtain no redress." Thus wrote Pache, the French Minister of War to the Prime Minister when many units mutinied and went over to the Austrians, resulting in the downfall of France.

The Russians also toyed with the idea of Political Commissars in the units. There were some good ones who may have infused the correct spirit amongst the ranks, but mostly they exploited their position and possibly terrorised the military commanders, assuming control of operations without accepting responsibility. After the debacle in Finland the Russians learnt their lesson and did away with this interference.

Some consider that the spirit of the Forces depends on the motives of the individual. This may be true to some extent, but the corporate spirit of the Army must be based on discipline, morale and efficiency. Some do not understand the functions of the Forces, and consider that as a political instrument they should be used in the attainment of freedom. It is only during a revolution, when the authority of the Government is broken, that the indisciplined army takes political sides.

Armed forces must always be prepared for sacrifices. The Indian Army fought for certain principles, made sacrifices for their preservation, and added an illustrious halo to the glory of Indian arms. One thing it did not do. It did not become rich at the expense of the sacrifices of others and then sling mud on them. The Caravan passes on. The world knows and respects the valour of the Indian soldier. He has been India's best ambassador. If freedom to India comes through peaceful means, India has to thank the Indian Army, which made it possible. A military soldier is not judged by his political fervour, personal motives or party leanings but by his military qualities.

In India we have first-class fighting material and its proper use in future will depend on the attitude of the political leaders of to-day. The germs of indiscipline once sown are difficult to eradicate. They keep on spreading. To-day mutiny may be for freedom, to-morrow that freedom may take the shape of Pakistan and later on the achievement of a particular "ISM". The criticism of the Forces is only a passing phase, and once the political situation is stabilised the very critics will become its greatest admirers. We should not worry about admiration, but for the creation of efficient Armed Forces.

The efficiency of the Army depends on the quality of its officers and the discipline of its ranks. They must be permeated with toughness, high sense of duty and morale. Many people confuse motives with morale. While the first is generally personal, the latter is collective. Is high morale based on the virtue of the cause? Not exactly.

The Rajputs fought as well for their freedom against the Muslim invaders as under them. Cromwell's Ironsides fought as well as the British troops in Dunkirk. Napoleon's Imperial Army fought for foreign conquests with the same efficiency as the Frenchmen of the Revolutionary War. did for liberty, fraternity and equality. The high quality of an army does not depend on momentary impulses, but on something fundamental. The men must be imbued with the spirit to fight till the last, like the heroes of "Saraghari". This inward spiritual urge must be an inherent quality born out of tradition, loyalty and discipling and not on propaganda or political dogma, which is bound to waver according to the fortunes of the political party. The introduction of controversial theories will lessen the faith of the soldier in himself and his leaders. The Army will either become a doubtful entity or a political machine. Both are undesirable.

When our system is overhauled or reconstructed we must not forget the value of tradition. The soldier must have something to fall back upon. The pride of association with a great past is the bed-rock of tattered battalions when they are faced with heavy odds. Every unit is proud of a gallant record and this should be carried forward in the new form. It will give the soldier the inspiration that he desires to remain steadfast.

Field Marshal Lord Wavell in his article "The Good Soldier" said: "The essential qualities remain constant. When writing of Generals I put robustness as the first quality. Similarly for the private soldier I rate toughness, endurance, as the prime requirements." The Indian soldier has both these qualities, partly

Digitized by GOOSIC

erited and partly produced by training. The inner core of the Indian masses very strong; it can stand the greatest hardship. "Men and soldiers are conversele terms" says Von der Goltz. The conversion depends on the officers.

"The quality of an Army is the quality of its officers," said Field Marshal chinleck.... Not only the quality but the control of the Forces rests in their nds. The politicians have always been critical of this control, because it is in hands of British officers. They consider their replacement as the panacea all ills. This has been termed Indianisation.

#### INDIANISATION

The problem has two main aspects, the quantity and quality of the Indian icers. The politicians have always demanded accleration, while those in control we expressed their inability to accelerate owing to the paucity of adidates with quality. Both these requirements have essential importance dare relative.

Indianised forces will require about 12,000 officers. It will require a yearly rnover of more than 600 to replace only the wastages. If the initial requireent is spread over a period of time, the recurring demand must correspondingly crease and will be in the neighbourhood of 1,000. The quantity presents many oblems. The first is the replacement of senior officers. Though merit should we nothing to do with seniority, we cannot ignore the fact that to a great extent depends on experience, which is the result of circumstances and time.

The great Generals who led the French Republican forces from 1793, had early all risen to commander's rank at one bound. "Jourdan, who commanded battalion in 1792, was thirty-two when Fleurus was fought. Pichegru, who exted as an N.C.O., was thirty-three at the time of Wissembourgh. Marceau, ho was a corporal in a line regiment at the beginning of the campaign, commanda a division when he met his death at the age of twenty-seven. Moreau, a stary's clerk, was commanding an army when he was thirty-three, while Eleber, a architect in peacetime was thirty-nine when he commanded a division." If tenchmen did it Indians can do it. They have done it in the past, and given the circumstances they will do it again.

Without going into the abstract, we will accept the belief that for peacetime omotion both merit and seniority are essential. The Indians of fair seniority ad proved merit should be given accelerated promotion. This will of course mean a retirement of those senior officers who have reached the age limit, the reduction of age limit for promotion, and the passing over of some British officers to for inefficiency but in the interest of Indianisation.

The stabilisation of the junior officers is the more serious problem, because not only effects the present but the immediate future. The greater the number junior Indian officers the better would be the selection for the senior ranks. India to-day we have the material. It may not be all first class but "to build e edifice, a certain number of inferior matter, or even rubbish, has to be mixed the finest material in the country. War has the virtue of ennobling even the est" says General De Gaulle.

But our Selection Boards even seem to mistrust the officers who have en through fire and the worst conditions of war. It seems ironical that we have ve to select men for the jobs in which they have already proved successful,

This could only be necessary if there was more supply than demand, as in England. The same solutions cannot be applied in two diametrically opposite circumstances.

The procurement of new officers to maintain the quota for the Forces is essential. It has two aspects, to complete the present requirements and to maintain a constant flow of good quality cand dates. The general criticism has been that under the pretext of quality we have deliberately ignored the quantity. The opposite argument that quality is paramount and that the "right type" of candidates are not coming forward has been constantly voiced since the inception of Indianisation. What is meant by the right type? What are the criteria of the right type? Who decides this?

The crucial question is what constitutes the right type. Many books have been written about this subject, but none have yet evolved a formula by which success can be predetermined. Nothing succeeds like success; therefore the right type should make a successful officer. What is a successful officer? Success has many forms and must also be comparative. Unless we are looking for supermen, who would be successful in whatever they touch, we must determine that "certain" officer who makes the average, or better, who is not a failure. Even then it remains a vague definition, because so much depends on circumstances, which are difficult to predict. In a limited way we can determine the relative value of candidates in relation to a certain average.

The question of supply and demand must be dealt simultaneously. It can be solved by:

- (a) the selection of those who have the quality,
- (b) training of those who can make the standard,
- (c) procurement of fresh blood.

The first two envisage the selection from the available material, and the last from what can be created and made available in future. All these problems must be solved by a composite Department which will be responsible for both quantity and quality. Separate the two, and the quantity will suffer. It will be like the Finance Department who only worry about the finance and not the result. "We want the best officers for the Regular forces. We are not interested in numbers," said the President of a Selection Board. The public is interested in the result and not on the relative merits of doctrines.

### SELECTION OF OFFICERS

General Moore in his illuminating article\* "Scientific Selection or Personal Prejudice" says that there are only two forms of selection: (i) examination and personal interview, and (ii) scientific selection. The object of both the systems must remain the same, the selection of the "certain" number of candidates of a "certain" type from the given mass of a "certain" quality. All the three "certains" are interrelated. If the mass is not available, the selection must be limited, and if the quality is undefined the quantity will suffer. Thus the selection produces—

- (a) the question of numbers,
- (b) the maintenance of quality,
- (c) the creation of mass.

We have already dealt with the quantity. The quality is judged by the G.H.O. Selection Boards. It has to be further divided into two parts, the selection

<sup>\*</sup>April, 1946 issue of this "Journal".



of Emergency Commissioned officers for permanent commission and the selection of the new blood.

The greater the number of candidates the better would be the selection, for there will be more to pick from. If the numbers are not forthcoming the mass must be created. To quote General Moore: "In England, first experiments in Army Selection started in 1941. By then, all traditional sources of officer material had dried up; about 20,000 more officers were required in the next twelve months." They were produced. The Selection Boards were the means and not an end.

In India for some unknown reason the process was reversed. To quote General Moore again: "By 1943, India had learnt how ill-advised interview boards had been in their selection of officers, by the high rate of failures among the Emergency Commissioned officers." It was, as General Moore admits, to eliminate the failures and not to increase the number of Indian officers that the Selection Boards were started in India.

To increase the quantity and to maintain the quality we must have greater mass. Here again arise two problems: (i) there may be a mass but not of good quality, (ii) the elements may not be available to form the mass. The first requires the improvement of quality in a certain body, while the other deals with its creation. It will take a long time to produce either. I will deal with these problems jointly in "The means to get better candidates"; here I will confine myself to the selection of candidates from the available mass.

### G. H. Q. SELECTION BOARDS

This is not a criticism of the system but a review in relationship with the above observations. "The task of the G. H. Q. Selection Boards is to collect evidence about a candidate's past and present performance, and to review its relevance towards predicting his future potentiality as an officer", says General Moore. The one ambiguous statement: "prediction of future potentiality" requires clarification. No system has yet been invented which can be called scientific and which can prove by any law of equation that a certain type of person will always succeed. After all, our present system is only in its infancy, and we cannot claim that it has succeeded already. The experience may prove to the contrary. Even great horse-race owners cannot claim complete success for their system of selection,—and selection of thoroughbreds is far more advanced than the selection of human beings. The race-horse is trained from the cradle to be successful in the future, but often loses to an outsider.

If we base our judgment only on the analysis of the past and present event it is bound to be arbitrary, because the interpretation of the past and the value of the present are both dependent on non-recurring contingencies. The prediction of the future can only be for a limited period, and that also depends on chance. When we back a horse we not only see the form of the horse but also of the rider. Perhaps the Selection Boards do not trust the senior officers, who after all are going to run the show. There is already a great deal of controversy about who is the better judge of an officer potentiality—the commanding officer who has known the officer for years, or the Selection Boards who know them for three days. I am not going to dabble in this controversy, but must point out that the present system of selection is only an art and can be improved.

The quality of an art depends on the quality of the artist, and that rests on his training, experience, merit and success. There lies the weakness of the

Selection Boards. Not many members of these Selection Boards can by any stretch of imagination be called "The artists of selection". While General Moore condemns personal prejudices in the selection of the candidates, he is silent about the selection of the members of the boards who are going to select them.

"The members of the board submerge their personality" said an enthusiastic member of the board. How many can do that? The introduction of the personality of the selector invariably brings in the question of personal prejudices. "But we have five opinions against one" persisted the young Group Testing Officer. Quite true, but it depends on their value. The candidate is examined, observed or tested by four members of this Board, the President or the Vice-President, the G.T.O., the Psychologist and the Psychiatrist. We will consider the last two first because they are the specialists, and it is claimed that their method is scientific.

To be specialists they must not only have considerable theoretical experience of the art or science, but must have some practical success. General Moore admits that "visiting boards from the War Office are without Psychiatrists or Psychologists, because men of the required calibre and experience are not forthcoming." If we do not have good specialists in India, the opinion of the two members is not worth their salt, and the board is reduced to two personalities.

Only one of those can claim to have better experience and judgment than the Commanding Officer, that is the President or the Vice-President. He may have considerable experience of peace and wartime soldiering, and also know something about the influences of training and circumstances on the future potentiality. The G.T.O. is generally very young and has only a limited experience. One opinion is as good as the other, and for the grant of permanent commissions the Boards should only examine those E.C.Os who have either been graded doubtful, or not recommended by their Commanding Officers.

For the selection of new candidates the Boards require considerable improvement in their set-up and technique. It is not possible here to go into the details, but I will only point out a few.

(i) The selection of officers for the Selection Boards.—The President must be responsible for both quantity and quality. He should preferably be an Indian with active service and training experience.

The Vice-President should be of the same calibre, as he has to deputise for the President. Only one of the above two must interview the candidates, the other acting as an impartial "Speaker" to give his final ruling after hearing the arguments of all the members.

The Group Testing Officers must be regular officers with peace, war and training experience.

The Psychologists and Psychiatrists must be expert, and if not available be replaced by two other senior members. It is more dangerous to have a quack than not to have one at all.

(ii) Personal prejudices of the selectors must be removed.—These are difficult to eradicate, because human beings will always remain human beings. But if four members of the Board work independently and record their individual opinions, the personal prejudices of one will be counterbalanced by the other.

Every member of the Board must test the candidate independently, and his views should have equal value when compared with the other.

No member of the Board should know about the identity of the person or to what creed or religion he belongs (this, of course, may be impossible for the Sikhs). The candidate should be known by a code letter.

For each test the candidate must have a different number. The key of the code should be kept by the "Speaker", who should correlate the gradings given by different members of the Board.

- (iii) The adoption of the system to suit conditions:
- (a) The removal of the fear of examination.
- (b) Variation of the intelligence tests.
- (c) Spacing of the written tests over a period of time.
- (d) Improvement of group testing. It is true that "in every social group, each member tends to find his own appropriate level and special position in the group," and also that "every coherent group does, inevitably, throw up a leader or leaders." The most important factor in their evolution is the factor of time.
- (e) At present a group of 8-10 candidates is taken by one G.T.O. He puts the group through six tests. He has not only to form his opinion about an individual, but also his relationship with the other members. He has to compare this performance with the average at the back of his mind. I will not discuss the average on which he is working, but would point out that in addition to the above jobs he has to look for the participation, dominance, acceptibility and competence of the candidates. Each of these qualities wants careful watching and recording. The G.T.O. has neither the time nor the scientific technique to observe and record observations. This can be worked out.

I want to emphasise again that the "Selection Boards" are the best means of selection according to present requirements but they are the means and not the end. And they can be improved. They will not be criticised so vehemently if they produce the goods. For this they want suitable candidates.

#### THE MEANS TO GET BETTER CANDIDATES

Either good candidates are available and are not coming forward, or they are not available in the market. If the first assumption is the difficulty, we must deal with the means to attract these candidates; if the second assumption is correct, we must create them.

There are some handicaps which may be keeping back candidates of the right calibre. The most important is the attitude of parents. They have fallacious ideas about the Armed Forces. They visualise innumerable hardships for their children, and consider them "lost" once they join the Army. Young men with patriotic motives do not come forward to join the Forces; they consider the army mercenary. But most of them have no idea of Army life, and consider it either an easy "get-away" from studies, or a means of cheap "show off."

To remove these impressions a "publicity body" should be formed. The present propaganda requires new life and orientation. We must make a direct approach to the youth on patriotic motives. They may break away from tradition and force the hands of the parents.

Referring back to the French Army, which has been through many vicissitudes of life, we find how great were their efforts to discover and explore new fields for leaders. "The king employed the same empirical methods in his choice of his officers. The nobility had a taste for and the tradition of war. Its members were accustomed by social circumstances to command. The custom whereby the family property and responsibilities passed to the eldest son tended to drive the younger sons into the army." This was Louis XIV, but when Napoleon wanted more officers for his Imperial Army "the Emperor founded schools like Fountainebleau, Saint-Cyr, Metz and Chalons," ("France and her Army").

Necessity is the mother of invention. Though we have long felt the need of a system by which better candidates should be produced we have never made its realisation possible. If the future of the person depends on his past and present, it is necessary for us to arrange that circumstances and conditions for good development are available in the present. In this, upbringing and

education are the most important.

The Indian National War Memorial Academy will be a milestone in the solution of this problem, but we will require many feeder institutions to keep up the flow into the Academy. We require an overhaul of the present system of training and education in existing schools, and the creation of others.

To have a clear perspective of the whole problem it is essential that all aspects should be dealt with by one single branch in G.H.Q. Nationalisation or Indianisation of the Indian Armed Forces will remain a burning problem until

it is tackled with determination and foresight.

# SCIENTIFIC (?) SELECTION

## By "LICTOR."

DURING the 1914-1918 war thousands and thousands of civilians joined the Army, either voluntarily or compulsorily. Many found in the Army much of which they were critical. However, they performed their duties to the best of their abilities (in most cases at any rate), and returned to civil life at the end of the war.

The years between World War I and World War II saw much criticism of those who had served in the former. They were often represented as fools, adulterers, place-seekers and goodness knows what. This kind of criticism was easy to sell in the 1920s, when the public mentality appeared to have sunk to that of a child of fifteen. Since then there has been a considerable awakening, but some doctrines current in those years remain unassailed. One is that business men in civil life are superior in ability and intelligence to those who made the Army their profession. A moment's reflection will show the foolishness of this idea. During the Industrial Revolution Britain gained a considerable lead over all other countries. It was due to two reasons. One was that the new inventions which made the economic revolution possible were British. For an unimaginative people the British are astoundingly good inventors—a fact repeatedly demonstrated in 1939-45.

The second reason was that the Industrial Revolution coincided with great Imperial advances, and the businessman was, under the protection of the forces of the Crown, able to find new, untapped and safe markets for the sale of the

A letter on the subject of Selection Boards is included in our "Letter to the Editor" feature on page 472.



goods which the inventor had shown him how to produce. Most markets of the world were his. The Fighting Services kept him and his commerce free during the Napoleonic wars, and he flourished like the green bay tree, or the modern American.

In due course competitors arose in other countries. They used the same machinery as he did, and used better methods of salesmanship and marketing. It was a problem for the British businessman. The scientist, appalled at the world results of the Industrial Revolution, had turned his attention to other inventions. The Fighting Services could scarcely be expected to peddle socks and things about the place, though the Navy was on occasion used as a sea-faring sandwich-man. The businessman had to solve this one for himself, and he failed. He still, however, kept the prestige which others had made for him.

In any democracy it is only necessary to announce with pomposity and repetition that anything flattering to Demos is a fact to have it enthusiastically accepted. For example, about four years ago the then Vice-President of the U.S.A. finding himself in a world completely dominated by Churchill, Roosevelt, Stalin, Hitler, Mussolini and a narrow Japanese military oligarchy made the astonishing announcement that this was the century of the common man. The blind led the blind and the phrase gained currency all over the world. So, then, did the businessman, unable any longer to pretend that he was in any way superior to those of other nations, take comfort in trumpeting his superiority to the military mind.

The military mind is frequently regarded as being impervious to new ideas. True, many a military commander has been as reluctant to adopt new methods as, say, a cotton manufacturer has been to instal new machinery. But one fact that must impress any student of military history is that the military mind is about as quick as any other to seize on a new idea, but frequently selects the wrong one. So, of course, does the civil mind.

In both cases the mistake arises through not asking the question: "What am I trying to do?", or, in the stilted jargon of the Training Manuals, not having made a correct appreciation. An outstanding case of this was to be seen in the article in the April issue entitled: "Selection or Personal Prejudice." The article sought to defend the present system of selecting Regular officers by the various interviewing boards located in India—a system based on methods used by businessmen in selecting their employees.

It admitted that selection was unpopular. It listed the chief critics as:
(a) Candidates who have been given low gradings and their relations; (b) C. Os who have had their pet officers turned down; (c) those who seek privilege through nepotism or hereditary right; and (d) that large band of officers who do not understand what scientific selection means and are too busy to study it.

- (a) is probably right enough,
- (b) requires modification, which I will explain later.
- (c) I have never met any, so cannot say.
- (d) I have never met a Brigadier or above who adversely criticised these Boards.

Let us examine (b) more closely. As far as I have been able to ascertain, at least 80 per cent. of C.Os are of opinion that the gradings produced by the Boards have little relation to the suitability of an officer for a Regular Commission. This is not only because, in the airy words of the article, "they have had their pet officers turned down." This they wouldn't mind, if they thought the

standard was being kept high. What does irk them is that, while these officers are not accepted, others who are only moderate and some who are downright bad are accepted. This, I repeat, is not my criticism alone; I believe it will be found to be the criticism of almost every serving C.O.

Suppose a number of parents—say about 600—each sent a child to a hospital. Suppose that each of those children, on discharge, appeared to its parents to be far more ill than it was on admission. Would they, knowing that other parent's children had had similar experiences, and a number had died, accept the explanation: "You are not a doctor. You know nothing about it. The child has been scientifically treated. The fact that it came here with a sprained ankle and has been discharged with both legs amputated is immaterial." Of course they wouldn't. They would sue for damages, and they would get them. The hospital would have to adopt other methods or shut down.

Much is made of the fact that senior officers are always biassed. They like a man who says a lot, says nothing; who has a strong personality, or a weak one, according to how much talking they want to do themselves. In fact, it appears that a C.O. judges an officer on almost everything except his work.

Let me say how a Battalion C.O. judges officers for these reports. He has known the officer for, on an average, two years, during which time the Battalion may have been in action or it may not. If it has, he has seen the officer lead men in the field. Operations provide all the test of intelligence that fitting coloured bricks together does—even if it is only in finding a dry place to sleep. Participation—dominance—acceptibility—competence—are none of these things assessable by the manner in which an officer conducts himself in operations?

Suppose the Battalion has not been on operations. The officer has probably often had orders like this: "The 205th Pinkipanis are off to morrow morning. We've got to take over the Fort from them by 14.00 hours to-day. Your Company and two platoons of 'D' will go." The preparations for the move are almost an exact parallel to the Board's test; and they don't just happen for three days. The C.O. has been watching the officer at this kind of thing for two years.

Commanding Officers have seen tests of this nature set to his officers time and again. But the writer of the article quoted above denies that C.Os are competent to assess intelligence and personality. Unless he is unfit for command, he most certainly can assess these qualities. And the reason for his being able to do so brings us to the basic error of the Selection Boards.

These Boards use methods tried in civil life. I have already attempted to show the folly of imagining that anything is necessarily efficient because it is accepted by a businessman. It may be, and often is, quite the reverse; but even if it is not, the last thing we should do in the Army is to select officers as though we were selecting businessmen.

Business houses want men who are good at "selling themselves." In the Army there is nobody we require less than the man who can "sell himself" to his superiors (in this case, the Board). I won't elaborate that—there can be no Army officer of experience who doesn't know what I mean and who can't think of examples. At a Board in the Middle East an I.A.C. Commanding Officer said: "Suppose you get a fellow not much good as an officer, who's clever enough to bluff his way to an 'A' through all this?" and he was told: "In that case he could bluff his way up to the highest ranks and that's all you want." Of course, it's the last thing you want. A man rising on stepping-stones of other's dead selves is a very cancer in the body military. If we have too many, that body will succumb.

Every thinking officer who hasn't forgotten what happens in a unit must have observed that very few of his fellows conduct themselves among officers as they do with the men. The first-class leader of troops often sits dumb among his fellows. The man who sparkles and corruscates in the Mess is often useless in getting a job done by the troops. In fact, this is the rule rather than the exception. Yet the Board, while trying to test thoroughly the candidate's powers of working with other officers—his equals—makes no attempt at all to assess his capabilities of supervising and leading subordinates.

To supervise and lead his subordinates is the whole of an officer's job. It is what he is there for. It is necessary to employ a certain proportion of men with military and general education to provide an organisation to maintain and co-ordinate the actions of individual units composed of troops supervised and led by officers. This organisation is called the Staff, and most of its higher branches can best be manned by trained Army Officers. Necessary though the Staff is, however, those who form it have, temporarily, given up the status of an officer, which is that of leader and commander of men. In selecting our officers, we must select those suitable for regimental work.

We can select the Staff Officers from those later. We shall get enough who are suitable. The Board, if it selects anything at all, selects potential Staff Officers and not great captains (or small ones, either). But does it even select good Staff Officers?

The article from which I have quoted says: "The Matrix test is probably the most proven test we have got, results having been assessed on over 2,000,000 British and Indian soldiers." The test has probably been administered to these soldiers and they have been graded, but who proved that the results were correct, and how did they do it? I don't dispute that this is a good test. I merely ask how the fact has been proved. The article does give an explanation of how marks were allotted for the test, but that is all.

The Board is referred to as consisting of highly trained observers. The Psychiatrist and the Pyschologist are highly trained medical men. Their training is indisputable, and as I hate unnecessary grumbling I will only point out that usually in the medical profession the scientific truths of to-day are the fallacies of twenty years hence.

But what about the rest of the Board? Who trained them, and when, and where? I observe that courses (I do not know their syllabus or length) for G.T.Os are to be started at Meerut, but who has done it for the last two and a half years?

I would especially join issue with the author of the article on one matter. He refers to "the President, a Regular officer with thirty or more years' experience of the Army". With effect from 21st March, 1946, an officer was appointed President of one Board. His date of first commission was 27th August, 1931. He was a K.C.I.O. who had been to Sandhurst, and at the time he was commissioned K.C.I.Os got six months' ante-date for the time they lost getting to England after the examination. The officer thus had, at that time, about 14½ years' service. He had also, up to that time, not had the privilege of having himself commanded a Battalion. I quote from the article again: "It is therefore imperative that the President should have great experience, detailed knowledge of young officers....." That is one part of the article which is quite unassailable.

So far, this article has consisted entirely of destructive criticism, for I honestly believe that these Boards to be in a fair way to destroying so much that has been built up in the Indian Army over so many years. A stupid, conscientious officer in an Indian Battalion (or a French, Polish, American, British or Dutch one) is worth every "flash Alf" who ever was pupped. We want some officers with brains, but we want more who'll do what they're....well told under the worst possible conditions, and—of far more importance—will do it from a sense of duty and not with the idea of getting on, or with the idea of satisfying the Board.

Here, to end, are two constructive pieces of criticism. Questionnaires are very popular these days. Let every C.O. be asked. "Do you feel that the actions of these Boards been such as to increase, decrease, or keep level the efficiency of your Battalion in the future?"

Let us choose officers in this manner: every C.O. and Brigadier shall grade them 1, 2, 3 or 4. The candidates shall go, in the same capacity, to another unit, where the C.O. and Brigadier shall grade them again. Then if the new average grading varies from the first by more than one, let the process be repeated in a third unit, and the final grading be on the average of the three. But if they do not so vary—they probably won't—let the final grading be made on the average of the first two.

\*As this Journal is published quarterly, we felt it only fair to General Moore to draw his attention to this pargraph. He writes:

"When I wrote the article 'Selection or Personal Prejudice' it was a fact that all Presidents of Selection Boards had over thirty years' service. On my appointment as M.A. to the I.S.F., however, certain temporary appointments had to be made, and I can only conclude that the instance quoted in the paragraph was one of them. It was, however, only an acting appointment.

"Officers will, however, appreciate that the Indian Army is destined to become the national Army of India, commanded by Indians and officered by Indians. It is both logical and desirable that the choice of its officers should fall as quickly as possible (having due regard to efficiency) on Indians, and though in the early days of Selection Boards the Presidents could only be British officers, because they were the only ones with thirty years' service, it has since been deemed advisable that the responsibility of conducting these Boards should fall in greater measure on K.C.I.Os of pre-war experience. Such a responsibility, as that of President of a Selection Board, demands great care and judgment, which I am sure those few officers who have as yet had the privilege of being so appointed will exercise to the best of their skill and ability".

# 26th Indian Division Reunion Society

Arrangements have been made with the Normandie Hotel, Knightsbridge, London, S.W. 1 for the use of their premises as a 26th Indian Division Reunion centre. An address book will be kept at the Reception Desk.

The Hon. Secretary of the Divisional Reunion Society is Lieut.-Colonel B. E. Greene, M.C., c/o Lloyds Bank, Kingsway, London, W.C. 2, or at 112, Stratford Court, Stratford Road, London, W. 1.

### OH! TO BE IN POONA-

By "Mouse."

DURING the big slump in the early thirties I happened to be a member of the Committee of the U.S.I. I was asked by some officers who were about to retire to procure some current information regarding conditions in England, the cost of living, houses, education and such like domestic matters. So I wrote to "Mauser", the author of the invaluable book, "How to live in England on a Pension". "Mauser" sent a charming reply expressing his inability to produce an article owing to his high charges which, he did not think, the U.S.I. could afford, and the matter was dropped. Such inhibitions do not worry me.

The present situation is analogous. There are many officers in India who are about to disappear into a retirement delayed by the war, and many of them are wondering and worrying how they will procure a house, furnish it when procured, and how far their pensions will go in post-war England. Mauser's book, so far as I can remember it without a copy for reference, assumed that the pensioner was A.I. in health, married, with a "ration" of two children of school-going age, in possession of at least £2,000 fluid capital and finally, blessed with a Chartered Accountant's addiction to strong figures.

Assuming these average entanglements Mauser took one by the hand through the labyrinth of selecting, surveying and purchasing a comfortable detached residence (with or without the help of a Building Society); the jungle of pre-war Income Tax; the puddles of local rates and taxes; heating, lighting and watering; cooks, food and bathwater; schools, travelling and dentist's bills; recreation, depreciation, clothing and the daily newspaper. It was a masterly survey of expenditure, both major and incidental, which consumed utterly the pension of £800 of every retired full Colonel at a grim period in English history when Income Tax was, I think, 4/- in the £.

The snag in this analysis, which Mauser proved with engaging skill, was that £800 p.a. was not enough. To possess and maintain such a modest dwelling, such an industrious wife and two such healthy and intelligent children, a teetotal and non-smoking Colonel would require a further £300-400 income. The author then gave practical details of how this figure could be raised by farming, with particular reference to apple-growing. It is an excellent book still procurable in some libraries in India, and well worth studying if only for its nostalgic and tender memories.

Since that terrible slump the only item in a retired officer's budget which has not increased by alarming proportions is his pension. That remains as immovable as some officers in G.H.Q. The greatest bugbear, the most menacing a spect almost, which afflicts the retiring officer is Income Tax. The thought, the appearance of 9/- in the £, shrivels the soul; but, provided one is supporting a wife and a couple of children in respectable poverty, the rate is not quite 9/-. It works out about 5/3. I have had the following figures produced by a financial genius of my acquaintance.

United Kingdom. Income Tax 1946/47. Pension: £750

The only attractive thing about the above sum is its ease of calculation compared with the Indian mystery, but to you and me it is a lot of money. When you see shabby uneconomic individuals who apparently make or lose that amount of cash at horse or greyhound racing each week without any formalities with an Income Tax officer it withers and blights the delicate buds of socialism which may be growing in your heart.

One's income is now reduced to £600 odd. The next problem is a house, and even Mr. Aneurin Bevan with all the experts, local authorities, builders, plumbers, carpenters and bricks at his disposal offers little comfort. Like many others in India I have thumbed the glossy pages of magazines and periodicals in which the advertisements make a special appeal to house-hunters. To the impoverished officer from the East they offer as much comfort as Mr. Bevan.

One charming little cottage in the New Forest with self-pumped water, out door latrines, indoor oak, two bedrooms and an attic, was being thrown away for £3,500. It was too small anyway. Suitable abodes—four bedrooms, a W.C. and electric light—were generally priced at £6,000 and upwards, which of course is rather more than any honest Lieut.-Colonel could accrue conveniently in thirty years.

From these fanciful day-dreams I sought reality. I made inquiries in Norfolk, Durham, Sussex, Liverpool and Belfast. I found that a suburban detached house in its own half acre which cost £1,500 to build before the war was being sold for £5,000 or over. Semi-detached villas worth £800 in 1938 were not available for £2,000.

I went into the country, a move which makes one's children boarders automatically. There the same profiteering prices reign for houses which require some hundreds of pounds for repairs. I toyed with the idea of buying or renting a converted L.C.T., craft which some enterprising officers are rigging up as comfortable houseboats and selling for under £1,000. I could not face the prospect of spending the rest of my life on a mud-flat, no matter how dirt cheap the price, and abandoned the transient brainwave. My family rejected the idea of living in a nice double-decker omnibus when it was discovered that the engine had been rendered unserviceable and the brakes and screen-wipers removed.

Concurrently with these investigations efforts were made to acquire some furniture. Again, one meets Bedlam prices; an ordinary bedstead costs £20. A cheque for £500 might furnish a simple home with the austere necessities of this utility period, but for such a small cheque one would have to sacrifice comfort and personal taste. It was suggested that one should frequent auctions where bargains might be procurable. This fallacy explodes in one's face when one sees

the ring of grim buyers prepared to bid anything. These buyers in expensive limousines penetrate to the most humble auctions where furniture is for sale.

Up to date the result of this recce is to accept the fact that unless one can live with relations one must go into furnished rooms in a cheap locality. The war has been over for only fifteen months and one hopes the present prices are not eternal. For furnished rooms it is not suggested that one should pay less than 2½ guineas a week, which will provide a ghastly existence for father and mother at the cost £273 per annum, leaving eighteen shillings per day for

education, clothes, clubs, cinemas, dentists and growing apples.

A friend of mine has accepted this dire situation, and now lives in a pub tactically situated on a bus-route which conveys his son and daughter to their respective day-schools. He finds this even more than he can afford, and is now searching the local highways and byways for a cottage. There is no point in stressing too much these difficulties and disappointments, especially when , one meets on every hand elderly retired people who have existed, toiled, queued and washed up all through the war without any servants or sympathy. I know of one retired General and his wife, both over seventy, who have lived alone since 1940, and there are hundreds more.

The cartoonist Low's Colonel Blimp and Itma's delightful Colonel Chinstrap have now established retired field officers as figures of fun in the public mind. There is, even in the highest and therefore most enlightened circles, a good-natured contempt for these rather ridiculous rentiers from Poona. Anglo-Indian Colonel has now achieved the position in society wherein even the wit and malice of Thackeray failed to place him. He is, whether he subscribes to the notion or not, a parasite on the public body, a besotted windbag, an Imperialistic mud-head, and possibly on his more violent expressions a danger to social progress. The sooner this type disappears from the closeknit fabric of our new national life the sounder will Professor Laski be able to sleep in his bed.

To have served one's life in India is now almost something beastly. Shakespeare knew the position:

"The painful wartior famoused for fight After a thousand victories, once foiled Is from the books of honour razed quite, And all the rest forgot for which he toiled."

One may be too sensitive of this atmosphere and consequently too harsh in one's criticism, but the feeling is abiding although perhaps maudlin.

Nevertheless, the other national poet who sang there would always be an England is right. The present high prices of every common object from 1½d. for a four page newspaper (one-fifth devoted to racing news), to an eighthorse power motorized perambulator at £360 (one-fifth devoted to purchase tax), cannot last. The economic experts say these prices cannot last; they are certain to come down or go up. To these experts it appears of small consequence in which direction the inevitable movement will manifest itself. To the bewildered field officer from Poona it is a matter of life or misery.

Another job is the answer, and here again in the overcrowded labour market younger and fitter field officers—without pensions—are two a penny. Recently I met a chauffeur employed, he told me, by a newly demobilised Major. This Major was a gentleman of private means and spent his time racing. attended all the race meetings in Great Britain in his own car dr ven by my informant. At the beginning of May the Major had cleared £2,000 by intelligent betting; his chauffeur, starting with a capital of £1, was £75 in credit by accepting his master's advice and not wagering more than ten shillings. I asked how he obtained sufficient petrol to take him from Edinburgh to Hurst Park and back to Chester. "Easy as wink your eye," he said. "That's why the Major keeps me." It strikes me that such a profession is more suitable for bachelors and probably entails an expensive apprenticeship. Although, thanks to my army education, I could drive and maintain a car, I am sure I would lose my way in the black markets and certainly be late for the 2.30.

Farming—pigs, apples, poultry, cattle or vegetables—requires capital and knowledge. A relation (also retired from India) was anxious to buy a field close to his house to extend his small pre-war farm. This field was valued for requisitioning purposes by the local authority for £260 and was bought at the auction

by an elderly disreputable woman for £500, cash.

In a reputable London newspaper the other day an ex-officer (barrister), aged 42, records that an employment agency had offered him the choice of the following jobs: Lorry driver; scavenger; garage hand; plasterer's labourer; general labourer in a gas lamp factory.

These instances show that, whilst there are plenty of jobs available, many officers either through age or temperament might find them uncongenial and often too technical. A Vocational Training School for senior officers is

obviously necessary.

Inexorably and relentlessly one is driven to the sad conclusion that although there will always be an England it will not be the same England envisaged by the romantic home-sick singer in Poona. He might be wise to consider other horizons where existence is less controlled, taxation lighter and amenities less expensive. The Channel Islands, Eire, Tasmania, Kenya, the Dominions all offer a welcome and are worth examination.

I must, however, give a warning. Another friend, retired after many years distinguished service in India, with extra means and a charming house, is so sick of England and its climate that since the end of the war he has been trying to escape. He is not allowed. He informs me that sea passages are so heavily booked by politicians, Ensa clowns and G. I. brides that he might as

well be in a concentration camp.

I have been making tentative explorations into Eire. There is an ugly rush across the Irish Sea and house property in Southern Ireland is being snapped up at high prices. I believe the cost of living there is actually higher than in England, but is compensated by a less severe servant problem and a plenitude of the simple pleasure of life—eggs, butter, bacon, fishing and good manners. My financial genius has worked out the Irish Income Tax, which bears comparison with the U.K. figures given earlier in this article:—

EIRE. INCOME TAX, 1946/47. PENSION: £750

Allowances ...  $\begin{array}{c}
\text{Untaxed (I/5)} : & \text{£150} \\
\text{Pers. Allce} : & \text{£220} \\
\text{Children (2)} : & \text{£120} \\
& & & & \\
\end{array}$ Balance for taxation: £260

Total Tax

£100 at 3/3: £16-5

£160 at 6/6: £52-0

£68-5

By living in Eire one would therefore have an extra £75 per annum to invest insomething solid like he Irish Sweepstakes, which are profitable, legitimate and unmenaced. I shall make a further report.

# ARMY/AIR ORGANISATION FOR INDIA'S DEFENCE

By Major-General C.H. Boucher, C.B., C.B.E., D.S.O., I.A.\*

"Where there is no vision the people perish".—Proverbs 29,18.

THE tactical doctrine of the war of 1939-45 is well enough known; what we have to do is to be ready for the next war, and it is already apparent that the next war, if there is one, will be nothing like the last. The pigmy Indian Army that is emerging from the giant structure of the army of 1945 is an interim force, organised on last war lines and equipped with available—i.e., last war—weapons. It must be so in order that the immediate needs of India may be met, but already much of the equipment of the last war is obsolete.

Recently, too, in the realm of Science there has occurred one of the greatest advances of the human era. For the first time atomic energy has been harnessed to the purposes of war, and we are not yet able to say how far this discovery will lead us. Certain facts are already emerging, or have emerged, sufficiently clearly to enable some deductions to be made as to our future defence requirements. They are of great significance and of basic importance to our new organisation.

Armour.—In the last war, generally speaking, tanks dominated the battle-field and whoever had the best tank won. Recent developments, however, have ended the dominion of the heavy tank, at any rate for the moment. He who has dominion in the air can concentrate rocket firing fighter aircraft, in whose presence the heavy tank cannot exist. Even if bad weather or darkness prevents aircraft from operating, the recoilless gun and the improved A.Tk.mine have robbed the tank of any superiority it may have enjoyed over the other arms.

We do not yet know what effect atomic energy may have in this matter of the efficacy of armour; it may go either way, but from what we do know it is probable that for the present the heavy tank is obsolete or at least obsolescent. Its uses are limited to these few places on the frontier where they can move, and to similar operations, where the enemy has no aircraft and no modern weapons. The short life of the tracks of a heavy tank is, too, an important factor which limits their mobility.

In India it means that heavy armoured brigades must be located in the vicinity of the place where they will fight, and this involves an accurate forecast of the battle-field and a risk of these expensive units never entering battle. It is the absolute negation of the principles on which the next war is likely to be fought—the principles of concentration and mobility. There is therefore a strong case for the exclusion of heavy armoured formations from the Indian Army of the future, particularly as armour is probably the most expensive of the ingredients of our Armed Forces. Infantry, however, are still assault troops and are still soft-skinned. They still require armour in the assault to subdue the MG.

As, owing to the distance involved, there can be little prospect of heavy enemy tanks ever covering the great mileages necessary to invade India, or to fight on arrival, it seems that the answer to India's armoured problems lies on

<sup>\*</sup>Commander, 2nd Indian Airborne Division.



small, fast, light tanks which do not suffer from track troubles, which retain both strategical and tactical mobility, and are difficult targets for aircraft. The size will be limited by the limits of air transportation, and carriage of light tanks by air is already well within sight.

Supply.—Supply is the basis of war, and must be considered before possibilities of strategy or tactics which are dependent on it. It is the limiting factor to everything, and therefore the effects of the invention of the atomic bomb must be considered first. The results of an atomic bomb on a vital base such as NAGASAKI have been seen. No nation will go to war unless they have an adequate supply of such missiles and the most modern means of launching them.

Therefore we must accept the fact that all our present main bases can be blotted out in a night by an aggressor nation—at any rate all well known bases in Northern India such as RAWALPINDI, LAHORE, DELHI, CALCUTTA, KARACHI and QUETTA, which can be easily charted in peace.

Our organisation for the next war, therefore, must be based on numbers of small, dispersed bases in Central and Southern India, supplied and supplying mainly by transport aircraft. If this is admitted, the necessity of secrecy, of an adequate cover plan in peace and of proper deception as to the location of these bases and their communications is of urgent importance.

The big ports of the present day, Bombay, Karachi, Madras and Calcutta, are likely to be eliminated at the outset of war. This must be accepted and our supply lines from overseas organised a cordingly. Dispersion will be necessary. Numbers of small ports with poor facilities will have to be used. The rail and road communications to all such ports must be established in peace, and war establishments worked out for organisations like the Bricks of Combined Operations, for off-loading into lighters, and by similar make-shifts.

As transport aircraft will carry an increasingly large share of the supply 'oad it will be necessary to establish a large number of aerodromes for them all over India, so that they can be switched at will to alternative safe areas. We are already comparatively well off in this respect.

The Conditions of the Problem.—The above are the basic facts of modern war on which our future organisation must be based, and towards which our present organisation, doctrine and thought must be directed. The principles to which we must stick are mobility and speed, which involves flexibility and concentration.

There are certain other conditions or assumptions:-

1. Firstly it must be assumed that India will have no possible intention of indulging in offensive action beyond her frontiers. Her object is simply to repel aggression from across her borders and to maintain order within them.

Digitized by GOOGLE

- 2. As far as can be foreseen at present, any threat must be from the North-east or North-west, and no nation is likely to be in a position to exert a threat of seaborne invasion.
- 3. There are very definite limitations to the money available for defence purposes. To quote Lord Tedder again:— "No peace-loving democracy will tolerate maintaining a Goliath in peacetime."
  - 4. First-class natural obstacles exist along the whole of the Northern frontiers, from the Arakan to Gwadar.
  - 5. Within these natural frontiers lies a flat country of great distances, with good flying conditions, ideal for the movement of aircraft, but far too vast for the rapid movements of ground forces.

The Threat.—Owing to the natural obstacles of India's northern frontiers, it is safe to assume that the first phase of any invasion of India must be airborne. Such a phase would immediately follow the destruction of all major bases by atomic bombs and would be aimed at consolidating the moral effect of such action, paralysing and replacing the Government of India. Objectives for airborne landings are likely to be areas where the invaders can live on the country and where there are plenty of good airfields or potential airfields and which are not atom-bomb targets. As in all airborne operations, there would be a follow-up force of ground troops, but the greater part of the build-up would have to be by air, owing to the distances and difficulties involved on the ground.

The attack would not be launched until the inevitable Fifth Column had done its work thoroughly, and it would follow a long period of subversive propaganda of the type with which the world has become familiar since Hitler's rise to power. There would therefore be risings within the country in favour of the invaders or liberators. There would also be plenty of warning for those who had "eyes to see and ears to hear".

### ORGANISATION FOR DEFENCE.

The principles to be followed and the conditions of the problem have been stated. It remains to offer a solution.

- 1. The 5th Column Threat.—The first threat is the Fifth Column, with its insidious propaganda. The countering of this most dangerous of all attacks is of vital importance, because unless the way has been prepared by the enemy by some such means, no other invasion is likely to follow. It is a responsibility mainly of the civil government, although the Armed Forces are of course vitally interested, and as far as Army/Air organisation is concerned, a considerable Intelligence commitment is involved.
- 2. The Airborne Threat.—Air superiority is the first requirement for an airborne operation, or for that matter, for any major operation. The Air Force therefore will be the predominant arm in the defence of India, and it is sound to argue that the Supreme Commander should be chosen from that Service. His H.Q. must certainly be fully integrated, and the defence plan must be mutually adjusted and combined between all Services from the start.

Our first object in organising for defence must be to win the local air battles. We can only afford a very small air force, and we have no aggressive intentions. We cannot therefore hope to fight beyond the frontiers. All we can hope to do is to hold off any threat until assistance can be sent from overseas. So long as the threat can be confined to airborne invasion this should be within our powers.

The great strength of air power lies in its speed and flexibility. There are the principles which will guide Empire defence and which will bring aid to his and these are the principles which must guid: India's plan for her own defence speed and flexibility, so as to concentrate every aircraft and every paratrops available for use successively at the decisive points.

The decisive points will be those where enemy airborne forces have ladd. The role of the Air Force will be to get the Airborne troops to the decisive point. The Army's role will be to stamp out such landings before they can take not All airborne battle groups within reach will be concentrated in turn on easier landings, under air cover and in aircraft provided by the Air Force. The location of these airborne battle groups will be decided by their distance from probable enemy objectives, and can be worked out on a map by compass, according to the endurance of the transport aircraft of the time, at present the Dakota.

Probable atom bomb targets must be given a wide berth. There we be no place in the Army for any combat troops who are not airborne or airborne ported. Parachuting will be part of everyone's basic training and any receive who, for any reason, are unable to jump, will be relegated to ground force of services. In fact, however, parachuting is already obsolescent, and the airborn assault troops of perhaps only a few years ahead will land from helicopters of from some other airborne vehicle which will enable a whole platoon or more to be put down with all its weapons and equipment. Such a device is already well within sight.

The cumbrous, top-heavy divisions of the last war are dead. These are the limbs of the giant Goliath who has been slain by the Airborne David Future organisation must be by battle groups, probably about the size of a Pan Brigade Group now organised, but in fact limited by the possibilities of air lift and air cover. A complete change in outlook and in doctrine is required in the Army, and here I will quote Lord Tedder again, this time from the May 1946 Journal of the R.U.S.I:—

"Although the Germans had excellent integration between their air and land forces, they thought in terms of land the whole time. They were not prepared to fight an air battle; they were neither equipped nor trained for it"; and again in the February 1946 Journal:—"Each Service must clear out old shibblets and outworn traditions, go to the scientists and technicians for all they can possibly give in the way of speed, mobility and economy, develop the whole time with an eye on the other two members of the team in co-operation and not in competition."

The Army is as yet far from being sufficiently air minded. It is still thinking in terms of land and of the last war.

3. The Land-Borne Threat.—Finally, there is the problem of an invasion by land. No major land operation can succeed without air superiority, nor could any land forces of the last war model hope to make much progress against the flexibility and speed of the airborne type of forces envisaged above. We have to ensure, however, that India's frontiers, which are naturally very formidable, are in fact sufficient obstacles to force any aggressor into an airborne invasion, the defeat of which would be within our possibilities, and to prevent his ground or follow-up component from reaching him.

For this purpose we need land forces who can make the greatest possible use of the difficult frontier country along any of the possible lines of invasion.

The tribesmen themselves, who inhabit the frontier regions, are the best possible

On the North there is no threat through the Himalayas. On the N.E. frontier something similar to the Scouts of the N.W. Frontier may exist or could be organised. Irregular frontier corps require the backing of regular troops and these should be for the most part ground troops of the defensive or fortress type, machine gunners, and sappers for laying mines and making demolitions, wand mortars for close support. The object is to turn the N.E. and N.W. in frontiers into fortress areas which, by reason of their natural difficulties and their warlike inhabitants, can be held economically and securely by second-line fortress troops.

Conclusion.—I have been free with quotations from Lord Tedder. I will finish with one from King David, who also knew how to defeat Goliath:—

1 Samuel 17:—

- 38. "And Saul armed David with his armour and he put an helmet of brass upon his head; also he armed him with a coat of mail.
- 39. "And David said unto Saul, I cannot go with these, for I have not proved them. And David put them off him.
  - 40. "And he took his staff in his hand; and his sling was in his hand; and he drew near to the Philistine".

# Demobbed Silladars to Keep Their Camels

DEC.

e, ez

rbaze vent

配

P

É

18

jĽ

H

Ex-silladars of four Indian Camel Transport Companies, R.I.A.S.C., the 41st, 40th, 38th, and 37th, which are to be disbanded, will take their camels with them on return to civil life. They will receive, besides the normal release benefits, three camels fit for at least six months' work or Rs. 450 per camel instead.

Formed out of the old Camel Corps these transport units were organised on the *silladar* system by which all recruits had to supply their own "assami"—a string of three camels—or at least two fit camels and the money for the third. Regular contributions were made to a *chanda* fund which purchased new came s for the *silladars* when their own died and this fund in a company would sometimes amount to about a lakh of rupees.

On mobilisation in 1941, the "chanda" funds were frozen, the Army took over the camels and silladars were paid an extra Rs. 10 per month for deterioration in value of their camels. During the war these units carried out station duties in the Punjab and the North-West Frontier Province and took part in columns on the Frontier.

The regimental funds of the four companies, including property and grazing grounds as well as the "chanda" funds, amounting to approximately Rs. 8 lakhs, are to be put into a "Silladar Bene volent Fund" for the education and welfare of ex-silladars and their dependents.

## BRITAIN, RUSSIA AND ASIA

By LIEUT.-COLONEL G. E. WHEELER, C.I.E.

ALTHOUGH Soviet criticism of Britain and indeed of nearly every government in the world is now in full cry, it would probably be optimistic to suggest that it has reached its height. The British have not yet been treated to those extremes of obloquy and abuse which were directed against the Germans; so far as I am aware they have not yet been described as "scabby" (parshivyi). But British policy, the British Press and even British schoolbooks have been described as "filthy" (gryaznyi). Of late the British Press has begun to bite back, though admittedly in rather less proletarian language, and hopes of a mutual understanding and association between the British and Russian peoples, and indeed between Russians and the people of any free country, seem, at any rate for the present, to be slender indeed.

History shows that countries' opinions of each other are largely, if not entirly, conditioned by the extent to which their interests clash. British governments and the British have always been particularly mercurial in their views on Russia. No sooner was the Red Army's resistance to Germany an established fact than a wave of pro-Soviet feeling swept over England. Instead of being a blood-thirsty tyrant, Stalin became a great and wise ruler; from being a cowed and reluctant army of conscripts deprived by purges of all their best officers, the Red Army became an army of heroes, admirably trained, disciplined and led by the finest generals; religion was not really dead in Russia and there was no longer any religious persecution. All these new views were for obvious reasons encouraged by the Soviet Government by such measures as the abolition of the Comintern, the creation of new ecclesiastical bodies and the total exclusion from the Soviet Press and radio of such awkward subjects as India and Palestine.

The pendulum has now swung again: Stalin is now either a complete autocrat after all or he is under the thumb of the *Politburo*; the Red Army would never have stood up to Germany had it not been for the material aid given by Britain and America; the Russian people are slaves once more and the Soviet Government is Antichrist; the O.G.P.U. (abolished in 1935) rules the country with an iron hand.

These changes of heart in Britain are not, of course, universal, but they are widespread and they are largely sincere. In the Soviet Union there have been no such changes on the part of the government, though during the war they certainly allowed the people to modify in varying degrees their hatred of everyone except the Germans; it was quite clear that the valuable bogey of "capitalist designs on the U.S.S.R." must be put away until the real menace of Fascist aggression had been dealt with.

However foolish, hypercritical or regimented these changes may be, the clash of interests which brings them about is real. For Britain its importance lies principally in the East and the purpose of this article is to draw dispassionate attention to certain features of the British and Russian positions in Asia both in the past and in the present, and to suggest the need for a closer and more practical appreciation of the Russian character and the Russian point of view.

### CIRCUMSTANCES ALTER CASES

Most British writing on the subject of Anglo-Russian rivalry in Asia takes the form either of indictment or of vindication of the Russian standpoint; the essential difference between the Russian and the British outlooks and the reasons for that difference are less often made subjects of enquiry. I shall presently try to show in what this difference lies, but it will be as well to say at the outset that I am not trying to show which of the systems followed by Russia and Britain in their dealings with Asiatic peoples under their total or partial control is materially the superior. Indeed, I do not think it would be possible to prove which of the policies pursued by the two States towards the peoples of Asia during the past hundred years has been more or less altruistic or which has contributed more or less to their eventual well-being.

The question as to what motives impelled Russia and Britain to establish themselves in Asia is a long and complicated one which it is difficult to answer with precision. The first tide of Russian expansion across the Urals went due east and was the natural consequence of the relinquishment of the Tatar hold on Russian lands. The southward advance to the frontiers of Turkey, Persia and Afghanistan was a later development and was actuated largely by those same considerations of security of which we hear so much today. The earlier expansion was not one of conquest, for the indigenous population of Siberia was extremely small and was quickly outnumbered by the Russian settlers; but the latter soon found themselves menaced and their trading operations disturbed by depredations from the more populous states of Khiva, Bokhara and Kokand which lay to the south. It was this that necessitated the organization of large scale military operations.

The appearance of the British in Asia was not originally the outcome of any imperialist policy, but began as with the Russians in a spirit of merchant adventure. In India, however, military operations began not against the people of India, but against foreign competitors.

- The main reason for the difference between the British and Russian outlooks in Asia is that the problems they have had to face have always been and still are widely different. To acquire her Asiatic Empire, Russia did not have to go overseas at all; her early settlers merely crossed the Urals into country which did not differ geographically from their own. Thus, in spite of the vast eastern and southern spread of Russian expansion, Russian settlers and administrators never felt cut off from their homeland to the same extent as the British did. Secondly, the magnitude of the administrative and ethnographic problems which have confronted the British are out of all proportion to those encountered by the Russians.

Soviet propagandists and their British supporters constantly harp upon the fact of the Soviet Union embracing eighty or more different nationalities. They usually omit to mention that of a population of 182 millions about 140 millions are Slavs speaking approximately the same language and having approximately the same culture, ten millions go to make up the population of the newly re-acquired Baltic States, while only some 30 millions are made up of Asiatic peoples having separate languages and cultures. Of these peoples, moreover, no single one constitutes more than 3% of the population of the whole Union.

In their spread over Asia from the Urals to the Pacific and from the Arctic to the Persian, Afghan and Chinese frontiers, the Russians met little in the way

of established culture except in Georgia and Armenia, the Tatar invasions having largely removed whatever had been there before. Great play is nowadays made of the literature, drama and music of the various Asiatic republics and autonomous territories, but it is difficult to find trace of anything which can be compared with the cultural heritage of India, Burma and Ceylon. In the second half of the nineteenth century when Russian expansion reached its limit, Islamic culture in Turkestan was far less advanced than it had been in India under the Moghuls.

As regards religion, Islam was predominant in Central Asia and the Caucasus, Christianity was strongly represented in Georgia and Armenia, while Shamanism and Buddhism were found further to the north and east. But at the coming of the Russians, adherents of the various religions were not found to be intermixed as they have been in India since Moghul times. Finally, in her expansion over Asia, Russia was never opposed by a first-class Power, or even, it may be said, by any military force organised or equipped on modern lines, unless we so regard the army of Fath Ali Shah which in 1826 attempted to regain the former Persian territories in the Caucasus which had been annexed by Russia.

It is perhaps hardly necessary to draw attention to the contrast which the above picture presents to the state of affairs which confronted the British in India. Separated from England by a voyage of three months, the first British arrivals in India found there a population of at least 200 millions, the majority being Hindu with an elaborate culture stretching back thousands of years. Partly superimposed on this ancient fabric was the far more recent but vigorous culture of Islam, which had penetrated a large part of the country, with the result that over huge areas Hindus and Muslims were inextricably intermixed. Finally, the British were for a long period opposed not only militarily and economically by the French and the Portuguese, but by vast Indian armies incomparably more numerous, better equipped and trained than anything encountered by Russia in Central Asia or the Caucasus.

### DIFFERENCES OF SYSTEM: THE RUSSIAN WAY

Having drawn attention to the essential difference of the problems confronting Britain and Russia in Asia, we may consider briefly the systems adopted by each Power. The pre-Soviet Russian plan was twofold: completely to remove any military potential which the inhabitants of the Caucasus and Central Asia might possess, and to continue expansion until the frontiers of regularly constituted States were reached. Thus, the determined resistance of Shamil in the Caucasus was relentlessly worn down by the Russians until they could firmly establish themselves on the Turkish and Persian frontiers. Similarly, the Tekke Turkomans were completely and finally crushed in a series of engagements culminating in the battle of Geok Tepe. No serious rising has taken place in what is now the Asiatic part of the Soviet Union since 1882. Once order was restored and the people cowed, the Government of the Tsar applied a policy of Russification.

The Soviet treatment of its Asiatic peoples differs in many essential respects from the Tsarist method, but it is important to realise that it was the earlier system which paved the way for the later one. Soviet politicians found themselves confronted with a huge territory nearly the same size as India, but populated by a congeries of peoples whose total number was little more than half the population of Bengal and not one of which exceeded 6 millions. They

Digitized by GOOGLE

had no military strength and there was little sign of nationalist ambition except perhaps in Georgia. But racially the peoples were fairly compact.

The Tsarist policy of Russification was reversed and indigenous culture was vigorously encouraged. The thinly populated republics were made to and still do rule themselves. Since, however, defence and the broad direction of economic policy remain under Russian control, and since the indigenous rulers belong to the Communist Party, they are not really independent. But in exchange for independence they have security and greatly increased prosperity. There is no reason to suppose that they regard the exchange as an unfair one; nor can they fairly be described (as they often are) as groaning under the Soviet yoke.

### THE BRITISH WAY

Even if the British had wished to follow the Russian system in India, it is extremely doubtful whether they could have done so with the resources at their disposal. Completely to emasculate India of her martial elements and thus of her military potential would have been a formidable undertaking. The regularization of India's frontiers and especially that with Afghanistan presents incalculable difficulties. To "anglicize" India when, except in war time, the British population there has never consisted of more than 65,000 constantly changing British troops and a few thousand officials and traders would obviously have been impossible. The political organization of India on a racial instead of on an arbitrarily territorial and politico-religious basis would be many times more difficult than it has proved in Asiatic Russia; but it still may prove to be the ultimate solution.

Whether as a result of moral conviction or force of circumstances, the British in India, so far from breaking down the military potential, reinforced it by every means in their power and with obvious success. They persisted in this policy even though in 1857 it threatened to cut short their hold on the country. They accepted the anomaly of a belt of tribal territory between India and Afghanistan. Finally, they did not seek to change established beliefs and customs except where they interfered with public order. There was no attempt at anglicization, the progress of English as the principal medium of instruction having been largely brought about by the Indians themselves. Probably the only essentially English custom which has become at all widespread is the "teaparty".

### ADVANTAGES AND LIMITATIONS OF THE SOVIET SYSTEM

So far as the present and immediate future go there can be little doubt that the Asiatic peoples belonging to the Soviet Union are, from the point of view of health, standard of living, education and prospects, infinitely better off than the peoples of India and most other Asiatic countries. It would be surprising if it were otherwise: from the furthest point in Asiatic Russia, Moscow can be reached in a few days by rail; not only does European Russia adjoin the Asiatic territories, but its European population is more than three times as great as the indigenous population of all the Asiatic territories put together. Apart from this, many millions of Russians have emigrated across the Urals into Asia, three millions having done so between 1926 and 1939 alone.

The extent to which I have insisted on the different circumstances attending Russian and British control in Asia would have been otiose were it not for the fact that the superiority of Soviet achievement in raising the status of Asiatic peoples forms one of the principal themes of Soviet propaganda. This

propaganda constantly implies that if the Soviet system were applied in India, China and elsewhere the lot of the proletariat would immediately improve. To some people this suggests that the Soviet Government is anxious from purely altruistic and humanitarian motives to better the lot of the Asiatic peasant.

There are no doubt many kind-hearted Russian as well as British people who genuinely long to do this, and there is a smaller number who are prepared to subordinate their own interests to those of Asiatic peoples. But that Comrades Stalin and Molotov are kept awake at night by thoughts of the toiling and unenlightened millions of India is as unlikely as that Messrs. Attlee and Bevin are rendered sleepless at the thought of the civic and religious bondage endured by the Oirots or the Jews of Birobidjan. To others the present Soviet mood suggests imperialism, world aggrandizement and war. The truth lies somewhere between these two extremes.

### Plus Ça change

To the world at large the Soviet system is either simply wonderful or simply frightful; what most people are inclined to overlook is that it may be simply Russian. A common retort to this suggestion is that Stalin is a Georgian; this can be disposed of by the counter retort that Lord Beaconsfield was a Jew but also one of the most enthusiastic British Imperialists who ever held the office of British Prime Minister. Sixty years later, Hitler's belief that Britain was no longer Britain but merely a tool in the hands of international Jewry led him eventually to disaster and there is a grave danger of us making a similar today with regard to Russia.

The study of Russian history is too seldom undertaken by those who wish to interpret contemporary Soviet policy. Such a study shows unmistakably not only that Russian policy and aims have changed not at all, but that the technique of her rulers displays the same characteristics today as those which at once mystified and exasperated the British Government and public in the last century. Recently we have become aware that Russia has by no means abandoned her traditional aims in the Eastern Mediterranean and the Persian Gulf, that the same security complex as she suffers from today was behind her pan-Slav policy and her advance from Siberia into Central Asia up to the Persian and Afghan frontiers; and that the same suspicion which prevents her from allowing her now largely literate population from mixing with the outside world impelled her to impede the advance of education during the previous regime.

#### A CLASH OF SYSTEMS

This does not mean that in her dealings with Russia Britain should go back to her attitude of the last century, which was as unrealistic as it could well be. The recent crescendo of Russian criticism is due principally to a subconscious fear on the part of Russia that the present British Government has to some extent taken her measure. The Soviet system in dealing with her own Asiatic peoples and in attracting those adjacent to her territory is one in which the Soviet Government and people sincerely believe, but it is nonetheless one which they intend to use in order to realize their traditional aims referred to above.

Russia boosts her system partly because she believes in it and partly because she hopes it will be useful. I have already referred to one important respect in which the experiment falls short: it has only so far been applied to small Asiatic race elements the largest of which, the Uzbegs, numbers only just over

six millions. Another limitation is that the system with one exception, Outer Mongolia, has not so far been applied to areas which were not part of the former Russian Empire. It remains to be seen how it would work in large populous territories with established cultures and a tradition of intellectual freedom.

Now, an important pre-requisite for the success of the Soviet system in such territories is the persistence of the colonial system against which to set off the benefits of Soviet synthetic independence. What alarms the Soviet Government and lends an added shrillness to its propaganda is the tendency of Britain to substitute for the colonial system genuine national independence to be followed up by a system of freely negotiated treaties. Such a plan might in time develop into something like the American "Good Neighbour" policy obtaining in Latin America, where independence is respected and, indeed, guaranteed, and no stipulation is made as to the form of government provided that the necessary security exists for the conduct of foreign trade.

This would postpone Russia's attainment of her aims, and it is necessary to say that it might also postpone the material advancement of Asiatic peoples, who left to themselves would probably discard democracy altogether and establish varying forms of authoritarian rule. It is significant that after over 100 years of independence, the aggregate illiteracy of the ten republics of Latin America still amounts to over 70%.

### THE NEED FOR UNDERSTANDING

That Communism is responsible for the present Russian attitude, that all her aims and aspirations are unreasonable, that she is out for world domination, that she will never consent to co-operate with the western world are misconceptions which if they are allowed to persist will have dangerous consequences. The Russian people are as kindly, peace-loving and intelligent as ourselves. The reason for the traditionally tiresome and intransigent technique of Russian Governments, whether Tsar or Soviet, lies deep in history. It is largely unintelligible to us because the political evolution of Russia has been entirely different from our own and is probably very far from being complete.

But because we genuinely find the Russian attitude obscure and alarming, we should realize that the Russians genuinely find ours equally so. As suggested above, they are particularly apprehensive of our new technique. Britain, they say, achieved all her aspirations in the Middle East and in India. Grown fat, she is now, as it were, getting her weight down, partly perhaps to present less surface to the prods of propaganda, but also perhaps because she is in training for some new act of aggression against the Soviet Union. The fact that French and Italian competition in the Middle East has now dwindled to nothing and that the only other potential rival to Britain is America, whom Russia believes to be in league with Britain, merely adds to Soviet apprehension.

Since free intercourse with the Russian people is nowadays practically impossible, the only guides to their character and attitude are to be found in history and literature. It so happens that these are much more illuminating about Russia than they are about many other countries. It is, for instance, significant that Russia has never in the whole course of her history engaged in war with a first-class Power in pursuance of her territorial aims. Again, the extraordinary sense of mission which is apt to obsess the Russians can be best understood by reading Dostoevski's Diary of a Writer and Turgeniev's On the Eve.

I have tried to show how small Russian experience of Asiatic peoples is compared with our own. This does not mean that the research which they have

conducted in the fields of Asiatic history, ethnography and languages are unworthy of examination. As a matter of fact, this work is of the greatest importance and much of it is unique in scope and treatment. In the same way, although the Soviet system has been applied only to sparsely populated areas, it does not follow that the Soviet theory about the futility of trying to graft western democracy on to countries where the fundamentally different social and religious systems have been deliberately perpetuated, is necessarily a wrong one.

It must be admitted that however great may be British misunderstanding of the Russian character and ignorance of Soviet achievement, Russian misunderstanding and ignorance of Britain is far greater. It is also deliberate. The ordinary Englishman or Indian who seeks to fathom the Soviet point of view can, at any rate, obtain without difficulty the most advanced political literature setting forth in detail the glories of the Soviet system and the iniquities of Western so-called democracy. He can sit in his house and listen with impunity to Moscow Radio doing the same thing on the air. But the ordinary Russian, still less the Oirot or the Jew of Birobidjan, cannot get similar literature setting forth the British point of view, nor may he own a private radio. But this situation must be accepted; it will not change until the Russians reach the next stage of their political evolution.

## Anti-Famine Fight: Army's Help Continues

Large numbers of Army vehicles are now assisting the civil authorities in the movement of grain and other foodstuffs to deficit areas.

In June alone, about 450 vehicles of varying capacities were used in the Peshawar, Rawalpindi and Lahore areas. In the Madras area heavy Army transport has been transporting grain. In the U.P., in addition to about 100 heavy vehicles, four motor transport companies (about 600 vehicles) have been transporting foodstuffs.

The Indian States also have had their share of Army transport. Two complete motor transport companies (about 300 vehicles) have been in commission, moving edibles in Jaipur State. In the mountainous State of Poonch, besides light transport, the sturdy jeep has been used to distribute food to isolated villages in the hill tracts.

Ploughing up another 800 acres of wasteland on the Kabul river at Warsak, near Peshawar, Northern Command have done much to aid the N.W.F.P. Government's anti-famine drive. Troops in this area have now upturned 11,000 acres of virgin soil which are expected to yield several hundred tons of foodgrains.

Southern Command are supplying the Government with 2,000 Army beds, as well as the necessary equipment for medical relief purposes in scarcity areas. The Army has also promised its co-operation in supplementing existing medical and public health arrangements for dealing with epidemics that may arise in the scarcity areas of the province. Ambulance cars, jeeps with trailers, trucks and lorries will be supplied for medical relief work.

The Army is also supplying water piping and pumping sets, prefabricated sheds for storage, and transport for carrying foodstuffs. Meantime, troops all over the country continue to play their own personal part by avoiding waste and devoting even more land, in military areas, to the cultivation of crops.

Digitized by GOOSIC

## THE COMMANDERS-IN-CHIEF IN INDIA SINCE 1860

By Brigadier H. Bullock, O.B.E., F.R.Hist.S.

Ė

.

SINCE 1860 the Army in India has had twenty Commanders-in-Chief, of whom six are still living. A full and formal list is given at the end of this article, but their names (in order of succession) and some basic dates may conveniently be given in tabular form:—

	Name.		Born.	First Commission.	Became Cin-C.	Died.
Rose Mansfield Napier Haines Stewart Roberts White Lockhart Palmer Kitchener Creagh Duff Monro Rawlinson Birdwood Chetwode			1801 1819 1810 1819 1824 1832 1835 1841 1840 1850 1848 1855 1860 1864 1865 1869	1820 1835 1828 1839 1840 1851 1853 1858 1857 1871 1866 1874 1879 1884 1885	1860 1865 1870 1876 1881 1885 1893 1898 1900 1902 1909 1914 1916 1920 1925 1930	1885 1876 1890 1909 1900 1914 1912 1900 1904 1916 1923 1918 1929 1925
Cassels *Auchinleck †Wavell ‡Hartley	•••	••	1876 1884 1883 1882	1896 1903 1901 1901	1935 1941 1941 1942	••••

I will not describe their military careers, which are mostly well known or easily ascertained, but will view them as a class. Some details of four of them (Napier, Stewart, Roberts and Birdwood) have been given in my article in which I dealt with the Field-Marshals of the Indian Army.

<sup>\*</sup> First term, 27th January 1941 to 4th July 1941. C.-in-C., Middle East, 5th July 1941 to 15th August 1942. Re-appointed C.-in-C. in India, 20th June 1943.

<sup>†</sup>First term, 11th July 1941 to 16th January 1942. Supreme Commander, S. W. Pacific, 17th January 1942 to 6th March 1942. Re-appointed C.-in-C. in India, 7th March 1942, till 19th June 1943.

<sup>‡</sup>C.-in-C. in India, 17th January 1942 to 6th March 1942. Subsequently the first Deputy C.-in-C. in India.

Of the twenty Chiefs, nine were Indian Army officers (Stewart, Lockhart, Palmer, Creagh, Duff, Birdwood, Cassels, Auchinleck and Hartley); and of the others Napier (formerly Bengal Engineers) and Roberts (formerly Bengal Artillery) were officers of John Company's service who came over to the R.E. and R.A. respectively after the Mutiny, and should therefore fairly be reckoned as Indian Army. Whichever way you count them the share is eleven of one and nine of the other.

The balance between the arms of the service is far from being so even. Of the nine Indian Army men, no less than four (Palmer, Birdwood, Cassels and Hartley) were cavalry officers. But of the British Service only one (Chetwode) was a cavalryman; two (Napier and Kitchener) were sappers; and one (Roberts) a gunner. (Duff was a gunner for some years before he transferred to the Indian Army). All the rest—Rose, Mansfield, Haines, White, Monro, Rawlinson and Wavell—came from the infantry.

The absence of gunners and sappers from the Indian Army representatives is a natural consequence of the I.A. not having had its own artillery and engineer officers during the period from the assumption by the Crown of the Government of India up to the raising of the Royal Indian Engineers and Royal Indian Artillery in recent years. It is clear that the scales were loaded, whether by chance or design, in favour of the Indian cavalry at the expense of the infantry officers of the Indian Army; and this lack of balance has been the more marked in recent times.

Much the youngest Chief was Mansfield (afterwards created Lord Sandhurst) who received the appointment at the age of 46, when he had thirty years' service. Grandson of a distinguished lawyer, he was a greater financier than soldier, and his tenure of the chief command in India is remembered principally for his having court-martialled one of his aides-de-camp, Captain Jervis, in the famous "Pickles" case—a misconceived affair which attracted the widest notice, and did his reputation no good.

The next youngest were Kitchener (aged 52 on appointment) and Roberts (aged 53). Both had already achieved secure fame by high and successful commands in the field, and both were to add greater lustre to their name, after vacating office in India. The rest were mostly well above the middle fifties when they were appointed, and three (Napier, Palmer and Creagh) were 60 or 61 years

of age.

The ancestry of many of the Commanders-in-Chief is interesting, and occasionally illustrates the transmission of ability, talent or even genius by heredity. The first on our list, Rose (Lord Strathnairn) is an example of three successive generations in the Dictionary of National Biography—hereinafter referred to as the "D.N.B." His grandfather was an eminent statesman. His father, Sir George Henry Rose, was an able diplomat, which incidentally explains why the future Field-Marshal was born and educated at Berlin. Grandfather George Rose served as a naval officer in youth, and later in a long and varied official life was twice Treasurer of the Navy; and his son was at one time Deputy Paymaster General of the Land Forces. Thus the three generations reveal a talent for tact, administration and leadership, with some reference to naval and military affairs.

Our second name is that of Mansfield, Lord Sandhurst. His father was an English country gentleman, quite undistinguished so far as I am aware, but his grandfather was a prominent lawyer—Solicitor-General in 1780-82, and Chief Justice of the Common Pleas from 1804 to 1814. As the C.-in-C.'s eldest son was Governor of Bombay from 1895 to 1900, some degree of rather diverse talent is apparent through four generations, though dormant in one of them.

Lockhart's father was a Scots clergyman, but his uncle was John Gibson Lockhart, who married the eldest daughter of Sir Walter Scott and wrote the classic life of that author. Both families had many military connections. Sir Walter's profession of lawyer, and his lameness, only permitted him to serve as a yeomanry quartermaster, but his eldest brother died in India as a naval officer, and his eldest son—a lieutenant-colonel of the 15th Hussars—died at the Cape on his way Home from India, to mention only two links with India and the Services.

Monro's family is also noteworthy. It was medical, and highly talented in that direction. The generations ran thus:—

- I. Alexander Monro, the first (1697—1767), celebrated physician (D.N.B.)
- II. Alexander Monro, the second (1733—1817), celebrated anatomist (D.N.B.)
- III. Alexander Monro, the third (1773—1859), another celebrated anatomist (D.N.B.). He had six sons and six daughters, of whom the 3rd and 4th sons were:—
- IV. Sir David Monro (1813—1877), Colonial politician (D.N.B.), and Henry Monro (died 1869) who was father of:—
- V. Sir Charles Carmichael Monro, Commander-in-Chief in India. Though the main strain was for long medical, here again we see the evidence of military tendencies. For Alexander I attended the wounded at the battle of Prestonpans (1745), and his son Donald (D.N.B.) was an eminent army surgeon and published early books on soldiers' health. And, going further back, the father of Alexander I was an army doctor under William of Orange, and his brother was a military officer. And the father of these last two was a knight who fought at Worcester for the second King Charles.

Such abilities as Kitchener had in his blood seem to have come not by the male line, which contained no persons of distinction for some generations back, but through his mother, who was one of the Chevalliers, a distinguished mathematical family. Her father, a clergyman, was also a doctor of medicine, but figures in the D.N.B. as a famous agriculturist, who improved the breed of wheat. This ancestry, coupled with the profession of Earl Kitchener's father (a lieutenant-colonel), seems to account for his success as an officer of engineers, who first came to notice for sound survey work in Palestine and Cyprus.

In this connection, Lord Roberts presents a problem. His family was certainly talented—but as artists and architects. His grandfather, John Roberts of Waterford, was an architect of distinction who rebuilt that city in 1774: two of his 24 children are in the D. N. B. But John Roberts' eldest son was a country parson, whose son, General Sir Abraham Roberts of the Bengal Army was father of "Bobs". Two of Sir Abraham's brothers became captains in the Royal Navy. It would seem that military ability, if inherent in this family, must have come in by marriage.

It is worthy of remark that although about half of the twenty Chiefs were created peers, and several were likewise created baronets, in recognition of their achievements, yet only one had an old hereditary title—Sir Philip Chetwode, who succeeded as seventh baronet. (Rawlinson was a second baronet, but the creation was as recent as 1891). The fathers of the other eighteen were mostly minor country gentry, members of the professional classes, and officers of the army or navy. (The fathers of Roberts, Palmer, Rawlinson and Birdwood were in the Indian services). Two Cs.-in C were sixth sons—Creagh, of an Irish

captain in the Navy, and Monro, of a Scot who sought his fortunes overseas. Such can hardly have been endowed with a silver spoon: compare also the case of Palmer, left an orphan at the age of two when his father, a captain in the Bengal infantry, was killed in the disastrous retreat from Kabul.

The most intellectual father of a Commander-in-Chief was undoubtedly Sir Henry Creswicke Rawlinson, the eminent Assyriologist, who began life as a subaltern in the 1st Bombay Grenadiers. But "Rawly's" grandfather is known to fame only through having bred and owned "Coronation", the Derby winner of 1841; and the military talent here seems to have been made, not born.

It is difficult, and perhaps rash, to say which of the Commanders-in-Chief should be described as English, which Scottish, and which Irish. Rose and Kitchener are often referred to as Scots and Irish respectively, but in the male line they seem really to have been more English than anything. Napier and Stewart were of Scottish descent, and Monro was half Irish and half Scots. The fathers of White and Creagh were Irishmen. The Roberts family came from Ireland but the field-marshal's grandmother was a Huguenot, and I think that Kitchener's mother was also of French descent. Mansfield, Birdwood and Chetwode are English. The Welsh seem to be entirely unrepresented. The matter could not be taken much further without essaying the vast and perhaps impossible task of tracing the sixteen great-grandparents of each of the twenty persons concerned.

The peers are Rose (Baron Strathnairn), Mansfield (Baron Sandhurst), Napier (Baron, of Magdala), Roberts (Baron, Viscount St. Pierre, and Earl), Kitchener (Baron Denton, Viscount Kitchener and Viscount Broome, and Earl), Rawlinson (Baron), Birdwood (Baron), Chetwode (Baron), and Wavell (Viscount). The only ones to be elevated to the peerage before they became C.-in-C. in India were Napier and Kitchener. Others, such as Birdwood and Chetwode, were created peers some considerable time after they left India.

The baronets were Chetwode and Rawlinson (both inherited), Stewart and Roberts (created, both for services in the Second Afghan War), Birdwood (created, for services in the 1914-18 War), and Monro (created, for services as C. in-C. in India). Haines refused a baronetcy. It is curious that Monro, the only Chief who was rewarded with a baronetcy for his services as such, would in the ordinary run of things have received a peerage and a monetary grant as one of the Army Commanders in the B.E.F., had he not been removed to India in 1916 much against his wishes.

Three won the Victoria Cross—Roberts, White and Creagh—and four the modern but very high distinction of the Order of Merit—Roberts, White, Kitchener and Chetwode. Kitchener was the first recipient of the O.M.—he was invested with it by the new King Edward VII on his return from victory in South Africa. The King was in bed recovering from the operation which had delayed his coronation; had the first O.M. under his pillow; and gave it to the surprised Kitchener. Roberts' son won a posthumous V. C. Roberts and Kitchener were both Knights of the Garter and of St. Patrick. Roberts was a Privy Councillor, and Mansfield an Irish Privy Councillor. Other Orders are shown in the list at the end of this article.

The majority of the Cs.-in-C., of course, held other high commands in peace and war. But Duff never commanded anything else. Though appointed to the command of a unit and later of a brigade, he never actually took over either, but remained on the staff. (In this he resembled three modern field-marshals of the British Service. Sir William Robertson is said never to have commanded

anything larger than a corporal's guard. Lord Nicholson never commanded a unit or formation in peace or war. Sir Henry Wilson had a provisional battalion, for a year, and a division for a few months. Yet all three became Chief of the Imperial General Staff). Duff's tenure as C.-in-C. was very short. He took over on 1st March 1914. On 1st August 1916 Sir Charles Monro was summoned to G.H.Q. in France and told by Haig that the Cabinet had decided to send him to India; and on 1st October following Duff vacated office, and went to England to give evidence before the Royal Commission on the Mesopotamian Campaign. The Commission held him third amongst those most blameworthy for its failures. He did not live to draw up his defence but, his health gradually declining, died in January 1918.

All the other Chiefs had held commands, in no case less than a division; but Mansfield never commanded any formation in war. He fought in the First Sikh War, and commanded a battalion in the Second, while in the Mutiny campaign he was Colin Campbell's Chief of Staff. But he refused the command in China in 1860, and his subsequent posts were all "peace-time"—Bombay (1860-65), India (1865-70), and Ireland (1870-75).

White had to wait 26 years after his first commission for a chance of seeing active service. He then promptly won a V.C. as well as a C.B. and a brevet lieutenant-colonelcy—all in his first campaign! This was the Second Afghan War, in which Creagh (our only Bombay Army officer, by the way) also received the Victoria Cross. Rose, too, had to wait a long time for a chance of earning distinction in the field. Commissioned in 1820, and a major within seven years of that date, it was twenty years before he saw some rather nebulous active service (as a staff officer in the Turkish army, fighting the Egyptians in Syria!); and it was not till the Crimea, when he had already to his credit a length of service greater than most officers ever attain, that he made good. As chief liaison officer with the French, or as they called it then "Queen's Commissioner at Headquarters of the French Commander-in-Chief", he served at the Alma and Inkerman, was recommended for the V.C., and got a C.B. and promotion to major-general.

Two Cs.-in-C. died during their tenure—Lockhart at Calcutta on 18th March 1900, and Rawlinson at Delhi on 28th March 1925. Others were notable for their longevity—Haines (born 10th August 1819, died 11th June 1909, aged 89\frac{3}{4}), Rose (born 6th April 1801, died 16th October 1885, aged 84\frac{1}{2}), and Napier (born 6th December 1810, died 14th January 1890, aged 79).

Napier and Roberts are buried in St. Paul's; Monro in Brompton cemetery; Rawlinson at Trent in Dorset; and Rose at Christchurch in Hampshire (I believe that Stewart is also buried in the same ground beside the Abbey). Kitchener as is well known went down with H.M.S. *Hampshire*, but is specially commemorated by the Kitchener Memorial Chapel at St. Paul's, beneath the Bell Tower, which contains a fine recumbent effigy and other sculptures by W. Reid Dick.

Amongst the London statues are those of White (equestrian, in Portland Place, just by No. 47, where Roberts lived for some years); Rose (at Knightsbridge, a fine equestrian figure by Onslow Ford, cast from guns taken in the Mutiny); Kitchener (on the Horse Guards Parade, by John Tweed); and Roberts (in the same place —a copy of the statue by Harry Bates at Calcutta, of which there is another replica at Glasgow). Other memorials are to be found in many parts of the world: mention may be made of the Lockhart Memorial Column at Rawalpindi, a landmark on the Grand Trunk Road.

Some personal details may be given. One of Napier's sons married one of White's daughters. Lady Chetwode is wife of one Field-Marshal, niece of another (the 3rd Lord Methuen), and great-grand-daughter of a third (Lord Combermere of Bhurtpore). Kitchener was I think the only bachelor: Napier had fifteen children.

I have dealt only with permanent Commanders-in-Chief. During the period under review there were four officiating, acting or temporary incumbents:—

Nairne (20th March 1898 to 3rd November 1898, on White's departure to take over as Q.M.G. at the War Office).

Birdwood (3rd August 1924 to 20th November 1924, while Rawlinson was on leave in England).

Jacob (3rd April 1925 to 5th August 1925, on Rawlinson's death).

Cassels (21st May 1933 to 18th October 1933, while Chetwode was on leave in England).

Birdwood and Cassels subsequently became Cs.-in-C. in their own right. Sir Claud Jacob has been dealt with amongst the Indian Army Field-Marshals. Lieut.-General Sir Charles Edward Nairne, K.C.B., was a distinguished officer, formerly of the Bengal Artillery, who saw much active service, greatly improved the shooting of the gunners in India during his time as Inspector-General of Ordnance (1887-92), was C.-in-C. of the Bombay Army, and died in February, 1899, aged 66.

A formal list follows:-

4th June 1860.—Lieut.-General Sir Hugh Henry Rose, G.C.B. (afterwards first Baron Strathnairn, of Strathnairn and Jhansi; Field-Marshal; G.C.S.I.).

23rd March 1865.—Lieut.-General Sir William Rose Mansfield, K.C.B. (afterwards first Baron Sandhurst; general; G.C.B., G.C.S.I.).

9th April 1870.—Lieut.-General Robert Cornelis Napier, Baron Napier of Magdala, G.C.B., G.C.S.I. (afterwards Field-Marshal).

10th April 1876.—Lieut.-General Sir Frederick Paul Haines, K.C.B. (afterwards Field-Marshal, G.C.B., G.C.Ş.I., C.I.E.).

7th April 1881.—General Sir Donald Martin Stewart, Bart., G.C.B., C.I.E. (afterwards Field-Marshal, G.C.S.I.).

28th November 1885.—General Sir Frederick Sleigh ROBERTS, V.C., G.C.B., C.I.E. (afterwards Earl, Field-Marshal, K.G., K.P., O.M., P.C., G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E.).

9th April 1893.—General Sir George Stuart White, V.C., G.C.I.E., K.C.B. (afterwards Field-Marshal, O.M., G.C.B., G.C.S.I., G.C.V.O.).

4th November 1898.—General Sir William Stephen Alexander LOCKHART, G.C.B., K.C.S.I.

19th March 1900.—General Sir Arthur Power Palmer, K.C.B. (afterwards G.C.B., G.C.I.E.).

28th November 1902.—General Viscount KITCHENER of Khartoum, G.C.B., O.M., G.C.M.G. (afterwards Earl, Field-Marshal, K.G., K.P., G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E.).

10th September 1909.—General Sir Garrett O'Moore Creage, V.C., G.C.B. (afterward. G.C.S.I.).

- 8th March 1914.—General Sir Beauchamp Duff, G.C.B., K.C.S.I., K.C.V.O., C.I.E. (afterwards G.C.S.I.).
- 1st October 1916.—General Sir Charles Carmichael Monro, G.C.M.G., K.C.B. (afterwards Baronet, G.C.B., G.C.S.I.).
- 21st November 1920.—General Baron RAWLINSON of Trent, G.C.B., G.C.V.O., K.C.M.G. (afterwards G.C.S.I.).
  - 6th August 1925.—Field-Marshal Sir William Riddell BIRDWOOD, Bart., G.C.B., G.C.S.I., G.C.V.O., K.C.M.G., C.I.E., D.S.O. (afterwards Baron, G.C.M.G.)
- 30th November 1930.—Field-Marshal Sir Philip Walhouse Chetwode, Bart., G.C.B., G.C.S.I., K.C.M.G., D.S.O. (afterwards Baron, O.M.).
- 29th November 1935.—General Sir Robert Archibald Cassels, G.C.B., C.S.I., D.S.O. (afterwards G.C.S.I.).
  - 27th January 1941.—General Sir Claude John Eyre Auchinleck, G.C.I.E.,
- C.B., C.S.I., D.S.O., O.B.E. (afterwards Field-Marshal, G.C.B.)
- 11th July 1941.—General Sir Archibald Percival WAVELL, G.C.B., C.M.G., M.C. (afterwards Viscount, Field-Marshal, G.M.S.I., G.M.I.E., P.C.).
- 17th January 1942.—General Sir Alan Fleming Hartley, K.C.I.E., C.B., D.S.O. (afterwards G.C.B., G.C.I.E.).
- 7th March 1942.—General Sir Archibald Percival Wavell, G.C.B., C.M.G., M.C. (second term).
- 20th June 1943.—General Sir Claude John Eyre Auchinleck, G.C.I.E., C.B., C.S.I., D.S.O., O.B.E. (second term).

## Field-Marshal Lord Wavell President of Kipling Society

Lord Wavell has become President of the Kipling Society. No more appropriate successor to the late Major-General Dunsterville, who was the original of Stalky, could be named. For not only is Lord Wavell now Viceroy of the land of Kipling's birth, but he combines Stalky's gift for soldiering with Beetle's love of letters.

Lord Wavell is, moreover, an ardent admirer of Kipling's works and one of the founder members of the Kipling Society. After his triumph at Sidi Barrani the Society sent him a telegram of congratulation "on Tabaqui's discomfiture". Lord Wavell showed both his knowledge of Kipling and his appreciation of the allusion by his reply: "Hope Shere Khan's skin will soon be on the council rock".

For the benefit of those who are not as familiar as Lord Wavell with the "Jungle Books", Tabaqui is a jackal who toadies to Shere Khan, a tiger, until Mowgli kills Shere Khan and hangs his skin on the council rock of the wolf pack.

The allusions to Mussolini and Hitler are obvious, "Yorkshire Post,"

### A P.O.W. IN JAPAN

## BY COLONEL W. A. TROTT, M.C.

SO MUCH has been heard of the unrelieved gloom which beset our prisoners of war in Japanese hands that I should like to show something of the lighter side which occasionally illuminated this unhappy period in our lives.

At the beginning we were camped at a place called Shiri Kawa, at the southern end of the island of Formosa. The camp, an officer camp, was a particularly insalubrious one, being located in the midst of malarious paddy fields. To add to our discomforts, we were being subjected to all the pinpricks that the Japanese knew so well how to administer. Ostensibly we were being punished because we had refused any longer to go out and labour in the fields. Starved and beaten and harried, there seemed no reason to suppose that our treatment would not so continue until the Allies retook the Island, or until we were carried off one by one to the local cemetery.

It was about 1 p.m. on a Saturday in mid-September, 1944. The bridge fiends were assembling for their week-end orgy of bridge. (We were not allowed to play games of any sort except on Saturday afternoons and Sundays.) The first glorious hand had been dealt when along the corridors came a shout that all senior officers would leave the camp at daylight next morning, with a minimum of kit.

Speculation was rife. Rumour had a free vein—and believe me, rumour in a prisoner of war camp could reach fantastic proportions. The gloomy ones predicted that the Nips had decided, rightly we had to admit, that the senior officers were a thoroughly bad influence in the camp, and they were going to remove them to a real punishment camp. The optimists opined that our merits had at last been recognised, and we were to be removed to a sumptuous hill station in the interior. As the sequel will show, our fears and our hopes each in turn gained the ascendancy as the journey proceeded.

There is little to be gained by trying to paint the discomforts of travel under the Japanese Travel Agency. They excelled themselves on these occasions. We never ceased to marvel at the number of prisoners of war they managed to pack into a given space, be it a ship or train. We were removed from the camp in lorries to the railway station. The train steamed south. That could be interpreted according to individual fancy, but when we detrained in the evening there was something familiar about the landscape, and doubts hardened into certainty as we boarded a sugar mill light railway.

We were destined for Heito. We had been there before. Of all our camps it was the gloomiest, most depressing. The "Punishment Camp School" were almost happy, Heaven help them, in their "I-told-you-so" attitude. Heito it was. The fat, greasy Commandant was there to greet us, all smiles and sucking of teeth, with an evil intent in his heart he could not conceal. Here we were thrust into thatched huts, with mud floor. We were not allowed to talk to the prisoners who were already in the camp, and to ensure there was no fraternisation they even forbade us the use of the wash places and the latrines. Our sanitary arrangements consisted of one kerosene tin at the end of the hut for 65 of us.

A gloomy night. But at dawn the Camp Commandant suggested perhaps we would like a walk in the country, just for exercise. We were not deceived by this apparently innocent suggestion. However, we had no choice, and after walking about a mile along a stony river bottom, a halt was called. Here an adjournment was made en masse to an adjacent sugarcane path. When we were again fallen in, the Commandant suggested "Callisthenics", and we "knees bended" by number for about half an hour, when we turned back towards camp. Before we reached the camp a halt was called, and we were addressed by the Commandant.

He thought a little field exercise would be good for us. Under the bank on which we were standing, he explained, was an assortment of mattocks, picks, etc., and we were to set to work to clear the field in front of us of the sugarcane roots from the last crop. I have never seen such a look of consternation pass over a crowd before. We were caught, and here, indeed, was the thin end of the wedge, which was being used to lever us back to coolie work, which we had fought so hard to get rid of. The only joy I got out of the incident was the knowledge that one or two of our confirmed and congenitally lazy ones had been out-manoeuvred, and the sight of them tugging at sugarcane roots under a tropical sun did a lot to compensate for my own bitter distaste for the work.

One other compensation there was. About two fields away a B.O.R. prisoner of war was in charge of a pair of water buffaloes, harnessed to a plough, and they were ostensibly ploughing. Years must have been spent by this man training his unwieldy team, for the pace at which they moved could not have been registered by the slowest motion camera. Ten could have been counted quite slowly between the movement of each leg in turn. We human animals thought we had achieved the ultimate in slow motion when working for the Japs, but those water buffaloes had forgotten more than we ever knew on the subject.

About two days after this we were ordered to be ready to move at day-light the next morning, with only so much kit as we could carry on our knees. Rumour this time pronounced a trip by air, and the rumour-mongers were right. Next morning, with no regrets (for we felt nothing could be worse than Heito Camp), we were taken off to the aerodrome, and flown in transport planes to an aerodrome at the southern end of the island of Kyushu, southernmost island of Japan. En route we passed over Okinawa, shortly to become the scene of desperate fighting; but that development was hidden from us.

On our arrival in Japan the atmosphere changed dramatically. We were treated almost as if we were human beings. We had a residue of our Formosa guards still with us, notably Chicago Bob, a particularly nasty interpreter, who continued to exercise Formosan methods until his activities were checked by a Japanese officer at our next halting place. It was a great relief to lose his "Youse Guys" as a preliminary to every order.

We were met by buses at the airport, and taken off to a Japanese airport hotel. Here we were given a good meal, well-served, Japanese fashion, of course, on low tables, we being seated on the floor. It was the first decent meal we had in captivity, and it left a correspondingly deep mark on our memories. To me, personally, it remains one of my most poignant memories, for I arrived with a really foul headache, and could not eat the meal—a loss I continued to brood over for the remainder of my time as a prisoner of war.

That evening we were bundled into lorries again and taken to the railway station. Before leaving, an agitated hotel manager rushed out and overwhelmed

Digitized by GOOGLE

the Jap officer-in-charge of us with a deluge of, to us, incomprehensible Japanese. It proved to be that he was missing Hotel spoons and forks. We were asked to disgorge, and from the pockets of erstwhile respectable senior officers the missing cutlery was produced. Moral: when entertaining exprisoners of war count the spoons.

We entrained, and steamed north through the most lovely scenery. A succession of landlocked bays bordered by pinewoods, and backed by high ground, made a lovely memory of the few hours before darkness set in. It is worth remarking here that we were allowed to enjoy the scenery, an hitherto unheard of luxury. Always in Formosa we had travelled with blinds closely drawn, thus ensuring the maximum of discomfort in the fantastically overcrowded carriages.

Late that night we arrived in Beppu, on the north-east coast of KYUSHU. This place had been a famous hot spring resort, and boasted numerous tourist hotels. To one of them we were taken. It catered for a Japanese clientele, some of whom were still in residence. It was delightfully clean. Here I might digress to pay tribute to the general absence of small insect irritants throughout our incarceration. In Mukden later we were to suffer a plague of sand fleas; but of that more later.

Our rooms were deeply covered with soft mats, and for bedding we were given an eider down or Indian *rezai*, which proved to be needed, as the nights were growing cold. The food was good and well served; but woefully short. Doctors could point to the advantage of getting up hungry from meals; frankly, we disagreed. We stayed in Beppu about ten days, and were left very much to our own devices, except that we got no exercise, not being allowed to move outside the hotel.

The hotel overlooked a tidal estuary, and here we had evidence of the Japanese facility of making do with primitive resources. Each morning squads of women A.R.P. workers paraded, buckets in hand, and proceeded to put in half an hour's strenuous exercise hurling buckets of water at a figure of Roosevelt perched on top of a 20-feet high moveable pedestal. When they got a hit there were congratulations from the dour male instructor; but very little evidence of levity amongst the little ladies, who would have preferred to have seen a fire engine doing the job. It was a very serious and business-like performance.

During our stay here four Jap aircraft carriers anchored in the bay. We hoped that the last of this type of craft had been sunk. There must have been adequate submarine protection across the bay somewhere, for there was no evidence of anti-submarine precautions on the carriers themselves. They lay very peacefully at anchor, and proceeded to give their crews shore leave.

We left Beppu by train in the early morning, and arrived at Moji that afternoon. You can imagine how the rumour-mongers revelled in the situation. It was known on the best authority that we were going to a pre-war hill resort near Kyoto on the main island of Honshu. Alternatively we were going up the west coast of Honshu. We waited at Moji for the electric engine to be attached, which would run us through the newly opened Moji-Shimonoseki tunnel. Gloom descended on us when an ordinary steam engine fastened itself on to the rear of our train, and we steamed off south-west along the north-west coast of Kyushu, through miles of blast furnaces.

Late on a pitch black night we detrained. No one had the faintest idea where we were. Speculation was rife. Eventually we were packed into buses, and felt our way to what looked very like a wharf. As our eyes accustomed

themselves to the gloom, we could just discern a steamer lying alongside in complete darkness. On to this we were packed, and believe me, whenever the Japanese naval authorities had the handling of us, packed was the right word. Before I leave the wharf, however, I must mention overhearing the local bus conductress helping her driver turn his bus. "Back-back," "Stop", "Awri" were the words she used—evidence of how much the Japs have borrowed in dealing with modern means of transportation.

After a most uncomfortable night we sailed at daylight for an "unknown destination". As, however, our destinations were always unknown this did not particularly worry us, and in fact the mystery did help us while away the time in speculations. We were escorted across the sea of Japan by two small escort vessels, our escort exploding two floating mines *en route*. About 5 p.m. that evening we arrived at the very modern port of Fusan, at the southern tip of Korea.

Here a surprise awaited us. On disembarkation we were taken to a European-style hotel, where we were met by the Manager and his staff, and were given a three-course European meal, followed by coffee. The meal was well-cooked, and was served by very presentable little Japanese waitresses. Whoopee! Our optimists were full of "I-told-you-so's". Of course, we were being handed over to the Russians for internment under some scheme which they knew must exist, and visions of our living at Vladivostok, surrounded by bags of Home mail, and tons of Red Cross parcels, could hardly be resisted by even the most hardened pessimist.

However, after dinner we were crowded together in a set of dirty rooms, devoid of any sanitary devices, to spend the night. Long before daylight we were taken off to the hotel for a good breakfast of fried fish, and then were entrained on the South Manchurian Railway. Crowded as usual, we were in for a three days journey. The highlights of the journey were that we were allowed to look out at the scenery; we were allowed to stretch our legs at the long halts; and we were given, at intervals, very well baked rolls of bread—the first bread we had tasted for two and a half years.

The Korean scenery was very fine. We passed through Keijo (Seoul), the capital, at night. It seemed a very modern station. Incidentally, the South Manchurian Railway was a show piece. Rolling stock and permanent way seemed to be very well kept. We crossed the Yalu river at dawn—it was a wide estuary where the railway crossed. To those of us who were students of military history, the journey from now on was full of interest.

Mukden was reached in the evening—a very sprawling, industrialised city. The next day about midday we reached our destination—a place called Shengshi-Tun, about 150 miles north-west of Mukden. A miserable looking place set in the middle of a seemingly illimitable plain. It was piercingly cold. We had met our first hard frost in Northern Korea, and now we began to realise what a Manchurian winter was to be like. The date was the 15th of October, 1944, and we were to be frozen in from then on until the middle of the following April.

There was usual delay of hours before we were put into our barracks. The cold proved too much for some of our emaciated fellow-prisoners, and stretchers had to be requisitioned to carry them off to the camp hospital. The barrack proved to be a well-built Russian two-storeyed barrack, fitted with double windows and outer doors. There were an adequate number of Russian-type

Digitized by GOOGLE

stoves (known as Patrikas). The only question was: Should we get the coal to keep them going? And this was to be my headache as Liaison Officer between the prisoners of war and the Japs for the next six months.

Another episode had ended, and with it the exalted dreams of our optimists evaporated, or perhaps it would be better to say, "frozen into immobility". Here we were, and here we stayed for seven long winter months. Nevertheless, on balance we had gained a lot. Our treatment here was better than we had experienced heretofore, and above all the move had shaken off the deadly lethargy of the malarious camp in Formosa, gave us fresh subjects for talk, and fresh bases on which to build our dreams of early freedom.

I have always wondered what actually happened to prisoners of war when peace was declared. How did they learn about it? And from whom? And what were their reactions? Little did I think that I should ever have first-hand knowledge of the experience before I finished my service.

It was now August, 1945, and we were inside the walls of a Japanese prison in Mukden. The weather was hot, and we were suffering from dysentery. Amongst our minor worries was a plague of sand fleas. We had little or no inkling as to how near the end was. We did know the Russians had declared war; but their forces were moving very slowly south across the Amur river, and there had been no sign whatever of their aircraft overhead. We ourselves were standing by to be moved at short notice to an unknown destination; and there were many amongst us who felt that the next journey might well be the one from which there is no return.

On the morning of August 16 the camp turned out to watch two very large aircraft in the distance. Whilst we watched a cloud of parachutes broke. There was the usual discussion, but the majority opinion was that it was the Japs perfecting their anti-parachute landing defences. Nevertheless, an air of suppressed excitement pervaded the camp all day, and that evening it was rumoured that some American soldiers had been seen being put into the Japs' guard room. The rumour could not be pinned to anyone who had actually seen the Americans, and in any case they might well be some American airmen prisoners of war, whom we knew to be locked up in a nearby camp.

That evening the usual rollcall parade took place. The Jap officer, as poker-faced as ever, barked his orders, and gruffly acknowledge the salute. I took the opportunity of calling his attention to the total inadequacy of the light in the room, a deficiency to which I had called his attention before on numberless occasions, always to be met by an assurance that something would be done. But nothing ever was done. On this occasion the usual assurance was given; but this time a Jap orderly arrived with a new bulb immediately after parade, and when I recovered from my astonishment I remarked to the section: "Peace must have been declared". I was right.

Next morning, August 17, the senior officers of each nationality were sent for by the Japanese Camp Commandant, who frigidly informed them that an armistice had been signed, and produced from an adjoining room an American Lieutenant-Colonel and half a dozen American enlisted men, who had arrived the day before from Kunming in Super-Fortresses to act as liaison with the American forces in China.

They had brought a wireless set with them with a range just sufficient to reach the outside world. Their arrival had been unannounced to the local lap Commander, who knew, or who professed to know, nothing of the armistice. Their reception was hostile, and their lives were in grave danger for the first few iours. However, the local Jap Commander got orders from his superiors that a fact an armistice, or in reality unconditional surrender, had taken place, and they were saved.

The arrival of one officer and six men in the middle of Manchuria did not materially alter the balance of power, and the status quo ante was continued. The Japs still continued to run the camp, carry out routine roll calls, etc., and their demeanour did not change by one iota. Unarmed as we were, and completely in the dark as to the sympathies of the local population, we acquiesced in this anomalous situation until the evening of August 20.

That evening a Russian armoured column, preceded by flights of Russian fighters, entered Mukden, and the Russian commander, with a lovely secretary as interpreter, lost no time in visiting our camp and announcing in a fiery speech: "You are free". The Russian then proceeded to fall in the Jap guards, disarm them, hand over the arms to us, and then with a bow to our senior American General, he said: "The prisoners are now yours". About a month later, when we vacated the camp, the Japs were handed back to a very disappointed Russian General, who had hoped, I feel sure, that we would have liquidated that liability.

All that night the prisoners sat round in groups and talked and talked and talked. There was no immediate evidence of jubilation. We were stunned. It would take time for us to realise that we were no longer under the domination of a sadistic, evil-minded enemy. As that realisation slowly came to us, the feeling was one of relaxation and a great tiredness. For years we had been living on our nerves. Never by night nor by day could we relax. At every corner a Jap sentry might be met with whose actions one could never predict. Even at night we were liable to close inspection by officers and sentries, and to be turned out on a roll call parade, sometimes as often as three times during a night. It took time to realise we were free from all this.

Meantime, we had to go on living on the same filthy camp. Of course, we carried out our own camp administration. Soon a few of the most senior, and of our most debilitated comrades, were flown away to Kunming. But the majority of us had to stick it out until September 10, when we were entrained for DAIREN. There we were received on board an American Hospital ship, and we could at last feel that we were free men once more.

I would be ungenerous to a degree if I failed to pay a tribute to all that our American Allies did during those last weeks in MUKDEN to alleviate our most pressing needs. Ample and luxurious food supplies were flown in from far-away Kunming and dropped by parachute. In the same way ample medical supplies, and supplies of clothing, were dropped. Aesthetically (if that is the right word), we were catered for by the provision of gramophones and loud speakers at every corner of the camp, giving us "hot" rhythm most of the twenty-four hours, and by the provision of a cinema, which reintroduced us to the "lovelies" of the Western world—whose new hair styles we hated. The process of rehabilitation had begun.

That, then, for those of you who are interested, is what it feels like to come back from death to life.

## FOUR MONTHS WATCHING ARNHEM

BY CAPTAIN S. P. MORSE.

EAST of Nijmegen the Rhine divides, and flows from then on in two get streams to the sea. On the south bank of the Southern am-b Wal-stands Nijmegen. On the north bank of the Northern-the-Low Rhine-stands Arnhem. Between the two rivers is a stretch of flat constabout 11 miles across called the Over-Betuwe, better known to 21 Army Grant "The Island."

It is polder or reclaimed land, protected from the rivers by great banks fifteen to twenty feet high. It abounds in orchards, cherryapple at plum and in the spring looking down from the hills at Nijmegen or Amber's is a mass of blossom.

After the first Airborne Division's gallant attempt to capture Animal September, '44, and the wild race of the 2nd Army across Holland to their spot had both failed to achieve the supreme goal of turning the Siegfried Line, a was formed just south of the Lower Rhine (the Northern Arm), stretching & gonally across the Island.

Being overlooked from the hills on which Arnhem stands, this line took a heavy pounding. But it held until the middle of November. At that period the Rhine is in full autumn flood. The Germans, taking advantage of the breached the "bund," flooding the Northern half of the island to a depth of five four to eight feet. This forced the 51st Highland Division back to the centre of the island. The line from then on remained roughly parallel and slights south of a small drainage canal called the Wetering Wal, which ran parallel to the Northern arm of the river.

Towards the end of November the 49th Division took over this sector of the front and remained in that spot four months. There were two brigates in the line and one in reserve, and they changed places continually. It was an odd defence line, and one which most textbook strategists would have criticised. But most of its oddities were forced upon them by circumstance.

In the first place there were belts of wire, often incomplete, and out of range, due to the fact that the line had changed postition. There were mines both anti-tank and anti-personnel, laid at various times by various units, starting with the 101st American Airborne Div. The charts of these minebelts had for the most part been lost. Then the positions themselves. Before the flood came they were, presumably, the normal Company and Platoon slit trenches. But while 49 Division was there, December to April, the ground was either the west or too hard to dig. So we took our positions in houses. The line stretched therefore, through a line of villages. Sleeping, cooking and eating took place in cellars—when dry enough—and ground floors were turned into miniature blockhouses.

The whole front was rather precarious as it depended for supplies and reinforcements on one bridge, across the Waal from Nijmegen. The German made various attempts to centure or blow up this bridge. The first was with

ne of their famous "Frog-Men" in September, '44, who by swimming down the r with explosives managed to make a considerable hole in the structure. But bridge is very tough. The hole was covered with two Bailey Bridges, laid by side, and in spite of constant shelling and very heavy traffic, it remained rm and useful link—the only one—with the rear. Floating mines were sent on the river by night, but we caught them in searchlights and exploded them ore they reached the bridge.

Just after 49th Division took over, the Germans launched a fairly strong ack at the eastern base of our salient. But due to the tenacity of the Duke Wellington's Regt., who stayed in their houses until their last round had gone, I then—so legend has it—threw household furniture at the Germans, the attack led with most of the enemy killed or drowned in the floods.

So we watched Arnhem all through December and January, in the bitter d and snow, looking longingly at the wooded slopes, seeing the sun glint on the me of the prison there. The worst thing about those four months was patrolg. Very rarely on any front has a patrol gone so heavily equipped. We tried a normal complement of weapons. But there were ladders and boats to carried in the icy weather, and we had to wear waders when the land flooded ain.

We were about a thousand yards from where the German line was premed to be. But between us there was the canal. In places it was thirty feet de and eighteen deep, and being flowing water —a drainage canal—it never oze completely. Boats of some sort were always required. On another part the front, facing up the main road which runs practically straight from Nijmegen Arnhem, there were three huge breaches in the road. The road runs on embankment most of the way, so these breaches were full of water and genery had a current running through them. A patrol had always to cross these stacles before starting any offensive action. One patrol, a company strong, nich established itself in the first floor rooms of a flooded village, was supplied to boat every night.

All through the winter, which seemed very long and hard, we went back roccasional rest periods to Nijmegen. The town had been badly damaged by merican bombing, by fighting, and by, at first almost continuous, and then oradic, shelling. But we ran occasional dances there, which were a great coess. We shared our rations with the people on whom we were billeted, and seived in return much kindness and generosity. They were always ready with oup of tea and a smiling face, even though the tea was a little weak and the nile a bit haggard. Since they all slept in their cellars, their best bedrooms are always ours for the asking.

We watched rather enviously, throughout January, the preparations for a Reichswald push to the Rhine. But when the time came we found we had in hands full with the fresh flooding of the Island, due to the rise of the Rhine wel. February and March found us once again experimenting with new methods water-borne attack.

Our greatest enemy during the whole period was lack of exercise. Cooped in cellars all day, and being alert all night did not improve health. Various ethods were devised. Frequent changing of companies within battalions, so at the reserve companies, away from direct enemy observation could go for arches, runs, play football and so on. Even in very forward areas, where

possible, we went out for short walks at night. These efforts were very successful, and, combined with a generous allotment of Brussels leave and cinema shows, kept up morale throughout a period of disheartening inactivity.

But at last spring came. By the end of March the floods receded, and the buds began to show in the orchards. The grass where the floods had been shone a lush green. Two brigades were taken out of the line to train. We were to attack Arnhem! We were to avenge 1st Airborne at last!

We cleared the Island with one sweep. The Rhine obstacle was surmounted by sides epping to the East and crossing the Ijssel east of Arnhem. It was beautiful weather, warm and bright. Even the air which we breathed, which had smelled for so long of death and decay, seemed sweeter. After a brief struggle we captured Arnhem and pushed west along the road to Utrecht and Amsterdam. We then had a little time to look round Arnhem and the country of the great September battles.

Arnhem itself is a beautiful town. It overlooks the river, being built on the steep wooded slopes of the northern bank. In the spring it is very lovely. But this spring it was the scene of a desolation which contrasted horribly with its natural surroundings. The whole of the civilian population of the town had been evacuated some months before. Then the Germans with their Dutch collaborators, the Dutch S.S., had systematically looted every single house. When they had finished taking articles of value, they threw the furniture and movables into the street. Many of the houses were badly knocked about. The bridge across the Rhine, the pride of Dutch engineering, was a mass of torn and twisted steel. The railway bridge had been blown in four separate places.

Further west, in Osterbeek and Wolfhezen, there were the signs of an extremely fierce battle. Kit and equipment lay scattered everywhere among the trees in the wooded country above the river. Jeeps stood where they had stopped, stripped of their tyres and electrical parts. Knocked out tanks and anti-tank guns faced each other along roads and lanes. Parachutes still dangled from the branches of the trees. Supply containers lay everywhere, open, empty. Graves were strewn haphazard, some only half-filled.

In one place, evidently a headquarters, we found an unopened box full of official stationery! All this had been there for six months. Rain had soaked it, frost and snow had covered it. Except for the odd German looking for souvenirs it had remained untouched. A memorial to 5,000 very gallant men, many of whom still lie there. But we passed on. Arnhem became a base. A Bailey bridge was erected across the river. The inhabitants began to trickle back and search for their belongings.

The war ended. Arnhem is slowly recovering. The resting place of Sir Philip Sidney and of many other gallant English gentlemen will be remembered in the annals of war and in the tomes of history. But the 49th Division will always see it, in the distance across the floods, its windows glistening in the rare sunlight, the domed roof of the gaol standing out among the lesser buildings and the hill behind covered with red brick houses. They will remember it as the prize they watched for four weary months. They will forget, as all soldiers do the cold, the damp, the discomfort of those four months. They will remember only spring as it came that year, a great deliverance, a victory, a new birth.

## THINGS PEOPLE SAY AND WRITE

112

"The most fatal slogan ever invented is 'safety first'.—Mr. Clement lee.

- "Railway sleepers of reinforced concrete are now being made by a British m.".—P.I.B., India.
- "We are at least a year ahead of the world in the jet and jet turbine coplanes".—Mr. J. Woodburn, M.P.
- "Nearly 200,000 of our soldiers were killed in the Burma Campaign".—
  Ineral Kimura, former Japanese C.-in-C. in Burma.
- "In Sweden the private doctor is paid an agreed fee for keeping families all throughout the year".—Mr. G. Bernard Shaw.
- "The theory of atomic structure of matter originated with the ancient seeks earlier than 470 B.C.".—Professor A. M. Low.
- "Democracy without leadership is like a flock of sheep without a shepherd; it during the war Britain had that shepherd".—Field-Marshal Smuts.
- "There are now 200,000 more people employed in the production of goods the export market than there were before the war".—"Daily Herald".
- "British shippards are now building a bigger tonnage of merchant ships an all the rest of the world taken together".—Lloyd's Shipping Register.
- "There are about 65,000,000 people in the British Colonies, of whom out 42,000,000 belong to the different races in Africa".—Mr. Henry Swance.
- "Britain's battleships of the future will fire atomic shells, and her submarines ill be equipped with atomic torpedoes".—Editor of "Jane's Fighting Ships".
- "Seventy per cent. of women do not paint their nails, nearly 5 per cent on to use lip-stick, but almost every woman uses powder".—National Shopping treey, in the U.K.
- "There are still about 800,000 tons of ammunition and explosives dumped Great Britain; some of the biggest dumps are in the Forest of Dean in South ales, and in Savernake Forest in Wiltshire".—B.B.C.
- "Treasury note circulation in Britain has risen from about £500 million pre-war days to about £1,340 million to-day; bank deposits in the country we increased from £2,250 million to £4,860 million".—Norman Crump.
- "When I spoke about the Beveridge Report in the United States I ways had to begin by explaining that it was not a plan to enable the people Britain to retire from work on an income provided by Lend-Lease".—Lord weridge.
- "Any chemist's shop in Great Britain can now supply penicillin. It can used for septic throats, inflamed eyes, infections of the ear and throat, gum publes. pneumonia and meningitis—under doctor's orders".—Mr. J. Langdon wies, "Daily Mail".

"The International Fund to operate under the Bretton Woods Monetary Agreement will have a capital of £2,200,000,000; the International Bank, which will arrange the financing of long-term projects, will have a share capital of £2,250,000".—"Daily Mail".

"The British Museum was hit by six high explosives, one oil bomb, and hundreds of incendiaries, so that the building was largely destroyed. It may be years before it can be reopened on the pre-war scale".—Sir John Forsdyke, Director of the British Museum.

"The men of Britain who are being attacked and killed in Palestine to-day are of the same breed as those who released Jewish victims from Belsen and Buchenwald. It was the Germans, not the British, who made war on the Jews and exterminated 5,000,000 of them".—"Daily Mail".

"The density of population in India is only 246 per square mile, compared to 965 in England and Wales.... The average span of life in India is 26 years; in British, 62 years.... India is now the 8th largest industrial country in the world".—Mr. Sidney Jacobson, in a B.B.C. discussion.

"During the War the U.S.A. made available to the rest of the world under Lend-Lease no less than 250,000,000 oz. of silver of which over 160,000,000 ozs. went to India. This silver must, under the terms of the agreement, be repaid in kind over a number of years".—Oscar Hobson, City Editor of "News Chronicle".

"In New Zealand people live on an average for 56 years. In one of the countries through which I passed on my way to Britain people live on an average for 27 years. You cannot have a 68-27 years standard in the same world and still say there will be no more war".—Mr. G. Nash, Finance Minister of New Zealand.

"Thousands of public houses in Great Britain will soon display the golden 'Chinthe' badge of the Chindits. It will tell any ex-Chindit that somewhere near there is an ex-Chindit officer who can help him with his 'civvy street' problems".—Major-General Lentaigne, speaking at the first re-union dinner of the Chindits in London.

"The British 'Auster Arrow' plane will soon be on the market. It will cost £795; running costs will be 1½d. per mile; it will take off in 80 yards; climb 2,000 ft. in less than four minutes; has a maximum speed of over 100 m.p.h.; a stalling speed of 26 miles m.p.h.; petrol consumption is 25 m.p.g.; and it has a range of 300 miles".—"News Chronicle".

"The British Army—it doesn't matter under which Government it is serving—wherever it is stationed when it is called upon to perform 'police' duties show the same tact, the same forbearance, the same sense of discipline, as does the London policeman. It is almost instinctive in the British soldier not to use unnecessary force".—Earl Winterton, M.P.

"The Royal barge used by the King and Queen during the Victory procession on the Thames is a remarkable craft. Built in the 17th century, it is as watertight as ever. About 40 ft. long, with canopied seats at the centre, it carries a brass plate on the stern engraved 'Barge built for Queen Mary by William III in 1689' It is navigated by eight watermen."—"Evening Standard".

"The new No. 1 Army Uniform, recently inspected by the King and Queen, is a dark blue, with piping in regimental colours. The head-dress is a beret with

Digitized by GOOSIC

imental badge, but for ceremonial occasions a peaked cap and a scarlet belt y be worn. For rifle regiments the colour of the uniform will be green; for King's Royal Rifle Corps black; and for Highland regiments, dark piper en".—B.B.C.

"Yesterday Mr. Geoffrey de Havilland flew back to this factory a small less machine called the Swallow. It is the first time a swept-back wing chine has been successful in this country. It is jet-propelled, and this protoce is going to lead us into a very great future in aeroplane development". Arthur Woodburn, M.P., speaking at the De Havilland Aircraft Company's story at Hatfield.

"The best recruiting sergeant is not the fellow with the ribbon round hat, but the Regular soldier who, at the end of his service comes out and can k the world straight in the eyes, is proud of the Army of which he has been a mber, and can say to his sons, his relations and his young friends: 'Go along, lads, go and join as I did. I only wish I had the chance again".—Colonel E. Wigg, M.P.

"More than 250,000,000 of Britain's new 'peace' stamps are being nted. They are of two denominations— $2\frac{1}{2}$ d and 3d; the former has illustrates of a tra tor, a ship, a fire station and two workmen's houses, presenting agriculture, transport, industry and building; the latter has illustrates of a set-square and dividers, and a bricklayer's trowel and bricks, resenting planning and reconstruction".—B.B.C.

"As a compensation for its losses and sufferings during the war, the tish Commonwealth has immone assets, mostly of the imponderable kind. has a tough stock, hardened and purified by experience and adversity, a ong social system, a unique democratic constitution, a high faith in human alism, the saving sense of humour, and, like some vast geographic nervous tem, it lies spread over the globe, drawing and supplying energy and power trywhere".—Field Marshal Smuts.

"In order to purchase arms and war materials in overseas markets, Britain d no less than £1,118 million pounds worth of her foreign investments. Britain's all export trade was cut to one-third of its pre-war value so as to release shiping space for transport of war materials from abroad and to free factories and riches for the manufacture of these materials into armaments".—An economic respondent of P.I.B.

"In ratio to population, the Canadians are lending Britain about four times much as the Americans".—Mr. J. B. MacGeachy, B.B.C.

"After the occupation of Germany discoveries made by the Allies showed the Germans had progressed farther than either Britain or the United States rocket propulsion at the time the war ended".—"News of the World".

"In the future Army there will be four technicians to every fighting man".—
eral Crocker.

"We have developed a revolutionary type of motor tyre. It has no er tube, and so cannot be punctured in the ordinary way. On test these es covered the amazing distance of 14,500 miles without failure, and were culated to have a potential life up to 30,000 miles."—Mr. H.L. Kenward, sident of the Tyre Manufacturers Conference, London.

#### WAS OUR PRE-WAR TRAINING WRONG?

BY LIEUT.-COLONEL W. H. HUELIN.

DISCUSSION in the Mess a few nights ago turned on the subject of the U.S.I. Gold Medal Essay Competition of a couple of years ago. There seemed such diverse opinions that I venture to submit this article in the hope that it will stimulate further thoughts on the subject, and that its contents may be of value to those charged with the responsibility of framing post-war training.

It will be recalled that the subject set for the Competition was:

"In the past it has been the policy that the training of the armed forces of the Empire should not be related to any particular type of terrain. Discuss this policy in respect of both land and air forces, in the light of experience gained in the present war."

The first sentence of the above paragraph is used as a statement of fact, but on examination it will be found that the practice of the past does not altogether qualify that statement. Let us obtain a clear and correct picture of the case by examining how and where our fighting forces did exactly receive their training in the past.

The British Regular Army and Territorial Force were trained chiefly for a war on the continent of Europe, a good deal of attention being naturally given to combined operations, a somewhat special subject. Moreover, as the Army was working on the Cardwell System, many Regular units had experienced training in different parts of the Empire but mostly in India, thereby, as will be clarified later, receiving training in a tropical climate and in varying terrain, in most cases quite different to that found on the European continent.

The Dominion and Colonial Forces, in which are included those of Canada, New Zealand and Africa, carried out training in terrains peculiar to their respective countries. These, it will be accepted were of varied natures—that carried out by our colonial forces of East and West Africa especially so—namely jungle warfare; and from there came leaders and many men to help us fight the Japanese in the jungles of East Asia.

The Army in India trained, and had experienced warfare in, ground of widely different kinds. Those units employed on the North-West-Frontier had had much training and some fighting there. Many units of the Indian Army, especially the old Piffer ones, considered themselves specialists in that type of warfare; and well they might. There also existed an Eastern Frontier Force and a Burma Defence Force, trained for and experienced in fighting in the jungle tracts to be found in India's Eastern borderlands.

The last of the British land Forces to be considered are those units of the British and Indian Armies that were scattered in the more out-of-the-way parts of the Empire; Malta, Egypt, Aden, Singapore, China, Burma and few other places. In some there may not have been sufficient troops to carry out training higher than that of the Battalion, but nevertheless, experience in training over divers natures of terrain must certainly have been obtained by those stationed there.

So far no mention has been made regarding the training of our Air Forces, it briefly put, our home Air Force, such as existed, was trained for operations in pport of our Expeditionary Force, while that portion out in India often support-our troops operating in the mountainous country of the N.W.F., and that ationed in Egypt, Aden and Iraq trained and operated in desert country.

Sufficient has been mentioned above to show that although training in ried terrain had not been definitely specialized in, yet in actual practice, much ch training and experience had been gained prior to the outbreak of the present ar. It was the presence of other factors that to a great extent neutralized the due of that training, and which are to be guarded against in our post-war system we are to have suitable forces ready for use against potential enemies when and herever they may in future appear.

The other factors alluded to were two in number. First, our general stional apathy towards the looming war-clouds, and secondly, the economic ringency placed on all matters that are required for the building up of a really icient fighting force. These two factors combined rendered the production of e right type of leaders, and men with modern battle equipment, wellnigh imssible, and resulted in the land and air training of our forces being executed out-of-date and hence unsound lines.

It is more than likely that had we been more alive to the world situation and velopments in modern armaments, the supposed failings in our pre-war training stem would never have appeared at all. Our soldiers and airmen with up-to-te weapons in their hands and their leaders minds trained to work in proper annels for battle under present conditions, would have done justice to their ofessions in whatever part of the Empire they might have been called upon to to.

Reports of our Intelligence Service would have been credited, and sufficient me would have been given to our General Staff to make proper preparations to set the emergency. No policy or system of training that had our pre-war economic and mental background and outlook could have been reasonably expected to oduce troops fit to engage an aggressive, modern equipped, and trained hostile esent-day first-class Power, with any hope of success. It would therefore be fair to attach all the blame for our ill-success in the opening phases of the esent war to our pre-war training policy and system.

## THE LESSONS TO BE LEARNT.

Let us now examine the experiences of the late war in the different theatres operations:

Case 1.—The fighting in Poland, Holland, Belgium and France showed the superiority of well-trained modern armoured land forces, employed in junction with modern ruthlessly operated air forces and battle-trained minds, or our own and allied troops, still labouring under a last-war mentality and wided with little armour and much out-of-date equipment.

Lesson 1.—Our future land and air forces must be trained and equipped modern lines.

Case 2.—Norway showed us the futility of committing ill-trained, poorly ipped troops, insufficiently supported from the air to operations in difficult ntry against a prepared enemy.

LESSON 2.—"Special troops with special equipment are required for rations in country of a particular nature."

Case 3.—The battles in Italian Bast Africa were won by trops in had received no highly specialized training although perhaps not against a like determined enemy. They were, however, over varying terrain and fought with weapons with which our pre-war army was normally equipped.

LESSON 3.—"Our arms and equipment being approximately equipment of the enemy, our pre-war trained soldiers and airmen showed that the could produce success in battle."

Case 4.—The initial stages of the North African campaign give a said lesson to the last, but with the entry of the Germans into the African pictal namely, the appearance of properly handled modern equipped and trained from a change of fortune was produced and we were soon with our backs to the ulast. El Alamein.

LESSON 4.—Superoir weapons will often decide the issue in battle.

Case 5.—A reversal of the fortunes of war is next seen in our glain advance to Tripoli, and the subsequent surrender of the enemy in Tunish head about by our battle-hardened troops having to hand ample modern equipment and a powerful air force to support them.

LESSON 5.—"Well-trained troops with an ample supply of first-be weapons and equipment, combined with air superiority over the enemy of give decisive results."

Case 6.—The defeats we suffered in Hong Kong, Singapore and Main were not the results of bad training in the true sense. They were the outcomed the same unpreparedness and irresolution as previously mentioned in the opain phases of the War in Europe, when we were there in a like manner faced by a aggressive resolute and fully prepared enemy. The campaigns in Burma, will our loss of Rangoon and retreat through the Burmese jungle to India, were an a product of our unpreparedness and indecision and not the results of bad training. In these, however, there came to light a weakness in a particular type of warfare to which we, in pre-war days, had given little serious attention; manners in the serious attention; manners are s

Up to then our jungle wars had been restricted to fights against a smill civilised, poorly armed, enemy; of warfare in jungle-country against suitable equipped and well-trained troops of a modern first-class Power, few of us his little dreamt. For this failing the blame cannot justly be laid against our training policy or soldiers generally, but again rather to our narrow pre-war mineral to towards military matters. This and an unsatisfactory political situation of doubt brought about a moral depression in the Indian Army which is affected the fighting qualities of our leaders and troops.

LESSON 6.—"In this case adequate troops accustomed to openie is jungle were not at hand when required, nor was the preparation and organisable for defence of areas thickly populated by Asiatics, properly understood."

Case 7.—The operations of our Dominion Troops in New Guines went to show how, when we had there brought together resolute and suitably equipped troops with adequate air support, we were able to transform a back-to-the-will situation, somewhat similar to that at El Alamein, to a brilliant advance our situation of the sea as an alternative to surrender.

LESSON 7.—" The ability of the right kind of properly equipped toops

An altered map of the world will indicate to us where our future battles ay have to be fought, and our experiences in the late war should show us what fferent forms of training will be required in such places, but no matter nat carefully planned system of training we may choose to adopt, neither will e information gained in the late war, nor will any new system of training be of rail, unless we keep our minds alert to the worldwide varying situations caused the continual changing mentality of mankind and the improvement and novations in weapons and machines.

We must resolve to give our fighting forces of the best we can produce ad also our full moral support, that they may feel that it is on them and their oficiency that we are dependent for our survival when faced with danger.

### THE SYSTEM SUGGESTED

Although it has been shown that prior to the late war we did have some arts of our forces trained to fight in particular kind of terrains, our experiences ow have brought out the importance of having very highly specialised troops ained for battle in those particular terrains.

To meet this demand we must in future have at least a nucleus of specialists skilled; experts in Combined Operations to study the problems involved in adding troops on to hostile shores; experts in Jungle Warfare to tell us how to mbat nature as well as the human enemy in such regions, and also how modern ventions may be best used to assist us there. Our experts in Desert Warfare all be required to discover the antidotes to the difficulties met with when ampaigning in hundreds of miles of sandy wastes in a torrid climate, and how tal blows may be struck there at a less prepared enemy.

May it never be that our future world will necessitate these experts and eir deadly instruments being called into action, yet, were it ever so necessary, en we would have at hand the means whereby an aggressive belligerent would at once checked and ourselves probably saved from having to shed great mantities of our blood and treasure in fighting out another long war.

As in other professions, so does each special type of military subject need a arter where all details affecting that type may be studied by experts. All new eas and material accessories of the particular type of warfare should be brought that centre for examination and experiment. These centres should take eir shape in specialist Training Schools. Besides a purely teaching side there ll need be a "G" side concerned with keeping the teaching up-to-date with the test information received on the tactics, new weapons and equipments connectwith their particular problems.

The following types of schools will emerge:

Mountain Warfare School; Town, Village and Street Fighting School; esert Warfare School; Coast Attack School; Jungle Warfare School; and Arctic arfare School.

Such schools would be set up in country where the terrain is correct for e specialised type of warfare as taught in them. Considerable numbers of cops must be stationed nearby who would be recognised as specialists in that articular brand of warfare. These would be armed, equipped and clad according their roles. They would remain stationed there indefinitely, and should are designation titles such as :—5(Mtn) Bn. Royal York Regt., 7(Coast Attack) a. Royal Lancaster Regt. etc. All officers and many N.C.Os would be required pass through their school, and refresher courses would be held.

These schools would give instruction in the details of all the minutestions affecting the main subject taught. For example, the Coast Attack Shi would instruct in the use of assault craft, the beach organization, the blue and attack on to enemy strong points, the consolidation and mainteness of positions gained. Troops of all arms would be required to attend.

In the staff of the school the staffs of the formations in the area would conclude as instructors or experimental specialists, while the formations working it is area would be required to pass on to the school the results of any practical tense carried out by them in training exercises. The teaching at the school wait thereby be kept abreast of the latest ideas and be closely knitted to what we being carried out in practice.

In the event of a threat of war in any particular theatre G.H.Q. wax have at its disposal through the above organization a nucleus of troops high trained and properly equipped for immediate operations in any role in unit terrain, and also the wherewithal for a rapid expansion of any specialist for

The late war showed the importance of specialized training schools, mi it will be argued that certain specialist schools already existed before 1999. It point here advanced is, however, that schools by themselves are inadequate, at they become staffed by personnel who often have a theoretical knowledge of their special subject, and have a tendency to become academic, theoretical to labour out-of-date ideas. It is essential that the specialist school be light up with the troops whose operational role it is concerned with.

The troops themselves should be periodically subjected to exercise of severe nature at which men, clothes, equipment and weapons would be thought by tested. During such exercises the experimental staff of the school would required to attend. G.H.Q. would also be required to send its representative in order that the ideas of the Higher Command might be brought into line will the latest developments in that particular type of warfare, and obtain the construction mental picture to enable them to meet the requirements of commanders, opening in particular theatres.

It is not intended that our forces should be divided off into waterist compartments. General warfare units would still continue and the technical schools of the various arms would remain, but, in addition to those, a number of specialist formations with their kindred schools would be instituted.

An important point in training that must not be omitted is that of the value of training literature. Well-written and illustrated booklets are of inment value, especially during the period of expansion of the forces. In the past, training manuals have had little appeal to other than the military scholar; in fact they have been so ably condensed that a non-military trained mind would have difficulty in following them. Let the future military literature be therefore of a more vivid character, and more on the line of the various military pample lets that were prepared and published during the late war.

As for our land forces, so will it have to be for the training of our at forces. Air operations over jungle country calls for special training both as regard general bombing of enemy targets and for the close support of our ground troops in that type of country. Specialization in many other branches of aerial war are would certainly be also recommended, but how far that had already been contribed out in the past and what the detailed requirements are, the writer is not in a position to state accurately. Took forces were set up during the war, and

is known that these were always very highly trained for each particular underaking. It is thought that the future training policy of our air forces should cerainly include whatever specialist training that may be required to carry out those pecial tasks, both independent and in conjunction with our land forces, that are considered as likely ones in the event of another war.

All the battles of the war, and the lessons to be learnt from them, showed he tremendous importance of weapon mastership. All technical schools, units and individuals, whatever weapons they are concerned with, must have the lighest possible degree of skill in their use. To acquire that degree of skill troops nust be battle-minded and fighting fit. Therefore let us have in our post-war rmies more of the "bullet and bayonet" and "bully beef and biscuit" spirit and ess of the "walking out dress" and "milk and lemonade" atmosphere that was allowed to pervade in pre-war days.

It is not proposed to enter into details regarding the general training as carried out in units. This will, to a great extent, be governed by the system as already suggested above. There are, however, strong reasons for outlining some system by means of which weapon-training and other individual training may be improved.

Generally speaking the standard of weapon training and some other branches of individual training attained in peace-time, especially in some Indian units, left a good deal to be desired. In many it has been left to the Annual Weapon Training Courses, preceded by a ten days preliminary weapon training period, to produce the desired standard. On the completion of their annual W.T. Courses ranks were seldom required to fire a shot until the following year, and therefore gave little further attention to the matter until then. A system whereby great improvements in such training was obtained in an Infantry unit is therefore worthy of description. The system is especially applicable to service under peace-time conditions, when weapon-training is spread over a greater part of the year and occupies a prominent place in a unit's annual activities.

The system is briefly as follows:--

A "Unit Weapon Training Committee" is formed, consisting of the 2ndin-Command, the Subedar Major and a Unit Weapon Training N.C.O., the latter
being a man who has distinguished himself at a W.T. School. The Unit Intellgence Officer may also, or in place of one of the above, be included. The business
of this Committee is to test each company every quarter in all its weapons.
This may first appear as a very formidable task, but in reality can be accurately
and quite expediently carried out if the following method is adopted.

Each fortnight one company is taken and a fixed number of ranks from each platoon selected at random; say twenty. Each platoon is made liable to be tested in any weapon or subject. If, for example No. 7 Platoon is selected for the rifle test, then twenty other ranks are extracted, and each man required to shoot a given number of rounds from a fixed distance at an appropriate target. A qualifying standard having previously been decided on, each man that qualifies counts as a point for his platoon.

The next platoon is then taken and tested at an appropriate test with the L.M.G., and then another in a grenade accuracy and distance throwing test with dummy grenades. Finally Tommy Gunners, Anti-Tank Riflemen, personnel armed with the pistol and 2-inch mortar gunners are tested. The aggregate ranks that qualify at the different tests gives the company's figure of W.T. merit.

An additional test that may be included is an Assault Course Test let this any platoon is called on to cover the assault course. Style, time taken all physical condition at the finish decide the points earned. The latter test in the easy to mark but is well worthwhile including. Tests in mine-laying, canadary and rapid wiring, etc., may be similarly conducted for the platons of the H.Q. Coy. The standard of each test should be raised from time to the until a really creditable one is reached.

The testing of each platoon should not take longer than half as her once the layout has been made and the scheme got going. A Company of therefore be tested in some eight subjects in approximately four hours and a the Committee has a fortnight in which to test each company, it will be realist that when the tests are spread over that period, they can be very easily fitted any sub-unit training programme. At the end of the quarter the company will the highest figure of merit should be proclaimed the best W.T. Company for the quarter and allowed to carry a W.T. badge or some distinction on its Cop. by

or be recognised in some other suitable way.

The value of this system has been proved in practice, and the results obtaind were really astonishing. It not only tended towards attaining a high units standard in the unit, enabling the C.O. to see at a glance the capabilities of any of his sub-units at any branch of training at any time, but also struck at the root of the matter, namely the individual man, as every rank was every the months forced to show whether he was a liability or an asset to his sub-united therefore strove to overcome his defects. The competitive spirit and explications in sections, platoons and companies was raised, and a real live and continuity interest in a soldier's main job was kept up throughout the year.

As regards the system of recruit training, that which existed in India part to the late war and continued during it, whereby the newly-joined soliz received his initial training at an expandable Training Centre that supplied reinforments to a Group of Active units, did, on the whole, prove satisfactory. It addition of battalions for more advanced training, special and otherwise, was useful adjunct, but could probably be dispensed with in peacetime without affecting the efficiency of Active Battalions. The value of these Advanced Training Units is, however, great in wartime, and a note for their re-introduction in the event of a future big war should be made.

Under peace conditions the normal Training Centre can cope with smal parties carrying out post-recruit training, and these can easily be periodically absorbed and brought up to trained soldiers standard in the Active Battalical later. In wartime, however, the case is somewhat different, as, not only has the Training Centre many more men to deal with, but it is often located in an area where ground is not available for carrying out advanced training. Advanced Training Units can, on the other hand, be stationed in country that is suitable for training in the particular type of warfare that their respective Active Battalions require men trained in. These are strong arguments in favour of such battalions being considered as important for inclusion in our future training system.

There will always be many obstacles to the introduction of any new system whatever that chosen system may be, but to enable any training system to have a chance of proving itself successful in wartime it is once again stressed that it is of vital importance that the nation should continue to giv: the fighting fores its whole hearted moral, and material approach in necessarial

For their own part our forces cannot go far wrong in their training if the ject of training, as laid down in I.T. Training for War, 1937, Chapter III, Sec. is kept in view and always aimed at, namely:

- I. To produce in the individual: A formidable fighting man like an epert hunter, always alert and seeking an opportunity of striking at his quarry watching his movements with a view to future opportunities, confident ad expert in the use of his weapons, skilled in the use of ground and able stand fatigue without undue loss of efficiency.
- II. To produce in the unit: Control and flexibility like a good machine, ach part working smoothly and in harmony with the remainder to achieve the bject of the commander.

## lelping Disabled Indian Servicemen

Established in 1917, Queen Mary's Technical School for Disabled Indian olders at Kirkee has now taught nearly 3,000 Indian Servicemen a useful trade, hus enabling them to earn a livelihood in the outside world.

The school is open to Servicemen of the R.I.N., the Indian Army, the I.I.A.F., Imperial Service troops and Military Police who have been invalided ut of the service as unfi for further military duty. While undergoing training lisabled men are provided with uniforms, food, bedding and other necessities, s well as an allowance of Rs. 8 per month.

Courses at the school vary from six months to two years and each man s free to elect the trade he wishes to learn. After he has undergone the prescribed course of instruction he is examined and on passing, is awarded a diploma.

Among those who have qualified and received diplomas from the school luring the 29 y ars of it; existence are 1,083 automobile drivers, 821 oil engine drivers, 255 tailors and 46 electricians. As a sideline many garments and materials are manufactured by trainees for customers in all parts of India and each student s paid for the wok he turns out.

## Ex-Servicemen's Co-operative Society

More than 5,000 ex-Servicemen have joined the Chakwal Ex-Servicemen Welfare Association, recently inaugurated at Chakwal, Jhelum district, Punjab. The Association, a non-communal and non-political organisation is planning for the economic uplift and social welfare of ex-Servicemen and their dep ndents and will work in close touch with the District Soldiers', Sailors' and Airmen's Board and with the local Labour Exchange.

"Self Help" is its motte and this Association is forging ahead with a programme which includes employment information bureaux, an institute and a hoste for x-Servicemen's sons. Another step towards "Self Help" is the Thakwal Ex-Service Co-operative Sale Society Ltd. which is to tock and sell to x-Service personnel controlled article and farming items. It will also collect and market ex-Servicemen's produce, both agricultural and industrial.

So far Rs. 50,000 have been subscribed to the society, membership of which s restricted to ex-Servicemen, including officers. A Motor Transport Co-operative 30 iety is also to be started and a Construction Co-operative Society is being planned.

#### NEW PAY CODE FOR THE BRITISH SERVICES IN INDIA\*

By Major-General J. B. Dalison, O.B.E.

A NNOUNCEMENTS in the Press have told you that from 1st July, 1946, the British Services in India come under the new U.K. pay code and the U.K. income-tax code. The principles and most of the details of the new U.K. pay code were given in two White Papers (Cmd. 6715 and Cmd. 6750) issued by H.M. Government in December, 1946 and March, 1946, and also in the pamphlet on the subject (8431—A/W. 5) recently issued by the Government of India.

What are the reasons for the change in the pay and tax codes? Up till now India has always had her own pay code for the British Service as well as for the Indian Army. That code has been subject to Indian income-tax, and on the whole people have been very well satisfied. Why is it necessary to change it? The reason is that the machine which worked well enough in peace did not work well in war.

Let me take your minds back to the time when India became a base for S.E.A.C., and British troops arrived in India in larger numbers than ever before. Every time a reinforcement arrived he had to be brought on to a new pay code. This presented no great difficulty in the case of the B.O.R., but it was a most cumbersome business so far as officers were concerned, and every individual, officer or other rank, had to have his income reassessed to a new tax code.

Strictly speaking, when these reinforcements left India for operations afield, they should have been changed back again to the U.K. pay and tax codes. This, however, was found to be administratively impossible, with the result that they were left on the Indian pay code. As a result, British troops throughout S.E.A.C. and in Japan were being paid under the Indian pay code, though some of them had never set foot in India. This was obviously illogical, and naturally H.M. Government wished as soon as possible to gather within the fold again the British troops in S.E.A.C. and Japan.

July 1, 1946 being the date of the introduction of the new U.K. pay code was an obvious date from which to make the change. After much discussion, it was decided that, in order to facilitate accounting, British troops in India should be brought into line with British troops throughout the rest of the world from that same date. Simplicity of administration is thus the reason why you are governed by the U.K. pay and tax codes from 1st July 1946. This simplicity of administration is a very vital factor. It is certainly calculated to give less cause for grumbling about slowness in settling up accounts, and officers who during the war have been extremely slow to grasp the intricacies of the Indian pay code will no longer have reason to concern themselves with more than one pay code.

The New Pay Code as it affects B.O.Rs.—Hitherto B.O.Rs in India have drawn U.K. rates of pay, converted at the concessional rate of exchange of ls. 4d. to the rupee, instead of at the standard rate of ls. 6d. to the rupee. In effect,

<sup>\*</sup>In this lecture, given in Delhi recently, General Dalison, who is a member of the Post-War Pay Committee, spoke only from the Army point of view. Generally, since the new pay code has been drawn up on an inter-Service basis, what applies to the Army applies equally, rank for rank, to the Royal Navy and the R. A. F., though there are some minor exceptions to this,

is has given them a 12½% addition to their U.K. rates of pay. Elsewhere the world B.O.Rs have drawn U.K. rates of pay, and in countries where the st of living was deemed to be higher than in the U.K. thay have also drawn blonial allowance.

That is the treatment they will now receive in India. They will draw to appropriate rate of pay as given in the White Paper, plus Local Overseas llowance appropriate to their rank. A formula by which to calculate their war coss while giving them full credit for the  $12\frac{1}{2}\%$  extra now drawn in India was tus easy to achieve. It is shown in Appendix "A".

Rates of Local Overseas Allowance are given in Appendix "B". The rarried rate of this allowance is not admissible to an individual whose family is in India. This must obviously be the case, since the object of this allowance to meet the extra cost which is inherent in living in India. I will deal later ith the Indian Transitional Allowance, which is shown in the same Appendix.

What is the position of married B.O.Rs, in so far as they especially are fected? Under the new pay code the marriage allowance for B.O.Rs as well as ficers has been fixed at a figure which is intended to include provision for rent a house and all allied charges. The married B.O.R. whose family is in India ill therefore in future have to pay rent for his furnished married quarters, and will also have to pay for his fuel and light. Rent charges will be at standard orld-wide rates, which have not yet been fixed. For B.O.Rs, war excess on harriage allowance will be calculated exactly as stated in the White Paper. In addition, B.O.Rs whose families were in India on 30t June 1946 may elect be remain on Indian rates of marriage allowance, with all that those rates imply the way of free housing, separation allowance, etc.

If, however, this election is made, the married rate of Local Overseas illowance will not be admissible as it is already included in the marriage llowance; allowances equal to those under the Family Allowances Act will not be dmissible as children's allowances are already admissible; and the qualifying llotment will be subject to the rules in the White Paper.

How does the w pay code affect officers?—Under the Indian pay code all fficers received an inclusive rate of pay from which, together with lodging allowance, they had to provide all their requirements, including servant and food. The inclusive rate naturally included elements to provide for this. The system was well enough understood before the war, but officers who arrived during the war showed a most unfortunate reluctance to understand that their pay in India was inclusive, and there was much grumbling that they were not given free rations, and that a deduction was made from their pay when a batman was provided. These grievances will disappear now that the same pay code applies to them in India as in the rest of the world.

Under the new pay code the married officer receives his pay, his marriage allowance, and his Local Overseas Allowance; he receives no provision in kind other than his rations (or ration allowance in lieu) so long as he is living with his family or separated from them otherwise than by the exigencies of the Services. From these emoluments he is expected to make all provisions for himself and for his family.

The single officer – and this term includes the married officer separated from his family by the exigencies of the Service—will receive considerable provision in kind or allowance in lieu. He is entitled to free (i) rations, (ii) furnished accommodation, (iii) fuel and light, including fans, (iv) water and (v) servant.

When Government cannot provide him with accommodation, he will receive Composite Lodging Allowance, which is taxable, at the rates given in Appendix "C", and will be required to make his own arrangements including provision of his own servant. When Government cannot provide him with rations he is, of course, entitled to ration allowance, which is not taxable; and when Government can provide him with accommodation but when a batman is not authorised in establishments and is not provided, he will receive servant allowance. Servant allowance is taxable, and the rate has been fixed at 2s. 6d. per day. So you will see that the single officer is entitled to considerable provision in kind or to allowances in lieu.

War Excess—Officers.—The formula to be adopted for calculating the war excesses for officers presented a pretty problem. First, should pay and marriage allowance be taken separately as in the White Paper, or should they be lumped together? There was considerable discussion in London on this point between representatives from India and from the Service Ministries, and eventually it was decided to lump pay and marriage allowance together.

Secondly, in determining the formula it was necessary to decide how the comparison should be made between Indian inclusive rates and the new rates, which include provision in kind. The results are shown in Appendix "A". Let us first take the case of single officers, and examine the credit side. Lodging Allowance had to be included, since the composite lodging allowance on the other side naturally contains a lodging element. Indian Army allowance was excluded, as it will continue in issue to entitled persons, though possibly in a new form. Japanese Campaign Pay was excluded, as it ceased from August 16, 1946. Local allowances I will deal with later.

Turning to the debit side, half the composite lodging allowance plus ration allowance offsets equivalent items in Indian inclusive pay. Local Overseas allowance also offsets a similar item. Half composite lodging allowance only is taken into account, since certain irrelevant items contained in it had to be ignored.

Entertainment allowance offsets an equivalent which is included in Indian "command" rates of pay. Entertainment allowances for Lieut.-Colonels and Brigadiers are given in the White Paper. The rates for Major-Generals and above have not yet been fixed by H.M. Government.

Entertainment allowance is, of course, only admissible to officers who are in command. It is not taxable. Both Lieut.-Colonels and Colonels obtain benefit here, in that entertainment allowance is not taken into account on the debit side in calculating their war excesses. I may say that, if the debit side exceeds the credit, the balance is not deducted from the individual's new rate of pay. In calculating war excesses, conversions between rupees and sterling are made at 1s. 6d. to the rupee.

Having settled the formula for single officers, it was easy to deal with married officers; it was just a case of adapting the "single" formula to meet their particular circumstances. You can see the result in Appendix "A". Half composite lodging allowance is not deducted in the case of the last category, because they have no entitlement to treatment as single officers. Local Overseas Allowance is paid at the married rate only to those whose families are in India. In India, rates of Local Overseas Allowance remain the same whether the officer is or is not accommodated by Government. This decision, I may add, was arrived at after very careful calculations,

Indian Transitional Allowance.—By means of war excesses, individuals are protected in the gross emoluments which they were drawing on June 30, 1946. War excesses do not, however, protect them in their net emoluments, owing to the generally heavier impact of U.K. income-tax. To give protection against this heavier tax impact, Indian Transitional Allowance has been introduced. The rates are shown in Appendices "B" and "C". The allowance is tapering, i.e., it is subject to periodical reduction and ceases altogether on March 31, 1950. It has been calculated on a broad basis.

Representative cases were taken in each rank, and the allowance fixed accordingly. Captains, subalterns and privates do not receive it, because they do not need protection. The allowance is to be given at the same rates to married and single, and to those who arrived in India after July 1, 1946, as well as to those who were in India on that date. The allowance is taxable. It cannot be drawn in addition to the supplementary marriage allowance mentioned in the White Papers, but the more favourable of the two allowances may be drawn.

Abatement of War Excesses.—War excesses are subject to reduction on the rising tide principle as described in the White Papers; that is to say, on the individual being promoted or receiving an increment of pay for any reason. They are also reduced in other circumstances, such as on vacating an appointment carrying staff, additional or command pay. Full details of these points will be given in the implementing orders.

Almost all forms of extra duty pay and additional pay, including staff and command pay but excluding parachute pay, are abolished under the new pay code. Qualification pay is introduced for certain officers of the rank of Major and below.

Miscellaneous Allowances.—Bombay and Calcutta compensatory allowances will continue in issue at their present rates. The allowances given in Delhi to B.O.Rs of G.H.Q., but to no others ceased as from July 1, 1946, but existing incumbents will continue to receive it so long as they remain eligible under the existing rules. There are a few other allowances given to individuals serving in particular localities—some sanctioned nearly fifty years ago. They ceased as from July 1, 1946, but existing incumbents have been protected. Travelling allowance will continue in issue under Indian regulations. The recovery of hospital stoppages will be governed by U.K. regulations.

Further Points.—British Service officers attached to the Indian Army are covered by the new pay code. This may cause some inconvenience for a period, since they will be entitled to provision in kind, which is not admissible to Indian Army fficers.

It may well be asked why there are so many gaps in the new pay code. Let me say at once that the fault does not lie with India. H.M. Government set up a committee in the U.K. in April, 1945 to frame a new pay code; the White Paper on B.O.Rs pay was issued in December, 1945, and was followed by the White Paper on officers pay in March, 1946. Since then the committee has been busily at work filling in the gaps. But the introduction of a new pay code is a complicated business, and it seems that the fifteen months allotted was not sufficient.

Another question which may be asked is: Why was the decision to bring the British Service in India on to the new pay and tax codes from July 1, 1946, not announced until nearly the end of May? The answer is that the decision as to income-tax could not be taken until after the middle of April, and it could not well have been announced before the measures to meet the consequences of

this decision had been worked out in detail between H.M. Government and the Government of India. A small deputation was sent from India to the U.K. towards the end of April to hammer out these and other details with the India Office, the Service Ministries and the Treasury. Three weeks of complicated, but in the long run profitable, discussions took place, and well within a week of the deputation's return to India all the agreements reached in London had been approved by the Government of India. On the whole it was pretty quick work.

Conclusion.— I have intentionally not attempted to compare the net emoluments of individuals under the new pay and tax codes with those under the existing code. It would be virtually impossible to do so, as so much depends on the circumstances of the individual. For instance, would he be entitled to any War Service Increments? If so, how many? Is he drawing Corps/Command/Staff or other form of additional or extra duty pay, and if so, at what rate? Is he married? If so, has he any children? What are their ages? Is his family in India? Is he living with his family or separated from it? If separated, what are the circumstances of his separation? All these questions mean a different answer in comparing net emoluments under the two pay and tax codes.

Two explanatory pamphlets (one for B.O.Rs, the other for officers) have been issued by the Adjutant General, and these should enable individuals to work out their position under the new code. Each pamphlet gives some guidance in calculating the U.K. tax to be payable, but two important points must be remembered: Marriage allowance will not be taxable under the new code in this financial year; and Officers, when assessing their position under the new code, must remember that they receive provision in kind under that code.

## New Campaign Medals

The India Service Medal will be granted to British and Indian personnel of the Royal Indian Navy, the Indian Army (including civilians in military employ), the Indian States Forces and the Royal Indian Air Force, for three years' non-operational service in India between 3rd September 1939 and 2nd September 1945. The conditions under which civilians other than those in military employ may wear the medal have not been finally decided.

The ribbon of this medal has a narrow light blue stripe in the centre with alternate dark, light and again dark blue stripes on either side. The medal is an alternative award to the Defence Medal and no one may wear both. It will not be admissible to British Service personnel.

The War Medal will be granted to full-time personnel of the Armed Forces for a minimum service of 28 days, wherever the service during the war has been rendered. The ribbon is in the red, white and b ue of the Union flag. It has a narrow central red stripe with a narrow white stripe on either side and broad red stripes at each edge, the two intervening stripes being blue.

Those entitled to the Oak Leaf for "Mention in Despatches" will wear this emblem on the War Medal ribbon. The medal will be granted in addition to any others to which a person may be entitled.

#### APPENDIX 'A'

#### WAR EXCESSES

#### RUPEE EMOLUMENTS ON 30TH JUNE LESS NEW EMOLUMENTS.

ALL B. O. R's.

Total Emoluments
EXCLUDING

Marriage Allowance Separation Allowance (if in issue)

(if in issue)
Local Allowances.
J. C. P.

Pay under NEW U.K. CODE. Single rate of Local Overseas

Allowance.

SINGLE OFFICERS.

Total Emoluments

INCLUDING EXCLUDING Lodging Allowance.

I. A. Allowance (if in issue)

Local Allowances. J. C. P. As above PLUS

Half Composite Lodging Allowance

Ration Allowance at 3 Shillings per day. Entertainment Allowance (Brigs. and above only) (if admissible).

MARRIED OFFICERS

(FAMILY NOT IN INDIA).

Total Emoluments

INCLUDING

Lodging Allowance

(Single rate)
Marriage/Family Allowance.

EXCLUDING

I. A. Allowance (if in issue)

Local Allowances.

J. C. P.

As above PLUS

Marriage Allowance.

#### MARRIED OFFICERS

## (FAMILY IN INDIA BUT SEPARATED BY EXIGENCIES OF THE SERVICE)

As above PLUS Separation Allowance

(if in issue)

but with Lodging Allowance at married rate.

As above but Local
Overseas Allowance at
married rate.

# OTHER MARRIED OFFICERS

(FAMILY IN INDIA).

As above but Separation
Allowance will NOT be in

As above but EXCLUDING Half Composite Lodging Allowance.



## APPENDIX 'B'

#### SHILLINGS PER DAY

MISCELLANEOUS ALLOWANCES (B. O. R's).

			eas Allowance Taxable)	Indian Transitional Allowance (Taxable).			
		Single	Married	1-7-46 to 31-3-48	1.4-48 to 31-3-49	1-4-49 to 31-3-50	
Private		0/9d.	2/3d.		••		
Corporal		0/9d.	2/3d.	0/6d.	0/4d.	0/2d.	
Serjeant		1/3d.	3/-	1/-	0/8d.	0/4d.	
Staff Serjeant		1/6d.	3/9d.	2/-	1/4d.	0/8d.	
w. o. II		1/6d.	3/9d.	2/6d.	1/8d.	0/10d.	
W. O. I		2/-	5/-	3/-	2/-	1/-	

# APPENDIX 'C' SHILLINGS PER DAY

MISCELLANEOUS ALLOWANCES (OFFICERS).

	Local Overseas Allow- ance (Not Taxable).		Indian Transitional Allowance (Taxable).			Composite Lodging Allowance (Taxable).
	Single (or married but family NOT in India).	Married.	1-7-46 to 31-3-48	1-4-48 to 31-3-49	1-4-49 to 31-3-50	Only given to Single Non-Ac- commodate Officers.
Captain and below	 5/-	12/6				11/-
Major	 5/-	12/6	12/6	8/9	5/-	11/-
LtColonel	 7/6	18/9	17/6	12/3	7/-	14/-
Colonel	 7/6	18/9	20/-	14/-	8/-	14/-
Brigadier	 8/9	20/-	22/-	15/9	9/-	17/-
Major-General	 10/-	22/6	22/-	15/9	9/-	20/-
LtGeneral and above	 10/-	22/6	27/6	19/3	11/-	20/-

## SPORT AT DELHI IN 1804

#### BY "HYDERABAD"

LIEUTENANT-GENERAL Sir Walter Raleigh Gilbert, the writer of the following account, was one of the most distinguished leaders the Indian Army has ever had. Born in 1785, he entered the Bengal Infantry in 1801 and served till a couple of months before his death in 1853. He saw a great deal of fighting in Lake's campaigns, being present at the battles of Delhi and Laswari, and at the capture of Deig, and commanded a division with great success in both Sikh Wars. He is portrayed, in the act of receiving the surrender of the Sikh armies, on the reverse of the medal awarded to the Army of the Punjab in 1849.

He was an all-round sportsman, and well-known for his interest in the Turf. The autobiographical fragments which follow relate to a period just after Lake's successes in 1803, and were furnished by Gilbert to the writer of a memoir which appeared in "The East India Army Magazine and Military Review" in 1853, a few months before the General's death. They are given in his own words; a few footnotes have been added by myself.—Author.

THE first race I ever rode was in January or February 1804, against Solomon Boileau\*. We were on the course at Beeana or Hindown, looking at a race which had just come off, when Boileau proposed a match as we then were, round the course. I won, but he had his revenge for, thinking that his horse had been beaten from being fat, he offered to run the race over again that day month, which I accepted. On the appointed day my animal was so much above himself that instead of starting at the word he reared, kicked, and played all manner of antics, till my antagonist had got so far ahead I could not make up the lost ground.

I won one race for Malcolm<sup>†</sup>, that gave him the highest opinion of my skill and judgment as a "Jock." It was on a large northern horse, bought from Colonel James Skinner<sup>‡</sup>, thence named "Secunder", against a very handsome colt belonging to and ridden by Norman Shairp<sup>\$</sup>, who was most confident of winning "as he liked," as the turf phrase goes. Shairp's horse was known to possess extraordinary speed, but I doubted his capability of maintaining it. I therefore jumped off with "Secunder," making such severe running the whole way, that on entering the cords, I collared my opponent, and beat him on the post by a head.

Malcolm was in ecstacies, and henceforth my opinion on horse matters had great weight. Meeting him many years afterwards at the Coronation of William IV, in Westminster Abbey, he insisted on my going home to tiffin, for the purpose of showing me an Arab he had brought from Bombay, whence he had just returned. The present Earl of Enniskillen, then Lord Cole, and Sir Pulteney Malcolm were of the party. During the luncheon the brothers got into an argument and I thought I had never before heard two men talk so much and so fast, particularly

<sup>\*</sup>Lieut. Solomon Hugh Richard Boileau, 3rd Bengal Native Cavalry; died at Partabgarh in 1810.

<sup>†</sup>Sir John Malcolm, after being Arthur Wellesley's political officer in 1803, joined Lake in 1805 and made the treaty with Daulat Rao Scindia in that year.

<sup>†</sup>Colonel James Skinner, C.B., founder of Skinner's Horse.

<sup>\$</sup>A Bengal Army Officer who after serving in Lake's campaigns returned as a captain in 1815 and died in 1864.

Sir John. At length the Admiral, losing patience, said "D—n it, John, you won't give me time to speak." "Yes, I will," was the reply, and pulling out his watch, which he put on the table, he said, "I'll give you five minutes, and now let us hear what you can say in that time." This produced a merry laugh, and the conclusion of the argument.

Immediately after luncheon, the Arab was sent to the street door; and after looking him over, Malcolm begged I would mount and try his paces. After walking, trotting and cantering up and down the street, Sir John commenced to me in Hindustani: "Chullao, Gilbert sahib, chullao, khoob faistu! Wah! Wah! Gilbert buhadoor!" This brought such a crowd into the street, I was glad to dismount and make over the horse to the groom.

At one of the Headquarter parties during the race week at Delhi, a Mr. Fanthome,\* formerly in the service of Scindia or Holkar, had been invited. The poor man was evidently unaccustomed to being in such a large party, and what made him the more uncomfortable was, he not being acquainted with, or I believe ever before having seen, a single individual of it; for after having sat down to table he continued looking from one face to the other with an inquiring eye. About the middle of dinner Malcolm, seeing his uncomfortable position, and wishing to make him feel more at ease, addressed him, "Pray, Mr. Fanthome, are you related to a gentleman of your name that I saw about two years since at Poonah?" The delight of the man on hearing that one of his family was known was great. "Bless my soul," he exclaimed, "vat, you know Shack Fanthome?"

The very next horse that came to the toshu khanu was named "Shack Fanthome": remarkably well he turned out, and afterwards was in Norman Shairp's possession. Indeed, for a long time we were in the habit of calling Malcolm "Shack," though not in his hearing.

Added to great good humour and high spirits, Malcolm had a fund of amusing anecdotes, particularly of the Native princes. I remember his telling us one of the Nizam, who fancied himself as a poet. On meeting one morning early for hawking, the Nizam galloped up in great glee, exclaiming "Oh, Malcolm sahib, I have made such a beautiful couplet, all my people assure me Hafiz never wrote anything so good. Listen—

Kysa dourta toomhara ghora Bahoot nuheen, thora thora."

This reminds me of having heard Malcolm guilty of a pun equally ridiculous. John Monckton† happening to be leaving at a ball at either Edmondstone's‡ or Dowdeswell's \$ at the same time with Malcolm, the latter, a large powerful man, seized Monckton by the collar and hauling him into the midst of the party screamed in his particular falsetto voice, "Johnny Monckton, jane mangta", which he repeated to his own great delight to all who came near, and to the delight of those who heard and saw what was going on. Monckton bore the jest with great good humour and patience.

<sup>\*</sup>Captain Bernard Fanthome, a French adventurer in the Jaipur and later in Scindla's service, joined Lake in 1803; and died at Bareilly in 1845, aged 74.

<sup>†</sup>There were numerous members of this family in India at the time, all descended from the 1st Viscount Galway. This was possibly John Edmondstone Monekton of the 2nd Madras Light Cavalry.

<sup>‡</sup>Neil Benjamin Edmondstone, Bengal Civil Service (1765—1841), later a Director of the East India Company.

<sup>\$</sup>Probably George Dowdeswell, Bengal Civil Service (1765—1852).

I have already mentioned Lord Lake's shikaree Dulmeer Singh. Dulmahoy was the name he was generally known by. During our halt at Delhi, a valuable Arab called "Filbert", the property of Ned Hidge\* of the 4th Cavalry, who had come from General Dowdeswell's † camp on a visit to Headquarters, was stolen. A large reward for its recovery was offered by Lord Lake, who was much annoyed at such a theft being perpetrated in his camp; but not the least intelligence could be got of the animal. Some days afterwards Dulmeer Singh, himself a Goojur of the Delhi district, was sent out to endeavour to trace the horse. At break of day the following morning but one, Dalmahoy to our surprise appeared on "Filbert," riding up the Headquarters street. He had stolen the horse from the thieves, letting himself at night down the chimney of the house in which the horse had been walled up, and removing the stones quietly, galloped off in the dark which he easily did knowing the roads.

When at Delhi I purchased my first Arab, "Sky Blue," a great event in those days when there were but few of that breed in Upper India. He was a remarkably fine, well-bred animal; and a few days after our arrival at Cawnpore I won a match with him against Jack Hunter's ‡ "Yankee", owners up—a mile for 25 Gold Mohurs, heavy odds on "Yankee", from his having won several races, and never before been beaten.

Few men have had more or finer horses than myself. One of the best and pleasant I ever possessed was a Caboolee, bought at Cawnpore for rupees 300 a day or two before the Grand Army took the field in 1803. He was about 14 hands, very strong, and as active as a cat, had evidently been a fruiterer, as there was not a hair on his back, the whole at one time must have been one large sore. Having but rupees 100 in purse, I was giving up all idea of purchasing, when John Greenstreet\$, the Adjutant, now Lieut-General, kindly urged my taking 200 from him to be repaid at my own convenience. It was a day or two ere I could prevail on myself to incur so heavy a debt, but at length I accepted the friendly loan. At that time the united debt of the whole regiment, two battalions, could not have amounted to rupees 10,000. About this period the Adjutancy and Quartermastership of the regiment became vacant, a comfortable snug berth in the olden times, and though powerful interest was made to get it for two other candidates, Lord Lake gave it to me, in consideration he was pleased to say of my services before Bhurtpore.

I lost no time in setting out to my new appointment at Benares, taking a fast rowing Beaulea. § At Allahabad I landed, to pass a day with my friends Captain and Mrs. M. He was the Deputy Commissary of Ordnance in the Fort. There I found that gallant soldier "Commodore" Swinton, who had for two or three years been engaged to M.'s eldest daughter. We passed a pleasant day, and all was going smoothly when after tiffin the "Commodore" called me into an adjoining room and to my utter amazement said, "Gilbert, from what has occurred

<sup>\*</sup>This should be Ridge: Major Edward Jervoise Ridge, C.B., Bengal Cavalry, who retired in 1824.

<sup>†</sup>Lieutenant-General William Dowdeswell, H. M. Service, commanded a division under Lake, and was acting C.-in-C. in India in 1807.

<sup>‡</sup>Presumably Lieut.-Col. John Hunter, Bengal Infantry, who much distinguished himself at Bharatpur in 1825 and died at Banda in 1836.

<sup>\$</sup>General John Greenstreet, Bengal Infantry, who died near Bristol in 1856 at the age of 74. He received no less than six bars to his Army of India medal in 1851, for Aligarh, battle of Delhi, Laswari, battle of Deig, capture of Deig, Bharatpur, and Nepal.

<sup>§</sup>A light passenger boat with a cabin.

<sup>||</sup>Possibly Robert Swinton, Bengal Cavalry, who resigned as a major in 1809.

to-day, I am quite certain Miss M. likes you far better than she does me. Now, as I have her happiness at heart, if you will marry her, she shall still have the 20,000 rupees I purposed settling on her."

It was in vain I tried to convince the "Commodore" it was nothing more than gladness to see an old acquaintance, who was a constant visitor at her father's house before the campaign. Finding the idea so violent in his mind, I thought it best to shove off my boat at once. After all, Miss M. never became Mrs. Swinton, but married the son of a general officer of our service, and is the mother of a Baronet.

Early in February I received a pressing invitation from Colonel Lake to come and see them before their departure. I immediately started dawk to Calcutta, where farewell fetes and entertainments to the Commander-in-Chief were the order of the day. Soon after Lord Lake had sailed, a hog-hunting party was made to the plains of Kishnagur. In those days of pleasant memory the country thence to Moorshedabad, commonly called the Cossimbazar island, was one large preserve of the finest breed of hogs, and the country itself the most beautiful riding-ground that could be desired.

No doubt it would have continued to be the best hunting country in the whole world, but that about the year 1810 dangars or boonneeahs\* began to be employed at the indigo factories in place of the Mussulman coolies, before engaged. These dangars, not being troubled with caste, and fond of shikar and good living, when not actually at work, were out with dogs and spears, killing sows and little pigs. This, with the usual hunting parties from Calcutta, in the course of a few years drove the hogs from the Kishnagur plains to the banks of the Ganges.

Our party consisted of Arthur Cole,† Norman Shairp, Heury Mundy,‡ George Warde\$, F. Fauquire\$ and myself: our tents were pitched at Nowbourga, and some idea may be formed of the abundance of game from the fact of our killing the first day, morning and evening, thirty-six boars. To our second day's bag we added a fine tiger, that took us some hours to dispatch, the elephants being bad: he had been seen by the Mahouts peeping over the jungle at us as we rode the pigs in his neighbourhood. At his first charge, he sprang clean on the head of the elephant on which Shairp and Mundy were, killing the Mahout with a single blow, when the elephant ran away and soon shook off both the sportsmen and the servant in the kuwas.

Having to muster at Secrole, I could only remain for four days' hunting. The party returned to Kishnagur on the 5th April, after having killed two hundred and sixty good boars.

<sup>\*</sup>Orans and other tribes from Chota Nagpur who go to other parts for employment as labourers.

<sup>†</sup>A Civilian.

<sup>‡</sup>Aide-de-camp to Lord Lake, and author of Pen und Pencil Sketches, 1832.

<sup>\$</sup>Bengal Civil Service, retired 1830.

Should be Francis Fanquier, Bengal Civil Service.

#### LESSONS OF WARS THROUGH THE AGES

By Major D. H. Donovan, M.C.

BISMARCK said: "The war of 1870 will be child's play compared with that of to-morrow". Transfer this statement to our future. We have emerged victorious from the most devastating war the world has seen, and if we look more deeply into this last struggle we shall see that Bismarck's statement is indeed true of our "to-morrow."

Up to to-day the law of the jungle has prevailed. Might has been right. As long as Nation looks upon Nation with suspicion, force will be the hallmark of success. War, then, is not only a possibility, but a probability; when, we cannot tell. But it is thus the duty of all soldiers to study the art of war, for in studying the past they will automatically look to the future. Many may say that the object will be achieved without reflection and meditation, but in fact that is not true. I defy anyone to name any great General who has mastered his profession without those two aids. Even the great Napoleon Bonaparte once said: "It is not some familiar spirit which suddenly and secretly discloses to me what I have to say or do in a case unexpected by others; it is reflection, meditation."

Political opinions are gradually swinging towards peace in the future, and to fear of another war owing to the discovery of the "atom". Their influence will blind the nation to the possibility of war. How much will that influence affect the Army and its military studies? We all know the Army has been closely linked with the Budget. To stop money for the Army is to cut off its life blood and thus halt advancement in every sphere of the military profession. If, then, our ideas and learning cannot be put into practice, how can our soldiers and leaders of to-morrow be anything but mentally and professionally constipated? To study the future we must study the past, and I propose to trace the effects of the aftermaths of all our great Wars from Marlborough's time to 1939, and to prove how history in every case repeated itself as regularly as the clock hand circles every hour.

In 1697 England signed the Peace of Ryswick with Louis XIV; it was nothing more than a truce to give each side time to regroup and refit, so as to renew the struggle later. France availed itself of the valuable opportunity; England followed up the affair with wholesale reductions, the result of which put Marlborough in dire straits at the outbreak of the Spanish succession war. Not till it was nearly too late did Parliament vote large "augmentations" on behalf of the Army; new regiments had to be raised and trained; methods of warfare taught to new soldiers. Why could not all this have been done in the interim period of 1697 to 1702, during which time a formidable Army could have been raised? A highly organised and well equipped British Army at that time might have averted that long and tedious war.

Added to the difficulties of those days was the cosmopolitan nature of the British Army, whose Generals relied to a vast extent on the whims and promises of European potentates whose troops they hired. Thus we see Marlborough, our greatest General, handicapped and thwarted by the politicians of his day; striving to reorganise and train in order to form an Army worthy of his command, but frustrated by men who lacked foresight for war to the favour of peace and commerce.

Marlborough's wars lasted from 1702 to 1714. He taught not only England but Europe a new method in the application of war—that the comfortand administration of his force was as important as the battle itself. His greatest teaching was mobility and speed of manoeuvre, thereby causing surprise concentration of force at the vital point. Those were the foremost lessons learned from the war of the Spanish succession. They should have been invaluable for a future war.

England needed peace after the peace of Utrecht in 1713, and Walpole gave it to her; under his guidance she grew rich and prosperous; but the Army failed to keep pace with the times, and instead of thinking and training for the future, the Services slid to a standstill, and only studied the art of dress and fancy uniforms. The science of war was discouraged for fear it might come about.

This state of affairs continued till the Seven Years war from 1756 to 1763, when William Pitt tried to relight the glories of the past. To a certain extent he did reorganise the Army, and in fact was the first to attempt conscription in England. But the Army was stagnant; its leaders docile and inert. They had forgotten Marlborough's lessons and cared less. It was left for William Pitt to pull the nation through those hard and difficult years, and guide the Army and its leaders along a path they should have seen for themselves.

Wolfe, victor of Quebec, was about the sole inventor of a new form of tactics; he taught the use of two ranks and a higher speed of fire from the muskets. By the use of two ranks he taught one of the greatest principles of war—freedom of action. But it was forgotten and did not reappear until it was taught by Sir John Moore. Wolfe did indeed teach all the lessons of fire control, formations and equipment for battle that his successor Moore taught at Shorncliffe Camp before the Peninsular War.

Thus once again, from 1763 to 1808, methods of warfare retreated rather than advanced—probably because of the country's fear of the future. Lessons taught by Wolfe and Pitt the Elder were forgotten and were not remembered again till the rude awakening of the Napoleonic wars, in which England struggled for her very existence. In 1784 England was once more at war with revolutionary France; it lasted until 1802, during which time British leaders persisted in the policy now known as "penny packets." They had forgotten Marlborough's lessons of preponderance of force at the decisive point, and both British and French armies were led by uninspired leaders.

Let us jump to 1802 and study men such as Moore, Wellington, the Duke of York and Napoleon. The Duke of York set about reforming the Army, giving to it an organisation and hope for the future which set its morale far higher than any previous level. Nevertheless, when Napoleon threatened England, she was sadly unprepared. It was left to Castlereagh, Secretary for War, to hold the reins; he it was who provided the country not only with an adequate striking force, but also with the means of keeping it in the field. The spirit of the country was raised, but adequate weapons for her defence were not available. In short, the struggle between Napoleon and Wellington lasted from 1808 to 1815—a period which saw the tactics of the thin red line against the French massed formations.

England had far fewer troops than her opponent, and it was probably because of this that the Duke of Wellington's great teaching was economy of force; he did, however, teach the Army the need to fight from reverse slopes—a teaching which has held to the present day. But perhaps his greatest teaching of all was that of his epic battle of Salamanca in 1812, when he showed how, by rapidly switching from the defensive to the offensive, victory could be gained.

What of Wellington's adversary, Napoleon? Here was a great soldier seeped in politics—with the governing and ruling of a nation as well as the frection of her armies. His only great teaching to the world in the arts of war as in the use of artillery; for his mass formation tactics, though successful gainst his European opponents, proved useless against the British. But apoleon was a master in the art of war, and taught the world the great dvantage to be gained out of massed gun fire. He was, in fact, expounding the maching put forth by Marlborough, Conde, and Turenne.

Three lessons, then, emerged from the Napoleonic struggle: fire power, peed of manoeuvre, and success of massed artillery. The British Army was now he most toasted and powerful in Europe. The fame of her General, the Iron Duke, as established; but she needed to be reorganised in the light of those three lessons, and it was for the Duke to give the word. But he did not. England became rapt in politics; she longed for peace and plenty; the Army sank again into its istorical oblivion.

Once more, then, the huge forces with which England had been saved entinto the background. Its leaders wasted their time; the Army was to a great stent disbanded, and what remained sank into the abyss of stagnation, in which state it found itself on the declaration of war with Holy Russia in 1854.

The Crimean War was a disgrace to our Nation, to our Generals. astlereagh's re-organisation had been cast to the four winds; the Army fought rithout a policy, without reserves. It was in desperate plight in the winter f 1854, and the conscience of the nation was roused; reinforcements and medical id were despatched hurriedly, but it cannot be denied that the Crimean War id more than much to lower the hard-earned prestige of the British Army. That restige was not regained until it was fought for on the bloody fields of Flanders alf a century hence.

There were, however, a few lessons learnt during the struggle for evastopol. The Russian force far exceeded our Army in numbers, but the xcellence of the new British Minie rifle made up for our lack of numbers, thus onclusively proving the importance of fire power and the denial of ground y fire. It was probably from the Crimean War that we could trace the great triving by every European Power for quick-firing weapons controlled by the ninimum number of men. The next lesson the Crimean War taught was the need for medical assistance in war—the fact that the sooner a casualty was returned to the front line the easier would it be for an Army to maintain its numbers in the field. And lastly, the War taught the advantage to be gained from a unified control of operations, and the benefits to be derived from a more serious study of the military art.

Some advances were made in the Army from this period to the Boer War, but very few considering that the Prussians had soundly defeated the French in 870 at Metz. The French, masters of national warfare, had been defeated by a witherto mercenary nation. Here was a signal warning to England, but it was given in vain. Isolation was the order of the day. England's leaders failed to grasp how seriously the balance of power in Europe had been affected, and how difficult would be our policy in our Colonial Empire with a Europe which looked upon our Army as a second-class force. Had our Generals studied the Franco-Prussian war we would have had the best Army in Europe. But again nation and Generals feared war, and refused to study war, and so we come to 1914 and the outbreak of World War No. 1.

That War showed little in the art of war to the military student. It was the only static war the world has ever seen—a freak war in the history of the art, and a war which, in all probability, will never be repeated. For the purpose of this article we may refer to it but little, with no very great loss. It was essentially a scientist's war, when very formidable weapons came into being—the machinegun, the tank, the aeroplane. Throughout the war in Flanders we saw the armies struggling for power in the manoeuvring of its forces and for command in its fire power. Little or no attention was paid to the British invention of the tank in modern war or even as a formidable weapon in support of Infantry. The aeroplane was more a Galahad of the air than a serious weapon in attack or defence.

Had Generals been more astute they would have seen greater possibilities in these weapons—but Armies had become imbued with the idea of static trench warfare, and not until towards the end did we see the success to be achieved from mobility and manoeuvre. Winston Churchill was perhaps one of the few men in the Great War who realised the necessity for surprising the enemy by manoeuvre when he sent an expeditionary force to Gallipoli; had it succeeded it would have been a very great feat of strategy. And had Allenby commanded on the Western Front the history of those years might have been different, for he was a student of the future school of thought—a man with a fertile mind and breadth of conception.

Let us, then, study, the lessons of those years of war. Mobility and manoeuvre are once again on the front page, for he who wins the war of manoeuvre wins the day. To assist both those lessons we saw the greater use of the motor car and the invention of the tank and the greater use of the machine gun. Here was food for thought, and, looked at in retrospect, it appears obvious that the Army needed organising by virtue of these very lessons. It is remarkable that the terrific potentiality of those lessons was not fully appreciated.

History repeated itself. The nation was tired and so were its leaders, who insisted on disbandment of the Forces to the minimum; it left nothing more than a meagre police force, with a depleted cadre of regular officers, and they were not encouraged to think on the lines of war, but simply and solely to do as they were told. Money was short, and consequently weapons and ammunition were scarce; scientists were not greatly encouraged to invent or produce new weapons or ideas in the military field. The idea of becoming a soldier was ridiculed, and it was a standing joke that "only the fools of a family went into H.M. Forces."

That was the mood of the country between 1918 and 1939, during which Germany prepared for Blitzkrieg warfare. Hitler's leaders were far-seeing; they studied the lessons of the past, and evolved new methods of war for the future. Why should England, a country renowned for its skill at arms, not have been able to anticipate the future and train on those lines? In 1939 she found herself untrained, lacking equipment and weapons. It was an act of God that she survived the war's earliest stages, and it is probably the last occasion on which its traditionally hazy policy will escape its just deserts. Let us assume, then, that that is a policy of the past, and that in future we may more seriously study the future war. Let us study the methods of war evolved during 1939-45.

Unlike World War I, we have seen terrific speed of manoeuvre added to a colossal fire power; we have seen the dexterous use of airborne and parachute troops brought into action by gliders and troop-carrying aeroplanes; we have seen the use of more and more automatic weapons. We have seen battles rolling on to battles at hitherto unbelievable speeds, as witness the famous Eighth

Digitized by GOOGIC

Timy's advance, withdrawal and renewed advance across 2,000 miles of aridalesert. Then there is the lesson of the self-propelled rocket-firing aeroplane being used for shock tactics in breaking the opponents' defence—a weapon still in its infancy. There was General Slim's use of the air when he transferred a division from one part of the front to the other in Burma. Field Marshal Montgomery taught the world the devastating effect of massed artillery firing on given points—a lesson the Germans had failed to learn even from the last war. How, then, are we to apply these lessons in the war of "to-morrow"?

Methods of to-day will not be those of the future—or, rather, they should to be so. "War", said von Moltke, "teaches war". Therefore, to those of us who have learnt their war by this war, it is obvious that the next struggle will be one of even higher speed, manoeuvre and fire power than that of to-day. It will be a contest of explosion and energy that will make military leaders and cientists of to-day gasp with unbelief. How can we re-organise our Army and rain for this phenomenon?

Take first the Infantry soldier. He is equipped with a bolt-loading rifle, apable of firing only twenty well-aimed rounds in a minute at the maximum. Here is one tip from the late war—arm him with an automatic rifle which is 2 lbs. Eighter than his present one. Let it fire a .275 bullet, thus lightening the weight of his ammunition. What are the drawbacks? I see none. The infantry soldier even in the future war must be the focal point of the Army. Why not, then, look to his weapons and arm him in accordance with the times?

That brings us to mobility—for our Army must be doubly mobile to what is to-day. To aid us over this point we must call in the scientist, and ask him to build for us a vehicle capable of travelling in the air as easily as it does along the ground. Such a vehicle would open up vast fields in the art of war; it would change its very characteristics, for then the enemy would have a rear as vulnerable as his front. We would, in fact, then be able to besiege our opponents on the battlefield—hitherto an exceedingly difficult task. The real air war will have begun.

Artillery, too, must change its ideas. We have seen how a small number of self-propelled guns were used with great effect; how quickly they could be brought in and out of action. The advantages of a self-propelled gun are enormous, and to any thinking man they will most definitely supersede the old methods of the gun being dragged behind some kind of powerful vehicle. Besides all this, in our real air war a self-propelled gun would be transported far more easily than one which is attached.

How can Radar be turned to advantage by the Army in general? I am not a scientist and know little about radar, but I do suggest that if it was used by every company to locate enemy positions and enemy patrols needless casualizes would be avoided. This, however, is a matter for the scientists, but it is not beyond the bounds of possibility that we may live to see this use of radar adopted and accepted, as is the mine detector, for infantry to-day.

Air power in the next war will be even more important than it is to-day. Jet propelled aeroplanes will step up the speed of aerial warfare—and the Army will have to follow suit. In the field of armour, how can we profit from our present-day experience? We have seen the vital need for heavy guns with an affective range, but not so heavy that the tank becomes a propelled gun; the

use of the tank, I feel, reached its zenith during the late war, but its brother-inarms, the flame thrower, has far reaching possibilities, and should invariably be used in a counter-attack role before the Infantry has managed to bring up its anti-tank weapons.

The atom bomb has arrived—but it will not stop war. Scientists will undoubtedly evolve a counter which will render this new explosive harmless, whether it be by cosmic-rays or by radar controlled atom bomb exploded by wireless rays on reaching the approaching bomb of the enemy. But whatever method is employed, the atom bomb is not such a great weapon as it is made out to be. It has cost enormous sums of money, and is the result of the work of hundreds and thousands of men and women, working intensively for five years. Until some cheaper method and some commoner substance than uranium is discovered it will be more a dream for war than a reality. The discovery of the atom bomb has, I fear, made some people complacent, in that they say war is now a thing of the past.

This article has shown how history repeats itself. We must break this inevitable rule. We must break away from the accepted theory that the Army is ruled by the Budget. Let the Army rule the Budget rather than be ruled by it—and then we shall have the equipment of our desire and thereby ensure world peace. Expenditure on scientific research for the Army must be augmented. The profession of arms must be popularised to boys at school; and the nation must be encouraged to look upon its soldiers with pride, rather than think of them as an unnecessary burden.

Drastic changes in policy and ideas are needed to keep pace with the times. We must strain towards the answer for the future as a means of insurance for keeping the fruits of the labours we have won at such great cost.

## Short-Term Commissions in the Royal Indian Navy

A scheme of Short-Term Commissions in all branches of the Royal Indian Navy has been introduced for officers of the R. I. N. R. and R. I. N.V.R. who are either British subjects of Indian domicile or descent, or subjects of Indian States. Officers released from the Service since 8th, May 1945, are also eligible.

Applicants must have rendered at least one year's service in the Reserves and be of the rank of Sub.-Lt. or above. Commissions may be either for five years or for three years followed, in either case, by three years on the Emergency List. Both types of commission may be extended at officers' request beyond the originally prescribed periods, at Government discretion. Candidates must be between 20 and 35 years of age for a five-year commission, and between 20 and 42 for a three-year commission. They must be medically fit.

Applications of serving Reserve Officers are to be submitted through the normal service channels, but those of officers already released should be sent direct to Naval Headquarters. Officers must state whether they are prepared to accept an alternative type of commission, if the type for which they apply cannot be offered to them. Suitably qualified Special Branch officers may be considered for commissions in Branches appropriate to their qualifications.

### SOUTHERN RHODESIA WANTS IMMIGRANTS

By W. D. GALE.\*

SOUTHERN RHODESIA is the youngest self-governing country in the British family of nations. Fifty-six years ago she was trackless veld, inhabited by wild animals and even wilder black men who lived in the darkest savagery, superstition and ignorance. In these fifty-six years a comparative handful of Europeans, mainly of British stock, have brought law and order, internal peace and co-operation, a sound economic system, flourishing farms and mines, well-organised modern towns and other concomitants of civilisation. Now she stands on the threshold of still greater expansion and she needs a greater, much greater, European population to give effect to her plans.

Southern Rhodesia has one of the finest climates in the world. Since most of the country lies on a plateau of between 4,000 and 5,000 ft., it is more temperate than tropical, and parts of the country below 3,000 ft., are sub-tropical. The mean annual temperature of the central plateau is 66 deg. F, with a mean annual maximum of 78 deg. The Rhodesian year is divided roughly into two seasons, the Rainy Season (October to April), which is the summer, and the Dry Season (May to August) which is the winter. The "autumn" is the month of May, when the rains have ceased and the air is crisp with the approach of winter; the "Spring" is the month of September, when the cold snaps of winter are over and the air is langourous with the approach of summer.

Although concentrated into only seven months of the year, the rainfall over most of the country is adequate, and in some areas more than adequate. In the mountainous districts of the Eastern border it is between 40 and 56 inches, in the north-east (Mashonaland) it ranges between 25 and 40 inches, in the southwest (Matabeleland) between 14 and 25 inches. When it rains, it rains in earnest.

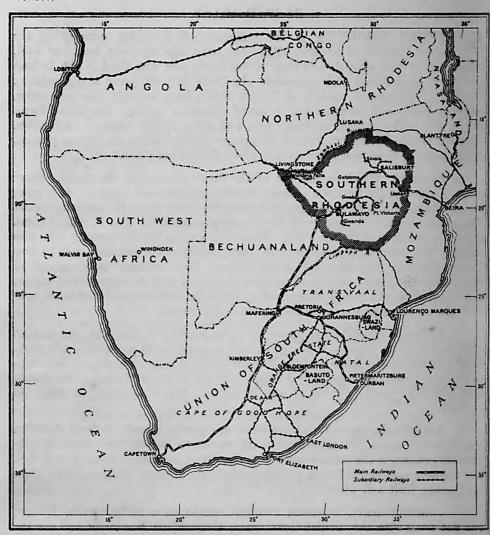
Accordingly, agricultural activities are pretty sharply defined between the different areas. Matabeleland, with its lower rainfall and consequently sweeter grazing, is the cattle country; Mashonaland, with its average of 30 inches, has tobacco and maize for its principal crops; the Eastern District is the place for forests, fruit and wheat.

Constitutionally, Southern Rhodesia ranks as a self-governing Colony, but she deals with the British Government through the Dominions and not the Colonial Office. She enjoys full control over her own affairs with the exception of legislation affecting the Native population and the affairs of the Rhodesia Railways, Ltd., a private company, which has to receive the sanction of the British Government. She is rapidly nearing Dominion status.

Politics are on party lines, and the Government is carried out by a Cabinet consisting of a Prime Minister and five Ministers, who are responsible to a Parliament of 30 Members. The King is represented by a Governor who, with the Cabinet, forms the Governor-in-Council, the supreme authority. The Civil Service is a permanent one, on the British model. The legal system is soundly organised on the basis of Roman-Dutch law (similar to the Union of South

Digitized by Google

Africa), with a Court of Appeal with jurisdiction in both Southern and Northern Rhodesia, a High Court consisting of a Chief Justice and three judges, and the magisterial division of the Department of Justice which presides over the lower courts.



The capital and chief administrative centre is Salisbury, in Mashonal and a charming town of flowering trees and a grand climate. The chief industrial and commercial centre is Bulawayo. Both these are cities. The chief municipalities are Umtali, Gwelo, Gatooma and Que Que, other local government centres being administered by town and village management boards.

Economically the main basis of the country's prosperity is gold mining, the principal gold mines being scattered throughout the country and not concentrated in any one area as in South Africa. Important base minerals are asbestos, chrome and coal, and in asbestos and chrome the Colony is one of the most important producers in the Empire. Its coalfields at Wankie, 60 miles from the famous Victoria Falls, are over 400 square miles in extent and contain enough coal to meet the present world consumption for 2,000 years! Agriculturally, the main products are tobacco (flue-cured Virginia) which is second only

to gold in the value of its annual production, maize and cattle (meat, hides, etc.). Hitherto, secondary industries have played a relatively minor part in the Colony's economy, but now the country is set for considerable industrial expansion.

The Government's policy is to encourage private enterprise to establish new industries and expand existing ones, but where private capital hesitates to take the risk and the Government is satisfied that a particular basic industry is necessary to the Colony's well-being, it will establish the industry as a State concern, run by a statutory commission. This principle has already been applied to iron and steel. The State Iron and Steel Works are being erected at Que Que to exploit the large deposits of iron ore and lime in that area; these will provide the basic material for privately-owned secondary industries. Another example is cotton. The State Cotton Spinning Mills at Gatooma purchase the cotton from the farmer at guaranteed prices, spin it and sell at cost to privately-owned textile weaving factories at Bulawayo and Gatooma. Private enterprise is expected to establish many more industries.

All this expansion means more population. The present population consists of about 80,500 Europeans, 1,607,000 Natives, and 7,000 Asiatics, mainly British Indian. The Europeans are therefore outnumbered 20 to 1. A large proportion of the European population is concentrated in Salisbury (22,000) and Bulawayo (18,000). Most of the Natives live in the Native Reserves, in which Europeans are not permitted to live unless their presence benefits the native inhabitants. The Native Reserves and Native Purchase areas occupy 29,000,000 of the Colony's total of 96,000,000 acres.

The Government's policy is to welcome skilled immigrants of British stock who can assist in the development of the country, who either have employment to come to or sufficient means to maintain themselves while seeking employment. Most skilled artisans can be assured of employment, but there is little scope at the moment for purely clerical workers, although the demand for these should increase as the various development schemes get going. But at the moment all normal demands for clerical people can be filled from within the country. Persons with sufficient private means to make a job unnecessary can enter at any time, provided, of course, they conform with the normal immigration regulations on character and health.

Most Indian Army officers who have applied to us for information about Rhodesian conditions have expressed a desire to farm or to run small holdings with a view to augmenting their income. A word or two of advice on both these ambitions might not come amiss.

After the First World War, hundreds of Army pensioners poured into the Colony to take up land. They found the land all right, but most of them did not know how to use it. During the tobacco and cotton boom of 1926-27 they could not help making money, but when the slump came many of them went to the wall and left the country with a curse. The Depression of 1931-33 completed the weeding out process. Those that were left, having some natural aptitude for farming, learnt the ropes the hard way and are to-day established and successful. But they were the minority. We don't want that to happen again.

Farming in Southern Rhodesia is not just a matter of leaving everything to the native in the hope that the crops will grow while the farmer does the social

round. On the contrary, the successful farmer must work and he must know his job. He must know something of Rhodesian conditions, how to safeguard his crops against pests, how to handle native labour. The best way to acquire this knowledge is to spend a couple of seasons as an assistant with a reliable farmer to learn the ropes before launching out on one's own. The Department of Agriculture is always prepared to advise on points like this. No one should think of farming with less than £2-£3,000 capital as the absolute minimum.

A complication which exists to-day, but from which earlier settlers were free, is shortage of native farm labour. With the development of proper agriculture in the Native Reserves fewer natives are now seeking employment, and mining and industry are serious competitors with farming for the native labour that is available. A large number of native farm workers come from the neighbouring territories, but these territories have become alarmed at the breaking up of family and village life owing to the absence of the males, and are restricting the flow. They also need more native labour for their own development schemes. So the average farmer has fewer natives than he needs, and he has to make the best possible use of his available labour. Good working conditions are essential, decent housing, good wages, reasonable hours, fair handling. Increased mechanisation of farming operations wherever this is possible will help to overcome the shortage of human hands.

At present all Crown land farms are being reserved for Rhodesian ex-Servicemen under the Land Settlement Scheme, but it is likely that Crown land will become available for non-Rhodesian ex-Service settlers later this year. The price of Crown land varies from about 4'- to 15'- per acre, according to situation and quality. The Land Settlement Act of 1944 provides for a scheme to settle "civil" (as distinct from Rhodesian ex-Service) settlers on Crown land farms, provided they are (a) at least 21 years of age; (b) of good character and legally competent to hold land; (c) intend to occupy the land personally and develop and work it exclusively for their own benefit; (d) are qualified to use the land beneficially; and (e) possess sufficient capital to ensure the beneficial occupation of the land in accordance with the principles of good husbandry. The "principles of good husbandry" mean preserving the fertility of the soil and avoiding soil erosion by the adoption of sound farming methods.

There is also the Contributory Purchase scheme under which the settler may contribute one-fifth of the purchase price, provided the price of the land and improvements does not exceed £3,000. If approved by the Land Settlement Board (who administer all schemes under the Act), the settler takes the farm on lease, the minimum period of lease being 12 years before he can receive title. Both these schemes, however, have not yet come into operation owing to the requirements of the Rhodesian ex-Servicemen's scheme.

So much for farming. Now for the smallholding. Most people ask for "anything from 40 to 200 acres on which I can grow flowers, vegetables, fruit, poultry, etc., near a large centre to give me a market to augment my income." Well, that is rather a tall order. Smallholdings of this size anywhere near the towns are usually expensive and they are not at all easy to get. This kind of land is handled by the private estate and land agent. But there is another factor. In growing flowers, etc., for the local market the European smallholder has to contend with severe competition from the Asiatic and native market gardener, who can live on far lower prices than he could accept. But if the income is not of primary importance, working a smallholding can be a fine way of life.

The retired man who does not need to work will probably find Southern Rhodesia to his liking. Among the mountains and valleys of Umtali, Inyanga and Melsetter and on the highveld at Marandellas, a village 40 miles from Salisbury, he should be able to find something to suit him. Marandellas has several ex-Army settlers and the district is noted for its social life. On a pension of £400-£500 a year a man and his wife could live in reasonable comfort.

The cost of living is on the high side as compared with Britain, but this is offset by the much lower income-tax and the cheapness of rative servants. Income-tax on incomes earned in the Colony is at the rate (for married persons) of 1/6 in the £ after an initial abatement of £500 and an allowance for each minor child of £100. Native servants, who are reasonably efficient if handled properly, are usually paid about £2 a month for houseboys (slightly more for cookboys) and £1—£1-10s. for garden boys, plus rations (mealie meal, meat and vegetables) and quarters.

The shortage of housing and hotel accommodation, as a result of war conditions, is a brake on immigration at the moment, but it is expected that this position will be eased by the end of the year. If anyone is contemplating coming to this country, it would be advisable for him to defer his arrival for at least another three or four months. And then book hotel accommodation well ahead.

Would-be immigrants are strongly advised to visit this country on a temporary basis in the first instance, if this is possible. In other words, don't burn your boats until you have had a chance to have a good look round and to decide whether you really would like to live in Southern Rhodesia. To the Rhodesian, there is no country in the world like Southern Rhodesia, but the newcomer, seeing things with fresh eyes, may not altogether like what he sees, and it would be a pity if he found himself anchored here. We want new settlers, yes, but we want them to be happy settlers.

If any if your readers are returning to the United Kingdom for demobilisation and are thinking of coming to Rhodesia from there, they should contact the office of the High Commissioner for Southern Rhodesia, Rhodesia House, 429, Strand, London, W.C.2, where they will receive all advice and assistance. If they wish to come to this Colony direct from India they may care to write for more detailed information to the Director, Public Relations Dept., P.O. Box 1150, Salisbury. We shall be happy to help them all we can.

Let me conclude with a quotation from a pamphlet written by Major (now Major-General) W. J. Cawthorn, 4th (Bhopal) 16th Punjab Regt., who visited Southern Rhodesia in 1935 to assess its suitability for retired Indian Army officers. After an exhaustive analysis he wrote in conclusion:

"In my opinion Southern Rhodesia is relatively a very suitable country for permanent settlement by officers of the Indian Army..... I would strongly advise any officer of limited means who does not wish to settle in England to visit Southern Rhodesia and see conditions for himself before deciding to settle elsewhere. If he is unable to afford a preliminary visit and ....thinks that conditions would suit himself and his wife, I would hazard the opinion that he would not be taking an undue risk in coming to this country with a view to permanent settlement...."

### AIR DEFENCE AND ITS LESSONS\*

BY AIR MARSHAL SIR RODERIC HILL, K.C.B., M.C., A.F.C.

FREQUENTLY meditate on what an inconvenient invention flying has so far proved. The conquest of the air came at a time when war clouds were gathering, and it was not long before this nascent art was harnessed to the war machine. As a result, nine out of every ten aircraft built so far have been used for war purposes. From the military point of view, the advent of flying was probably the biggest single innovation since the first use of gunpowder six hundred years before. It came as a severe jolt to the complacency of contemporary thought.

During World War I, whatever forebodings haunted the higher Naval and General Staffs, and in spite of unwelcome attentions of the German naval airships under cover of darkness, the people of Britain slumbered on. But one fine June day in 1917, the morning of June 13, they were awakened with a shock which sharply marked the end of an era.

The citizens of London became aware of a resonant droning in the high summer haze; some wondered vaguely why our machines were so active. A few minutes later the crash of bombs was heard—small bombs, but 162 men, women and children crowding the streets with innocent curiosity were killed. The bombs from fourteen Gothas caused more casualties in this raid than all those inflicted on London by the Zeppelin attacks up to that time.

Lieut. General (now Field Marshal) Smuts, then a recently appointed member of the War Cabinet, saw the Gothas, and when the raid was over visited the areas where the bombs fell. He was deeply concerned not so much by the sights as by what his imagination conjured up. He saw the writing on the walls of London. That afternoon the Cabinet met. A fortnight later, on July 2, a proposal to double the size of the air service was approved. Meanwhile, events moved fast.

On Saturday, July 7, a second raid on London took place, killing 54 and injuring 190. This, however, was not the most serious aspect of the case. The main cause for alarm was the futility of our unorganised defence. Although 78 of our aircraft took off to repel the raid, only one Gotha was shot down, and the fire of our anti-aircraft guns failed to break up the enemy formation. The country was indignant and mortified. These raids were the means of bringing home to our people that, for the time being, the enemy possessed offensive weapons to which we had no effective counter.

On July 11 the Cabinet set up a Committee, with the Prime Minister as chairman, to report on home defence arrangement in particular, and on air organisation and the direction of air operations in general. The Prime Minister had no time to lend more than his name, and the main responsibility fell on Smuts. He lost no time. He submitted two reports. As far as the Air Force is concerned, the second report is an historic document. It foretold the inception of a unified air service, and contained the following words:

<sup>\*</sup>Condensed from a lecture given before the Royal United Service Institution, London. Air Marshal Sir Roderic Hill commanded a Fighter Group, Air Defence of Great Britain, and Fighter Command between 1943 and 1945. He is now Air Member for Training.

"But careful staff work is here, in the terra incognita of the air, even more essential than in military and navel operations, which follow a routine consecrated by the experience of centuries of warfare."

He saw that air operations as a whole, and air defence as part of them, required unified direction and a thinking machine behind it which could sift the wheat from the chaff. I have recalled the two raids of June 13 and July 7 and their effect because, though small in themselves, they formed the first ressential piece of background to our story of air defence.

As a result the Air Staff was set up. Though many eminent minds contributed to the sharp exhilaration of this renaissance in the military art, four names are pre-eminent: Smuts, Winston Churchill, Sir David Henderson and Lord Trenchard. Between 1918 and 1939 the effects of this new venture became visible until, on the outbreak of a second war, they were fully apparent. As a whole, and as always, we were unready, but in so far as we had made preparations, air defence was well ahead.

Up till 1934 the problem of air defence, with the decreasing margin of speed between fighters and bombers, had seemed well nigh insoluble. The turning point may be said to have been reached in March, 1935, when the first Treasury grant was obtained for Radar. Two other major components of the defence were later: the 8-gun high performance fighter, and the Group and Sector organisation in Fighter Command. As the shadow of war approached, Lord Dowding worked feverishly to perfect a system of air defence proof against the great events and trials to some.

When the organisation of our active defence system was fully developed towards the end of the war, the whole country was divided up into twenty Fighter Sectors controlled by five Fighter Groups under Fighter Command headquarters. The Air Officer Commanding-in-Chief, Fighter Command, was in operational control of all arms—fighter squadrons, guns, searchlights, balloons, countermeasures and decoys of various kinds. The guns and searchlights themselves were under the command of the G.O.C.-in-C., Anti-Aircraft Command, and were administered by the War Office.

Ultimately the control of all weapons was based on two delicate and complex organisations: the raid reporting system and the communications system. In 1944 we had about 250 Radar Reporting Stations round the coasts, with some inland, to track enemy aircraft coming in over the sea, and a network of over 1,400 Royal Observer Corps Posts to plot aircraft flying over land. We had also a vast nexus of communications, radio telephone and land line; 2,000 private telephone lines, 60,000 miles of wire, 470 teleprinters, with 16,000 signals personnel and 150 highly trained G.P.O. engineers. These were necessary because instant control had to be exercised over between 600 and 1,000 aircraft, 3,000 guns, 3,000 to 4,000 searchlights, and 2,000 balloons. The nerve ganglia of the system were the Operations Rooms at H.Q. of Fighter Command, Fighter Groups, and Fighter Sectors.

The complexity of this organisation was dictated by the time factor. At 200 m.p.h. it only took enemy bombers 15 minutes, (at 300 m.p.h. only 10 minutes,) to reach London from the coast. Time being the essence of the problem, every commander at Groups and Sectors, according to his sphere of responsibility, had to have enough information to produce a physical display in his Operations Room so that he could issue his orders to aircraft, guns, searchlights and other weapons in time. The unique vulnerability of some of our vital targets, especially London,

in relation to the far-flung crescent of German bases ringing us round, forced us to go on developing this intricate and highly responsive mechanism. At its zenith in 1944, it reached a remarkable pitch of scientific and military ingenuity.

The Battle of Britain period has been so well written up that there is no need for me to dwell very long on it. There are just two salient features—the time factor and the Group and Sector organisation—which are worth enlarging on a little.

The Time Factor. In those days pilots at what was called Readiness had to be airborne within five minutes. Often they did it in less, and got it down to two minutes. Thus the time taken from the first hint of the presence of enemy aircraft until the pilots were airborne to intercept was about six minutes: two and a half minutes from radar tube to Operations Room table; one and a half minutes from Group Controller to the pilots at dispersal point receiving their orders on the loud speakers; two minutes to airborne time.

The Group and Sector Organisation. Normally Fighter Command held a watching brief and did not interfere in day-to-day operations except on questions like inter-group reinforcement. The Group Commanders set the battle and ordered off the appropriate squadrons, using the Sector organisation to give effect to their orders. The Sector Commander then took over and arranged the actual interceptions, when the affair was taken on by the formation leaders in the air. Responsibilities at the various levels were carefully balanced to ensure the maximum flexibility and the efficient concentration of striking power where it was most needed.

Without this system we could never have won the Battle of Britain; without radar ten times the defending force could not have achieved the same results. On 15 September, 1940, 21 squadrons were airborne, and the panels in No. 11 Group Operations Room showed that 21 squadrons had engaged the enemy, with results not unsatisfactory to us. That day the enemy took a knock from which he never wholly recovered. That day, too, was the apocalypse of Lord Dowding's life-work.

Let us skip three years. The march of science has given not only us but the enemy new and more deadly equipment. They have improved radio navigation aid, they have fast and better armed and armoured bombers. We have developed night fighters carrying airborne radar (A.I) and ground controlled interception radar stations (G.C.I) wherein both friend and foe can be seen together by the Controller on the Cathode Ray Tube, and interceptions effected in the dark or bad weather. Radio telephony, which serves to connect Controller and air crew, has made great strides, and the V.H.F. system gives more channels of communication, greater range, and clearer speech.

The technique of night interception needed on the one hand a great scientific effort, and on the other much specialised training of pilots and radio navigators. Consequently it was developed slowly and somewhat painfully. The problem of detecting, intercepting and identifying an enemy aircraft at night was far more severe than that of attacking him. For one thing, the final approach had to be done by visual means, and the range at which this was possible varied tremendously with background and with what sort of a night it was. In moonlight it might be half a mile; on a dark night against a starlit background perhaps 200 yards. It was found that, in general, the only way to bring off an interception was to get behind and overtake in the same direction as the

enemy was flying. Recognition had to be by silhouette, and the danger of shooting down a friend was ever present. The function of airborne radar was to enable the attacker to get within visual range and, if he lost sight of the target, to regain it.

The defence worked on the same principles as it did in the Battle of Britain, but in 1943, we observe an advance in organisation. When the Group Commander has planned the battle and deployed the forces, the Sector Commander takes them over, but a regular procedure at night is now to delegate the responsibility for detailed interception to the G.C.I. station with its highly organised radar display.

Let us suppose it is an evening in October, 1943.

We are at Sopley G.C.I. station in No. 10 Fighter Group. Sector headquarters is at Middle Wallop, and Group headquarters at Colerne, near Bath. The Chief Controller Sopley has a fighter controller in the main display room, and two more controllers in separate cabins called the Yellow and Red cabins. A raid is coming in from the Cherbourg Peninsula, and is heading for Portland Bill. The target looks as though it will be Bristol.

The Group Commander has planned the defensive programme for the night. Orders have been issued to Sector, and three of the Beaufighters from Middle Wallop are already on patrol twenty miles south of the coast between St. Catherine's Point and Portland Bill. Let us follow the fortunes of one of them, whose call-sign is Blanket 32. The pilot is Flight-Lieutenant Stokes and the radio navigator is Flying Officer Mortar. At 6.30 p.m. Stokes was taxying gingerly round the perimeter track at Middle Wallop checking out with flying control on his R/T. He is cleared and roars away into the darkness.

Stokes climbs to 6,000 ft. over base, changes R/T frequency, and reports himself to Sector. The Sector Controller hands him over to Sopley Fighter control. Let us say Springboard is Sopley's call-sign. Stokes calls up: "Hullo, Springboard; hullo Springboard. This is Blanket 32. Do you hear me? Over". Almost at once comes the laconic voice of the Fighter controller: "Springboard to Blanket 32. Hearing you loud and clear. Vector two zero zero, angels 10". (Which means: "Set course of 200 degrees and fly at 10,000 feet"). This course takes Stokes across the coast and twenty miles south of it. He maintains his vigil for about half an hour, during which time he is handed over to the Yellow cabin controller at Sopley on another R/T frequency.

At 7.22 p.m. Yellow cabin controller says: "Blanket 32 from Springboard. I have some bandits for you, approaching from one eight zero angels 10. Vector one niner seven. Maintain angels 15." Stokes is then given future courses and alterations to height until he is close to the incoming bombers. At this stage Yellow cabin controller tells him to search with his airborne Radar (A.I.) and gives him the course, height and speed of the enemy.

Flying Officer Mortar, his radio navigator, is sitting in the back seat of the Beaufighter, with his eyes glued to the Cathode Ray Tube. His voice comes through on the inter-com: "Navigator to captain; contact". Mortar indicates that the targets is at three miles range above and to the right. His job is now to direct Stokes to a position behind the enemy at a range of approximately two miles. Mortar then tells Stokes to throttle back until the range remains constant, that is, he is travelling at the same speed as the enemy.

As he flies through the night, as yet having seen nothing, Stokes makes a rapid mental appreciation. No cloud—had probably better approach from below—enemy will have sky for background—should be able to see him before rear

gunner, seems to me. Meanwhile, Mortar's voice is coming through on the inter-com: "Navigator to captain—increase speed by 20—hold—ease off—hold—port a little—steady starboard a little...."—thus enabling Stokes to approach slowly on the same course from behind and below.

At last Stokes sees the enemy aircraft against the sky. Keeping below, he looks for features such as the shape of the wings, the number of engine nacelles and the position of the exhaust flames, so as to identify the aircraft he is intercepting. He recognises the aircraft as a Ju.88. The aircraft is not unlike his own, the Beaufighter, so that as a final check he looks at the tail plane. He looks for the characteristic taper which will identify it from the Beaufighter. A moment more and his decision is taken. It is a Ju.88 and so far he is unobserved.

Stokes now drops back to range of 200 yards, gently raises his nose, gets the Ju.88 in the faintly illuminated ring of his reflector sight—and presses the firing button. There is a great gout of flame and Stokes banks steeply to avoid the burning debris. Twisting his head round, he watches the Ju.88 spiral down till it hits the water with a bright flash. He makes a quick check to locate any damage, and then gets ready for the next round. Yellow controller comes up again: "Vector zero seven five, zero seven five, angels 7. Stand by for second bandit". So through the night the game of hide and seek continues, in which those on the ground and those in the air, unseen by each other, yet with the mutual confidence of hard training, contrive the undoing of the enemy.

I have put a certain amount of detail into the story of night interception in 1943 because I want to emphasise that in the study of air defence it is most important not to overlook the point of view of the men who actually do the job: the air crew, the controllers, and the flight and squadron commander. Neither organisation nor plans which do not come to grips with practical issues are likely to work or to command the confidence of the men at the business end.

From 1943 onwards, the same work was carried on until, after a last effort by the *Luftwaffe*, in the spring of 1944, the enemy bombers no longer ventured, at least in any numbers, over our coastline....The pattern of the defence wove itself into the pattern of the offence until the whole design attained coherence. Not until we had survived the Battle of Britain, and Fighter Command had given the requisite measure of security to our main base, could the Government contemplate large-scale overseas operations.

From then onward our air operations were concerned with extending our zone of air superiority farther and farther away from London and the Midlands, over the great Continental estuaries, and, with the help of our American colleagues, over the Westphalian plain into the heart of Germany. In due course, our Navy was to transport our Army to the Continent under the presiding wings, and the Army and Air Force at last pushed the *Luftwaffe* and the S.S. rocket batteries out of their bases in time, but only just.

All the same, the future does not put most people into one of their happier moods. Let us face the problem squarely. A good air defence is very costly; but a bad air defence is ruinous. Furthermore, the better that the U.N.O. progresses, and the more furiously that peace rages, the more acute will be the difficulties of maintaining general agreement on the scale of air defence that ought in the circumstances to be kept up. Whatever we do have, in quality it ought to be the best we can afford, for we can only afford the best; it ought also to be a little more than ready, for it should if possible be a lap ahead.

It should be remembered that the last word on the problem of interception is never said, and that all target-seeking missiles contain the seeds of their own destruction. However much we are able to keep the technique of Air Defence in the forefront of technical progress, it is no use pretending that it can be a substitute for the offensive use of air power. The best deterrent to armed aggression, and indeed the only real answer to it, is the science, the strength, and the confidence of our punch. And this truth will deepen as the destructive power of weapons grows.

Take a glance at the relationship of air defence with the future growth and texture of the British Commonwealth and Empire. I am going to suggest a metaphor. Let us call Great Britain and particularly London, the stomach of the Empire. The stomach in relation to the body, and Great Britain in relation to the Empire have some points in common: first, in respect of their lack of natural protection, and secondly in respect of their service to humanity as a focus of morale. Now it is inconvenient to fight anyone who may hit you below the belt, but having to fight and defend your stomach with indigestion at the same is really awkward.

Bear in mind a few simple facts. The land of the British Isles is roughly 100,000 square miles and contains 48 million people, of whom 8,500,000 are crammed into the 700 square miles of Greater London. The land area of the Commonwealth, excluding India, is 13,000,000 square miles, and its population is 150 million. Hence, whereas Britain contains nearly one-third of the population, it is about 130 times as small. As a stomach, it is overfilled.

Commonsense would seem to suggest that it would be to the mutual advantage of various members of the Commonwealth if we did what we could to spread out a bit more evenly. Deliberate creation of alternative sources of supply and manufacture in the countries of the Commonwealth, linked up by improving communications, would be a form of strategic dispersion. It would not only ease the problem of air defence, but would assuredly promote Imperial health. To pursue the metaphor, we might even compare such higher level of activity in the limbs of the Commonwealth to the beneficial effect that exercise of the arms and legs has on the relief of indigestion. In the unhappy event of peace breaking down, it would be much harder for an aggressor to inflict crippling damage—indeed, there would be less temptation to try it—on a system without such a super-sensitive solar plexus.

Twenty years ago a lecture was given on this platform on the subject I have talked about. May I end by quoting a passage from the lecturer's final remarks:

"And last of all, in this Institution it is perhaps just and appropriate to emphasise that a real scheme of Air Defence is not a mere selfish national consideration; it is in fact the strongest link in the great and delicate chain of Empire".

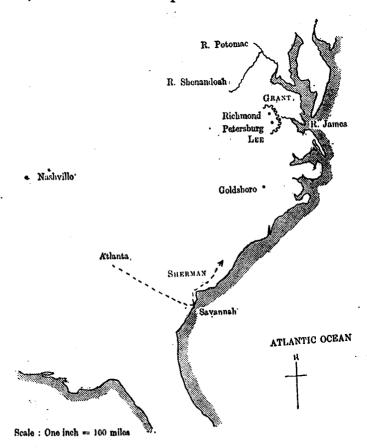
#### R. A. Aero Club.

The R. A. Aero Club (India), formed in Delhi to encourage flying as a sporting and recreational activity, has purchased its first aircraft. Membership is open to officers who have served in the R.A. or the Royal Indian Artillery. Indian officers are especially welcomed. Annual subscription is Rs. 30 for flying members; Rs. 15 for non-flying members. With financial backing from the R.A. Station Messes Fund (India) and from the Civil Aviation Directorate in India, it is hoped that the cost of flying will not exceed Rs. 20 per hour.

### A FASCINATING PARALLEL

### By F. G.

have been greatly struck by the similarity between the closing stages of the American Civil War in 1865 and the closing stages of World War II in Europe. Indeed, the situation bears such a close resemblance that one is tempted to overstress the likeness. But this is hardly necessary. Events speak for themselves, and here is the set up.



By the end of 1864 the American Civil War was being fought on three main fronts:

- (a) In the East the great ROBERT E. LEE, commanding the Confederate Army of Northern Virginia, faced the Federal C.-in-C. ULYSSES S. GRANT, whose Headquarters were with the Army of the Potomac.
- (b) In the South, the Confederate HARDEE was beating a steady retreat before the Federal SHERMAN, who had just completed his famous march "from Atlanta to the sea", which he reached at Savannah.

(c) In the West the Confederate Hood was in full retreat after his disastrous defeat by the Federal Thomas at the battle of Nashville. The remnants of his army subsequently joined forces with HARDEE, who was superseded by Johnston.

In February 1865 LEE was appointed C.-in-C. of all the Confederate forces, a function which, up to that time, had been exercised by the President, Jefferson Davis. In addition, LEE retained command of the Army of Northern Virginia.

At this time the Army of Northern Virginia was strung out along a 37-mile perimeter defending Richmond, the Southern capital, and Petersburg, 18 miles to the South. The army, which had fought a long and exhausting series of defensive actions from the beginning of 1864, until it was finally bottled up in its present earthworks, was now suffering from extremes of fatigue and lack of supplies. Grant, moreover, had unchallenged command of the sea, and a numerical superiority of roughly 2 to 1.

For six months he had been trying to force a way through the Richmond and Petersburg defences, and to finish the war by seizing the Confederate capital. But Lee's masterly handling of his steadily dwindling forces had time and again foiled Grant's plans, and, when the campaigning season of 1865 opened, he was still far from achieving his object.

LEE however, was seriously worried by the increasing rate of desertion in his army. Often, in previous years, men had deserted between battles, returned to their farms to see their wives and families, and then rejoined the army before the next battle. But now they were deserting and not returning. The Federal Sheridan's successes against the Confederate Early in the Shenandoah Valley, from where many of Lee's men were recruited, and Sherman's irresistible advance into South Carolina, was having the most depressing result on the morale of the Confederate troops. The call of home and family was proving stronger than the call of patriotism and duty.

Again, owing to uncontrolled inflation, the Confederate currency was practically worthless. Farmers refused to sell supplies to the Government in exchange for useless paper money, and the feeding of the army suffered in consequence. The men were exhausted through overwork and continuous defence.

Lee, feeling that only by offensive action could his army retain its cohesion, made a last despairing effort to regain the initiative. The point he chose for his attack was a work called Fort Stedman, and the operation was entrusted to one of his best Corps Commanders, General Gordon. Lee hoped, by a successful exploitation of the break-through at this point, that Grant, who was steadily extending his left flank so as to threaten Petersburg from the South, would be forced to strengthen his right at the expense of his left. This would give Lee a chance to join forces with Johnston and strike at Sherman before Sherman could join forces with Grant.

SHERMAN, by now, was getting dangerously close, and had already reached Goldsboro.

Gordon's Second Army Corps was specially reinforced for the assault, and also given a detachment of cavalry, whose particular task was to be the destruction of Federal communications and bridges. As soon as Fort Stedman was captured, the assaulting troops were to wheel to their right and sweep down the Federal entrenchments, the movement being supported by other troops holding the Confederate lines as fast as their fronts were cleared. The attack was a failure, and can best be described in Lee's own words:—

"I have been unwilling to hazard any operation of the troops in an assault upon fortified positions, preferring to reserve their strength for the struggle which must soon commence; but I was induced to assume the offensive from the belief that the point assailed could be carried without much loss, and the hope that by the seizure of the redoubts in the rear of the enemies' main lines, I could sweep along his entrenchments south, so that, if I could not cause their abandonment, General Grant would at least be obliged so to curtail his lines that, upon the approach of General Sherman, I might be able to hold our position with a portion of the troops, and, with a select body, unite with General Johnston and give him battle.

"If successful, I would then be able to return to my position, and, if unsuccessful I should be in no worse condition, as I should be compelled to withdraw from James river if I quietly awaited his approach. But although the assault upon the fortified works was bravely accomplished, the redoubts commanding the line of entrenchments were found enclosed and strongly manned, so that an attempt to carry them must have been attended with great hazard, and, even if accomplished, would have caused a great sacrifice of life in the presence of the large reserves which the enemy were hurrying into position.

"I therefore determined to withdraw the troops, and it was in retiring that they suffered the greatest loss. I fear now it will be impossible to prevent a junction between Grant and Sherman, nor do I deem it prudent that this army should maintain its position until the latter shall approach too near."

This assault took place on March 25, 1865, and the survivors of Gornon's attacking troops were back in their own lines within four hours. The Confederate casualties were about 4,000.

With his last hope of seizing the initiative from Grant irretrievably lost, Lee now had no alternative but to pull out of his extensive fortifications, which he no longer had the troops to man. On April 2, the withdrawal from the Rightning and Petersburg defences began. Grant followed up like lightning, and, a week later, on April, 9, he had, without the aid of Sherman, captured or destroyed the whole of LEE'S once great army. In the final surrender at Appomattox Court House, 28,356 officers and men of the Confederate army were paroled.

With the surrender of Lee's army, the Confederacy collapsed. The only organized force left was Johnston's in North Carolina. He concluded an armistice with Sherman on April 18, and 37,047 men were paroled in the final surrender. Jefferson Davis, the Southern President, was himself captured on May 10, and all fighting ceased on the 13th.

## HISTORY REPEATS ITSELF.

In December 1944, the situation confronting the German Armies was as follows:

- (a) In the West, manning the Siegfried line, Runsted's army faced EISENHOWER.
- (b) In the East, Guderian faced the Russian Zhukov, who was pushing steadily nearer Berlin.
- (c) In the South, in Italy, KESSELRING faced ALEXANDER.

The German armies in the West had been in continuous retreat from June 6, when the Allies landed in Normandy, until they managed to halt the Allied advance when it reached the Siegfried Line. Eisenhower then started a series of frontal attacks at different points in the line. He had unchallenged air supremacy, and a large numerical superiority. Some observers estimated that these bludgeon blows were costing the Germans some 6,000 men per day, and, although the amount of ground gained was small, yet Runsted realized that he could not afford to suffer such a casualty rate indefinitely. Sooner or later his army would crumble away. Desertions were increasing, facilitated by the chaos created behind his lines by the incessant Allied bombing. Many of his troops who came from East Prussia were already "looking over their shoulders", as the Russians invaded their homeland.

In these circumstances, he, too, made a last despairing effort to regain the initiative. He hoped to break the Allied grip on his army, so that he might join forces with GUDERIAN and strike at ZHUKOV, before the latter could unite with EISENHOWER. The point chosen for the attack was in the Ardennes, with the object of creating a diversion at a weak point in the Allied lines and seizing Liege and Namur. If these successes could be exploited, Antwerp and Aachen would be threatened.

To a limited extent, this thrust was successful. It certainly caused the Allied commanders to regroup their forces. Everything was concentrated on the destruction of Runsted's few remaining Panzer units, to the detriment of other attacks on the SIEGFRIED Line which were then in progress. But the initial break-through failed to reach any tactical objective, and the advance was halted four miles North of the River Meuse.

From this moment onwards, it was only a question of time before the ground lost by the Allies was regained. Runsted, having shot his bolt, now had no alternative but to pull out of the Siegfried line, which he no longer had the troops to man. His efforts to unite with Guderian were unsuccessful, and the German armies, like the Confederates, were forced to surrender independently.

## Holy Hermit Pays Tribute To Gurkhas

In memory of the men of the 4/4th Gurkha Rifles who lost their lives in the attack on Mandalay Hill during the late war, the Holy Hermit of Mandalay Hill, Rev. U. Khanti, is placing a memorial tablet in a pagoda on the summit of the hill. He is also presenting the battalion with a bell taken from one of the pagodas.

On the night of 8th March 1945, the Gurkhas attacked the Japanese stronghold on Mandalay Hill. The attack succeeded and 89 Japanese were killed for the loss of nine Gurkhas killed and 40 wounded.

The hill, with its many colourful pagodas and Buddhist shrines, is the centre of the Buddhist faith in Burma. To help repair the damage that was done to the shrines during the attack, men of the 4/4th Gurkhas have contributed a sum of Rs. 2,500,

# INDIAN ENGINEERS' NEW HONOUR

By LIEUT. COLONEL. M. E. S. LAWS, O.B.E., M.C., R.A. (ret.)

THE grant of the title "Royal" to the Indian Engineers has given well described recognition of the long and admirable service of the Indian Sapper. For Corps in the Indian Army have suffered more periodical outbursts of economy, but despite all difficulties the Indian soldier has shown that he is well able to master the technical problems which confront the military engineer units modern conditions of warfare.

In the early days of the East India Company the few military enginering problems that arose were referred to an individual styled "The Guant", who was regarded as an expert on all scientific subjects and who was often in first a sailor. But as the defences of the Company's trading posts inevitably become officers to design new works and to supervise their construction by civilsa labourers.

Gradually and reluctantly the Company became involved more and more in political disputes with the neighbouring rulers, and in con equence found itself committed to military operations far beyond the passive defence of its factories. When therefore the Company's forces took the field in mobile washes, the engineer officers were responsible for supervising the hired civilian labor employed in siege works, keeping open communications and similar tasks normally undertaken by Sappers.

The unsatisfactory nature of this arrangement became obvious, for the engineer officer had to depend on technically untrained craftsmen who moreover were not subject to military discipline. It was at first proposed to overcome this difficulty by enlisting a company of foreign artificers, but in the end the Court of Directors compromised by raising for Bombay a Company of Pionest Lascars on 13th December 1777. This unit, which did excellent work in the First Maratha War, may be said to be the beginning of the Royal Indian Engineers.

The example of Bombay was followed three years later by Madras, where the temporarily enlisted and quite untrained Pioneers were replaced by two regular Pioneer Companies, which were armed with pistols and pikes. So successful was the experiment that the two Companies of 1780 became a Battalion of six Companies in 1793, and ten years later the Madras Pioneers consisted of sixteen Companies organised in two Battalions. In 1803 the Bengal Army also decided to abolish its temporary units and to establish three regular Pioneer Companies, which were raised at Cawnpore. Meanwhile the original Company of Bombay Pioneer Lascars had grown by 1797 into a "Corps of Pioneers" of four companies. It is of interest to note that the Bombay and Bengal Pioneers wore a green tunic, while the Madras unit adopted blue.

BJ.

120

M.

Thus by the beginning of the 19th century the East India Company's armies had at least a nucleus of regularly enlisted Pioneers, but the situation was not altogether satisfactory. For one thing the engineer officers formed a Corps quite apart from the Pioneers, who were officered from the Infanty, so that the Sapper officer was not responsible for the training or administration of the rank and file with whom he was associated in war. Furthermore the Pioneers

were simply civilian craftsmen, enlisted, drilled and armed, but by no means expert in the technicalities of field engineering and the mysteries of mining and siege warfare. This point was very forcibly demonstrated by the British failure to storm the strong fortress of Bhurtpore in 1805, despite the acknowledged gallantry of the troops. The repulse at Bhurtpore had a serious effect on British military prestige in India, and caused the authorities to increase the cadres of engineer officers; it did more than that, for it demonstrated the necessity of maintaining engineer units as opposed to Pioneers.

In 1819 the Bengal Army took the lead by converting two of its eight Pieneer Companies at Allahabad into the nucleus of a corps of Bengal Sappers and Miners consisting of six companies, to which a few British N.C.Os were attached. This corps was officered by Bengal Engineers, and was dressed in scarlet tunics with blue collars and cuffs, blue trousers and blue pagri with red kullah. Bombay immediately followed the example set by Bengal and in 1820 expanded an existing small Pontoon Train into a company of Bombay Sappers and Miners on an establishment similar to that of the Bengal Sappers and Miners. The Bombay Pioneers were retained as a separate Corps. Madras also intended to form a separate engineer unit in 1818, but suitable recruits were diverted to the long established Pioneers and the new unit was never formed. In 1831 however the 1st Battalion Madras Pioneers was converted into the Corps of Madras Sappers and Miners with its eight Companies commanded by Engineer officers.

By 1831 therefore each of the three Presidencies had Engineer troops as well as Pioneers, but as there seemed no likelihood of large-scale warfare breaking out and as economy was as always an important consideration to the Court of Directors, it was inevitable that the Pioneers should disappear. It was considered that their duties could be performed as well and more cheaply by hired civilian labour, leaving the Sapper and Miner units to undertake the more technical field engineering work. In 1830 the Bombay Pioneers were absorbed into the Sappers and Miners or, as the latter corps had been designated since the previous year, the "Bombay Engineers". In February 1834 both the Madras and Bengal Pioneers were absorbed into their respective Sapper and Miner Corps and the Indian Army was left with Engineer units but without Pioneers. It is true that Pioneers made a brief reappearance in 1847 when the Bengal Sappers and Miners changed their title to "Sappers and Pioneers" on the introduction of seven Pioneer Companies to compensate for a reduction in Sappers: this was purely a measure of economy and the Pioneers disappeared in 1851 when the former title was resumed.

It is impossible in a short article to deal adequately with the numerous battle honours of the Sappers and Miners. The Bengal Corps won its first notable success at the storming of Bhurtpore in 1826, and collected further laurels in Afghanistan, the Punjab and Central India. The Madras Sappers and Miners had their baptism of fire in Malaya in 1832 and subsequently fought in Coorg, Burma, China, Sind, and Persia. Bombay Sappers were engaged in the First Afghan War, in Kolhapur and in the 2nd Sikh Campaign. When the Mutiny broke out, about 40% of the Bengal Sappers and Miners remained loyal and three weak companies fought with the besieging army before Delhi, as also did some 900 unarmed and hastily enrolled Pioneers. The Engineers' work at the siege and capture of Delhi, culminating in the blowing in of the Kashmir Gate was a record of which the Bengal Sappers and Miners and the Pioneers may well be proud. Three Companies each of the Bombay and Madras Sappers and

Miners served in the suppression of the Mutiny, and the remaining units of these Corps remained loyal.

When the British Crown assumed control in India, the European officers of the Bengal, Madras and Bombay Engineers were transferred to the Royal Engineers, but the three corps of Sappers and Miners remained on the establishment though with some reduction in strength. Three Companies of Royal Engineers were also stationed permanently in India. There were no Sapper and Miner units in the Punjab Irregular Force (later Frontier Force), but the Pioneers from the Punjab, who had won fame in the Mutiny, were retained.

The Indian Sappers and Miners took their full share of the fighting after the Mutiny, though they were not always employed on the minor Frontier campaigns. All three Corps took part in the Second Afghan War and both the Bombay and Madras Sappers and Miners fought in Abyssinia in 1867. The Madras Corps supplied a Company for the Perak Expedition of 1875, and both the Bombay and the Madras Corps were represented in the Malta Expeditionary Force of 1878. Madras Companies took part in the Egyptian War of 1882 and in the Suakin Expedition, while others of the corps fought in the 3rd Burma War. Bombay Sappers and Miners also fought in Somaliland in 1890 and in 1903; on the Mekran coast in 1898 and in 1901 and at Aden in 1901 and 1904; all three Corps sent units to China in 1900. In the later Frontier campaigns the Sappers and Miners also took a distinguished part.

Meanwhile some changes had taken place in organisation, and in 1897 it was decided that the order of precedence should be Madras, Bengal and Bombay in that order. In 1903 the Corps were numbered 1st (Bengal), 2nd (Madras) and 3rd (Bombay) and the Companies were renumbered throughout the Indian Army, instead of within their own particular corps. The object of these changes was to consolidate the Sappers into a single service without interfering with the traditions of the old Presidency armies. An Indian Submarine Mining Company had been formed in 1891 and Electric Light Defence Sections were also established for the defence of fortified harbours. The Bengal Corps had an experimental Balloon Section in 1901 and Madras and Bombay had Telegraph and Printing Sections.

The Sappers and Miners expanded greatly during the 1914-18 War. The nineteen Field Companies of 1914 became fifty-six Field Companies by 1918, while the three pre-war Depot Companies were increased to thirty-eight before the war was over. These units fought in France, Mesopotamia, Persia, East Africa, Aden, Egypt, Palestine and the North West Frontier. In some cases—notably in France—they fought as Infantry in emergency, but normally they were employed on engineering duties of every type. Hardly had the First World War ceased, than the Indian Army was engaged in the Third Afghan War, in which no less than three Field Troops, twenty-three Field Companies and three Railway Companies of the Sappers and Miners were engaged.

On the conclusion of the Great War of 1914-18 the Sapper and Miner Corps were reorganised so as to include Field Companies, Divisional H. Qs Companies, Army Troops Companies, Field Troops, Bridging Train, Railway Companies, Fortress Companies and Defence Light Sections, Photolitho and Printing sections. In general these changes brought the Indian Engineer corps more into line with the Royal Engineer organisation at Home. Moreover, certain units were removed from the Madras Sappers and Miners to form the nucleus of another corps—"The 4th Burma Sappers and Miners". In 1923 the

Sappers and Miners Corps dropped their numerical titles and became respectively The King George's Own Bengal, The Queen Victoria's Own Madras, The Royal Bombay and The Burma Sappers and Miners. In the same year also the four corps of Pioneers—Madras, Bombay, Sikh and Hazara—were abolished, though many of their men were transferred to the Sappers and Miners and their officers to the Infantry.

The decision to disband units with such fine fighting recorde was taken with great reluctance, but there can be no doubt that, under conditions of modern warfare, field engineering is a specialist job for specialist troops and there was no longer any justification for retaining Pioneers. Furthermore the reduction of the Pioneers permitted a higher establishment of Sappers and Miners to be maintained and thus materially contributed to the increased efficiency of the latter units.

The exploits of the Indian Engineer troops in the Second World War are too well known to require detailed description. Once again an enormous expansion took place, and despite an initial shortage of modern technical equipment, new units of every description were raised, trained and sent overseas. The Indian Sappers fought in East Africa, the Western Desert, the Tunis and Italian campaigns, in Syria, in Malaya, in Burma, in Greece and on the North West Frontier. As a result of the First World War the Bombay Sappers and Miners were awarded the title "Royal", and it is indeed fitting that this honour should now have been extended to the whole Corps of Indian Engineers for its magnificent record in the Second World War.

## G. H. Q. Signals

Beginning six years ago with only one wireless set operated by four men, G.H.Q. Signals has developed into an organisat on dealing with more than 250,000 words a day. During the last 29 months of the late war this unit handled over 215 million words in 3,500,000 messages, about one-tenth of which were in cypher.

Among a few of the wireless circuits which carried these messages were those working to London, Singapore, Melbourne, Nairobi, as well as to centres in India and Ceylon. The monthly wartime average of words received and despatched by the G.H.Q. Signal Office was just under 8,000,000.

During the closing stages of the war in Burma signal traffic soared high and on 4th August 1945, it reached its peak of 514,943 words.

### Monetary Awards for Servicemen

About 12,500 jangi ináms have been sanctioned for distribution among personnel of the three fighting Services who rendered meritorious service during World War II. In addition, 200 honorary commissions are being granted to deserving V.C.Os.

The jangi inams will be worth Rs. 20 per month for Gurkha officers, V.C.Os, and Indian Warrant officers of the Indian Army, Indian commissioned-warrant officers and other warrant officers of the R.I.N. and for warrant officers of the R.I.A.F. Indian and Gurkha soldiers, ratings, airmen and enrolled non-combatants will receiv: Rs. 10 per month.

The grants will be admissible from 1st April, 1946. In the case of personnel who have died, jangi ináms will be paid to their heirs.



### **ENGLAND - JUNE, 1946**

### BY "CECIL VARCUS"

MUCH has been heard of the many restrictions to liberty in England; of the lack of proper food and clothing of domestic difficulties; of the dirt and grime of London; of the bad manners of many; and of the general weariness of all. Yet in spite of all these ugly rumours we still find men in all three Services only too anxious to return to their country and their jobs, if any. My wife and I felt, therefore, that there must be something good and solid still left, and we determined to find out for ourselves; to see show these ex-Servicemen were faring; and to see whether there had been disillusionment. We were not disappointed.

Custom officials are generally looked upon as a sort of Gestapo—a kind of uniformed tyrant, stamping about with his heavy boots, glaring at us in an endeavour to pierce our frail defences and expose our innermost secrets to the gaze of the common multitude standing patiently around in a state of nervous expectation. They are, in fact, nothing of the sort.

The customs official is just another kindly human person, most likely with a wife and kiddies, who has been put there for a purpose and who, if treated sensibly and courteously is capable of the finer feelings. He appreciates honesty, truthfulness and help; he detests deceit, lying and bad manners. If we help him by presenting him with a complete list of all our dutiable articles, showing him where they are, and adding any special comments as to why we have them, more than likely he will pass the lot without fuss or without even wanting to look at any of our treasures, still less to dismember our trunks.

If, on the other hand, we try some funny business he can go one better than us, and with authority behind him. He usually wins. He is specially considerate to the Services, and to people who have been absent from Home for a long time. It is usually preferable to be last than first through the Customs if you have a lot of dutiable goods to declare!

In travelling we meet the English at their best. Long suffering, cheery, helpful and even talkative if you begin first. They certainly had something to put up with during the long years of fire watching, bombing, doodle bugs, rockets and long distance shelling.

There is a general shortage of railway stock, porters, barrows and taxis. What few of the latter there are work all out during the rush periods. Weekend travelling is a nightmare; no reservations are permitted except on medical certificate. Mostly all carriages on the railways are of one class only; queues line up outside the platform gates, and when they open the rush for seats begins. Soon corridors are packed with human beings, standing or sitting on suitcases.

Getting to the restaurant car—if any—becomes an acrobatic feat, involving stepping over humanity, compressing one's anatomy to the dimensions of Noel Coward's Blythe Spirit, avoiding burning the back of the man's hair if you are smoking, and generally hanging on to swaying door handles and window bars. It is, however, worth doing, since the neward at the end of on 's troubles is a battle of good English Worthington.

The Underground, too, is troublesome during the rush hours, when it is apparently the policy to squeeze the last ounce out of available standing accommodation. As long as doors can just close upon the tightly packed mass of people inside, safty-first regulations have apparently been achieved. It is impossible to fall down when the train lurches, since you are well propped up by the other "sardines" around you. To get out of the carriage at your destination, too, is an acrobatic feat requiring much patience, perseverance and good humour. Buses are not permitted to be so crowded, but bus queues are long and wearisome. Taxis can seldom be obtained from a taxistand, and taxi queues are always to be seen, especially at week-ends. Woe betide the individual who tries to gate-crash a taxi queue!

Hotel accommodation is available in London if booked a week or so ahead, but you are only allowed to take it for a maximum of seven days. There are, however, one or two hotel cum boarding houses, though not in the heart of London, where there is no time limit for residence. The Over Seas League in Park Place, St. James's, has excellent single and double accommodation for about 14s. 6d. per head for bed and breakfast, with comfortable suites, each with its own private bathroom. Wherever one stays, however, there is a seething population ceaselessly milling to and fro, as restless as the proverbial ant. I suppose all hotel charges are at least double pre-war prices, if not more. Seaside hotel accommodation this summer averaged 7 to 10 guines per head per week.

Unfurnished flats are impossible to get; you are just laughed at if you summon up courage to ask. Furnished flats are snapped up by telephone as soon as any notice goes up in a club, if not before. They are certainly gone by the time the advertisement appears in a paper—if ever it does. They are expensive, and vary between five and a half guineas to 12 or 15 guineas per week, according to the number of rooms (usually only two) and their location. Small fortunes are being made out of house property, which is generally three or four times the pre-war value. Yet they sell; in fact, they are snapped up. Every house advertised has at least forty people inquiring about it the next day. £4,000 appears to be the average price for a house valued before the war at £1,200.

The less said about furniture and carpets the better. Prices are really p eposterous, bearing in mind their real value. A very ordinary cane settee, two similar chairs and a miserably looking small table were priced at £57. 10s. Small Persian carpets fetch anything up to £175. It takes months to get a small advertisement in a London paper—sometimes as long as sixteen to eighteen weeks, by which time the article has probably been sold privately.

In small households the ration does not go very far. People are short of the basic items and get little variety. Larger households fare better, and a man with wife and five small children has little difficulty in food matters. A reasonable meal of three courses can be obtained at all restaurants, the meat usually being pigeon or rabbit, or occasionally duck at the higher class hotels. Sometimes even a roast moorhen appears! Controlled price for a meal is 5s., but higher class establishments add hous; charge, bringing your lunch up to 7s. 6d. or dinner 10s. 6d. Clubs are the cheapest places at which to feed.

One misses the daily egg or eggs for breakfast; only one per week, and one issue of bacon; one misses also the daily meat dish and fresh or tinned fruit to which we are so accustomed in India. Food becomes monotonous through lack of variety, and deficiencies of basic essentials. In consequence, whole families

frequently flock for the day to London or elsewhere for a restaurant meal, thereby saving their own food coupons. No coupons are demanded for casual meals, and hotels only take them if you stay five days or over. Bread is getting browner, and is now rationed. It is not allowed to be served unless you ask for it. Food parcels from abroad have been a godsend, but of course thousands never receive any.

As regards drink, you can get whisky, gin and sherry in clubs, pubs and bars generally, but you can't buy a bottle—unless "under the counter" and at a price. You can generally get English beer at all pubs, although sometimes they are closed through being "out of stock". Wine shops always seem to be in that predicament. Their small stores of beer, stout and cyder are booked up and removed at a very early hour!

What of The Home? It is truly a sad sight. No regular maids, and only a woman in once a week to wash. The eternal round of bed making, cooking and washing up. All have to help—host, hostess, and guests alike. A soulless job, believe me. How we longed for the latest modern inventions—cookers that cook and keep your meal hot; electric washing-up machines that sweep the plates clean of food and grease, dry them and put them in the rack; roller conveyors that carry plates from the dining room through the hatch into the washing-up machine and on to the rack (a gadget for the future?) an electric bed maker; and an electric patent to move beds to and fro; and so on. Until such things are invented life for the poor house-wife living in a large house will remain difficult. Irish or Czech girls, especially the latter, are well worth trying to get.

And then the garden! If you are lucky you may be able to get a gardener two hours a week, but generally you have to do it yourself. I know of the wife of a person who lives in a large vicarage and has an enormous garden, does all the gardening herself in her spare time, is up at six o'clock every morning—and must be at least sixty years of age.

People queue up for everything. It has become a national habit, and is resignedly accepted by all as part of the daily task. I even had to queue to go to bed—I mean, of course, to get my key. A retired Lieut-Colonel, aged 56, said he enjoyed standing in the daily fish queue, since it afforded him glorious opportunity of airing his politics. It was better than a club, since its members could not leave when they had had enough!

All clothing, of course, is severely rationed. People who have been abroad a long time, however, are well treated. My wife was given 104 supplementary clothing coupons by the Board of Trade. Folk generally are very short of clothes, yet the women always manage to look well turned out. Sometimes one sees queer outfits. We once saw a youngish blond dressed in brown corduroy trousers, a pair of old sambhar shoes, a bright red mackintosh, with a red and white spotted handkerchief over her head. Her large shopping basket was full.

Few people wear evening dress; it is usually worn only at the higher class hotels for dinner and dance. On the other hand, when evening dress is worn, tails and white tie are much in evidence. Prices for clothes, as for everything else, are fantastic, and the time-lag for the making of them still very long. A Donegal tweed suit costing £10 in Ireland is sold at £35 in England. Mellets (Victoria) Ltd., Government Surplus Disposals Dept., of 30, Wilton Road, Victoria, London, S. W. 2 sold me a very nice green press-button oilskin for 17s. 6d. This was better than paying twelve or fifteen guineas.

Manners have undoubtedly suffered as a result of war strain and other diffiulties. On the other hand, one often comes across instances of really good manlers and helpfulness. Courtesy on our part and a general air of sympathy were
very quickly reciprocated. The ex-Serviceman re-employed in civil life is
exceptionally helpful and cheerful. He seems quite happy and glad to be back at
is old job, difficult though things may be. Taxi drivers we found to be helpful
and willing, and satisfied with a reasonable tip. Most buses have women conductors—but they don't like being called "Conductresses." Generally they're cheerful
and chatty.

One has only to emerge in London streets to meet old acquaintances. I met lozens—two or three nearly every day. Common meeting places are Grindlays' Bank, Piccadilly Circus, the India Office, hotels, and theatres. E. C. Os returned to civil life always recognise one and come up for a chat about old times, and it was always a pleasure to meet them again and recall experiences.

Booking seats at theatres is easier than it used to be. A few days in advance is frequently all that is necessary. Some of the good shows now on are: While the Sun Shines, at the Globe Theatre; a very amusing and clever wartime comedy by Terrence Rattigan—an old Harrovian; he has another play, too, at the Lyric, called The Winslow Boy. The First Gentleman at the Savoy Theatre is a very amusing and clever historical play of 1814; at the Pheonix Theatre is Under the Counter, a musical comedy with Cicely Courtnidge at her best; No Medals is a very amusing comedy and well worth seeing at the Vaudeville Theatre. The Night and the Music, with Vic Oliver, is an excellent show at the Coliseum; it is well produced and has any amount of colour and go. Make it a Date at the Duchess Theatre is a new revue with Max Wall as the comedian; it is a most amusing and entertaining revue. Perchance to Dream, an Ivor Novello show, was booked up at the Hippodrome for months ahead; but if you can go, it should not be missed.

Theatre stalls are either 13s. 6d. or 16s. Theatres begin at 6 p.m., 6-30 p.m., or 7 p.m. none are later than 7 p.m, which means there is just time to get a meal at some nearby place. Most such places close at 10 p.m., and handy restaurants for a good, well-cooked dinner are: The Salted Almonds, (Trocadero), The Vikings, Glasshouse Street, and the Aldwych Restaurant. The latter place was opened early in June, is underground, and is decorated to produce a cottage effect, with numerous stuffed black cats staring down at you from the rafters. The food is excellent, and beer or whiskey is available.

You all know how AIRBORNE won the Derby and confounded the hopes of millions of large and small punters. Stories continue to circulate about the lucky few who were "on him". One man apparently consulted the crystal. He put £10 on Airborne to win at 200 to 1. He extracted £2,000 from his bewildered and sobbing bookie, and promptly bought a house, or most of it. In the Oaks we had better luck, choosing Steady Aim out of Quick Arrow by Casterari out of Quick Change by Hurry on out of Broderia by Tracery. What speedier horse could we have chosen? Anyway, we quietly pocketed a cool £70 over the deal, which was proof enough!

Ascot was, of course, the wettest since some "way back" year. That, however, did not keep the crowds away. The place was full; everyone was in high humour; most brought their own sandwiches. Gordon Richards did not disappoint

J

 $\mathsf{Digitized} \ \mathsf{by} \ Google$ 

the crowds and won a succession of races. The usual two-mile queue imit up outside the railway station.

Yes—the weather, the Englishman's never-failing daily topic by July there was no summer worth mentioning since 1940. All sorts of many were broken for excessive rain or cold—but never for heat!

Victory Week—a memorable occasion. In spite of the gloomy public the crowds thoroughly enjoyed themselves. It did everyone a lot of god as away for a week from the horrors of the daily papers, and to realise that was did win the war. Side streets leading to the main routes of the columns was all with good humoured and excited people. Here are a few sidelights

Well-designed souvenir programmes giving full details of the Ving celebrations and a diary of the war were quickly sold out; periscopes of mine makes were on sale at 2s. Gd. or 1s. each (girls who could not buy one make little mirrors out of their vanity bags, holding them up on high to catch a consional glimpse of the procession); all traffic light standards were fully used by the acrobatic spectators; small tins and boxes were on sale for the short folk to gain on.

A rather drunken old lady was seen staggering along by herself, wains small Union Jack aloft and singing lustily; red, white and blue colours were were where—in the shop windows in the form of ladies' coats, skirts and hats we corations; as flags; and on periscopes. The Mall, Trafalgar Square, Whitele and Westminster were exceptionally well decorated; the United Service Clab, Nall, threw open practically the whole Club to members and their gues both ladies and gentlemen; they ran an excellent running buffet from Il as to 3 p.m. and again from 6 p.m. to 10-30 p. m. and after that until midney coffee and sandwiches were available.

A civilian in our hotel, not knowing we came from India, remarked is the bearing and drill of the Indian troops were wonderful, and quite equal to be Guards and better if that were possible. Altogether a great day and a great well.

Let me end by quoting that great world traveller whose travel films at famous, James A. Fitzpatrick: "I have been over the world constant for twenty years, and I can say sincerely that I have never known a nation with has suffered so much and complained so little as the people of Great British."

### A "HOME" NEWS-LETTER

By Major-General Sir Dashwood Strettell, K.C.I.E. C.B.

SYCHOLOGICALLY, the effect of the Victory celebrations in London was good. Before they were held many people were of opinion that they should to be held. It seemed most unsuitable to hold public rejoicings with the world the present unsettled state; with shipping so short, and food supplies so scanty. Foreover, it seemed wrong that we should bring into England large numbers of the property of th

I asked the India Office if they could provide my wife and self with seats to sw the procession, basing my claim not on past service but on the fact that I was clonel of my Regiment, and that a detachment of the P.A.V.O. would be in the occasion. Their first reply was that there was little chance of their being able do anything; however, by the courtesy of the Amenity Section of the Military partment at the India Office we were eventually given excellent seats on Mall, in the garden of the old German Embassy. When I looked at the indreds of people given seats there by other Government departments I modered what reasons the seat-holders had given as a claim to their seats!

The Indian Army camp was well-run, and comfortable, but the bell tent, ared by four, is at best a difficult lodging in which to dress for a ceremonial rade, particularly as the tents, in the almost continuous rain, looked like eves. Several of the Other Ranks, by the way, told me how very kind the dinary people had been to them during their visits to other parts of the cuntry. But let me say at once that in the Parade none of the troops looked cuarter or better turned out than the Indian Contingent.

The Parade was a marvel of organisation. Most impressive was the schanical section, in which every vehicle bore a large label, explaining its use. susseveryone learned how complicated modern warfare has become. Perhaps e travelling laundry caused the most interest to the thousands of housewives and the spectators.

Of the marching contingent the women's Services were very impressive, id in bearing, marching and general smartness the A.T.S. bore away the palm. he only adverse criticism I make is that the cars carrying the various Cs. in C. ent by so rapidly that there was no time to see the occupants. There was general gret that owing to industrial troubles in America General Eisenhower was table to come.

Bread rationing, as you will have heard, is most unpopular. The projected ving (7%) seems insignificant; the scheme was obviously not well-thought it, for it has been amended continually; and it has caused immense extra work is staffs in baker's shops. There is a slight improvement in the number articles available in shops generally, and the Government has promised even one improvement in the next few months. Nevertheless, it is generally realised lat concentration on exports must continue for some time. The increased

ration of newsprint, which will mean larger papers, is to be welcomed, for people can now be given more two-sided views of current problems than the "selected views" which have been forced on them.

In London we have just been through a "gas strike". For some days we were practically without gas, and only those who have had to cook under such circumstances can realise what it means. The last two days of the strike it took us forty-five minutes to boil a kettle, while my wife cooked our food on an electric fire turned on to its back!

It is difficult to follow the reason of these unauthorised strikes, of which that of the gas employees is the latest. They are most unsettling and, I might almost say, ominous. It seems that Trades Union officials have little control over their men, and that the system of Trade Union control is at stake. In the case of the gas strike, negotiations between employers and workers had been going on for nearly a year, without result. The men made their unofficial strike—and the whole matter was settled in a week. It is certain that some more rapid system of negotiation is essential if as a country we are to hold our own in the industrial world.

The Third Test Match has been abandoned. Everyone was disappointed. It is said that this has been the wettest summer for 35 years. I can well believe it. It has, however, been very hard on the Indian cricket team, who have had to play in most uncongenial weather and in bad light. As a result the team has never really settled down. It has done some brilliant things—but it has also had some baddish failures.

Merchant is undoubtedly a batsman who would grace any team; Mankad is probably the best slow bowler in the world; Amarnath has been, at times, almost unplayable; Pataudi has been brilliant sometimes, but at others seemed to have lost his touch, and never seemed to have decided where in the batting order he should appear. His captaincy on the field has been of a very high standard, especially the placing of his field, unorthodox though it sometimes has been. In the field the team has not been very safe. In one innings eight catches were missed, but the ground fielding has been splendid and the throwing-in first-class.

India may be a little disappointed with the results of the tour; its high hopes have not been completely fulfilled, but, as *The Times* said: "If cricket when played keenly, enjoyably, with always a will to win, means anything to us to-day, than our thanks are due to this Indian team".

### IN SEARCH OF SAILORS

By COMMANDER E. C. STREATFEILD JAMES, O.B.E., R.I.N.

MUCH is spoken and written about the "spirit of the sea" the "tang of the salt sea air" and the "breed of men who go down to the sea in ips." Do these men differ in any material way from other human beings? so, what are these differences, and where are such people to be found for the anning of our ships?

The atmosphere which pervades the sea-faring communities has a very real meness throughout the whole world, but it is open to discussion as to whether it is not inculcated by ship life rather than by any prenatal influence. It is I link fair to state that whatever complex be placed upon this phenomenon, the ct remains that the generic being is still definitely part of the human race.

The influence of the salt sea breeze and the sight of vast expanses of water, gether with the sound of waves breaking upon the sea shore, cannot be denied, and it is therefore only natural that the people whose homes border the sea coast would be more amenable to sea life than those who have been born and bred far om such influences. The question which we have to answer is whether sailors in be made, or if such manufacture can only result in the production of a poor abstitute for the man born and bred to sea life.

The Naval profession demands rather more than shellbacks and gullible idor's yarns. To-day, with the vast advancing development of ships and the ppliances therein, education and technical knowledge are an integral essential a mariner's make-up. This statement may be countered by the argument hat India's merchant marine is largely manned by men of but poor educational tandard, but so was the Royal Navy in the days of Nelson. Time marches on, and with it the demand for education in the sea profession as a whole is increasing, though as yet the fighting service has outstripped her sister the Merchant farine in this respect.

Turning towards India, we find that education around the sea coast of the country, except in sea port towns, is, on the whole, poor to non-existent. Thus the most likely recruiting field one of the essentials for a fighting sailor is beent.

That was the situation which faced the Royal Indian Navy as far back as 1927. In that year the Navy approached the Indian Army and with their consent inaugurated recruiting tours in the Punjab—the land of the five rivers and fighting men—which was the logical place to search for material to turn into sailors. In the early days, when the numbers to be recruited for the lower deck were small, there was little possibility of conflict between the Army and the Navy n meeting the respective demands. The Navy had now entered the bosom of the Army, and had commenced laying the foundations for the future which unless controlled might well at a later date lead to misunderstanding and jealousy.

The methods employed up till the end of 1940 were primitive, and consisted of tours made twice or thrice a year by a Naval Officer and a small party in the Murree Hills and the Salt Range, mainly with the object of recruiting boys for the slow but sound method of imbuing landsmen with the spirit of the sea. The process was successful in that the quality of sailor turned out was good, but the

quantity was totally inadequate to meet the needs of war. The experiment had, however, proved that sailors could be made, and that the field of supply need not be contiguous with the sea coast.

Late in 1937 it was decided to introduce direct recruitment of men, and a drive was made in the hope that the sea-faring communities might be able to supply these needs. The sad truth was soon laid bare in that whilst the quantity was adequate, the general quality was far below anything which could be usefully employed in a modern naval service. Several thousand Merchant Seamen, however, served in H. M. I. ships during the war and their practical seamanlike qualities were of great value in performing essential routine duties where this knowledge was required. Despite this knowledge no organised recruiting measures were introduced antil the end of 1941, and during the early war years recruitment was carried out mainly in Bombay, though later a recruiting tour was organised travelling throughout the Punjab much in the same manner as a touring circus in the piping days of peace.

The recruiting parties carried on their piracy in the heart of the Army recruiting field, causing distress and despair to the military authorities. It was abundantly clear that with the expansion of the naval service ahead, unless a more organised method of recruitment was inaugurated, the Navy would be unable to meet its war time role of commitments. Accordingly, in the autumn of 1941, the Commander-in-Chief, Field Marshal (then General) Sir Claude Auchinleck stepped in with his comprehensive policy of an all-India recruiting organisation. It was one thing to propose and another to implement this measure, as neither the Navy nor the Indian Air Force had any personnel they could spare to undertake their share of the Inter-Services Recruiting work, and the whole burden of the task fell upon the shoulders of the Indian Army.

There have been many criticisms levelled at the Army recruiting organisation and its staff, but in fairness to them it must be remembered that they too were faced with vast expansion measures and a totally inadequate staff. In the midst of their troubles they were told to take on naval recruits as well, a subject concerning which they were naturally in total ignorance. This by some may have appeared to be the last straw on that camel's back, but he bore it remarkably well.

It has been said that ignorance is bliss, and such it was in so far that provision had been made on paper for the needs of the Navy, but recruitment alone could never produce the sailors to man the ships, as each and every man had to receive a type of training which was completely foreign to anything existing in India. Physical and educational standards had to be laid down without regard to those prevailing throughout the country if the requirements were to be met within the time limit, and a tooth comb search initiated to collect the likely men. Added to this, recruitment to the Services was voluntary, and the Navy was practically unknown over this vast sub-continent, so that the Inter-Services Recruiting Organisation set out under bad conditions to achieve a difficult task.

Before any practical results could be obtained it was necessary to devise a scheme of advertising to spread abroad the requirements for naval recruits and give a general line of intimation concerning service in ships of war, describing the duties to be performed by the various types of men employed. Not the least difficult of all was to explain how men of all castes and creeds lived and fed together aboard His Majesty's Indian ships without infringing on each others' religious scruples. This was a new doctrine and one but slowly accepted amongst the masses.

The Army recruiting organisation had all this to learn, besides having to be educated in the art of selection of personnel fitted for the different trades of the Service, as these varied considerably from anything existing in the Army. All this was done with the minimum number of naval personnel, and recruits started to roll in early in 1942.

Criticism has been rife to the effect that the Army and Air Force invariably took the cream of all the recruits, leaving but the dregs for the R. I. N. When Naval Officers, however, entered the field and tried their hand at the game they found that contrary to this popular notion the best were invariably offered to the Navy but that the trouble lay in the high physical and educational standards demanded by the sea service. Intelligence was often available in the raw state, but education amongst the masses was lacking.

The expansion of 2,000 per cent. in six years of war did not allow for recruiting to be fitted to the prevailing average standards, and in this a lesson was learnt that all expansion at any time must invariably be measured by two things:—

(a) The potential ability of the employer to provide training adequate to produce his needs, and (b) to devise such training to commence from the average standard which may be available in the open market.

If these two fundamentals are not adhered to recriminations levelled at any

recruiting organisation are inevitable.

The Navy has received more equitable terms at the hands of the Army recruiting authorities than could ever have been hoped for, and the results achieved have been equally surprising. The following figures may be of interest in respect to the development of the Naval Recruiting field between 1939 and 1945:—

(a) The strength of the Service was expanded from 1310 in 1939 to 27,763 at the peak period in 1945.

(b) The comparative class composition over the same period expressed in percentages shows a very marked increase in Hindus and a decline in Muslims:—

Caste		1939 %	19 <b>4</b> 5 %
Hindu		91	$42\frac{1}{2}$
Muslims		75	35
Christian	• •	13	$19\frac{1}{2}$
Sikhs		1	$1\frac{1}{2}$
Anglo-Indians	• •	$ar{f 2}$	$1\frac{ar{1}}{4}$
Miscellaneous	• •	$\frac{1}{2}$	į

(c) The expansion of the field of successful recruitment is best expressed in percentages of the Service strength at the beginning and end of the war:—

Locality		1939 %	1945 %
Kashmir	•••	<del></del>	11/4
N. W. F. P.	• •	3 <del>1</del> 44 <del>3</del>	3
Punjab	• •	44 <del>\delta</del>	21 <del>1</del>
Delhi	• •	1 1	<u> </u>
Sind	• •	$\frac{1}{4}$	į
Rajputana & C. I.	• •	Į.	3.
••		Digitized by	TOOGLE

U. P.	••	3 <del>1</del> 38	$7\frac{1}{4}$
Bombay	• •		$7\frac{1}{4}$ $8\frac{1}{4}$ $25\frac{1}{4}$
Madras		4 <del>1</del> · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	$25\frac{1}{4}$
Travancore		1	9
Cochin	• •		
Hyderabad >	• •	1	$1\frac{1}{2}$
Mysore	• •		
Bihar and Orissa	• •	• •	13
Bengal	• •	<del>1</del>	$11\frac{1}{4}$
Assam	• •	1/4	1
Others	• •	• •	3
Goa and Portuguese	India	$2\frac{1}{4}$	<del>3</del>

Though each individual Service may view with suspicion an integrated organisation to deal with their respective recruitment, it is clear that such a method is ultimately in the interest of manpower economy. It remains therefore for each Service to contribute to the Interv-Service organisation to enable such to function without fear or favour of any individual Service. If it has been shown that a soldier can recruit a sailor, sailors have been found to be equally good recruiters of soldiers, thus dispelling the ancient bogey of "every man for himself" and "all being fair in love and war so long as the object is achieved."

Recruiting in itself is a specialised subject and demands foresight and tact of all who engage in this type of work. It is essential to have a sound psychological knowledge of human nature, and to develop a wide understanding of the many peoples from whom recruits are drawn in this vast country.

There is no reason why a sailor should not prove as capable in the recruiting field as anybody else, provided that he is given adequate facilities and opportunities to travel throughout the country and mix with its inhabitants, great and small. The establishment of friendly connections amongst villagers and influential people is the essence of success, but it must not be forgotten that Local Government Officials like to receive due homage from itinerant scholars and peddling recruiters within their domain.

This subject has up to date been given but little thought in the Navy, as it has been deemed that a sailor's profession requires him to live and have his being upon the sea. Such a conception can only tend to make him into a form of marine animal, forgetful of his origin. Much greater care is necessary in the future to ensure that the link of land, sea and air is forged in ties of understanding and friendship, and the Navy will do well to remember the care and pains which her foster mother, the Indian Army, lavished upon her during her early years of expansion during the late war, and in fact, ever since 1927.

Training and recruitment must go hand in hand and bear a direct relationship to educational and physical development throughout the country, so as to ensure rapid and sound expansion, which will not cut across civilian enterprise, in time of emergency.

Whilst in recruiting we find the birth of Service personnel, in retirement from the Service we should not see the gloomy veil of death, but rather find that the Service training and education has provided for the development of civilisation and citizenship, so that the link forged by the recruiting organisation may not be broken when a man returns to civilian life. The Navy with her sister Services must remain the servant of her country, and the common aim should be the strengthening of the country's defences from within as well as from without.

In considering recruitment and the possibilities of obtaining suitable combatant personnel for the Naval Service, mention must be made of the Merchant Marine. The Merchant Navy is so linked with the fighting Services in time of war that the closer the ties established in peace the more easily can naval defence be developed in the event of hostilities.

From the foregoing it may be surmised that the combatant sailor is a snobbish edition of the merchant seamen, as each must possess the same spirit of the sea. The fact that technicalities and machinery of a complicated nature are as yet less frequently met with in merchant ships is the reason why the Navy calls for a higher standard of intelligence. The advances, however, in propelling machinery which have been made during the last few years are undoubtedly going to have a widespread effect on the technical personnel required to operate the machinery aboard merchant ships.

Here the Navy has set the lead in training in Marine Engineering, and a leaf can well be taken from her book if commercial shipowners are not to be faced with uneconomic running costs. The days of low-powered machinery of a simple type are fast disappearing as speed encroaches to determine who is to be the carrier of trade. As with the bullock cart which still finds its place in the plains of India, so with the obsolete slow steamship. Each is being relegated to a back seat, though each may still for a number of years to come continue to ply.

On deck at sea the position is not quite the same as in the engine room, for whilst intelligence and education are desirable in the interests of efficiency they are by no means as essential in the Merchant Marine as in the Navy. In time of war there are many naval duties which require a knowledge of seamanship without higher education, and it is these functions which can and should be performed by men from the Merchant Marine.

In addition to the Merchant Marine there are the fishermen, who should not be forgotten, though by virtue of their time-honoured methods they come in a lower category, and in these modern days are frequently lost sight of. Developments in the fishing industries will undoubtedly have their repercussions on the fisher folk of India. If the course of progress of the Western nations is followed and this splendid community can be enlightened educationally, a very solid background of hardy seamen will be available for local naval defence, thus leaving the deep sea work to the better trained men of the Merchant Marine and the Royal Indian Navy.

There is little doubt that with co-ordinated effort, all classes of seamen required for both trade and war at sea are available in India, and their effective use is dependent upon the development of training throughout the country. Much can be done during the years of peace which lie ahead towards the development of training for the sea with the co-ordinated support of the Merchant Shipping companies of this country.

# Signals' Presentation to Princess Royal.

A 15th Century Japanese sword has been presented to the Princess Royal on behalf of the Royal Corps of Signals and the Indian Signals Corps of South East Asia Command. The Princess is Colonel-in-Chief of both Corps. The sword was taken by the 25th Division when they landed in Malaya after the Japanese surrender.—B.B.C.

#### A PLEA FOR ANIMALS IN INDIA

By L. Conway Evans.

THE other day I was travelling in a railway carriage with companions of various creeds and professions. There was a very magnificent Brahmin priest and his attendant, a Mohammedan, a Hindu bania, a soi-disant Christian, an agnostic and a few others. There was also a young railway official who proclaimed himself a Seeker after Truth. It was he who started a discussion on the Nature of God which grew more and more animated and revealing as the train rolled on. I had no desire to enter the lists and sat quietly in my corner with eyes fixed on my book. Then came a station. Some of the debaters alighted and there was peace. But suddenly the young man broke out impetuously.

"I wish I were an animal."

At that remarkable statement I broke my silence. "Why?" I enquired. He was so surprised by the unexpected monosyllable that for a few seconds he could make no reply.

"What sort of animal would you like to be?" I continued.

"A bird. Then I should be free."

Then my hobby horse got the better of me and bolted. The tragedy of animal life in India is very close to my heart, and by "animals" I do not necessarily mean the exotic creatures which one automatically associates with the country, though these too are entitled to their share of compassion. I mean more especially the familiar beasts man has in subjection under him, to work for him and to serve him, and whose toil he repays as often as not with a neglect which is almost as grievous as actual cruelty.

I became almost surprised at my own vehemence on behalf of the proverbial underdog. My audience listened politely, and the young man took all I said in good part. He was a *very* nice young man, and when I paused for breath he said:

"There is a great deal of truth in what you say. Our peasants are very ignorant...."

But I cut him short. "I do not lay the blame so much on ignorance as on a lack of imagination. I also would not lay it at the door of the peasant exclusively, for that same lack pervades all classes and exists in all lands. Here however belief in the law of Karma does not tend to ameliorate the lot of an animal. If it suffers, then it deserves to suffer. I too believe in the law of Karma. As we sow, so we shall undoubtedly reap. That is self-evident. The great Buddha certainly believed in it and also in many re-births, but no one throughout the ages (except perhaps St. Francis), has ever taught compassion towards animals as he did."

Here I was on familiar ground, and I thought of the many calm-eyed Buddhas I knew in Chinese temples and of the many legends which tell of his love for all living creatures. These stories are well known in India, too, and are set forth in the Buddhist sculpture which still survives, and perhaps nowhere more beautifully than on the frescoed walls of the Caves of Ajanta, the scenes taken from the Jatakas. One of the most famous is that of the Weighing of the King's Flesh, a story which is well known but which bears constant repetition.

In one of his previous incarnations, the Buddha to be was an all-merciful ing to whom none looked in vain for help. In order to test him, Agni disguised imself as a hawk and pursued a pigeon which, in its extremity, fluttered to the ing for protection, and obtained it. The fierce bird of prey demanded his uarry, the saviour refused to relinquish it. But, recognizing the legitimate claim f the hawk, he offered the weight of the equivalent of the pigeon's body to be carved from his own. The sacrifice was accepted, and the King himself held the ceales while his quivering flesh was laid upon them.

It is a beautiful allegory, and one wishes that some of that divine undertanding with the terrified fluttering of a pigeon might be meted out to other homely nd luckless birds, cocks and hens and all farmyard denizens. It is too ften their fate to be carried upside down by their legs for miles or packed into rates, thrown around in trains and on the tops of buses, treated like inanimate bjects.

Many owners of caged birds would be surprised and hurt if they were told hey were being cruel. Do they not keep them because they are "fond of them"? look at that dear little parakeet for instance.—and one looks, and sees one of hese lovely garrulous and gregarious creatures, attendants on Parvati herself, ailed in solitary confinement in a diminutive iron cage. It provides the captive with no room in which to fly and in hot weather its metal floor, which retains the leat of the sun, converts it into a torture cell. So much for the loft of a "pet," and though perhaps fighting quails are not regarded in the same light they are sorry sights in their tiny prisons.

If birds are called upon to suffer, what of the fate of the higher creatures? Happy indeed is the lot of sacred monkeys who can scamper off into the tree tops and cock snooks at mankind, thanks to the exploits of their great ancestor Hanuman. But what of the still more sacred cows? They seldom scamper. Often heavy blocks of wood are attached to them to prevent any such frivolity, and frequently one cow is tied to the horns of another, and two wretched animals set off in uncomfortable partnership in the eternal quest of something to eat, no matter what, for even a scrap of paper does not seem to come amiss. I have seen them searching forlornly on cinder heaps and on piles of stones for a possible blade of grass, and have known them to accept avidly from my hands banana and tomato skins, strange fodder for cattle!

Presumably the wandering kine are happier than the draught animals. I have seen many superb oxen in India, but I have also seen them with terrible sores hidden under their yokes, and the other day it behoved me to make an expedition in an oxcart which revealed much of the technique of "driving." There were two beasts. One of them had had the lower part of its tail completely twisted off, but what remained provided a convenient handle for the Jehu to manipulate. He knew every weak spot in the animals' anatomy. He pinched their backbones, prodded them with a stick, kicked them in their stomachs from his seat of vantage, hurling abuse at them a while, and was very surprised at my unreasonable indignation and protests.

But, someone may say, an Indian cow is very privileged. It may never be killed. Here I am on thorny ground. But as Mr. Gandhi says, we all have to die sometime, and in some cases so much better sooner than later. I have seen and heard so many cows and oxen for which I have craved an instantaneous and merciful death. One particular cow comes to mind hobbling along on three legs, hopelessly handicapped in a struggle for a grim\_existence. I recall too the

tubercular cows to which I have listened in Kashmir, coughing, coughing, their lives no pleasure to themselves and a danger to all. Better a kindly death a thousand times than this pitiful martyrdom.

Overloaded tongas provide another disgrace. There are people who care not one jot nor tittle for the wretched four legged toast-racks in the shafts, and will pile into the conveyance mercilessly regardless of the total of avoirdupois. No strikes are possible for these poor brutes, no demands for baksheesh. They may consider themselves lucky if they are occasionally turned out to graze, but even then they are usually prevented from straying by damnable hobbles which allow them no relaxation of tired limbs and muscles.

Champions occasionally arise for horses, for they are valuable animals. Would there might be a crusade on behalf of donkeys, among the stoutest-hearted of God's creatures. Poor little grey Griseldas, patiently toiling over life's grim tracts, carrying, often on sore backs, such heavy loads that one can only see the twinkling legs and tiny hooves beneath, rewarded by kicks and blows. They are also the steeds of humble folk, of *dhobis*, potters, gypsies and other outcasts. But they are also the vehicle for a terrible deity, the Goddess of Smallpox, and in order to propitiate her, a bridegroom will sometimes mount an ass for an instant at his wedding.

Mohammedans say that when a donkey brays he sees the devil. Whether he does o does not, his capacity for braying is often denied him by the simple expedient of slitting his nostrils. Since I learned that, the once comic he-haw of nursery days, when it is to be heard, sounds to me one of the saddest of animal noises, a grotesque indictment of man's brutality. A donkey, an object of derision. Who cares? When I upbraided a bus driver for the blow his lorry had inflicted on one which had been slow in crossing the road, a blow which he made not the slightest effort to avert, his reply was: "A donkey. Oh yes. But I did not kill it." That was all that mattered.

Yet, as G. K. Chesterton has pointed out, the "Tattered Outlaw of the Earth" has his memories:

"Fools! For I also had my hour.
One far fierce hour and sweet
There was a shout about my ears
And palms before my feet."

and one remembers too that it was Borah who carried the Prophet upon his back from Jerusalem to Heaven and when Mohammedans look up into the skies and see the Milky Way they recall that the shining path was brought into being by his roughly shod hooves.

Fond as I am of donkeys there is no doubt that the most tragic of India's animals are the swarming pi-dogs, starving and diseased, unwanted and unloved, breeding, breeding with that terrible fertility which makes the problem so formidable and reform almost hopeless. Dogs. The only creatures in the world which have discarded the society of their own kindred for men whom they worship with pathetic idolatry often in return for callous indifference. Dogs. Dogs. They are to be seen everywhere, but some of the sorriest are those which foregather at railway stations in the hope of acquiring chance scraps of food. Their maimed and mutilated limbs bear witness to the accidents which frequently befall them.

One cannot blame peasant owners who have but too little to eat themselves for not feeding the dogs which belong to them. The tragedy is that they do own them and permit whole families of puppies to live if not to flourish, whereas an early and speedy death would be so much more merciful than the awful one which is a commonplace in Indian life during an epidemic of rabies, when a price is set on the head of a mad dog and the poor brute is pursued, clubbed and beaten till death stills its agony.

The greatest offenders, however, are the well-to-do people of all races who deliberately leave an old pet to fend for itself if circumstances demand a change of residence or country. Never shall I forget a spectre once encountered on the Bund in Srinagar, something which had once been a poodle. Hardly any hair remained on the mangy pink body, but a tuft tipped the once-clipped tail which he still had the courage to wag, and at that sight I could have wept.

I am not ashamed of being a sentimentalist about animals, but it is not an enviable role. To feel for them and with them, to be haunted by the piteous eyes of creatures in fear and in pain, to have a cry of anguish sounding in one's ears is not amusing. There are so many manifestations of carelessness and of thoughtless cruelty. I recall the sight of a little gazelle in a public park, limping piteously instead of bounding joyously, because its hooves in confinement had been left unpared and allowed to grow abnormally long. I think, too, of a tiger in a Royal Zoo imprisoned in a cage in which he could not even turn round, awaiting the day in which he would meet a boar in mortal combat. It is not so long ago that animal contests were regarded as "sport" in England, and much that is cruel still exists in my land. Our rabbit trapping is a blot on our civilization, and it is good to see how public opinion is being stirred up against it. For public opinion alone can change conditions and ameliorate the lot of animals. Amidst the rattle of politics what thought is given to their pain and suffering?

I have no venom to spill, no axe to grind. I have met most wonderful and humane vets in India. I know there are branches of the S.P.C.A. which do excellent work. But there is much, so much more to be done; so much more realization that animal suffering is akin to our own is necessary. Who shall say what benefits will accrue to mankind when all assume a more humane attitude to those who the great Saint of Europe, the Little Poor Man of Assisi, claimed as his Brothers and Sisters?

# Plans for Services' Spots.

The Services Sports Control Board has arranged several important events throughout India for the 1946/47 season.

First of these fixtures takes place in New Delhi between November 20 and 23 with the semi-finals and finals of the All India Boys Boxing Tournament. This is followed by the Indian Army Football Tournament at Dehra Dun between December 11 and 16, the Individual Boxing Championship at Lahore between January 13-18 and the Inter-Services Squash Rackets Championship at the Indian Military Academy, Dehra Dun in the third week in January.

The semi-finals and finals of the Indian Hockey Tournament—the Colonel's Cup—will take place at Lahore between February 24 and March 8.

This season the Services Lawn Tennis Championship will be held at the Lahore Gymkhana Club between March 13—16. The Indian Army Team Boxing Championship will also take place at Lahore between March 17—22.

#### WHY NOT A RAILWAY TRANSPORTATION CORPS ?

By "BUMMELZUG."

THE article entitled "Why Not a Railway Transportation Corps" gives a very able summary of the wartime transportation problem, and accords very much with the civilian viewpoint. It may be of interest therefore for a civilian to add a few comments on D.M.H.'s article to emphasise the points which he has brought out with particular reference to conditions in India.

An army, whether it is used in the defence of its own country or is occupying territory used as a base for a major amphibious operation, cannot be effective without an efficient civil transportation system. This is an essential part of the war machine, not only for the movement of troops and military stores, but also for the maintenance of the country concerned as a base of operations. As D.M.H. says, war conditions inevitably tend immediately to throw an increased strain upon the transport system. If therefore the system is to give adequate service to the military and the civil authorities, it will be necessary to strengthen and not weaken the civil agency. That being so, a conflict immediately arises, since the Army naturally wishes to draw on the civil agency for officers and men to expand its own transportation cadre, while the civil agency has to expand its own cadres and services.

Looking back at the course of events in India during the late war, there is little doubt that in allowing their staff to volunteer freely for military service, the Indian transport authorities greatly handicapped themselves in carrying out their own function, especially when the acutest strain fell upon India after reverses to British arms in Burma and Malaya. Railway officers require very considerable training before they become a real asset to the system, and dilution of the officer ranks as opposed to recruitment at the bottom is not possible, because trained men are not available. Even if they were, the situation is complicated by the fact that the railways in India are State-owned, and their servants come under State rules which have to be rigidly adhered to. When seeking to recover from the Army trained transportation officer who had volunteered for war service, it transpired that the Army had about one officer for every fifty men against the railway's one officer for 450. From the civil angle it was therefore imposing an unduly heavy burden on the remainder to have allowed any man to volunteer for the war at all, particularly as those who volunteered were naturally the younger and more virile men.

If this is accepted, and if in a future war volunteering for war service by transportation officers is not to be encouraged, then the problem for the Army which D.M.H. sets out gathers still greater importance. D.M.H. suggests that a Transportation Corps should be trained in peacetime on a Commonwealth basis and expanded in war; and that Supplementary Reserve companies should be formed in peacetime from transportation personnel who would be embodied in wartime and sent to the area where their services were most required. The danger of the latter lies in the fact that the Army authorities, who claim first priority in war, will tend to call up these S. R. Companies regardless of the requirements of the civil transport agency, and without due regard to the fact that the military machine cannot work efficiently unless the civil machine is at the highest state of efficiency.

If, of course, the country concerned is not itself in the vortex of the war, then this situation will not arise, but the experience of the last war showed that war to-day is worldwide, and it is impossible to forecast how and when the demand will fall upon the civil agency. It would appear therefore that the proper course is for the Army to train a self-contained body of Army transportation experts who will know how to make the best use of the civil machine, and who will form the nucleus of further expansion of military transportation units.

It has always struck the writer as remarkable that in the military histories of war, the bulk of attention is concentrated upon the eperation of the troops, and the "Q" side of the campaign is practically neglected. There is less glamour about the latter, but of course without efficient "Q" operation behind the Army commander, any successful campaign is impossible. Modern war is more than ever a question of logistics, and the writer would be extremely interested to read an adequate and comprehensive account of the "Q" and transportation problems which faced and were mastered by the authorities in North Africa, France and Burma. It seems that a study of these and other campaigns should be an essential part of the training not only of a future Transportation Corps, but also of the training of the officer corps as a whole. Has not Field Marshal Lord Wavell quoted the saying "Transportation is war"?

As D.M.H. points out, and as we civilians found, the Army as a whole in this war had an amazingly poor understanding of the limitations of a transport system, and consequently of the best use that could be made of the resources To quote two instances only from the war in India, the jam which occurred at Manipur Road in 1942 would never have taken place if the Army authorities had had a little more peacetime training in transportation, and again in 1943 the British and American military authorities would not have got into such a flap about the capacity of the port of Calcutta if they had understood the elementary fact that you cannot for long put into a port more than you can take out of it; in other words unless you have the depots to which to clear imports of military stores with the necessary cranes and road transport, you cannot use the port to the best advantage. Many other similar instances occurred in the history of the war, and it is respectfully suggested that a wider training in transportation problems would have made the joint civil and military machine go more smoothly. When really experienced men took charge in the Army, things went like clockwork.

The Transportation Corps should not of course imagine that its function is to operate the means of transport within the base country. What it needs primarily is to know how to use the civil machine and what its capabilities are. It will then appreciate its difficulties, and be able to get the best out of it through combined team work, but the Transportation Corps cannot be expected to do this unless it is itself highly trained.

Its second function is to know how the transportation system can be expanded either by provision of more equipment or by the more intensive use of existing equipment. This is perhaps partly a question of peacetime technical exercises and planning. Did these ever exist in peacetime?

Its third function must be to provide military units, to provide reinforcements at the key points, to operate in danger areas where the undisciplined civilian may come under intensive bombing or other physical danger, and lastly to take over the operation of transport media in occupied territory.

It is clear from the above that D.M.H. is very much on the right lines in seeking to build up a thoroughly trained nucleus in peacetime capable of using the civil machine in wartime, and capable also of expanding on the basis of its own nucleus without much dependance on trained civil personnel for the purposes mentioned in the last paragraph. To achieve these objectives, it is clear that a far greater nucleus of trained men and officers is necessary than existed at the beginning of this war as a result of the limited training at Longmoor and the experience gained by a few R. E. officers trained on the Indian railways.

His suggestion is that a number of personnel of all ranks who have been given a thorough military training should be posted to civilian railways and ports, where they would spend their lives in a civilian capacity but always available for recall in war. Presumably they would be recalled in peacetime for short periods of military duty so as not to lose touch with military thought. This is good, but unless the civilian machine is to be weakened at a critical moment, the snag lies in the fact that just at the moment when they are most wanted on the railways they would be taken away.

It so happens, however, that in the opinion of many, the Indian railways are under-officered, and it may be that a solution in India lies in seconding for long periods Engineer officers to the Indian railways. This may be all the more necessary in view of the unattractive rates of pay current on the railways under the revised scales, although if the Army officers are to draw higher scales than the railwaymen, there is an immediate differentiation which is liable to affect their good relations with the civil staff.

The constitutional position is of course paramount. Will British officers be welcomed or not? It must be remembered that there has been no recruitment of European officers to the railways for many years, and there is not likely to be any in the future. Whether or not R. E. officers of the British Army would be welcomed for training on the Indian railways is a question which the new Government will have to decide. But the railwayman is always a railwayman, and it would be no less effective if Indian Army Engineer officers were trained on the Indian railways. It is clear that D.M.H. has raised a subject which required a lot of thought, and it is to be hoped that the authorities are giving it due attention.

As in the case of D.M.H.'s article, the above remarks apply particularly to railways, but are equally applicable *mutatis mutandis* to other branches of Transportation.

# Forerunner of 1,700 m.p.h. Fighter Plane

With a casual wave of hand, Sir Ben Lockspeicer, pointed to a small model plane on a table at the Royal Aircraft Establishment at Farnborough, Hants, says the London *Evening News*. He said that he regarded the model as the forerunner of a fighter that would one day fly at 1700 m.p.h., more than twice the speed of sound. In such a plane Sir Ben envisages the pilot lying prone in a pressurised cockpit. There will be no undercarriage, the plane making "belly" landings.

Sir Ben, who has been engaged in aviation experiments since 1920 and is now Director-General of Scientific Research (Air) at the Supply Ministry, is quietly confident of its success, although "there are tremendous problems involved". Sir Ben suggested that jets were not the last word in propulsion and that British scientists were well on their way to evolving a newer and even more efficient power unit.

### WHY ONLY A RAILWAY TRANSPORTATION CORPS?

By LIEUT.-COLONEL R. B. EMERSON, C.I.E., O.B.E., R.E.\*

THE article "Why not a Railway Transportation Corps?" by D.M.H. in the January 1946 issue of the *Journal* contains some constructive thinking which calls friendly criticism and, it is hoped, additional practical suggestions from one who has been concerned with the civil transportation system of India in Peace, and both Movements and Transportation in War.

The Supplementary Reserve idea is sound, because the civil administrations undertake to give up the men on mobilisation (they cannot join without the permission of the administration) and the men are trinaed transportation operators. Both sides, therefore, know their obligations. One criticism of the system is that the Supplementary Reserve Units were designed to work as Units, and not as the basis of a big expansion. Thus the individual Sapper was t ained to do an individual Sapper's job, instead of being first taught that, and then how to do the job at least two steps higher up, i.e., that of the platoon or section 2nd I/C and I/C. The same applied to the higher ranks. Consequently when the Units had to be diluted to provide nuclei for still further new Units, they suffered from the feeling of leaving a good Unit whilst being insufficiently prepared to pull their weight in a new one.

The idea of permitting regular R. E. officers to enter civil employ with Indian Railways was also good in its conception, but it did not produce the results that it might have because once those officers had gone to civil employ, the Army took no further interest in them, and so, except for passing their promotion examinations (which they had to do just the same as any other Regular Officer), the Army lost touch with them and they lost touch with the development of Army methods and the trend of Army thought.

Thus when they were called back to the Army on the outbreak of war in 1939, they found themselves completely at sea regarding the then organisation of the Army, and also completely out of touch with modern developments and trends of thought. As a result, they were passengers for the first few months at a time when they ought to have been applying to the maximum what should have been their combined knowledge of civil transportation that they had learnt in the years of Peace and their military training. The Army did not know them or their capabilities, and they were struggling to catch up.

The writer does not accept the criticism of D.M.H. that senior Engineer Staff Officers are inclined to regard Movements and Transportation troops as being under their control. This did not occur in M.E.F. or C.M.F. Nor is Movements the only non-engineering branch of the Royal Engineers. The Army Postal Service and the Camouflage and Chemical Warfare sections are others. These criticisms, however, do not detract from his arguments in favour of a Transportation Corps.

The lack of appreciation of those arms of the Service, other than Movements and Transportation, as to the functions of the latter, and of the limitations of Railway, Road and Port capacity were, it is agreed, quite astounding, and it is most necessary that steps to eliminate this must be taken in the future, but the mere formation of a Transportation Corps will not do this of itself. There must be a far wider training of other arms in the basic principles of Transportation



and the Staff Officers who are to man the Movements and Transportation Directorates in War must be fully trained in the functions of such Staff, their place in a formation Headquarters, and their proper relationship to other branches of the Staff in the Headquarters concerned. Similarly, Staff Officers of other branches of the Headquarters concerned must, in their Staff training, be given a better understanding of the duties and limitations of Movements and Transportation Units and of the methods by which the Transportation system of a theatre of War can be used to the maximum advantage.

D. M. H's proposal for a future Transportation Corps, with S. R. Units and Regular Officers and other ranks attached to civil railways, is basically sound, but why restrict it to Railways only? Docks and I.W.T. Units were an essential part of Transportation Troops, both in the last War and the one before, and it would be more logical to call it a Transportation Corps. His proposal needs adding to it the proviso that those regular personnel attached to civil administrations must be returned to the Army, at intervals not exceeding two years, for short periods to keep abreast of modern developments in the Service. They should be attached to Units or Staffs for the annual Brigade training period, when junior, and to the higher formations when more senior.

It is difficult to accept the theory that the outbreak of war would not necessitate the calling up of the whole of these S. R. troops and regular personnel. The experience of the last War seems to indicate that any future War would, on its outbreak, necessitate the calling up of all such Units and personnel in the Empire to accompany the ground forces on whatever fronts they were called upon to fight. Thus every part of the Empire would feel the void, and the part which had the heaviest load would feel it most. It is true that dilution can take place in all walks of life, and it did so in the civil railways of the Empire last time—in England by the retention of over-age personnel and the employment of 100,000 women, and in India by stopping leave ex-India and thus absorbing the leave reserve into the working cadre, the retention of over-age personnel, and the engagement of extra staff, who were completely raw, had to be trained, and were only temporary hands.

The solution to the formation of a Transportation Corps of adequate size in peacetime seems to lie in the division of the total strength required over the Empire by S. R. Units formed from civil ports and railways, as well as the retention in civil transportation organisations of a cadre of militarily trained personnel of all ranks who would be earmarked for recall on the outbreak of War. In order that the mobilisation of the Regular Army cadre should not unduly upset the civil transportation system of the Empire, the total overall peacetime strength would need to be slightly bigger than it would be in other circumstances, this extra strength being paid for by War Department funds. Rates of pay and conditions of service are a snag, but could perhaps be worked out so that each part of the Empire paid its Regular Army cadre on scales comparable to those of the civil transportation system of that part. Whether those scales would need adjustment on mobilisation is a problem which only a comparison of the Army scales with the civil transportation scales of each part of the Empire could decide.

The military training of the S. R. Units and of the Regular cadre would need to be organised on a common basis throughout the Empire, so that Units from different parts of the Empire could talk the same language when they found themselves working in the same formation.

It is to be hoped that the foregoing may help to stimulate thought on a problem which caused many of us a great many headaches in the last War.

#### MILITARY GEOLOGY AND WHAT IT MEANS

By E. J. Bradshaw.\*

IN WAR the geologist has two principal functions. First, to search for and advise on the exploitation of deposits of mineral substances essential for the production of munitions and the maintenance of industry and communications; secondly, to provide geological information and advice relating directly to the military operations and to the maintenance of armed forces in the field.

In short, the military geologist is concerned with the surface materials useful to the soldier, and with the surface conditions that affect his maintenance, movements and operations. He is largely concerned with the dusty or muddy alluvial deposits on which man lives and grows his crops—and on which soldiers prefer to fight their battles and to site their airfields. Unfortunately, speaking generally, it is about alluvium that the geologist knows least. That is because he finds little scope in wielding his little hammer in the wide open spaces, and therefore tends to focus his attention on rocky outcrops, which form the backbones of the hills and produce the other obstacles so disliked by soldiers.

Let us, then, see what help he can give to the soldier, and what should be done to make sure that in the next war full advantage can be taken of the potential usefulness of military geology. Firstly, there is the practical help he can give to the engineer in planning and carrying out specific projects, whether to the rear or in the front line; he can also help the engineer in the matter of water, whether to make good, or to guard against, its ravages, to dispose of unwanted accumulations, or, more commonly, to find water for drinking. It is the function of the geologist to indicate the resources available, and that of the engineer to develop a supply therefrom.

It is essential that the geologist be brought on the scene early. On occasion he has been summoned to a dismal, desolate spot on which there is a notice board: "No....Transit Camp", and confronted with the request: "Will the geologist please unpack his hazel twig and set to work; for the camp will be opening on Monday week". Well, we will assume that the geologist does his stuff and locates a useful supply a quarter of a mile away. Will that do? He gets the answer: "No, it will not. I'm afraid we haven't got any pipe, and even if we had we'd need a pump, and in S.E.A. pumps don't grow on trees". Another popular greeting is: "We've laid out everything very carefully, and we've got the cookhouse and the ablution sheds all nicely grouped together, and it's right here that you must find water". That is not a very embroidered account of an actual occurrence.

My point is: The proper time to call in a geologist is when you are planning a project. If that is done you may be able to put the cookhouse where you won't need a mile of pipe. Remember that the availability of a nice flat vacant site—just the place for a transit camp—is very commonly attributable to the failure of the local villagers to find water there.

Similarly with roads. If a geologist is consulted early, he may be able to suggest changes in alignment that, by avoiding unstable areas, may prevent all sorts of troubles later, and may save a great deal of money and much time. He

Digitized by Google

will, of course, also advise on the suitability and availability of stone for construction and maintenance. Thus all road alignments should be vetted by geologists before work is begun.

There are many cases where the geologist cannot give much help. If you are making a road from India into Burma you cannot avoid a number of unstable areas in which landslides are bound to occur, but even then the geologist may be able to suggest which of alternative alignments is likely to give the least trouble, and he can suggest how best to cope with the landslides that are inevitable. One of the odder jobs the military geologist has to face is to advise the R.A.F. on how and where a few well-placed bombs might plug tunnels or start landslides that would give a big headache to the enemy engineers who have lines of communication to keep open.

Air Forces must have airfields, and the geologist can help concerning the stone and water supplies necessary for them; but his most important function should be to advise on the probable behaviour of the ground and, for planning purposes, to produce maps indicating relative suitability on a regional basis. Certain authorities in S.E.A.C. were good enough to say they found geologists useful in their general surveys of airfield sites, and they, and certain Divisions in S.A.C.S.E.A. were the biggest customers of the small staff of military geologists whose work I had the honour of directing.

We were consulted by all sorts of people about all sorts of projecta—from making bricks, or finding materials suitable for plastic armour for protecting ships, to damming rivers or vetting inaccessible sites for Bailey bridges in Malaya and on the Stilwell Road. The Bailey Bridge over the Shweli River in Burma is a good example of the help that geologists can sometimes give. When the bridge was planned, the site was deep in enemy territory, and could not very easily be visited. But we were able to obtain information that enabled us to warn the bridge engineers that, for geological reasons, they might expect trouble on the far side. They therefore modified the design of the bridge and, when the time came, they took special equipment with them and were thus able to deal expeditiously with the expected slipping hillside, for which they might otherwise have come unprepared.

We also had a great variety of minor side-lines. For instance, geologists can advise on the detection of landmines, for if the stone used for metalling a road contains much of a mineral called magnetite, then magnetic mine detectors will not do their job. The geologist can consult his maps, and foresee that in some particular region the roads are very likely to be paved with this sort of rock, and this makes it possible for suitable precautions to be taken beforehand. Magnetite can cause other troubles; in certain parts of the Italian theatre it caused serious interference with radio signals and the like. There was always the resultant brisk demand for maps showing where this treacherous mineral was likely to cause trouble.

Another odd side-line was concerned with tin dredgers. Tenasserim and Malaya are tin-producing regions. Much of the tin is obtained by dredging gravels that are interbedded with sand and other fine deposits. It was suggested that the tailings from the dredgers might provide the engineer with neatly sorted heaps of useful materials, but when they asked us we were able to show that while one type of dredger did do its duty in a useful way, the other one buried the gravel beneath the fine tailings— and so it was possible to ask the London offices of the manufacturers in good time as to which type of dredger had been used in the places which were of interest.

A geologist is, or should be, a handy man to have about when an operation is being planned, because he possesses exceptional professional qualifications for the appreciation of terrain, which he shares with the geographer. Planning an operation is not unlike a round of golf. You can get round the course with one club, but your score would probably be better if you had a bagful. The military geologist should always be in the Planner's bag. He is in the niblick class; at some holes he may not be needed at all, but generally the player is certain to use several clubs, and the Planner should have them all with him. It is an advantage for him to have a well-matched set of irons.

So with Operational Planning. All kinds of specialists are needed. Unfortunately, the "geologist-niblick" isn't as yet as effective a club as he might become if, during peacetime, continued attention were paid to improving the design of this essential club, and if it were more widely realised that a good club costs money.

Here is an instance of the present limitations of military geology. During the recent war there were persistent calls on the military geologist for soil maps. These are useful for siting airfields and other works, but their greatest value lies in their indication of the "going"—a consideration of importance in planning and in conduct of operations.

It is thus essential that these soil maps should be trustworthy. Inaccurate soil maps might be most dangerously misleading; and reliance upon them might have disastrous consequences. For this reason, though the military geologist can prepare generalised maps that may, with caution, be used for strategic purposes, he can furnish soil maps for tactical purposes only in respect of the comparatively few areas outside Europe and America for which detailed information is available to him.

Thus it is essential to perfect methods for the direct recognition of soil types in air photographs, and herein lies one of the most promising fields for the future development of military geology. It would obviously be of the first military importance if a team that included geologists could identify the soil types present by direct interpretation of air photos (supplemented by ancillary methods of observation such as test bombing), and thereby predict, with certainty, the nature of the "going" under all weather conditions. The first step would be for the military geologists to devise a utilitarian classification of soils into easily identifiable types based on their military charateristics, and then for the team to perfect a technique for recognising these types in air photos. Great improvement is possible, and it would be more than a pity if adequate provisions were not made during peace to carry out this work.

"Trafficability"—a hideous word—is not quite the same thing as the "going". The "going" is a convenient collective term to connote all those physical attributes of terrain that affect military movements. "Trafficability" refers to the ability of individual parts of the surface to support military traffic. There is little need to stress its vital military importance, and the geologist ought to know very much more about it than he does. During peacetime he must study the military characteristics of mud and of sand, and somebody must see that this is done. Years ago motorists used to be preceded by a red flag; while the revival of that obligation might make our roads safer, it seems less desirable that the only real way of ensuring that a tank will not be bogged is to have it preceded in battle by an armoured footman whose precarious task it is to test the ground by prodding it with some spring gadget in a complicated sort of shooting stick.

It isn't good enough. Nor is it excusable that a host of military vehicles should ever again bog themselves on some future Morib Beach. It is not always possible to arrange for Maquis to dig for bait on enemy beaches, or for cloak and dagger boys to make hazardous sorties on furtive sampling missions from which they used to return (if they were lucky) with samples of beach sand wrapped in very curious containers. We want something better than that. We want an improvement in our ability to spot what might prove to be most murderous traps, and military geologists must be put to work on devising sure methods of recognising treacherous ground in inaccessible locations.

One job we tackled—rather late in the day, I'm afraid—was to analyse the whole of the vast coastline of the South East Asia Command, and break it up into about a dozen representative types, such as Open Sea Delta, Cliff and Cove, Sandspit and Lagoon, and so on. There was a double object; first, to facilitate operational planning by thus classifying any given length of enemy coast; and secondly, to enable operational training to be carried out in places known to resemble the target coast. This sort of thing was done in a big way in Europe, and geologists there has a good deal of say in matching beaches that were to be landed on, and rivers that were to be crossed.

One other subject I want to refer to—Photo-Geology. It is a specialised sort of photo-interpretation. It involves the construction of geological maps based on a study of air photographs. The normal procedure involves a good deal of ground check work, and successful application of the technique depends partly on the adequacy of this and partly on the regional geological structure.

It may be remembered that a combined operation was planned for landing a considerable force on Puket Island, off the Siamese coast. A geological map was badly needed during the planning of the operation. However, no such information was available about Puket, though we knew that in a general way its geology was likely to resemble that of Tennasserim, about which we did know something. So we did rather a rash thing—we undertook to produce a complete geological map of the island, based only on air photographs; and this map included a good deal of beach information.

In compiling the latter we had a difference of opinion between ourselves and the "Pic" interpreters. On one of the more important beaches were certain dark patches, which the "Pic" people believed to be rock outcrops; my people thought they were wet patches. Now that was an important matter, for if geologists cannot recognise rock when they see it in a photograph, then something must be done to improve photo-geology. Alternatively, if the professional photo-interpreters can't tell the difference between rocks and wet patches on a beach, then something must be done about photo-interpretation.

In planning a landing on a beach it seems reasonable to expect the geologist to say whether there are rocks about, and how jagged they are likely to be. Ordinary rocks are "pieces of cake", but there is an odd material called "Beach Rock", which is a kind of natural concrete, probably formed by the cementing together of the beach materials by calcareous matter precipated from fresh ground water seeping into the sea. This material occurs more or less capriciously, and it is very prevalent in the area covered by S.E.A.C.; but we know very little about it. One serious snag is that it is often only exposed at extreme low tide, and, unless there is sea-weed growing on it, you are quite likely not to spot it on air photos, and it is just the thing for ripping out the bottoms of landing craft. Here, then, is another problem for the military geologist to study in peacetime.

Another problem concerns the question of water on beaches. Fresh water is lighter than salt, and if you dig a hole in the sand dunes above a beach, you are likely to find a thin layer of fresh water, like cream on milk, resting above the salt water in the deeper sands. If you dig your hole too deep—more than a few feet—you will run into salt water, so what is wanted is wide and shallow excavations, like ponds. Here again geologists don't know enough about what yield you are likely to obtain; or, indeed, in what circumstances you can count on a sure supply from a source of this kind, or from the fresh water springs that very commonly seep out above high-water level on beaches.

I hope that serious attention will be given in the post-war planning period to the vital necessity of employing skilled geologists, who could devote their whole time to the problems I have mentioned and to others to which I have not referred. But I rather gather that while it is proposed to employ more geologists than was originally intended, these geologists will be split up between various branches, and that there will be no separate geological section devoting its whole time to the development of military geology as an applied science.

If that is so, it is a thousand pities, for though these geologists will do useful work in compiling geological information on a regional basis—useful because the effectiveness of the help a military geologist can give depends largely on the completeness and accuracy of the regional geological information available to him—the other matter is much more important—that is, the effectiveness of the military geologist in being competent to apply that information to military needs. It is not an adequate solution to farm out research problems to civil organisations on a part-time basis.

If continuous attention is not paid during peacetime to the development of Military Geology by an adequate whole-time staff of first-rate geologists working under experienced direction, we are likely once again to be caught unprepared. Military geologists are useful, but their usefulness is largely potential; the military geologist, to revert to my sporting simile, ought to be a niblick, but is to-day only a rather light mashie.

To what extent was this "club" wielded during the war? In the European theatre the Germans employed over two hundred military geologists. What did we do? From 1939 to 1943 the Chief Engineer, B.E.F. had one. In November, 1943, a geological section of two officers was established in the Inter-Service Topographical Department at Oxford; by the end of the war its establishment had increased to eleven officers, chiefly employed on the compilation of regional information; they did not give direct practical advice in the field.

In Africa, and later in Italy, useful field work—mainly on water resources was done by the 42nd Geological Section of the South African Engineer Corps, which was an independent technical unit that made considerable use of geophysical methods for locating water. A handful of geologists was attached as individual advisers at certain headquarters; and civilian organisations were frequently consulted about technical matters.

Out here we did relatively better—but not much. I had a staff of ten geologists graded as G.S.Os, who besides compiling and publishing geological information for military purposes, were available for practical work in the field. But it wasn't nearly enough. It was, I fear, the old story of "Too Little, Too Late", and it must not happen again. We must have our schemes and organisations ready, for next time we can be sure that the show will start with a bang. We shall not have the customary year or two of grace.

Finally, it is of no use having military geologists if the Armed Forces do not know of their capabilities and limitations. It is no good their giving advice if they do not make sure that their advice is intelligible and relevant.

Military geology must be popularised. There must be courses for staff officers and for engineers. The object should not be to teach geology; in the case of engineers the object must be to teach them how to recognise when there is a geological problem, not how to solve it; and in the case of staff officers the object would be to demonstrate the uses and limitations of the "niblick." These things must be set out in reference books that must be free from jargon, and which must be very widely distributed.

But all this requires personnel—and personnel costs money. There's the real rub, and a cautious approach is advisable, for when you open your mouth wide you must be careful not to put your foot in it. Military geology is still in its infancy, but like all infants who do not wish to die of starvation, it must squawk and holler and make a general nuisance of itself until it is given nourishing food.

## Large-Scale Destruction of Jap Munitions

About 10,000 tons of Japanese bombs, shells of all calibres, mines, rockets and torpedoes have been destroyed by the troops of the British Commonwealth Occupation Force, during the last few weeks. Vast quantities of these stores have been dumped into the sea, destroyed by burning or detonated on site.

It is estimated that there are more than 250,000 tons of munitions still in the B.C.O.F. Area, in various dumps and magazines. One interesting dump, just uncovered, contained over 500 torpedoes complete with warheads and gyroscopes.

Many of the small islands which dot the Inland Sea around Kure and Hiroshima are pitted with caves filled with materials of war of every known variety. The rate of disposal is governed by the rate at which the Japanese can supply boats, motor vehicles and labour for the task.

Much of the recovered equipment is being used by such branches of the occupation forces as the Engineers and Ordnance services. Only stores not required by the occupation force are being returned to the Japanese Government for use in the rehabilitation of the country.

# More Milk for Indian Troops

As a result of a revolutionary new milk blending process which is shortly to be introduced into the Indian Army by the Military Farms Department, the milk ration of the Sepoy is going to be increased by 50 per cent. This process will also effect an annual saving of Rs. 20 lakhs.

The process consists of reconstituting imported evaporated milk powder with pure water and mixing it with a proportion of buffalo milk, which has a high fat content. The result gives a fresh milk which is indistinguishable from ordinary cow's milk and is equally rich in proteins and vitamins.

The new milk will entirely replace standard milk. Its introduction will enable Military Dairy Farms to reduce the size of their herds, a factor which will lead to a corresponding reduction in fodder requirements.

#### OPENING AND DEVELOPING A CAPTURED PORT

By LIEUT.-COLONEL G.L.W. ARMSTRONG.

PENING and developing a captured port is one of the more difficult administrative problems to be faced in war, and there is unfortunately very little written material which can be studied for use in the future. The writer recently had the good fortune to be able to study the opening and development of a recaptured port in an Eastern theatre, and it is hoped that the notes which follow may be of use to others. Throughout the paper operational aspects have been ignored, and only the administrative problems have been considered.

The article is based on operations in the Far East against a well-armed and well-trained enemy. It is assumed that during our initial reverses, when we had to evacuate the territory two years earlier, the port was damaged to a certain extent, although it had been used since then by the enemy. It had also been bombed by the Royal Air Force during the enemy occupation, but the full extent of the damage to the port at present is not known.

The decision to recapture the port is a matter of major strategy, and is the responsibility of the Inter-Service Supreme Commander. Having taken the decision that the recapture of the port and its development as an Advanced Base is necessary for future operations, the Supreme Commander instructs his staff to prepare a Directive to the Naval, Land and Air Commanders-in-Chief.

This Directive must contain information regarding the size of the Naval, Air and Ground forces to be based on the port and, in particular, the Commander-in-Chief must be told what commitment there will be for the construction of air-fields in the area. The Directive must lay down clearly the size of the reserves (including P.O.L.) which are to be held in base, the dates by which completion of the various stages of development are to be attained, the target tonnage capacity of the port, and the phases by which this target is to be reached, the numbers of personnel likely to pass through the port in each direction, and the geographical limits of the Advanced Base.

It should also contain guides for the Army Commander, on the Civil Affairs commitment, whether there is likely to be an export commitment in respect of rice, rubber or other commodities produced in the country, which are urgently required in the prosecution of the war, the size of the workshops which are to be set up within the Advanced Base, major policy regarding accommodation (e.g., whether troops are to be accommodated in tents, huts or local buildings) and full details of any accommodation requirements which may exist for Supreme Headquarters or its units within the Advanced Base.

It must be clearly laid down which Service is to be responsible for the coordination of plans and the date by which the Inter-Service Joint First Key Plan is to be ready for the approval of the Supreme Commander. The Supreme Commander's Directive must also lay down clearly the general policy regarding priorities, in order that problems may, as far as possible, be settled on the spot.

It is essential that the data included in this Directive be accurate and that the Directive be capable of fulfilment. Once planning has started, great delay and confusion will be caused if changes are made in the Directive issued by the Supreme Commander. In particular, Intelligence must be checked carefully, as an inaccurate Intelligence Appreciation may well cause the plan to be unrealistic.

On receipt of the Supreme Commander's Directive each Commander-in-Chief appoints a Base Commander and prepares a Directive for him embodying the requirements laid down by the Supreme Commander, together with such further requirements as he may have on behalf of his own Service. The Directives issued by Commanders-in-Chief will deal primarily with the problems of the Service in question, and will expand on the requirements laid down by the Supreme Commander.

Amongst other points, Commanders-in-Chief must ensure that the Base Commanders are given full information of accommodation requirements for Head-quarters and units under the control of Commanders-in-Chief which are to be located within the Advanced Base; they must inform the Base Commanders of the actual tonnages to be held in each of the depots in their area, and must provide them with detailed Intelligence Summaries.

It is essential also that it be laid down at this stage which of the three Base Commanders is to be Chairman of the Port Executive Committee; during the initial stages when the problems of opening the port are primarily of a Naval nature it will probably be advisable for the Naval Base Commander to act as Chairman, but once the port is open and running smoothly, Army considerations become paramount, and it is often desirable for the Army Base Commander to take over the Chairmanship at this stage.

It is most desirable that the Headquarters of the Naval, Army and Air Base Commanders be fully mobilised before they undertake planning, as it is almost impossible to produce a workable plan unless the full staff is present, and has shaken down. If possible, the key officers of the Base Commander's staff must have had previous experience in the working of a port and Advanced Base, and the Port Commandant should have had both Movements and Staff training. All three Base Commanders and their staffs must be located together during the planning stage, both for office and living accommodation. (It is astonishing how many problems are settled quickly over a glass of gin, which take-hours to sort out over a conference table). Right from the start planning must be a joint effort by all three Services and any tendency to work in water-tight compartments must be avoided. The three Base Commanders must agree on a planning programme, and daily co-ordinating conferences must be held at which the plans of all three Services are tied together stage by stage as planning proceeds.

They must be absolutely clear regarding what units and stores are their responsibility for introduction into the port, and they must place bids for their tonnage requirements on their Commanders-in-Chief.

In preparing their plan for the reconstruction of the port and for the use of such facilities as remain, the Base Commanders must work on the worst case, taking account of no assets which they are not absolutely certain will be found on arrival. Similarly, priorities for the flow-in of men, vehicles, equipment, stores and Units must be based on this case. Once a reconnaissance has been made after arrival in the port, plans can be modified to take account of such assets as are actually available.

Particular points which the Base Commanders must watch include the Works Priority List, which must be detailed and include all known commitments for the three Services; the inclusion in the Works Programme of extra commitments at the last minute after arrival in the port may well have a serious effect on the development of the base. The sketch attached to the First Key Plan must be agreed by all three Base Commanders and show the complete layout of all Headquarters, units, depots and installations within the Advanced Base.

It is essential also that the Berthing Plan of the port and the allocation of docks be agreed by all three Base Commanders. On the completion of their plan, the Base Commanders must put up to their Commanders-in-Chief a joint statement of requirements and must be absolutely clear regarding the effect on the development of the Base if the resources shown are not provided.

It is most important also that a flexible and clear plan be prepared for the introduction of reconnaissance parties into the port immediately on its capture. Such parties *must* be accompanied by adequate transport or their value will be enormously reduced. Alternative plans must also be made for the introduction of these parties in case the original plans prove impracticable at the last minute.

Other points to be included in the Joint First Key Plan include a convoy programme for the phasing in of personnel and stores for the development of the Advanced Base, arrangements for the salvage of resources found on arrival in the port, and arrangements for the provision of navigational aids in the port and for its survey. Steps must also be taken to ensure that sufficient pilots will be available to work the port. If sufficient alongside berths are not available, large numbers of landing craft may also be required in order to maintain target tonnages through the port.

As regards communications, it is not only essential that signal communications ashore be efficient, but it is equally important for an efficient signals system to be provided within the port, so that there may be no delay in handling ships on their arrival. In addition, adequate arrangements must be made for the movement of pilots to and from within the port; this particularly applies in cases where there is a considerable distance between the entrance to the harbour and the dock area.

The Civil Affairs organisation must be clearly laid down, and steps must be taken to prevent disease and unrest among the civil population. Foodstuffs will have to be imported and controlled to prevent starvation, and the Army Base Commander will find his Civil Affairs responsibilities filling a large proportion of his time.

The First Key Plan must take full account of local resources of civilian labour and must make a practicable plan for its enrolment, control and allocation. Similarly, the control and allocation of transport must be worked out beforehand and laid down in the plan.

In order that there may be no delay or confusion in the operation of the port immediately on its capture, the constitution and responsibilities of the various port authorities must be laid down in the plan. Three committees will be required:—

(a) The Port Executive Committee, consisting of the three Base Commanders, the Port Commandant and such other officers as may be required from time to time. This Committee is responsible for settling all major points which may arise regarding the working of the port and for laying down policy. The capacity of the port depends on the rates at which stores etc., can be handled at all stages, i.e., unloading of ships, transport by lighter to docks (unless ships are berthed alongside), transport from docks to depots, and reception in depots. If any of these links are unable to keep up the rate of handling of the remainder, bottlenecks will occur, and the capacity of the port as a whole will be reduced to that of the weakest link. It is the task of the P.E.C. to maintain continual watch on all the cogs of the machine, and ensure that bottlenecks do not occur.

(b) The Port Working Committee. This Committee consists of representatives of all three Services, and is responsible for dealing with all day-to-day matters regarding the operation of the port. It meets daily and refers to the Port Executive Committee matters of a policy nature which it is unable to settle itself.

(c) The Port Defence Committee. This deals with all aspects of port defence, including security, anti-aircraft, fire and ground defence problems. This also is an inter-Service Committee consisting of representatives of the Navy, Army and Air Force.

The First Key Plan must contain one joint inter-Service priority list for the introduction of units, personnel and M. T. into the port. There must invariably be a good deal of last-minute juggling in order to make the best use of shipping, and it is only possible to obtain units etc., in the right order if such a priority list has been prepared in advance. Care must be taken to ensure that engineer, ordnance, supply, signal and R.A.F. Port Detachments are phased in with the earliest convoy, as without them chaos will result in the dock area.

Adequate police are also required in the earliest stages after the capture of the port for the control of traffic, in order that the small amount of transport which is available may be used to the best advantage. They will also be responsible for the prevention of looting. Care must be taken to ensure that adequate transport is phased in to deal with the tonnages arriving in the port, and both Docks Companies and Dock Construction Companies will be required in the first convoy.

It is important that too great a reliance should not be placed on civilian labour, especially in the early stages, and it is most desirable, if possible, that a nucleus of Pioneers be included in the early convoys. It must also be remembered that if signals units and their equipment are not phased in early, the result will be poor communications, with consequent confusion and delay in the working and development of the port.

The Joint First Key Plan as finally agreed between the three Base Commanders and approved by Commanders-in-Chief and the Supreme Commander will cater for the majority of problems which are likely to arise after the capture of the port. No matter how carefully this plan has been prepared, however, hundreds of matters will arise from day to day which have not been foreseen, and on which decisions will have to be taken by the Base Commanders. It is essential that after their arrival in the port the Naval, Army and Air Base Commanders maintain the close liaison and co-operation which has existed during planning, and no arbitrary decisions must be taken by any Base Commander without due consideration being paid to the interests of the other Services.

The first task of the Base Commanders after the recapture of the port will be to carry out a complete reconnaissance of the area, and as a result of this reconnaissance-such amendments as are necessary will be made to the First Key Plan to bring it into line with the situation as it exists on the spot. These amendments must be confirmed by Commanders-in-Chief, and, after approval, the amended First Key Plan is renamed the Second Key Plan. Thereafter it is most undesirable for any alterations to be made to the Second Key Plan.

As far as possible, Depot Commanders should be included in the first reconnaissance parties, in order to give technical advice on the siting and location of their depots.

One of the earliest tasks on arrival in the port will be the clearance of enemy ammunition, mines etc., and this must be tackled on an inter-Service basis. Traffic signs must be set up so that there may be no delay in the turn-round between docks, depots, etc., and it is essential that standard symbols be used throughout to denote the various Services and depots, as in an Eastern theatre, the problem of drivers unable to speak English has to be catered for. It is undesirable for local symbols to be adopted for traffic signs, as this causes confusion when drivers, etc. arrive in the Base from other areas where different symbols may have been in use.

Base Commanders must ensure that they keep their superior commanders fully

informed of the situation on the spot.

During the early stages after arrival in the port, the engineer staff will be severely burdened with planning a works programme and putting it into effect, and it is desirable if possible that it be strengthened during this initial stage if work is to go ahead at maximum speed.

The ideal method of recruiting civil labour is through Civil Labour Control Teams, but if these are not available or are insufficient, it may be necessary to obtain civil labour through local contractors although this usually operates to the detriment of the labourer himself. Adequate provision must be made for issuing tools to civilian artisans employed on arrival in the port, especially after an enemy occupation. Standard rates must also be laid down by all three Services for payment of labour, piecework, etc., and no "cheating" by individual units etc., must be permitted.

Once units have arrived and started work it is most undesirable that they should be called upon to move to another location, as this causes a disproportionate delay in the development of the base, especially in the case of depots which are trying to build up to target stock holdings. The problem of providing guards will be difficult, and local resources will have to be used to the maximum possible extent as it is seldom possible to earmark more than a few troops purely for guard duties. It must be accepted that the use of depot staffs, etc., on guard duties detracts from their working efficiency.

It is absolutely vital to avoid congestion in the dock area, and stores

must be cleared to depots immediately they are discharged from ships.

Although visits to the port by Commanders and staff officers of Higher Formations are often of the greatest value, they should not become too frequent or they may interfere with smooth working, especially when, as sometimes happens, officers neglect to inform the Base Commander of their presence. Such visitors should invariably be accompanied during their visit by a representative of the appropriate Base Commander, and should discuss with him points they have noted before reporting to their own headquarters.

It should be clearly laid down for all three Services in the Base who is to be responsible for the provision of furniture, and no individual requisitioning of furniture should be permitted, except by the authority so designated. It is usually better for the Army to be made responsible for the provision of furniture

through Ordnance or Engineer channels.

All concerned must understand that all local resources found on arrival in the port are subject to allocation by the Port Executive Committee, and Services must not be allowed to appropriate for their own use resources not allocated to them.

The main point which cannot be overstressed in this problem of the opening and development of a port is the necessity for complete and continual inter-Service co-ordination at all levels. The work of the three Services is so intermixed under present day conditions that there is hardly a single aspect of port working in which two or more Services are not concerned. If the three Services do not maintain the closest possible liaison, arbitrary decisions will be taken, confusion will be caused, the development of the Base will be retarded, and the success of future operations may well be prejudiced.

The success of the operation will hang on the co-operation which is achieved during the initial planning stage after the assembly of the Base Commanders, and they must make every effort to foresee and cater for every possible problem

which is likely to arise after the capture of the port.

#### PLANNING AND THE SMALL STORES

BY LIEUT.-COLONEL GEOFFREY NOAKES.

WHITE tents, white vests, khaki shorts in green jungles! Throughout the war, there has been a noticeable lack of forward planning in the production of clothing and small and apparently insignificant stores. This article does not refer to the co-ordinated appreciations by the General Staff in conjunction with the Technical, Ordnance and Supply Services for the production and distribution of guns, ammunition, vehicles, etc., but to the small items often overlooked but which nevertheless make so much difference to the troops.

Much of the responsibility lies with G.H.Q.(1) but the War Office cannot be completely exonerated. Experience surely has shown a lack of resilience in the ideas of the Staff Officers concerned.

The following are a few examples, not in any way intended to be exhaustive. They could all have been put right by a little thought on the part of those responsible in Delhi and London (or even by asking the "heathens" on the Assam and Arakan front) without interruption to bulk production and in many cases at a lower cost. That at any rate would have pleased "the financial authorities at this Headquarters."

## Tentage.

Tents produced even in peacetime should be suitable for use in war. White tents may have looked very smart in serried rows in a peacetime camp but the colour was totally unsuitable for use in any theatre of war. In spite of this, for years after war was declared, tents were produced a beautiful white, even the guy ropes being carefully bleached, whereas they should have been either a drab brown or green for use in the jungles.

Instructions as to the use of cutch or some other means of darkening the tents appeared regularly in orders, and every unit had the job of toning down its new tentage immediately it was issued. This was neither very effective nor satisfactory in a training area and almost impossible for troops in action.

For the monsoon of 1943, the tents sent forward from the Ordnance Depot at Chittagong to the Division in the Arakan were all white, and anything to darken them was "in short supply." This was after nearly four years of war, two of which were against the Japanese in jungle country!

# Helmets and Caps.

Up to 1943, it was considered necessary for British personnel in India to wear pith helmets. These were light to wear, effective against the sun but they were bulky and had only a short life in the monsoon.

Although India wore helmets pith, all men were apparently fitted out in the U.K. with the Wolseley pattern. Since the wearing of these marked a man as a new arrival, the wastage was very heavy and was encouraged by most C.O's

Digitized by GOOSIC

who frowned on a sprinkling of "Bishops Bowlers" in the ranks. Could not the Wolseley helmet have been withdrawn immediately on arrival in India? Or better still have never been issued and a standard type of helmet adopted?

The War Office before the war produced the Cap F.S. which, however, gave no protection from the sun or rain and fell off at the slightest provocation. The American cap was much more practicable as also was the Scots bonnet.

In 1943 the Bush Hat made a popular appearance, but has now been dropped for the Cap G.S. Olive Green—and what a terrible thing it is! Shaped like a cowpat, badly made, it is impossible to wear smartly. No self-respecting soldier would wear it if he could avoid doing so and I have yet to see a senior officer wearing one, which automatically condemns it. Why, after six years of war, when millions of head-dress have been made, do we have to end up with bulk production of such an article which is certain to be declared obsolescent in its turn?

## Clothing.

The drill clothing issued to drafts in the U.K. was thick, heavy, badly cut and generally unsuitable for use in the East. As in the case of the Wolseley helmet, to wear it marked a man as a new-comer and resulted in the quickest possible wastage. Co-operation with standard patterns and cloths could surely have eliminated this in a month. There would also have been a saving in cost per garment as the heavy U.K. material was more expensive.

The design and shades of clothes manufactured in India showed a lack of appreciation of what was required. Long trousers, towels and underclothes in olive green shades did not reach the troops in bulk until 1944. Khaki shorts, white vests, etc. were still being wasted out in 1945!

Production of articles suitable for war should have commenced in 1939 for issue to mobilised divisions within a year. In fact even if it is necessary for a peacetime soldier to have a white tent, etc., the reserves held against the A.F.G. 1098 should have been suitable for war.

## Webbing.

Both in the U.K. and the East, webbing, after issue, was universally blancoed or dyed to a different shade. A well-thought out policy could have ensured its issue in a standard shade for the various theatres of war, which would have been more serviceable apart from the time saved in units.

The Commanders in the field should not be completely absolved from blame, as they cannot have presented their case forcefully enough. One can imagine that, if our new C.I.G.S. had been in command, there would have been a "No green tents, etc., no campaign!" demand.

The M.G.O. in India in his instructive article in the April number stated "The expected period of gestation for the idea should be reasonably adequate—do not ask for something by next Monday." But one can feel no pity for the gentlemen who "carried" such obvious improvements for so many years, or worse still, never conceived them!

#### THE POST-WAR OFFICER

BY COLONEL R. M. BRUCE, D.S.O., M.C.

A LTHOUGH we do not know the strength and distribution of the post-war Defence Services of Great Britain or of India, the problems and measures to be taken concerning the supply of post-war officers and their training are subjects which merit wide discussion.

We must assume that (a) some form of military conscription will be established in Britain, (b) that in addition to Home forces, Britain will require part of her forces to serve overseas, (c) that the Indian Army will require a number of British officers, and (d) that India will not have conscription.

Fields of recruitment of officers must be as wide as possible; they must include cadets who have selected a Service career at the age of, say, 17 years, candidates from the Varsities, and candidates from the ranks. Attractive terms must be offered, for it must be remembered that if an officer is to finish his career at 45 years of age, that age is too young for most men to want to drop into idleness, while at the same time they will be too old to take up another vocation. An officer must have reasonable prospects of employment till a considerably later age.

As to pay, it will be generally admitted that British rates—pay and pensions—are on the low side. Nevertheless, how is a nation with a public debit of £20,000 to £25,000 million pounds going to approve of rises all round? The alternative is a general reduction in prices of essential commodities, in which case men in the Services can expect relief financially in the form of furnished free or cheap accommodation, and the benefit of purchasing their essential requirements at Government-run canteens.

Accelerated promotion to a limited degree must be provided for in the conditions of service. The C. O. would be the initiating authority, but as all officers would have to attend Company, Command and other schools, reports on their work would receive full consideration; in addition, there should be formation or Command Selection Boards in order to introduce a fairer standardisation.

A time element in promotion and pay should be adhered to. Juniors might often prove as efficient in higher appointments as their seniors (and war conditions seem to prove this), but in the majority of cases experience must be given its due consideration. Civilian business houses usually work on a time-scale for promotion, but employers usually reserve the right to summarily dismiss an employee without the latter having any redress, while in the Services this is not the case. Instead of inflating all infantry commands to majors, I suggest that the Company Command allowance be re-introduced.

When thinking of more advantageous financial terms for the Services one must not lose sight of its many present advantages: generous leave, liberal treatment when sick, the capital value of a pension (which may be partially commuted). One must guard against adopting too mercenary an attitude in this matter of pay, for service in the Forces is an honour, and service to one's country should be of more importance than the emoluments gained.

Selection of officers should be based on Selection Boards, and on a prescribed educational standard. In this connection I would refer to the matter of the

Platoon Commander in the Infantry; he is a subaltern in the British Army, and a Jemadar in the Indian Army. For many reasons the V. C. Os. rank should be retained; these V. C. Os. have proved their worth in the late war, and I would strongly recommend that a similar rank be instituted in the British Army and called "Ensign" or "Petty Officer", the post being filled by promotion from the ranks. Apart from its intrinsic value, this step would have a recruiting appeal and would help to ease the officer situation.

The position in the British Army on this subject has been somewhat intriguing by the attitude adopted by the Army Council which, having approved the appointment of Platoon Sergeant, suddenly abolished it. At the same time a senior officer was severely censured for supporting the old school tie theory as an essential qualification for an officer. The two decisions seem irreconcilable. It seems that the Platoon Sergeant had not been given the best chances or the proper training. Surely if the Indian Army can fight second to none with ten or even fewer "full" officers, the British Army can also?

What of the officers' training? I must assume that all educational curriculums in Western nations will change radically—for if they do not Western civilisation will assuredly crash. Thus among all classes there should be better material to train. At the same time there must be better facilities for training teachers—and this applies also to Service schools, where much of the teaching has been stereotyped and unimaginative.

Officers must be trained at a combined training school for land and air forces. Naval forces do not normally operate on land and should have their own training establishment. I would suggest the following syllabus:

First year. Physical development, elementary drill, disciplining (instead of making permanent N. C. O. cadets there should be continual changes so as to give as many as possible a chance of developing leadership and character); academic subjects, mathematics, chemistry, geometry, history, and in India, English, Urdu, or Hindi.

Second year. In addition to more advanced classes in the above subjects there should be included mechanics, drawing and surveying.

Third year. Simple tactics, and demonstrations of work in all branches of the Service. At this stage the cadet could state his preference as to the Service he wishes to join.

Fourth year. Military history, military law, economics, and ethics to be included.

Throughout their training, all cadets should be encouraged or compelled to take up a handicraft or hobby. Some time during their third or fourth year cadets should serve for six months in the ranks of a regular unit of the branch to which they are eventually to be posted. Flying experience should be given to all cadets, and flight training to each cadet who intends to serve in the Air Force.

Cadets would be commissioned at the end of the fourth year, whence they would go on to a specialist school. Infantry, Artillery, R.E., Armoured Corps, etc.—to learn the technicalities of his chosen branch. None of these courses should be less than three months; some will have to be considerably more. The age limits for the Cadet Colleges should be from 17/18 to 21/22 years.

Bearing in mind holiday periods, the Cadet Course could not be shortened, but special qualities and outstanding work should permit of the cadet receiving accelerated promotion to a higher group. Candidates who have already been through a University would do the third and fourth year periods. Individuals

to be commissioned from the ranks would also take the two latter years' course, but instead of serving six months in the ranks would have to devote that time to general education.

After having served for five or six years, the young officer would attend a so-called Company Command School, in which tactical training would be undertaken. All branches of the Land Forces would attend this school, and from it selections would be made for the Staff College.

The Staff College visualised at this stage would be a College designed to teach staff work; it would not cover two years, but six months. In my opinion the old two years' course was wrong, being based on two aims; (a) the training of staff officers, and (b) the training of potential B. G. S. and formation Commanders. There was too little assistance in the former (especially for the lower grade staff appointments), and by the time any of the latter were likely to assume such positions much of the teaching was out of date.

Having attended a Staff College course, and having done some years of staff work, an officer would be given the chance of electing either to remain on the staff, in other words, to join the Staff Corps, or to concentrate on regimental work. The second alternative would not debar him from consideration for promotion to higher commands; far from it.

A Senior Officers' school must be retained, open to majors, and available to officers of the Staff Corps. Higher training methods, schemes, co-operation between all arms, the exercising of potential formation Commands are some of the subjects to be dealt with at this school. The old adage of "fitting every one for the next higher rank" showed far too narrow an outlook.

Finally, there should be a Combined Services Defence College; admission would be by selection, and it would cater for considerably larger numbers than formerly.

If conscription is maintained in the U. K., it seems probable that the Territorial Army will disappear, but a form of Home Guard may be retained, as well as some volunteer static units such as local A. A. and Coast Defence formations. Wartime expansion of the regular force will be achieved by taking in ex-conscripts and reservists. In India, where conscription almost certainly will not be introduced, there must be a larger reserve and Territorial Army units.

In both countries a big problem will be the provision of officers for expansion. University O. T. Cs., if efficiently trained, can help in this, but they cannot provide all the numbers required. Other means must be found. Two measures suggest themselves; (a) a short-term engagement, which might be attractive in the Navy and Air Force but doubtful in the Land Forces; and (b) potential officers would have to be excused six months of their conscript training, provided they agree to join a reserve, for which they would have to do six months with a regular unit, followed by periodic training and courses. Various arms would have to have their own Reserve Training Centres, which might be at Regimental Depots; as an added attraction a longer or even total period of conscript service might be excused.

What of the active and efficient officer of 45 years of age, who has failed to get command or has completed it, and for whom few equivalent or higher appointments are available under normal conditions? I suggest that schools of all natures employ more senior officers, who could be found from the above categories. The financial effect of this would not be very serious, as the appointment of. "Ensign" or "Petty Officer" would reduce the pay roll of a unit considerably

Some of these 45-year old officers should be given jobs in Higher Formation Headquarters, the Admiralty, or the War Office. Moreover, if some younger officers were released from some of the junior appointments, the work could be done as well and as quickly by fewer more experienced senior officers. The financial effect would not be serious, but the proposal will involve senior officers doing some amount of bottle-washing work, which would often be preferable to sweeping streets. Conscription and all it involves, such as the registration of the civil population, etc., will also create work, allowing for more openings for Service officers. Administrative work in NAAFIs and Ordnance shops may also give employment to these 45-year old retired officers.

There is every reason why, concurrent with the conscription of males, there should also be conscription of females. Women could take a share on the land work, in Service offices, in nursing work, and in administrative posts. "No duty, no vote" should be the maxim. Rousseau's theory of "the Rights of Man" has been the most vicious and demoralising slogan which could have been adopted by democracy. Neither man nor woman has rights without performing some service to the State or their fellow-creatures. A woman performs this naturally by child-bearing. The mother has earned her rights, and also, of course, exemption from conscription.

No account has been taken in this article of the probable effects of the atomic bomb on plans of development of the military art. They may prove all such plans to be moonshine. It is insane to think that any weapon can be banned from use.

The next war between "civilised" nations will probably end in the fashion portrayed by the picture of the monkey attending the dying moments of the last human being on earth, who said as the mortal breathed his last: "And now I I shall have to start all over again".

## Wellington College Memorial

The Governors and representative Old Wellingtonians have launched an appeal for funds to commemorate the 460 Old Wellingtonians who have given their lives in the Second World War.

Donations received will be paid into the Wellington College (1941) War Exhibitions Fund to assist in the education at Wellington College of the sons of Army, Navy and Air Force officers, with preference to Old Wellingtonians, and of any Old Wellingtonians killed or incapacitated by enemy action; and a small portion of the Fund will be devoted to a visible Memorial.

The organisers of the Fund suggest that the purpose for which it is to be raised may appeal to other than those who have intimate associations with the College. The percentage of Wellington boys passing into H. M. Forces during the last eighty years presents an unusual record, and it is estimated that since the College was opened in 1859 one Wellingtonian in every ten has been killed in action.

Cheques should be made payable to the Wellington College War Memorial Fund, crossed Barclays Bank, and sent to Barclays Bank, Goslings Branch, 19, Fleet Street, London, E. C. 4, or to the Chairman of the Fund, E. Gould, Esq., at Wellington College, Berks from whom any further information may be obtained.

# THE VALLEY OF THE GODS

By Major J. B. HRELLS.

CONVALESCING after an appendix operation, I decided to spend my months sick leave in Kulu. Travelling by rail you leave the main line at Amine for Pathankot and onwards by road. It would be quiet and a change, and we only some 150 miles away from my station by road. My kit included two tests, one for myself, and one for my bearer, cooking pots, and enough tinned fool be last out the stay, helped by local purchases. I was lucky in having a bear who could also cook. The cost, of course, depends on the individual, but in what it is worth my trip worked out at between Rs. 300 and Rs. 400 for the month. I took tinned butter, jam, meat, fish, biscuits. Eggs, vegetable, mutton, and fruits are easily obtained at reasonable prices.

The road through Mandi State is very badly surfaced, and must be one of the twistiest roads in India. It is mainly a one-way traffic road, controlled by baries. Mandi Town has a pleasant modern Rest House, an ideal half-way halt. A long journey in an Indian bus, even if one succeeds in getting the front seat, is not at the best of times comfortable. I am usually fated to sit next to a mother sall child, one of whom is invariably sick before we have been long on the road. Its time was no exception, and the halt at Mandi was therefore most welcome. Also Mandi Town, the road, cut out of solid rock, twists on up a narrow gorge, and in one or two places has actually had to be built out from the rock face. At its a bridle track leads off to Simla.

The Kulu valley itself is one of the prettiest in the Himalayan belt. It is not yet been "discovered" in the same way as Kashmir, although it is much of the latter's beauty and in some ways exceeds it. It has at the most no more than half a dozen hotels, all quite small, but very pleasant and rell-man Several English people, impressed by the scenery, climate, and the fertility of the soil, have settled permanently in Kulu, and seem to thrive there. It is also becoming popular amongst Indian families as a summer resort, and many of then have since bought property in the district.

The valley is long and narrow and down its whole length tumbles the Bes river, one of the five rivers which give the Punjab its name. Some years are an enterprising Game Warden stocked the Kulu stretches of the river with English trout, and a trout hatchery is still maintained at Katrain. As a result, the Beas in Kulu offers some of the finest trout fishing in India. Below the valet the water becomes too hot, and there the mahseer holds sway. The unusually the water becomes too hot, and there the mahseer holds sway. The unusually heavy monsoons of the last two years have done a lot of damage, and many six have been killed off. It will not be long, however, before Kulu again offers itself as a fisherman's paradise.

Both banks of the river are lined with alder trees, giving it a very English appearance. In fact, in one's travels through the Valley one is often reminded of England, especially as the countryside is so delightfully green. There are many time English apple and cherry orchards, and in one garden I even found many time English black berries being cultivated. The fruit grown in these crelarly especially the apples and cherries, is of excellent quality, and the trees seem to grow well in all parts of the Valley.

From the Kulu fruit growers' point of view, the chief difficulty is the marketing of the fruit, due to the long outlet road through Mandi State. At the beginning of the war, the Punjab Government had started widening the main road to Kulu, so as to be able to run two-way traffic. If this is completed as part of the scheme the fruit will be marketed more easily than at Punjab post-war roads present and in excellent condition.

I made my headquarters at Manali at the head of the Valley, where the motor road ends. Manali has one hotel run by a retired Army officer, but having decided to do my leave on the cheap, I decided to live in the Rest House the first night, and find a suitable camp site the next morning. A great advantage of travel in the country districts of India is the number of excellent rest houses one finds everywhere. It is interesting to remember that in this area anyway, they are the equivalent of the old English Post Horse Inns, as they mostly date back to the the days before the advent of the motor-car, and are therefore, spaced out across the country in terms of one day's journey in a tonga.

ri.

III.

الغازا

I finally chose as my camp site a small grassy spot, sheltered on the one side by a group of fine Deodar trees, and on the other by a large granite boulder. Here the tents were pitched, and before long we had made ourselves very comfortable. Just below my tent, the waters of the Manali nala tumbled down over boulders and rocks to join the Beas river a mile below.

On the same level as my camp, ran three water channels,—one more than a mile long—which supplied the motive power for several small mills for grinding flour. The mills themselves would have delighted that inventive genius, Mr. Heath Robinson, in their ingenuity! Their chief disadvantage from my point of view was the lowness of the roof, which forced one to crawl on hands and knees to get inside, and when there, one could only crouch or squat—it was quite impossible to stand up. These mills are most picturesque and are fascinating to watch in action.

As I was still recovering from my operation, I took things easily, getting up late and going to bed early. The latter was not difficult, as the evenings are very cold and I was only too glad to get into my warm "Jaeger" sleeping bag after my open-air supper. The snow waters of the Manali nala were more than I could bear for washing in at night, but I made up for it by having an extra good wash after the sun got up in the morning. We had one or two heavy showers of rain during the stay, but my old but serviceable doublefly tents stood up to it well. My bearer turned out to be a better cook than I had expected, and meals, although simple, were good. What could be more pleasant at the end of each meal than ripe red Kulu cherries straight off the tree!

Kulu is known as the "Valley of the Gods", as wherever one goes, even to the smallest villages, one finds that the villagers have their own God in a small shrine or temple. The Gods, many of them, I imagine, very old, appear to be modelled in clay and are usually dressed in neat clothes. Every year at the time of the great Dussehra festival they are carried down in State by the young men of the village to a big mela at Sultanpur, the capital, where they are paraded through the streets in colourful procession, and much dancing, beating of drums, and general merry-making takes place. Each village brings its own God, and after the festivities are over, they are again carried back to their respective villages.

The old summer capital, Naggar, is on the east side of the river. chosen as the chief residential area of Kulu. There are some fine old houses there, with well kept gardens. Naggar commands a fine view up and down the Valley, and the view of the massive snow peaks towering above is most impressive. The ancient castle, now converted into a Government Rest House, is of interest. For many centuries it was the royal residence of the Rajas of Kulu. The building looks impregnable, as it stands on a steep precipice and in a very commanding position. It has stood up to the stress of both storm and earthquake, probably due to the give and take properties of its walls, which consist of layers of weather resisting stone, between solid beams of wood.

Above the castle is an old temple, and at some little distance from it are some quaint carvings, probably relics of the days of the Rajas. Round the second storey of the courtyard at the back of the castle run wooden balconies, from one of which, it is said, a Rani threw hers lf to the ground many years ago. The reason for this quick and fairly certain suicide was, so the local rumour goes, that she was suspected by the Raja of keeping a secret lover in hiding in the castle. She proved her innocence, however, by the fact that when her body touched the ground it immediately turned into a stone figure!

No mere photograph could do justice to Naggar. It needs an artist to portray faithfully the dark deodar forests above, the silvery mountains in the hazy distance and the brilliant colours of the crops in the terraced fields leading down to the river below. I can think of no other tree in the world which is quite so impressive against a background of snow as a fully-grown deodar. Opposite Naggar on the main motor road, connected by a rough cobbled track and a bridge over the river, is Katrain. Here some of the best fishing stretches in the Valley are found. The grass is of a real English green, and the alder trees on either bank of the river give welcome shade from the sun.

Between my camp and the Manali bazaar was a small deodar forest, through which I walked each morning to the Post Office to collect my mail. Several water channels run through this forest, and large bunches of mauve irises grow wild on their banks. In v clearing in the trees on a hill to the west of Manali there is an interesting old temple of Buddhist origin. Entirely constructed of wood, the carvings are particularly interesting, and I was able to recognise in addition to the usual Gods and Goddesses—elephants and tigers (neither of which are found in these parts), eagles and hawks, and a type of wild dog not unlike a jackal. Round the edge of each storey of the roof hung a line of carved wooden tassels, each suspended from a small wire hook. The slightest breeze caused these to tingle together giving a pleasant almost bell-like sound.

Being keen to see the inside of this temple, I called at the group of houses nearby, and found the Priest, who had the keys. He opened the door, and leaving his shoes outside in the usual Indian style, went into the dark interior. Naturally I was not allowed inside, but the Priest lit a candle, and allowed me to stand at the door and look in. I was surprised to find that the temple had been built over the top of a massive black granite boulder. The building, although high, only just covered the top of it. The Priest pointed out to me with great respect and reverence, two large footprints on a slab at the base of the boulder, which he said were the actual footprints of some God. To me they appeared most unnatural footprints, but the Priest placed great faith in the truth of the story!

Some three miles above my camp by the Manali nala, along a narrow and rather steep path, is the village of Bashisht. This, too, is considered to be an extremely holy and sacred place, but of a different type. Bashisht at first sight is no different from any other Kulu village. The houses are well built with stone and slate, each with a wooden balcony on the top floor, and with the

corners of the roof turning up slightly in the Tibetan style. The villages are inclined to be a little dirty, and usually have many rather dirty but most cheerful children playing in the streets.

Bashisht, however, differs from other villages, in that it is the proud possessor of a hot sulphur spring. The water from this spring runs into two stone tanks, one open to the air, and the other enclosed in a small covered room. The latter is intended for the use of the women, and the former for the men. The tanks are enclosed in a courtyard, which also holds a small temple, containing one of the famous Kulu Gods. This particular one has a very black face with silver eyes, and is dressed in a long white robe. The smell of sulphur was strong, and the water so hot that I could not bear to hold my hand in it for more than a few seconds at a time.

To anyone who, reading this article, has ideas of a camping holiday in Kulu, I would issue one word of warning. There are almost as many flies to the square mile in the Kulu Valley as there are to a square mile of an ordinary Indian city. Although the air is wonderful, and although the countryside is fresh and green, yet one gets these flies. No one seems to know the reason, but it is possibly due to the large number of cattle, sheep, and goats which pass through. It is essential therefore, to include in one's kit a couple of extra mosquito nets to keep the tents fly-proof, and to keep the flies from the food. Nearly all the bungalows in the valley have fly-proof windows and doors.

If one is interested in exploring further afield than Kulu there is a very pleasant trek over the Rohtang Pass into Lahoul, which can be done in easy stages with rest houses at each stage. The country is similar to Tibet, and its inhabitants have distinctly Mongolian features. They are tough and wiry and in many ways resemble the Gurkhas. Numbers of them have been enlisted into the Army during the war. The capital, Kyelung, is well worth a visit. There is plenty of scope for mountain climbing for those who are keen on it; the necessary porters and hill ponies can be arranged at Manali.

On the Rohtang Pass one hears the story of the snow-monster, who, if seen, is so terrifying, that if one is not actually killed by it, one is struck dumb for life. The monster is reported to be of a great height, and very powerful. It usually appears in a snow storm, and can run very fast down hill. The same story is told in other parts of the Himalayas, especially in Nepal, where the Gurkhas firmly believe in its existence, as also in various other "bogeymen" such as the Banmanchhe (lit. "the Jungleman").

It would be interesting to trace these stories down to their source, as certainly in the case of the snow-monster, the story is almost exactly similar in completely different parts of the Himalayas. To take Lahoul and Nepal as examples, the two peoples who give the same description of the monster, speak two entirely different languages and do not intermix. Is it possible that there has in the past been an animal of some kind, not yet known to science, the description of which has been passed down from father to son for generations?

The Kulu Valley and beyond abounds in places of interest, and for anyone who wants a quiet holiday in the hills, it is to be strongly recommended. The people, although inclined to be rather lazy, are always most cheerful and friendly and like most of the hill races of India, make one feel at home with them from the start. By the end of my stay I was loath to leave such a friendly and pleasant area, and I am very much looking forward to other visits in the future.

#### WITH THE INDIAN VICTORY CONTINGENT IN BRITAIN\*

BY LIEUT.-COLONEL P. H. DENYER, O.B.E., M.M.

IT was an opportunity which so many of us have dreamed of to watch the sepoy's reaction to the wonders of Britain. During those interminable airless hot-weather evenings in Punjab plain stations, after the inevitable hockey game, when one sat still, damp and exhausted but strangely contented drinking some unnameable concection on the touch line, or in the V.C.O.s'club, whilst a brassy sky resolved itself into the kindlier blue and purple of night: and the bugle called faint but sweet from the distant lines, or, at the end of those long days after black buck or duck, when full-fed and contented one joined in the conversation between the solitary companion, a sepoy orderly, and the forest bungalow staff. It is on occasions such as these, when talk slides north and south over the world and inevitably comes to rest upon "Wilayat" that the thought comes surging forward again "How I wish I could show England to you!"

Well, here was the chance wrapped up in a memorandum from the India Office, offering an extension of leave and out of pocket expenses in exchange for duty with the Victory Contingent as "Conducting Officer". One eagerly reached for pen and paper to reply, and instinctively compiled a list of chaps one hoped would find a place in the contingent. What greater pleasure could there be than to meet them all again in the heart of London: but for so many of them there would be no Victory Parade, as the long trail of Indian graves from El Alamein to Venice now testifies.

But, despite the rain, the reunion in the damp evening light of Kensington Gardens on May 23rd was a joyous one, quite heart warming. How incongruous it seemed to hear Salaam sahib and Sat Sirê Akal, Huzoor in Hyde Park! How quickly one slides into fluent Hindustani even after a long break. Expressions and idioms half forgotten, come tumbling unconsciously from the lips. What a lot of nice grinning faces there were! How good and white were the average Indian's teeth. What a lot there was to talk about as the water dripped from the plane trees and made popping noises on the bell tent dimly lit by a single hurricane lamp: and how well they all looked.

Mohinder Singh and Hari Ram were there, both very proud of their decorations, last seen "fratting" with sturdy Italian wenches at San Giorgio on the road to Trieste. There was Bara Singh of Patiala, who, since our last meeting had won an I.D.S.M. in Burma, Rang Bahadur, now a Jemadar, who had done so well at Ruweisat in 1942 and Allah Yar Khan of the Armoured Corps, who had towed us into Beirut on that hot July day: and inevitably the slim soft-spoken ex-I.M.A cadet, now a Major, with a M.C., wearing the insignia

<sup>\*</sup>Just as this issue was completed for Press we received two articles concerning the visit to England of the Indian Contingent in the Victory Parade. The first article appears above, and but for the fact that the Journal had been made up and "put to bed" it would have appeared on an earlier page.

The second article, written by a V.C.O. from the 1st Punjab Regimental Centre, is a fascinating and vivid description of Britain as seen through the eyes of an Indian soldier, and it will certainly be read by all present and past officers of the Indian Army with great pride. We propose to publish it in Roman Urdu (with a slightly condensed version in English) in our January

of a famous Infantry regiment, who aided recollection with "You gave me fourteen days for sleeping during one of your lectures!"

Someone at the India Office had certainly worked overtime to prepare the programme of entertainment and sight-seeing that was offered to the contingent. The Welfare section at the India Office did a great job. For the purposes of entertainment, the contingent was divided into convenient parties each about one hundred and thirty strong. Number one party consisted of ten officers, seven V.C.Os. and one hundred and twenty-four ranks of the Royal Indian Navy, Royal Indian Air Force and the Indian States Forces. The programme for each party was practically the same and was so arranged that when No. 1 party was seeing the Houses of Parliament and Westminster Abbey, No. 2 party was at Madame Tussauds and No. 3 at Whipsnade. The long journeys were made by motor coach, the shorter ones by 'bus or Underground. The Conducting Officer's task was to shepherd his flock through the maze of London traffic, and generally behave as guide, interpreter and explainer. Not infrequently he was called upon to be the party cashier.

There is no doubt that the present day sepoy after six years of war experience in Europe, Africa or the Far East, is no more the untutored country bumpkin. Those who had served in the 8th Army had seen Cairo, Naples, Rome and Venice—perhaps Athens. The 14th Army has also provided experiences for the erstwhile countryman, after which he no longer stood in wonder at Western modernities. London of course, stands in a class of its own and has something which no other city can quite equal, and the charm of London soon gripped the members of the contigent. The R.I.N. and R.I.A.F., most of whom could talk English, got off to a quick start and their immediate reaction was a genuine delight in the friendliness of the Londoner. The soldier of the States Forces was perhaps a little shyer and therefore a little slower to accept the London civilian as his friend: but that did not last long.

After spending a day at Lords Cricket Ground watching the Indian team playing the M.C.C., thirty or so men of No. 1 party returned by Underground from St. Johns' Wood, via Baker Street to Bayswater Road, which was the nearest station to the Victory Camp. Although the London public is not easily startled, the sight of a stream of smart Indian servicemen, many wearing pugarees, caused quite a stir as we threaded our way down the escalator. Having with some difficulty dissuaded one light hearted group from joining the up going stream and therefore getting another escalator ride, the party arrived intact at Baker Street. The officers desired to be taken to the West End to dine; the men were set for getting back to camp.

I found the correct platform and ranged the party up ready to dash for the train doors. I explained to the N.C.O. that having boarded the train, they should pass two stops and alight at the third. The train arrived and our party surged on with an alacrity truly gratifying. As the tail lamp disappeared I was struck by a horrid doubt and questioned a woman porter. Without looking at me, she continued to suck her teeth and gave answer:—"Bayswater Road? No. Next one goes to Bayswater Road". With no little misgiving I accompanied the officers to Ramaswamy's restaurant in Swallow Street: but I need not have worried. They got home all right. A far sighted Providence had ordained that each man be given a private identity card which stated that the owner was a member of the India/Burma Victory Contingent and that he was in London to represent his country in the celebrations. It carried a request that he be directed back to Kensington Gardens.

The camp in Kensington Gardens was certainly not the best we encountered, and "G" lines was not on the best site. The contingent shared "G" lines with detachments from Africa, Iraq, Palestine and Transjordan, Cyprus, Ceylon, Malta, Malaya and Fiji. (The officers of this last country wore a startling walking out uniform consisting of the usual service dress jacket with SB. belt, with below, a sort of kilt of the same material with a petal shaped fringe which reached below the knees. The legs were bare and the feet encased in sandals). The weather was atrocious; scarcely a day passed which had not a share of rain and on occasions the leaden heavens shed a downpour which lasted throughout the day. Pools of water formed between the close pitched bell tents, and continual vehicle wheels formed large areas of thick greasy mud. Clothes and bedding felt damp to the touch; a small rivulet ran between the tables in the officers' mess. Yet amidst all this depressing dampness the men remained uniformly cheerful and amazingly enthusiastic. The turn out was irreproachable.

The entertainment programme was sufficiently packed to allow little time for moodiness about the English climate. The troops were offered some form of outing on practically every day, except those set aside for practising the march past, for rest and cleaning and for private sight-seeing. His Majesty the King accompanied by the Queen, Princess Elizabeth and Princess Margaret visited the Camp on June 6th and for once the sun shone fitfully. The Royal Party walked slowly between lines of troops drawn up on each side of the main path leading from Alexandra Gate. To the evident delight of everyone, the Commander-in-Chief, newly appointed Field Marshal, was in attendance. For the Indian servicemen, particularly the older soldiers, there is something personal between himself and the King Emperor. It seemed as if each man stood an inch or so taller, the natural pride in poise and bearing being even more marked. The three V.Cs. in the contingent were singled out for special attention and each officer was presented to Their Majesties. The Queen chatted animatedly and with evident enjoyment to many N.C.Os. and other ranks.

The Derby deserves special mention. A whole coach load of us, officers, N.C.Os. and men, in fact anyone who wanted to go, arrived at Epsom at 12-30. The rain fell dismally. The bookies all around the coach intrigued the men as much as any of the hundred and one novel sights that Derby Day offers. I was led into explaining the intricacies of win and place betting and how the odds worked. What I had been fearing came at last.

"Colonel sahib, which horse will win the first race?" I protested I could not tell, and that I disapproved of betting in general: but they were unmoved.

"But which horse", they persisted, "are you yourself going to back?" In desperation I glanced at the card and saw Gordon Richards name. I mentioned the number, declaiming that no one must hold me responsible, that betting was only for fools, that I knew nothing about the horse.

"Give us your money", they said, "and we will make your bet with ours".

Need I add, the horse won and the contented backers returned voluble and happy, clutching a sheaf of currency notes as if it were the most natural thing in the world that they should be given a lot of money by the nice bookmaker: but that wasn't all. Gordon Richards won the second and fourth race, and the small each-way stakes mounted comfortably. The Derby (I backed Khaled and by then was omnipotent) was a disappointment, but they kindly held me not

to blame. At the end of the day we had backed four winners in six races, and I was uncomfortably conscious that I had been instrumental in making at least six Indian soldiers firm addicts to turf betting.

Everywhere we encountered warm friendliness and welcome. The manager of a famous Speedway Racing Stadium turned out to have served with Indian troops in Burma, and hastily prepared a snack supper with drinks after the show for upwards of seventy men: all this in this land of rations and shortages. The Secretary of the Agricultural Committee of one of the Home Counties, where we were shown farming in all its aspects, had called in a score of county folk and their cars to act as guides.

At one suburban stadium we crashed, unheralded, a special circus show for London school children. The management refused to allow us to depart, and somehow found scats for a hundred and twenty of us. As we entered the stadium the cheer leader in the centre of the arena was announcing into the microphone:—"And now, children, we are honoured today with a visit from some members of that wonderful fighting country, India. Here they come, all boys who fought in the war in Burma, in Africa and Italy, who fought for you every bit as much as your fathers and brothers did. Let's give them an extra special cheer!" And as the children stood and roared their welcome, the troops, with that unerring sense of dignified good manners and behaviour which is their birthright, stood up, bowed and then waved their hands and laughed happily. For my own part, I had an unmanly desire to cry.

Many abler pens have told the story of the Victory Celebrations on June 8th. This narrative is concerned primarily with the Indian Contingent, but perhaps a word explaining the general attitude in London is of interest. A difference of opinion was rife among the people of England as to whether any celebration was called for. The world situation caused grave disquiet, the country as a whole was tired, even disillusioned and bitter. We could not afford the expense of celebrating and anyhow what had we won that caused for mafficking? To Londoners particularly the fencing-off of Kensington Gardens for months was a bitter pill. It was the barbed wire and the crude latrines desecrating London's much loved spaces that caused angry letters in the press. Somehow the erection of flags and decorations irritated the war worn civilian and his queue-harassed women-folk and they awaited the celebrations sullenly.

The tide of feeling appeared to turn at the end of May. Suddenly the streets were thronged with white, brown and black sailors, soldiers and airmen wearing fantastic foreign names on their sleeves. They were beautifully turned out, very happy to be in London, and eager for the sights of this fabulous city about which they had heard so much. The Londoner succumbed immediately, his exasperation evaporated. Somehow he hadn't fully realised how much of the war had been fought away from England, France and the Low countries. All these Empire people who had never seen England before had played as big a part as he himself had: and they had come thousands of miles to celebrate their victory. "All right", said the Cockney, "If they want a celebration they deserve it and they shall have it, and we'll all join in". From that day onwards there was never any doubt of the success of London's Victory Day.

I, who have seen much military ceremonial, found myself moved to strange emotion by this parade for Victory in London. No colour save the khaki and two shades of blue, no glistening harness save drab webbing, no warring plumes only the unmilitary beret. True, there were serried ranks and martial

music but this procession against London's superb background contained men who carried no weapons: miners, firemen, bus drivers, air raid workers, and women who were of no military service, nurses, women land workers and factory girls. Even the mechanised column included rescue and war debris cranes, farm tractor and binders and blood transfusion vans. So many had been caught up in this war other than those who wore the fighting uniforms.

India came third on the list of the marching column. First the Allied Forces, then the Dominions, then India and Burma followed by the Colonial Empire. The Home Forces followed later. Even in all that gallant company of picked men and women, the Indian contingent held a high place for pride of bearing and faultless turn out. The Indian soldier loves ceremonial and will always give of his best when the crowds are looking on. The pipe band of the 8th Punjab Regiment in blue pugarees, drab uniform with blue cummerbund and smart white spats headed the Indian procession followed by the R.I.N, then the Army with the band of the Royal Garhwal Rifles in rifle green uniform and pill-boxes, in the centre; the Royal Indian Air Force brought up the rear.

There must have been many past and present members of the Indian Armed Forces amongst the onlookers whose hearts surged with justifiable pride as the Indians went by. But then this was a day when the emotions ran the whole gamut from tears to rejoicing, when even the rain which fell in torrents during the afternoon could not quell the spirits of the immense crowds which had surged into London. Public dancing went on in the parks and the crowds were wedged tight down by the river for the firework display. One party of Indians only succeeded in crossing Westminster Bridge by forming a human battering ram in single file with a young British officer at the head. He admitted losing all but two men on his return journey after the display.

Victory Day over, we returned to the entertainment programme again: but a lot of the entertainment was private, given by past and present officers of the Indian forces who visited their friends in camp and took away two or three men to a meal in hotels and restaurants or to private houses. One such party saw life from a dinner table in a private room at the Savoy! Imagination boggles at the size of the bill! But the sepoy wished to sample everything and nothing seemed too small for enquiry. The statues in the streets had to be explained. The Crimea statue near the Senior, George III in Cockspur St., Douglas Haig and the Cenotaph were simple: but there were others which I had passed a hundred times of which I was weefully ignorant. I was once questioned about a statue opposite the War Office and a hasty look informed me that it was the Duke of Clarence. In my mind I framed an answer: "Yih to ek purane bádshah salámat ka rishtedár tha, jo ki malmscy sharàb ka ek butt men dubgáya tha": but I took another look at my interlocutor and decided against it. Lamely I drew attention to the Life Guards. Yes, we conducting officers certainly learned a lot about London which previous years of association with that city had not taught us.

The reactions of the sepoy to London were universal in general. Buckingham Palace was a disappointment, the traffic so immense, orderly, above all, silent; the crowds, too, were so orderly and friendly, queueing rather a delightful game, the police so authoritative yet unarmed, the houses so small yet so comfortable. The transport complications, particularly the underground, they never solved but they quickly learned that a Number Nine 'bus in Piccadilly earned salvation and the 'clippie' could always be counted upon to put them off at Exhibition Road. The bombed sites, cleared though they were, were

impressive: the coupon system an invention of the devil designed obviously to prevent poor visiting Indians from purchasing the present of clothing made in England, which each was so anxious to take back with him.

The revues and music halls were fascinating, particularly the Coliseum with its revolving stage. The troops could have understood but one word in ten but they happily joined in the general laughter. The officers preferred the straight plays. The children were a source of great joy, for there is a child-like spirit in the Indian serviceman to which the English child responded quickly. Of the shortages and restrictions under which the Londoner struggles they had but the haziest glimpse, which is perhaps a pity for they cannot understand how Britain is still paying for the war. In Camp the contingent ate Indian food brought with them, and the ample hospitality cannot but give them an incorrect picture to take back.

There is a limit to what can be crowded into three weeks and the men became perhaps a little satiated towards the end. They wanted more time to walk the streets unattended, to stare into shop windows, the sophisticated ones to make friends with the girls, in short, to roam where the fancy took them. I questioned a lot, but the abiding recollection differed with individuals. With one it was a tape machine he had seen in the Houses of Parliament! They will need time to sort out their impressions. How I'd like to be there when they tell the tale under the village banyan tree!

For the provincial tour the contingent was split into three parties. One went to Germany, the second to Birmingham and Manchester, the third to Sheffield and Newcastle. The latter two parties joined again at Edinburgh and together went on to Glasgow. Each party was commanded by a senior officer (Indian) and the conducting officers were distributed among the three parties.

The visits to the industrial towns followed broadly the same programme—arrival and settling into camp, a civic reception by the Lord Mayor to every member of the party, a march through the streets culminating in a salute to the Lord Mayor in the main square, a visits to the factories, and such entertainment as the city fathers laid on. The visit were of necessity short but of much interest to the troops. Birmingham provided my party with a tour of the Lucas lighting factory, where each process in the making of the complete motor car head light set was shown to us. One carried away the picture of slowly moving belts, of rows of nimble fingered girls, who turned some yellow wiring and a steel plate into a polished headlight with glass and bulbs complete in astonishing time. The management was impressed by the questions the troops asked, of payment, hours of work, supply and quantity of production.

In Manchester, we visited a calico printing firm, who showed us material and patterns in the making which set the scopy off again with his wail about the coupon system. "It's for export only" said our guide "May be you will find it in India." But they all wanted something bought in England. "I served with 78th Division in Italy" said one young director of this firm "and I always admired the Indian divisions I met. I envy you command such troops." I could think of no words adequate to reply to such a generous tribute. I repeated it later to the men.

The weather took a turn for the better as we crossed the border early—dreadfully early:—on the morning of 21st June, The Lord Provost of Edinburgh received us, and a number of civilian guests the same evening. A notable remark in his speech was, "I can only hope that should another enemy assail us, you will

be by our side." The replies made in return to these civic speeches, in each case by the senior Indian commissioned officer present at the reception, were surely models of what such speeches should be, quite soldierly and sincere: a greeting to our hosts, a reference to the fact that the contingent contained representatives from all parts of India and Burma, a tribute to the part played in war by industry, an appreciation of our British comrades-in-arms, our genuine pleasure at the warmth of our reception. The spontaneous and continued applause which followed must have been full reward for the officers who were called upon to face the terrors of public speaking. The speeches were translated and spoken in Urdu for the benefit of the men who loudly applauded all tributes to their prowess in war! Will any of us quickly forget Princes Street in the sunshine, or the Castle, or the 8th Punjab pipe band playing "Retreat" in the square at the Castle gate? The perfection of that band! The rhythm, precision and technique of the drummers! It was even a challenge to the pipers of the Highland Brigade, and a dense crowd of Scotsmen applauded long and loud.

We took to the road for Glasgow, by Stirling, Falkirk, Callender, and Loch Lomond: but the pace had been hot and the sway and rumble of the coach was an irresistible soporific. The beauties of the Trossachs were wasted on rows of snoring soldiers, who woke only to return the waved greetings of passing trippers. But Glasgow gave us another chance to see the natural beauty of Scotland and our trip down the Clyde to the Kyles of Bute and back again through the noisy shipyards, was long talked of. Again the sun shone brilliantly throughout the day. It will, I fear, be difficult to convince the men that the rain is not continual in England, and the sunshine of Scotland permanent. Glasgow showed us the technicolour London Victory parade film—a wonderful picture—and presented us each with a beautifully bound copy of Robbie Burn's poems.

What have they all taken back in their hearts? Truly it would be hard to say. One spoke happily of the wild flowers he had gathered in a Sussex lane, another of sporting guns seen in a London shop, a third of the greenness of the grass and trees, a fourth of the gaieties of the Belle Vue Fun Fair. A strange mixture of comment, some shrewd and penetrating, some naive and childish. The British are a bit bewildered about them too. No man spoke of politics, none knew of hunger and starvation in India. But one fact, I swear will remain with the Indian men who came on this visit to Britain. It was told to me one night at Edinburgh, by a rating of the Royal Indian Navy, as we sat in camp and watched the near-midnight twilight still lingering over the roofs of Retford Barracks. "It's the people," hesaid, "the ordinary people you meet in the streets. They're so kind and courteous."

#### LETTERS TO THE EDITOR

#### THE ATTRACTIONS OF TASMANIA

To The Editor of the U.S.I. "Journal."

Dear Sir,

I was greatly interested in Mrs. Green's letter on the above subject in the January issue of the Journal, which was forwarded to me from Simla to Hobart, Tas.,—for, being a Tasmanian, I naturally gravitated back to my homeland when I left India at the end of last year on leave pending retirement.

I have since had the pleasure of meeting Mrs. Green and discussing her letter with her, and we now hope that we shall be able to form some kind of unofficial association to give advice and help to officers about to retire on pension from India, and who may be making their homes in this Island. I have also had an interview with the Premier of the State, and have pointed out the desirability of ensuring that reliable information about Tasmania is made available in India.

We are at present handicapped here by an acute shortage of accommodation, by a very high rate of income tax, and by the almost continuous industrial troubles on the mainland, which, of course, have their repercussions on us, but we all hope that they will prove to be only passing phases of post-war rehabilitation. I think that even in the present circumstances Tasmania has much to offer pensioners who desire reasonable value for their pensions, and good condition of living for themselves and their families.

It is, of course, desirable that anyone who is thinking of settling here should come and see local conditions for himself before finally committing himself, and that he should ensure that at least temporary accommodation is available against his arrival.

I, too, shall be glad to do my best to answer any inquiries on the subject.

Yours faithfully,

C.S.W. RAYNER,

c/o Bank of Australasia,

Colonel, I.A.

Hobart, Tasmania.

#### MADRASIS IN THE I.A.M.C.

To The Editor of the U.S.I. "Journal".

Dear Sir,

I read with considerable interest and pleasure an article in your January number under the signature "Madrasi" (a writer whose identity I think I can guess). May I as representative of the ancillary services endorse everything he has to say about the admirable little men from the South?

I went in January 1943, as a British Service Officer with considerable doubts, to my first command of Indian Troops—a Field Ambulance. My doubts were not lessened when I found that the Class Composition was 100% Madrasi and my Second-in-Command, a regular I.M.S. Officer of the most die-hard type who believed that all manly virtues end at the Indus, had no doubts at all. He referred to them as "chattering little swamis".

A very few weeks' experience showed us our mistake, and also showed that our men were all and more that your correspondent has called them. They were clean (when you showed them how) keen, teachable (except of course, the clerks) and tigers for hard work (again except the clerks). Their essential "guttiness" did not find its outlet in squabbles in the lungar, and they came up smiling with their wounded at the end of stages which left me exhausted with nothing more to carry than a map-case. As an example, at one time they were carrying patients from Goppe Garrett's Garden twice in the twenty-four hours and liking it. Under fire they were as brave as the next man, and considerably braver than the next but one. Training them and taking them to war was the most rewarding thing that any man could ask for.

There is only one point on which I disagree with your contributor. The Madrassi E.C.O. is considerably more than "a stroke ahead" of his brother officers, at least in the I.A.M.C. He is, for the most part, a real leader who has an interest in and affection for his men and commands it in return. He can accept responsibility and can appreciate a situation and act on it without looking round for help. Am I wrong in thinking that these are the qualities that make him also such a good doctor?

I.A.O. 44/S/46 lays down the Post-war Class Composition of the I.A.M.C. as only 20 % Madrasi. Let us hope that is because more will be needed for the fighting Battalions and not from any failure to recognise this splendid material.

Yours faithfully, N. BICKFORD, Lieutenant-Colonel, R.A.M.C.

P.S.: A Commander once told me that he had 400 units under him, everyone of which was the best in the Army. Perhaps he was right after all.

#### SELECTION OF OFFICERS

To The Editor of the U.S.I. "Journal"

Dear Sir,

Major-General Moore—clearly a great enthusiast—has written a most interesting and enlightening article, "Selection or Personal Prejudice". To the layman, it seems that he has overstressed certain points—in particular his distrust of the average C. O. to report objectively and fairly on his officers. Generally speaking, he is wrong in this. Commanding Officers, especially when the report is based on Service in an operational area, do in fact know their officers well and report on them honestly. This is a time-honoured system. Does General Moore seriously suggest that it has resulted, in the past, in generally unsuitable officers being given advancement? Sometimes, Yes: usually, No.

Most of us have no important complaints about the new system of "scientific"

selection (it is new when compared with the long period over which other methods have been used). What we complain of is that the C.O's and Brigadiers' reports are given insufficient weight in the process of selecting officers for regular commission, when those reports are based on personal knowledge of the officers' behaviour and performance in an operational area over a considerable period of time. Such reports are based on fact.

The officer who has proved himself in and out of action, as a leader, as a man-master, as an administrator, is the man we want. He may, for various reasons, not show up well in front of a selection board. I have personal knowledge of one outstanding case where a first-class, proved officer was graded very low by

a selection board, and I have heard of others.

In such cases, I suggest that the correct procedure is for those responsible for final selection to have both reports put before them and, in cases of doubt, the C.O's and Brigadier's report should carry the day. To place the officer in front of a board for a second test is not satisfactory. An officer who has not shown up well once, is likely to fail again. In this way, we shall be sure that we do not lose fine, proved war-leaders by a too meticulous adherence to a system of selection which has yet to be proved infallible.

Yours faithfully,

J.F.R. FORMAN,

Major-General.

## H.Q. AFNEI, SEAC.

#### An Error Corrected

Among the "Letters to the Editor" published in our July issue was one from Mr. R. M. Hall, of Bassein, Burma, giving the most interesting story of the career of Colonel Smith Dun, who, having enlisted as a recruit in the 2/20 Burma Rifles in 1924, served in all ranks until he was recently appointed Colonel. Unfortunately, the name of the officer was badly mutilated in its travels to the printing machine, and we gladly publish the correct name above. His friends may like to know that Colonel Smith Dun accompanied the Burma Army contingent to London for the Victory Parade in June.

#### A Well-Deserved Tribute.

Writing to The Statesman on the subject of the rioting in Calcutta, a cor-

respondent who signed himself "Indian" said:

"Tommy Atkins's presence in the city has been a comfort to his friends, of good cheer to the panic-stricken, a relief to the distressed, and a terror to the wrong-doer. By night Tommy, with his gun, patrolling the streets has inspired confidence in those who need it. By day his comrades have rescued wounded and injured, removed the terrorized to places of safety, helped to clear the streets of stinking corpses, and keep the city free of epidemics. On their mission of peace the very leaders who have been maligning Tommy were escorted by him. But for Tommy, the events of the last few days might have ended in a general civil war.

"A few weeks back, his comrades were dropping from the air food and medicine to people in Chittagong. When sweepers struck work or waterworks employees refused to obey orders, Tommy helped in scavenging or maintained the city's water supply. In 1943 he distributed food and milk and shared his rations with the famished in Bengal. In earthquakes Tommy rescues people entrapped and blows up dangerous buildings.

"His countrymen may well feel proud of him. He has been loyal to his

King and country and has served humanity as a Christian should."

#### NOTES BY THE SECRETARY

#### New Members

The following new members have been elected to membership of the Institution during the past three months:—

Abraham, Captain H.G.W.

Aftab Ahmad, Esq.

Atma Jit Singh, Lieut., R.I.N.

Aganoor, Major J.

Balwant Singh, Lt.-Comdr., R.I.N.

Bans, Captain R.S.

Baswani, Lt.-Cdr. (E) B.S., R.I.N.

Bellam, Major J.H.

Byram, Lieut.-Colonel B.K.

Cameron, Brigadier R.D.

Carpenter, Lieut. G.P.T.

Chapman, L.C., Esq.

Cooke, Major C.M.

Cruickshank, Major G.J.

Das, Major T.S.

\*Datt, Colonel D., O.B.E.

Devasar, P/O. U.R.

Fanderlinden, Sub. Lt. R.B., R.I.N.V.R.

Fazl Haq, Major.

Francis, Major P.G.

Fraser, Lieut.-Colonel D.M.

Grewal, Major H.S.

Haider, Lieut.-Colonel M., M.B.E.

Hall, Major J.A.P.

Hashim, Captain M.

Heble, Lieut. M.K., R.I.N.

Hepper, Lt.-Col. M.G.A.

Horgan, 2/Lieut. W.C.

Honeyman, Lt.-Comdr. F., R.I.N.R.

Ijaz, Major H.S.

Iskandar Mirza, Lt.-Col., C.I.E., O.B.E., I.P.S.

Jakeman, Major T.E.

Jefferis, Brig. Sir Millis R., K.B.E., M. C.

Jesudason, Lieut. L.N.C., R.I.N.

\*Kalha, Major D.S.

Key, Major-General B.W., D.S.O., M.C.

Khan, Captain A. A.

Kulkarni, Capt. N.G.

La Bouchardiere, Captain N.K.

Lalkaka, Lieut. Sarosh J., R.I.N.

McKenzie, Major C.W.

Maxwell, Major J.F.

Mehta, Captain S.N.
Mohd. Shariff, Captain.
Mohatarem, Captain G. R.
Mohindra Singh, Lieut. (S).
Morgan, Major T.S.

Nye, H.E. Lieut.-General Sir Archibald, G.C.I.E., K.C.B., K.B.E., M.C. Governor of Madras.

Onkar Singh Kalkat, Major. \*Palmer, Lieut.-Colonel G.J. Pratap, Lieut. (8) R., R.I.N. \*Pring-Mill, Captain R.D.F. Petrie, Lt.-.Comdr. (L) W.H. Ram Swarup Singh, Captain. Riddick, Major G.R. Rowley, Captain D.W. Sanyal, Captain S.C. Schulte, Major F.N. Scott-Oldfield, Major C.E. Shamsher Singh, Major. Sher Khan, Lieut.-Colonel M. Sharma, Captain G.C. Siddiqui, Lt.-Colonel M.F. Singha, Major S.C. Smith, Brigadier W.G., D.S.O. Sukhwant Singh, Captain. Swann, Lieut.-Colonel A.E. White, Lieut. N. Dev.

Subscribing members who have enrolled during the past quarter include "E" Mess, H.Q., Eastern Command. Officers Mess, 20 Indian Infantry Brigade. Imperial Secretariat Library, New Delhi. Officers Mess, Probyn's Horse. O.C., "C" Coy., 2nd (U.P.) Bn., U.O.T.C., I.T.F. 3/16th Punjab Regiment. 2nd Bn., 7th Gurkha Rifles. Comdt., 1 Baroda Infantry. Adjutant, Jind Infantry. Army Training School, Patiala. Officers Mess, S.T.C., Jalahalli. Librarian, Central Advisory Board of Education Library, Government of India, New Delhi. Hony. Secretary, 1st Ind. Armd. Divl. Engineers Mess. Commanding, 362 (Q.V.O. Madras S. & M.) Fd. Coy., R.I.E. Mess Secretary, 4/8th Punjab Regiment.

#### Honours and Awards

The following members of the Institution have been awarded the decorations indicated for gallant and distinguished service in Burma:-

C.B.E.—Brigadier R.I. Jones, O.B.E.; Brigadier C.I. Jerrard;

- Brigadier E. F. E. Armstrong, O.B.E.; Brigadier R.G.B. Prescott, C.M.G., O.B.E.; Brigadier B.C.H. Gerty, D.S.O.
- O.B.E.—Lieut.-Colonel A. H. B. Ingleby; Lieut.-Colonel C. J. Baird; Lieut.-Colonel E. N. Jameson; Lieut.-Colonel P. S. Gyani; Colonel H. A. Lash; Lieut.-Colonel P. H. D. Panton, M.B.E.
- M.B.E.—Major Adalat Khan; Captain P.G. Malins; Major J.A. Jamieson; Lieut.-Colonel J. McL. Ross; Major P.N. Glover.
  - D.S.O.—Lieut.-Colonel A. D. MacConachie; Lieut.-Colonel E.C. Pickard.
  - M.C.-Major C.G. Ferguson; Major F.S. Jeffreys; Major L.H.W. Axtell.

#### Gold Medal Essay Competition

We have pleasure in announcing that the Judges have selected the paper submitted by Lt. Colonel G.L.W. Armstrong, of the P. A, Os Department, H.Q., S.A.C.S.E.A., as the winning essay in the 1945/46 Competition. The subject set was:

"Co-ordination and control in peace and war of the forces of all three services, British and Dominion, in the Indian Ocean and neighbouring territories".

On this occasion the Judges felt unable to recommend the award of the Gold Medal, in place of which they have unanimously recommended the payment of Rs. 250 to the winning author, whose paper will be published in the January issue of the Journal.

The Council is most grateful to the Judges—K.M. Pannikar, Esq., Prime Minister of Bikaner; Lieut.-General C.M.P. Durnford, and Group Captain D.H.F. Barnett, who acted as Judge in place of the A/A.O.C., Air Forces in India.

The subject set for the competition which closes on June 30, 1947 is: "MAN MANAGEMENT". Full details of the competition and the rules will be found in the front section of this issue.

#### MacGregor Memorial Medal

Recommendations for the award of the MacGregor Memorial Medal should be submitted by May 1 of each year.

The MacGregor Memorial Medal was founded in 1888 as a memorial to the late Major-General Sir Charles MacGregor, who founded the United Service Institution of India. It is awarded for the best military reconnaissance or journey of exploration of the year.

The awards are made in June, and are: (a) For officers, British or Indian, silver medal, and (b) for soldiers, British or Indian, a silver medal with Rs. 100 as gratuity. For especially valuable work, a gold medal may be awarded in place of one of the silver medals, whenever the administrators of the Fund deem it desirable. The Council may also award a special additional silver medal, without gratuity to a soldier for specially good work.

The award of the medals is made by His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief, India, as Vice-Patron, and the Council of the United Service Institution of India, who were appointed administrators of the Fund by the MacGregor Memorial Committee.

Eligibility for the award is open to: (a) Officers and other ranks of all forces of the British Commonwealth of Nations while serving with the India Establishment, or with South East Asia Command. (b) Officers and other ranks of the Royal Indian Navy, Indian Army, Royal Indian Air Force and of the Indian States Forces, wherever serving. (The term "Indian Army" includes the Indian Auxiliary and Territorial Forces, Frontier Militia, Levies, Military Police and Military Corps under local governments).

Personal risk to life during the reconnaissance or exploration is not a necessary qualification for the award of the medal: but, in the event of two journeys being of equal value, the man who has incurred the greater risk will be considered to have the greater claim to the award.

When the work of the year has either not been of sufficient value, or notice of it has been received too late for consideration before the Council Meeting, the medal may be awarded for any reconnaissance during previous years considered by His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief in India to deserve it.

The medal may be worn in uniform by Indian soldiers on ceremonial parades, suspended round the neck by the ribbon issued with the medal. Replacements of the ribbon may be obtained on payment from the Secretary, United Service Institution of India, Simla.

#### Indian Divisions During The War

The series of pocket-size booklets describing the operations on active service of Indian Divisions during the late war provide an unusually interesting record of the part played by Indian troops.

Each booklet is profusely illustrated and well got-up, contains photographs of the Divisional and Brigade Commanders as well as maps and smaller pictures illustrating actions in which the Divisions took part, and gives a graphic word picture of the work done. There is also a booklet giving the story of the 43rd Gurkha Lorried Brigade.

Booklets already published are:

"Red Eagles"	4th	Indian Division.
"The Fighting Fifth"	5th	Indian Division.
"Golden Arrow"	$7 \mathrm{th}$	Indian Division.
"One More River"	8th	Indian Division.
"Teheran to Trieste"	10th	Indian Division.
"Dagger Division"	19th	Indian Division.
"The Arakan Campaign"	$25 \mathrm{th}$	Indian Division.
"Tiger Head"	$26 \mathrm{th}$	Indian Division.
"A Gurkha Brigade in Italy"	43rd	Gurkha Lorried Bde.

The appearance, production and general lay-out of the booklets reflects the highest possible credit on the Directorate of Public Relations, G.H.Q., India, and the staff which compiled them. We unhesitatingly recommend them to all who served in those divisions, and to all who are proud to have been associated with the Indian Army during the war.

Copies may be obtained from D.P.R., G.H.Q, New Delhi, price annas 12 each.



By Appointment

To The Late King George V

# RANKEN & Co., Ltd.

CALCUTTA, SIMLA, DELHI, LAHORE, RAWALPINDI & MURREE

**ESTABLISHED IN CALCUTTA 1770** 

# CIVIL & MILITARY TAILORS GENTLEMEN'S OUTFITTERS AND BREECHES MAKERS

ESTIMATES SUPPLIED FOR FULL-DRESS AND MESS DRESS UNIFORMS OF ALL REGIMENTS

By Appointment to

His Excellency General Sir Robert A. Cassels, G.C.B., C.S.I., D.S.O., Former Commander-in-Chief in India.

### UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION OF INDIA To The Secretary, United Service Institution of India, SIMLA. Date..... Dear Sir. Please enrol me as a member (or Life Member) of the United Service Institution of India. Yours faithfully. (In block cabs.) Rank and Unit ..... Permanent Address ..... Present Address ..... BANKERS' ORDER FORM On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla, for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 10 (ten). being my annual subscription for 19 and the sum of Rs. 10 on every succeeding January 1 until further notice. Date. ..... Signature. .... To Messrs ...... (Bankers), at ...... On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla, for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 150 (one hundred and fifty), being Life Membership subscription of the Institution. Signature....: To The Secretary, United Service Institution of India, SIMLA. Date..... Dear Sir, Please enrol me as member (or Life Member) of the United Service Institution of India. Yours faithfully. Name..... (In block caps.) Rank and Unit.... Permanent Address..... Present Address..... **BANKERS' ORDER FORM** To Messrs. ..... (Bankers), at ..... On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla, for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 10 (ten). being my annual subscription for 19 and the sum of Rs. 10 on every succeeding January 1 until further notice. Date. ..... Signature To Messrs. ..... (Bankers), at ..... On receipt of this order, please pay to Lloyds Bank, Ltd., Simla, for the United Service Institution of India, the sum of Rs. 150 (one hundred and fifty), being Life Membership subscription of the



Date. ..... Signature.

Institution.



The Cotton Goods for India





The Wool-Wear for India

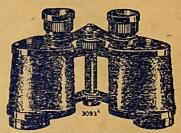


The Footwear for India

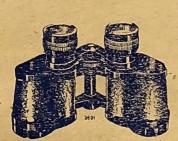
# BARRESTROUD BINOCULARS



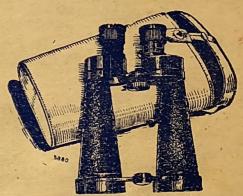
Type C.F. 5 (8×24 mm.)



Type C.F. 10 (8×30.5 mm.)



Type C.F. 24 (8×30.5 mm.)



Type C.F. 30 (7 × 59 mm.)

### BARR & STROUD LIMITED

ANNIESLAND GLASGOW W3 15 VICTORIA STREET LONDON S.W.1

Telegrams :—
"Telemeter" Glasgow

Codes :--

Telegrams:—
"Retemeiet Sowest" London

Printed by P. Heal (Manager) at The Civil & Military Gazette, Ltd., 48 The Mall, Lahore, and edited and published by Lieut.-Col. H. C, Drueit for The United Service Institution of India, Simla.

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.

